

THE  
Fictionist's Magazine.

VOL. XXI.

CONTAINING

Peruvian Tales,  
Gaudenzio Di Lucca,  
Adventures of an Atom,  
The Sincere Huron,  
*AND*  
The English Hermit.



LONDON:

Printed for Harrison and C<sup>o</sup>

N<sup>o</sup> 18, Paternoster Row.

1786.



# PERUVIAN TALES

RELATED IN

ONE THOUSAND AND ONE HUNDRED

BY ONE OF THE

SELECT VIRGINS OF CUSCO

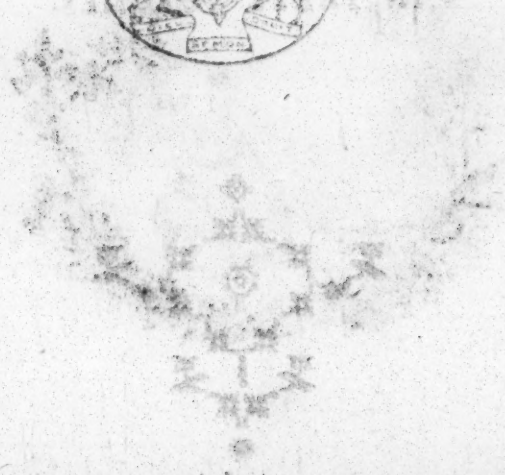
IN THE

YINGA OF PERU

TO DISSEMINATE HIS FROM A RESOLUTION HE HAD TAKEN TO EXPRESS  
HIMSELF BY HIS OWN

TRANSLATED BY THE

BY SAULUS GUMPERT, ESQ.



LONDON:

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 17, Paternoster-Row.  
MDCCLXXXII

# PERUVIAN TALES,

—  
RELATED IN  
ONE THOUSAND AND ONE HOURS,

BY ONE OF THE  
SELECT VIRGINS OF CUSCO,

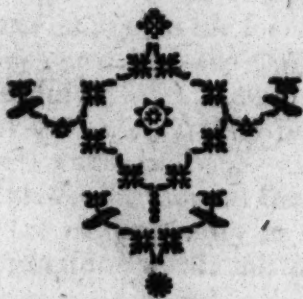
TO THE  
YNCA OF PERU,

TO DISSUADE HIM FROM A RESOLUTION HE HAD TAKEN TO DESTROY  
HIMSELF BY POISON.

TRANSLATED FROM THE ORIGINAL FRENCH

By SAMUEL HUMPHREYS, Esq.

IN THREE VOLUMES.



LONDON:

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.

MDCCCLXXXVI.





# TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE.

WHEN I had completed some leisure hours in reading over these Persian Tales in the original, they appeared to me to innocently agreeable and entertaining, that I was easily prevailed upon to attempt the translation now offered to the public. I am sensible, indeed, that this many persons and commentators, some to whom all nations in general appear to be indebted, and who hunt the rational pleasure of reading, to works of deep learning and solidity; in consequence of which, perhaps, they consider philosophical systems of nature, methodical treatises on morality and religion, or mathematical investigations, as the only sources from whence the pure streams of knowledge can flow into the minds of men.

When true learning appears in her native and unadorned dress, I must own her charms are irresistible, and I shall always thank the patronage of a nation for those masters of science, who, without the aid of words of territorial nature to our view, or solemn demonstration with the harmony of a planetary system, and lead us to the immutable laws and worlds in the immense regions of the universe. Each of the sciences has some valuable portion to offer to our minds, as well as the moralist, has a just claim to the cultivation of our souls; but when I have made this concession, I must be permitted to allow some merit to the Persian Tales, which, I think, may be considered as a class of writing, which is not only a teacher's improvement, but a well known, that the tales are chosen by the ancients to be the vehicle of instruction, and the Arabian Tales, have taught us, by their wisdom and force, to improve mankind, and almost tempted us to look on the Arabians as those fierce animals make on rocks and herds, for the sake of the instruction they have afforded us in their several classes and divisions upon the earth. A remarking mountain has put vanity out of countenance; the trees of the field have reproached a miserably boasting and king; and the howling wilderness has censured the world with as many philosophical lectures, as the Talmud of the Jews.



As to these Tales, they are calculated to recommend virtue and morality in various instances; and which may amuse the imagination, by a number of surprising incidents, though at the same time, they are filled with the amiable impression of humanity to his fellow creatures, patriotism to his country, fondness in his friends, and purity in his passion for the fair.

If it should be objected, that the fables related in the work are altogether incredible, and consequently unworthy the attention of the judicious; that exception will be best answered by reminding those who

Printed by J. D. O. N. at the British Museum, London.



## TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE.

**W**HEN I had employed some leisure hours in reading over these Peruvian Tales in the original, they appeared to me so innocently agreeable and entertaining, that I was easily prevailed upon to attempt the translation now offered to the publick.

I am sensible, indeed, there are many serious and contemplative persons, to whom all fictions in general appear tasteless and unimproving; and who limit the rational pleasures of reading, to works of deep learning and solidity: in consequence of which persuasion, they consider philosophick systems of nature, methodical essays on morality and religion, or mathematical investigations, as the only sources from whence the pure streams of knowledge can flow into the minds of men.

When true learning appears in her native and unaffected dress, I must own her charms are irresistible; and shall always have the greatest veneration for those masters of science, who either unfold the wonders of terrestrial nature to our view, or astonish our imagination with the harmony of a planetary system, and lead us to innumerable suns and worlds in the immense regions of the heavens. Each of the sciences has some valuable present to offer us, and the divine, as well as the moralist, has a just claim to the cultivation of our souls: but when I have made this concession, I hope I may be permitted to allow some merit to an agreeable and well-wrought fiction, and rank it in that class of writing, which is capable of contributing to a reader's improvement.

It is well known, that fable was frequently chosen by the ancients to be the vehicle of their wisdom: the Grecian Æsop, and the Arabian Lokman, have taught lions, wolves, and foxes, to improve mankind, and almost tempted us to forgive the depredations those fierce animals make on flocks and herds, for the sake of the instruction they have afforded us in their several classes and distributions on the earth. A teeming mountain\* has put vanity out of countenance: the trees of the field have reproached a mercenary people for electing a bad king†; and the howling wilderness has enriched the world with as many philosophick lectures, as the Tusculum of Cicero.

As to these Tales, they are calculated to recommend virtue and morality in various instances; and whilst they amuse the imagination, by a number of surprising incidents, they, at the same time, affect a reader with the amiable impression of humanity to his fellow-creatures, patriotism to his country, fortitude in his misfortunes, and purity in his passion for the fair.

If it should be objected, that the stories related in this work are altogether incredible, and consequently unworthy the attention of the judicious; that exception will be best answered by reminding those who

\* *Parturiunt montes, nascetur ridiculus mus.*

HOR.

† Jotham's Parable, JUDGES ix. 8.



urge it, of the uncommon approbation with which the Arabian, Persian, and Turkish Tales, were received by the publick, when they appeared in an English dress; but, as I never yet heard them condemned for the improbability which reigns throughout them, I hope our Peruvian adventures, which are no more incredible than the Oriental, but, in many particulars more entertaining, will not be censured for a circumstance, which was not thought a defect in the books above mentioned.

I might on this occasion take notice, that several learned men who have been well acquainted with the structure of a human body, have recommended, as a salutary amusement to a reader, such pieces as entertain the imagination with agreeable and surprising ideas. The incomparable Lord Bacon\* is extremely favourable to such productions, and ranks them among those recreations, which caress the mind with pleasing enjoyments, and give the spirits a sprightly flow through the animal œconomy; by which means the vital functions are preserved from the languors and interruptions they receive from disagreeable perceptions, or immoderate attentiveness to more elaborate researches.

It is a known fact, that the admirable Monsieur Bayle, and our immortal Milton, frequently left the regular walks of their more laborious and learned studies, to wander in the florid wilds of romance; where they enjoyed an easy relaxation from more abstruse and impairing attentions, and never received the least injury on that enchanted ground: and therefore the proprietors of this translation flatter themselves, that their fair readers in particular, who in the fine seasons adorn the Mall with the loveliest objects on earth, will not be displeased with the magick groves and lawns of Peru.

It may not be improper to conclude this Preface, with some account of the famous Mango Copac, who is so often mentioned in the following sheets, and is the reputed founder and legislator of the once flourishing empire of the Yncas in Peru. My observations shall be chiefly extracted from an illustrious author of our own country, whose inimitable writings will be an honour to Great Britain, as long as learning and politeness are in any repute†.

The kingdom of Peru deduced it's original from their great heroes, Mango Copac, and his wife and sister Coya Mama, who were said to have first appeared in that country, near a mighty lake, which is still sacred on that account.

Before this time the inhabitants are reported to have lived like the beasts among them, without any traces of order, law, or religion; without cloathing, or any habitations but rocks, caves, and trees, to secure them from wild beasts, or on the tops of hills, if they were in fear of fierce neighbours. When Mango Copac and his sister, came first into these naked and savage lands, as they were persons of excellent shape and beauty, so they were adorned with such cloaths, as were afterwards the usual habit of the Yncas, by which name they called themselves. They told the people who first came about them, that they were the children of the Sun, who had sent them down in pity to mankind, to reclaim them from their bestial lives, and to instruct them how to live happily and safely, by observing such laws as their father, the Sun, had commanded these his offspring to teach them. The great rule they

\* See *Historia Vitæ et Mortis*.

† Sir William Temple in his *Essay on Heroick Virtue*.



first inculcated was, that every man should live according to reason, and consequently neither say nor do any thing to others, that they were not willing others should say or do to them; and this was the great principle of all their morality. In the next place, that they should worship the Sun, who took care of the whole world, gave life to all creatures, and made the plants grow, and the herbs fit for food to maintain them. After this they taught the arts most necessary for life: Mango Copac instructed them how to sow maize, or the common Indian grain; to build houses against inclemencies of air and wild beasts; to distinguish themselves by wedlock into families; to cover the shame of their nakedness with cloaths, and to tame and nourish such creatures as might be of common use and sustenance. Coya Mama taught the women to spin and weave cotton, and certain coarse wools of some beasts among them.

With these instructions and inventions, they were so much believed in all they said, and adored for the general utility they dispensed, that they were followed by numbers of people, and obeyed like children of the Sun. Mango Copac had in his hand a rod of gold, and said, he had received it from his father the Sun, who ordered him, when he travelled northward from the lake, to strike this rod into the ground, and where, at the first stroke, it should sink to the very top, he should build a temple to the Sun, and fix the seat of his government.

This happened to be in the Vale of Cusco, where he founded that city, which was the capital of the great kingdom of Peru.

Here he divided his company into two colonies or plantations, and began to be lawgiver to them: in each of these were, at first a thousand families; which he caused to be registered, with the numbers in each.

He instituted Decurians through both these colonies; that is, one over every ten families, another over fifty, a third over a hundred, a fourth over five hundred, and a fifth over a thousand; and to this last officer they gave the name of Curaca, or governor. Every Decurion was a patron and judge in small controversies, among those under his charge, and took care that every one clothed themselves according to the orders given them by the Yncas from the Sun: one of which was, that none who could work should be idle, more than to rest after labour; and that those who could not work, through age, sickness, or invalidity, should be maintained by the industry of others. These regulations were so much observed, that in the whole empire of Peru, and during the long race of the Yncas, no beggar was ever known, and no woman ever went to see a neighbour without her work in her hand; which she followed all the time of the visit.

Every colony had one supreme judge, to whom the lower Decurions remitted great and difficult cases, or to whom the criminals in such cases appealed. But every Decurion, who concealed any crime of those under his charge above a day and a night, became guilty of it himself, and liable to the same punishment. There were laws likewise against theft, mutilations, murders, disobedience to officers, and adulteries; for every man was to have one lawful wife, but had the liberty of keeping other women as he could.

There is no doubt but that which contributed much to this great order in the state, was the diffuse of other possessions than what was necessary to life, and the eminent virtue of their first great hero or legislator, which seemed to be entailed upon their whole race; so that it is reported among the Peruvians, that no true Ynca was ever

found guilty or punished for any crime; and it is certain, no government was ever established, and continued, by greater examples of virtue and severity, nor any ever gave greater testimonies than the Yncas, of an excellent institution, by progresses both in the propagation and extent of empire, in peace and plenty, in greatness and magnificence of temples, palaces, high-ways, bridges, and all provisions necessary to common ease, safety, and utility of human life; so as several of the Jesuits, and particularly Acoſta, prefer the civil constitutions of Mango Copac, before those of Lycurgus, Numa, Solon, or any other lawgivers so celebrated in the more known parts of the world.

The reigning Ynca was called CupaYnca, which the Spaniards interpret, Solo Sennor, or only Lord. He always married the first of his female kindred, either sister, niece, or cousin, to preserve the line as pure as possible. Once in two years he assembled all the unmarried Yncas, men above twenty, and women above sixteen years of age, and there, in public, married all such as he thought fit. The same was done among the vulgar, by the Curaca of each people.

Every family at their time of meals, eat with their doors open, that all might see their temperance and order.

By such laws as these, Mango Copac first settled his kingdom in the colonies of Cusco, which in time multiplied into many others, by the willing confluence of several nations, allured by the divine authority of his orders. The sweetness and clemency of his reign, and the felicity of all who lived under it, and indeed the whole government of this race of the Yncas, was rather like that of a tender father over his children, than of a lord over slaves or subjects. By which they came to be so adored, that it was like sacrilege for any common person so much as to touch the Ynca without his permission.

After the extent of his kingdom into great territories round Cusco, Mango Copac assembled all his Curacas, and told them, his father the Sun had commanded him to propagate his institutions as far as he was able, for the happiness of mankind; and for that purpose, to go with armed troops to those remoter parts which had not yet received them, and to reduce them to their observance. That the Sun had commanded him not to hurt or offend any who would submit to him, and accept of the happiness offered by such divine bounty; but to distress only such as refused, without killing any who did not assail them, and then to do it justly in their own defence.

For this design he assembled troops of men, armed both with offensive, and chiefly defensive weapons; and with this, and other such armies, he reduced many new territories under his empire, declaring to every people he approached, the same things he first imparted to those who came about him near the great lake. Those who submitted, enjoyed the same rights with the rest of his subjects; those who refused were distressed by his forces, till they were necessitated to comply with his orders.

By these methods, joined with the influence of such heroic virtues, and by the length of his reign, he so far extended his dominions, as to divide them into four provinces, over each of which he appointed an Ynca to be viceroy (having many sons grown fit to command) and in each of them established three supreme councils; the first of justice, the second of war, and the third of the revenue; of which an Ynca was likewise president, which continued ever after.



At the end of a long and adored reign, Mango Copac fell into the last period of his life; upon the approach whereof, he called together his children and grand-children, with his eldest son, to whom he left his kingdom; and told them, he was going to repose himself with his father the Sun, from whom he came; that he advised and charged them all to pursue the paths of reason and virtue, which he had taught them, till they followed him in the same journey; that by this course only they would prove themselves to be true sons of the Sun, and be as such honoured and esteemed. He gave the same charge more especially, and more earnestly, to the Ynca his successor, and commanded him to govern his people according to his example, and the precept he had received from the Sun; and ever to conduct himself with justice, mercy, piety, clemency, and care of the poor; and when he, the prince, should go in time to rest with his father the Sun, that he should give the same instructions to his successor. And this form was accordingly used in all the successions of the race of the Yncas, which lasted eight hundred years, with the same order, and the greatest felicity that could attend any state.

This kingdom is said to have extended near seven hundred leagues in length, from north to south, and about a hundred and twenty in breadth: it is bounded on the west by the Pacific Ocean; on the east by mountains impassable for men or beasts, and, as some write, even birds themselves, the height being such as makes their tops covered with eternal snow, even in that warm region: on the north it is bounded by a great river; and on the south with another, which separates it from the province of Chili, that reaches to the Straights of Magellan.

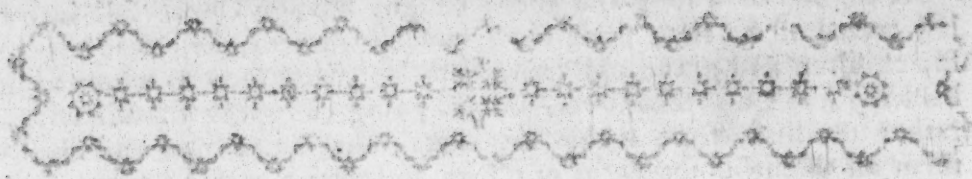
I will not say any thing of the greatness, magnificence, and riches of their buildings, their palaces and temples, especially those of the Sun; of the splendor of their court, their triumphs after victories, their huntings and feasts, their military exercises and honours; but as testimonies of their grandeur, will mention only two of their highways, whereof one was five hundred leagues in length, and levelled through mountains, rocks, and vallies, so that a carriage might drive through that vast extent without difficulty. Another very long and large, paved with cut or squared stone, fenced with low walls on each side, and planted with trees, whose branches gave shade, and the fruits food to all passengers.

This mighty empire was at last overturned by the Spaniards, whose conquests were facilitated and effected by the general hatred and aversion of the people in that kingdom to Atahualpa, who being a bastard of the Yncas family, had first, by indirect practices and subtilty, and afterwards by cruelty and violence, raised himself to the throne of Peru, and cut off, with merciless barbarity, all the male race of the true royal blood, who were at man's estate, or near it, after that line had lasted pure and sacred, and reigned with unspeakable felicity, both to themselves and their subjects, for above eight hundred years.

MAY 1, 1734.

S. HUMPHREYS.

B 2



# PERUVIAN TALES.

## WOLFE THE FIRST.

THE natives of Peru have  
a tradition, that the  
country was once  
ruled by a king, who  
was in the manner of  
a god, and that he  
ruled the people  
with a rod of iron.

The first foundation of the empire of  
Peru, being thus established, a king  
of the name of Cuzco, who was the  
founder of the empire, and at the same time  
the first king of the Incas, was born  
in the city of Cuzco, and he was the  
first of a long line of kings, who  
ruled the empire for many centuries.

The first foundation of the empire of  
Peru, being thus established, a king  
of the name of Cuzco, who was the  
founder of the empire, and at the same time  
the first king of the Incas, was born  
in the city of Cuzco, and he was the  
first of a long line of kings, who  
ruled the empire for many centuries.

"Mango is generally supposed to be the  
name of the first king of the Incas, who  
ruled the empire for many centuries.  
The name of Mango is derived from the  
word 'mango', which means 'king' in  
the Peruvian language. The name of  
Mango is also found in the names of  
other kings of the Incas, such as  
Mango Capac, Mango Inca, and Mango  
Cuzco." 17

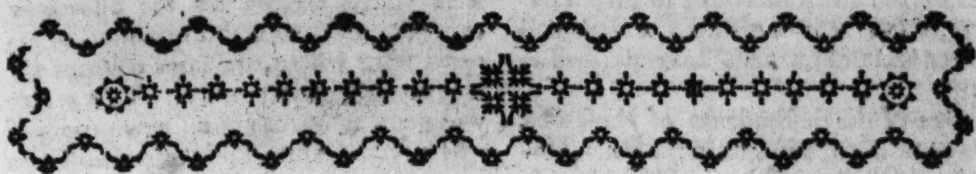
THE natives of Peru have  
a tradition, that the  
country was once  
ruled by a king, who  
was in the manner of  
a god, and that he  
ruled the people  
with a rod of iron.

The first foundation of the empire of  
Peru, being thus established, a king  
of the name of Cuzco, who was the  
founder of the empire, and at the same time  
the first king of the Incas, was born  
in the city of Cuzco, and he was the  
first of a long line of kings, who  
ruled the empire for many centuries.

The first foundation of the empire of  
Peru, being thus established, a king  
of the name of Cuzco, who was the  
founder of the empire, and at the same time  
the first king of the Incas, was born  
in the city of Cuzco, and he was the  
first of a long line of kings, who  
ruled the empire for many centuries.

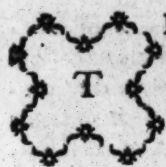
"Mango is generally supposed to be the  
name of the first king of the Incas, who  
ruled the empire for many centuries.  
The name of Mango is derived from the  
word 'mango', which means 'king' in  
the Peruvian language. The name of  
Mango is also found in the names of  
other kings of the Incas, such as  
Mango Capac, Mango Inca, and Mango  
Cuzco." 18





# PERUVIAN TALES.

## VOLUME THE FIRST.



THE natives of Peru have a tradition, that this vast country was originally inhabited by savage nations, who in their manners resembled the brutes; and had no other similitude to mankind, than what appeared in their external shape. They lived without any regular system of laws or religion; and had neither houses nor cities to inhabit. They were unacquainted with the proper culture of the earth; and knew not how to spin either flax or wool. They lived in caves, and subterranean glooms. Their food was roots, herbs, and wild fruits; and they frequently feasted on human flesh. They were strangers to the institution of marriage; and the men indulged themselves in a conjunction with those women who first came in their way.

The Sun, sensibly affected with the unhappy state of these nations, sent to them, at last, two of his children, whom he had begotten of the Moon, namely, Mango Copac\*, who was the first king or Ynca of Peru; and Coya Mama Oello Huaco†, whom he espoused, notwithstanding she was his sister; and who was likewise the first queen. The Sun, their father, laid his injunctions on them both, to instruct the people in the principles of that religion they ought to profess; to

prescribe such laws to them, as were proper for their obedience; and to teach them to build houses, and practise husbandry; to cultivate the plants, and rear their flocks: in a word, how to exercise their reasoning faculty.

The Ynca Mango Copac, and his wife Mama Oello, having gained on multitudes of both sexes, by their discourses, founded, in the Valley of Cusco, a city of that name, which they chose for the capital of their empire. They afterwards peopled several other places, instructing the inhabitants in every particular that could be advantageous to them, and which related either to the worship of the Sun their father, or the necessities and accommodations of life. The men were instructed in their duty by the Ynca, and the women by the Queen.

The first foundations of the empire of Peru being thus established, Mango Copac gradually extended the bounds of his dominions, and, at the same time, taught the barbarians around him tillage, and gave them excellent precepts for the regulation of their lives. He influenced them by the efficacy of persuasion, rather than the force of arms, to renounce their idols, and adore the Sun. In a word, his successors, conducting themselves by the same principles, with respect to several other nations, the em-

\* Mango is generally supposed to be the proper name, and Copac the surname; which last the natives gave him when he made some conquests. Copac, in the Peruvian language, signifies rich and potent in arms; it likewise expresses the idea of only or alone: and in this sense the word was appropriated to the king who was called Copac Ynca, which in it's signification, imports the only king, emperor, or lord.

† Oello Huaco, in all probability, were proper names. Coya signifies Queen or Empress; and Mama signifies Mother. And from thence all the queens of Peru had the surname of Mamanchic, which signifies Our Mother.

pire of the Ynca increased to such a degree, that it rose to all the grandeur and power which historians have ascribed to it.

One of the descendants of those first kings of Peru, was called the Ynca Yahuarhuacac \*, a name which signifies, He who weeps blood. He received this appellation, because, when he was born †, he shed tears of blood: which the people, who valued themselves for their skill in divination, imagined to be a very fatal omen. They thought, such an unpropitious circumstance threatened their prince with some uncommon misfortune, and even the curse of his father the Sun. However, at the beginning of his reign, he governed his dominions with great tranquillity and reputation; and his justice, piety, and gentle disposition, gave him as large a share of his subjects reverence and love, as was ever enjoyed by any of his predecessors.

In reality, Yahuarhuacac durst not, like his ancestors, make war in person against his neighbours. His name seemed to him so ominous, and intimidated him to such a degree, that he was under great apprehensions that the Sun, his father, would afflict him with some severe instance of his displeasure; and therefore he contented himself with making a frequent progress to different parts of his kingdom, raising magnificent structures, and repairing canals, aqueducts, palaces, public magazines, fountains, bridges, and causeways; and when, at last, he determined to perform some military exploits, his only motive to such a resolution, was the hope of escaping the dishonourable character of indolence and pusillanimity, and that he might not be reproached, for being the only Ynca who had neglected the enlargement of his empire.

The Ynca Mayta ‡, his brother, was intrusted by him with the conduct of the intended expedition; and the event succeeded to his wish: but the fortunate progress of the monarch's arms had no power to dissipate the inquietudes he received from his inauspicious name; besides which, he was perpetually tormented with domestick vexations. These latter

were chiefly created by the disorderly conduct, and unamiable qualities, of his eldest son, whom the laws destined for his successor in the empire. This prince was every moment giving new proofs of a savage and untractable disposition: in his very infancy, he had made it evident, that his sole delight consisted in tormenting not only the slaves and people who served him, but even the princes themselves, whose rank was subordinate to his own. In his youth, he seemed to breathe nothing but violence and blood. In vain did the Ynca, his father, use all possible endeavours to reform and soften his unlovely temper; and his cares were ineffectual: in vain did he labour to point his son's view to the examples of wisdom and moderation which his ancestors had left behind them; every day presented the king with some new instance of barbarity in the actions of his son. Resentments and threats were all unavailing; the prince continued to proceed in his own track; and his vicious inclinations being now grown habitual, changed into poison all the remedies that were employed to cure the indisposition of his mind.

Severity became, at last, the only expedient from whence any benefit could be expected: but as yet it had never been judged proper to treat any Ynca, much less the presumptive heir of the crown, with rigour; and it was dangerous to come to such an extreme. There was reason to be apprehensive that the people, accustomed to consider their princes as the offspring of the Sun, and consequently as gods, would take occasion, from their being punished, to imagine that the Yncas were men like themselves; and, possibly, even the other Yncas, as well as the people, would not patiently have permitted the king to treat the prince his son with austerity.

However, a fresh crime, which the young prince had committed, made it necessary for the king to resolve on measures of severity; and they became the more indispensable, because sacrilege made a flagrant part in the aggravation of the offence.

The prince was about eighteen years

\* He was the seventh king of Peru.

† Some writers declare, that the prince did not shed these bloody tears till about the third or fourth year of his age.

‡ The name Ynca was common to the king and all the princes of his blood. The first Ynca was desirous that all his descendants should be honoured with the title of royalty, that so the people might regard them with the greater veneration.



of age, when he suffered himself to be hurried into an excess, which till then was never known. One of the select virgins\* was brought to the palace, and destined for the Ynca's bed, the same day. The young prince, happening to meet her at her arrival, was enchanted with her beauty; and the fatal poison of love, in a moment, infused itself into his heart, and mastered it in the most absolute manner. His duty to his father, and the obligations exacted from him by religion, made but a feeble opposition to the glowing sallies of a young man, who, till that instant, had never known any law but the impetuosity of his desires. As he found himself enamoured to distraction, he approached the select virgin, and had the presumption to acquaint her with his passion. But the lady, whose modesty and virtue were equal to the charms of her person, only answered him with an aspect of severity, capable of disconcerting any man who had not renounced every impression of humanity.

This air of resentment did but add flame to the prince's criminal desires; and he meditated how to gratify them at any event. He addressed himself to the select virgin's governess, and partly by promises, partly by threats, engaged her to assist him in his passion. It was agreed between them, that the young lady should be fraudulently conducted towards the apartment of the prince; which was a stratagem easily to be accomplished, since she had never been in the palace till that day. The governess led her apart, under pretext of giving her some necessary instructions; and, when she had insensibly brought her to the place where the prince expected her, she abandoned her to his guilty transports.

The daughter of the Sun was dismissed from the prince's arms, with a face col-

vered with confusion, and a heart racked with despair. Without knowing where she went, she entered into the first chamber she found open, and there, in agonizing tears, deplored the prince's crime, and her own misfortune. When her governess came to acquaint her, that, by the king's command, she was to be immediately introduced to his majesty, the afflicted fair-one wiped away her tears; and, after she had taken a little time to recover her soul from the agitations that affected it, she suffered herself to be conducted, with a seeming tranquillity, to the Ynca's apartment.

Her intentions were to make her governess feel the first effects of her vengeance: and therefore, when she beheld herself in the presence of the king, who imputing the trouble that was still visible in her eyes, to her virgin modesty, stretched out his hand to recover her from her confusion: 'Turn away,' said she, 'turn away, my lord, those eyes from a wretched object of woe! I am not only unworthy to appear before you, but do not even deserve the life I enjoy. The woman your majesty beholds,' added she, pointing to her governess, 'has, by a base compliance, betrayed me to the guilty passion of your son. I demand the death of this criminal, as an act of justice to her, and compassion to myself: her treason is certainly unpardonable, and I cannot survive my disgrace. It is but too evident, that I am rendered guilty by the law, since I have suffered such a violation of my honour.'

The Ynca was extremely surprized at this discourse; but, without discovering the least emotion, he ordered the select virgin to retire into an adjoining chamber, and commanded the governess to return to her own apartment, and continue

\* In the city of Cusco was a house, where the young ladies, who were intended to be wives to the Sun, were educated. They were to be of the blood royal, and in a legitimate descent from the Yncas, or their near relations. This house was called, The Mansion of the Select, because, in the choice of these ladies, particular regard was had to their beauty, as well as birth. They were likewise to be virgins; and for the greater certainty of their enjoying this qualification, they were chosen under the age of eight years. They lived in perpetual virginity; and, in order to that, were secluded from all intercourse with the world. All mankind were debarred their sight and conversation; and none but the Coya, that is to say, the queen, and her daughters, ever entered their house: for though the Ynca, in the quality of king, had this prerogative, he abstained from exerting it, lest any should have the temerity to follow his example. But in several parts of the empire there were other mansions of select virgins, that gave reception, indifferently, to all sorts of young maids, whether they were of the royal blood or not, or whether they were bastards, or legitimate, or even born of strangers. These were destined to be the daughters of the Sun, or mistresses to the Ynca; and it is one of these our history now treats of.

there

there till his farther orders: he then caused a council, which was composed of the principal Yncas of his court, to be assembled, and bitterly complained to them of the new crime committed by his son. 'There is an end,' said he, 'of all religion and government, if I permit an offence like this to be acted with impunity. I can no longer behold a monster, who has insulted the Sun my parent, in one of his daughters, and dishonoured me in my own palace. The measure of his iniquities is now full; and I am determined on a vengeance proportionable to the enormity of the crime. Let each of you,' added he, 'give me his sentiments with the greatest freedom.'

When the king had ended his discourse, the most ancient of the Yncas declared their opinions after each other; and were unanimous in their thoughts. 'Your majesty,' said they, 'is acquainted with what the law ordains. Every daughter of the Sun, who is dishonoured in her chastity, is to be buried alive; and the man who corrupted her, is to be hanged. This law goes yet farther: the criminal, his wife and children, his servants, his relations, and all the inhabitants of the town where he dwelt, even to the very infants at the breast, are to be involved in the punishment of the offence. The very town is to be razed to the ground, and the ruins whelmed under a heap of stones; that it may remain desert and desolate through its whole extent, and be abandoned to the curses and execrations of all the world. But this law,' continued they, 'was only given to inspire the subjects with terror, and preserve them from the temerity of violating a virgin consecrated to the Sun, the god and father of their kings. And though it may be justly said, that the prohibition to sully the honour of the select virgins, extends to sons of the Yncas, as well as to their subjects; it is however certain, that the quality of the persons ought to make a difference between their crime in this particular: the injury being greater or less in its aggravations, in proportion to the disparity that is to be found between the offender and the party aggrieved; and consequently the crime committed by the prince, who is the first person in the empire, after your majesty, should not be expiated by the same penalty, which ought to be inflicted on a man of the lowest birth. We

are therefore of opinion, that your majesty should content yourself with disgracing your son, for some time: it is incumbent on you to banish him from your presence; and if this punishment should not render him wiser for the future, you may then disinherit him, and nominate for your successor another of your sons, who does not degenerate from the virtue of his ancestors.'

The advice of the young Yncas was not so moderate. They all cried out that the prince ought to die, that the empire might be delivered from a tyrant, and the royal family from a member that stained it with dishonour. They acknowledged, indeed, that a first offence might be pardoned; but at the same time maintained, that as the prince, instead of reforming his irregular behaviour, suffered himself to be daily abandoned to new excesses, his life could not have too short a duration, lest the number and enormity of his crimes should draw down the displeasure of the Sun upon the family of the Yncas, and the whole empire.

The elders in the assembly, who foresaw the fatal consequences that might attend the death of the prince, demanded of the young Yncas, if they were certain to find one man in all the kingdom, bold enough to plunge his dagger in the heart of their monarch's son? And should they happen to meet with such a person, could they undertake to appease the sedition such a punishment would infallibly raise among the people? 'No, Sire,' added they, 'let us not flatter ourselves with the possibility of finding, among all your subjects, any man who will presume to stretch his hand against the prince. Whoever should but dare to think of such an action, ought doubtless to be persuaded, that the earth would open, in a moment, and swallow down both him, and all his relations, with the very city and province that gave him birth.'

Whether the Ynca was sensible of the danger he should incur, by treating the prince with too much severity; or whether some remains of tenderness for his son gave a check to his vengeance; he resolved to conform himself to the advice of the elders: to which effect, he disgraced the prince, and banished him some years from the court; threatening if he did not change his manner of life, to disinherit him, and receive another of his children into his place. As to the select virgin, whatever reluctance she had to



to survive her shame and dishonour, the Ynca omitted nothing capable of affording her any consolation. He gave her to understand, that as her fault was involuntary, she could not be censured, with any justice. He made her several considerable presents; and, some time afterwards, gave her in marriage to the governor of the province of Chuncuri. But the governess, who by an infamous treachery, had prostituted the daughter of the Sun, was sentenced to be buried alive.

The prince (for the name he assumed in his exile was unknown) was banished to a great park called Chitta, and which was laid out in a variety of fine pastures, replenished with a vast number of flocks and herds, consecrated to the Sun. He was commanded for his punishment, to tend these cattle, with the other shepherds and herdsmen, who were enjoined to have a watchful eye over his conduct, and be very careful to prevent his escape.

The disgraced prince passed three years in this rural life; but at the conclusion of that period, when it was least expected, he one day about noon, and without any attendants, entered the palace of the Ynca his father, and immediately caused his arrival to be notified to the king; adding, that he came charged with a particular embassy to his majesty.

The Ynca was exceedingly enraged at these tidings, and refused to favour his son with the audience he desired: but commanded him by one of his courtiers, to return to his place of exile; adding, that if he hesitated the least in his compliance, he should suffer immediate death, for his rebellion against the orders of his sovereign; orders which he was sensible none were ever suffered to violate, even in the most inconsiderable circumstance.

These menaces made but little impression on the prince; who replied, that he was not come to infringe his majesty's commands, and that he only paid obedience to another Ynca, who was as great a prince as his father, and had sent him to discover some particulars, of the utmost importance, to the king. 'If his majesty,' added he, 'would be informed of what I have to relate to him, I desire nothing more than his permission to approach him: but if he has no such inclination, I have acquitted myself of my commission, and shall return to him who dispatched me to this

place; and give him an account of the answer I have received.'

The Ynca, astonished at the bold reply of his son, and still more at his affirming that he was sent by as great a prince as himself, gave orders at last for his admittance: for he was curious to know who could be so presumptuous to employ his son on messages of such a nature; and already determined to punish the criminals, as soon as he had any knowledge of them.

The prince, when he was introduced, presented himself before his father, with an air of great intrepidity. 'My lord,' said he, 'permit me to acquaint you, that this day, a little before noon, as I reposed myself under one of the rocks in the park of Chitta, where, in obedience to your commands, I tend the cattle of your father the Sun, a phantom appeared to me in the form of a man. I was uncertain whether I then slept, or was awake. This person was habited in a strange manner; and the air of his face was very different from ours. His beard was of an extraordinary length; his robe flowed over his body from his neck to his feet. In his right-hand he held a rein, with which he led an animal, that, to me, was entirely unknown. This man, advancing to me, uttered these expressions: 'My nephew, I am the son of the Sun, and the brother of the Ynca Mango Copac; I am likewise the brother of Coya Mama Oello Huaco, his wife and sister, the first of your ancestors; and consequently am the brother of your father, and you are all my brethren. My name is Viratocha Ynca. I am come to this place by the order of the Sun our parent, to give you very important advice, which you must communicate to the Ynca my brother. You must know, that most of the provinces of Chinchafuyu, which are part of his empire, as well as many other provinces that are not subject to him, have taken up arms, with an intention to dethrone him, and lay the city of Cusco, the capital of our kingdom, in ruins. Haste then to the Ynca my brother, and direct him, from me, to prepare for the prevention of these calamities, and use what remedies he shall judge most efficacious. As to your particular, be assured, that whatever difficulties you may hereafter happen

“happen to be engaged in, I will never  
 “forfake you. No, I will certainly assist  
 “you in the hour of need, as one who  
 “is part of my own flesh and blood.  
 “Never fear then to undertake the greatest  
 “affairs, provided they be worthy of your  
 “race, and the grandeur of your em-  
 “pire: and remember that I will always  
 “be favourable to you; that I will  
 “guard you with my constant defence,  
 “and send you all the succours that shall  
 “be necessary to your condition.” The  
 “Ynca Viracocha,” continued the prince,  
 “had scarce finished this discourse, when  
 “he disappeared: and I immediately  
 “came to acquaint your majesty with  
 “what he commanded me to declare.”

The king judged all this language to  
 be mere extravagance; and, instead of  
 crediting his son, was greatly incensed  
 against him. ‘Thou givest me,’ said he,  
 ‘a new proof of thy depraved disposition,  
 ‘and art come to amuse me in a serious  
 ‘manner, with the fables thou hast in-  
 ‘vented, with an intention to make thy  
 ‘dreams pass for the revelations of the  
 ‘Sun my father. Be gone, this moment,  
 ‘to Chitta; and if hereafter thou shalt  
 ‘dare to depart from thence, without my  
 ‘permission, expect to feel the effects of  
 ‘my just displeasure.’ As such menaces  
 admitted of no reply, the prince returned  
 to reassume his pastoral charge, in the  
 park of Chitta, where he continued three  
 months.

However, the Ynca’s brothers and  
 uncles, who were generally near his per-  
 son, fancied they discovered something  
 mysterious in the prince’s relation. They  
 were too much addicted to superstition,  
 and particularly with respect to dreams,  
 to entertain any other thoughts\*; and  
 they believed themselves obliged to inti-  
 mate their fears to the king, without any  
 reserve. ‘Sire,’ said they, ‘you can-  
 ‘not, with any appearance of reason,  
 ‘contemn the advice which has been  
 ‘imparted to you from the Ynca your  
 ‘brother. There is not the least pro-  
 ‘bability that the prince would invent  
 ‘the particulars he has related. What  
 ‘advantage could he derive from such a  
 ‘proceeding? And if he had not any to  
 ‘expect, how can you imagine, that he  
 ‘would commit such a sacrilege in the  
 ‘gaiety of his heart? And such it would

‘be, to invent a discourse like this, to  
 ‘the dishonour of the Sun your father;  
 ‘and it would be a repetition of the  
 ‘crime, to impose, with a serious air,  
 ‘those inventions on his father and so-  
 ‘vereign, for truths. We think it  
 ‘therefore necessary to weigh the prince’s  
 ‘words with deliberation, to offer sacri-  
 ‘fices to the Sun, to consult the gods and  
 ‘augurs, and use all imaginable diligence  
 ‘to discover the truth. To proceed in any  
 ‘other manner, would be to make our-  
 ‘selves wilfully obnoxious to the resent-  
 ‘ment of the Sun; it would be a provo-  
 ‘cation offered to the Ynca Viracocha  
 ‘his brother; in short, it would ac-  
 ‘cumulate one crime on the guilt of  
 ‘another.’

Notwithstanding the solidity of this  
 advice, the Ynca was exasperated against  
 his son, to such a degree, as made him  
 incapable of complying with the counsels  
 of his relations. He assured them it  
 would be the greatest weakness to regard  
 the discourse of a libertine wretch, who,  
 instead of rendering himself worthy of  
 his father’s favour by a reformation of  
 his disorderly conduct, was daily launch-  
 ing into new excesses. ‘This last pro-  
 ‘ceeding,’ continued he, ‘is alone suf-  
 ‘ficient to induce me to disinherit him,  
 ‘and I am now come to that resolution.  
 ‘In a little time, I will chuse one of his  
 ‘brothers in his place, who, by his pro-  
 ‘bity and gentle manners, has made  
 ‘himself the worthiest imitator of his  
 ‘ancestors, and best deserves the glo-  
 ‘rious title of the Son of the Sun. It  
 ‘would be unreasonable to suffer a sense-  
 ‘less wretch to ruin, in a moment, all  
 ‘the glorious establishments of the Yncas  
 ‘my predecessors; and it is much more  
 ‘important to prevent a calamity like  
 ‘this, than to regard the dreams of a  
 ‘rash criminal.’ The Ynca finished his  
 discourse with injoining his relations to  
 mention this affair no more, because  
 nothing could be more displeasing to him,  
 than to hear any mention of such a son.

About three months after the phan-  
 tom had made it’s appearance, a confused  
 report was spread of the insurrection of  
 the provinces of Ghinchasuyu, beyond  
 Atahualla, which is forty leagues north-  
 ward of Cusco. The tidings were, how-  
 ever, very uncertain, for it was impos-

\* The Yncas, and all other Gentiles, were extremely superstitious, with regard to dreams,  
 and especially if they had any relation to the king, the prince his heir, or the sovereign  
 pontiff: for they esteemed those as so many gods and oracles.



able to discover the author; and though they have been anticipated by the relation the Prince Viracocha \* made to his father, they were despised by the king, who only regarded them as a fictitious story, calculated with a design to renew the discourse of the phantom, who was now no longer the subject of any conversation. Some days afterwards, the same report spread still more, without any possibility of its being verified, because the enemies had closely shut up all the passes, so that these tidings were as doubtful as the former. But at last they were fully informed by a third account, that the nations known by the names of Chancas, Uramarcas, Villcas, Ultusullas, Hanco-Huallas, and others, were revolted, and had put to death the governors whom the king had established over them, and that they were marching to besiege the city of Cusco, with an army of above forty thousand men.

All these nations were formerly subject to the Yncas, out of fear of their arms, rather than any inclination to obey them. They always retained an aversion to their sovereigns, and only waited for an opportunity to make it appear with effect. They now thought the favourable moment appeared, in the reign of the Ynca Yahuarhuacac; and were sensible, that warlike abilities were the least part of this prince's character; that his name kept him in perpetual alarms; that the reproachful conduct of his son, the Ynca Viracocha, constantly perplexed him to the greatest degree; and that he had even proceeded to disgrace that prince. These were the motives that induced them to assemble, with all expedition, and with as much privacy as possible, in hopes of surprising the Ynca in Cusco. Three brothers, the principal Curacas † of three great provinces, in the nation called Chanca, were the authors of the revolt. The first, whose name was Huaco Hualla, was a young gentleman about six and twenty years of age, and was created general of the army. The second was called Tumay Huaracac; and the third, Astu Huaracac. The two last were appointed lieutenant-generals.

Nothing could equal the surprise and confusion of the Ynca Yahuarhuacac,

when he heard the enemies were on their march. He could not persuade himself, that they were in a condition to revolt; for since the reign of the Ynca Mango Copac, to his own, none of the provinces conquered by his predecessors had rebelled. This false security had prevented him from using the precautions necessary to allay the storm; so that he saw himself incapable of opposing his foes. He had no sufficient time to raise forces, and the city of Cusco was destitute of a competent garrison to defend it.

In this extremity, the Ynca resolved to give way to the fury of the rebels, till he had received such succours as might enable him to face them. To accomplish this, he proposed to retire to Collafuyu, where, at least, he might preserve his life, for he depended on the fidelity of the inhabitants of that province. With this intention, he departed from the capital of his empire, only attended by a few Yncas; but he advanced no farther than the pass of Muyna, six leagues from Cusco, and there discontinued his progress, that he might be more easily informed of the enemy's designs.

In the mean time, the city of Cusco was in the utmost consternation after the king's retreat. All the inhabitants were sensible of the danger; and there was no chief who presumed either to speak his sentiments, or undertake their defence. The people, to prevent the calamities that threatened them, fled from all parts, in search of some place to which they might safely retire. Chance conducted some of them to the Prince Viracocha: they informed him of the rebellion of the inhabitants of Chinchafuyu, and the retreat of the Ynca his father, who was in no capacity to resist his enemies, and prevent the desolation of his capital.

The prince was sensibly affected with these melancholy tidings, and thought it incumbent on him to use some expedient to avert the miseries that threatened the empire. He dispatched, to several parts, the inhabitants of Cusco who had found him in his solitude; and sent away several shepherds, who accompanied him, with orders to animate all the Indians they should happen to meet,

\* This name was given to the eldest son of the Ynca Yahuarhuacac, after he had seen the apparition in the park of Chitra.

† Curaca signifies, a lord of many vassals.

and direct them, as soon as possible, to join the Ynca their king, with all the arms they were capable of providing: after which, he bent his course towards Muyna, where the king his father had taken up his residence; and arrived there in a very short time.

He presented himself before the Ynca, covered with sweat and dust, and grasping a spear in his hand: 'My lord,' said he, approaching to him, 'is it possible, then, that the monarch of this empire should be moved by the false or real tidings of the rebellion of a few vassals, to abandon his city and palace, and fly from a people he never beheld? Can you patiently suffer the house of the Sun your father, to be defenceless, and exposed to the power of the enemy? Can you permit it to be profaned by barbarians, and leave them to renew the abominations your glorious ancestors have abolished? Can you allow them to sacrifice men, women, and children, and commit the most enormous sacrileges, in that sacred place? But if you can bear such insults as these, what account will you render of the virgins consecrated to the Sun? How shall they preserve that chastity to which they are devoted? What can hinder them from being victims to the brutality of the hostile soldiers? Should the desire of prolonging our lives a few days, prompt us to consent to such calamities? Permit them who will! For my part, I will confront the enemy; and sooner be hewed in a thousand pieces, than ever suffer them to enter Cusco. I cannot be an indolent spectator of the cruelties and abominations those barbarians will commit in the capital of this empire, founded by the god of Day and his descendants. Let all who interest themselves in the glory of our parent the Sun, follow me. If with their assistance I cannot chase away the foe, I will, at least, teach them to end their lives by an honourable death.'

He did not stay for the king's answer; but without taking any refreshment, immediately marched towards Cusco: however, he had the satisfaction to observe, that this discourse had awakened the courage of the Yncas of the blood royal, who accompanied the king in his retreat. They followed him, to the number of above five thousand; and none but some

aged men, who were useless in war, remained with the Ynca. This little army was likewise reinforced in their march, by multitudes who had abandoned the city of Cusco. As soon as it was known that the Prince Viracocha resolved to defend the capital of the empire, and the house of the Sun, one might behold them returning with emulation; at the same time promising to sacrifice their lives, rather than forsake their prince.

As there was no time to be lost, the Ynca Viracocha ordered all those who had joined him, to follow with the utmost expedition; and thus, instead of making any stay at Cusco, he took the road of Chincasuyu, through which he knew the enemy was marching: and this he did, in order to throw himself between their army and the city. He intended to attack them, notwithstanding the inequality of his forces; and to die gallantly, rather than behold the house of the Sun profaned by barbarians.

He halted in a spacious plain, half a league to the north of the city; and his army then consisted of eight thousand men, who were all determined to conquer, or fall with their prince. They were there informed, that the enemies were nine or ten leagues from Cusco, and had passed the great river Apurimac; but, at the same time, they had tidings of a very different nature: for the prince received intelligence, that considerable succours were sent to him from the province of Cantisuyu; and that a body of about twenty thousand men, composed of the nations by the name of Quechuas, Cotopampas, Cotaneras, Aymaras, and others, were marching to join him.

Notwithstanding the precautions the enemy had used to conceal their rebellion, the Quechuas, and other neighbouring nations, had discovered it: but as they believed they had not sufficient time to acquaint the Ynca with these transactions, and receive his orders, they of their own accord formed an army of all the forces they could assemble. These people had voluntarily submitted to the empire of the Ynca Copac Yupanqui. Their zeal for the public welfare, the consideration of their own interest, and the apprehensions of falling under the tyranny of the Chancas, to whom they were mortal enemies, animated them to have recourse to arms.

The Ynca Viracocha considered this event,



event, as an effect of the promise of his uncle Viracocha, who appeared to him in the park of Chitta; and took occasion from it to exhort his people to be courageous, because their interest was espoused by a god, who had already sent them a powerful assistance, and intended to combat at the head of the army. By this discourse he animated his soldiers to such a degree, that there was not one who did not look upon a victory as infallible.

During these transactions, the succours, that were impatiently expected, joined the army; and the prince received them with the greatest demonstrations of joy: but his caresses were chiefly paid to the Curacas of each nation, and their leaders; he applauded their fidelity, and promised the soldiers to recompense the signal services they had rendered him on this important occasion.

After the Curacas had adored their Ynca Viracocha, they acquainted him, that, in order to come to his assistance with the greater expedition, they had left five thousand men, two days march from thence. The Ynca, upon this information, held a council of war with his kindred; and it was there resolved, that the Curacas should be ordered to acquaint the auxiliary troops, by an express, of all that had passed; and directed them to hasten their march to certain eminences in the neighbourhood, where they should form an ambuscade, and observe the motions of the enemy. It was added, that if the rebel army seemed disposed for battle, those troops should watch the proper time to charge them in the rear, whilst the Ynca, and his allies, attacked them in the front; but if they did not see the armies engaged, they should continue in their ambuscade, and be perpetually upon their guard.

Two days after these new succours had possessed themselves of the situations pointed out to them, the van-guard of the enemy was discovered on a rising ground near Rimac Tampu: for, being informed that the Ynca Viracocha was six leagues from them, they continued their march, and ordered their rear-guard to advance. These latter joined them at Sacahuana, three leagues and a half from

the Prince Viracocha; who sent deputies thither, to offer them a general pardon, if they would return to their duty, and promise, for the future to live in peace with the Yncas.

But the Chancas, who knew that the Ynca Yahuarhuacac had abandoned the city of Cusco, and fled with great precipitation, judged this proceeding of the son to be only a bravado, and refused to give his deputies an audience, dismissing them without hearing their proposals. The next day they decamped from Sacahuana, and marched directly towards the Ynca's army; but notwithstanding their utmost diligence, the order of battle which they were obliged to observe, prevented them from coming up to him before night.

The Prince Viracocha, seeing the enemies so near him, dispatched new messengers to offer them his pardon once more; but this deputation had no better effect than the former. The Chancas, who were already encamped, and flattered themselves with an approaching victory, refused to admit the deputies into their presence; and only ordered them to be acquainted, that the next day would discover whose province it was to command, and who had a right to offer pardon.

That day had no sooner begun to dawn, than the two armies ranged themselves for battle, with loud cries, accompanied with the sound of hautboys, cornets, timbrels, and trumpets\*. The Ynca Viracocha put himself at the head of his forces, and was the first who charged the enemy. Each army discovered an equal ardour. The Yncas, who accompanied their prince, formed a battalion around him, which presented a very formidable appearance. The Chancas sustained the shock with a wonderful intrepidity; and the combat lasted till noon, whilst victory seemed to declare for neither host.

In the mean time the five thousand men, who formed the ambush, charged the right wing of their foes so seasonably, and with so much vigour, that they obliged them to give way, and retreat with some precipitation: notwithstanding which, the Chancas, far from being in-

\* These instruments were used in war, in order to strike the enemy with consternation. The Indians imagined, that the power of their god gave these instruments of music two contrary effects; one to charm their ears with harmony, the other to inspire their enemies with terror.

timidated with this disgrace, exerted a greater vivacity. Their mortification to see the victory, with which they had flattered themselves, begin to waver, roused them to such a degree, that in a few moments they regained the ground they had lost.

The combat being thus restored to its former equality, continued two hours longer with great vigour, and little disparity on either side. One circumstance alone decided the advantage: for, in the heat of the battle, all the stones and trees in the plain were transformed into men\* armed for the defence of their prince. This new succour which the Sun, to accomplish his promise, sent to the Ynca Viracocha, disconcerted the Chancas: they were unable to stand against such superior forces; their ranks were broken, and all their army thrown into disorder.

They disputed the battle, however, for some time, like desperate men, who were now determined to die gloriously: but at last, they all fled in confusion, and the Ynca remained master of the field. The enemies were pursued in their flight, till they acknowledged themselves overcome; and then the prince, that he might not seem as inhuman as the barbarians, caused a retreat to be sounded: he went in person through the field of battle, ordered the wounded to be dressed, the dead to be interred, and gave the prisoners liberty to return home.

During the combat, which continued above eight hours, such a deluge of blood was shed, that the waters of a little river were all discoloured, and considerably swelled by the crimson torrent: for which reason, the plain, where the battle was fought, was afterwards called Yahuar Pompa, which signifies, the field of blood. The slain were computed to exceed thirty thousand; of which number the Ynca lost eight thousand, and the rebels the rest. The general of the latter, and the two lieutenant-generals, were taken prisoners, and reserved to grace the triumphant entry, which the conqueror intended to make into the capital of the empire.

The Ynca Viracocha dispatched three

messengers to carry the news of this great victory to different parts. The first was sent to the house of the Sun, to render the most grateful acknowledgments to him, for his assistance in the enemy's defeat. The second had it in charge to inform the priests, and those of their order who had fled, that nothing more was incumbent on them, than to return to the temple of the Sun, to thank him for his protection, and offer new sacrifices to his divinity; he was also to acquaint the select virgins, that the Sun, through the merit of their prayers, had granted victory to the prince. The third was commissioned to find out the Ynca Yahuarhuacac, and give him a full relation of all that had passed, and earnestly entreat him not to leave the place of his present residence, till the prince's return to his majesty.

The prince, having dismissed the messengers, made his army pass before him in review; after which he kept about his person seven thousand men, selected out of his best troops, and then disbanded the rest. As to the Curacas, he promised them an acknowledgment, suitable to the service they had rendered him: he then appointed two of his uncles his lieutenant-generals, with orders to follow him.

Two days after his victory, he marched through the country with his little army, intending to visit his enemies, and relieve them, by his presence, from the apprehensions they might suffer by the consciousness of their guilt. With this intention, he hastened his march into the province of Antahuaylla, the country of the Chancas; and, at his arrival, was surprised with a spectacle that charmed him exceedingly: for he beheld, just before him, a mixed multitude of women and children, bearing green boughs in their hands; and, at small intervals of time, crying out—'O great and only sovereign, offspring of the Sun, and friend of the poor, pity our condition, and pardon our crimes!'

The prince received them with the most engaging goodness; and gave them to understand, that their fathers and husbands were the authors of all their misery, but that he vouchsafed his pardon to every rebel, and only came thi-

\* The Yncas were very dextrous in illustrating their adventures, by astonishing circumstances. When the Ynca Viracocha fought for the defence of the house of the Sun, he was, from time to time, reinforced by fresh supplies from Cusco, or the adjoining cities; and, from thence, took occasion to propagate the report, that the stones of the country were, by the Sun's permission, changed to men, armed for his defence.



ther to grant a general indemnity for whatever had passed. He recommended to their particular care, those widows and orphans, who had lost their fathers and husbands, in the battle of Yahuar Pompa.

In this manner he took a progress through all the provinces that had revolted, and, in each of them, established governors, on whose fidelity he could safely depend. He left garrisons, in some places, to protect them, in case of need; and having thus provided for the defence of the country, he hastened his return to Cusco, loaded with the blessings of the people, who, instead of these instances of mercy, expected nothing less than a general massacre.

The prince arrived at the capital, in the space of one moon\* after he last had left it. He chose to make his entry on foot, to convince the inhabitants, that the quality of a soldier was more amiable to him than the title of a monarch. He was surrounded by his martial troops, and walked between his uncles, the two lieutenant-generals: the captives, who were reserved to grace his triumph, marched slowly, with an air of dejection, behind their conqueror.

The people received the victorious prince, with all the acclamations and evidences of joy, that the sight of a deliverer could inspire. The aged Yncas advanced to meet him; and after they had paid their adorations to him, as son of the Sun, they mixed with the soldiers to have a part in the triumph. 'Alas!' cried they, 'why were not we young enough to share the glory of combating under so heroick a captain?' The Coya Mama Chicya his mother, attended by his sisters, aunts and cousins, and followed by a vast number of the Pallas\*, soon afterwards received him with songs of festivity, and all the marks of a profound respect: some of them embraced him with the most endearing tenderness; others gently wiped away the sweat that bedewed his face, and the dust that covered and incommoded him; most of them scattered fragrant herbs and flowers in his way.

The prince, with all his court, went to the temple of the Sun; and made his entrance with his feet bare, in conformity

to the custom: he there offered up his grateful acknowledgments to that glorious luminary, for the happy success with which he had prospered his arms. He afterwards visited the select virgins; and when he had performed all the proper ceremonies, he thought it time for him to return to the Ynca Yahuarhuacac, in the pass of Muyna, where he had lately left him.

The father did not vouchsafe to his son that reception which seemed due to the merit of his victory; he assumed an air of seriousness and solemnity, that was far from intimating a perfect satisfaction. However, it was not easy to determine, whether jealousy at his son's glory, or shame at the recollection of his own unmanly indolence, or fear lest the young conqueror should deprive him of his throne, moved him to treat the prince in such a manner. Perhaps each of these passions had it's influence; and their united impressions might produce that sullen air, which gloomed in his countenance.

Whatever might be the cause, their conversation, in this publick interview, was of a very short continuance. But when the rest of the company were withdrawn, they discoursed together for a considerable time; but the subject of their conference was a secret to all the world. It has been imagined, that they debated which of the two should sway the sceptre, the father or the son; and this opinion received some confirmation, when it was known, that the prince refused to let his father return to Cusco, which he had been so pusillanimous as to abandon; and doubtless this pretext alone seemed to the son a sufficient inducement to dethrone his parent, who was then in no condition to oppose the resolution of the Ynca Viracocha; because he was informed, that the Ynca, as well as the capital of the empire, favoured his son's pretensions; and thus, either through weakness of mind, or apprehensions of a civil war, the unfortunate father was constrained to accept the conditions imposed on him by the prince.

The stipulations between them being settled, the Ynca Viracocha gave orders for a stately palace to be erected in the pass of Muyna and Quiespicangha; and

\* The Indians compute their months by the revolution of the moon.

† This name was appropriated both to the married and maiden princesses of the blood royal.

took care to improve the delightful situation, with all the advantages and embellishments that could be desired in a royal palace: the eye was ravished with a beautiful variety of parks and gardens, woods and artificial waters; whilst the River Yucay intermixing its pure streams with these lovely objects, diffused new charms through all the delicious prospects.

Whilst the new palace employed the skill of the artist appointed to complete it, the Ynca Viracocha took up his residence at Cusco. It was then that he quitted the yellow border, for one that was red\*; and yet he had so much moderation, as not to permit his father to resign that mark of royalty. But though the king continued to wear that honourable badge of empire, yet the reins of government were entirely in the prince's hands.

As soon as the palace was finished, the prince furnished his father with every thing necessary to the conveniencies and satisfaction of life. He assigned him a train of attendants, suitable to his high rank, and left him destitute of nothing but the regal power.

The Ynca Yahuarhuacac, notwithstanding all these enjoyments, was far from tasting any tranquillity in his solitude. He became insensible of all the pleasures his retinue were assiduous to procure him: he resigned himself to gloominess of soul, and melancholy musings, which in a little time plunged him into despair. He could not turn his thoughts to the throne, from whence he had been obliged to descend, nor meditate on the conduct of his son, without starting into distraction. In the day, he was tormented with sad and painful reflections; and the night discomposed him

with dismal visions, which seemed to threaten him with new misfortunes: so that he at last resolved, by poison, to put an end to his days, that were rendered insupportable by the bitterness of affliction. It was with difficulty, indeed, that he came to this determination; and the fear of displeasing his parent the Sun, dissuaded him from it for some time. He was ashamed to commit a crime, which he had punished in his subjects, with the utmost severity: for, during all his long reign, he had been indefatigable in his endeavours to exterminate the pernicious use of poison in his dominions; and could not, without the greatest mortification, reflect, that he was preparing, by his own example, to destroy, in one moment, all the good he had been establishing in several years†. But his despair made all these reflections unavailing: he prepared the fatal draught with his own hand; and was now ready to raise it to his lips, when the Moon‡, touched with the crime her son was hastening to commit, endeavoured to prevent his perishing in so fatal a manner.

There happened to reside in the college of the select virgins of Cusco, a young lady about seventeen years of age, called Acellahua, which signifies the Mansion of the Stars. She received this name, to intimate the sparkling vivacity of her eyes, whose lustre was insupportable to every beholder. This lady, from her early years, had made history and poetry her favourite studies; and the hymns she composed in honour to the Sun, were thought preferable to those of the greatest poets. She perfectly remembered all the ancient and modern transactions that had been related to her by her Mamacuna§; she likewise surpassed her companions in

\* The border was an ornament for the head, peculiar to the Ynca and his eldest son; and was properly a bandage of wool, in the form of fringe, which covered the forehead from temple to temple. The Ynca wore a red, and the prince his son a yellow border.

† Among the Indians were numbers of both sexes, who made it their profession to destroy others by poison; some kinds of which operated by a sudden, others by a lingering death: they had other sorts which would deprive the persons they were practised upon, of their reason, and disfigure their countenances to a horrid degree of deformity. Sometimes these pernicious ingredients would cover the whole body with black and white pustules, that crippled all their limbs. The Yncas were solicitous to prevent such practices among their subjects.

‡ The Yncas believed the Moon to be the wife and sister of the Sun; and as they called themselves sons of the Sun, they were frequently styled the sons of the Moon too.

§ This name, in general, signifies a woman appointed to discharge the functions of a mother, and is strictly applicable to those of the select virgins, who had grown aged in the college of the Sun. The whole regulation of that college was consigned to their care: some of them were like abbesses of convents, and others resembled the superiors of novitates. They instructed the younger select virgins in their divine worship, and taught them the various works of the loom and needle.



every manual art, wherein the select virgins were trained up: and all these amiable qualities were still heightened by her admirable modesty and solid virtue.

This accomplished person was treated by the Mamacuna, with much more tenderness than the rest of the select virgins who were placed under her care. She was always in the presence of that venerable matron; who took a peculiar pleasure in bestowing new cultivations on a genius, that was so correspondent to all her cares.

One day, when they were together, the Mamacuna took notice, that Acllahua appeared extremely discomposed; she thought her countenance plainly intimated some inward dissatisfaction of soul.

'What may be the reason, my dear daughter,' said she, 'that I see you to-day, without that serene and easy air, which used to be so peculiar to you?'

'Ah, my honoured mother!' replied Acllahua, 'you relieve me from a great perplexity: for I was at a loss in what manner I should dispose myself, to request a favour, which I most humbly entreat you to grant to me.'—'You may speak,' said the Mamacuna, 'without any reserve; and I will consent to all you desire, provided it be reasonable.'—'You yourself shall judge,' replied Acllahua. 'The affair is to prevent the Ynca Yahuarhuacac from drinking poison in despair: he is preparing to empty the fatal bowl; and his crime will infallibly draw down the displeasure of the Sun on the royal family, the sacred city of Cusco, and all the empire of the Yncas.'—'My dearest daughter,' interrupted the Mamacuna, 'I must needs think your zeal for your country very commendable; but must likewise blame your indiscretion, for imagining a son of the Sun capable of acting in so criminal a manner. But though the fact should be as you suppose, how would you take upon you to prevent it?'

'You shall have all the satisfaction you desire,' said Acllahua. 'Last night I was waked out of my slumber by a

dreadful dream, the particulars of which I have forgot; and can only recollect, that at the time I was repeating a hymn I had composed in honour of the Sun, I heard an extraordinary noise at my chamber-door; when turning myself towards the place from whence the alarm proceeded, I beheld a shining arm, adorned with pearls, intermixed with emeralds of an admirable lustre. This arm moved towards me; though I could not discover the body to which it belonged. When it was near my bed, it bended towards me, in a kind of salutation, and then folding itself round my waist, raised me up in a moment, and conveyed me to the pavilion of the Moon\*, where it placed me on a silver throne, at a little distance from the throne of the Sun's consort, and near the bodies of the deceased queens†. My eyes were dazzled with the brightness that surrounded the face of the Moon; and this glorious light made such an impression on my soul, as, for a few moments, suspended all its faculties. Such was my condition, when my ears were pierced with a loud and dreadful voice, that awakened me from my trance. "Give attention, Acllahua," said this voice: "the Ynca Yahuarhuacac is now preparing to commit an enormous crime. This prince, who was commanded by his father the Sun to exterminate from the empire of the Yncas the abominable use of poison, is now determined to practise it on himself. Should he perpetuate his resolution, vengeance will fall heavy, not only on him, but on the family of the Yncas, and all their empire. The Sun will elsewhere establish other children, more worthy of his blood; he will chuse other adorers, other consorts, and another temple."

I was so confounded with these menacing expressions, that I had no power to reply; but fell prostrate on the earth, before the throne of the Moon, and uttered the anguish of my soul in sighs and tears. But whilst I was thus affected with sad impressions, the lumi-

\* Though the Yncas considered the Moon as the sister and spouse of the Sun, and even their own mother, yet they never adored her in the quality of a goddess; they never offered sacrifices to her, nor erected temples in her honour. They only raised for her a great pavilion near the Temple of the Sun, to serve her for an habitation; and she was there painted on a plate of silver, with the face of a woman.

† In the pavilion of the Moon, on each side of her picture, the bodies of the deceased queens were ranged in order, according to their seniority.

‘nous arm that conveyed me thither, raised me from the ground, and placed me, once more, on the silver throne; and then a voice, very different from the former, for it was exceedingly soft and melodious, spoke to me in these terms. “O Acllahua! thou alone canst preserve the empire of the Yncas from destruction. Go then, without any hesitation, to the King Yahuarhuacac; and endeavour, by the most prevailing reasons, to dissuade him from drinking the poison he has prepared. Tell him, that a prince, and especially a son of the Sun, ought always to preserve an equality of mind, and be serene amidst all the vicissitudes of fortune. Remember, Acllahua, to take the cotton girdle, which you will find on the bed in your apartment; you will experience it’s virtue in the needful hour.”

‘The voice had scarce uttered these expressions, when the luminous arm embraced me anew, and conveyed me back to my chamber; where I really found the girdle that was promised me, and it is the very same you now see me wear.’

The Mamacuna was seized with horror at this relation. ‘Great gods!’ cried she, ‘what do I now hear!—And is it possible, daughter, you should entertain a thought of leaving this sacred mansion? Have you forgotten the conditions on which you were placed here, and the obligations to which you consented to be subject? As you are selected to be the spouse of the Sun, you have devoted yourself to perpetual virginity; and are obliged to shun the sight, not only of men, but even women; and you would now expose yourself to the promiscuous view of both! In what manner do you propose to be faithful to your engagements? Are you not very sensible, that the palace of the Ynca Yahuarhuacac is inhabited by men and women? Besides, have you considered the fatal consequence, to which your imprudent zeal will make you obnoxious; the moment you step out of this house, you are deemed guilty of adultery: the law is most express; and you will inevitably be entombed alive.’

\* The select virgins passed their whole lives in a cloister, and neither saw men nor women: they had no communication with any but themselves; and none but the Coya, that is, the Queen, and her daughters, were permitted to enter the college.

‘Yes, my dearest mother,’ replied Acllahua, ‘I am sensible, both of my engagements, and the dangers to which I expose myself: but no considerations are sufficient to intimidate or detain me. Should I be so fortunate as to dissuade the Ynca from his fatal purpose, what blessings shall I secure to my country by that important service! But should disappointment and death be the consequences of my attempt, I shall at least enjoy the glory of having sacrificed myself for the welfare of my family, and all the nation.’

‘No,’ interrupted the Mamacuna, ‘I will never suffer the dearest of all the virgins confided to my care, to perish by an ignominious death; and could you alledge reasons never so unanswerable, do not flatter yourself with obtaining my consent: nay, should you be certain of succeeding in your design, the Ynca will behold your excursion with horror, and will be the first to deliver you to the Ynca Viracocha, his son, who will sentence you to all the severity denounced by the law. Who then will defend you from that fate? and how reproachful will your conduct prove to religion! What a dishonour will you be to this holy habitation, and all your sisters; and with how much mortification will you affect your governors! Ah! my dearest daughter,’ added she, with flowing eyes, ‘if you have no apprehensions of the rigour with which you are threatened by the law, yet indulge a generous fear of afflicting me with the mortal pangs I must sustain, when I behold myself loaded with infamy, by the punishment of a select virgin.’

The Mamacuna’s tears made a tender impression on Acllahua; but as dreams were then regarded as certain prognosticks from whence infallible consequences could be drawn, with respect to the good or evil that might succeed, the select virgin was too great a proficient in her religion, to make her duty subservient to the sentiments of compassion that rose in her soul. ‘I am under a necessity,’ said she, ‘of obeying the commands of our mother the Moon; and the calamities that threaten both ourselves and the empire, are much greater than those

you



'you preface from my intended conduct.'

'Your obstinacy,' replied the Mamacuna, 'is perfectly surprising; and you run blindly to your ruin. When people rashly expose themselves to apparent dangers, they ought to sink under the consequence; and when we grow discontented with our proper condition, we run the hazard of plunging ourselves into greater dissatisfactions.'

'I foresee, that you will suffer the same misfortune that befel the physician Uruya. He was in a happy situation, but very discontented; and ambition was his ruin.'—'What happened then to this physician,' interrupted Acllahua? 'I will make you acquainted with the particulars,' replied the Mamacuna; 'and therefore desire your attention.'

#### THE HISTORY OF THE PHYSICIAN URUYA.

IN the reign of the Ynca Lloque Yupanqui, the third of our monarchs, a very famous physician, named Uruya, lived at Hatun-Colla, in the country of Collasuyu. The Ynca Lloque Yupanqui, who conquered that province, engaged this physician to attend him to Cusco, where he liberally supplied him with all the enjoyments necessary to make life agreeable. Uruya, encouraged by these favours, followed his profession very successfully for several years. The Ynca consulted him in all indispositions, that affected either himself or his relations; and daily loaded him with rich presents. But whether it be, that the greatest men are liable to the greatest disasters, or that ambition made Uruya dissatisfied with his fortune, he took it into his head to surpass all his fraternity. Till then, indeed, he had confined his labours, like them, to the cure of distempers; but now he imagined he should distinguish himself, if he could but invent a specific for all diseases. He was a long time engaged in this discovery; and applying himself to study the various constitutions of mankind, he gained a perfect knowledge of all plants and herbs, that were either salutary or injurious. At last, after a long and laborious search, he grew persuaded that he had found out the preservative he so passionately desired: it was an extract of

several drugs, which he called the Universal Preservative; of which he made the first experiment on himself, and then recommended it to his neighbours and friends; who having used it with a seeming success, it obtained a general demand; every person was desirous to possess it; and the people contended who should bestow the greatest praises on the physician and his preservative. The fame of this wonderful discovery being at last communicated to the Ynca Lloque Yupanqui, that prince had recourse to the remedy without the least hesitation, and used it as freely as his subjects. The court, the city, and the whole empire, called for the miraculous specific. It was to be reduced to powder, and taken every morning and evening: they even mixed it with their food and drink; and several persons chewed it the whole day. By an effect of chance, no distemper was mentioned in Cusco for the space of three years, during which this madness prevailed: but as the best things, when they are abused, degenerate into poison, so these powders had that effect. The generality of those who had taken them, fell into a languishing disorder, and multitudes of them died. It was even with great difficulty, that the Ynca himself recovered; and now there wanted nothing more to open the people's eyes. Every one rejected the imaginary preservative, as a fatal poison. The physician was treated as a common murderer: all his zeal for the public good was unable to protect him; and he was condemned to die by the law, which ordained that punishment for every one who deprived another of life.

The Mamacuna now addressed herself to Acllahua: 'Daughter,' said she, 'this history ought to warn you of the danger we incur, when we would perform actions beyond our abilities. A false prudence betrays us to our ruin: and therefore let me persuade you to change your resolution, and not be accessory to your own destruction.'—'My dear mother,' replied Acllahua, 'I see nothing in the example you have related, that should induce me to alter my intentions. I can give you a number of other histories, that will convince you of your injustice in opposing my design: but it is not necessary to relate them to you; for you are better acquainted with them than myself, and I owe them to your information. I

' will only confine myself to one instance, which I had from the Mamacuna your predecessor. One day, as I related some stories to her that she thought very entertaining, I desired her to give me one, in her turn. She consented to my request; and delivered herself to this effect.

#### THE STORY OF THE VASE OF THREE METALS.

**T**HE provinces called Charcas, beyond the narrow pass of Collasuyu, with respect to Cusco, were formerly governed by a prince of an amiable disposition, who feared the gods\*, and whose only passion was to give happiness to his people. All persons had access to his presence, and he listened to the poor without any impatience or contempt; nor did he ever dismiss the unfortunate, without some consolation. But notwithstanding he was so indefatigable to accomplish his generous desires, he perpetually met with oppositions, that were in a manner invincible. He was frequently disturbed by his neighbours, who made inroads into his dominions, and carried off the greatest part of his people; whom they either devoured, or offered in sacrifice to their gods.

This good prince would sometimes endeavour to oppose the fury of his enemies, by reprisals, but was generally repulsed with loss; but one of his greatest afflictions was an unknown distemper, that, from the time he first ascended the throne, had attacked his own family, and those of the principal lords of his provinces. The malady began with a kind of scurf, which from the crown of the head, gradually diffused itself over the whole body: it corroded the skin and flesh, infected the bones, and ended in death. In vain had the physicians endeavoured to cure this distemper; their remedies, instead of assuaging, only added new force to the malignity.

The Prince of the Charcas was so afflicted at the calamity which invaded his family, that, by a public proclamation through all his dominions, and the neighbouring territories, he promised half of his provinces to any one who could cure his relations, and the lords of his court,

of the distemper with which they were visited. Several physicians presented themselves on this occasion; but their prescriptions were altogether ineffectual. At last, a magician, named Churi, arrived at the palace; and being introduced to the king—'Sire,' said he, 'I have long been acquainted with the cause of that distemper which afflicts your children, and the principal lords of your empire; but as it was needless to make it known to your majesty, unless I could have recommended an effectual remedy, I was obliged to be silent, that I might not drive you to desperation. In vain, for several years, did I consult the secrets of my art, to enable me to cure this leprosy. All my endeavours were defeated; and I became sensible, that the malady was to continue as long as its author was alive; and that the remedy, during all that period, would be unavoidably concealed. But that the impediment is now removed; and the magician is dead, who thus persecuted your family, in revenge for your refusing him, in marriage, one of your majesty's relations, whom he passionately loved. Two days are passed since I heard of his death; and the moment I was certain of the tidings, I left nothing unattempted to discover the remedy, which is of so much importance to your majesty.

'After some operations, I discovered, that in the northern limits of your dominions, and on the highest mountain, named Utumcuna, there is a vessel composed of three metals, gold, silver, and copper, and which contains a balsamick liquor, proper to cure the leprosy, and all malignant defilements of the skin, and that this treasure can be acquired by no mortal, but one of your majesty's sons. However,' added the magician, 'though the remedy be now discovered, there are many difficulties to be surmounted, before it can be obtained. The mountain, as you well know, is in a manner inaccessible: from the bottom to the middle, it is inhabited by tygers, and other fierce animals, who permit no human creature to approach with impunity: and from the middle to the top, the eye beholds nothing but ghastly rocks and precipices, that seem almost impracticable:

\* The Charcas adored tygers and serpents.



cable: so that it will require the greatest magnanimity and conduct to succeed in this enterprize.

The Prince of the Charcas was exceedingly discomposed at the magician's speech: his colour frequently changed; he sometimes lifted up his eyes to heaven, and as often directed them to the earth. 'Is it possible,' cried he, 'that any of my children should be able to surmount so many obstacles! I even think, that an hundred thousand men would be too insufficient for such an expedition; that they would all be devoured before they could reach the foot of the mountain: such a remedy might as well have been concealed, as ever made known, without a possibility of enjoying it.'

The magician, who saw the prince overwhelmed with melancholy thoughts, did his utmost to comfort him. 'Sire,' said he, 'I have had the honour to intimate to your majesty, that intrepidity and prudence will conduct the adventurer to the top of the mountain. These qualities are certainly to be found in some prince among your children: but if not, they are never to be expected in any other mortal. A remedy of such importance may inspire any one with an inclination to obtain it.—' Let me see, then,' interrupted the prince, 'if any of my children will sacrifice himself for the welfare of his family. Let them all be admitted into my presence.'

As soon as the princes were arrived, the magician, at the king's request, repeated to them all the particulars he had related to their father; and at the close of this account—'Princes,' added he, 'if the danger has any circumstances that can intimidate you, consider you ought to be animated by the advantages that will attend the possession of the vase of three metals.'

At these words, all the sons of the Prince of the Charcas unanimously replied, that emulation, as well as interest, incited them to so glorious an enterprize. 'We ought,' said they, 'to leave nothing unattempted to obtain such a treasure; and we would as soon chuse to be devoured by the wild beasts, or to perish among the precipices of the mountain, as to live in calamity, and see ourselves the reproach of our nation.'

The Prince of the Charcas was alarm-

ed to find all his children, who were forty-five in number, resolved on the adventure of the mountain; he reflected that they might, possibly, be all hastening to destruction. 'It is no way necessary,' said he, 'for every one of you to expose himself. Divide yourselves into two equal companies; and let the one continue with me, whilst the other employ their courage and address for the general welfare.—' No, my father,' replied the youngest, in the name of the rest; 'as we are equally interested in the cure, we intend to share the same danger, and will contend for the glory of preserving one another.—' At least,' interrupted the Prince of the Charcas, 'suffer me to prevail on you to draw lots, and let one of you remain here to comfort my declining age, and succeed to my dominions when I am dead.' The magician now interposed: 'My lord,' said he, 'that would be a vain precaution; for the lot perhaps might fall on him who is destined to make the vase of three metals his prize.'

When the prince saw that he could neither prevail on the magician, nor his own children—'Go then,' said he; 'and may the gods accompany you with their protection! I have only one thing to recommend to your observance: let each of you be as solicitous to defend his brothers, as he would be to save himself.'

The princes, after this, made the necessary preparations for their expedition: and when they had completed them, they all departed in a body; every one being armed in the manner he imagined most advantageous.

It required a journey of six days to arrive at the mountain Utumeuna. The last day of their march, they began to see troops of lions and tygers, of a monstrous size, bounding along the country: but that appearance had not sufficient terrors to make them proceed no farther, and they continued their progress with an heroic bravery of soul; at the same time sustaining several assaults, and leaving many of the furious animals dead on the earth. But as those enemies increased upon them, the farther they advanced, the eldest prince, who beheld twelve of his brothers wounded, proposed to them to return. 'If our approaches to the mountain,' said he, 'are so dangerous, what may

we

‘we not expect from the mountain itself? And if we find it so difficult in the plain, to preserve ourselves from being devoured, what defence will be left us in those ascents, where, instead of sufficient liberty for our necessary motions, we must employ our utmost skill to walk steadily? Besides, what probability have we of gaining the summit of this mountain, and climbing up declivities that seem so impassable, as those before us? And who can be certain that, though we should be so fortunate as to surmount all these obstacles, we shall at last find what we are now searching for? What assurance have we of success? Why, truly, the word of a magician, as great a barbarian, perhaps, as he whose vengeance we all suffer; and who doubtless would willingly destroy us in this place. Had he that benevolence for us, which he pretended, ought he not himself to procure the vase of three metals? But if this was an enterprize impossible for even a magician to perform, how can we flatter ourselves with any success?’

All the princes, except the youngest, approved of this discourse. ‘For my part,’ said this latter, ‘nothing shall make me consent to so dishonourable an action: I neither fear the rage of lions and tygers, nor the difficult ascent of these rocks; and will sooner die than return: and though you all should forsake me, I shall not cease to try my fortune. And should I not succeed in my attempt, I shall have this consolation in death, that I have done the most for my king, my family, and my country.’

The princes were extremely mortified at a contradiction, that so reproached their own timidity. ‘The youngest,’ said they, ‘affects to be the wisest among us; and is ambitious of the glory of being the last in returning. Let us leave him then to himself: when once he is alone, he will learn by experience, that a particular folly is not to be set in competition with the general prudence.’ Upon this, they began their march; leaving the mountain behind them, and returned by the way they came.

In the mean time, Apuquepa, for that was the young prince’s name, ascended the mountain with a steady pace, and with his lance overthrew in the dust the

first lion who came in his way; and being immediately assaulted by another, he mortally wounded him by the same weapon. But the lion, being rolled down by his own weight to the bottom of the mountain, dragged with him the lance of the young hero; who, as he was preparing to recover it, saw two tygers springing towards him in all the fury of hunger. His destruction had now been inevitable; had he not resorted to other arms, with which he had the precaution to furnish himself. He took a trumpet that hung by his side, and sounded it with all his might, and so terrible was the blast, that both the tygers immediately fled. The prince was so animated at this happy experiment, that he had now no inclination to draw his lance out of the lion’s body, but thought his trumpet a more infallible weapon. The event was answerable to his expectation, for as often as he saw any wild beast approaching, he blew the trumpet with his former success, and put all the lions and tygers to flight.

By this stratagem, the indefatigable prince arrived at the middle of the mountain, where he met with new difficulties; for which he was, however, prepared. But before he attempted to ascend higher, he reposed himself, and eat a little maize, and some roots which he had brought with him; and having by these refreshments regained his vigour, he began to pursue his progress. Sometimes he was obliged to climb from one rock to another, and leap over wide clefts, that opened a dreadful abyss before him; besides which, the stones frequently rolled from under his feet and hands, and, in their fall, made such an astonishing noise, that it seemed as if all the mountain was tumbling into ruins. But the prince, no way discouraged with these terrors, hung sometimes by his hands, whilst his eyes were in search of another place, where he might fasten himself with more security. At last, by a length of pains and toil, he ascended so high, that he discovered the vase of three metals, at the foot of a very thick tree; the sight of which so transported him, that he forgot all the perils and labour he had sustained: and, falling on his knees, he returned thanks to the gods for the succours they had afforded him; after which, he made a short repast, and fell asleep for some time.

Apu-



Apuquepa, when he waked, went to take up the vase, but found it strongly fastened to the foot of the tree, that defused it's boughs over it. He made several efforts to disengage it; but how great was his astonishment! when he beheld the tree, in proportion as he redoubled his strength, changing into a young lady of incomparable beauty, and with whose features he was well acquainted. He was so struck with admiration at the sight, that he had no power to speak; but the lady, who observed the discomposure into which this event had thrown him, began the discourse, and expressed herself in this manner.

'Apuquepa, my dearest cousin! may Heaven for ever crown you with it's blessings! You have restored me to my liberty, for which may our gods condescend to reward you! The magician Rurac, not being able to obtain me in marriage, carried me away by force, one day, as I was enjoying the cool air in the gardens of the prince your father, and my uncle. He conveyed me to his habitation, where I was shut up in a chamber nine days; on each of which he visited me twice, to entertain me with his passion, and entreat me to accept of him for my spouse: I rejected his suit with disdain, and loaded him with reproaches. The ninth day he assumed another tone—"If you will not," said he, very fiercely, "this very day consent to offer me your hand, I shall treat you in a different manner from what I have yet done:" but as I answered him only by my tears—"I have punished your father," continued he, "for opposing my demand, and all those whose counsels have been any impediment to my marriage are sharers of the same chastisement; it only now remains, that I avenge myself on your disdain; if you do not immediately present me with your hand, as a testimony of your compliance with my desires, you shall feel the effects of my indignation."—"Act whatever you are capable of performing," replied I; "death will be a thousand times more supportable to me, than the sight of an unjust ravisher."

The magician, mortified at this new reproach, cried out—"Tis now too much, and I will be amply avenged." Upon which he immediately

opened a calabash, which he held in his hand, and I saw it filled with a liquor as green as the verdure of the spring: he then sprinkled some drops of it on my head, and a chilling coldness instantly froze the blood in my veins, my feet became extended, like the root of a plant, and my arms and head shot out into branches covered with leaves. In vain I endeavoured to distinguish my body, I could only discover the trunk of a tree. In such a state did the magician place me on this mountain, and at my feet fixed the vessel you hold in your hands; and, after he had uttered some words which were not understood by me, he retired, and I have never seen him since.

Apuquepa being now freed from his perplexities by this discourse—"Princess," said he, "I think myself very fortunate in obtaining the vessel you mention; but the liberty to which I have restored you, compleats all my happiness." The princess was curious to know what treasure might be contained in that vessel, which had exposed him to so many dangers. "I shall have opportunity enough," said he, "to give you that satisfaction; at present something of more importance demands our attention: let us see how we may best quit this place."

Apuquepa, in pronouncing these words, turned to the side of the mountain on which he ascended; but was strangely surprized to see the prospect entirely changed. "Great gods," cried he, "what do I behold! I see an easy and gentle descent, in the very place that, a moment before, presented frightful rocks and precipices to my view; and then addressing himself to the princess—"Let us improve," said he, "the favour offered by the gods."—"You have expressed my thought," replied the princess, "and I was going to tell you, that we had a very agreeable way to walk down; and, if you did not discover it when you ascended, 'tis probable that the enchantment subsisted to the moment you seized the vase, which the magician placed at my feet; and this made the way you should have taken invisible."

The prince and princess proceeded without the least danger, to the middle of the mountain, and from thence to the plain. Apuquepa had recourse to his trumpet,

trumpet, to drive away all the wild beasts they met: and thus his fortitude and courage preserved him from such dangers, as any other mortal had certainly sunk under.

The rest of this history (said Acllahua) is not material to our purpose; and what I have related is sufficient to prove, that the greatest perils should never discourage us, when we would avoid greater calamities. I shall only add, that if Prince Apuquepa made no scruple to expose his life on the word of a magician, I ought with less hesitation to risk mine, on the command I have received from the Moon, the consort of our god the Sun.

Acllahua, at the conclusion of this discourse, placed her two hands on her right-shoulder, which was one act of their adoration, and then bringing them lower, she, without thinking on what she did, thrust her right-thumb into her girdle, with the virtue of which she was as yet unacquainted. But at the same instant the luminous arm presented itself before her, and a soft harmonious voice was heard to utter these words: 'O Acllahua! I obey both the Moon, and the wearer of that girdle. If you are desirous of going to the Ynca Yahuarhuacac, 'tis time for me to convey you to his palace: neither walls or gates shall exclude you, nor shall you be seen by any mortal, but the Ynca to whom you are sent.'

Acllahua, before she made any reply to the voice, addressed herself once more to her Mamacuna. 'Had I not reason,' said she, 'to be thus importunate with you? And now pardon me if I tell you, that it is in vain for me to oppose my request.' The Mamacuna, who beheld the luminous arm, and had heard the voice, was obliged to submit. She embraced Acllahua, with tears in her eyes; and after she had thrice kissed the air, which was another act of devotion—'My dear child,' said she, 'may our god the Sun be propitious to you, and may the Moon guide you in your way.'

The Mamacuna still continued to speak, when Acllahua, turning her eyes to the luminous arm—'Let us now,' said she, 'hasten to the Ynca Yahuarhuacac.' The obsequious arm, immediately enfolding her body, rendered her invisible, and conveyed her to the Ynca's apartment in the palace of Muna.

The prince was raising the poison to his lips, the very moment Acllahua entered the chamber: but the virgin hastily advanced to him, and seizing him by the arm—'Prince,' said she, 'what are you about to commit? Do you not remember, that you are the offspring of the Sun? and can you be so degenerate as to disobey him? Can you, my lord, who during all your reign have been indefatigable to suppress the use of poison, as contrary to humanity; can you, I say, act so inconsistently with your former conduct? And is it possible an Ynca should flatter himself, that he may commit with impunity, the very crime for which he has severely punished such numbers of his subjects?'

These cutting reproaches, joined with the Ynca's surprise to see a daughter of the Sun in his apartment, prevented him from drinking off the fatal cup. He replaced it on the table, and viewing the young lady, whom he knew to be a daughter of the Sun, because he had formerly seen her in the college of the select virgins at Cusco. 'Acllahua,' said he, 'what do I now behold! Do you really live? or is it your shade that stands before me? I am lost in perplexity: for if you are still among the number of the living, by what means have you been able to quit the sacred college, where you was for ever consecrated to the Sun? How was it possible for you to enter this chamber when the door was shut? But if you are no longer an inhabitant of this world, what have you to desire of an unfortunate prince?'

'O Ynca!' replied Acllahua, 'I am not as yet numbered among the dead; nor is it necessary that I now should satisfy all your demands. 'Tis sufficient if I inform you, that I am dispatched to prevent, if possible, your shortening your days by poison. The Moon, your mother, has condescended to appoint me her messenger, to set before you the horrors of the crime you propose to commit, and the fatal consequences that will inevitably ensue. The Sun, your father, offended at the profanation offered him by one of his own progeny, will inflict his vengeance for your transgression in a remarkable manner: he will withdraw all his regard from the royal family, and utterly subvert the empire of the Yncas:









‘Yncas: he will consign the imperial city of Cusco to the rage of the barbarians; he will suffer his priests to be sacrificed to false gods, and abandon his chosen virgins to a shameful violation of their chastity. You alone will be the cause of all these abominations. Let me therefore conjure you, my lord, for your own and your people’s welfare, to calm your discomposure of soul; and live, O Ynca! for such is the will of the Sun your father.’

‘No! Acllahua, no!’ replied the Ynca, my resolution is already fixed. An unfortunate prince, and a more unfortunate father, can expect no consolations to reconcile him to life. I have suffered enough, and will no longer be a prey to so many calamities. I may even be reserved for sorrows, still more agonizing; but I am determined to prevent them.

‘Alas! my lord,’ answered Acllahua, the despair which now oppresses you, is a greater misfortune than any you would elude. Are you hardy enough to run the risk of an eternal state of wretchedness? Who will cover you from the indignation of the Sun your father? Have you permitted your thoughts, my lord, to deliberate on these particulars? Are the dishonours that afflict you, sufficient to justify your despair? Listen to the language of your reason: this will certainly condemn your inordinate conduct, and inform you, that it is advantageous to all mankind, and especially princes, to experience some adversity. This refines and polishes their virtues.’—‘How!’ interrupted the Ynca, ‘do you call the loss of an empire, the rebellion of a son, and perpetual banishment, no more than some adversity? Are these the calamities to which virtue owes its refinement; or, rather, are they not such misfortunes as overwhelm and drive to desperation?’

‘My lord,’ replied Acllahua, ‘I will no longer represent to you the insult you offered to the Sun your father, nor any more reproach you for murmuring against the determinations of Providence; I will content myself with acquainting you, that your words and actions discover an impotency of mind, not very consistent with your birth. There have been princes, without number, whose extraction was much inferior to yours, and whom we even rank among

barbarians; and yet they have supported their adversity with a fortitude far superior to any you discover. I remember their histories; and with your majesty’s permission, will offer one to your attention. You will see, that they, in a series of misfortunes, much more tedious and oppressive than those you repine at, have at last, by their constancy, triumphed over all their calamities, and never suffered themselves to be dejected by distress.’

The Ynca was sensibly mortified by this discourse; the colour flushed into his face; and turning upon Acllahua with an air of indignation—‘Perhaps you are not sensible,’ said he, ‘that, as much dethroned as I am, I have still sufficient power to punish any one, who shall dare to insult me to my face: but since you have the temerity to compare the conduct of barbarians with mine, I command you to relate to me, one of these histories. And should it appear, that the princes, of whom you are to speak, were less unfortunate than myself, and that their constancy of mind has not surmounted their adversity, you shall be punished for your insolence, and expiate your crime by death.’

Acllahua was far from being intimidated with these threats. ‘My lord,’ said he, ‘I have advanced nothing inconsistent with truth; I desire no other judge than your majesty, and willingly subscribe before-hand to my condemnation, if I be not punctual to my promise.’—‘We shall soon see that,’ replied the Ynca, who, at the same time, placed himself on a throne, and then turning to Acllahua—‘Be seated,’ said he, ‘and let me hear the history you have mentioned.’ The select virgin was obedient to his commands, and began her relation in the following manner.

## HOOR I.

### THE HISTORY OF PRINCE HIMAN, SOVEREIGN OF THE ISLAND OF TITICACA.

**A**BOUT an hundred years before the Ynca Mango Copac, and his wife Mama Oello were sent down to the earth, to civilize the barbarous people, and train them up in the true religion; the sceptre of the island of Titicaca, and several of the neighbouring provinces,

E

was

was swayed by a prince, who, though a barbarian, was so favoured by nature, as not to be unacquainted with the principles of humanity. His name was Himan; and he governed his subjects with so much wisdom and justice, that even the divine Mango Copac might possibly have found nothing reproachable in any part of his conduct.

This prince had never been married; and though he was perpetually solicited to turn his thoughts to an heir, he obstinately refused to gratify the prayers of his people: and so fond was he of solitude, that, whenever he had dispatched the publick affairs, he withdrew alone to a deep cavern, that served him instead of a palace. If at any time he happened to quit his retreat, which was but seldom, he then secluded himself, as much as possible, from his courtiers, that he might enjoy his own meditations in private; and when he found himself obliged to admit any company into his presence, such dejection appeared in his countenance, as plainly intimated a settled melancholy in his mind. The elders of the people, who were his officers and courtiers, were constantly saying to each other—  
 ‘What strange sadness is it, that thus affects our sovereign? He is respected by his neighbours; he is the darling of his people; all his words are regarded as oracles; we endeavour to divert him by all imaginable amusements; the loveliest virgins in the kingdom are presented to his embraces; and yet his senses are so prepossessed, that he is indifferent to all things, and his melancholy seems to be altogether inconsolable.’

Though Prince Himan had frequent intimations of these complaints, yet he entirely disregarded them, and continually resigned himself to the most pensive impressions. At last, the principal officers of his court grew weary of expostulating to no purpose. They assembled together, and ordered the first minister to enquire of the prince, the cause of his melancholy, and exhort him to take a consort to his bed, as soon as possible. There were some in this assembly, who even hinted in their discourses, that how great soever their misfortune might be, to lose so accomplished a prince, they were determined to acknowledge him no longer for their sovereign, if he refused to be conformable to their desires.

Mora-Conay (for that was the name of the first minister) had a sincere affection for his master, and trembled for him, when he heard them talk of dethroning him. However, without disclosing any emotion, he replied, that he would willingly charge himself with their commission, and hoped the event would be successful. Upon which he immediately went to the prince's apartment, to acquaint him with the danger to which he was exposed. He found his sovereign alone, in the most unfrequented part of the palace; and throwing himself at his feet—‘My lord,’ said he, ‘may a wretched worm of the earth be permitted to speak, without reserve, to the son of the Lion?’ At which, Himan, raising his minister from the earth, replied—  
 ‘Thou art sensible, Mora-Conay, that I listen with pleasure to all you tell me, and have constantly directed you to conceal nothing from me: if there be any thing wherein my person, or the publick good is interested, speak freely, without the least apprehension of offending me.’

‘Since you thus command me,’ replied Mora-Conay, ‘I must acquaint you, my lord, that your people impute your fondness for solitude, to an aversion you entertain for them: they loudly cry, they have no share in your affection, that you despise them in your heart, and count them unworthy of having any princes of your blood, to rule them after your death. There is reason to suspect, that they will be spirited, by this persuasion, to some fatal excess. Every place resounds with murmurs; and secret assemblies are held, wherein they are prepared to form resolutions not very favourable to your interest. It is necessary, my lord,’ added he, ‘to check this evil in it's first appearance. Is it possible, that no part of your dominions can furnish you with a virgin worthy to be your spouse? Should that be the fact, yet at least give your people the satisfaction of seeing you take a mistress. This is the only step by which you can appease their discontent, and reinstate all things in their proper order.’

The Prince of Titicaca was convinced by this discourse, that his dominions were threatened with an insurrection. ‘Let my people, then,’ said he, ‘if they are weary of my government, raise another sovereign



‘sovereign to the throne. Let them try if they can be happier under a new prince. As for me, the felicity of my life has no dependance on a diadem; and I am ready to resign it to him who shall be thought more worthy to wear it. It will be much more satisfactory to me, to descend from my throne, than comply with their importunity. No, Mora-Conay,’ continued the prince, ‘I am absolutely averse to all solicitations to marriage, or even a mistress: such a proposal is inconsistent with my duty and interest; and you yourself will entertain the same opinion, when I have acquainted you with some particulars of my life. I shall open them to you without any reserve, and only desire you to conceal them with inviolable secrecy.’

Mora-Conay promised not to divulge the least circumstance that should be imparted to him: after which, Himan proceeded to his relation.

‘Thou knowest, Mora-Conay, that my father, after he had reigned five years in this island, was compelled to resign his dominions to a conqueror. I shall not remind thee of any of those strange events, which gave rise to inquietudes that have some resemblance to the present dissatisfactions of my people; nor will I tell thee by what revolutions I ascended the throne of my ancestors: thou hast too considerable a part in those transactions, to make any information necessary from me, and I shall only confine myself to such circumstances as never came to my knowledge, and which, for many years past, have interrupted the tranquillity of my life.

‘I lived till my eighteenth year at Raymi Pampa, near a mountain covered with snow. I was brought up in such a manner as habituated me to hardships, and contributed not a little to make my constitution vigorous. My father, who had no child but myself, discovered in me a courage suitable to my birth; he accustomed me to combat the tygers and bears, which are very numerous in those parts. I wrestled with the youths of our neighbourhood; could swim to perfection; and, at the age of fourteen years, had the glory to win the prize in those exercises more than once.

‘My father did not content himself

‘with forming my body to labour and agility, but was very careful to cultivate my mind. He instructed me in history, and intermixed his relations with such remarks, as made me discover a great difference in the action of mankind; and by his reasoning, taught me to approve some of those actions, and dislike others. Among other particulars, he inspired me with such an aversion for a plurality of wives, and the shameful freedoms to which all the young women were abandoned, that I determined never to marry, unless I could find a woman whose inclinations had some conformity to mine.

‘In this manner did I pass my days in our solitude, very different from other men, when it was my fortune to meet with strange adventures. One day when I was hunting, at the distance of three days journey from our habitation, I saw the most formidable tyger I had ever beheld, marching towards me. His eyes darted sparkles of flame; his mouth, with a seeming impatience to devour his prey, opened from time to time, and offered to my view two pointed ranges of teeth, that appeared ready for employment. I launched an arrow at him, which hit him on the right-shoulder; but the wound was very inconsiderable, and only animated my foe, who came upon me with redoubled swiftness. We immediately closed with the utmost rage, and our combat merited other spectators than the trees and rocks that surrounded us; I wounded the tyger in several places; but in revenge, he left terrible impressions of his claws on one of my arms, and one of my thighs: but the moment I saw my blood trickle down, I was inspired with new courage; I grasped my sabre with both hands, and made it descend on each side of my enemy. At last, as he reared himself on his hinder paws, in order to spring full upon me; I received him with a back blow, and parted his head from his body. But the moment I gave him his death’s wound, he cried—‘Ah, Himan! is it thus thou treatest those who desire thy welfare?’

Acilahua was interrupted in this part of her relation, by a gentle noise at the chamber-door; upon which she immediately thrust her hand into her girdle, and the luminous arm as instantly ap-

peared, the voice which attended it at the same time enquiring of the select virgin, what she would have performed? 'Cause me,' said Acclahua, 'to be invisible for a moment.' She had scarce pronounced this order, when the luminous arm wound about her, and made her disappear from the Ynca's view.

The prince was much displeased at this unseasonable accident; he went to the door in order to know the meaning of the noise, and was told, that the necessary preparations were made for the chase. The Ynca commanded them to wait his pleasure a few moments. Upon which he shut the door of his apartment, and Acclahua, at the same time, desiring the luminous arm to leave her visible, he had the pleasure of seeing her appear anew. However, he made no discovery of his satisfaction; but, on the contrary, pretended to be always offended at the parallel the select virgin had drawn. 'I perceive,' said he, 'that your history is something long, and I am not desirous you should fatigue yourself: return to-morrow at the same hour you came to-day; you shall proceed in your relation, and I will hear you to the end, before I decide any thing.'

Acclahua having promised to return the next day, directed the luminous arm to convey her back to Cusco, and place her in the apartment of her Mamacuna: she was accordingly carried thither in an instant, and found the venerable matron in strange apprehensions; but these were all dissipated by Acclahua's relation of what had happened at Muna.—'Daughter,' said she to the select virgin, 'you have made so happy a beginning, that you may justly promise yourself success in your enterprize; and you must now persevere, since such is the will of your mother the Moon. I am now persuaded, that the revelation lately imparted to you is true; and may the Sun our parent grant, that the Ynca Yahuarhuacac may be delighted with your stories, and by his attention to them, lose the remembrance of his misfortunes.'

Acclahua passed that day in the usual exercises of the select virgins. The next morning, soon after she rose, she returned to Muna, where she found the Ynca Yahuarhuacac, who expected her with impatience. 'Proceed in your history,' said he; 'I shall now see whether you will be punctual to your promise.'

## H O U R II.

'MY lord,' replied Acclahua, 'the Prince of Titicaca continued to relate his history in this manner.' I will confess to you, my dear Moraconay, I knew not what to think of the adventure you have heard. So extraordinary an event made me at first regret the tyger's death, and I began to wish I had only disabled him from the combat, that I might have known what particular benefit he intended me. But recollecting with what fury he assaulted me, —'It is impossible,' said I, 'that this animal could have any inclinations in my favour; nor did he treat me as if he wished me well. The impression his claws have left upon me, sufficiently convince me, that he only wanted to devour me, and I could do no better than kill an enemy who endeavoured to destroy me.'

Those reflections banished from my heart all the compassion that had begun to spring up there, and I now fled off the tyger's skin without the least reluctance. As I had lost a large quantity of blood, I had occasion for the animal's skin to bind up my wounds, and accordingly I cut off two large thongs, one of which I applied to my arm, and the other to my thigh, taking care to fasten them with fillets in such a manner, that the effusion of blood was stopped, and I then began to think it time to retire.

The day was now upon the close, and the fatigue I had endured in the combat, together with my loss of blood, very much weakened me; besides which, I was exceedingly tormented with thirst. At last I ascended the crag of a rock, to try if I could discover any little cot to pass the night in; all I could observe, was a little column of smoke rising at some distance from me, and to this I immediately directed my steps.

This smoke ascended from a cave, whose entrance was closed up; but the necessity I was under of some assistance, made me knock at the door, upon which four aged women appeared; but the moment they cast their eyes on me, they were seized with a strange fear, and immediately fled, leaving the door, upon which I was in some hesitation, whether I should enter or not; but my need of refreshment inclined me to venture, and curiosity determined my resolution so to do,



do. After I had passed through a long subterranean gallery, I came to a large chamber, illuminated by several tapers, and there found the four ancient women, who were still under the impression of their fear. 'My good ladies,' said I, 'take courage; I am not come here to offer you the least injury, and I only implore your assistance: these two days past, I have followed the chace in the neighbourhood of your grot, and have been exceedingly fatigued this day; I am even dying with thirst, and only intreat you to give me something to drink.'

One of these women, whom my words had recovered from her fright, made me this reply: 'Young stranger,' said she, 'if we fled when we first beheld you, it was not because we suspected you for an enemy; but we were seized with apprehensions to see you arrive at a place where, for the space of sixteen years, we have never beheld any man but yourself. We were sensible that the avenues to this grot were strictly guarded, and thought that none could approach it without inevitable destruction: and yet you are arrived here in perfect safety. What are we to think then of you? Doubtless, some magician, or rather a propitious god, has preserved you from the danger.'

'Madam,' replied I, 'before I satisfy your curiosity, permit me to quench my thirst.' I had no sooner repeated this request, than they presented me with a cocoa, the juice of which I drank with exquisite pleasure, and never till then tasted any liquor so delightful. But whilst I was drinking, one of my old hostesses perceived that I was covered with blood. She was extremely startled at the sight, and asked me if I had been wounded, and by whom? I acquainted her, that a tyger of a prodigious size had assaulted me, and in the combat torn my flesh with his claws: added, that I had been so fortunate as to leave my enemy dead on the spot.

At these words, the four matrons burst out into a loud exclamation. 'Young stranger,' said they, 'you must inevitably perish, unless we tender you some assistance:' and without losing any time, two of them began to unbind the skins I had wound round my arm and thigh; and the other two, with the same expedition, passed into an adjoining chamber, from whence they presently returned, bringing a calabash filled with

so odoriferous a balm, that the fragrance diffused itself through all the apartment. The virtue of it was still more excellent; for the moment they anointed my wounds with it, I found myself so perfectly cured, that there was not the least appearance of any scar.

The late cry of the four aged women echoed through all the grot, and infallibly reached the ears of a young person, who was carefully guarded in that place. I have since been informed, that she was the young Cumac Riti, the only daughter of him who had usurped my father's dominions. She had the curiosity to discover what was transacted in the chamber where we then were. Her majestick shape might make her pass for a goddess, and the lustre of her beauty would induce one to believe some star, in all its brightness, had descended to grace the earth.

I was preparing to testify to her the admiration she had infused into my soul, and the impressions the view of her charms had fixed in my heart; when I heard a terrible noise at the door of the cavern. We listened to it, and heard the sound of an exceeding strong voice. 'Great gods!' cried the four aged women, 'we are all undone! It is the magician Coran! We have violated his orders, and nothing can preserve us from his fury.—Ah, unhappy stranger,' added they, 'what fatality has conducted you here, to be the cause of our destruction, as well as your own!'

They were proceeding in these melancholy lamentations, when the magician appeared. There was something very stern and gloomy in his air; his stature was four cubits high; the tincture of his complexion seemed more inclining to black than white; and he held a red wand in his hand. 'Presumptuous wretches,' said he to the four ancient women, 'you deserve to die, for giving admission to that stranger in this place, contrary to my commands! But I pardon you in consideration of the care you have taken to save his life.' And then turning to me, 'I likewise forgive you,' said he, 'the injury you have offered me by killing an enchanted tyger, who cost me the labour of ten years to produce; and how much soever I am dissatisfied at that loss, I am willing to forget it, on account of the courage you discovered in the combat: however, the poor animal had no design on your life; he only

‘only attempted to intimidate you, and oblige you to fly from a place, to which you could not approach with impunity: for which reason,’ continued he, ‘I cannot entirely pardon the crime you have committed, by intruding here; and, for your punishment, I condemn you to continue three moons in this grot, after which you shall wander for the same space of time on the earth; and I shall then know, by your constancy of mind, if you be worthy of the fortune to which I intend to raise you.’

I would willingly have excused myself, by alledging the necessity I was under of coming to that place for some assistance. But whilst I was addressing him with such expressions as were most insinuating, and capable of softening his resentment, a sudden slumber closed my eyes, and I did not awake till a long time after.

But, O Heavens! how great was my astonishment when my sleep left me! I no more beheld in the grot, either the magician or the four aged women, or the young lady who had charmed me. The tapers were all extinguished, and a solemn darkness reigned through all the place; and as an addition to my misfortune, the gate through which I entered was exactly closed up with a huge stone. The thought of being alone in a subterranean cavern, without light or food, filled me with horror, and my hair rose upright on my head. ‘How!’ said I to myself, ‘was a transient glance at a young lady, who presented herself to my view, so great a crime, as to draw upon me such a severe punishment? What would it then have been, had I acquainted her with the sentiments of my heart?’

I was a long time engaged in reflections on this adventure, and found my soul agitated by a variety of strange emotions; for, notwithstanding the melancholy situation to which I was now reduced, my thoughts were taken up with the idea of this amiable person, and I was sensible of impressions in her favour, which I never knew till then.

My greatest perplexity was, how to reconcile the mercy of the magician, to the barbarity with which he treated me. ‘He pardoned me,’ said I, ‘the death of his tyger who cost him ten years labour, and yet condemns me to perish by famine, only for gazing on a person

who appeared but a moment before me. The four women who were disobedient to his commands, received mercy from him, because they saved my life; and now he himself would deprive me of that enjoyment. He shuts me up in a subterranean solitude, from whence it is impossible to disengage myself, and where I cannot long subsist without food.’

Upon the whole, the result of all these thoughts was, that it was not probable the magician could have any design against my life; and I began to imagine, that he only intended to divert himself with my surprise and affliction. ‘Let me resolve, then,’ said I, ‘to suffer, and leave the gods to dispose of me as they please.’ But for all this, I diligently endeavoured to find out a passage from that confinement. I knew there was another door, besides that which was opened by the two women, when they went for the balm they applied to my wounds; and which was the very same door at which the young lady made her appearance to me. But I searched round the chamber several times to no purpose, and met with nothing but a continued wall extremely solid.

### H O U R III.

I Had now been several hours, and to my apprehension, as many years, in a state the most dismal that a man could possibly experience. My throat was inflamed with thirst, and I felt all the severity of hunger. My strength began to fail me; and I had no hope of being accommodated with what I wanted. In short, I was reduced to such a languishing condition, that being no longer able to hold out, I was obliged to lie down on the earth; for the magician had not left me so much as a bed to repose on. I there determined to await the conclusion of a wretched life; but was instantly seized with a deep slumber.

In this state, an ancient woman appeared to me, and said—‘Give attention, Himan: the magician Coran permits me to offer you some mitigation of your misfortunes.’—‘Give me immediately then some little refreshments of food,’ said I; ‘my spirits are exhausted, and I am dying with faintness.’—‘You shall not want provision,’ replied the aged person, ‘provided your  
patience



‘patience does not fail you; and remember, that if you discover no weakness of mind in your distress, you shall one day enjoy the brightest prosperity to which a mortal can aspire.’

At the conclusion of these words, methought the old woman left by me a pannier made of reeds, which till then she had held in her hand; upon which she retired, and I immediately awaked. The idea of this person was so perfectly imprinted in my mind, and I found so much conformity between her discourse and the last part of what the magician had said to me, that I looked on this adventure to be, not so much a delusive dream, as a real apparition; and grew persuaded that I had received a supply suitable to my present necessity. In this confidence, I searched about with my hands; and in a little time found at my side, the pannier that seemed in my dream to be left by the aged matron: it contained eighty-seven cocoas, a very moderate nourishment for a man so afflicted with hunger and thirst as myself. I opened one of the cocoas with great eagerness; after which I drank the juice, and eat the pulp.

I easily judged by the number of cocoas, that they were to be my provision for the whole time I was to remain underground; and that I must only eat one every day: but the difficulty was, how to distinguish day from night in such perpetual darkness: I therefore regulated my appetite by a resolution, not to eat or drink but when I found nature in absolute need of a recruit. And the event convinced me that I had acted with discretion: for by these means my cocoas lasted as long as I wanted them. In reality, when I took the last which remained, the three moons were compleated, as presently appeared; for the moment I took the cocoa in my hands, the shell changed into a bow, the pulp became a quiver, and the liquor was transformed into three arrows.

Whilst I was in the utmost astonishment at this prodigy, I heard a voice, which said to me—‘Himan, you are now at liberty; shoot one of your arrows against the door of the grot: after which, depart from this place, and direct your course towards that quarter from whence the wind shall happen to rise. Whenever a calm ensues, pro-

ceed no farther; but as soon as the wind begins to blow again, renew your journey; and above all things, be careful not to disquiet yourself with any manner of distrust.’

At these tidings, I raised myself from the ground, exceedingly revived with what I had heard; and immediately disposed myself to comply with the injunctions of the voice. I shot an arrow against the gate; and at the instant, the stone which closed the entrance shattered into dust, and left me a free passage. I then offered up my acknowledgments to the gods, for permitting me once more to behold the light; after which, I took notice of the quarter from whence the wind rose, and found it blew from a point opposite to my father’s habitation. This circumstance abated, in some measure, the joy with which my liberty affected me. However I determined, without any hesitation, to pursue the track prescribed me, notwithstanding any difficulties or inconveniencies that might happen.

After a journey of three days, through woods and over mountains, I saw a solitary cot near a little river; and as the wind that had hitherto been my guide, no longer blew, I went into this forlorn mansion, where I beheld an old man and two young women. They received me with an air of hospitality, and I resolved to continue there, as long as the calm lasted. I soon recovered my strength by rest and food. The old man frequently hunted in the fields, and his wives caught fish out of the river; by which means they were plentifully supplied with provisions: and as I created an additional expence to my hosts, I likewise hunted and fished in my turn, that I might incommode them as little as possible. And indeed I always came back loaded with game and fish; but my success was chiefly owing to my arrows. If I shot them into the air, they spontaneously returned to me with some bird they had pierced; or if I launched them along the earth, or into the water, I was sure of being supplied with some beast or fish. These shafts were certainly made under some favourable constellation; and I discovered their virtue from the first day of my progress.

As I was in possession of such a treasure, it was no wonder that I became agreeable to my hosts; they never lived

in

in so much profusion before; and were continually blessing the day that made me their guest: for my part, I had an extraordinary pleasure to find myself useful to them.

For the space of six days, I lived with much tranquillity in my new habitation; and happy should I have thought my condition, had not my destiny, or rather the infidelity in my host's two wives, changed my pleasing situation. I took notice, that they began to appear very thoughtful, and were soon after seized with unusual languors, till at last they had an entire disrelish for their food. All this time I was perfectly unacquainted with the cause of such an alteration, and little imagined it proceeded from myself.

One day these women made a declaration to me, that they had found it impossible to avoid loving me; and were incapable of resisting the flames which consumed them.

This confession filled me with the utmost confusion. 'Is it possible,' said I, 'that the faith you both have sworn to your husband, should be insufficient to preserve you from this weakness? Or do you really imagine, I can be so abandoned as to yield to your criminal desires, and bring the greatest of all infamy on a man who has entertained me in his house, and constantly treated me with the most obliging hospitality?' In a word, I omitted nothing in my power to restore them to reason; but I found all my endeavours were unavailing. The poison had sunk too deep. They conjured me to pity their sufferings, and even practised the powerful artifice of tears to seduce me.

The better to disengage myself from their importunity, I represented to them the absurdity of their proceeding. 'Were I even capable,' said I, 'of excusing your frailty, and gratifying either the one or the other of you with any returns of love; yet can you flatter yourselves that I could possibly regard you both with equal tenderness? How should I divide myself between you, and in what manner would you reconcile yourselves to a participation that would unavoidably be attended with discord and jealousy?'—'Be not disquieted at that apprehension,' replied they: 'we two are united by the strictest friendship; we are infected with the same distemper, and apply for the same

relief. We are mutually desirous of each other's cure; and the advantage of the one will create no jealousy in the other: nay, should the advantage be common to us both, we shall be incapable of jealousy for that very reason.'

As I persisted in my refusal, notwithstanding all their blandishments and insinuations—'Barbarous man!' said they, 'you wish to see us die unpitied; but your disobliging indifference shall first be fatal to yourself.' At the same time, with rage in their looks, they each of them seized a knife of stone. 'Thy resistance,' cried they, 'is altogether unavailing; and if thou hast no compassion for us, we will first kill thee, and then put an end to our own lives, which we have languished away for a long time.'

'If I felt some emotion at the danger wherein I beheld myself, I was as much affected with horror at the excesses to which a foolish passion transported these women, and was at a loss how to regulate my future proceedings. I was agitated with different reflections, that strangely discomposed me; and asked myself, if I could be weak enough to yield to the threats I had heard? 'Where then,' said I, 'is that fortitude I exerted in my combat with the enchanted tyger, and in the grot that was lately my prison?' But, as I was not long permitted to deliberate on the resolution I had to take, I thought it most proper to dissemble; and accordingly gave them to understand, that their husband was aged and infirm, and could not live many days longer, and that I then would be the first to attempt the conquest of their hearts; or at least, would endeavour to make the best returns to the tenderness with which they had favoured me.

This discourse softened, in some measure, the violence of their rage, and their impetuosity, by degrees, seemed enchanted into mildness, by the hopes I gave them; but if they were transported to see me in a disposition so favourable to their desires, the satisfaction they derived from it would not permit them long to wait for the happiness they beheld at such a distance. The very night that succeeded this adventure, they murdered their husband; and after they had thrown him into the river, came to acquaint me with their proceeding.



## H O U R IV.

THE horror with which I was affected at so monstrous an action, made the sight of these infamous creatures insupportable; and I even reproached myself for having been the innocent cause of their crime. This was a sufficient motive to make me forsake them. I left their cot, with a thousand protestations, never to converse with such women for the future: but I became an offender in my turn, for I never consulted the wind; so that the consequence of my flight was very different from my expectations.

These women, exasperated at the contempt with which I treated their passion, had meditated my ruin, and resolved to throw the guilt of their husband's murder upon me. With this intention they left their cot; they wildly ran about the country, and alarmed it with dreadful screams. Wherever they came, they cried out that a stranger, whom they had received into their habitation, had murdered their husband: and thus, by their fearful exclamations, and feigned tears, they easily imposed on the credulous inhabitants, who assembled in several troops, and then pursued and overtook me; after which, loading me with chains, they dragged me before the assembly of the elders, not to judge my cause, but to denounce the punishment of my pretended crime.

'Great gods!' cried I, 'is it possible that a fate more dreadful than that which befel me in the grot of the magician Coran, should await me in this place! I am lost, if you deny me your protection!—Ah, you, my lords,' added I, addressing myself to the elders, 'will you permit me to justify myself before you? May I believe that innocence will find a sanctuary in your presence; and that you will not be deaf to its cries? May I hope that you will succour an unfortunate stranger persecuted by injustice?'

My two female adversaries would not suffer me to proceed. They made the place resound with their horrid cries; they tore their cheeks; and with weeping eyes, demanded vengeance on the murderer of their husband. All who assisted at the assembly, moved with their complaints, cried out—'O barbarity

'most detestable! Vengeance! vengeance!'

The judges imagined they had no need of fuller information. 'Ah, pernicious wretch!' said they, 'the laws of hospitality shall not be violated with impunity.' I then asked them, if they were determined to punish me before they were convinced I was a criminal? 'No more!' said they; 'we are too sensible of thy guilt:' and then, addressing themselves to my accusers—'Virtuous women,' said they, 'what act of justice do you require?'—'Let the murderer,' replied they, 'make reparation for the injury he has offered us; or else let him be doomed to die. He has deprived us of a husband who tenderly loved us: let him offer us his hand, and engage to treat us with the same fondness. We pardon him on these terms. If he rejects them, let death avenge us on his barbarity.'

I could not bear such a proposal without shuddering with horror. 'Ah, wretches!' cried I, 'can a project like this, enter into your thoughts? Do not flatter yourselves with gathering the fruit of your crime, and never hope that I will gratify your detestable passion. I cannot behold you without horror: and every mortal who loves justice, ought to regard you with the same aversion. I would sooner die a thousand times, than comply with your criminal desires; but the gods, who protect the innocent, and whose eyes always behold the actions of mortals, to chastise those who do evil, will one day punish you for your perfidy.'

'Wretch as thou art,' replied the judges, 'thou thyself hast pronounced thy condemnation.' Whereupon they ordered me to be conveyed to the bank of a river, to be devoured by a crocodile, who generally lived in the water, but never failed to quit that element the moment he saw any prey on the banks. I was led by four men to the place of punishment: but whilst they were binding me to a tree, lest I should escape, a monster of a prodigious size rose out of the water, and marching up to us, drew into his enormous throat one of my executioners, whilst the rest saved themselves by flight.

For my part, I expected the same fate; but the crocodile, as it should seem, never devoured more than one man at a

meal.

meal; and therefore retired into the river, and left me alone. As I knew not how long these animals were in performing their digestion, I feared, when his appetite returned upon him, he would satisfy it with the prey he had then left untouched. To prevent this, I did my utmost to disengage myself from my bands, and had the good fortune to succeed; upon which, I betook myself to flight, without losing a moment's time.

But, for all this, I was not so happy as to escape. I was discovered, and seized by twelve fishermen. In vain did I implore them, in the name of the gods, to allow me my liberty. They were altogether inexorable, and dragged me back to the assembly, like a fugitive. The judges still continued to believe me guilty, ordered a great fire of wood to be kindled, into which I was sentenced to be cast.

These barbarous commands were punctually executed. The pyre was raised in a spacious field: I was stretched upon the top; and immediately the wood was kindled. I already began to feel the heat of this element; when, lifting up my eyes to heaven—'O ye gods!' said I, 'who are the protectors of innocence! supreme and immortal powers, who make a just distinction between virtue and vice! if I be guilty of the crime imputed to me, may I perish in the midst of the flames; but if two infamous wretches would betray me, by a guilty combination between them, suffer not an innocent person to be destroyed before your eyes!'

The gods were moved at my prayers; a terrible storm arose in a moment, and a flood of rain descended: the little rivers swelled into torrents, which floated all the plains, and extinguished the flame of the pyre. All the spectators, struck with astonishment at such a prodigy, fled in confusion, and became divided in their opinions. 'This young man,' cried some, 'is certainly innocent; and Heaven manifestly interposes in his defence.'—'Let him be innocent or not,' said others, 'it was but natural to condemn him, because he is a stranger.' In a word, the sentiments of each person corresponded with his disposition.

In the mean time, the judges, who saw me preserved a second time from the punishment to which they had doomed me, commanded the two women to be brought before them once more. They

examined those wretches, and, by their answers, discovered the truth: but yet, they only reproved them for the crime they had committed. As to my particular, they discovered some concern for my misfortune, and permitted me to direct my course where I pleased; after which, they ordered my bow and arrows, which my accusers had seized, to be restored to me.

I took care to improve the liberty they had given me, and travelled all the rest of the day without intermission. When it began to grow dark, I found myself at the door of a cave, at which I knocked; though I was uncertain whether I should fall into the hands of savage and inhuman men, or of such as inclined to hospitality, and feared the gods.

#### H O U R V.

**A**N elderly man, who made a graceful appearance, opened the door, and asked me what I wanted in that place? 'O father!' replied I, 'you behold a stranger, who knows not where he is wandered, or in what solitude he is going to bewilder himself, and therefore I conjure you to receive me into your habitation.' He consented to my request, and desired me to come in; and after we had spent some time in an agreeable repast, my host, whose name was Suyu, desired me to inform him of my adventures. I complied with his curiosity, and he seemed extremely affected with what I related.

The next day, I intreated Suyu to acquaint me, in his turn, with the history of his life. He consented to my request, and related his story as follows.

#### THE HISTORY OF SUYU THE FISHERMAN, AND THE FAIR RUNA.

**I** Am, (said he,) a stranger in this country as well as yourself. I was born in the province, or rather the valley of Parmuca, and fishing has been my sole employment. When I was fifteen years of age, I became passionately fond of a young virgin in our neighbourhood, who was perfectly charming, and at that time in her thirteenth year. I had the good fortune not to be disagreeable to her, and we frequently passed the happy days in a mutual conformity to each



each other's inclinations. Our intercourse lasted the greatest part of a year. We daily tasted new pleasures in meeting and conversing together, and reciprocally vowed perpetual constancy in our passion.

A magician, jealous of our felicity, found means at last to interrupt it. He gave several presents to the father of Runa, for that was the name of my young mistress, and demanded his daughter in marriage. The father condescended to his desires, and by an impulse of avarice resolved to sacrifice his daughter, notwithstanding her aversion to that alliance.

Runa, at first, steadfastly refused to tender her hand to a man for whom she had not the least inclination: but, at length, perceiving that all her refusals would be unavailing, she endeavoured to protract her nuptials a few days. During that time she found an opportunity to see me, and disclosed to me all her inquietudes, in which I equally shared with herself. We at last determined to quit that country, and accordingly had recourse to flight: and after a long journey of several days we arrived at this cave, where we flattered ourselves with living in the sweet union of marriage, and being perfectly happy in the enjoyments of each other. But, alas! those delightful moments were but of a short continuance, and we were convinced by experience, that when mortals have reached the height of their desires, they are generally at the last stage of happiness, and on the brink of some great calamity.

The magician, receiving information of our flight, found means to discover the place of our retreat; and came there two days after our arrival. We were enjoying the fresh gales at the door of this cavern, when we beheld him at some distance from us with a bow and arrow in his hand. He drew his bow, and shot Runa in the middle of her breast. The arrow was enchanted, and threw my wife into a trance, which I apprehended was the harbinger of death. The barbarous magician laughed at his successful malice, and disappeared when he saw my tears, and heard my lamentations.

'O miserable Suyu!' said I, 'to what misfortune have the gods condemned thee!' And so insupportable was the grief that seized me, that I cried aloud, and tore the hair from my head. But

sighs and tears were all ineffectual, and my calamity was without relief. Runa, my dearest Runa, was perpetually sunk in the magick slumber, which, by means of the enchanted arrow, had diffused it's fatal poppies over her eyelids; and from which, for these twenty years, she has never awaked, but remains in the state of insensibility, which the magician invented for her punishment as well as mine.

However, I always hope to see her rise from this pernicious sleep; at least the enchantment will expire at the death of the magician, who is much older than me: and I flatter myself, that I shall once more behold Runa sensible of my passion. This is the hope that supports my soul, and preserves me from sinking under the weight of my despair. I live with her, as if she heard me speak, and beheld me as formerly. I lay me down by her, and eat and drink by her side. I never leave her but when I go to fish; and as often as I return from that employment, the sight of her alone makes me forget all my labour and fatigue.

#### THE SEQUEL OF THE HISTORY OF THE PRINCE OF TITICACA.

SUCH a singular adventure, (said Himan to Mora Conay) roused all my curiosity; and I desired my host to inform me, whether he could shew me the object for whom he had sighed so many years. 'You shall have the satisfaction you desire,' said he; and at the same time he conducted me into a chamber, at the bottom of the cavern, and which was illuminated by two lamps. 'You see,' said he, after he had breathed a deep sigh, 'you see that beloved wife for whom I preserve an unavailing fondness.'

In reality, I beheld a young person most exquisitely beautiful, laid on a bed of rushes, and her head reclined on a pillow of bear-skins. The fatal shaft that oppressed her senses with the tedious trance, lay by her. I took up that instrument of her calamity, and attentively considered it for some time. At last, I began to think the arrow might be at once, both the evil and the remedy, and I communicated my suspicion to my host; at the same time advising him to break the arrow. This he did; and the moment he had snapped it in two, his wife fetched

a deep sigh, unclosed her eyes, and rose from her bed.

Though I was astonished at this event, yet a new prodigy increased my surprise. A small shiver of the enchanted arrow having wounded Suyu in the little finger, he himself sunk into the same insensibility, from which he had recovered his wife. I was not so much alarmed at this accident as Runa; for she was perfectly unacquainted with the mystery I had discovered. I immediately broke the two pieces of the arrow, and at the same instant, my host, after a deep sigh, revived from his trance.

Nothing could equal the joy the married pair discovered, when they found themselves capable of talking to each other. After the first transports were over, they thanked the gods for the succour they had vouchsafed to send them; and both the one and the other treated me with a thousand endearments. Their only perplexity was, how they should best testify their gratitude to me; and you shall now hear what a singular contrivance they formed, in concert, at a time when I was absent from them, and diverting myself at the chace.

At my return, Suyu thus addressed himself to me, in the presence of Runa. 'O young stranger, you have restored my wife to my arms!—' And you,' interrupted Runa, 'have restored my husband to my embraces!—' We are desirous,' said Suyu, 'to acquit ourselves of the infinite obligations with which you have charged us; and have no other expedient than to make you a proposal to live with us. I shall look upon you not as a brother, but my second self. You shall have Runa for the partner of your bed one night, and the next she shall be mine: this shall be our custom successively; her endearments shall be common to us both; and we will have an equal property in our pleasures, our children, and all other enjoyments.'

#### H O U R VI.

I Found something very diverting in this proposal; and could not avoid smiling when I heard it. 'No, my dear Suyu,' replied I, 'the pleasure I have given you, does not merit so great a sacrifice; nor will I, by an unjust participation, lessen the delight you enjoy, by the revival of your beloved Runa.

'She shall be for ever yours, and yours alone; and I can never accept of a position which, in its consequence, would be too injurious to your repose. I must likewise acquaint you; that my continuance here is limited to a certain period: the moment the wind begins to blow, I must be gone; and shall then leave you alone to cherish your undivided loves. Besides, it is impossible for me to erase from my remembrance the idea of the Princess Cumac Riti.'

'In what manner then,' replied Suyu and his wife, 'shall we return the obligations you have conferred upon us?' — 'You have sufficiently requited me,' said I, 'by your gratitude to the gods; and I likewise think myself amply recompensed by the satisfaction I enjoy, in having contributed to your felicity. I may even affirm, that my reward was anticipated, by the refuge you allowed me in this place, and the hospitable reception you have so long afforded me.'

Whilst I was speaking, I accidentally cast my eyes to the entrance of the cavern, and saw the dust whirling up aloft from the earth. This was a sufficient intimation to me, that the wind was risen; and I needed no more to make me think of my departure. I rose up, and took leave of my hosts; and notwithstanding the importunity with which they desired my company a few days longer, I left them, and began to pursue my progress.

After I had travelled for the space of ten days, I met with ways very difficult to be passed. The earth was dry, and parched, no tree or herb appeared, nor was any food to be found in that ghastly solitude. I was obliged, as I advanced, to climb over wild and craggy rocks: but notwithstanding these obstructions, I continued my progress. At last, when I had ascended one of the highest of these rocks, I discovered a spacious valley blooming with a delightful fertility, and which seemed to be inhabited: it was of a circular form, and bordered with verdant woods; towards the middle I perceived a vast number of huts, among which rose a large pavilion, which I imagined was the residence of the prince of the country.

The wind blew from that quarter, and induced me to direct my steps thither. Accordingly I descended into the valley; but before I could arrive at it, I was obliged to swim over a wide river, which, dividing itself into two branches, formed the



the valley into a large island; but when I thought to have landed on the other side, I saw a prodigious number of vipers, pismires, muskettas, and other reptiles and insects marching up to me, and who seemed to contend for the glory of preventing my access to the island, by setting before me the danger to which I stood exposed.

It was with much difficulty that I forced a passage through this army of animals; the hissing of some, and the loud buzzing of others, perfectly disordered me, and their stings were sheathed in every part of my body: but I still pursued my way through the forest, notwithstanding all these inconveniences.

When I came to the edge of it, I found a second river, which formed another island, and was smooth and stagnant as well as the former. The people by their industry had stopped it's course, to accommodate their lands and gardens with it's streams. My entrance into this island was as easy and free from obstruction, as my landing on the former was difficult and contested; and I had hardly set my foot on the earth, when two men without any habit or weapons, and of a soft and effeminate air, came to meet me, and civilly offered me their service. 'My friends,' said I, 'destiny has compelled me to wander above the term of one moon, through countries entirely unknown to me; and chance has now conducted me to your territories; but I thank the gods for permitting me to meet with generous and hospitable people.'

'Young stranger,' answered one of the men, 'you are in the country of the Caravillis, and shall want for no accommodation. All men to whose persons nature has been liberal of her favours, are sure of a friendly reception here; and we are persuaded you will be treated by our sovereign with the utmost distinction. With your permission,' added they, 'we will conduct you to the palace; but if you will credit what we say, it will be proper for you first to be disarmed. Our prince has a pacifick soul, and never beholds these instruments of death with pleasure. Even we ourselves are so little accustomed to such a sight, that we are seized with a kind of horror, whenever it is presented to our view.'

I had no great inclination to oblige them in this particular: 'I have that re-

'gard for my arms,' said I, 'that I cannot be without them a moment; and were you but acquainted with their virtue, instead of persuading me to quit them, you would advise me to keep them with the greatest caution.'—'Ah!' replied one of the Caravillis, 'what virtue can be infused into those arrows?' But after I had informed him in what manner they were useful to me.—'If that be so,' said he, 'you may still keep them;' but, at the same time, he gave me to understand, that I should be received with more respect, if I would but conform to the custom of the country: but, for all that, I made them sensible, by my silence, that they were not to expect any such compliance from me.

As we advanced into the island, my two conductors led me to the edge of a large basin, and told me, it would be proper for me to bathe, before I came into the presence of their prince. I did not stay to be requested twice, but taking off my habit, which I threw on the side of the basin, I leaped into the water, with my bow and arrows, which I did not think it adviseable to part with. It was to no purpose for them to tell me, that no one ever bathed with a bow in his hand, and a quiver on his back; I was deaf to all their remonstrances, and the event made me sensible, that I had taken a just resolution; for, after I had washed myself, they refused to deliver my cloaths, notwithstanding all my intreaties to obtain them; and I was compelled to remain in the same indecent condition, in which the inhabitants of the country appeared.

Whilst I was bathing myself, a crowd of Caravillis came to see me, and tendered me a thousand civilities, which I returned in the best manner I was capable; but my astonishment, when I came out of the water was inexpressible, to hear them cry all around me—'O lovely youth! what a noble air! what grace! what majesty! He is worthy to be the favourite of the Prince of the Caravillis.' This discourse was above my comprehension; and I could not tell, at first, whether they mocked me or not; but when I saw that the old men, as well as young, persisted in admiring me, I then, to free myself from these disagreeable commendations, intreated them to conduct me to the palace.

I was led thither by all this concourse of people, who had gathered about me; and through the whole length of the way, heard

heard nothing but acclamations of joy, which cried up my fine mien to the skies. Two of the principal Caravillis received me at the entrance into the pavilion, and immediately introduced me into the prince's apartment. He reposed himself with a soft and negligent air on a bed, covered with several very fine skins; and the moment I appeared—'Approach,' said he, 'young stranger;' and when I came near him—'Your presence is agreeable in this place,' continued he, 'and this day presents me with the most amiable conquest I ever made.' Besides these expressions, he from time to time beheld me with such a languishing and passionate air, as threw me into the utmost confusion; and my embarrassment was so great, that I could not utter one word. My soul was agitated with various thoughts, that affected it with the most disagreeable impressions.

#### H O U R VII.

**W**HEN the prince had attentively considered me from head to foot, with a kind of admiration, which frequently appeared in his countenance—'Let a collation,' said he, 'be immediately served up to this lovely stranger, that he may recruit his decayed spirits.' Upon which I was presently conducted to an adjoining hall, and entertained with all sorts of refreshments; and, indeed, I much wanted some nourishment, for I had not tasted any food all that day.

Whilst I was at table, two of the prince's officers came to entreat me in his name, to lay aside my bow and arrows, and used all imaginable solicitations to that effect; but when they found me inflexible to all they could say, they forbore to urge me any farther, and returned to give an account of their commission.

Some short time after this, twelve young men of an agreeable appearance, came to me with a mysterious air, as if they had something of importance to impart to me. This was a new deputation on the subject of my weapons: 'Young stranger,' said they, 'congratulate yourself for your present fortune, for your happiness may well be envied. If you can dispose yourself to love none but our master, and shew an entire conformity to his inclinations, he will

'oblige you with all you can possibly crave. He loves you with the most passionate fondness, determines to make you his principal favourite, and has now commanded us to give you the strongest assurances of his tenderness: prepare, then, to entertain him with all possible compliance; and know, that he expects, as a first proof of such a disposition, that you send him your bow and arrow.'

I was so astonished at this discourse, that it was some time before I could make any reply; but at last I broke silence in this manner: 'My friends,' said I, 'it is impossible for me to comprehend any part of the language you have used to me; but I am desirous you shall know, that I am not permitted to take up my residence in this isle, and therefore cannot be influenced by your prince's promise of giving me the first rank among his favourites; and, as to my arms, I shall never trust them in the hands of any mortal; and therefore I will give you to understand, once for all, that if any one shall hereafter take the liberty to repeat such a proposal to me, I will that moment pierce his heart with one of my arrows.' The twelve deputies were so alarmed at this menace, that they immediately fled from my presence.

They were presently succeeded by four others, who acquainted me, that their master desired to see me. This third embassy gave me no great satisfaction; I was already warmed into some resentment, and was on the point of carrying things to an extremity. However, after a few deliberate reflections, I rose from my seat, and followed the four messengers, who conducted me into the apartment of the prince. He was still extended on his bed; and when he saw me, he caused me to be seated near his own person. 'Young man,' said he, 'what is this that I have heard? You refuse to live with me, and intend to leave this island; what are the thoughts that move you to such a resolution? Is there a more delicious climate than this under all the heavens? Can any other place present you with the happiness I intend you? You shall be my partner in the throne, and after my death, the sole heir of my dominions: besides which, I will communicate to you the secrets of my art; for though I am a prince, I am likewise a magician: forget then, young man,



‘man, whatever you may have left behind you in other countries: neither parents, friends, mistresses, titles, nor any other acquisitions, can be comparable to the advantages you will enjoy with me; and all these will cost you no more than a resolution to resign yourself to my desires without reserve.’

He waited for my answer with a pal-pitation of heart; and when he saw me continue silent, for I was so discomposed, that I was incapable of uttering a word—‘Lovely stranger,’ said he, ‘what may this silence mean? Am I to count it a favourable omen of your conformity to my wishes, or must I call it an afflictive refusal? All the happiness or misery of my life depends on your reply: the first moment I saw you, I felt a fondness for you springing up in my soul; and the longer I behold you, I grow more sensible of its tender im-pressions.’

The Prince of the Caravillis accom-panied these words with a sigh, and his looks all languishing, though at the same time full of fire, acquainted me that mo-ment with what I could not till then comprehend. I was struck with the ut- most shame at his criminal designs; I shuddered with horror; and cried aloud—‘O ye great gods! what do I now hear? Was I born for no other end, than to be subservient to the most abo- minable of all passions?—Am I then destined to be a wretched victim to the brutality of an abandoned prince?’—‘Ah, inhuman youth!’ replied he, ‘is it thus you treat the pure flame that must consume me for ever! Are all my sighs and transports, with the variety of advantages I offer you, incapable of inspiring you with compassion for my torments?’

These reproaches, instead of softening me to a compliance, made me burn with indignation; and I had destroyed the prince and all his retinue, had not the uncertainty of what consequence I should derive from such a proceeding, suspended my resentment. ‘My lord,’ said I, ‘let me fly from a country to whose customs I can never conform.’

The Prince of the Caravillis had re- course to all the gentleness, and most in- sinuating language he could use, to af- fect me with the impressions he desired; but finding me deaf to all his vows, and that I persisted in my request to leave a

place that offered nothing but hateful objects to my view; ‘It is too much,’ said he; ‘and I will now display my ven- geance for these provoking indignities!’ at the same time he laid hold of a wand that stood by his side, and striking me on the head with it—‘Be gone,’ said he, ‘into the forest, and be a companion to those who have slighted my tenderness; let thy condition resemble theirs; and be assured thou shalt repent of thy in- difference at leisure.’

I expected, at that very instant, to be transformed into one of those insects I had seen in the forest; but when I found the effect did not correspond with the menace, my courage was redoubled.—‘Wretched man,’ said I, ‘let us see whether my arms will not be more ef- fectual than thine!’ Upon which I im- mediately took one of my arrows, and began to aim it at his heart. At this he burst into tears, and throwing himself at my feet, in the utmost consternation—‘Young stranger,’ said he, ‘who may I imagine you to be? Tell me who you are, and from whence you came; tell me who conducted you to this place: my astonishment is inexpressible to find my wand ineffectual against you; till this moment, neither men nor women, nor animals, have been able to defeat my enchantments; and therefore some power, superior to mine, must have taken you into his protec- tion. Return, I conjure you, that shaft into your quiver; let us no more remember what has happened, but de- vote ourselves to pleasure; let a per- petual union be established between us, and let us give each other the gentlest pledges of a mutual affection.’

It was impossible for me to hear this new proposal with any moderation; in- stead of replacing my arrow in the qui- ver, I struck this unhappy prince with it, and he was immediately changed into a mass of black earth, which diffused a most offensive scent through the whole apartment.

And now the officers and favourites of the prince, who had been the specta- tors of this tragical event, fled from my presence in the utmost confusion; in vain did I call to them, promising to offer them no injury; it was impossible for me to prevail on them to return. For my part, I could not imagine where this extraordinary scene would end, though I prefigured

presaged a favourable conclusion, from the general consternation that affected the people.

With this expectation, I went out of the pavilion with a slow pace, and my bow and arrows in my hand; and walked over a considerable part of the island, without finding any living creature. I only had a distant view of several men and women, who ran with the greatest expedition, and, after swimming over the river that separated the two islands, advanced towards me.

I was surprized at such a spectacle; and believing they came to seize me, resolved to sell my life very dear; but when the multitude came near enough to be heard, they all cried at once—  
 ' May the blessing of the gods descend  
 ' on our benefactor, and may he live to  
 ' reign over us and our posterity! May  
 ' his life be spared, to give us the enjoy-  
 ' ment of every felicity under his reign!  
 When they came up to me, they fell prostrate at my feet, and embraced them with sighs and tears of joy.

#### H O U R VIII.

**A**FTER these testimonies of the sincerest gratitude, I began to fancy that this multitude of both sexes, whom I had never seen before, were disenchant-ed at the death of the prince; and I was fully convinced that my opinion was true, after I had conversed with some who made the best appearance among them. ' My lord,' said they, ' we were  
 ' informed by the fugitives in what man-  
 ' ner you destroyed the tyrant; and, by  
 ' an unspeakable good fortune, have by  
 ' that means recovered our liberty: all  
 ' the men you now behold, were such  
 ' as had the resolution to oppose the bru-  
 ' tal passion of the prince, or his offi-  
 ' cers. That prince, offended at our  
 ' resistance, unworthily transformed us  
 ' into vipers and pismires, and other  
 ' insects: and as to the women who ac-  
 ' company us, the prince, who had an  
 ' unconquerable aversion to their sex,  
 ' changed them at the same time into  
 ' various insects; and we have all been  
 ' condemned to live a whole year in the  
 ' forest, in those strange shapes. The  
 ' last night only of the last moon in the  
 ' year, the prince and his courtiers came  
 ' into the forest, and restored the men to  
 ' their natural form; and after demand-

ing of us, if we would always persist  
 ' in our opposition, they changed us  
 ' anew into insects; if we refused to con-  
 ' descend to their desires. The same  
 ' night they likewise made the women  
 ' assume their former shape, and then  
 ' took them to their beds; not so much  
 ' out of inclination, as from the necessity  
 ' they were under of multiplying their  
 ' species. When this scene was over,  
 ' the women, like ourselves, resumed the  
 ' form of insects which they had quitted,  
 ' and retained it all the following year.'

It is not easy for me to express my astonishment at such a relation; I almost looked upon this adventure as a dream: but at last, when I was unavoidably con-  
 ' vinced of it's reality, I determined to  
 ' make the present disposition of the peo-  
 ' ple contribute to my design of establish-  
 ' ing order and regulation among them.  
 I seemed to receive, with pleasure, the respect they paid me, and caused a throne  
 ' to be raised for me in the middle of the  
 ' public place. I then seated myself there-  
 ' on, and received the homage of all the  
 ' multitude; after which, I made a sign  
 ' that I had something to speak, and that  
 ' moment they kept an universal silence.  
 All the assembly who listened to my dis-  
 ' course, beheld me with an attention  
 ' mixed with reverence. ' My beloved  
 ' people,' said I, ' prepare to take pos-  
 ' session of this island, which the gods  
 ' deem you worthy to inhabit: let the  
 ' lot share among you the dwellings,  
 ' which your barbarous enemies have  
 ' compelled you to abandon; but, as it  
 ' is impossible for a state to subsist with-  
 ' out some form of laws and govern-  
 ' ment, let all the heads of families as-  
 ' semble in the pavilion, and I will there  
 ' take the necessary measures with them  
 ' for maintaining order and justice among  
 ' you, and securing to you the enjoyment  
 ' of all manner of prosperity.'

When I had ended my speech, the people made the place echo with new ac-  
 ' clamations of joy, during which I rose  
 ' from the throne, and walked to the pa-  
 ' lace, into which I entered with all the  
 ' elders: I then desired them to assist me  
 ' with their wise counsels; and after I had  
 ' intimated to them the laws I thought ne-  
 ' cessary to be established, we agreed upon  
 ' the following articles. The country  
 ' was to be governed by a prince, to be  
 ' chosen by all the heads of families; the  
 ' assembly of the elders were to be at li-  
 ' berty to depose the prince, and elect an-  
 ' other



other in his place, whenever he should violate the laws; and the prince had an equal privilege to abdicate his dignity, when he should think proper: that a feast should be celebrated on the first day of every moon, in order to thank the gods for their blessings: that neither the prince, nor any subject, should do that to another, which he would not have done to himself: that every one should marry according to inclination: that a man should have only one wife, and a woman one husband: that the youth of both sexes, who abandoned themselves to any irregularities, should be severely chastised for the first offence, and for the second, ignominiously banished the country, and suffer death if they ever returned: that the fugitive Caravillis, who had filled the land with abominations, should be condemned to perpetual exile; and, if any one should be so hardy as to set a foot thereafter in the territories, he should be publicly burnt, and his ashes thrown into the river: that both sexes should always wear tinctures, that would cover them from the reins to the knees: that the young men should daily exercise themselves in swimming, fishing, running, or hunting; and that a prize should be given to all who excelled in those exercises.

These laws were proclaimed, and received as commands sent from the gods; and every individual promised a strict obedience to them. 'Whoever,' said they, with one consent, 'shall presume to violate them, let him be deemed an enemy to his country, a disturber of the public tranquillity, and let him be punished according to his demerits.' The people got them all by heart, and habituated themselves to practise them with the greatest emulation. In short, they regarded them as the rule they ought constantly to pursue in the conduct of their lives.

I had the satisfaction to see those laws observed with all the exactness I could desire; and, during the period of one moon that I continued in the island of the Caravillis, I never heard that any person had violated them in the least instance. They were all influenced by the same view, which was the public good: they mutually contended to be first in performing good offices to each other; and the interest of each particular, coincided with that of his neighbour.

I was perfectly charmed with all this;

and must needs confess; that had I been master of my own destiny, I should have delighted to pass my days with a people, who knew so well how to use their reason: but I had no permission to infringe, or neglect the laws that were prescribed to me, and I was every moment observing whether the wind had begun to blow, for it had entirely ceased from the time I came to the island of the Caravillis. One day I perceived the branches of the trees were in motion, and this was an admonition to me to prepare for my departure. With this intention, I assembled the heads of families, and acquainted them with the necessity that obliged me to leave them, and advised them to chuse a prince from their own body, in my place, after my departure.

This declaration was like a blast of thunder to them, and at first they seemed disposed to obstruct my design: but when I represented to them, how reproachful it would be for them to be guilty of the first violation of the laws they had made, one of which permitted a prince to abdicate his dignity when he thought it expedient, and that their example might be attended with fatal consequences, they at last yielded, though with much reluctance, to my departure; and thus, notwithstanding the regret that appeared in their faces, and the disinclination I had to leave them, I bid them an eternal farewell.

When I had taken my leave of the elders, I went to the public place, where I addressed myself to the people in these terms—'Every thing which the gods ordained to be transacted in this island by my ministration, is now compleated; the detestable prince who polluted the land with his crimes, and detained you in the severest captivity, is now no more; and the wretched accomplices of his abominations have been compelled to abandon the country, and wander in strange lands; you have succeeded in their room, as more worthy to inhabit the island of the Caravillis, and are now entered on their possessions; your punctuality in conforming to the laws prescribed you, has exceeded my expectations; and I beg the gods to continue you in the happy state wherein I now behold you: may they grant, that you may long be the consolation and joy of your children; may they shower down all imaginable prosperity on your heads,

‘and avert from you every calamity that would afflict you!’

When I had finished this discourse, I prepared for my departure, whilst all the people wept, and knew not how to make me sufficiently sensible of their sorrow: men, women, and children, attended me to the verge of the second isle, and would even have passed the river, and followed me much farther; but I so earnestly intreated them to return, that they could no longer refuse me that satisfaction.

My only consolation at leaving a people so dear to me, was to observe, that the wind blew from that point wheremy father’s habitation was seated: this circumstance filled me with a joy beyond expression; for at that time I had no knowledge of the misfortunes I was still reserved to suffer. However, I met with nothing remarkable in all the countries through which I passed; and after I had travelled for the space of twenty days, I at last saw the expiration of the term of three moons, during which I was fated to wander over the face of the earth.

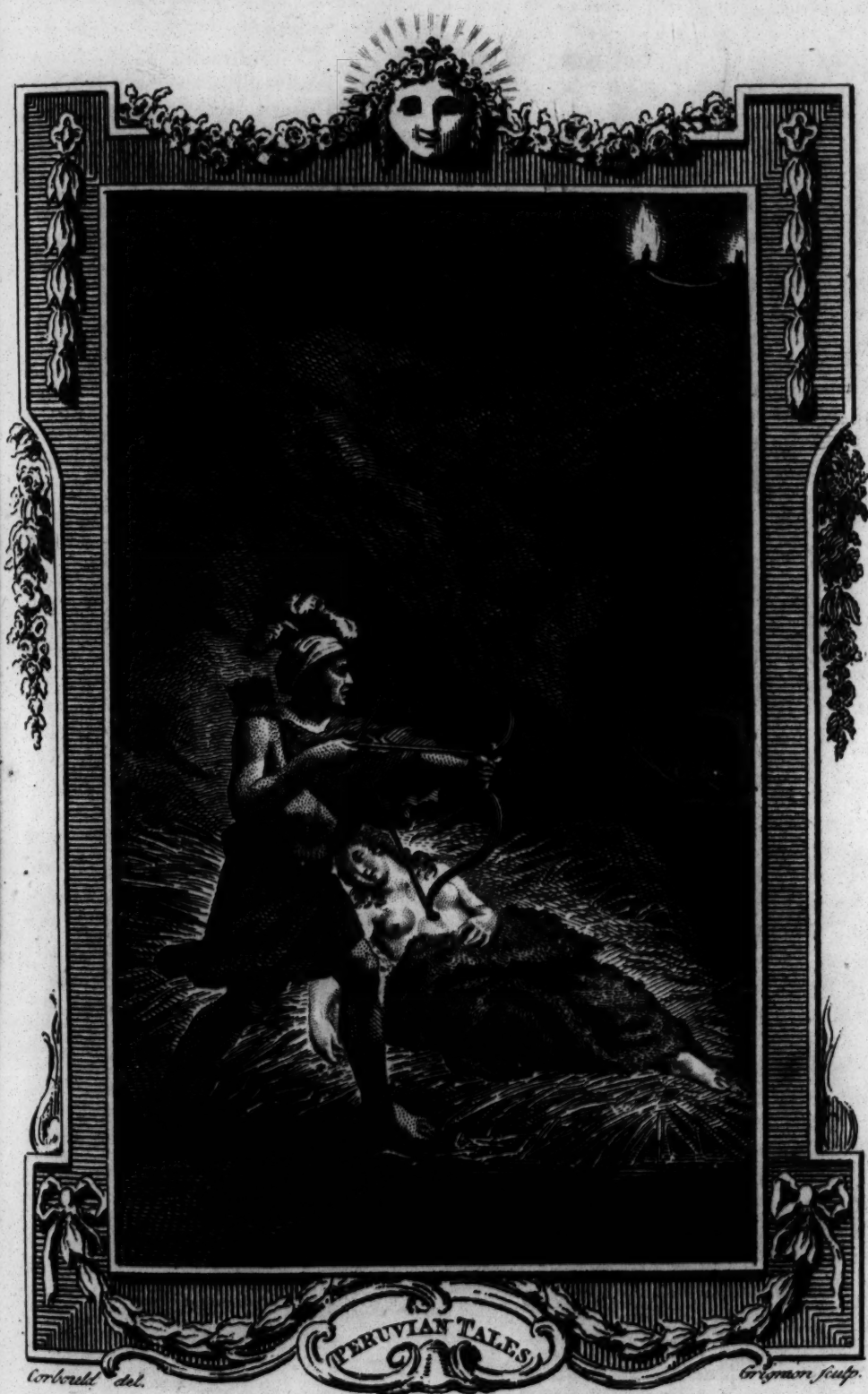
I was at the distance of only two days journey from my father’s habitation, when a dreadful tempest, intermixed with thunder and lightning, overtook me in my way; I frequently saw the thunder bursting at my feet, and the danger obliged me to seek for some shelter; I at last found myself at the entrance into a cavern, the door of which was open; and as I hoped to be there in safety, I was preparing to enter, when I beheld a young lady run into the cavern, in the greatest disorder, without any cincture, and with an air of the utmost desolation. She seemed to have the very features of the young princess I had seen six months before in the cave of the magician Coran, and the sight of whom had cost me so dear. I had a secret presage that she was the same person, and that I should not even now behold her with impunity: however, I took a resolution to follow her, and as she fled with extraordinary swiftness, I imagined she might want some assistance. I therefore followed her into the second chamber, which was illuminated with a vast number of lamps: she had thrown herself on a bed of rushes; and without thinking on the attitude in which she lay, abandoned herself to all the violence of sorrow.

Surprized at what I beheld, I approached the bed on which she had cast herself; and kneeling before her, I clasped one of her hands in mine; ‘How happy am I to have found an opportunity,’ said I, ‘of serving the most amiable creature in the world! You are bedewed with tears; permit me to wipe them from your cheeks: your limbs are all covered with mire; let me wash away that pollution.’ Upon which I was preparing to render her those little services which she suffered me to perform, or rather was insensible of what I did. But at last, as I was giving her to understand how much I thought myself obliged to my destiny for conducting me to her presence, that I might surrender up my liberty to her—‘Be gone, rash man!’ said she, pushing me away with much vehemence; ‘leave me to bewail my misfortune, and tremble at that which now threatens even you.’ At the same instant, happening to recollect that she was entirely naked, she was lost in confusion, to behold herself in that condition in the presence of a man, and immediately covered herself with the skin of a bear, that she snatched from the foot of the bed.

I was charmed at this instance of her modesty; and perfectly transported to discover, in such a lovely person, a decency so unusual in that sex\*. I endeavoured to calm her sorrow in the best manner I was capable; and represented to her, that it was unreasonable to abandon herself to despair, whilst there was the least hope of relief. I asked her to speak to me without reserve, at the same time assuring her, that I would sacrifice my life in her service. ‘Ah, generous unknown!’ cried she in a new consternation, ‘turn your eyes to the door!’ She had no power to utter a word more, and immediately fell into a swoon. I was preparing to assist her, when a dreadful hiss made me turn my head to the chamber-door: I there saw a terrible serpent advancing towards us. I shuddered at the sight of a monster, that to me appeared more formidable than the enchanted tyger I had killed six months before. But, however, my courage did not forsake me at that juncture: I seized my bow and arrows, and prepared to pierce the serpent; but the very moment I was ready

\* Almost all the women of those times prostituted themselves to the first comer, and the most abandoned of them was generally best disposed of in marriage.





Published as the Act directs by Harrison & C<sup>o</sup> Feb<sup>y</sup>. 11. 17 86.





to launch the first arrow, I became motionless, my feet were fastened to the pavement in such a manner, that I could not move from the spot where I stood, and my arms remained extended, without the least possibility of motion.

In the mean time, the monster, winding to the bed, opened a dreadful throat, in the hateful cavity of which I saw the princess swallowed down\*: upon which he retired, leaving me still in the same condition.

It was an hour after this fatal adventure, before the charm that fixed me to the pavement entirely ceased. The first use I made of my liberty was to quit the cavern, and run in search of the dreadful animal who had devoured my mistress; but all my labours were unavailing, and the night obliged me to stop at the gate of a cave, where I saw a light. I begged permission to pass the night in that place; but the domesticks, without making any reply, seized and carried me to their mistress.

She was an ancient woman, and bowed under a weight of years. 'Venerable mother,' said I, the moment I beheld her, 'I implore your protection.' I had no sooner uttered these words, when she said to me—'Himan, fear nothing; I am no stranger to the laws of hospitality, and you are in perfect safety in this place.'

I was preparing to thank her for her civility; but she would not allow me the opportunity. 'Himan,' said she, 'you need some refreshment; and you shall presently be accommodated.' at the same instant they brought me a plate of maze, pulse and fruits of all sorts; after which I was presented with a large golden cup filled with a red liquor of an excellent flavour.

The aged matron suffered me to eat, with all the tranquillity I could desire; but observing that I continued in a profound silence, after my repast (for I was then recollecting the adventures of that day)—'Himan,' said she, 'forbear to indulge that melancholy: constancy and virtue ought to be equally inseparable from princes; they should make nobleness consist in a greater share of wisdom than other people enjoy. Ba-

nish then from your mind every afflictive thought; and let not an unjustifiable sorrow render you unworthy of your birth, and deprive you of the princess you love.'

She pronounced these words with an accent of authority, that convinced me I ought to obey. I rose from my seat, and bending before her, with one knee to the ground—'Potent Laica†,' said I, 'your commands shall be complied with; and I vow to conform myself to your counsels: and yet the grief with which you have seen me affected, is far from being reproachful. But why should I trouble you with the particulars? She who was acquainted with my name the moment she saw me, must certainly be privy to the most secret circumstances of my life.'

## H O U R IX.

'YES, my dear son,' replied the Laica, embracing me, 'I am acquainted with all that has ever happened to you since your birth; and am not ignorant of any events which are reserved for the future part of your life. To give you a proof of this knowledge, I assure you the usurper will die in a short time, and the people will recall your father to his throne: as to your particular, you shall hereafter be joined, in the softest union, with the young princess you beheld this day. She is the usurper's only daughter, and he was obliged to banish her to a cavern very remote from the place of his residence, because she was threatened by an oracle with some extraordinary calamity, if she came to the isle of Titicaca before she had arrived to a certain age, and each of you are to experience very great misfortunes, should you happen to see one another before the time prefixed by fate. Your destinies, however, have a mutual dependence on each other, and will be accomplished in spite of all opposition.'

At the last part of the Laica's prediction, I felt a pleasing tranquillity reviving in my soul, and was delighted to hear I should one day be happy with the

\* In Peru, and chiefly in the country of Antisuyu, serpents have been seen twenty-five feet in length.

† Laica signifies a female magician: they were usually benevolent; whereas the generality of the male magicians delighted in injurious actions.

princess; and yet, as I had seen her devoured by a serpent, I could not comprehend how she could possibly be restored to me hereafter. I intimated my uneasiness to the Laica, and intreated her to favour me with some satisfactory solution of my doubts. 'It is by no means proper,' said she, 'to inform you of what has happened to the princess, because the discovery would be fatal to you both; nay, you will suffer severely, for coming into her presence this day; however, a little constancy will make you triumph over your rigid destiny: but, above all things,' continued she, 'be sure to remember the verses you will hear immediately; upon which she drew three circles, with a little red wand, and was then seized with surprizing agitations; she reddened; she grew pale; she foamed; and at last, with a trembling voice, sung these verses:

'Let thy fair princess ever prove  
'The charming object of thy love:  
'In ev'ry place, before thine eyes,  
'Let her celestial image rise.'

When the Laica had uttered this oracle, she tenderly embraced me. 'Betake yourself now to your repose,' said she, 'and to-morrow you may renew your journey to your own habitation. In less than fifteen days after your arrival there, you will be visited by ambassadors who will offer you the throne of Titicaca, which you are to accept; and then govern the people according to the lights imparted to you by nature, and which have been cultivated by an happy education.' When the Laica had ended her discourse, I laid me down on a bed of rushes, and enjoyed a very refreshing slumber. The next morning at break of day, I directed my course towards the palace where my father resided.

'My dear Mora Conay,' continued the Prince of Titicaca, 'you are acquainted with all the other particulars; I have been invited to the throne, and endeavoured to inspire my subjects with sentiments of humanity: I have been careful to give them right apprehensions of justice and equity; but none of these attentions have been able to abate my passion: night and day the idea of the princess is inseparable from my soul, and I am perpetually sighing to behold her once more. This is the only cause of my aversion to all the marriages that have been proposed

to me; and do you now think me guilty of any injustice, in not complying with such importunities? Give me your sentiments with all imaginable freedom.'

'My lord,' replied Mora Conay, 'I must necessarily approve your proceeding; I have frequently seen the princess, and her youthful charms are worthy of the passion you entertain for her: and yet, as your majesty cannot be certain when you shall be united to the deserving object of your wishes, and as the present dissatisfactions of your subjects are very pressing, it is necessary to think of some speedy remedy; and, in my opinion, the properest expedient to dissipate the cabals, is to engage your people in a war. The Prince of Chuquiaqua, during these last disorders, has possessed himself of several parts of your dominions; which lie eastward of this island; and you have nothing more to do, than to demand a restitution, which he will undoubtedly refuse: this will be sufficient to induce you to declare war against him; and as long as that continues, you will hear no more of marriage: and if they should afterwards renew their former importunities, you must contrive some other expedient to relieve you from your perplexity.'

The Prince of Titicaca approved of the scheme his minister recommended; he dispatched an ambassador to demand the territories which had been usurped, and the brother of Mora Conay was charged with this commission: he caused himself to be carried to the court of the Prince of Chuquiaqua in a golden litter, attended by fifty men, who supported it in their turns.

When the ambassador was introduced to the audience of the prince, he delivered himself in these terms: 'My lord, you are not insensible that you possess a large tract of land which belonged to the predecessors of my master, the Prince of Titicaca. The troubles which at that time infested our country, facilitated your conquest of those territories, the restitution of which, I am now come to demand; and your answer will decide whether peace or war is to subsist between the two nations.'

'Your demand is just,' replied the Prince of Chuquiaqua, 'and I promise you all imaginable satisfaction; but, at the same time, I swear by the tyger, from



from whom I am descended\*, that the son of the lion shall never obtain what he requires, till he has made a treaty with me, by which he shall engage to be my confederate in war, against the tyrant of Mulobamba. My subjects have long complained, that this offensive neighbour daily carries off their most beautiful virgins to be subservient to his pleasures, and their young men to be devoured at his table.

As it was no important matter, what nation the Prince of Titicaca declared war against, provided he kept his people in action, the treaty of alliance was soon concluded, and the two sovereigns appeared in the field at the head of their forces; but the King of Mulobamba was too powerful for the allies, and the victory declared in his favour. With his own hand he slew the Prince of Chnquiaqua, made the Prince of Titicaca his prisoner, and seized the dominions of both, except the isle of Titicaca, which refused to acknowledge the conqueror.

The number of it's inhabitants was considerably increased, by the multitudes who fled for refuge among them; and, with this additional strength, the island constantly preserved it's liberty.

In the mean time, the Prince of Titicaca was conducted to an apartment in the palace of the King of Mulobamba, and committed to the care of several young damsels, who were commanded to divert his melancholy, and regale him with such provisions as would soonest make him fat. The caresses of these young women were so many tortures to the unfortunate prince; and he was obliged to be perpetually on his guard against such amiable objects, that he might not violate his fidelity to his charming princess, whom he was commanded to remember without any intermission. During the space of two moons, which he lingered out in this miserable condition, his only consolation was to entertain himself with her lovely idea, and sing the verses he had composed in her praise; but these, in the event, proved so many combats which he had been preparing for himself; for the generality of the young damsels, to whose care he was consigned, were so affected with the harmony of his voice,

that they became desirous of making some impression on his heart: they made him all possible advances, and even offered him his liberty, if he would be favourable to their flame; but all their solitudes were ineffectual; the prince refused to owe his liberty to such conditions; and nothing could deface the Princess Cumac Riti in his remembrance.

Whilst he was maintaining this contest against the charms of so many beautiful persons, he received notice, that he was now to be devoured at a feast, which the king gave to all the heads of families in his dominions. These tidings were like a clap of thunder to the Prince of Titicaca; and yet the thoughts of death were not so dreadful to him as the loss of his beloved princess. He represented her, in his imagination, folded in the arms of another; and this afflictive thought was the only circumstance that discomposed him; but at last, he fortified himself with a noble resolution, and disposed himself for death, if such was to be the fate to which his destiny had ordained him.

When the day was fixed for this scene of inhumanity, all the people devoted themselves to publick rejoicings. The morning was ushered in with dances; and to these succeeded plentiful regales of wine.

About noon the prisoner was led to the publick place, where the festival was to be celebrated. He appeared with an air of intrepidity, capable of insuring respect into the hearts of all but barbarians. He marched with a slow and solemn pace, and from time to time played melting notes on the flute, or sung verses in honour of the lovely cause of all his sighs.

#### H O U R X.

THE formality of a kind of sentence, was the prelude to this mournful ceremony. The king, at the head of the elders of the nation, approached the Prince of Titicaca, and addressed him in this manner: 'Ah, unhappy man! Thy destruction is this day inevitable, and we shall feast on thy flesh; this is the most effectual method

\* The Indians, and especially the great lords, pretend to derive their descent from a lion, tiger, leopard, or some other fierce animal. Some among them even drew their pedigree from a mountain, a marsh, a spring, &c.

‘of being freed from our enemies: but before thou diest,’ continued he, ‘answer me a few questions.’

Question. ‘Is it not true, that thou didst come to invade our country in a hostile manner?’

Answer. ‘I only came to have satisfaction for the hostilities you daily committed in my dominions, and those of my allies.’

Question. ‘Dost not thou acknowledge, that thou hast slain several of my subjects with thine own hands?’

Answer. ‘Thou thyself hast murdered many more of mine.’

Question. ‘Should I restore thee thy liberty, wouldst thou employ it in new invasions of my kingdoms?’

Answer. ‘Without doubt; but, should I make thee my prisoner, I would not devour thee.’

‘Well then,’ continued the king, ‘to prevent the calamities thou mayest bring upon us, we are determined to eat thee immediately.’

The moment this sentence was pronounced, they began to put it in execution.

The Prince of Titicaca was bound to a tree, and the king, with the elders of the country, armed with sharp knives of flint, prepared to dissect alive the unfortunate prince; when two messengers, all bathed in sweat, rushed in, and demanded audience of the king; they acquainted him, that the inhabitants of Titicaca, with those of Chuquiaqua, were assembled to the number of thirty thousand men, and had already penetrated into the territories of Mulobambo, putting all to the sword in their march.

The tyrant was confounded at these tidings, and applied to the elders for counsel in that exigency. ‘My lord,’ said they, ‘there is no time for hesitation; you must assemble, without losing a moment, all the forces you can raise, and march immediately to the enemy. But this is not all,’ continued they, ‘for as success in war is always uncertain, it is absolutely necessary to let the Prince of Titicaca live; should we be victorious, it will then be time enough to eat him; but should the gods ordain us to be defeated, we can make use of him to obtain advantageous terms from the enemy.’

The prince was satisfied with this advice, and remanded the prisoner back to the women, to whose care he had been committed before. After this, he placed himself at the head of those whom the festival had drawn together, and proceeded with all expedition to meet the foe. His army was considerably reinforced in his march; so that when he prepared to engage the allies, he had forty thousand men under his command.

In the mean time, the aged Laica, who was always watchful over the interest of the Prince of Titicaca, went to visit him in his prison. At her entrance into it, she diffused so thick a smog, as made every thing invisible: after which, she took the prince by the hand, and directed him to follow her, because his presence was necessary elsewhere: upon which he was conveyed in a moment to the army of the allies. ‘Himan,’ said the Laica, ‘you have experienced many misfortunes and dangers, and I was incapable of averting them from you: chance led you to confer with the princess, before the time prescribed by a magician, whose power is superior to mine, and who delights to make thorns spring up in all your paths of life. He had taken a solemn oath, that if you beheld Cumac Riti, before seventeen years and one day of her age were completed, he would punish you with great severity. I hope, however,’ added she, ‘that he will now be satisfied with your past sufferings; and I am the more inclined to entertain that hope, because he has not obstructed your liberty: place yourself, then, at the head of your subjects and confederates, and combat with intrepidity; I may venture to assure you, that you will be victorious, and find many just causes for joy. But, as you have an enemy before you, whose arms are enchanted, I here present you with a lance, whose virtue you will experience the moment it touches the arms of the King of Mulobamba.’

The Laica, having taken her leave of the Prince of Titicaca, he presented himself before his subjects, who received him with unspeakable joy; after which he discovered himself to his allies, and the whole army cried out in concert—‘O son of the lion! avenge our last defeat; animate us with thy presence, and make us triumph over our foes!’

The



The two armies had faced each other a considerable time, without shewing any disposition to engage. The King of Mulobamba imagined, that as the confederates beheld his forces superior to their own, they would not presume to attack him. He sent a defiance to his enemies, and accompanied it with insulting language; but the inhabitants of Titicaca, exasperated at this contemptuous treatment, would have put the deputies to death, had not their prince thought it improper to indulge them in their intentions. 'Let the enemy,' said he, 'continue to be persuaded we dare not offer battle, and let us wait till they march to attack us: their precipitation will disorder their ranks, and they will fall upon us with the utmost confusion; we shall then charge them with the greatest advantage; and if the gods condescend to be propitious, we shall make them fly before us without any considerable loss on our side.'

It was not long before they saw the King of Mulobamba hasten to the head of his army; he was a man near five cubits in height, and he fell like a tempest upon the first ranks of the confederate army, whom he entirely routed. He grasped an enchanted mace of massive gold, which weighed two hundred pounds, and, at every blow, laid ten men in the dust. Besides this weapon, he was assisted by a tyger and a condore\*, who were altogether as destructive as their master.

The army of the allies had been entirely defeated, had not the Prince of Titicaca appeared in person to sustain them. He advanced at the head of his subjects, and charged so successfully on his foes, that he forced them to retreat: but his chief care was to face the King of Mulobamba; to whom at last he forced himself a passage, and, with his lance, had no sooner touched the tyrant's golden mace, than it immediately shrunk in his hands, and was reduced to a powder as fine as the smallest sand. The tyrant being thus disarmed, thought on nothing but his own destruction; he no more attempted to renew the combat, but endeavoured to owe his safety to flight: but all his efforts to that purpose were vain; and the Prince of Titicaca aimed such a vigorous stroke at his foe,

as laid him dead on the earth. The tyger indeed, as well as the condore, did their utmost to revenge their master's death: but all their fury was unavailing, and they both fell, at the same instant, pierced with wounds. The shattered remains of the enemy lost all their courage, when they beheld the bulwark of their army in the dust; they threw down their weapons, and begged for quarter, which put an end to the carnage.

The Prince of Titicaca, during his captivity, had been informed, that a vast number of women of all nations, mourned their loss of liberty in the tyrant's palace, and that multitudes of the other sex were shut up in chambers, where they were fattened in order to be devoured. When he had received this information, he thought it would redound to his glory, to restore so many unhappy captives to their liberty, and, with that intention, marched to Mulobamba, where, at his arrival, he demanded the keys of the palace; after which he passed through the apartments, and, in the softest language, proclaimed liberty to the prisoners.

He had now no part of the palace, except the women's apartment, to visit; and it was some time before he could prevail on himself to appear there in person. He was apprehensive, lest the view of those lovely objects who resided there, should prove too ensnaring to his soul; but at last, he fortified himself with a proper resolution, and commanded his attendants to open the doors of the seraglio. But how great was the astonishment that immediately seized him! He had scarce set a foot in the third chamber, when he was lost in amazement; at the sight of the first object on which he cast his eyes, he became motionless and insensible, and had certainly sunk on the floor, had not two of his officers who accompanied him, caught him in their arms. The object he beheld was the Princess Cumac Riti.

#### H O U R XI.

**N**O endeavours were omitted to recover him. Cumac Riti was alarmed at the condition in which she saw him; she approached him, and be-

\* A prodigious bird, sixteen feet in height, and the extremities of his wings eighteen feet distant from each other.

dewed his face with her tears, and, by her endearing caresses, at last recalled him to life. The prince grew sensible of the benefit of her tender caresses: 'Is it you, then, Cumac Riti,' said he, with the softest air, 'or is it your shade that presents itself to my view?' The lovely symmetry of her features inclined him to believe she was the princess; but, as she appeared considerably changed and emaciated, he knew not what to think: 'If you are the lady I seek,' continued he, 'I shall account myself the happiest of mortals to have found you. But what accident can have placed you here? Give me an exact relation of the adventures that happened to you since our separation.'

'I shall with pleasure,' replied Cumac Riti, 'give you the satisfaction you desire: and must inform you then, my lord,' continued she, 'that I was bathing with my mother in a fountain, near the place where I was confined by the prince my father, when the tempest, which undoubtedly compelled you to take refuge in my palace, obliged my mother and me to quit the water with the greatest speed. We each of us went to take the habits we had left at a little distance, when a serpent of a monstrous size immediately appeared before us; he seized my mother by the feet, and, as I imagined, devoured her in an instant.'

'I betook myself to flight, with all the horrors that fear could inspire, and ran to the palace to call for assistance; but wanted power to accomplish my desires.'

'This violence of my apprehension, joined with the idea of having seen my mother devoured by a serpent, deprived me of my senses, and overwhelmed me with despair, and you stood by me some time before I was sensible of your presence. The tenders you made me of your assistance, obliged me to give some attention to your discourse, and I was preparing to answer you, when I beheld the very serpent who had devoured my mother, appear at the door of the chamber where we then were. I gave you notice of the danger, and you in vain endeavoured to combat the monster. Your arm became inactive, your attempts were all unavailing, and your feet, by a secret enchantment, were fastened to the pave-

ment, without any possibility of motion. This accident gave the monster full liberty to advance towards me; I fainted at his approach, and for a considerable time remained in a state of insensibility.'

'When I at last came to myself, my heart was oppressed with all the agonies of sorrow; but my astonishment was not to be expressed, when I found myself in a prison, that seemed to inclose me with walls of flesh, and, at the same time, heard myself called by a voice very familiar to me; I fancied it was all a dream; but was undeceived by my mother, who uttered the voice. She acquainted me that we were in the belly of a serpent, who belonged to the King of Mulobamba, and that the tyrant, who was a great enchanter, had, by his powerful art, formed this monster, whom he dispatched every moon, in search of young virgins for his pleasure, and women to attend them.'

'My mother died with grief, the moment she was released from the belly of the monster, and I know not how I became able to survive her. From the first moment of my confinement in this place, I have been a prey to mortal afflictions. My health was considerably impaired, and I only waited for Death to end my pains for ever. I daily invoked his aid, to deliver me from the hateful visits of a tyrant; though he never came into my presence but with an intention to offer me some consolation: sorrow alone seldom proves mortal, and the experience I then had of its inconsiderable efficacy, not permitting me to hope for any assistance from that quarter, I provided myself with a sharp knife, with which I intended to kill myself the first day of the next moon, which was the very time the tyrant had fixed for making me the victim of his brutality; a fatal day indeed, and I was then to be the partner of his bed, notwithstanding all the aversion to his person I could possibly discover.'

At these words, the Prince of Titi-caca was relieved from all his apprehensions: he tenderly embraced the princess, and asked her if she could offer him her hand without any reluctance: 'My lord,' said she, 'I make the utmost distinction between you and him, between my prince



• prince and a tyrant, my preserver, and  
 • one who would have ravished me; in  
 • a word, between a generous and rea-  
 • sonable man, and a lawless barbarian;  
 • I ought to be for ever averse to the in-  
 • clinations of the one, and owe the most  
 • perfect obedience to the will of the  
 • other.'

After this, the prince marched with his troops towards his own dominions. He testified his acknowledgments to his allies for the succours they had offered him, and left the conquered people in possession of their liberty, because he had taken up arms against them, with no other intention than to punish their king for his crimes. As to his beloved Cumac Riti, she accompanied him in his progress, and he caused her to be carried in a silver litter.

The prince, after his arrival in the isle of Titicaca, espoused the fair Cumac Riti with the utmost solemnity, and on that occasion gave a splendid feast to the heads of every family. At the opening of the festival, they were all regaled with the most exquisite food, after which they drank a variety of delicious liquors, and closed the day with dances: but how dreadful was the catastrophe! the very moment they were conducting the young bride to the prince's apartment, the eyes of all the assistants were begloomed with a thick cloud, which, as it dissipated by degrees, discovered a giant of a monstrous stature and most hideous form. This dreadful figure seized the princess, and disappeared from the assembly in another cloud as dark as the former.

The moment Acllahua came to this part of her relation, she was surprised to see the luminous arm appear before her unsummoned, and was preparing to demand the reason of what she beheld, when the voice, that was always inseparable from that arm, addressed her in this manner—'Daughter of the Sun; the queen has caused it to be intimated to the Mamacuna, that she this day intends to visit the select virgins of Cusco, and she is now in her way from the palace to the sacred college, where, at her arrival, she will infallibly enquire for you. Consider, then, what trouble and disreputation your absence will create. With the Ynca's permission, therefore, you shall discontinue your history at present; you may, to-morrow, acquaint him with the sequel, without interruption.'

The Ynca Yahuarhuacac did not stay till Acllahua had intreated his consent to retire: 'I give you leave,' said he, 'to proceed no farther in your relation at this time; return to Cusco as soon as possible, but to-morrow I shall have a great inclination to hear the sequel of the history of the Prince of Titicaca; for I have an uncommon curiosity to know in what manner his dear Cumac Riti was restored to his arms.'

'My lord,' replied Acllahua, 'you shall have all the satisfaction you desire; and the conclusion of this history is no less engaging than the beginning.' After which, having intimated her desire to be conveyed to the college of the select virgins, the luminous arm was immediately obedient to her will.

The next morning Acllahua returned as usual to the Ynca's apartment, and resumed her history in this manner.

## H O U R XII.

ALL the countries, fire, were astonished at the sight of this prodigy; but no one had courage to utter a word. The prince alone preserved his intrepidity, and ran to seek the lance, with which he had laid the tyrant of Mulo-bamba in the dust; he returned with it in a moment, and, in all the agonies of despair, darted it into the body of the giant, and was going to repeat the blow, when the spectre, with a dreadful voice, cried out—'Forbear, rash man! Dost thou imagine, that he who has power to deprive thee of thy bride, in the presence of thy whole court, wants ability to elude thy rage?' But as the prince, notwithstanding this language, was ready to aim a second stroke at the monster; 'Presumptuous wretch!' said the voice once more, 'hold thy daring hand, or the blow thou intendest me shall be fatal to thy wife.'—'Ah, cruel,' replied the prince, 'how well canst thou improve my tenderness for Cumac Riti to thy advantage! But, dastard as thou art, thou dardest not appear to me in a human form; thou shalt either restore me my spouse, or I'll die beneath the weight of thine arm!'

These menaces made no more impression on the giant's mind, than his body had before received from the lance. 'Give me thine attention,' said he; 'I am the presiding Genius who guards the

H

Desart

Desart Island where the sun sets. The magician Coran and myself have consented to unite thee to the Princess Cumac Riti, on certain conditions. Coran had pre-ordained you both to mutual happiness, had you not seen each other till the princess had attained seventeen years and one day of her age, and thou hadst seen twenty years and one day of thine; you have beheld each other before the time prescribed, and thou art sensible, how dear that interview cost you both. 'Tis now my turn to-day. I had taken a solemn oath to crown thee with blessings and delight, if thou didst not introduce the princess into the isle of Titicaca till the period of her age I have mentioned; but thou hast conducted her hither before the expiration of that term; for which I am indispensibly obliged to oppose thy happiness; and thou must never hope to enjoy her again, till thou hast sought her in the Desart Island, and accomplish what the oracle shall enjoin thee.'

When the giant had pronounced these words, he entirely disappeared, and left the prince overwhelmed with a mortal sorrow. He was even ready to plunge the lance in his own bosom, but was prevented by a seasonable reflection that occurred to him the same moment. He recollected that the Laica, who had formerly succoured him, had, above all things, recommended constancy as essential to his future conduct; upon which he dutifully resigned himself to the gods. However, he could not forbear saying to himself—'How fatal are the terms on which I am commanded to recover the princess! I must take a long voyage to seek her in the Desart Island; but can any mortal hope to cross an immense ocean to a place so distant, that were a man driven thither by a tempest, he must despair of a return? The very birds cannot wing themselves a passage to this place, in less than several moons, so vast and so dangerous is the distance: and should I be so fortunate as to approach the Desart Island, how shall I be able to mollify the giant who presides there, and incline him to give me admission! And though I should prevail over all these difficulties, shall I be capable of executing what the oracle may command me to accomplish!'

The prince was lost in these melan-

choly reflections, when the propitious Laica presented herself before him. 'Ah, prince!' said she, 'you are easily dejected; do you want resolution, then, to expose your life once more for the possession of the charming Cumac Riti? You have only another step to take, and you shrink back. Are you then determined to renounce the felicity prepared for you?'—'No, gentle Laica,' replied the prince, 'I am resolved to expose myself to all imaginable perils; I am ready to sacrifice my life for the princess; and nothing shall dissuade me from my resolution, if you vouchsafe to aid me with your counsels.'

'Your courage,' replied the Laica, 'is now very commendable, and I will contribute my utmost endeavours to assist you in your enterprize. The most difficult circumstances, to any but yourself, would be to answer the three questions, which the guardian of the Desart Isle will ask you: but as you are endued with a competent judgment and capacity, I am persuaded you will acquit yourself with honour. Nothing now remains, but to furnish you with the means of passing safely through the vast expanse of waters that roll between our continent and the Desart Island; but to make this practicable, I will build you a vessel, which may be covered over whenever you please, and I will place a set of men therein, who shall row as long as the weather continues serene; and should any tempest rise, you may cause your vessel to be covered, and by that expedient save yourself from sinking; and, to prevent your being retarded by any such seasons, I will present you with a pair of tame condors, who shall be acquainted with the way you ought to steer. You must fasten them to the head of your vessel, and they will draw it after them while the storm continues.'

The prince was delighted at the novelty of these expedients. 'Potent Laica,' said he, 'you have restored my soul to its former tranquillity, by alleviating the difficulties that lay before me; you soothe me with consolation, and give me to hope I shall one day enjoy the happiness which has been promised me.'—'I hope,' said the Laica, 'you will soon obtain the full enjoyment of all your wishes: as to the accommodations I have promised you, they shall be all ready in two days; and therefore re-

member,



member, to-morrow morning, to appoint a set of persons to govern your dominions in your absence; and, when that is done, proceed to the sea-shore, at Arequepa, in order to embark without delay.

The Laica having instructed the prince in all the particulars necessary for him to be acquainted with in the prosecution of this important enterprize, left him, that she might have an opportunity to order the necessary preparations for his voyage; and the prince, on his part, punctually observed all her directions.

This very evening, he constituted his chief minister, Mora Conay, governor of his territories, and early the next morning began his journey to the place from whence he had been directed to embark for his voyage.

When he came to Arequepa, he found the Laica, who waited for his arrival, and then shewed him the vessel she had prepared for him: it was completely covered, because at that time the sea happened to be very tempestuous. The two condors, who were fastened to the prow, fluttered their wings, to intimate they only waited for orders to begin the voyage. The prince had brought with him the enchanted lance he received from the Laica, after she had delivered him from his dismal prison. 'Prince,' said she, 'you will have no future occasion for that weapon, and therefore exchange it with me for this golden sceptre.'

The very moment the Prince of Titicaca took the sceptre into his hand, he was sensible of an entire change through his whole person; and was immediately seized with horror at so extraordinary an event. 'Ah, powerful Laica!' cried he, 'what am I now become; I even seek for myself, and am no more to be found! Are these the promises of which you was lately so liberal!' The Laica could not avoid smiling at the apprehensions of the prince, who now perceived he was only a phantom, and, at the same time, intirely unacquainted with the cause of such a transformation, or the Laica's motives for effecting it. 'Let not this change,' said she, 'discompose you; for in your present condition you no longer want the necessaries of life; you have now no occasion of food, or wine, or sleep; and I have been obliged to proceed in this manner, both with respect to yourself and the twenty

rowers I have given you. This precaution has not only discharged you from the want of large quantities of provisions, with which your vessel would have been incumbered, but it has likewise secured you your life, should you be incapable of answering the questions that are to be proposed to you hereafter. Let me also add, that, as you will find Cumac Riti in the very same condition, it might be dangerous for you to behold her in any other state of being than that to which I have changed you. Begin your voyage, prince,' added she; 'and should you be so happy as to gain admission into the Defart Island, the oracle will prescribe the time when you are to resume your proper form; and, till the arrival of that period, be very careful never to quit the sceptre I have given you.'

### H O U R   X I I I .

THE prince, finding himself re-animated at this discourse, took leave of the Laica, assuring her of his constant gratitude for all her favours: after which he lifted up one of the skins that covered the vessel, and entered into it, at the same time commanding the birds to direct their flight to the Defart Island: the very moment he spoke, they launched forward with the rapidity of a stream of lightning; the vessel shot from the shore, and cut through the waves, swifter than a shaft from the bow of an expert archer. The two condors continued on the wing, without a moment's intermission, till the next day, when the sky became serene, and a sudden calm smoothed the surface of the ocean: at which time the rowers perceived it was incumbent on them to perform their duty; they took down the skins that covered the vessel, and had recourse to their oars; upon which the vessel began to swim with it's former swiftness.

The voyage lasted more than two moons; at the conclusion of which period, though the sea was altogether unruffled by wind, a dreadful noise, like the roaring of a tempest, was heard. The prince at this ordered the rowers to cover the vessel, and was instantly obeyed; but the birds forbore to spring forward; every one concluded, that what they heard was nothing more than the rumbling of the

waves that burst among the rocks of the Desert Island; and indeed the prince, a few moments after, saw the tree from whence the oracles were uttered; he likewise discovered the rocks that surrounded the island; and as the men laboured at their oars without ceasing, the prince, in a few moments, saw the vessel in a little bay, on the shore of which it was easy to disembark.

The Prince of Titicaca, in a transport of joy, was on the point of quitting the vessel, when he found himself restrained by a superior power, and at the same instant beheld the phantom who carried Cumac Riti from the island of Titicaca. It was, indeed, the guardian of the Desert Island, at whose aspect the prince trembled: but his terrors increased when he heard the giant, with a dreadful voice, utter these words: 'No mortal can enter this island, till he has given a just answer to the questions I am commissioned to propose: all those who are unable to solve them, are struck down without mercy, and then cast into the sea; this is the punishment they receive for their temerity; and now art thou conscious thou hast wisdom sufficient to make thee undertake to answer me, and intrepidity enough to face death in all its terrors?'

These last words, which seemed to reproach the prince with fear and irresolution, extremely provoked him. 'It is affronting me in the most sensible manner,' said he, with an air of resentment, 'to suspect me capable of fear: propose thy questions, for I stand prepared to hear them; upon which the giant made these demands:

Question I. 'Why has Pachacamac\* caused this Desert Island to rise out of the middle of the ocean, and at such an immense distance from the continent?'

Answer. 'His intention was, doubtless, to deter mortals from approaching

that place, by giving them a view of the difficulties of arriving there.'

Question II. 'What could induce Pachacamac to deter mortals from penetrating to this island?'

Answer. 'I suppose he intended to check their curiosity to look into futurity.'

Question III. 'For what reason did Pachacamac discountenance this curiosity in man?'

Answer. 'Because, in my judgment, he would not have them tormented with an anticipation of sorrow, at the prospect of those calamities to which they might be reserved: for it would be the most insupportable affliction, to be acquainted with a misfortune impossible to be eluded.'

The giant was perfectly satisfied with the prince's answers, and at the same time applauded the solidity of his judgment and the intrepidity he had discovered. After which, he said—'Thou art now permitted to set thy foot on this land, and the entrance into the Desert Island is open to thee, without the least obstruction. Go to the oracle for tidings of Cumac Riti; he will acquaint thee with the place of her residence; but, then, remember to accomplish all that shall be enjoined thee, otherwise thou wilt find thyself exposed to new misfortunes, much more afflictive than the former.'

The prince, at these words, left the vessel, and landed on the island. This island was of a circular form, and might contain eight hundred paces in circumference. In the center of it, Pachacamac had planted a tree, unknown to all the rest of the world, and the only one of the species. The branches perpetually bloomed with leaves, and extended themselves all over the island. This was the tree which pronounced the oracles, and the guardian Genius of the island

\* The Yncas not only worshipped the sun as a visible divinity, but had likewise the idea of the true God, whom they adored under the name of Pachacamac, which was composed of the words Pacha, which signifies the World, and Camac, which signifies the Living; and thus the word Pachacamac was formed: and which signifies, that Being who is the soul of the universe, or him who is to the universe what the soul is to the body. They had likewise a greater veneration for Pachacamac than they expressed for the Sun; for they durst not utter the name of the former, without all the marks of reverence and submission, whereas they pronounced the latter every moment. They never erected any temples to Pachacamac, nor offered sacrifices to him; and, as they had never beheld him, they contented themselves with adoring him from the bottom of their hearts: they regarded him as an unknown God. The magicians, before the arrival of the Yncas, had very near the same persuasion, as to this particular, though they likewise paid their adoration to lions, tygers, serpents, &c.

imparted



imparted them to the priests, divines, and magicians, by whom they were communicated, when they thought fit, to other mortals. Under all the tree, a deep shade was diffused, and one might say, that the wings of eternal night were there expanded.

The prince wandered many hours, before he could find the spot where the tree was planted; but at last he beheld it the very instant he began to despair of the discovery. He clasped his arms round the trunk, and vowed, if he recovered his beloved Cumac Riti, to testify his gratitude for such a blessing, by the celebration of a yearly festival; and, in particular, promised to sacrifice two dogs and as many sheep to the oracle, each returning moon.

The moment he had finished his vows and prayers, he perceived the trunk of the tree was in a strange agitation. The whole island trembled beneath it, and the branches clashing against each other, formed a sound that resembled thunder. This unexpected event inspired the Prince of Titicaca with a reverend horror; he shrunk up his shoulders, and first bowed his head, and then his whole body; he raised his eyes to heaven, and then immediately directed them to the earth; after which he laid the palms of his hands on his right shoulder, he kissed the air around him, and prostrated his face to the ground; and whilst he continued in this posture, he heard the oracle utter these words:

‘Himan! thou art now permitted to behold thy wife, and art at liberty to carry her back to thine own country. A happy return to the isle of Titicaca is allotted to you both, provided ye always keep the sceptres which preserve ye in your present state of being: but if, at any time, an inclination to resume your late forms, should induce ye to abandon your sceptre before your arrival in the valley of Arequepa, ye will then be separated from each other, and shall experience many calamities before your re-union. Rise then,’ continued the oracle, ‘and seek thy wife in this cavern.’

Whilst the oracle was pronouncing these words, the tree opened, and discovered the entrance into a deep cave, but sufficiently illuminated to render it ac-

cessible with ease. The prince, who beheld it as soon as he arose from the ground, entered into it, and found an out-let from the cavern into a garden, to which he directed his steps, and, after he had passed the several alleys, he at last found his dear Cumac Riti. She was walking in that verdant scene, and held a sceptre of silver in her hand. The moment the prince approached her, she was the first who broke silence: ‘Generous prince,’ said she, ‘how could you possibly renounce your liberty, to come to this melancholy solitude?’—‘My impatience to behold you,’ replied the prince, ‘and the hopes of re-conducting you to Titicaca, made me undertake this expedition; and I have reason to congratulate myself for the event, since I have at last found you, and have the oracle’s permission to return with you to my own country.’

At these tidings, Cumac Riti was transported with joy, and attempted to embrace her beloved Himan; twice she threw herself on his neck, and twice was convinced she embraced an airy shade. ‘Did the barbarous guardian of the Desert Island,’ said she, ‘consent to your arrival here, only to inflict the same punishment on you, to which I am doomed?’—‘No,’ replied the prince, ‘the giant has not deluded me; nor was it he who effected the change you behold in my person. The Laica, to whom I have so many obligations, has transformed me in this manner, that I might arrive at this place with greater security: without her assistance, I had still continued in the isle of Titicaca, for ever destitute of hopes to possess you.’ After this short conference, he acquainted her in what manner the Laica had made him determine to undertake the voyage to the Desert Island, and the accommodations she had procured him. He then informed her, how he entered into that island, and was particularly careful to relate to her the orders he had received from the oracle, and the obligations they were both under, to keep their sceptres till their arrival in the valley of Arequepa. ‘As to the rest,’ continued he, ‘let us resign ourselves to the mercy of the gods; and since they permit us to return to Titicaca, let us not continue long in this place.’

• All these were the ceremonial masks of their adoration.

## H O U R   X I V .

**A**FTER this short conversation, the prince and princess passed from the garden into the cavern, and from thence immediately ascended to the Desert Island. At their arrival there, they renewed their adorations, and prostrated themselves before the oracle, with grateful acknowledgments for the discoveries he had vouchsafed them. When they rose from the ground, they saw the tree was closed up, rendering the entrance into the cavern no longer visible. They did not continue in that place, but went to find their vessel: but, as they were in danger of being bewildered in the gloom, the giant, who was the guardian of the island, and at that time found himself sufficiently avenged, came to their assistance, and conducted them to their vessel. The lovers then embarked, and proceeded in their voyage by the alternate aid of the birds and powers, as the sea happened to be either calm or tempestuous.

They had no sooner landed on the shore of Arequepa, but they found the guardian giant of the Desert Island in company with the benevolent Laica. The giant received the silver sceptre from the hand of Cumac Riti, and the prince delivered his golden sceptre to the Laica from whom he had before received it, and at the same instant the prince and princess were restored to their proper forms. They tenderly embraced each other; and the giant, as well as the Laica, when they departed, promised that no future accident should ever interrupt the happiness of the two lovers, who now returned to Titicaca. In this island they lived in perfect felicity and the softest union, and became the parents of a numerous progeny. They passed a length of years in a constant freedom from all inquietudes; till at last, at the close of an unblemished old age, they sunk gently down to the tomb, accompanied with the universal sorrow and regret of all their subjects.

The Ynca Yahuarhuacac listened to this history with great attention and delight; but was unwilling Acllahua should be sensible of his satisfaction. ‘I confess,’ said he, ‘the Prince of Titicaca discovered some constancy of mind amidst his misfortunes; but a single instance is of no great importance, and very far from justifying what you as-

serted. You had the presumption to tell me, that a vast number of barbarian princes have supported their calamities with the utmost fortitude, and you must therefore relate me another history at least; I must then judge by the particulars, whether you have been punctual to your promise or not; and this alone shall regulate my future proceedings towards you.’

‘Sire,’ replied Acllahua, ‘I can easily give you the satisfaction you require; and since you condescend to favour me with your attention, I shall enter upon a relation, which I am persuaded will acquit me of my promise.’

## THE HISTORY OF PRINCE HOUAC.

**I** Must acquaint your majesty, (said Acllahua) that towards the sea-coasts lies a valley, called Fanasica, or the Vale of Desolation. Before the Ynca Mango Copac was sent down to the earth by the Sun his parent, a very powerful prince governed this valley and all the dominions that lie between those territories and Arequepa, and form an extent of near eighty leagues: but the particular period of time in which he reigned is not known. This prince had a son named Houac, who was trained up in all the exercises suitable to his birth; and with these advantages, was graced by nature with a very amiable person, which in those times was alone sufficient to make him pass for a very accomplished prince. His father loved him with the utmost fondness, but durst not indulge himself with the presence of his son, because the children of the greatest lords in his dominions had conceived a mortal aversion to the prince, and made frequent attempts on his life.

Prince Houac was banished, therefore, to the province of Camata; and this precaution preserved the son, though it proved fatal to the father. The inhabitants of Nanafca grew dissatisfied at their being deprived of the heir to the throne, and frequently importuned the king to recal him, while the enemies to the young prince, though with very different views, added their solicitations to the same effect: they even proceeded farther, and one day, with an air of authority, required their sovereign to send for his son, and upon his refusal assassinated him with the utmost barbarity. After which they raised to the throne a person elected out



out of their own body, and who perhaps was the most impious of all men who had ever lived.

The new prince was acknowledged as such, not only by the people of Nanasca, but those of Attica, Veuna, Atiquipa, and Guelca. He likewise employed his utmost endeavours to induce the nations of the Havari and Camata to submit themselves to his empire, but without any success. These faithful people preserved their allegiance to their lawful prince, placed the crown on his head, and promised to sacrifice all their lives to maintain him on the throne.

The division was succeeded by a bloody war, every place glittered with hostile arms; and after several combats that were no way decisive, both parties resolved to come to a general engagement, by the event of which, the quarrel was to be determined. The two armies, which were composed of all the people who were in a condition to appear in a military capacity, assembled in the Valley of Nanasca, and began the battle with loud acclamations. The two competitors presented themselves wherever the greatest dangers were visible; and Prince Houac, in particular, performed actions that were incredible, and in each place where he appeared, was altogether irresistible: but victory, as it generally happens in instances of this nature, abandoned the better cause, and favoured the army that was most numerous. The forces of Prince Houac were inferior to those of his adversary by one half. All the inhabitants of Havari and Camata were either slain or wounded, but they chose rather to be cut to pieces, than either retreat or acknowledge themselves conquered; and the combat was not ended till they intirely wanted men to maintain it.

Prince Houac was found among the wounded; but the conqueror would not permit any of his soldiers to kill him: he caused his wounds to be dressed, with an intention to reserve him to grace his triumph; and afterwards to have him devoured at a great festival, which he determined to exhibit for the celebration of his victory. With this intention, he consigned him to the care of one of his officers named Casqui, telling him, at the same time, that his life should be responsible for his prisoner, if he suffered him to escape. It happened very fortunately, that this officer of the guards, to

whose vigilance the prince was confined, was one of those who secretly abhorred the usurper, and he went the very first night to wait on his prisoner. 'My lord,' said he, 'there are some who interest themselves in your misfortunes more than you imagine. I was ever a faithful servant to the king your father, and could not, without the utmost reluctance, behold the unfortunate revolution of your affairs: and since I am so happy as to have an opportunity of making some acknowledgment to the son, for the obligations I have received from the father, I cannot possibly neglect so agreeable a conjuncture: I am come to tell you, that you are master of your liberty; save yourself whilst the night favours you with it's darkness; fly from this land of barbarity, and withdraw from the destruction that awaits you.'—'Your generosity,' replied the prince, 'charms me more than the offer you have made me, and I am infinitely delighted to find there is yet a person to whom the memory of my father is precious; but I should make a bad return to your exalted goodness, could I possibly consent to save my own life at the expence of that of my preserver: I am sensible, that my escape from danger will expose you to inevitable death; and it would be great injustice in me to suffer you to lose your life for your fidelity to me.'—'Be not in the least uneasiness,' said the officer, 'at any danger I may happen to incur; I have friends capable of protecting me: but what consequence soever may happen to ensue, I shall think myself completely happy, in having contributed to your preservation.'—'This,' returned the prince, 'is what I absolutely refuse to accept, and I never will owe my life to the expedient you propose, unless you will likewise save yourself, and be the companion of my flight. We will share the same dangers; and should the gods be favourable to us in another land, we will divide their blessings between us; but if we are to be reserved for future calamities, each of us will at least have the consolation of beholding a partner in his adversity.'

The officer, after some deliberation on the prince's proposal, made him this reply—'Yes, Sir, I am determined to attend you in your flight; and as the present moment is very precious, let us

' us immediately think of our security :  
' if you will be guided by my opinion,  
' we will direct our course to the province  
' of *Hatun Rucana*\*. I have heard  
' surprising accounts of the queen of  
' that country, and let us experience  
' how true they be. After this discourse,  
each of them armed himself with a lance,  
a bow and a quiver, and a sword, and  
then they proceeded on their way.

After a considerable space of time, for  
the Valley of *Nanaska* is above seventy  
leagues distant from *Hatun Rucana*, they  
arrived at the frontiers of this province:  
they were surprised to find the avenues  
guarded; however, they advanced for-  
wards to enquire of the guards, whether  
they might have free access into that  
country. They were answered with much  
civility, that the province was entirely  
free to strangers; but for all that, the  
guards detained them for some time,  
though with such an air of deference and  
respect, as created no suspicion of any  
bad intentions in such a proceeding.  
After they had stopped our two travellers,  
they immediately disarmed them, and  
attentively surveyed them from head to  
foot, and caused them to turn about se-  
veral times: but their chief attention was  
employed on Prince *Houac*; they stroked  
his reins and legs, and the more they  
examined him, the greater was the sa-  
tisfaction they discovered.

The travellers, who were unacquaint-  
ed with the meaning of such a strict ex-  
amination, did not seem to be much sa-  
tisfied with the ceremony; but, as they  
were the weakest party, they were obliged  
to submit to the present necessity.

#### H O U R X V.

**W**HEN the examiners had finish-  
ed their inspection, one of the  
most aged among them†, looking sted-  
fastly on Prince *Houac*, expressed him-  
self in this manner—' This young man  
' is exceedingly well proportioned, and  
' has an air of great activity in leaping;  
' it were to be wished, that the person  
' who is to have the honour of sharing  
' our queen's bed, may have such an  
' amiable appearance; we must conduct  
' him to the palace, and if I am not  
' much deceived, we have met with what

' we wished for.—Speak, young hero,'  
continued he, ' can you leap to any per-  
' fection ?'

*Casqui* perceiving the prince had no  
inclination to answer that question, made  
the reply himself. ' If the matter were  
' of any importance,' said he, ' you  
' might put us to the trial; and though  
' activity in leaping is the least of my  
' companion's accomplishments, his ap-  
' pearance is sufficient to convince you,  
' that you will not be disappointed in  
' any expectations you may entertain of  
' his ability in that kind of exercise:  
' but may we, in our turn, know why  
' you question us in this manner ?'—  
' You shall be satisfied immediately,'  
replied the guard who first spoke: ' we  
' have a queen, who is now one and  
' twenty years of age, and whose wis-  
' dom is altogether as engaging as her  
' beauty: she is a virgin; and we see  
' very little probability of her mar-  
' riage. According to a famous oracle,  
' she is to be espoused by that man only  
' who shall leap over a channel exceed-  
' ingly broad, and sunk so deep into the  
' earth, that the bottom is unfathom-  
' able. It is distant a league from the  
' palace; and the same man who shall  
' have agility enough to spring from one  
' edge of this channel to the other, will  
' be capable of vanquishing a giant  
' thirty cubits high, who has for several  
' years filled this province with desola-  
' tion: he stops all passengers who come  
' in his way, and obliges them to relate  
' some history to him, and if he happens  
' not to think it entertaining, he devours  
' the historian without mercy; but suf-  
' fers those whose relations please him,  
' to pass unmolested on their way.'

When the prince heard this part of the  
guard's account, he interrupted him  
with an air of impatience. ' Conduct  
' us immediately,' said he, ' to the pa-  
' lace of your queen, and we will see  
' how this affair will end.'—' You shall  
' be there in three hours,' replied the  
guard; ' and our orders are to conduct  
' all strangers thither, who shall ap-  
' proach our frontiers. They are in-  
' vited to leap over the channel; but if  
' they refuse to make the attempt, or  
' decline it through fear, they are per-  
' mitted to depart in full liberty. Very  
' few persons hitherto have made the

\* *Hatun Rucana* signifies Great *Rucana*.

† The oldest people always spoke first, as having most experience.



‘essay; not one of them could attain the middle of the channel, and all who have endeavoured to leap over it, have perished in the abyss.’ After this discourse, the guard ordered two of his companions to conduct the strangers to the palace.

In a few hours, the prince and Casqui came to a great square, bounded on the right and left hands with a long range of buildings, wherein the queen’s relations resided. In the front wall was raised, and continued from one end of the square to the other; and in the middle of the wall a gate opened into a garden, equal to the square in extent. In this garden was the queen’s palace, composed of two great pavilions of wood, covered with plates of gold and silver, which were disposed with admirable symmetry. At an equal distance, between these pavilions, were two statues of stone, eighteen cubits high; one represented a man devouring a young virgin, the other was the form of a woman, destroying a youth with the same cruelty; and from the left side of each statue, towards the region of the heart, the head of a tyger, who seemed to prey upon them, was extended. The guards acquainted the two strangers, that these statues had been erected to perpetuate the remembrance of a punishment inflicted on two giants, who devoured all the children they could seize; and that at last, a wise Laica, having transformed two tygers into a young man and a virgin, with a command to resume their natural form as soon as the giants had swallowed them down, they accordingly devoured the two cannibals.

Prince Houac thought this relation a very instructive lesson for himself, and considered it as a good omen. ‘To what fatality,’ said he to Casqui, ‘are mankind allotted! Their most considerable enemies are the more formidable, the less they are regarded. Who could have imagined that these giants, who are able to depopulate whole nations, should be reduced to the inability of preserving themselves from the snares of a woman? Why then should not I accomplish, by industry and prudence, what the Laica performed by her enchantments? I am only to leap cross the channel, and this I shall infallibly do, unless the oracle has required an impossibility.’

Casqui shuddered at this discourse; ‘Ah! my lord,’ said he, ‘have you

well considered what was related to you, of those who have hitherto engaged in this adventure? They sunk down the precipice; and therefore never hazard yourself in so fatal an experiment; the calamities of the unfortunate ought to teach the wise to avoid such a fate.’

Whilst they conversed in this manner, they were introduced by the guards into the pavilion on the right-hand, where the queen usually resided. The prince was surprised at the magnificence and symmetry of the first apartments through which he passed: but when he entered the hall which the queen honoured with her presence, his imagination was no longer filled with the splendor of the building; a more engaging view attracted all his attention, and his eyes had then no other object but the princess. She was seated on a throne of silver, amidst a shining circle of young ladies, who formed her court, but were infinitely surpassed by their sovereign, in majesty and blooming beauty. The prince, at the first glance, was perfectly charmed, and inflamed with love. ‘Adorable queen,’ said he, ‘you see at your feet an unhappy prince, to whom misfortunes have long been familiar, but who now counts his sufferings the greatest felicity of his life; and since I have the happiness to behold you, and am not destitute of hopes to possess you, I esteem myself the most fortunate of men. I have been informed of the oracle relating to your nuptials, and the welfare of your people; and whatever difficulties may attend the conditions, I offer my best endeavours to surmount them: so lovely a reward is a sufficient inducement, even to attempt impossibilities; and though there should be no prospect of succeeding, it will be always glorious to have aspired so high.’

The queen, who likewise beheld the prince with admiration, felt her heart warmed with tender impressions in his favour: when he had finished his discourse—‘Prince,’ said she, ‘though you had not informed me of your high rank, your language and appearance would have convinced me you were no common person: but, I must tell you, the enterprise you propose to undertake is extremely difficult to be accomplished; and yet you discover such an undaunted mind, that I flatter myself

‘ you will succeed in the attempt, after such numbers have failed. The oracle may, indeed, demand a very difficult exploit, but it certainly would not require any impossibility: but, should you prove unfortunate in the trial, what other mortal can ever hope to prevail! I therefore consent to your undertaking the adventure of the channel, and leave the time to your own choice.’

#### H O U R XVI.

**P**RINCE Houac would have testified his acknowledgments to the queen, for the sentiments she entertained in his favour, but that princess would not permit him. ‘ I am desirous to know,’ said she, ‘ what accident conducted you to my dominions: but as I imagine you need some refreshment, as well as repose, I willingly defer the satisfaction of my curiosity; you shall now be conducted to the next pavilion, for I will not suffer such a guest as yourself to be lodged any where but in my own palace.’

Four of the queen’s ladies, understanding her intentions by a sign she gave them, immediately desired the prince to follow them, and then conducted him and Casqui into the pavilion that rose on the left-hand. At their arrival there, two of these ladies prepared beds, whilst the others went to order a collation for the strangers. In an instant they were regaled with a variety of exquisite delicacies, and fruits of every kind; after which they were presented with a most delicious liquor, and when they had finished their repast, the ladies left them to their repose.

The amiable qualities of the prince had made such an impression on the heart of the young queen, during the time of their short conference, that she could not forbear asking all the ladies around her their sentiments of her guest. ‘ Powerful queen,’ said they, ‘ it would be the greatest misfortune, should a prince, who seems master of so many charming accomplishments, perish in the adventure he proposes to undertake: but we have reason to believe, the gods have made him so amiable, with no other intention than to make him merit the title of your spouse; and not

‘ one of all the number who have aspired to that happiness, seemed half so deserving as this prince.’

This discourse, which was far from flattery, gave the queen no displeasure. ‘ My thoughts,’ said she, ‘ agree with your’s; and yet I cannot overcome the apprehensions I feel on this account: I am even inclined to refuse him the adventure of the channel; but since the oracle has commanded it, and no one can offer me his hand, but on that condition, he must necessarily expose himself to all the dangers.’

The prince, on his part, before he composed himself to slumber, directed his discourse to Casqui in this manner:

‘ Ah, my dear friend,’ said he, ‘ how lovely are the features of the Queen of Hatun Rucana! What a profusion of charms cover her whole person! What an air of majesty! What amiable graces shine all around her! I never, till now, beheld so much beauty! How infinite are my obligations to you, my dearest Casqui, for inspiring me with an inclination to visit these dominions! Had I remained in the peaceable possession of the throne of Nanasca, my happiness would not have been comparable to that I now propose to enjoy.’—‘ And for my part,’ interrupted Casqui, ‘ I reproach myself extremely for being the cause of your arrival in this province; but however, I flatter myself, that before you engage in this adventure, your eyes will be open to the dangers that threaten you, and that the melancholy fate of your predecessors will, as I have already intimated, incline you to prevent your own destruction.’ A considerable time was spent in such kind of conversation; but Casqui was not able to make the impression he desired on the prince.

The next morning, as the queen was on the point of sending to know if her guests were awake, a messenger came from the prince, to intreat her permission for his approach to her presence; and the queen having given him to understand that his company would be very acceptable to her, the prince immediately presented himself before her. He had taken the refreshment of a bath, and was dressed in a magnificent cineture\*, cover-

\* The Indians of those nations covered their bodies with a vesture of linen, or cotton, which flowed down from the reins to the middle of the thigh; to this habit, princes added a variety of ornaments.



ed with emeralds and turquoise stones, and curiously embroidered with studs of gold and silver. The ladies who were commissioned to attend him, had presented him with this habit by the order of their sovereign; and the new graces it diffused over his person, compleatly charmed the queen; and, at the same time, he grew more inflamed each moment he cast his eyes on that amiable princess.

During this interview, the queen testified to him her impatience of knowing to what adventure she owed the happiness of his presence in her territories: 'It is so uncommon,' said she, 'to see princes undertake long journies, that I intreat you to give me the satisfaction I desire.'

'Madam,' replied the prince, 'you must permit me to acquaint you, that something of more importance lies before us at present: you have been so gracious as to leave the time for my undertaking the adventure of the channel to my choice, and I only wait for your consent to make the trial. I intreat you to order all your court to be assembled, that they may be witnesses of my success or destruction. Let what will be the event, I shall not languish long in expectation of the greatest happiness to which I could possibly aspire. Should I be so fortunate as to succeed in my enterprise, I shall then have time sufficient to inform you of the particulars you desire to know; but if I am doomed to perish, Casqui will give your majesty that satisfaction.'

'Prince,' replied the queen, 'you seem so resolutely determined, that it would be in vain to dissuade you to defer this adventure, and therefore I consent to your request: at the same time she ordered it to be proclaimed in the great square, that Prince Houac was ready to undertake the adventure of the channel.

At these tidings, all the queen's relations, and the elders of the people, who were then at court, assembled in the great square of the palace, and ranged themselves in two lines; after which the queen placed herself on a litter, supported by eighteen men, and caused the prince to be seated at her side, and then the procession began in this order: first, the elders of the people walked three and three in a rank; the queen's kindred followed in the same order; the litter of

that princess came next, attended by a great number of ladies; and the cavalcade was closed by the life-guards.

In the space of about an hour and an half, they arrived at the channel, which was twenty-one cubits wide: the prince was not in the least dismayed at the view; on the contrary, he addressed himself to the queen, with joy sparkling in his eyes—'Madam,' said he, 'I now behold the most amiable day of my life; how great will be my felicity, if I spring to the other side of this gulph!'—'My lord,' replied the queen, 'could my vows contribute to your success, the adventure would be soon accomplished.'—'Ah, charming queen,' cried the transported prince, as he descended from the litter, 'victory is infallible, since you interest yourself in my welfare!' The queen upon this presented him her bosom to kiss; and the prince, after so great a favour, nimbly leaped from the litter.

All the spectators were charmed at the prince's amiable mien, and invoked the gods to be favourable to him; but whilst each individual was directing his vows and supplications to heaven, the prince retired fifteen paces from the chafin, and then sprung forward, with the swiftness of lightning; he darted through the air with exceeding rapidity, leaped across the channel, and appeared triumphant on the other side, at the very time they imagined him on the opposite edge. 'What propitious divinity,' cried they, 'has sent us so charming a prince, to be the deliverer of our nation!'

But their admiration was prodigiously increased, when they beheld the prince leap over the channel a second time, to return to the queen: the acclamations were then redoubled, and each spectator endeavoured to testify his joy; the queen herself could not moderate the tender sentiments of her soul; she congratulated the prince on his success, and affectionately folded him in her arms; after which, turning to the assembly—'Let your gratitude,' said she, 'correspond with mine, and be equally affected at the sight of your deliverer.'

This exhortation was immediately succeeded by shouts of gladness. 'Long life,' said they, 'to the inimitable hero, who has accomplished the adventure of the channel! May he live to destroy the giant, and be the happy consort of

'our great queen!' The same acclamations were continued to the palace, to which the queen and prince returned, in the same order as before. The remainder of the day was passed in public rejoicings, in which the grandees and commonalty shared with a grateful emulation.

Towards the close of day, the prince came into the queen's pavilion. 'Madam,' said he, as he approached her, 'one condition still remains to be complied with; I must vanquish the giant, and relieve your people from the scourge which has so long afflicted them.'—'Ah, prince!' replied the queen, 'you are preparing to expose yourself to new perils! But, to my comfort, the most difficult part is already accomplished: what power can resist him, who has leaped cross the channel so many cubits broad?'—'Madam,' said the prince, 'I am exceedingly delighted at the hopes you entertain; and, to confirm you in that persuasion, I must acquaint you, that I have already formed a stratagem for the monster's destruction; for I am sensible it would be impossible to vanquish him by mere force: as soon as the morning appears, I will endeavour to find him without delay, and in a little time you shall have tidings of his death; I only request your majesty to let me have two men and a litter, and some calabashes, filled with ynychic candied with honey\*.'—'You shall be supplied,' said the queen, 'with all you desire;' upon which he retired, to pass the night in his pavilion.

#### H O U R XVII.

**T**HE dawn had scarce began to glow in the sky, when the prince rose from his bed, and ordered the calabashes to be brought to him, filled with ynychic, with which he mixed a powder he had procured the preceding night from the queen's chief physician. When the mixture was completed, he placed the calabashes on the litter, and ordered the two bearers to follow him; after which he

armed himself with a sabre made of wood as hard as iron†, and fastened to his cincture a poniard of the same substance.

With this equipage the prince set out to find the giant, and had not advanced above twenty leagues before he discovered him at a distance, sitting under a great tree: the sight of the monster filled the two bearers with horror; but they were animated by the prince, who assured them they had nothing more to fear than himself, and that neither of them should sustain any injury; upon which they continued their progress; and, as they approached nearer, they beheld two men, one of whom had but one hand, and the other wanted both a hand and a leg; they were seated on each side of the giant, and the prince, when he discovered them, said to his two attendants—'We are come, my friends, very seasonably, to deliver these unhappy men; but let us march on, as if we intended to proceed farther.' They had already advanced a few paces beyond the tree, when the giant, with a dreadful voice, cried—'Stay, presumptuous wretches! let me see what you carry on your litter.'—'My lord,' replied the prince, 'they are calabashes filled with ynychic, which the queen our mistress sends to one of her relations, a few leagues from hence.'—'Is it ynychic then?' cried the giant, 'by heaven I will taste it!'—'My lord,' said the prince, 'you may dispose of it as you please.'—'Yes; and of you too,' replied the monster; 'sit down here this moment; or I will fell you to the earth.'

When the prince and the littermen were seated, the giant spoke to them in this manner: 'You are now to hear the history of these two men, whom I seized this morning when I rose from sleep; I would not permit them to begin till I had a third in my power; but now you are five in number, we shall see on which of you the lot will fall; for I declare to you before-hand, that he whose history is least agreeable to me shall die:—do you, who appear to be the oldest, begin,' said he to one of the tra-

\* The ynychic is a very peculiar fruit, resembling almonds in flavour. When it is eaten raw it disorders the head, but if it be candied with honey it is very wholesome and delicate, and accounted an exquisite food.

† The Indians never use iron, though it is found in great plenty in their mines: gold, silver, copper and lead, are the only metals they employ; but their weapons are generally made of the hardest wood.



vellers, named Pahama, and who had been seized first that morning. When the giant had given this command, he stretched his hand to the litter, and seized two calabashes of ynclic, which he eat whilst Pahama related his history in this manner.

THE HISTORY OF PAHAMA THE TRAVELLER, AND THE LAICA LAROU.

MY lord, twenty years are now expired, since a certain canton of this province was in subjection to a famous robber, who only supported himself by plunder, and invading other men: his power and barbarity rendered him the terror of the neighbouring inhabitants, and he lived in the country like a furious tyger, who devours all before him. One day he placed himself in ambuscade in a little wood, with an hundred of his companions, and swore, that for the space of the first hour, he would not injure any one passenger; but as nobody appeared all that time, he took another oath, to kill every man who should fall into his hands the second hour; but it happened that no mortal passed by during that period: at last he made a dreadful vow, to destroy every man, woman and child, who should travel that way during the third hour; and unfortunately for passengers, he had but too many opportunities to shew his punctuality to his promise.

It happened that thirty-nine of my brothers, and myself, agreed that day to visit one of our uncles, who was sick; as we were obliged to take our way through the wood where the ambush was formed, it was our misfortune to fall insensibly into the snare. 'Very good!' cried the robber, the moment he saw us, 'we have not lost our time, but shall have a finer past this day:' on which he immediately attacked us at the head of all his people, who soon inclosed us with their superior numbers. We defended ourselves to desperation; but the combat was maintained with too much inequality, and after fourteen of my brothers had been killed and eight wounded, the re-

mainder of us fell on our knees, to implore mercy from the conqueror: all our prayers and tears were unavailing; they first bound and then conveyed us to their habitation; the dead and wounded were carried on branches of trees, formed into the shape of a litter, and the rest of us danced and sung, to convince our enemies, that the fate we were reserved to had no power to intimidate us. I was one of the wounded, and had lost an arm in the combat; however, I sung and danced like the rest of my brothers; but I confess, my lord, I had no great inclination at that time to the gaiety I affected.

We were at last brought to a large open place, before the dwelling of our executioners, and there they fastened us to several trees, from whence we had the dismal spectacle of several of our brothers fate. Those who had been killed, and some of the wounded, were devoured raw, and others half-roasted; and as the number was considerable, our enemies had food enough to satiate their barbarous hunger. Part of this feast was even distributed among several who had not assisted at the combat, and the entrails, feet, and heads, were left to the meaner people among them. Myself, and those of my brothers who had not been devoured, were shut up in a cave apart from each other, where our tyrants nourished us with roots and dried fish, and a liquor very agreeable to the palate.

I was entirely ignorant how my brothers passed their time in their prison: for my part, after I had finished my repast, I threw myself on a heap of dry grass, which was scattered in a corner, to serve me for a bed; but I had scarce stretched myself upon it, when my tears were alarmed with a confused noise, which I was unable to distinguish. At this I sat up in my bed, and listened with much attention: in a little time I grew sensible that I heard a plaintive voice under the earth, and for my better satisfaction laid my ear close to the ground. I then distinctly heard the accents of a woman, who bewailed herself in these terms: 'Alas! how dismal is it for me to be thus buried alive!—O mighty Rimac! can you permit a Laica, ever benevolent to mor-

In the valley of Rimac, stood an idol shaped like a man, who answered all questions proposed to him, and therefore both the idol and the valley were called Rimac, which signifies Him who Speaks. This idol was held in great veneration by the Yncas themselves. In this valley the Spaniards have built the city of Lima; so that Rimac and Lima are the same.

als,

'tals, to fall a victim in the flower of  
'her age, to the vengeance of a barba-  
'rian! I solemnly swear to crown any  
'one who shall deliver me with all  
'imaginable blessings!'

These complaints filled me with com-  
passion; but the recompence promised by  
the Laica for her liberty, made me de-  
sirous of deserving it. 'Wife Laica!' said  
I to the prisoner, 'is there any possibility  
'of assisting you, and can it be in the  
'power of a miserable cripple?'—'Yes,  
'my son,' replied the Laica, 'you may  
'easily deliver me: tear up the earth to  
'the depth of two fingers; you will then  
'find a copper ring, which you are to  
'draw towards you.'

I obeyed the voice, and scratched up  
the earth as I was directed; and when I  
had found the ring, pulled it to me with  
all my strength, and after a few repeated  
efforts, raised it out of the ground. But  
I was surprized to see a cage of the same  
metal fastened to this ring, and much  
more to behold in the cage a bird that  
spoke. 'You are only now to force open  
'the lock,' said the bird, 'and all will  
'be accomplished.' As I had a knife of  
stone about me, I easily cut the copper  
wire that fastened the lock; at which the  
bird sprang out, and in its flight changed  
into a young lady, whose features the ob-  
scurity of my prison prevented me from  
distinguishing. 'How fortunate is my  
'lot,' said I, throwing myself at her feet,  
'in restoring you to liberty! I praise  
'the gods for suffering me to fall into  
'the hands of robbers, who have afforded  
'me an opportunity of offering you this  
'service; and now, if I must die, I will  
'die with satisfaction.'

'I am delighted at these generous  
'sentiments,' replied the Laica: 'but  
'your disinterested behaviour does not  
'discharge me from the gratitude I owe  
'you; and now, to give you the first in-  
'stance of it, I restore your arm to you.'

The same moment she touched me, and I  
saw the arm I had lost re-united to my  
body. 'I shall treat you in such a man-  
'ner for the future,' said she, 'that you  
'shall not repent your generosity in giv-  
'ing me my liberty. Hear me with at-  
'tention, son,' added the Laica; 'you  
'must act in the manner I shall now di-  
'rect; this very night you shall hear  
'your prison-door open, and let that be  
'the signal for you to go and awaken  
'your brothers, and the rest of the cap-  
'tives in the adjoining caves, the doors

'of which you shall likewise find open;  
'and whilst sleep shall have locked up  
'the senses of your enemies, furnish  
'yourselves with weapons in the hut that  
'serves for a magazine; after which  
'set it on fire, and when it flames, utter  
'a loud cry; your foes will run out at  
'the noise, upon which you shall assault  
'and slay them, without sparing one.  
'When this expedition is over, direct  
'your brothers to visit their uncle, and  
'only keep one of them with you. At  
'the same time restore all the prisoners to  
'liberty, and then return back with that  
'brother you shall select for your com-  
'panion, and go to the little wood where  
'you were all attacked.'

These orders of the Laica were too  
important to be forgotten in the least  
particular; and when she left me, I re-  
peated them in my memory, and medi-  
tated on them till the night was far ad-  
vanced. At last, I heard a noise at the  
door of my prison, and going to it found  
it wide open; at which I concluded it  
was now time for me to execute my com-  
mission.

I went into all the caves, the doors of  
which were likewise open, and then  
awaked my brothers and their compa-  
nions, making them at the same time ac-  
quainted with the orders I had received;  
and there was not one who had the least  
reluctance to put them in execution.  
Our number amounted to four hundred  
men of gallant resolution, and we im-  
mediately repaired to the magazine of  
arms; some took sabres, others lances,  
javelins, hatchets, and slings: we then  
went to the common fire, which was  
kindled in the middle of the place; there  
we lighted our torches, and threw them  
on the roof of the magazine, which, as  
it was made of wood, immediately burst  
into a flame. We then shouted aloud,  
and awakened all our enemies, who  
precipitately ran towards the fire, but in  
their way met with those who were in a  
very good disposition to receive them.  
We thundered upon them, and slew  
them without mercy; and indeed it was  
a real carnage. Above eight hundred  
persons, as well men as women, sunk  
under our blows. After this action, we  
visited all the caverns and huts, and  
spared no mortal we found. These visits,  
and the slaughter, employed us till the  
break of day.

When this bloody expedition was over,  
I permitted all the prisoners to depart,  
and



and took my leave of my brothers, who went on to our uncle's habitation; but I first caused them to decide my lot, which of them should continue with me. The lot fell on one of the youngest, and we both took our way to the wood, where we arrived in a short time.

## H O U R XVIII.

I There found the Laica, whom I had released from captivity: she was about twenty-four years of age, tall, and exactly shaped, and perfectly charming; I was immediately enamoured of her beauty, but my surprise was inexpressible, to see the employment in which she was engaged. In her hand she held a large scourge, with which she alternately lashed the bodies of an old man and a youth, with the utmost severity. They were both fastened to a tree; and at every stroke they received, made the woods echo with dreadful cries. I was seized with horror at so sad a spectacle: 'Wife 'Laica,' said I, 'what is this you do? I am touched with compassion for the old man, and have no less pity for the youth: look on the condition to which you have reduced them; their bodies are covered with blood.'—'Come hither, my son,' replied the Laica; 'and when you have attended to what I have to say, you will no longer pity these impious wretches; but your sentiments will agree with mine, when I have acquainted you with the injuries they have offered me, and a number of other persons.'

'I am the daughter,' continued she, 'of one of the prophets of the great Rimac: my father is called Ka-Stam-ski, and he educated me with the greatest care; he instructed me in poesy and incantations, and gave me a perfect knowledge of plants and herbs. I never misapplied my abilities to the prejudice of any mortal; but, on the contrary, was industrious to give pleasure to all, and my greatest satisfaction was to relieve the unfortunate.'

One day, as I was taking a progress through the air, on the back of a condore, I met with this wretched old man,

'travelling the same element, in a chariot drawn by sixty neblis\*. This infamous forcerer carried with him a young woman, who cried in a very moving manner. I was touched with her affliction; and when I had commanded the neblis to stop, I approached and demanded of the ravisher, if there were not virgins enough in the world, and if the laws of humanity authorized him in the rape of a married woman.'

'As his power was infinitely inferior to mine, he was constrained to answer me with a respectful submission:—'Potent Laica,' said he, 'do not deprive me of the only enjoyment that can make the remainder of my days happy. I am enamoured of this young lady; and shall die with despair, if you force her from my arms.'—'Execrable forcerer!' cried I, 'thou abandoned votary of Cupay†! wilt thou always delight in malignity?'—'Alas!' interrupted the young woman, with weeping eyes, 'the wretch has snatched me from the arms of a beloved husband, to whom I have been married but four days!'—I ordered the ravisher to convey the bride back to her habitation; and he immediately obeyed, for it was impossible for him to resist me.'

Some time after he came to my cavern where I resided. 'Powerful 'Laica,' said the traitor, as he approached me, 'I am come to reconcile myself with you. I sincerely repent of all my crimes; and will, for the future, employ my ministration for the welfare of mortals, to as great a degree as I ever misapplied it to their prejudice. I intreat you, therefore, to assist me with your counsels, that I may the easier disengage myself from my pernicious habits of mind.'

'I was exceedingly charmed at this discourse, and believed his conversation to be as sincere as he pretended. I applauded the perfidious wretch, for the resolution he had taken, and exhorted him to persist in those sentiments; besides this, I promised him my friendship, and assured him of my assistance to the utmost of my ability. In a word, I entertained him several days;

\* A bird found in Peru; they soar prodigiously high, are armed with strong talons, and are of a colour tending to sable.

† The Indians have some idea of the devil; they generally call him Cupay, and when they pronounce this name, they spit on the earth as a sign of malediction and execration.

and he carried on his dissimulation with the utmost dexterity. "Laica! my dear mistress!" said he, when he took his leave of me, "I am confounded at your civilities, and know not how to testify the gratitude with which I am affected: but I have yet one favour to solicit, which is, that you, as an evidence of our reconciliation, would do me the honour to pass a few days at my mansion, and you yourself shall then bear testimony to the alteration of my conduct."

"I promised to visit him the next day, and was punctual to my appointment. He received me, to all appearance, in the most obliging manner. He regaled me with partridges, turtles, and fruits; and after the first repast, presented me with the most delicious cora\* that could possibly be drank. I was altogether unaccustomed to that liquor, and the little I drank filled my head with fumes, which soon sunk me into a deep slumber, and then the barbarian accomplished his treacherous intentions."

"You must know," continued the Laica, "that though such beings as myself are of an exalted class, we have no manner of power during our slumbers; and Rimac, to demonstrate that all power in this world is limited, thought fit to reserve some moments wherein even we may be punished with impunity. The impious old man was vigilant to improve the time, in which he perceived sleep had taken possession of all my senses. He took up a little piece of earth, and after he had spit on it, laid it on my head; when he had done this, he pronounced some words, and changed me into a bird: but, not satisfied with this transformation, which could only last till I awaked, he inclosed me in a cage, and on the door fastened an enchanted lock, on which the name of the great Rimac was written, a name too tremendous for us to violate: after all this, he buried me alive in the cave from whence you delivered me. He then forbid his son, who is the young man you there behold, to let any one come into the cave; for, as he had no power to deprive me of my voice, he was apprehensive lest I should prevail on some

person to restore me to liberty: but all his precautions were vain; the keeper to whose care you was confided had drank immoderately, and forgot the orders he received; and therefore, without foreseeing the dangerous consequence, he shut you up in the cavern where I was buried. It is needless to acquaint you with the rest, because you know the particulars as well as myself."

"It should seem, then," replied I, "that this wretched old man is the father of my brother's murderer, and this young man the murderer himself!"—"You are in the right," said the Laica.—"Let them be treated," continued I, "as they deserve. I once intended to intercede for them; but their crimes are so aggravated, that they neither merit pardon nor compassion. And I now abandon them to all the severity of your vengeance." Upon which the Laica turning her eyes on my brother and me—"You shall both be spectators," said she, "of the punishment to which I now will doom them."

At these words Larou took us by the hand, and then stamped with her foot; the earth opened at that instant, and we sunk by degrees into a gloomy abyss, and were followed by the two wretches. At last we found ourselves in a vast cavern, light enough, however, to give us a view of the objects it contained. In a moment, a giant fifty cubits high presented himself before us, and asked the Laica what commands she had for him to accomplish: "Detestable creature!" said she, "is this the condition in which it is thy duty to appear in my presence?" She said no more, and the haughty figure of the trembling monster shrunk to the form of an hideous dwarf, whose stature was only two cubits in height. "I am satisfied with thy submission," said the Laica; "take this scourge, and give these two wretches a hundred lashes every day."

"Illustrious Laica," replied the dwarf, "you shall be obeyed, as rigorous as the injunction may appear."—"Be silent, thou presumptuous wretch!" interrupted Larou, "it ill becomes thee to give thy sentiments of my commands!" At the conclusion of these words, she took my brother and me by the hand, a second

\* A drink made by an infusion of maize; the grain is first steeped in water, and then reduced to powder, after which it is boiled in the water wherein it was infused.



time, and we insensibly ascended from the bottom of the cavern to the top, after which the earth closed over it.

'We are now avenged,' said the Laica, 'on your enemies and mine, who sustain the punishment due to their demerits. Let us think on them no more, but rather consider how I shall testify my gratitude to you. This is now my only passion; but at present it is proper for us to return to my cavern; we shall find it more commodious than this place: let each of you then place one of your hands on my shoulder.'

We had scarce complied with her directions, when we found ourselves in a large subterranean apartment, paved with solid stone as white as snow. A profusion of gold and silver adorned the roof, which seemed to be formed out of one turquoise stone. The beds and tables corresponded with the splendor of the building, and were fashioned in so peculiar a manner, that I am certain I never beheld any thing which resembled what then I saw. I could not forbear acquainting my brother with my surprise; and he likewise assured me that he was lost in admiration.

Larou, who heard our conversation, addressed herself to us in this manner—

'I am extremely pleased that you are not dissatisfied with the place of my residence;' and then directing her discourse to me—'My dear Pahama,' said she, 'you are my kind preserver, and have it this day in your power to be master of all you behold. I wish I were amiable enough to induce you to unite your destiny with mine; but as you may possibly have devoted your heart to another, I have no intention to lay you under any constraint: let me, therefore, only know what you would have me do for your service.'

She uttered these words with an air so tender and passionate, that I easily comprehended her meaning. 'Charming Larou,' said I, 'it would be very rash in me to grow ambitious of a situation above my own. I am sprung from nothing, and am not ashamed at my lowly condition. The utmost I can presume to ask, is your permission to be admitted among the number of your servants; I should be but too happy if I were permitted to be near you, and could enjoy the blessing of beholding you: and I am persuaded my brother would make the same request, without

the least hesitation, were he sure of succeeding.'

'Ah, Pahama!' interrupted Larou, 'I should make you but an ill return, did I grant you nothing more. I owe you the all I enjoy, and can offer you nothing else than my person, with every thing that depends on my power; and therefore I only desire to know, if you find yourself in a disposition to offer me your heart, and receive me for your spouse.'

#### H O U R XIX.

I Was confounded at the honour she tendered me, and to find myself incapable of making a suitable return. I threw myself at her feet, and attempted to embrace her knees: but instead of complying with my desire, she raised me from the ground, and offered me her bosom to kiss; after which taking me by the hand—'My dear Pahama,' said she, 'let us exchange our mutual vows to each other.'—'Ah, potent Laica!' said I, 'it will be impossible for me ever to merit a state so happy. I am entirely yours without reserve; dispose of me as one of your slaves.'—'It is your heart,' replied she, 'which I demand.'—'Propitious Laica!' answered I, 'it is your's for ever, and your's alone.'

'Since you are so determined,' replied the beautiful Larou, 'I must now communicate to you a valuable accomplishment; upon which she embraced me; and gently breathing on my lips, made me capable of exercising all her power. When this ceremony was over—'Every circumstance is completed,' said she, 'and you are now my husband; all other formalities are unnecessary, and you shall all your lifetime enjoy whatever I possess. I only except the power I have imparted to you, and the arm I restored you; for at my death they will both cease to be your's. This is a pre-ordination impossible to be avoided, because you are not descended from the prophets.'

When these ceremonials were finished, the Laica said to me—'You may now begin to exercise your new power. Command the table to be covered; for not one of us has taken any refreshment this day.'—'Alas!' answered I, with an air of astonishment, 'what shall I command, when I don't

‘see a mortal present to obey my orders?’

Larou could not avoid smiling at my surprise, and told me, I had nothing more to do than to stamp with my foot. This I immediately performed; and at the same instant two amiable young men, and as many virgins appeared, and desired me to acquaint them wherein they could be serviceable to me. ‘We have occasion for some provisions,’ said I; ‘let them be brought immediately.’ The next moment a variety of dishes were served up, and I eat with a very good appetite. Larou did the same; and my brother imitated our example perfectly well: I then called for a draught of cora. ‘Ah, my dear spouse!’ cried the Laica, ‘why do you desire cora?’ ‘You know what I have suffered by that fatal liquor, and I wish no more of it was to be found in all the world.’—‘I am of a different opinion,’ said I; ‘and am not only glad there is such a liquor, but determine to drink it every day; and if you have your reasons for disliking it, I have mine for prizing it exceedingly. It will always bring to my remembrance the source of my felicity. But, however,’ continued I, ‘let it not give you the least uneasiness; for I shall use it with so much moderation, as not to have any apprehensions of its effects.’—‘I have then,’ replied the Laica, ‘nothing more to object:’ upon which I ordered two cups of cora to be brought in, one of which I presented to my brother, the other I drank myself, and we found it very delicious.

After supper, as our conversation turned on the events which had thus united us; ‘I am not yet satisfied,’ said my wife, ‘with the present effects of my gratitude, and am desirous they should even extend to your brother: I have a sister perfectly amiable, and am desirous to see her espoused to him.’—‘Ah, Madam!’ replied I, ‘you never told me before that I had a sister-in-law: where does she reside? May I not have the pleasure of paying her my respects?’—‘You shall see her in a moment,’ said Larou.

At this she stamped with her foot, and immediately four persons, different from those who served us at table, came to receive her commands. ‘Let some fire be brought to me,’ said she; and as soon as the attendants had obeyed her,

she threw a little dust into the flame: upon which, a smoke of a most fragrant scent rose from the fire, and diffused itself through all the apartment; but as it gradually began to dissipate, it gave us an opportunity of beholding, in the middle of the chamber, a young lady of sixteen years of age, and exquisitely beautiful.

‘Approach us, sister,’ said Larou, ‘and behold your brother-in-law. His name is Pahama; to him I am indebted for my liberty, and thought I could not better testify my gratitude to him, than by chusing him for my consort.’ At these words I arose, and embraced my sister; ‘And now, permit me, Madam,’ said I, ‘to present my brother to you.’—‘I need no other motive,’ replied she, ‘than the near relation he bears to you and my sister, to behold him with pleasure:’ and then turning to Larou—‘My dear sister,’ said she, ‘let me intreat you to inform me in what manner you lost your liberty, and how you recovered it again?’

Larou immediately related the particulars of her transformation into a bird, and then acquainted her in what manner she was freed from her confinement; nor did she forget the punishments she had inflicted on her enemies.

When she had finished her relation, my brother cast himself at the feet of Rucma, for that was the name of my sister-in-law; and began to discover to her the impressions her charms had made on his heart. But Larou, perceiving Rucma’s face covered with an amiable confusion—‘Sister,’ said she, ‘you will infinitely oblige me, if you consent to espouse my brother-in-law; I destined him for your husband the moment I received my liberty from his brother; and I believe you will not be dissatisfied with my choice.’—‘Larou,’ replied Rucma, ‘you are sensible I am always conformable to your desires; and if your brother-in-law can promise to love me without the least inconstancy as long as he lives, I am willing to receive him for my husband.’

My brother and Rucma, having on this occasion said a thousand tender things, at last promised in our presence eternal fidelity to each other. After which they were married; and Larou imparted her power to them both, by lightly breathing on their lips.

We all lived in perfect union several years,



years; and this union was the source of all our happiness: for my part, I looked upon it as the greatest blessing the gods had to bestow. Larou instructed us in the rules necessary to be observed in the exercise of our profession. I had several children during this period, but my brother had not any.

This disaster happened to him accidentally. The first night of his nuptials, he committed a mistake, that proved very injurious to him: he was extremely thirsty, and rose to drink the juice of a cocoa he had seen on a table in the evening; but instead of finding a real cocoa, he took a shell of that fruit in which was a liquor destructive to generation: after which he returned to bed, without perceiving the mistake, though he found himself much changed from what he was before.

In a few years my brother lost all patience, and enquired of Larou the reason why he had no children. 'Is this misfortune,' said he, 'to be imputed to me or my wife?'—'Since you are so desirous to know the cause,' replied Larou, 'the impediment proceeds from yourself; and I was unwilling to mention it to you before, lest I should afflict you. The first night of your espousals, you rose to quench your thirst with the juice of a cocoa, and the liquor you then drank incapacitated you from having any posterity. I was acquainted with this particular by your wife, who, when I enquired if she knew any thing of a liquor I had poured into the shell of a cocoa, told me you had drank it that night.'

'But is there no possibility,' replied my brother, 'of restoring me to my former condition?'—'None, that I have any knowledge of,' said the Laitca; 'and the best advice I can give you, is to comfort yourself under your misfortune. As to the rest,' continued she, 'the calamity is not so great as you may imagine; for if it deprives you and your spouse of the opportunity of beholding yourselves revive in your offspring, it likewise preserves you from many vexations and inquietudes: and perhaps there is not one father living, who can say he never once received any dissatisfaction from his children.'

This discourse, instead of calming my brother's uneasiness, rendered it more insupportable. However, he dissembled the displeasure he received from what

he had heard, and we still lived in a seeming harmony: but Larou was not deceived; neither did she conceal from me her secret presage of the calamity that threatened us. 'I am extremely apprehensive,' would she frequently say to me, 'that your brother has some evil intentions against you.' I, to dissuade her from entertaining such a suspicion, represented to her, that if all she had done for him should be insufficient to re-establish him in his right mind, yet her power was capable of protecting us from his resentment. 'The most inconsiderable enemies,' said she, 'are always to be feared: your brother considers me as the author of his misfortune, and will avenge himself on me, should he ever find a favourable opportunity. Every time I see him, he looks at me with a forbidding air, and never speaks to me without the greatest disorder: from all which, I am persuaded he intends to gratify his revenge, and I am to expect something fatal from him.'

In reality, the reflections my brother made on this disagreeable condition cast him into a deep and gloomy melancholy, and soon after into a kind of desperation. In vain did his spouse, as well as Larou and myself, endeavour to divert him; nothing was capable of entertaining him. My wife offered, though ineffectually, to recompense him by a number of advantages for the accident he had sustained; he was attentive to nothing but despair: he grew disgusted at our presence, and even the sight of his wife became insupportable to him; he seemed to be only fond of solitude, and frequently wandered so far in woods and forests, that we did not see him for several moons. At last, the malignity of his discontent prompted him to the blackest design the heart of man could possibly form, and chance presented him with an opportunity of accomplishing it.

## H O U R XX.

ONE of the most delightful days last summer, my wife and I walked out of our cavern to enjoy the verdure of the adjoining fields; and, towards noon, wandered insensibly to the bank of a little rill, half a league from our habitation: the air around us glowed with excessive heat; but the murmuring flow of the stream, and the refreshing shadows which

a grove of lofty trees shed over the green turf, invited us to repose ourselves in that delicious solitude: in a little time, a gentle slumber stole upon us; but, ah! how fatal did it prove to us both! No sooner did I awake, but I beheld my dear and lovely Larou dead by my side, and pierced by a dagger in twelve places.

This moving spectacle affected me with all the agony of sorrow; but, as I cast my eyes round, to discover if possible the murderer, I saw my brother at a distance, in a very precipitate flight: the traitor had been soinfatuated by revenge, that he forgot to draw his dagger out of my wife's breast; I seized the weapon with a heart full of indignation, and pursued the barbarian with all the agility I was able to exert; in a few moments I overtook him, and cried aloud—'Wretch, most perfidious and inhuman! no longer shalt thou elude the vengeance due to thy crime!' At the same instant I raised my arm, and plunged the dagger into his bosom; and so effectual was the stab, that it laid him dead at my feet: when I had thus accomplished my revenge, I left his carcase a prey to the fowls of the air, and returned to the body of my beloved Larou; I washed the dear remains with my tears, I kissed her a thousand times; but, as I was endeavouring to raise her on my shoulders, I perceived I was once more deprived of my arm; however, I found means to convey the precious burden to our cavern.

My sister Rucma was neither touched with surprise nor horror at my melancholy tidings, and I interpreted this seeming insensibility into a bad omen; I even suspected she had been an accomplice in the crime, and was that moment preparing to punish her; when the few words she uttered entirely disarmed my rage. 'Alas!' cried she, 'the gloomy disposition into which we saw your brother degenerated, for some moons past, ought to have presaged this misfortune to us both, and I must necessarily applaud you for the vengeance you have taken on his barbarity.' Though this language made a great impression on my soul, I was yet abundantly more convinced of her innocence, when I shewed her the dead body of her sister: she seemed struck with the agonies of death the moment she beheld my dear Larou, pierced with a number of wounds, and covered with flowing blood.

The sorrowful Rucma and myself

bitterly lamented the death of my unfortunate wife; we continued night and day, riveted in a manner to the body, and enjoyed a secret satisfaction in the tears we shed over it; but as it began to putrify in the space of half a moon, we were obliged to deprive ourselves of the consolation of beholding it any more. 'My dear brother,' said Rucma, 'the stench grows insupportable, and may cause some distemper to seize us: you are a father of children, and ought to preserve yourself for their sake; and, as they are very young, my cares and attendance may be useful to them; if you will therefore be persuaded by me, we will commit the body of Larou to the earth, for we have no need of her presence to perpetuate her in our remembrance.'

I approved of Rucma's proposal; after which we dug a grave in the middle of our cavern, and then buried the breathless remains; and as we now no longer had that object before our eyes, our tears began to cease by degrees; and at last a length of time, which usually assuages immoderate sorrows, began to make us capable of some consolation.

The affection Rucma discovered for my children, greatly contributed to the tranquillity I began to feel; I was charmed to see her devote all her cares to their education; and the sentiments of gratitude, with which her obliging conduct inspired me, began to soften into the tenderest passion: the graces nature had lavished in the features of Rucma, made a suitable impression on my heart, her beauty appeared to me altogether irresistible; and I at last determined to acquaint her, that notwithstanding all the reason I had to lament her sister's death, my life would be ever miserable, unless she would consent to succeed in Larou's place.

Rucma, who had no inducement to bewail my brother, consented to my desires without any reluctance; and the very day I acquainted her with my passion, we vowed eternal fidelity to each other, and she consented to be my wife; since which, we have lived in constant harmony in Larou's cavern, which was the only possession she left us; for both Rucma and myself were entirely divested of the power she had formerly imparted to us: but this deprivation did not prevent us from passing our days in a sweet and pleasing tranquillity; and I was going

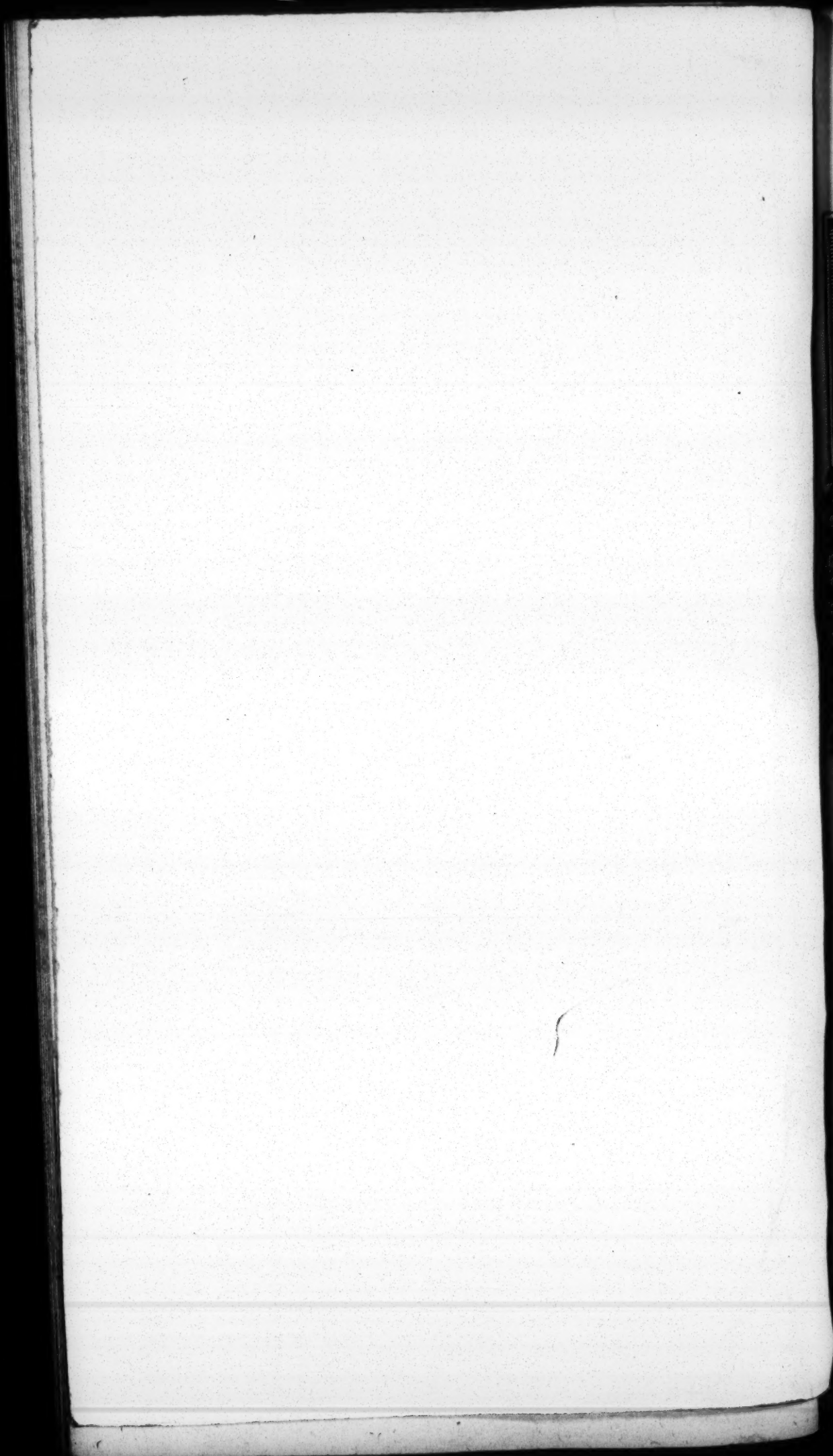


r-  
nd  
y,  
he  
an  
on,  
of  
re.  
the  
nay  
you  
t to  
nd,  
and  
m;  
by  
La-  
eed  
our

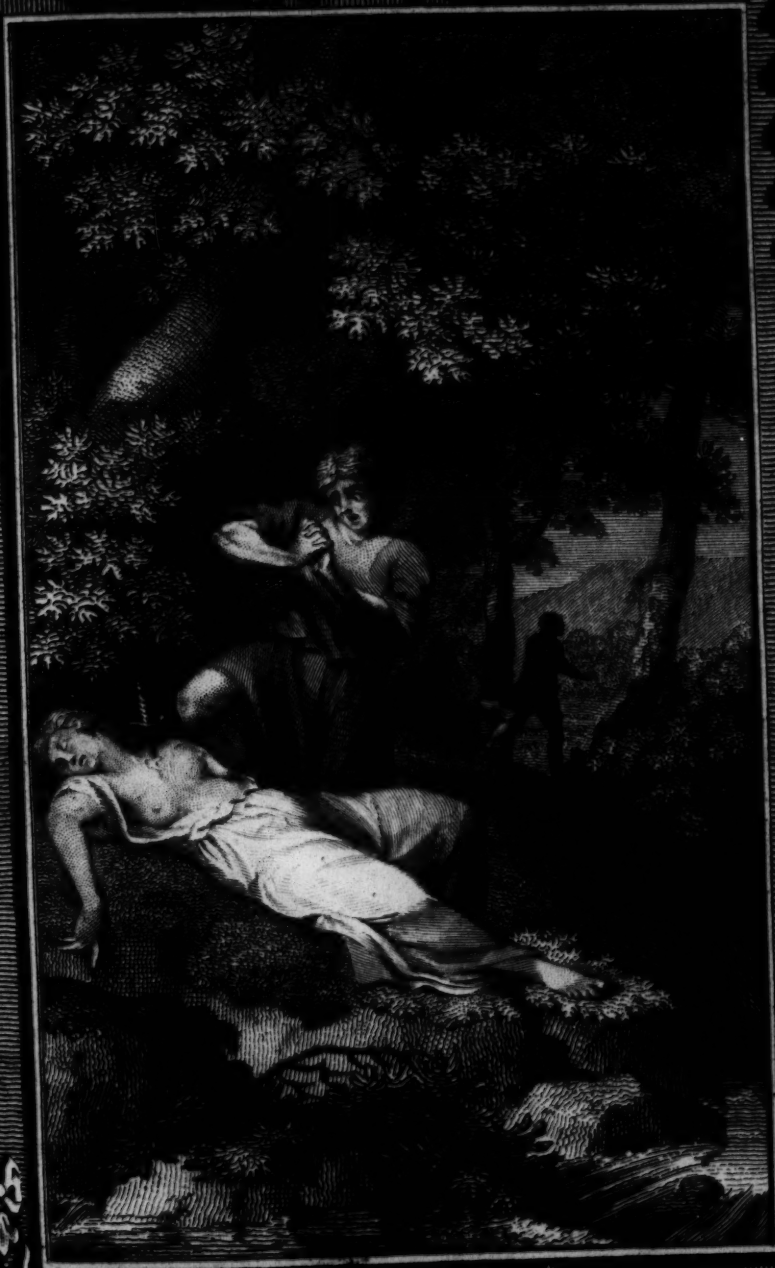
fal;  
ddle  
ath-  
nger  
ears  
alt a  
ages  
e us

for  
o the  
arm-  
their  
rati-  
duct  
o the  
e had  
made  
, her  
irre-  
o ac-  
ll the  
death,  
unless  
arou's

ent to  
ny de-  
d the  
y pas-  
o each  
wife;  
nstant  
h was  
r both  
invested  
parted  
ot pre-  
a sweet  
I was  
going







PERUVIAN TALE

Corbould del.

Walker Sculp.

Published as the Act directs, by Harrison and C<sup>o</sup>. February 18 1786.





going, according to my constant custom on the new moon, to perform my adorations in the temple of Rimac, but was detained here this morning.

Pahama having ended his relation, addressed himself to the giant—‘These, my lord,’ said he, ‘are the adventures of my life; and if you should not think them engaging enough to induce you to restore me my liberty, I shall only intreat your permission to give my last farewell to my wife and children, and I will bind myself by a most solemn and inviolable oath, to return and surrender myself to your discretion, at the time you shall please to prescribe.’

‘I can promise thee nothing as yet,’ replied the giant, ‘for I must first hear the history of thy companions:—begin thine, Moracac,’ for that was the second traveller’s name. Moracac at this command related his adventures in the following manner.

#### THE HISTORY OF THE SECOND TRAVELLER.

**M**IGHTY Prince of the Giants! (said the second traveller) I must acquaint you, that I am very different from the person I appear to be: my habit, I confess, may make me pass for a man of no consideration, and yet I derive my original by my father and mother, from the ancient Princes of Collas, whose ancestor was the Grand Marsh of Titicaca. The calamities of the times dispossessed our family of the throne, and compelled us to fix our residence in the territory of Pucaza: but though we lived a private and secluded life, we still preserved the noble temper of soul that comported with our extraction: we allied ourselves with princes, and I would sooner die than marry a woman of a rank inferior to my own.

Birth, however, is not the only advantage we have a claim to; the amiable accomplishments of mind and body are hereditary to us; and the only infirmity for which we can be reproached, is an immoderate propensity to love, and this is the passion which has predominated in all the remarkable circumstances of my life: this indeed has plunged me into many misfortunes, and cost me the arm and leg of which you now see me destitute.

To begin then with my first amour, I must acquaint you, that at the age of seventeen years I became passionately fond of a young lady, named Mullhhac, and a sister of the magician Mullia. One day her brother invited me to dine with him, which was the first time I ever beheld her, for she never quitted her habitation; her brother would not even permit her to appear till we had ended our collation, and began to drink cora. Besides this, he had the precaution to throw into my bowl a powder, which, as he told me, was good to strengthen the sight; but he should rather have said, to infect the eyes with fascination.

The moment I saw Mullhhac, I felt my soul penetrated by her charms, and this was occasioned by the powder which Mullia infused into the cora I drank; for in reality the most amorous of all mortals would have been disgusted, and even seized with horror at the hideous appearance and deformity of this young woman; and therefore it is not to be wondered at, if my fondness for her made me the common talk and jest of all our neighbourhood: no one could comprehend how it was possible for me to love a person whose deformity grew into a proverb; for when any thing very disagreeable was intended to be mentioned, the usual expression was—‘It is as shocking as Mullhhac.’

But none ridiculed my passion so much as my friends: ‘Is it allowable, then,’ said they, ‘to doat on a monster, whose breast and back shoot out in huge bunches, and whose head is half as large as her body? Can any one be inflamed with the glances of a pair of eyes so exceedingly diminutive, that one would swear their sockets had been opened with the point of a thorn? Is it possible for a mouth to be alluring that is two spans wide; and are a jagged set of black teeth two inches long extremely engaging; or can the turn of a nose that bends like a hook, be so fatal to the beholder? Would not such an assemblage of features rather inspire the most amorous lover that ever sighed with horror and aversion?’

‘You would shew your discretion,’ said I, ‘much better by your silence than the falsehoods you so liberally utter. You have never seen the lady you misrepresent; and it is something very peculiar, that you should all agree to vilify so amiable a creature as Mullhhac;

‘ hac: for my part, I have had the happiness of beholding her, and know her person to be a profusion of charms: no head was ever formed with nicer proportions, or rose from the shoulders with greater delicacy: were her eyes larger they would be monstrous, and a smaller mouth would be a manifest imperfection. As to her nose, it is rounded in the middle of her face like the beamy moon in the center of the stars.’

Some of those who were present when I drew this extraordinary picture, could not forbear smiling: others shrugged up their shoulders, to intimate how much they pitied me; and the rest declared I was either infatuated, or had my eyesight imposed upon by some enchantment. When I heard such discourse as this, I sometimes lost all patience, and grew exasperated at my best friends. At other times I commanded my temper, and calmly deliberated on what I had heard. ‘ Is it possible,’ said I, ‘ that I can be abused in so gross a manner? No,’ continued I, the next moment, ‘ I will never believe it; Mullhhac is still fresh in my memory, and I have seen and conversed with her frequently, and instead of being a monster, she is a real miracle of nature; and it is jealousy alone which induces my friends to degrade her with so much injustice.’

Filled with this persuasion, I determined not to deceive them, or perplex myself for the future at any thing they could say. I continued my assiduities to my mistress, and she justly merited that title; for her manner of receiving me, and the soft language of her eyes, made me sensible I was not indifferent to her: but we both had the experience, that love sometimes renders it’s votaries timorous and irresolute; for in reality we durst not impart our mutual sentiments to each other. Though we had daily interviews, it was impossible for us to pronounce these important words—‘ I adore you.’ Our eyes were the only expositors of our hearts. But it must be confessed, the progress of a lover in such circumstances is very inconsiderable.

#### H O U R XXI.

**I** At last armed myself with resolution; and one day, after I had drank several bowls of cora, I became wonderfully

undaunted, and resolved to disclose my passion without farther hesitation. ‘ What have I to be apprehensive of?’ said I to myself. ‘ At the worst I can but be rejected; and in that case I shall have a number of companions in my misfortune, which will be some consolation to me. How many lovers whose first declarations have been disregarded, and to whom the fair-one has refused the least amorous freedom with the utmost severity, have yet by their perseverance acquired the art to please? A young lady repulses her admirer when he declares his passion, and should he be inclinable to take some particular liberties, she rages at his presumption, and sometimes proceeds to greater extremities; but if he throws himself at her feet, she then pardons an offence, which, had it been committed, would not have much displeased her; and thus at last he finds himself in possession of his utmost wish. I have one circumstance indeed very much to my satisfaction, and that is a certainty of finding no rival in my way. The divine Mullhhac has no lovers but myself, and is a goddess who receives no adoration, because she is altogether unknown.’

When I had fortified myself with these reflections, I immediately visited my mistress, and found her alone in a little cot, at the end of a meadow; and the attitude in which she appeared, was sufficient to inflame insensibility itself. She had that moment rose out of the bath, divested of all her attire. My eyes had full liberty to examine the amiable turn of her body; and I was convinced, that all the charms I had till then beheld, were the least part of her attractions: nothing could be more alluring than this assemblage of graces. ‘ Ah, Mullhhac!’ cried I, in transport, ‘ what a misfortune is it, that the charms I now survey, are not unfolded to the view of all mankind! Your adorers would then be as numerous as those who worship the great Rimac.’

Whilst I was indulging my passion in this language, Mullhhac threw a cincture around her waist, and veiled innumerable beauties, over which my eyes had so delightfully wandered. I expressed a dissatisfaction at that proceeding: ‘ What has my charmer done?’ said I: ‘ and why do you conceal from me the treasure I gazed on with so much



‘much joy? Why did you disclose to me, what you now withdraw from my view?’—‘It is not on your account,’ said she, ‘that I have acted in this manner: decency obliges me to the caution I have used, lest any one should surprise us, and relate the affair to my disadvantage; and as to the compliment you made me, I would have you persuaded, I am not ambitious of so many votaries as adore the great Rimac: but, at the same time, I must acknowledge, that I should not be dissatisfied to find myself agreeable to some amiable man: but our youth, at present, seem to be infatuated with deformity and old age; for these alone affect their hearts with tender impressions; and though nature has perhaps favoured me with a person not inferior to that of any other mortal, I have yet seen eighteen years, without being assured by any one of your sex, that I appeared amiable in his eyes. I am convinced, therefore, that I must wait till the proper time arrives; and perhaps I may have, as well as others, a tribute of sighs paid to me in my old age.’

‘I perceive,’ said I, ‘you are not in a disposition to reject a lover, did he present his addresses to you.’—‘I assure you,’ replied she, ‘I would not disregard the opportunity; but I lose all patience, when I see any agreeable youth tendering his affection to a wrinkled hag, and lavishing at her feet all that incense of love I so justly think my due. Is it possible for me to behold such inconsistent practices with any moderation?’

This confession was pretty free and undisguised: but we pardon all things in the person we love; and as I was naturally fond of frankness in expression, I was charmed with the same in my mistress. I went out of the cot, and assured her, I would soon afford her the satisfaction she desired. Accordingly I returned in a few moments, and entertained her with the following discourse, which I had premeditated in the interval of time I took to make my declaration of love.

‘Charming master-piece of nature,’ said I, ‘the first moment I beheld you, my soul was captivated with your beauty; and the more I have conversed with you, the stronger are the impressions you have made in my heart: but you never enchanted me so much, as

when you gave me your permission to acquaint you with my passion; no one of your sex ever warmed a breast with such impatient desires, as those with which you have this day inspired me; and my happiness would deservedly be the subject of envy, would you condescend to accept of a heart you have entirely subjected by your charms.’

I had scarce finished my fine speech, when Mullhhac, in a transport of joy, wound her arms about me, and favoured me with a tender embrace. ‘How much am I obliged to you,’ said she, ‘for presenting me with a lover! You have raised me to the height of all my wishes!’ This confession not a little emboldened me, and I was preparing to return the kiss she gave me: but the moment I approached my lips to her mouth—‘It is well,’ said she, ‘and I will once in my life enjoy the pleasure of treating a lover ill. Take this present,’ continued she, and at the same time gave me a box on the ear with all her might: ‘these are gifts,’ said she, ‘not to be despised when I offer them.’

So extraordinary a caress threw me into some confusion; but as this was not what she desired, she embraced me a second time with all imaginable freedom, and made it impossible for me to continue my resentment. We then gave each other mutual testimonies of the sincerity and excess of our passion; and I knew not how far we might have proceeded, had not Mullia arrived at that instant. He was a young man, about thirty years of age, robust, and well made, but of a gigantick stature; he was five cubits high; and one of those magicians who never delighted in actions of benevolence to mankind.

He was convinced, by the emotions he saw in our looks, that his sister and I were far from being enemies; and therefore thought he had a proper opportunity to compel me to espouse her. However, for the present, he concealed his intentions, and resolved first to be informed by Mullhhac, upon what terms we had been proceeding with each other. He contented himself for that time, with assuming a serious air, and giving me to understand, that he did not expect to find his sister in such good company; however, he declared, that he was well persuaded that nothing had passed between us inconsistent with decency. ‘This is not the country of the Collas,’ continued

nued he, 'where young virgins are permitted to prostitute themselves to all comers before marriage, and where the most abandoned are generally sooner wedded than the rest.'

I easily comprehended by this discourse, that Mullia believed I had an inclination to espouse his sister, and would not consent that I should visit her on any other terms; but, as engaging as Mullhhac appeared to me, I had not the least intention to marry a woman whose rank was so inferior to mine; and therefore I made no reply, but immediately rose in order to retire from the presence of Mullia, in which, at that time, I had very little satisfaction.

I was no way deceived in my conjecture; for the moment I was gone, he ordered his sister to acquaint him with all the particulars that had passed between us. She informed him I had paid her a visit, and declared I passionately loved her; to which she added, that my person and address were very agreeable to her. Mullia, at this confession, asked her, if I had discovered any inclination to espouse her; but when he heard I had not explained myself on that subject, he appeared extremely dissatisfied. 'It is greatly to be feared,' said she, 'that the love Moracac professes for you, will be soon abated by enjoyment; and therefore be sure at his next visit, to bring him to a clear explanation of his designs: and should his answer not be agreeable to my wish, I shall interest myself further in the affair.'

I passed two days without seeing the beauteous Mullhhac; for as I knew her brother's disposition, I drew an ill presage from the serious air with which he spoke to us at our last interview; but, for all this, absence added new impatience to my desires, and I resolved to gratify them at the expence of any event that might happen. With this intention I went to visit her, and found her once more alone, in the same cot where I had seen her three days before; and I approached her with all the transports of a passionate lover.

Our conversation added new warmth to our mutual flames, and tempted me to greater liberties than any in which I had yet indulged my inclinations. I even imagined myself in possession of that precious moment which is the object of every lover's wish, when Mullhhac assuming another tone, said to me, with a

commanding air—'Hear me, Moracac, for I have something to impart to you; upon which she repeated all her past conversation with her brother. 'What you have now heard,' continued she, 'only relates to Mullia, who is intent on our marriage: as to my particular, I am no longer in a condition to forbear loving you; and if you are desirous I should continue in that disposition, and are sincere in your profession of tenderness for me, I shall dispose myself to be favourable to all your wishes.'

When she found I had no inclination to make a reply—'Is it possible,' said she, 'that you already love me no more! Me, I say, who adore you to distraction!' These tender expressions were accompanied with tears, and I could not behold them flowing down those lovely cheeks without joining with her in her affliction. I wept in my turn, notwithstanding all my endeavours to the contrary: we continued some moments in this condition, without the power of uttering a word; and it was she who at last broke the moving silence. 'No,' said she, folding her arms round my neck, 'though I should be so unhappy as to be the object of your aversion, I will never cease to love you whilst I live.'

I was confounded at what she had told me, and especially the threats of Mullia, and was in no condition to make her any reply; I could only acquaint her by my tears and languishing looks, that I was far from being insensible of her tenderness: but her new caresses restored me the faculty of speech. 'Charming Mullhhac,' said I, 'I flatter myself you are persuaded of the sincerity of my passion, as I am equally convinced of your reciprocal love for me: command me whatever you please, and I shall obey you with a perfect resignation to your desires. Place me in the number of your slaves, and you shall find I will hesitate at nothing to oblige you; but do not require me to renounce the advantage I derive from my birth, since it is the only circumstance that may one day recall me to the throne of my fathers.'

#### H O U R XXII.

AT these words I clasped Mullhhac in my arms, and at the same moment the bed on which we were seated sunk down into the earth, and we at the same



same time descended with great rapidity into a dungeon, that was only illuminated by a single lamp. The first object presented to our view was the formidable Mullia: he held a large scourge in his hand, and vengeance gloomed on his brow. 'It is well!' said he, with a dreadful voice; 'and shall we now celebrate the espousals?'

As we made him no reply—'I perceive,' said he, 'you treat me with contempt; but I swear, that whosoever of you two shall refuse to vow fidelity to the other, the same shall this moment be sensible what this arm can accomplish!'

Mullia then demanded of his sister, if she had an inclination to receive me for her husband; to which she immediately answered—'I am sincerely desirous he should this day be my spouse; and if he will promise constancy to me, he shall have the same assurance on my part.'—'Are you then,' said he, with his eyes fixed upon me, 'in the same disposition?' I was willing to excuse myself, by repeating the promise I made to my father, to espouse one of my sisters. 'I will hear no more,' interrupted he: at which he immediately stripped me of the habit I wore; he then bound me to a huge stone, and raising his scourge aloft—'Before I begin to chastise thee as thou deservest,' said he, 'for abusing my sister, inform me once more of thy intentions with respect to the marriage I have proposed.'—'I have not abused thy sister,' said I; 'she appeared lovely in my eyes, and I have acquainted her with the fond affection I bear her: perhaps, too, I have not been displeasing to her; our interviews have been agreeable to us both; but we never transgressed the limits of decency. Where is then my crime?'

'These are the agreeable interviews,' replied he, 'of which I complain; and I now intend to punish thee for repeating them.'—'You may act as you please,' said I; 'you are master of my person, but have no power over my mind, and I am incapable of conforming to your commands.'—'It is too much,' replied Mullia; 'and thou intendest to insult me to my face: but I will be avenged on thy presumption.' At these words he gave me fifty lashes

round the arms, and I made the dungeon echo with my dismal cries; but was on the point of losing my reason, when I heard his sister laughing aloud all the time. The artful Mullihac used that expedient, to persuade her brother she no longer loved me, since I had refused to espouse her.

When this piece of discipline was over, Mullia asked me, whether the treatment I received, had not caused some alteration in my mind. 'It has made a pretty strong impression on my body,' said I, 'as you may see by the blood that flows all over me; but my mind is still impassive, and I am always the same.'

This language, which I uttered with great resolution, convinced Mullia that he was no longer to expect any change in my disposition. 'This young man,' said he, 'is extremely obstinate; but he is not acquitted by having only felt the force of my arm: and then turning to me—'It shall never be said,' continued he, 'that thou canst boast to have refused thy hand to my sister, and disobeyed me with impunity. Thou deservest to suffer the cruellest death I can inflict; but I will content myself with depriving thee of speech, and changing thee into a bird, or some four-footed animal: choose then immediately one of these transformations.'

It was to no purpose for me to implore Mullia's pardon, for he was not only exasperated to the highest degree, but was likewise naturally inclined to malignant actions: so that it was impossible for me to soften his inhumanity. 'Since you are then determined,' said I, 'to make me sensible of all the weight of your resentment, I submit to your barbarous commands; let me be changed into a bird.'—'What kind of bird?' replied Mullia. 'Into a humming bird\*,' replied I: 'for as I always delighted in musick, perhaps my songs may solace my affliction; at least I shall have the consolation of pleasing mankind, and not being injurious or insignificant in the world.'

Mullia made me no reply, but immediately unbound me, and violently seized the hair of my head; after which he sprung up with me through the vault of the cavern, that still continued open at the top. We traversed an immense

\* The humming bird is not bigger than a large fly; has little shining wings, and its notes are exceedingly strong and melodious.

nued he, 'where young virgins are permitted to prostitute themselves to all comers before marriage, and where the most abandoned are generally sooner wedded than the rest.'

I easily comprehended by this discourse, that Mullia believed I had an inclination to espouse his sister, and would not consent that I should visit her on any other terms; but, as engaging as Mullhhac appeared to me, I had not the least intention to marry a woman whose rank was so inferior to mine; and therefore I made no reply, but immediately rose in order to retire from the presence of Mullia, in which, at that time, I had very little satisfaction.

I was no way deceived in my conjecture; for the moment I was gone, he ordered his sister to acquaint him with all the particulars that had passed between us. She informed him I had paid her a visit, and declared I passionately loved her; to which she added, that my person and address were very agreeable to her. Mullia, at this confession, asked her, if I had discovered any inclination to espouse her; but when he heard I had not explained myself on that subject, he appeared extremely dissatisfied. 'It is greatly to be feared,' said she, 'that the love Moracac professes for you, will be soon abated by enjoyment; and therefore be sure at his next visit, to bring him to a clear explanation of his designs: and should his answer not be agreeable to my wish, I shall interest myself further in the affair.'

I passed two days without seeing the beauteous Mullhhac; for as I knew her brother's disposition, I drew an ill presage from the serious air with which he spoke to us at our last interview; but, for all this, absence added new impatience to my desires, and I resolved to gratify them at the expence of any event that might happen. With this intention I went to visit her, and found her once more alone, in the same cot where I had seen her three days before; and I approached her with all the transports of a passionate lover.

Our conversation added new warmth to our mutual flames, and tempted me to greater liberties than any in which I had yet indulged my inclinations. I even imagined myself in possession of that precious moment which is the object of every lover's wish, when Mullhhac assuming another tone, said to me, with a

commanding air—'Hear me, Moracac, for I have something to impart to you; upon which she repeated all her past conversation with her brother. 'What you have now heard,' continued she, 'only relates to Mullia, who is intent on our marriage: as to my particular, I am no longer in a condition to forbear loving you; and if you are desirous I should continue in that disposition, and are sincere in your profession of tenderness for me, I shall dispose myself to be favourable to all your wishes.'

When she found I had no inclination to make a reply—'Is it possible,' said she, 'that you already love me no more! Me, I say, who adore you to distraction!' These tender expressions were accompanied with tears, and I could not behold them flowing down those lovely cheeks without joining with her in her affliction. I wept in my turn, notwithstanding all my endeavours to the contrary: we continued some moments in this condition, without the power of uttering a word; and it was she who at last broke the moving silence. 'No,' said she, folding her arms round my neck, 'though I should be so unhappy as to be the object of your aversion, I will never cease to love you whilst I live.'

I was confounded at what she had told me, and especially the threats of Mullia, and was in no condition to make her any reply; I could only acquaint her by my tears and languishing looks, that I was far from being insensible of her tenderness: but her new caresses restored me the faculty of speech. 'Charming Mullhhac,' said I, 'I flatter myself you are persuaded of the sincerity of my passion, as I am equally convinced of your reciprocal love for me: command me whatever you please, and I shall obey you with a perfect resignation to your desires. Place me in the number of your slaves, and you shall find I will hesitate at nothing to oblige you; but do not require me to renounce the advantage I derive from my birth, since it is the only circumstance that may one day recall me to the throne of my fathers.'

#### H O U R XXII.

AT these words I clasped Mullhhac in my arms, and at the same moment the bed on which we were seated sunk down into the earth, and we at the same



same time descended with great rapidity into a dungeon, that was only illuminated by a single lamp. The first object presented to our view was the formidable Mullia: he held a large scourge in his hand, and vengeance gloomed on his brow. 'It is well!' said he, with a dreadful voice; 'and shall we now celebrate the espousals?'

As we made him no reply—'I perceive,' said he, 'you treat me with contempt; but I swear, that whosoever of you two shall refuse to vow fidelity to the other, the same shall this moment be sensible what this arm can accomplish!'

Mullia then demanded of his sister, if she had an inclination to receive me for her husband; to which she immediately answered—'I am sincerely desirous he should this day be my spouse; and if he will promise constancy to me, he shall have the same assurance on my part.'—'Are you then,' said he, with his eyes fixed upon me, 'in the same disposition?' I was willing to excuse myself, by repeating the promise I made to my father, to espouse one of my sisters. 'I will hear no more,' interrupted he: at which he immediately stripped me of the habit I wore; he then bound me to a huge stone, and raising his scourge aloft—'Before I begin to chastise thee as thou deservest,' said he, 'for abusing my sister, inform me once more of thy intentions with respect to the marriage I have proposed.'—'I have not abused thy sister,' said I; 'she appeared lovely in my eyes, and I have acquainted her with the fond affection I bear her: perhaps, too, I have not been displeasing to her; our interviews have been agreeable to us both; but we never transgressed the limits of decency. Where is then my crime?'

'These are the agreeable interviews,' replied he, 'of which I complain; and I now intend to punish thee for repeating them.'—'You may act as you please,' said I; 'you are master of my person, but have no power over my mind, and I am incapable of conforming to your commands.'—'It is too much,' replied Mullia; 'and thou intendest to insult me to my face: but I will be avenged on thy presumption.' At these words he gave me fifty lashes

round the arms, and I made the dungeon echo with my dismal cries; but was on the point of losing my reason, when I heard his sister laughing aloud all the time. The artful Mullihac used that expedient, to persuade her brother she no longer loved me, since I had refused to espouse her.

When this piece of discipline was over, Mullia asked me, whether the treatment I received, had not caused some alteration in my mind. 'It has made a pretty strong impression on my body,' said I, 'as you may see by the blood that flows all over me; but my mind is still impassive, and I am always the same.'

This language, which I uttered with great resolution, convinced Mullia that he was no longer to expect any change in my disposition. 'This young man,' said he, 'is extremely obstinate; but he is not acquitted by having only felt the force of my arm: and then turning to me—'It shall never be said,' continued he, 'that thou canst boast to have refused thy hand to my sister, and disobeyed me with impunity. Thou deservest to suffer the cruellest death I can inflict; but I will content myself with depriving thee of speech, and changing thee into a bird, or some four-footed animal: choose then immediately one of these transformations.'

It was to no purpose for me to implore Mullia's pardon, for he was not only exasperated to the highest degree, but was likewise naturally inclined to malignant actions: so that it was impossible for me to soften his inhumanity. 'Since you are then determined,' said I, 'to make me sensible of all the weight of your resentment, I submit to your barbarous commands; let me be changed into a bird.'—'What kind of bird?' replied Mullia. 'Into a humming bird\*,' replied I: 'for as I always delighted in musick, perhaps my songs may solace my affliction; at least I shall have the consolation of pleasing mankind, and not being injurious or insignificant in the world.'

Mullia made me no reply, but immediately unbound me, and violently seized the hair of my head; after which he sprung up with me through the vault of the cavern, that still continued open at the top. We traversed an immense

\* The humming bird is not bigger than a large fly; has little shining wings, and its notes are exceedingly strong and melodious.

space of air in a few moments, and at last descended on the land of Xauxa, which I was then altogether unacquainted with. We were in the midst of a thick wood, and Mullia taking out of a little bag the shell of a cocoa, full of a small black grain, ground a few of these between his fingers, and then rubbing my forehead with the powder, he pronounced several words which I could not comprehend, and when all this ceremony was compleated, he said to me—'Quit now the form of a man, and assume the shape of a humming bird.' The moment he had uttered these words he disappeared, and I remained alone changed into the little animal he mentioned.

I found my condition, at that time, exactly agreeable to the idea I had entertained of it before my transformation; for the loss of my natural form made no change in my inclinations. The moment I began to sing I was really delighted with my voice; my ears were charmed with the melody of the notes I uttered; and as I was conscious of my abilities, I exerted them with my utmost vigour.

I passed some days in this agreeable amusement, but at last began to be dissatisfied that I had none to sing to but myself; I grew disgusted with the solitude in which I resided, and became impatient for the company of mankind: in fine, I discontinued my singing, and took a survey all around me, to discover some habitable country; I fled from place to place for the space of a moon; and at the end of that period, imagined I heard a sound that resembled a human voice. Upon this I stopped in the midst of my career, to get a right information of what I had heard, and was presently sensible I had not been deceived in my conjecture, for I perfectly distinguished the accents of several men who were conversing together.

'I must have a sight of these people,' said I to myself, and then immediately flew to the place where the voice seemed to be uttered; I hopped from tree to tree, and from spray to spray, till I had fixed myself in a situation where I could distinguish the objects I had a curiosity to discover: I then saw three men enjoying the cool breeze on the edge of a spring, whose streams were exceedingly clear, and flowed into a stone basin at a little distance from the source; and from that basin, which was always full, they were diffused through the country, in a wind-

ing rivulet, which, together with the blooming fields and meadows, formed one of the most delightful prospects that could possibly be seen.

The beauty of this verdant place was sufficient to recompense me for the fatigues I sustained before I arrived there; but it became still more engaging when I beheld the three men, and discovered by their conversation, that the neighbouring parts were inhabited. Notwithstanding the change I had lately undergone in the form of my body, I still considered myself as having a much nearer relation to the species of mankind, than to that of birds.

I listened very attentively to the conversation of these men who sat by the spring; but as it did not appear very important, I began to sing, and the astonishment they discovered when they heard my notes, convinced me, that birds of my class were not common in that country; and, indeed, they kept a profound silence all the time I entertained them with my melody, which lasted near two hours. 'I never till now heard so much harmony,' said one of the men. 'I am enchanted,' replied another, 'with that delightful pipe.' The third declared he was equally struck with admiration; and all of them directed their eyes to the top of the tree, to discover what figure I made; but it was impossible for them to see me; I was so small, and at such a considerable distance from them, that I was entirely invisible to them; besides which, the least branch and leaf were sufficient to conceal me from their observation.

As it began to grow late, my three auditors at last retired; but the pleasure they had enjoyed, induced them to return the next day, and I regaled them with the same entertainment. In short, they revisited the spring many days successively, and brought several other persons with them to share the amusement.

I daily found new faces at the fountain; and one morning in particular, six young ladies, exquisitely beautiful, graced that solitude with their presence; but one of these amiable visitants greatly surpassed the rest in the majesty and graces of her person. The moment I beheld them seated on the soft turf that surrounded the spring, I began to entertain them with my strains, which I continued for the space of two hours, and by the attention with which they favoured me, I imagined the amusement was not disagreeable to them.



them. For my own part, I enjoyed a secret satisfaction in my ability to divert such a lovely audience; and my intention was to entertain them with a second regale, as soon as I had a little recovered my breath.

But I was not so expeditious as I designed, for the ladies, when I had discontinued my song, said to one another—'Let us not be gone from this place as yet; perhaps the bird may entertain us with more of his harmony: and, in the mean time, it would be proper to improve the present opportunity; since none but we are here, let us therefore bathe ourselves in this basin.'

The proposal being approved by all the company, they cast lots who should be their centinel, whilst the rest were bathing. The lady, to whom this province fell, retired to a little distance, that she might give her companions timely information in case any stranger should appear. The other five immediately undressed themselves, and presented to my view the most finished and amiable forms nature had ever created. Four of them, however, only raised my admiration; but the fifth, whose name was Casana\*, and was the lady who seemed to me so much superior to the rest in the attractions of her person, commanded all my attention; and by the tender sentiments with which her charms affected my heart, made me sufficiently sensible, that I was still in a condition to love an amiable person.

H O U R XXIII.

THE charms of this beautiful virgin, and the impotency of my own desires, engaged all my meditations for a considerable time; nor was I diverted from those attentions, till I heard Casana say to her companions, that the bathing of that day would be the most delightful they ever enjoyed, if I would but sing whilst they continued in the water. I needed no other motive to afford her the satisfaction she desired. I raised my voice, and varied it through all its modulations, whilst she and her fair companions were sporting in the limpid stream.

When they had quitted the bath, Casana resumed the conversation, and told

\* This name signifies an object that makes the spectator faint; and was given to the lady, to insinuate the impression her eyes made on the hearts of all who beheld her.

her companions her satisfaction would be compleat, if she had but a view of the bird whose voice had so enchanted her. The moment I knew her inclinations, I flew from the top of the tree, and perched on one of her snowy hands. The features of her face were irresistibly charming, and the delicate turn of her shape too exquisite to be represented in description. I beheld her with eyes sparkling with love's softest beams, and endeavoured, by fluttering my wings, and a variety of other motions, to make her sensible of the impressions I derived from her beauty; and that I might the better seem to pay homage to her charms, I began to tune my voice anew.

My officious caresses were as surprising to Casana, as the minuteness of my form; and she was unable to comprehend, how a bird, so tame and gentle, could possibly be found in the wild recesses of a wood: she thought it a kind of prodigy, that a creature, who was almost imperceptible, should exert so strong and sprightly sounds; and she could not forbear intimating her astonishment to her companions, who, for some time, were incapable of making her any reply. 'This bird,' said one at last, 'must certainly belong to some divinity; let us be careful not to injure him, or even leave him any longer in the wood, where he may be prejudiced by some accident that undoubtedly will be imputed to us. Negligence and inconsideration are punished by the gods as crimes; but if we tenderly cherish the bird in reverence to them, we shall be rewarded with their blessings, for they never fail to repay the services rendered them by mortals.'

It was some time before Casana made any reply, and in that interval she presented me with a small quantity of capia, which in that country is very excellent, and I eat it with a good appetite: she then dipped her finger in the spring, and offered me a drop of water, which I likewise drank. 'As amiable,' said she, 'as I think this bird, I cannot prevail on myself to take him out of the wood; for, should he belong to any deity, I shall make myself criminal in depriving him of his liberty.'

In consequence of this persuasion, Casana, when she rose from the green

bank to return home, first gently kissed, and then placed me on the branch of a tree; but the moment she left me, I flew to her again, and settled on her delicious bosom. This extraordinary circumstance even chilled the blood in her veins; but as the impression she felt proceeded more from admiration than fear, she was convinced, the moment I began to repeat my little caresses, that I had no intention to forsake her. 'Since he willingly surrenders himself to me,' said she, 'I will carry him home, and carefully tend him; but he shall still enjoy his liberty, and fly where he pleases.'

At the conclusion of this discourse, she returned to her father's habitation; he was not only one of the principal officers of the court, but had the honour to be related to the king, and his name was Rullaac. Soon after Casana's arrival, it was reported she had the bird, whose surprising melody had for some days past raised the curiosity of all sorts of people, and caused a general admiration. The house of Rullaac was thronged with perpetual crowds on this occasion; and all those who had heard me at the spring, were impatient to view my form, and became exceedingly astonished when they saw me.

The King of Xauxa being informed of the adventure, had the same curiosity as his subjects, and gave orders for me to be brought into his presence; upon which Casana carried me to the palace, and presented me to his majesty. I lay constantly on the bosom of that beautiful virgin, and had infinitely more delight in that situation, than I could possibly have enjoyed on the throne of my ancestors. But the king's curiosity proved fatal to me; for as he was very aged, and had his sight greatly impaired, he took me between his fingers, to survey me with more attention. But as he turned me about, with less caution than was consistent with the delicacy of my texture, he tore off one of my legs. Casana was immediately sensible of my misfortune by my cries. The tears flowed from her charming eyes, and it was impossible for her to command her affliction. She made no scruple to confess the pain this accident had created her; and after she had intreated the prince to return me into her hands, she re-placed me on her breast, where I soon forgot the greatest part of my torment.

As she was preparing to withdraw,

her father, who had never seen me, nor heard my voice, came into the king's apartment. He was surprised to find his daughter there, and much more to see me on her bosom. He broke out in a violent rage, and cried—'Who is that stranger you are so fond of, and where did you find him? It appears, by the manner in which you treat him, that you are upon very good terms together. I fear you have disposed of your person in his favour, without either mine or your mother's approbation.'

Casana was so touched with these reproaches, that she trembled in every limb. 'My lord and father,' said she, 'in the greatest emotion, "I went this morning with five of my sisters to the fountain, and heard this little bird sing: when he had ended his harmony, I was desirous of beholding his form; and at the same instant he flew to me and settled on my hand. His tractable and gentle behaviour charmed me; I then fed him, and gave him water to drink: but one of my sisters happening to say, that he certainly belonged to some divinity, I thought it criminal to deprive him of liberty; and therefore placed him on a branch, and prepared to return home. But I had scarce proceeded two steps, before the bird flew to me a second time, and rested upon me with so much satisfaction, as made me judge he intended to make me a present of himself; and I was afraid to drive him away, lest I should offend the deity to whom he may belong."

Casana, when she had finished her discourse, removed me from her bosom, and her face was covered with those lovely blushes, that are the natural indications of modest purity. Such an artless evidence might have convinced Rullaac of his daughter's innocence; instead of which, his anger grew more intemperate, and he raised his hand with an intention either to strike her, or crush me with the blow; but, very fortunately for me, the king, whose disposition was naturally mild and compassionate, prevented the stroke, and blamed Rullaac exceedingly for his inconsiderate rage. 'How!' said he, 'are you unable then to contain yourself in my presence? and have you lost all your reason? How ridiculous are you, to mistake the least bird that ever was seen for a man?'

My lord, replied the father of Casana, 'you shall be convinced that my resentment



‘resentment is not unreasonable, and that I do not act without a just design. The bird your majesty now beholds, is a young man, descended from the ancient kings of Colla; and he has been changed into this form by the magician Mullia, whose sister he refused to espouse. Since, therefore, I am so well acquainted with this pretended bird, can I with any patience see him lodged on my daughter’s breast?’

The king seemed greatly astonished at what he heard: ‘What proof,’ said he, ‘can you give me that your relation is true?’ — ‘Sire,’ replied Rullaac, ‘though magick is far from being my usual profession, yet in my youthful days I was a considerable proficient in that science; I could make the earth tremble from it’s foundations, and cause the rivers to overflow their banks; I could remove mountains from one region to another, and had power to transform a man into the shape of an animal, and make an animal assume the form of a man: but these abilities, which indeed are useful, when employed for the welfare of mankind, or to invalidate the malice of the generality of magicians who delight in the disorders of nature; these abilities, I say, are very dangerous, when they are employed to torment and persecute the children of men.’

‘I perceive by your discourse,’ replied the king, ‘that you can restore this young man to his primitive form.’ — ‘Yes, my lord,’ said Rullaac, ‘I have that power; and if it be agreeable to your majesty’s inclinations, I will compel the magician Mullia to appear immediately before you, and will order him to break the enchantment in your presence: his power is much more limited than mine, and he must necessarily obey my commands; should he dare to hesitate, I should have recourse to compulsion, and have that confidence in the virtue of my arms, that I may venture to promise myself a complete victory. But I am apt to believe he will not be presumptuous enough to contend with his superior.’

## H O U R XXIV.

**R**ULLAAC, at the conclusion of this discourse, immediately went to his own habitation, and in a few mo-

ments after appeared in the palace, arrayed in his enchanted armour; and caused the king to be acquainted, that if he desired to be a spectator of what was then to be transacted, he might safely adjourn with all his officers, to the great square of the palace.

When the assembly had ranged themselves round the square, Rullaac placed himself in the center, and drew a large circle with the point of his lance; and after several invocations, stamped on the earth with his foot, and made it tremble all around him. The spectators were afraid, lest the convulsive motion should shake all the palace into ruins on their heads; a chilling tremor ran through every heart, and increased to a prodigious degree, when a black vapour was seen to rise out of the earth, and shroud Rullaac from the view of the assembly: they all concluded him to be lost; his friends were in the greatest agonies, and his daughter Casana made the air resound with her cries, and seemed resigned to despair; but amidst all these apprehensions, the vapour dissipated in an instant, and disclosed the magician Mullia in a suppliant posture at the feet of Rullaac.

This spectacle by degrees re-animated the minds of the spectators: ‘Great gods!’ cried they, ‘grant that Rullaac may be triumphant!’ and the same moment they heard Mullia ask, why he was sent for to that place? ‘Thou art commanded hither,’ said Rullaac, ‘that thou may’st restore Moracac immediately to his natural form, and to take a solemn oath never to injure him for the future; and if thou refusest to obey me, prepare to experience the force of my arms.’

He pronounced these words with a menacing tone, and the fire flashed from his eyes. Mullia, on the other hand, replied with a submissive air — ‘O potent Rullaac! I have always acknowledged thee my superior, and am ready to obey whatever thou shalt enjoin me.’ — ‘I only demand thy obedience in two instances,’ said Rullaac; ‘and when thou hast accomplished them, thou shalt have full liberty to depart.’

‘Thou shalt have immediate satisfaction,’ replied Mullia; and, at the same time, he desired that the little bird might be brought to him, and Casana herself delivered it into his hand: after which he took a small piece of earth, and rubbed it on my head, saying to me at the same time — ‘I command thee to resume that form of a man, in which thou

## PERUVIAN TALES.

thou didst appear before this transformation.

The moment he finished these words, I was restored to my natural shape, in every particular, except my leg, which the king had broken, so that I still continued lame: and Mullia having promised never to molest me thereafter, Rullaac told him he was at liberty to depart; upon which, he disappeared in the same manner he came, that is to say, a new vapour rose from the earth, and when it dispersed, Rullaac alone appeared in the circle.

The satisfaction which the king expressed at my transformation, was counterbalanced by his concern to find himself the cause of my lameness; 'Canst thou not,' said he to Rullaac, 'do something more for this stranger? I would willingly part with one of my limbs, to restore him his own, of which I have unhappily deprived him.' 'My lord,' replied Rullaac, 'your goodness shall not cost you so dear; order only some water to be brought me: they immediately presented some to him in a calabash, into which he dipped his hand, and sprinkled a few drops on my thigh, saying, at the same time — 'Young man, if thou hast lost thy leg by an accident, be it restored to thee in the manner thou didst enjoy it formerly.' The moment he finished these words, my leg was re-united to my thigh, and I walked as steadily and upright as ever.

These were the ceremonies employed to restore me to my primitive form: but, alas! I had been infinitely more happy had I remained all my life-time in the shape of a bird. But it is to no purpose now to make reflections of this nature!

When I had rendered my acknowledgments to the king and Rullaac, for their goodness to me, I desired permission to testify to Casana my sense of the obligation I had received from her, as she was the first cause of my good fortune. This permission was granted me, and I threw myself at the feet of that amiable lady. 'I esteem it,' said I, 'the happiest circumstance of my present condition, that I owe all I now enjoy to the most lovely person in the world; and my felicity, adorable Casana, would be complete, had you now the same disposition to love me, as you discovered when I was only a little bird.

I shall never forget the innocent caresses with which you favoured me in that happy state.

I was going to proceed in the same tone, when the princess, who had now several points of decency to observe, appeared in the softest confusion, and with downcast eyes made me this reply —

'I am persuaded, my lord,' said she, 'your gratitude may now make those transports pardonable, which, on any other occasion, would be justly displeasing. Conduct yourself with more caution for the future,' continued she, in a lower tone: 'here are some persons near us, who have it in charge to observe my behaviour; and therefore let us not give them any opportunity of making disagreeable remarks.'

I received this advice as I ought, and improved it in the discreetest manner I could: I assumed a very reserved behaviour all the rest of the day, and very seldom approached Casana; but when I happened to be near her, I affected to entertain her with a conversation on different subjects, and I imagined she was under the inspection of some potent person, and consequently that it might be dangerous for her to listen to my vows, as well as for me to address them to her in publick.

I was not deceived in my suspicion; for in a conversation I had two days after with one of the women who were appointed to attend me, I learnt that the king's eldest son was passionately in love with Casana, and intended to espouse her very soon: I then congratulated myself for conforming to the counsel I had received from the princess; but I had said too much before. There was a number of insolent and censorious persons among the king's officers, and indeed such characters are never wanting in courts. They had overheard the declarations I made to Casana, and with a malicious satisfaction acquainted the prince, who had been absent some time from court, that he had a rival in me. They even informed him of things I had never said; adding, that his own interest obliged him to return with all expedition, to dispute with me the conquest of Casana's heart.

The prince, at these tidings, hastened to court like a lion, who, when he is pressed with hunger, rushes from his den to roam for food; his eyes darted gleams of fire, he roars, he flies like the wind,



wind, and never stops till he has launched upon his prey. Such did the prince seem on his arrival at court. The moment he had paid his duty to the king his father, he enquired for the apartment which had been assigned to me, and hastened thither with the utmost impatience. After a few compliments which he made me, on the extraordinary events I had experienced, he proposed a walk to me before dinner.

I saw some emotions in his eyes, that made me sensible he enjoyed no great satisfaction; but I could not, with any manner of civility or politeness, decline the proposal he made me; and therefore I gave him to understand, I was ready to wait on him. 'Let each of us,' said he, 'take a sabre, with a bow and arrows; perhaps we shall find some animal in the wood to employ our weapons on.'

When we had armed ourselves as the prince desired, he led me through a portal which opened into a beautiful meadow near the palace; we had now passed to the further side of it, and were at the entrance into a thicket, when the prince addressed me in this manner: 'I find it very proper to stop in this place, which gives me a commodious opportunity to decide our difference!'—'What difference,' interrupted I, 'can I possibly have with you, my lord? I never saw you till this day; and if I have been so unfortunate as to offend you in any instance, I am disposed to give you all the satisfaction you can desire.'—'I will accept of no satisfaction,' replied the prince, 'but your death. You love Casana, and have made her a public declaration of your passion! This is a motive sufficient for my revenge; I am determined to destroy any rival who attempts to supplant me, and you shall either deprive me of my life, or I will leave you dead on the spot!'

I was inflamed with resentment at such a declaration. The gods forbid, said I, that I should combat with the son of my benefactor; and I have too many obligations to the king your father, ever to suffer me to be guilty of so much ingratitude. It shall never be said, that I have violated the sanctuary which afforded me a refuge; and I had much rather convince you by my services, that I am so far from deserting your displeasure, that, on the contrary, I merit your friendship. Be-

lieve me, my lord, it is much more honourable to gain a friend than vanquish an enemy.'

In vain, said the prince, do you endeavour to soothe my resentment; I can never pardon your temerity, in attempting to rob me of Casana's heart. —'If my esteem,' answered I, 'for that amiable lady, be my crime, you shall have no future cause to complain of my conduct, and I consent to renounce the satisfaction of seeing her any more. As soon as the ensuing morning appears, I will banish myself from your father's court and dominions; and surely you may account a sacrifice like this to be a complete victory.'—'This will never satisfy me,' replied the prince; 'and your offence merits a much severer chastisement. Your death alone can avenge me of the insolent liberties you have taken with Casana; I know with what pleasure you abused her innocence, when you was changed into a bird.'

A jealousy so ill founded, made it impossible for me to keep my temper any longer in the bounds of moderation. How, said I, can you be jealous of a little fly, who happened to settle on the face or bosom of your mistress? If that be your disposition, you will have enemies enough to combat, and will never be able to destroy them entirely; for one that you can exterminate, you will see a thousand rise to life every day; and therefore, believe me, Sir, the best conduct you can resolve upon, is to keep your inordinate passions in subjection.'

H O U R XXV.

MY manner of representing the affair did but irritate the prince to a higher degree. 'Wretch as thou art!' said he, 'is it not enough that thou hast injured me in the most sensible part, but wilt thou likewise insult the delicacy of my passion? However, I am resolved to punish thee for thy presumption; prepare then to defend thyself, for I intend to treat thee without much ceremony; upon which he drew his sabre, and rushed upon me with all possible fury.

The remembrance I still retained of the obligations I had received from the father, no way obliged me to suffer myself

self to be slain by the son; I therefore unsheathed my sabre, and threw myself into a posture of defence. At first I only warded off his blows, and had no intention to wound my adversary; and indeed I flattered myself, that this instance of my regard for his safety would have calmed his rage, and made him acknowledge he had no cause to be so implacable against me: I likewise hoped we should be observed from the palace; and that those who should happen to see us, would have sufficient time to come and part us; but at last I found myself so briskly assaulted, that I was obliged to make my enemy for ever incapable of injuring me. The combat grew more desperate every moment, and we exchanged several dangerous blows. The blood flowed from our mutual wounds; and notwithstanding the large quantity we both lost, we were still fighting with the severest animosity, when several officers, who were dispatched in all speed by the king to separate us, threw themselves between our weapons, and obliged us to return to the palace.

My wounds being not very dangerous, were healed in a few days by a balm which the physicians applied to them, and I soon recovered the vigour I had lost by the effusion of blood.

The prince's fate was very different, and he was reduced so low the fifth day, that they began to despair of his cure, and he himself grew sensible that his illness would prove mortal. With this persuasion he formed the most criminal design that ever entered into the imagination of man. He first informed himself of my condition, and when he heard I gradually began to recover, he seemed exceedingly dejected. 'Must I then die,' said he, 'with the mortification of leaving a rival in felicity, at the expence of my life and honour! However,' continued he, 'since I no more can hope to possess Casana, I resign her to his more prosperous pretensions.' Upon which he desired to see this princess once more, to give her his last farewell, and inform her that he died for her sake.

Nothing but the king's authority could have prevailed on Casana to visit the prince. When she came into his presence, he addressed himself to her in this manner, the better to conceal his infamous design—'Charming Casana,' said he, 'I am not a little obliged to you for your complaisant proceeding

towards me; it is undoubtedly the last satisfaction you can now procure me. I am sensible my final hour is come, and I am going to be joined to my ancestors, in another state of being. The only reluctance I shall carry with me out of this world is, that I must die before I could call you mine; but you are now at liberty to dispose of your heart in favour of him you love best.'

'Prince,' replied Casana, 'this is no time for you to indulge such imaginations; think rather how to compose the emotions of your soul: your condition is not desperate as yet; your youth and vigorous constitution, with our sincere prayers, and the remedies that are offered you, ought to make you hope for a speedy re-establishment of your health.'—'Ah!' interrupted the prince, 'since you are so generous as to interest yourself in my preservation, drink one cup of cora to my recovery, and I will drink another to the continuance of your charms.'

Casana could not deny the prince this satisfaction, and the attendants presented each of them with a cup of that liquor, which they immediately drank. Those who were present took notice that the princess trembled when she raised the cup to her lips, and her apprehensions were undoubtedly occasioned by a secret preface of the fate that attended her; and in reality, a moment after she had drank the mortal draught, the rosy colour faded in her face, and she was seized with violent convulsions. In vain was the assistance of all about her, and she expired in the arms of those who endeavoured to relieve her.

Whilst the attendants were employing all their cares to recover the princess, one of them saw the prince seized with the same symptoms in his bed; they ran to his assistance, but he had already breathed out his soul.

It is easy to judge there was poison infused into the liquor the prince and Casana had drank, and indeed nothing could be more true. The prince, not able to bear the thought that his rival should enjoy that lady, was so inhuman as to mix a violent poison in the cora presented to her, by which means he was certain, that if he was not to possess Casana, at least, she should make no other man happy.

I was afflicted beyond expression at this melancholy accident; I lamented the



the unhappy fate of the princess, and all the people bewailed the prince. The sorrow which affected the king on this occasion, threw him into a languishing illness, that brought him to the brink of the grave. At the end of one moon, when he began a little to recover, he ordered me to be conducted into his presence. 'Young stranger,' said he, 'you are sensible what calamities I have suffered since your arrival in my dominions: my son is dead; one of my relations, whom I intended for his spouse, is now no more; and I myself beheld the gates of death. It is true, these misfortunes cannot justly be imputed to you, and it would be unrighteous to punish you for what you did not commit. All the world can testify the discretion with which you conducted yourself in your passion for Casana, and I myself beheld the repugnance with which you combated my son: every one must acknowledge, that nothing but the necessity of defending your own life induced you to oppose him: but though all these circumstances proclaim your innocence, it is equally true, that you are the cause of our misfortunes. Be gone then in peace; your presence in this country will but aggravate my sorrows; be gone then immediately, and for ever.'

I would willingly have made some reply in my justification, but he obliged me to be silent. 'Once more be gone,' said he. 'I always had a sincere inclination to be hospitable to strangers; do not now constrain me to act contrary to my natural disposition.'

These last words admitted of no reply: I immediately left the palace; and after I had travelled for the space of two days, found myself out of the dominions of the King of Xauxa. I only met with one remarkable adventure in my journey, and that was in the country of Abansay.

One day, when the heat proved insupportable, and I was extremely fatigued with travelling from morning to noon, I stopped at the edge of a wood that rose on my right hand. The place was intricately calculated to give passengers the enjoyment of the refreshing gales. A bubbling fountain spouted forth its limpid waters, and a blooming circle of tall trees shot forth a profusion of branches impenetrable to the sun-beams: these branches, that almost bended to the earth,

were loaded with inviting fruits, some of which I gathered and eat, and found their flavour most delicious. After which I stretched myself on the grass, and sunk into a pleasing slumber.

In a very few hours, my sleep was interrupted, and I found myself moved up and down; these motions, though not at all violent, were sufficient to awake me, and I then perceived that four old women, entirely naked, had bound my arms with silver chains. All the efforts I could make to disengage myself were ineffectual, and I entreated them in vain to restore me to liberty. 'We have no intention to injure you,' said they; 'and only desire you to follow us without reluctance; but if you refuse to comply, we shall find means to make you obey us, in spite of all your resistance.'

The curiosity I had to know where this adventure would end, induced me to follow them without any farther expostulations. We walked above an hour through the wood, and at last found ourselves on the brink of a broad and deep trench. A draw-bridge was then let down to give us a free passage, and when we had crossed the trench, the bridge drew up of itself. We then came into a vast court, in the middle of which stood a large pavilion, whose entrance was guarded by two amiable women, as naked as my four conductors; but notwithstanding the indecent condition in which they appeared, an air of modesty, which commanded respect, was visible in their aspects, and I could not help taking notice that they smiled at my approach. 'O young stranger,' said they, 'you are ignorant of the good fortune that awaits you. The great Rímac determines, you shall consent to be the author of the greatest happiness that can possibly attend you.'

This language was a perfect riddle to me; but I was informed by two young women, that her mistress herself would acquaint me with my felicity. 'You have nothing more to do,' continued they, 'than to give us your weapons, with the habit you wear, and to bathe yourself in this basin.'—'I am very willing,' said I, 'to bathe, and surrender my arms, as you desire: I will likewise resign my apparel to you; but what other dress am I then to be clothed in? Every man has his parti-

M culat

'cular custom; and I would not appear naked before any mortal: decency forbids me to be so abandoned.'

'You have reason,' replied one of the women, 'to say every one has a peculiar custom: as to us, we cannot blush to appear as nature has formed us; for we are only guided by moderation and purity, and as reason tempers the warmest flow of our blood, we are only ashamed to manifest a depraved heart. This, in our opinion, is the most infamous and reproachful object that can possibly be seen; or rather, it is that which ought never to be found in a person of honour. We may add to this, that nakedness is so far from being an incentive to immoderate desires, that, on the contrary, it cools the wanton fervours of the mind; it fetters irregular passions, and gives a modest insensibility to innocence. In fine, when we are once habituated to this custom, whatever objects present themselves before us, the eye continues undisturbed, and the heart is never tainted with any tumultuous passion.'

I discovered in this kind of reasoning, some glimmerings of truth, which obliged me to submit. 'Since this is your custom,' said I, 'and you compel me to conform to it, I shall dispose myself to imitate your example; and will no longer delay to appear in a condition that can never be indecent, since it is justified by your example.' At this, they began to take away my weapons; after which, they eased me of my chains, and assisted me to divest myself of my apparel, which the four old women caught up and carried away.

#### H O U R XXVI.

**I**N the mean time I threw myself into the basin, according to the directions I had received, and washed myself for some time; and when I came out of the water, the two young women, to whose care I was consigned, dried my body with linen, white as the snow itself; and each of them folding one of her arms round mine, introduced me into the palace.

After we had passed through several apartments, they led me into a large hall, where the Laica Pacuncus then

was: she was a young lady about twenty years of age, exquisitely beautiful, and her eyes sparkled with so much lustre, that I was hardly able to bear their radiant glances. She was seated on a throne of silver, over which was thrown the skin of a tyger, and at her left-hand I beheld a golden throne, covered with the spoils of a lion. 'Approach, young stranger,' said she, the moment I appeared; 'unite your destiny with mine, and take possession of the throne I have decreed you. I am infinitely delighted to owe so amiable a husband to chance; and could not have succeeded better, though I had selected one from the flower of a whole nation.'

I was so confounded at this adventure, and the advances I received from so charming a person, that I stood speechless before her. Pacuncus finding I made no reply, but seemed lost in a kind of extasy, told me, she was not surprised at my silence, 'For doubtless,' said she, 'you are not accustomed to receive the first overtures from our sex: however, this is my practice,' continued she, 'and you must accommodate yourself to it as well as you can;' upon which she offered me her hand in the most obliging manner. I then approached her, with an intention to throw myself at her feet: 'What do you mean to do?' cried she; 'It is my duty to kiss your knees;' at the same time she favoured me with a tender embrace, and obliged me to ascend the throne that was raised on her right-hand.

I was hardly seated, before she resumed her discourse: 'You are now my husband,' said she; 'and I may hereafter converse with you on the cause of your arrival in my dominions, though I think I am acquainted with every circumstance already: but at present, something of more consequence requires our attention; give me your hand, and let us retire into the next apartment, where I will acquaint you with some particulars very necessary for you to know.'

As my surprize was increased every moment by the extraordinary things I heard, I obeyed her without making any reply; she then conducted me into a chamber, the air of which was perfumed with odours so exquisitely fragrant,



grant, that they charmed me; nor was the eye regaled with less attractions than the smell.

The walls were adorned with a radiant profusion of rich metals and stones, ranged with admirable symmetry. A bed of gold covered with the skins of six tigers, was the only furniture in that apartment. Pacuncus laid herself on the bed, and invited me to place myself at her side; and when she had for some time beheld me with eyes, in which Love had kindled his brightest flames, she directed her discourse to me in this manner.

'It is now time, my dearest spouse, to inform you who I am, and what were my inducements to treat you in the manner you have experienced. My father was the chief prophet of the great Rimac, and I am the only fruit of his marriage-bed. At his death, he made me the heiress of all his power, which consisted in an absolute command over all things, either on earth or in the waters; but though I am invested with such an unlimited authority, I regulate all my actions by reason, and never exert my power, but to prosper the virtuous, and punish injustice. I give consolation to the unfortunate in their afflictions, and never fail to chastise the abandoned with due severity. Once in every moon, I take a progress round the earth; and am careful, wherever I come, to establish that order and tranquillity which magicians, by their capricious practices, too frequently interrupt: the elements themselves obey my commands, and all nature appears tractable and submissive before me.

'O great Rimac,' cried she, in this part of her discourse, 'why is not my power as absolute over the mind! But alas! in that particular I am too sensible of my inability. Ah me! what distracting pangs have I suffered from perfidious men! I have been espoused to sixty-nine husbands, and had the mortification to find them all false and ungrateful. I was united to them successively by the most tender passion, but their inconstancy has for ever separated me from their arms. When I punished the last, whom I surprized in the embraces of one of my women, I took a solemn oath to marry the first man who should set a foot in my dominions, and bound myself by an in-

violable vow, to punish him severely, if he either refused to espouse me, or should prove false after he became the partner of my bed.

'You may be sensible,' continued she, 'what misfortunes you have escaped, by consenting to be my husband: I should have been compelled to make you repent of your refusal; and shall be under the same necessity, if ever you falsify your vows of fidelity to me.'

I was on the point of telling her, that I could not possibly comprehend how her conduct to me any way comported with her assertion, that all her actions were regulated by reason; but she did not allow me the opportunity. 'Have a regard to yourself,' said she; 'for though I have not an absolute inspection into the heart, I can discover by the language of your eyes, that you are preparing to contradict me. I have already told you that you are my husband, and that ought to be sufficient to secure me your heart. You will pardon the little vehemence I discover, as it is the necessary consequence of the oath I have taken: I indeed was urged to it by a degree of desperation; but it is not the less inviolable for that circumstance. All the excuses and impediments you can alledge, will avail you nothing; and if you fancy there is any injustice in my proceedings, you will easily be reconciled to it, when you consider, that the attractions of my person will amply recompense you for all you can possibly lose in any other instance. You have one infallible advantage to depend on, which is the certainty you may entertain, that I shall preserve to my death all the graces I may now enjoy; and I must likewise acquaint you, that you will experience the same fondness in me which I now express, and the same inclination to please you.'

I indeed was shocked at the first advances Pacuncus made me, and the constraint she laid me under of being united to her all my days, gave me some dissatisfaction; but the absolute air of her conversation, and the menaces she had recourse to, made me determine to comply with her expectations. 'Beauteous Queen of the Laicas,' said I, and at the same time kissed her hand, 'I am so far from disregarding the offers you make me, that I count them the greatest felicity I could possibly attain to, and could never hope to be so exquisitely

‘blessed: I even acknowledge, that I found myself incapable of resisting those all-persuasive eyes; you are already the absolute mistress of my person; and, as you have compleated the conquest of my heart, your ascendant shall be as sovereign over my soul. Nothing now remains, but that I intreat you to inform me, in what manner I may best testify my gratitude for all your goodness.’

I pronounced these last words with such a tone and air, as convinced Pacuncus, that either her charms or threatenings had gained the effect she desired. ‘Dear lovely youth,’ said she, ‘I want language to express how much you transport me by the voluntary gift of your heart; I should have suffered infinite affliction, had I found it necessary to gain it by my authority; but since I am so happy as to inspire you with tender sentiments in my favour, I surrender myself entirely to your pleasure, and solemnly swear you alone shall be the object of my softest love!’

She accompanied these expressions with a tender embrace, that convinced me of the sincerity of her passion. Such a delicious caress would have enflamed the most insensible of all mortals, and I was preparing to return her endearment, when she resumed her discourse in this manner: ‘I have only one particular more to tell you, and then our nuptial supper shall be served up; but let me intreat you to be very attentive to what you are going to hear. I expect, when you tender me your heart, that you resign it to me without reserve: should I once discover that you have treated me with the least infidelity, all my softest affection for you will not prevent me from punishing you according to your demerit; your offence will cost you one of your limbs, and you will be driven with contempt from the palace: but should your love to me be at any time insufficient to cool your inclinations to other objects that may present themselves to your view, summon all your reason to your assistance at such a juncture, and let fear itself extinguish every criminal flame, that any future rival of mine may kindle in your bosom; let the consideration of your own interest regulate each inordinate desire, that may one day prove too tyrannical to your welfare. Let me therefore recommend it to you, to think of owing all your

happiness and repose to your fidelity alone.’

‘Adorable Laica,’ said I, ‘all the charms of the most amiable objects in the universe shall never deprive you of my heart; and when I once have resigned it to you, no future competitor shall ever reclaim it.’—‘Remember well this engagement,’ said Pacuncus; ‘I can pardon all things but the contempt of my person, and the inconstancy of him who shares my bed: let the sad examples of others teach you discretion; I have received many promises like yours; sixty-nine husbands have plighted their vows of fidelity to me, and not one, as yet, has been punctual any longer than the first moon of our espousals. I have hitherto seen none but perjured wretches, and I have punished them for their guilt as I ought. I must, indeed, acknowledge,’ continued she with a smile, ‘that I exposed their constancy to the severest trials, by leaving them in this palace with several young virgins, who were beautiful to perfection.’

‘Charming Laica,’ interrupted I, ‘as for my part, I can safely challenge you to expose me to what trials you please, being well assured you will always find me uniform to what I now profess.’—‘Let me caution you once more,’ replied she, ‘to be on your guard; a person may be swept away by a flood, in the very place where the day before he walked on dry land. However, for the present, let us turn the conversation to some other subject: I have acquainted you with all the particulars necessary to the preservation of your good fortune, and said enough to restrain you within the limits of your duty, if you can act rationally; and now let us sit down to our nuptial banquet, which I believe will be very seasonable to you; for I am persuaded, you have not been entertained with much delicacy on your journey.’

#### H O U R XXVII.

**T**HE day was now upon the close, and when we quitted the chamber, we found the other apartments finely illuminated by a vast number of lamps, which hung from the roof; but the hall where our collation was served up, appeared more resplendent than the brightest day



day in spring: the wall, as well as the pavement and roof, were covered with plates of silver, so artificially joined together, that they seemed to be one continued spread of that metal, and were so exquisitely polished, that they reflected every object like a mirror. From the wall were extended several large paws of bears, each of which grasped a lighted taper, which diffused a dazzling lustre, and never consumed. These paws were sixty-nine in number, a circumstance that, in my opinion, had some mysterious meaning; but at that time I did not ask for any explanation, for my eyes were surprized with other objects that engaged all my attention.

Pacuncus and myself were seated at the upper end of the hall, on two small thrones of silver, covered with skins exceedingly white and soft; and immediately seven young virgins divinely charming, made their appearance at the other end of the hall, and entertained us with a concert of the most melodious voices I had ever heard.

A few moments after, six other virgins beautiful as the blushes of the morning, and crowned with chaplets of perfuming flowers, appeared in the middle of the hall, and began to dance with an inimitable harmony of motion. My eyes, till then, had never been delighted with so lovely a view, and no time could be tedious to me whilst I beheld the easy glide of their bodies, and the delicate softness of their steps, which perfectly accorded with the modulation of the instruments.

When the dance was ended, the six virgins disappeared, and resigned their places to as many others, who placed before us a table covered with a surprising variety of excellent provisions; among which the ynclic and cachucu were not forgotten. But besides these dainties, which mortals esteem so exquisite, there were a vast number of others not inferior to the former, in the delicacy of their flavour, and the greatest part of which were entirely unknown to me. Pacuncus served me with every kind, and made me acquainted with their particular names, whilst I expressed my commendation of them by my appetite, rather than my expressions; for my astonishment at what I both beheld and heard made me incapable of uttering a word.

When we had finished our repast, the six virgins who placed the table before

us, immediately carried it away; and the moment they disappeared, two other ladies entered the hall with a little table of silver, that supported a large vessel of gold, and two cups of the same metal; the vessel was filled with a red liquor of so admirable a flavour, that I cried out the instant I tasted it—'This surely is the drink of the gods!' At the same time I cast my eyes on Pacuncus, and saw her smile at my exclamation. 'This liquor,' said she, 'has at last restored you to your speech;' at which I immediately grew sensible of my incivility, and endeavoured to excuse the profound silence I had indulged till then. 'I am far from being offended,' said she, 'with your attention to the feast with which I have entertained you; and am rather charmed with your silence, which I esteem a favourable preface to my love. I have observed with pleasure, that your taste and judgment are excellent; and from thence concluded, your attachment to me would be equally sincere and lasting.' We afterwards discoursed together for some time, and the liquor contributed to enliven the conversation.

When we had drank as much as was agreeable to our inclinations, twelve beautiful virgins entered the hall dancing; each of them had a taper in her hand. Immediately after their arrival, they stopped for a few moments, and then entertained us with the most surprising dance I ever saw, which they did not discontinue till we rose in order to retire. They then ranged themselves in pairs, and in that order walked before us to the chamber where the nuptial-bed was prepared. It was the same apartment in which Pacuncus had instructed me in the rules I was to observe, in order to perpetuate my good fortune. The twelve virgins placed their tapers around the bed, four on each side, and four at the feet; after which they retired, and left us to our repose.

All the pleasures which till then had concurred to transport my senses, vanished that moment from my remembrance, and were succeeded by delights abundantly more enchanting. My attention was totally employed on that divine beauty, to whose possession I was so happily allotted. We repeated, in those soft moments, our protestations of mutual love; our souls were dissolved in raptures inexpressible, and grew intoxicated with joys

joys too exquisite for imagination itself to paint. Several hours glided insensibly away in this scene of delight, before our eyes were closed in slumbers; but I was soon awaked, by two gentle kisses which Pacuncus imprinted on my lips. She was all sprightliness and vivacity, and charmed me to such a degree by her engaging disposition, that I have reason to believe our transports were mutual.

The day stole upon us amidst our endearments, and we rose to new feasts, diversified with dances and harmonious airs, where some amiable novelty was always intermixed. The succeeding days were passed in the same pleasures; but we sometimes quitted the palace, and retired to verdant groves and cooling grotts, where innumerable delights presented themselves to our view, in all imaginable variety.

The time at last arrived when Pacuncus was to be separated from me, to revisit the world; a fatal period to my repose! a period wherein my constancy was to experience the strongest proof. She acquainted me, that she should be absent four days, and at the same time assured me, she parted from me with regret. 'Believe me,' said she, 'you are infinitely dearer to me than any of those who formerly espoused me; and I tremble lest I should be fated to lose you for ever. Were it in my power to guard you from the danger to which you will soon be abandoned, I would interpose with joy; but I am necessitated to prove the fidelity of the husband to whom I am to devote my heart; and it is on this condition alone that I am to expect a child to inherit my power. All I can promise you is this; if you preserve your constancy to me untainted, during these four days of absence, I will be satisfied with this single trial, and will take such effectual methods as shall secure you for the future, from being liable to love any other object, or inspire any person but myself, with a passion for you: you shall then be in a compleat capacity to make our union perfect; our inclinations shall be all harmonized by unanimity, and no accident shall interrupt our joys.'

'My lovely queen,' said I, 'this language is altogether unnecessary, and even injurious to my virtue; for you seem to suspect the sincerity of my love, since you can possibly doubt my fidelity.'—'Ah, my dearest Moracac,' re-

plied Pacuncus, 'I am persuaded you at present have an unfeigned affection for me; but who can be responsible to me for your future conduct! Those objects which have made no impression upon you when I was present, may rob me of your heart when I no longer behold you; and that beauty which to-day you may view with indifference, may to-morrow prove a fatal allure-ment. As to the rest, you may believe me when I assure you, that all the regret and tender fears I have discovered, flow from no other motive than my fond desire to preserve you from danger.'

'Rest satisfied in my conduct,' said I; 'and be persuaded you shall owe my inviolable fidelity, not to any apprehensions I have of punishment, but to my sincere inclinations to live happily with you all my days; and I even flatter myself, that when you return, you will condemn your injustice, in suspecting me capable of the least ingratitude.'

After many mutual protestations of unchanging love, Pacuncus ascended her chariot, drawn by twelve snow-white partridges, three and three in a rank. We then gave each other the last farewell; and the birds, accustomed to the signal, sprung into the air with incredible swiftness, and drew the chariot to such a height, as made it soon disappear from my view.

I immediately, upon the Laica's departure, recollected every particular of her discourse. 'I am very sensible,' said I to myself, 'Pacuncus has no power to read the secrets of hearts; for if she had, she would certainly have known with what sincerity I love her; and, indeed, the happy situation wherein she has placed me makes it impossible for me to indulge a passion for any lady but herself. Her suspicions,' continued I, 'are unjust; and in order to convince her they were so, her attendants shall now regale me with the most delicious banquets they can prepare, and shall entertain my eyes with all the amiable allurements they can disclose. Besides,' added I, 'should I find my heart ever so little interested in favour of any particular object, it will be easy for me, by banishing that object from my presence, and calling up the idea of Pacuncus in my soul, to preserve myself from all possibility of danger.'

I made these reflections in the court where I went to bid the Laica farewell, and



and see her depart; and I was employed in the same meditations when I entered the palace; but they all vanished from my mind, when I found a general solitude reign through all the apartments. I wandered from chamber to chamber, without discovering one human form: 'This,' said I, 'will never enable me to execute the project I have been forming; where are then the dangerous entanglements with which I was threatened?' In vain did I raise my voice to allure some of the young virgins, with whose names I was unacquainted: and when I received no answer—'Surely,' said I, 'Pacuncus has commanded all her ladies to attend her in her progress!'

## H O U R XXVIII.

AS I could not prevail on myself to believe she had any intention to leave me alone in the palace—'Certainly,' said I, 'it is but reasonable that the husband of the Queen of the Laicas should have some share of her power.' Upon which I resolved to make the experiment, and accordingly stamped on the earth with my foot: at the same instant an old woman appeared before me, to know what commands I had for her to execute.

I was startled at an object so very disagreeable, and continued silent for some moments; but after I had recovered myself from my surprize, I asked her if she was the only domestick the Laica had left to attend me?—'My lord,' said she, 'if for your greater security you will please to content yourself with my services, you shall be supplied with all you desire, during the absence of my mistress; I have orders to obey you, and am impowered to give you satisfaction in every particular.'

'If that be the case,' answered I, 'cause some of the young ladies who usually attend in this palace to come here.'—'Ah! my lord!' interrupted she, 'what is this you desire! Let me intreat you to entertain no such thought; and may the gods forbid that my ministration should lead you to the edge of a precipice! Our young virgins, in the absence of Pacuncus, entirely devote themselves to pleasure, and are now giving a loose to all their sprightliness and gaiety. Should you there-

fore see them at a time like this, they would make such impressions on your heart, as would be impossible for you to resist.'

What I heard did but the more excite my curiosity: 'My good mother,' said I, 'you must certainly be ignorant how tenderly I love the queen your mistress, otherwise you would never entertain those suspicions: let me therefore desire you to comply with my orders.'—'My lord,' replied she, 'I cannot possibly obey you in this instance; but if you are absolutely determined to see my young companions, you may, as you are master of this palace, command them yourself to appear before you; if you only stamp with your foot, you will immediately see them fly to receive your orders; but let me intreat you once more to be apprehensive, lest those charming objects should infuse a fatal poison into your soul; a single expression from the most inconsiderable among them will be sufficient to captivate your heart; one artful glance will dazzle all the reasons you can summon to your assistance; and each soft and amiable perfection you discover, will prove mortal to your repose.'

I presumed so much on my passion for Pacuncus, that I despised all the counsels I received: 'Be gone,' said I to the old woman; 'you certainly doat, and fancy you are talking to a child: but since I can have other attendants, I command you to appear no more in my presence.'

I had no sooner uttered these words, but I stamped with my foot, and at the same instant two young women, who resembled in their air and shape those who had formerly received me at the palace gate, succeeded in the place of the old woman, who had already disappeared from my view: but this appearance did not suffice for my purpose; the unaffected modesty which blushed in their faces was very improper to dispel the cares and melancholy musings that were forming in my soul. When they desired to know my commands, I told them, it was my intention that all the domesticks Pacuncus had left in the palace, should pass in review before me, and that after I had seen them, they should have liberty to retire. 'My lord,' replied they, 'we shall obey your orders, though with much reluctance: but permit us to acquaint

acquaint you, that you are forming a resolution which may prove as fatal to you as it has been to many others. Let a prudent fear, Sir, urge you to shun the danger of being seduced by the deluding beauty of our young damsels. You will find their conversation and assiduities extremely engaging; but those pleasures which, in their first enjoyment, may have all the sweets of honey, will, in their consequence, prove as bitter to you as gall. This advice was certainly very discreet; but I was offended at a lecture of morality so opposite to the gratification I desired. 'Be silent,' said I, 'and let me hear no more of your unseasonable harangues; I know how I ought to act, and have no need of your directions; be gone, therefore, immediately, for I can dispense with your attendance.'

At this command, the two young women disappeared, without replying, and I again stamped on the ground; upon which, two more virgins, crowned with flowers, came into my chamber, and with a smiling air desired to be acquainted with my commands. 'I have an inclination to see you,' said I, 'and you shall be my companions till supper.' They accepted the invitation with pleasure; and for my own particular, I as yet had no cause to repent of my curiosity. They were of a gay disposition, and agreeably amused me for some hours; and though they frequently diverted me with lively turns of wit, I still found myself in full possession of my liberty.

When the hour for supper at last came on, I ordered them to regale me with the most elegant feast they could possibly contrive, and directed them to bring before me their fairest companions; I took notice by their air, they were not at all dissatisfied with that command, and they assured me they would endeavour to procure me the satisfaction I desired; upon which they immediately withdrew, and a few moments after returned to conduct me to the hall, where the feast was to be served up.

I followed them with a very good will; and when I came into the hall, beheld three parties of young ladies, who had formed themselves into as many choruses: they all began a concert, and acquitted themselves with the utmost perfection. In the mean time, several young damsels placed before me a table covered with a magnificent variety of excellent provisions;

but as I began to be much accustomed to dainties, they were the least of my satisfactions: the objects I had before me attracted all my attention, and it was impossible for me to determine whether the voices, the instruments, or the various graces of the amiable persons who stood before me, were most worthy of admiration.

I surveyed all those wonders with a secret transport, when on a sudden I beheld the most lovely object nature perhaps ever formed; it was a young lady about sixteen years of age, exquisitely shaped, and her skin whiter than the purest snow. Her radiant eyes sparkled like stars, her complexion glowed with a rosy bloom, and love's softest smiles played on the vermilion of her lips; her eye-brows were delicately arched like two rainbows, and her head was shaded with a flow of jetty hair that waved in ringlets to her slender waist: in a word, the whole assemblage of her charms was improved by that air of sprightliness and vivacity, which steals so irresistibly to the heart.

This amiable creature continued some moments with a graceful composure in the middle of the hall, and then began a dance which perfectly astonished me; nothing could equal the lightness and activity of her steps, which hardly appeared to touch the pavement; she even seemed to swim in the air, and every motion was perfectly enchanting: I was no longer at a loss where to fix my preference, for my whole attention was now attracted by this charming person.

When she had finished the dance, I gave her a signal to approach me, and she immediately complied: we discoursed together a considerable time, and I thought her conversation more engaging if possible, than her dancing; she entertained me with a thousand pleasantries, and accompanied them from time to time with such alluring smiles and glances, as made her language sink like a soft dew into my soul.

From that moment she became absolutely mistress of my heart, and I was conquered without being conscious of my defeat. I mistook that for mere admiration, which, in reality, proceeded from the poison of love. The compliments I made her, though they flowed from the bottom of my heart, appeared to me as so many civilities due to her extraordinary merit; and perhaps I might have had the



the same sentiments of the caresses she would have received from me, had I not been restrained by the presence of her companions, rather than any remembrance of Pacuncus. In a word, I imagined, when I took my leave of her, that I might safely desire a private interview with her the next day.

Quita, for that was the name of the lovely dancer, complied with my request without the least repugnance. 'My lord,' said she, 'I am commanded to render you an absolute obedience; and since you have made me acquainted with your intentions, I must inform you, that it will be my turn to-morrow to guard the first grotto on the right-hand as you enter the wood; I am to pass the whole day there, and shall have an opportunity of entertaining you without any interruption.' For my part, I accepted of her proposal, and then retired to my chamber.

When I was laid in my bed, I reflected, with some uneasiness, on what had passed between Quita and myself, and began with condemning the imbecility of mind I had discovered; nor did I fail to reproach myself with the infidelity of my proceeding. 'What,' said I, 'will Pecuncus say, should she ever know I thought one of her ladies more amiable than herself?' But in a few moments I began to consider this affair in a different light, and could not persuade myself I had as yet been guilty of any perjury; 'I have received no orders,' said I, 'not to see and admire, nor have I in any circumstance exceeded the limits of my duty.' To such artifices does an unlawful passion resort for its justification, and the conduct which a moment before I had condemned as criminal, now passed in my opinion for virtue itself.

These meditations, so contradictory in themselves, were my entertainment a considerable part of the night; but the next morning I abandoned myself to the desires that misled me from my reason. The moment I rose from my bed, I went to the appointed grotto, where I found Quita waiting with impatience for my arrival; for if she had inspired me with love, I had affected her with the same impressions. I now became perfectly enchanted with her beauty, and no one of her sex had till then fired my heart with desires so violent. 'No,' said I, 'I never adored the sister of the magician

Mullia with so much ardour; my passion for the fair Casana never transported me to this degree: nay, Pacuncus herself never touched my heart with half the tenderness I now experience.'

## H O U R XXIX.

AT these words, I grew sensible my overthrow was completed; I blushed at my indiscretion, and intended to retire: but how vain is every reflection, when one has once proceeded to such an extreme as mine! Even that flight which I thought to have recourse to for my expedient, would have availed me nothing, and in all probability I should not have fled very far; but Quita prevented me from making that experiment. 'Where would you go?' said she, with streaming eyes: 'can you abandon me so inhumanly, after you have kindled such insupportable flames in my soul!'

No temptation can be so seducing as the tears of virgin beauty; and yet I had fortitude enough to oppose myself for some moments against their fatal prevalence. 'O Quita,' said I, 'thou dangerous fair-one, why dost thou detain me! Wouldst thou ensnare me into perjury, and tempt me to violate the vows I have plighted to my mistress! What will become of me, should any of thy companions discover our dispositions to each other, and resolve to make them public? And who can be sure that Pacuncus, as distant as she may now be from us, is not acquainted with every transaction in this place?'

'No,' replied Quita, 'you have not any thing to fear in this sequestered solitude, which secludes you from the eye of every mortal; these grottos, in the absence of the Laica, are only resorted to by those who are entrusted to guard them; and Pacuncus must have piercing eyes indeed, if they can penetrate into this recess; but were it even possible for her to know what passes in this palace, she can never be conscious of our soft enjoyments here.'

These reasons, enforced by my passion, entirely triumphed over all my scruples; I caught the fatal Quita in my arms, and we were on the point of tasting the gratifications of our inordinate desires, when I was suddenly seized by four old women, each of whom held a large two-edged knife in her hand: they were the

very persons who had formerly seized me at the fountain, and they now led me back to the hall, where our collations were always served up. They ordered me to take notice of the sixty-nine paws that projected from the wall. 'These,' said they, 'are the right-hands of the perfidious husbands of Pacuncus, and your own must now increase the number, since you have acted with the same infidelity as they.' In vain had I recourse to supplications; they were deaf to all I could alledge. One of them stretched out my arm, and another of her companions cut it off at a single stroke. The excessive pain I received from this operation made me faint away, and I became insensible of every thing that passed in the hall; but when I recovered my senses, I found myself, with my weapons and habit, laid by the fountain, and in the same place where I had formerly been bound in my sleep.

Thus was I deprived of my arm, and shamefully expelled a palace, where I might have lived in perfect happiness; could I have moderated my desires. In a word, I now beheld myself the sport of

fortune, who pursues, with unsated cruelty, a family that merited a better fate, and I determined to return at last to my own country. But, to compleat my misfortunes, when I awaked this morning, I perceived I wanted the leg which had been restored me by the magician Rullaac: I concluded by this accident, that my benefactor was dead, since the enchantment was at an end. Prince of the giants, (added Moracac) I trailed my body along in the best manner I was able, and was endeavouring to return to my father, when you compelled me to be seated at your side in this place.

The giant made no reply to this discourse; and Prince Houac had taken notice for some time, that the ynhic began to operate as he expected. He observed with pleasure, that the monster's eyes began to close, notwithstanding all his endeavours to keep them open, and at last he yielded to a profound sleep: in a word, when the second traveller had concluded his history, the senses of the giant were so locked up in slumber, that he sunk down on his side without awaking.

#### END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.





# PERUVIAN TALES.

## VOLUME THE SECOND.

### CONTINUATION OF THE HISTORY OF PRINCE HOUAC.



At this desired spectacle, the prince, animated by his intrepidity, started up with his drawn sabre in his hand; he then sprung upon the giant, and with all his might aimed a blow at his heart; but the skin of this huge barbarian was of a texture so hard and impliant that it could not be penetrated by the sabre. The prince at this was obliged to have recourse to his dagger, which being stronger and better pointed, would more easily force itself an opening; and the prince soon plunged it up to the hilt, and twisting it about in the wound, enlarged it considerably. The blood gushed out in a copious stream, that spouted to a great distance.

The giant, upon receiving his death's wound, seemed to recover a little from his stupifying slumber, and with a dreadful bellow, made all the neighbouring hills tremble: he endeavoured to raise himself from the ground, that he might be avenged on his enemy; whilst the two travellers, as well as the bearers of the litter, shuddered at the struggles of that monstrous body, and fled in a panic fear. As for the prince, he was then sensible that the gods inspired him with new fortitude; he redoubled his blows, and at last buried his dagger in the giant's heart; down sunk the enormous mass, and lay motionless on the earth; after which the four men who fled with so much precipitation, perceiving the giant dead, returned to congratulate the prince on his victory. The court was soon informed of their enemy's death, and the tidings occasioned

an universal joy. The prince, at his arrival, was met by an innumerable multitude of both sexes, who conducted him in a triumphant manner to the palace, amidst a thousand acclamations, that exalted his glory to the skies. The queen thought the victorious prince the most amiable person she had ever beheld. 'I adore the gods,' said she, embracing him, 'for enabling you to succeed in such a dangerous enterprise; and since there is now no impediment to your happiness, let our nuptial union be this day compleated in the temple.'

The ceremonials of the marriage were appointed to be celebrated at the hour of sun-set, and a proclamation was made to that effect in the great square. All the people were warmed with an emulation to contribute to the joys of that festival, and every family sacrificed some animal to the gods. They mingled the blood of the victims with the fine meal of the foodful maize, which furnished them with an excellent repast, on which they feasted even with safety: they then regaled themselves with cora, and other liquors, capable of giving a lively flow to the most languid spirits. These delicious draughts inspired them with a pleasing enthusiasm, and people of all ranks danced to the sound of instruments, and chanted melodious airs, suitable to the solemnity of the day.

Towards the evening the prince and queen came out of the palace, attended by her kindred grandees of both sexes. The bridegroom walked by the side of his royal bride, and they were joined together by a scarf, of vermilion wool folded over them, to intimate the gentle union that was to subsist between them for the future.

When they had descended into the

great square, they were surrounded with an infinite crowd of people, who testified their joy by the loudest acclamations, and marched to the temple, where the nuptial ceremonies were to be celebrated: but, in the midst of the procession, the whole assembly beheld the sky blacken on a sudden; a thick and lowering cloud hid the sun from their view, so that the day-light was almost undistinguishable. The fearful people looked upon this unexpected change in the heavens, as some dismal prodigy, and would have cried out, had they not been struck dumb with consternation.

In the mean time the cloud began to unfold, and in a few moments presented to the view of the queen and prince, the form of a man, or rather a monster of a new and peculiar species; a pair of wings were expanded from his shoulders, and though the height of his stature did not exceed two cubits, he was so thick, that four men could not clasp him round; his legs were not above four fingers long, but his arms stretched out to an enormous extent: his head was almost as large as his body, and the lineaments of his face had such a fierce and gloomy cast, as was very dreadful to behold. 'Stay, pre-sumptuous wretches,' said he, with his eyes glaring on the queen and prince, 'never imagine you shall offend me with impunity!'—'Alas!' said the queen, 'we never knew you; how then can we possibly have offended you?' The monster, instead of vouchsafing any reply, caught the queen and her bridegroom in his arms, and immediately sprang aloft into the air, bearing the two lovers, swift as the wind, over the huge ranges of mountains, and part of the immense ocean, which rolls between that continent and the Isle of Uxi.

#### H O U R   X X X .

**W**HEN this hideous creature had hurried the beauteous pair over half the vast extent of water—'Wretch,' said he to the prince, 'I must now punish thee with death, for killing my brother.'—'How could thy brother die by my hand,' replied the prince, 'since I knew him not, nor ever beheld thee till this evening?'—'Art not thou the criminal,' interrupted the monster, 'who this day assassinated the giant fifty cubits high?'—'I am not the assassin thou callest me,' replied the prince; 'but have

justly destroyed an enormous barbarian, who depopulated the province of Hattun Rucana, and had then devoured a vast number of its inhabitants; I have therefore only delivered that country from a general plague.'—'Thou art not the less a murderer of my brother, for that specious pretence,' said the formidable dwarf; 'and it is but just that he who sheds the blood of another should die himself.'

The queen interposed at that expression. 'Inhuman as thou art!' said she, 'thou acknowledgest thy brother met with a just fate, since he had barbarously slain and devoured a great number of my subjects; such unrelenting cruelty merits death: but the prince's action deserves the applause of all who love justice; and if thou art not a stranger to that virtue, thou wilt convey us back to the place from whence thou hast forced us.'

'No,' replied the monster, 'my honour summons me aloud to avenge my brother's murder.'—'If that be your resolution,' said the queen, 'let death be my lot, since I have an equal share of the guilt. The prince was induced to kill your brother by my solicitations, and to save my people from destruction: but how,' continued she, 'could a giant of so prodigious a stature be your brother, since you are not above two cubits high?'—'We were brothers only by the same father,' replied the dreadful figure, who at these words unwound the scarf that folded round the queen and prince, and precipitated the unhappy youth into the wild and watery abyss. 'Ah, barbarian!' cried the queen, all in tears, 'let me die with my beloved prince; I shall think myself infinitely happier to end my days with him, than to live any longer now I have lost him for ever.'

Yllapantac, for that was the monster's name, had very different intentions; for the youth and beauty of the queen had inflamed his soul, and he fancied he should succeed to his wish, if he could but make himself agreeable to her by his assiduities; for though he was absolutely the most hideous of all creatures, he still flattered himself, the princess would in time be favourable to his passion: he was the sovereign of the Isle of Uxi, and this dignity inflated his possessors to such a degree, as made them insensible of their defects, and it frequently dazzled the eyes even of those who were in their presence.



presence. This consideration determined him to be silent at the queen's imprecations, for fear of increasing her affliction; he therefore continued his flight to the Isle of Uxi, and then descended on his territories.

When he arrived at his palace, he conducted the Queen of Hattun Rucana into one of the most splendid apartments, and assigned her several ladies for her attendants. 'Madam,' said he, as he was preparing to retire, 'I hope you will soon forget the little violence I have committed on your inclinations, and compose your mind to the tranquillity I wish to see you enjoy. You shall not only possess whatever you can desire in this place, but shall even find your utmost wishes exceeded, by the sedulity of all about you. Consider yourself, from this moment, as queen of these dominions; and rest persuaded you have lost nothing by this separation from your throne. The Isle of Uxi is at least an equivalent for the province of Hattun Rucana; and I shall now leave you for some days, to recover yourself from the apprehensions you have suffered.'

Whilst Yllapantac expressed himself in this language, the queen entirely resigned herself to tears and lamentations, and gave no attention to his discourse; but when he retired from her presence—'Unhappy queen!' cried she, with an inextinguishable flow of grief, 'is this the delightful lot to which thou wert destined by the promise of oracles! Butah! my prince, infinitely more unfortunate than myself! wert thou permitted to revisit me, for no other reason than to present me with the sad spectacle of thy death! And did I love thee with such a tender purity only to lose thee for ever! Was an untimely death in the midst of the whelming waters reserved for thee, as the reward of thy undaunted mind, and the fatal fruit of our mutual love! Nature only adorned thee with so many amiable qualities, to present thee to my view like a lucid gleam of lightning, which dazzles and disappears in a moment!'

One of the ladies, whom the Prince of the Isle of Uxi had appointed to attend the queen, was desirous to offer her some consolation. 'My beautiful sovereign,' said she, 'if I, by sympathizing in your sorrow, could alluage its violence, I would then assure you, I am as much affected with your misfortunes as your-

self: I cannot behold the grief that overwhelms you, without a sincere anguish at such a sight, and a strong curiosity to be acquainted with the cause. Vouchsafe then to let me know the history of your sad adventures, and perhaps the relation may inspire me with the means of contributing to your repose; at least, it will confirm me in my resolution to render you all the good offices I can possibly accomplish.'

The unhappiest among mortals have some satisfaction to meet with any who appear interested in their affliction, and the relation of their misfortunes generally softens their anxiety. The queen, having tendered her acknowledgments to the lady, for her obliging compassion, acquainted her with the particulars of her life, in a manner so moving, that Puy-nuuy, for that was the lady's name, was exceedingly touched with what she heard. 'Aimable princess!' said she, 'as soon as she knew the cause of the queen's distress, when misfortunes appear remediless, it is the most prudent course to submit to a fate we find inevitable; and we ought to seek, from a generous constancy of mind, those reliefs which may preserve us from sinking under the severity of despair: you should now be the less afflicted at your calamities, because you will here regain all you have lost; and the throne of the Isle of Uxi, which you are intreated to ascend, will make you ample amends for that of Hattun Rucana. Perhaps,' added she, 'you discover much difference between the form of the prince you now bewail, and the person of Yllapantac, my sovereign: but the unlimited power of the Prince of Uxi, joined with the shining qualities of his mind, and his respectful passion for you, may render you insensible of those outward defects, which dissatisfy you at present.'

'No,' replied the queen, 'I assure you the Prince of the Isle of Uxi will never obtain any favourable regard from me; I have already devoted my heart to Prince Houac, and all my tenderness is consecrated to his memory. I am determined to waste my small remains of life in bewailing my irreparable loss of that beloved youth, and shall never behold the author of his death without the greatest horror.'—'Ah, Madam!' said the lady, 'I hope time will effect a change in your inclinations.'—'That is an event you will never behold,'

‘hold,’ replied the queen with an air of dissatisfaction; ‘and though Yllapantac had the most perfect form that ever graced a mortal, he never could appear amiable to me: the tenderness of an infamous murderer, and the sighs of a detested ravisher, will only increase my aversion to him.’

The Prince of the Isle of Uxi was far from being astonished, when he heard how little the queen was disposed to favour his passion. ‘She loved Prince Houac,’ said he; ‘and we must grant her a decent time to deplore his death: his idea by degrees will fade in her remembrance, and the sight of me will become so habitual to her, that when she at last perceives all her happiness must depend on suitable returns to my tenderness, she will yield insensibly to that consideration, and willingly dispose herself to gratify my utmost desires.’

As the prince flattered himself with such hopes as these, he very seldom visited the queen for a considerable time; and instead of entertaining her with his passion, made it his sole endeavour to ease her of her affliction.

When he had at last devoted several days to his moderation, he began by his looks and assiduous behaviour, to make her sensible of the real sentiments of his heart; and though the queen returned him no language but sighs and tears, he could not resolve to discontinue his addresses.

He had now acquiesced in this situation for the space of two moons, when one day being alone with the princess, he resolved to hazard an open declaration of his heart. With this view he had recourse to the most respectful language he could utter, to make her sensible of the passion she had kindled in his soul; he conjured her to pardon the offence she had received from him, and entreated her to delay his happiness no longer. The princess, instead of disclosing any conformity to his desires, was exasperated to a degree of fury. ‘Wretch!’ said she, ‘hast thou then forgot thy barbarous treatment of Prince Houac! Thou wert not contented to separate me from my dearest object, but didst inhumanly plunge him into the sea before my eyes: that sad spectacle will be ever present to my imagination, and therefore cease to flatter myself I shall ever interest my heart in thy hateful passion.’

This reply was sufficient to convince

the sovereign of the Isle of Uxi, that the queen’s affliction, instead of being diminished by time, would daily grow more inconsoleable. This he interpreted into an ominous presage of his unhappiness. ‘As yet,’ said he to himself, ‘I have not made any progress in that implacable heart; and I every day become more odious in her eyes: but I shall find means,’ continued he, ‘to avenge myself for the contempt with which she treats me; her person is in my power, and I will seize by violence the felicity I could not obtain by tenderness and assiduities.’

#### H O U R XXXI.

WHEN he had formed his resolve, his next care was to put it in execution; for some days, however, he disguised his criminal design in very respectful expressions, and conjured the queen anew, to be favourable to the ardours with which her charms had inspired him; but that princess having assured him, that he flattered himself with false expectations, discovered such emotions in his eyes, as exceedingly alarmed her; but as he began to renew his importunities with a greater impatience—‘Wretched creature!’ said she, with an aspect of severity, ‘your eyes and behaviour sufficiently acquaint me with your base intentions: compleat, then, the number of your crimes, and add brutality to your inhuman proceedings, that you may at last provoke the gods, by the greatest of all offences, to launch their thunder at your head.’

These reproaches, and the resolute air with which they were accompanied, made some impression on the mind of Yllapantac. ‘I did not apprehend, Madam,’ replied he, ‘that I could be chargeable with any outrage, when I only disclosed to you the flames which consume my soul, and you treat my passion with injustice, when you suspect me capable of invading your honour; for I swear by the great Rimac, I will never offer you the least violence, though I should even find it impossible to gain you by any other method! Your insensibility may indeed afflict and drive me at last to desperation, but it shall never suggest to me the least intention to triumph over your obstinate chastity.’

Every oath in the name of the great Rimac



Rimac was always accounted inviolable, and passed for the most tremendous adjuration that could possibly be taken by mortals; the most profligate and abandoned wretches conformed to it with an indispensable reverence; and the queen was now sufficiently convinced that Yllapantac would not force her for the future to yield him the satisfaction she had refused. As she therefore was entirely re-animating by this oath—'Prince,' said she, 'since I need not be apprehensive of any violence from you, let me instead treat you, for your repose, to seeme no more; my opposition to your desires will eternally torment you; and, as to my particular, your presence will only add to my affliction. Permit me, therefore, to retire to some cavern, where I may wait with impatience for death, which alone can bring my sorrows to their final period; the light of mankind is become my aversion, and the daylight itself grows insupportable to me; suffer me therefore to seclude myself from both: this is the only expedient that can be useful to me; and as it will preserve me from many pangs, so it will secure you against the apprehensions of a perjury that might be fatal to you in time.'

Yllapantac was struck with the utmost confusion at this language, and retired to his own apartment without the least reply. He then grew insensible of the severity of his fate, and abandoned himself to numberless inquietudes: 'Is this,' said he, 'all the complacency I am to expect from my passion? and did I really hear the expressions which wounded my soul with so much cruelty? Is my consent, then, to separate myself for ever from the queen, the only satisfaction I can afford her? Wretch that I am!' continued he, 'why did I, with so little hesitation, take that dreadful oath not to constrain her inclinations, since I have thereby deprived myself of the only means left me to make that imperious beauty tractable! But, since I am no longer allowed to use my own prerogative, or make it evident I am absolute master in this palace, I will comply with the importunity of the princess, and let her live sequestered in a grotto, where she shall have a sufficient leisure to breathe her sorrows in the solitude around her; and, as sighs and tears are not eligible for ever, she may one day consent to

'suffer my presence, and listen to the language of my love.'

Yllapantac returned full of these thoughts to the queen; 'Madam,' said he, as he approached her, 'since I have not the happy power to soften your aversion to me, I will convince you, at least, that I am not master of an unrelenting heart: though I am the object of your contempt, I am tenderly affected with your sorrows; I cannot see you shed those tears, and waste your blooming youth in despair, as often as I present myself before you; and since my presence is odious to you, I shall comply with your desires, and conduct you to a grotto at the extremity of this isle, where you shall be accommodated with every necessary enjoyment.'

At these words, he put himself in motion, and the queen followed him to the place he had appointed for her habitation. The entrance into the grotto was closed up with a stone of so prodigious a size, that the strength of a thousand men would not have removed it. Yllapantac struck the stone with a wand he held in his hand, and the solid mass immediately started from the cavity, and opened a free passage. The prince and queen then entered the grotto, and proceeded through a strait gallery to a vast subterranean apartment, illuminated by a number of lamps, whose oil was never exhausted, and which diffused a lustre equal to the brightest day. 'You are now, Madam,' said Yllapantac, 'in the melancholy mansion to which you was so desirous to retire. You had an inclination to withdraw yourself from the view of men; I have shewn myself perfectly conformable to your wishes; and no mortal shall discompose you with his presence here: but as I am sensible to what mortification a young lady, secluded in a lonely prison, may be exposed, I shall sometimes return, though with no other intention than to know your sentiments of such a solitude, and whether you will not choose rather to reside in my palace, and consent to make me happy in your nuptials.'

'My lord,' said the queen, 'let no the reply I am now to make inflame your displeasure against me: it is my determination to waste the remainder of my days in sorrow; here will I devote my sad imagination to the dear prince whom I have so unfortunately lost;

'hold,' replied the queen with an air of dissatisfaction; 'and though Yllapantac had the most perfect form that ever graced a mortal, he never could appear amiable to me: the tenderness of an infamous murderer, and the sighs of a detested ravisher, will only increase my aversion to him.'

The Prince of the Isle of Uxi was far from being astonished, when he heard how little the queen was disposed to favour his passion. 'She loved Prince Houac,' said he; 'and we must grant her a decent time to deplore his death: his idea by degrees will fade in her remembrance, and the sight of me will become so habitual to her, that when she at last perceives all her happiness must depend on suitable returns to my tenderness, she will yield insensibly to that consideration, and willingly dispose herself to gratify my utmost desires.'

As the prince flattered himself with such hopes as these, he very seldom visited the queen for a considerable time; and instead of entertaining her with his passion, made it his sole endeavour to ease her of her affliction.

When he had at last devoted several days to his moderation, he began by his looks and assiduous behaviour, to make her sensible of the real sentiments of his heart; and though the queen returned him no language but sighs and tears, he could not resolve to discontinue his addresses.

He had now acquiesced in this situation for the space of two moons, when one day being alone with the princess, he resolved to hazard an open declaration of his heart. With this view he had recourse to the most respectful language he could utter, to make her sensible of the passion she had kindled in his soul; he conjured her to pardon the offence she had received from him, and entreated her to delay his happiness no longer. The princess, instead of disclosing any conformity to his desires, was exasperated to a degree of fury. 'Wretch!' said she, 'hast thou then forgot thy barbarous treatment of Prince Houac! Thou wert not contented to separate me from my dearest object, but didst inhumanly plunge him into the sea before my eyes: that sad spectacle will be ever present to my imagination, and therefore cease to flatter thyself I shall ever interest my heart in thy hateful passion.'

This reply was sufficient to convince

the sovereign of the Isle of Uxi, that the queen's affliction, instead of being diminished by time, would daily grow more inconsolable. This he interpreted into an ominous presage of his unhappiness. 'As yet,' said he to himself, 'I have not made any progress in that implacable heart; and I every day become more odious in her eyes: but I shall find means,' continued he, 'to avenge myself for the contempt with which she treats me; her person is in my power, and I will seize by violence the felicity I could not obtain by tenderness and assiduities.'

#### H O U R XXXI.

WHEN he had formed his resolve, his next care was to put it in execution; for some days, however, he disguised his criminal design in very respectful expressions, and conjured the queen anew, to be favourable to the ardours with which her charms had inspired him; but that princess having assured him, that he flattered himself with false expectations, discovered such emotions in his eyes, as exceedingly alarmed her; but as he began to renew his importunities with a greater impatience—'Wretched creature!' said she, with an aspect of severity, 'your eyes and behaviour sufficiently acquaint me with your base intentions: compleat, then, the number of your crimes, and add brutality to your inhuman proceedings, that you may at last provoke the gods, by the greatest of all offences, to launch their thunder at your head.'

These reproaches, and the resolute air with which they were accompanied, made some impression on the mind of Yllapantac. 'I did not apprehend, Madam,' replied he, 'that I could be chargeable with any outrage, when I only disclosed to you the flames which consume my soul, and you treat my passion with injustice, when you suspect me capable of invading your honour; for I swear by the great Rimac, I will never offer you the least violence, though I should even find it impossible to gain you by any other method! Your insensibility may indeed afflict and drive me at last to desperation, but it shall never suggest to me the least intention to triumph over your obstinate chastity.'

Every oath in the name of the great Rimac



Rimac was always accounted inviolable, and passed for the most tremendous adjuration that could possibly be taken by mortals; the most profligate and abandoned wretches conformed to it with an indispensable reverence; and the queen was now sufficiently convinced that Yllapantac would not force her for the future to yield him the satisfaction she had refused. As she therefore was entirely reanimated by this oath—'Prince,' said she, 'since I need not be apprehensive of any violence from you, let me instead treat you, for your repose, to see me no more; my opposition to your desires will eternally torment you; and, as to my particular, your presence will only add to my affliction. Permit me, therefore, to retire to some cavern, where I may wait with impatience for death, which alone can bring my sorrows to their final period; the light of mankind is become my aversion, and the daylight itself grows insupportable to me; suffer me therefore to seclude myself from both: this is the only expedient that can be useful to me; and as it will preserve me from many pangs, so it will secure you against the apprehensions of a perjury that might be fatal to you in time.'

Yllapantac was struck with the utmost confusion at this language, and retired to his own apartment without the least reply. He then grew insensible of the severity of his fate, and abandoned himself to numberless inquietudes: 'Is this,' said he, 'all the complacency I am to expect from my passion? and did I really hear the expressions which wounded my soul with so much cruelty? Is my consent, then, to separate myself for ever from the queen, the only satisfaction I can afford her? Wretch that I am!' continued he, 'why did I, with so little hesitation, take that dreadful oath not to constrain her inclinations, since I have thereby deprived myself of the only means left me to make that imperious beauty tractable! But, since I am no longer allowed to use my own prerogative, or make it evident I am absolute master in this palace, I will comply with the importunity of the princess, and let her live sequestered in a grotto, where she shall have a sufficient leisure to breathe her sorrows in the solitude around her; and, as sighs and tears are not eligible for ever, she may one day consent to

suffer my presence, and listen to the language of my love.'

Yllapantac returned full of these thoughts to the queen; 'Madam,' said he, as he approached her, 'since I have not the happy power to soften your aversion to me, I will convince you, at least, that I am not master of an unrelenting heart: though I am the object of your contempt, I am tenderly affected with your sorrows; I cannot see you shed those tears, and waste your blooming youth in despair, as often as I present myself before you; and since my presence is odious to you, I shall comply with your desires, and conduct you to a grotto at the extremity of this isle, where you shall be accommodated with every necessary enjoyment.'

At these words, he put himself in motion, and the queen followed him to the place he had appointed for her habitation. The entrance into the grotto was closed up with a stone of so prodigious a size, that the strength of a thousand men would not have removed it. Yllapantac struck the stone with a wand he held in his hand, and the solid mass immediately started from the cavity, and opened a free passage. The prince and queen then entered the grotto, and proceeded through a strait gallery to a vast subterranean apartment, illuminated by a number of lamps, whose oil was never exhausted, and which diffused a lustre equal to the brightest day. 'You are now, Madam,' said Yllapantac, 'in the melancholy mansion to which you was so desirous to retire. You had an inclination to withdraw yourself from the view of men; I have shewn myself perfectly conformable to your wishes; and no mortal shall discompose you with his presence here: but as I am sensible to what mortification a young lady, secluded in a lonely prison, may be exposed, I shall sometimes return, though with no other intention than to know your sentiments of such a solitude, and whether you will not choose rather to reside in my palace, and consent to make me happy in your nuptials.'

'My lord,' said the queen, 'let no the reply I am now to make inflame your displeasure against me: it is my determination to waste the remainder of my days in sorrow; here will I devote my sad imagination to the dear prince whom I have so unfortunately lost;

‘lost; and should the condition of life to which I now resign myself appear unnatural to you, rest persuaded, however, that I will arm my soul with perseverance, as being assured that the calamities to which I may still be reserved, are nothing in comparison to those I have already sustained.’

These words filled Yllapantac with despair and indignation; but he did not think it proper to make any reply, lest he should exasperate the queen, and render himself more odious to her: he therefore retired, and left her alone in the grot; after which he closed the opening with the stone he had before removed.

The revolution of one moon was fully completed before he returned to the queen, as he had intimated when he parted from her. He then inquired, if she still preserved the melancholy remembrance of the dead, before the services and conversation of the living; and whether the reflections she had so much time to make, had not disposed her to treat his passion with some regard? But when she had replied, that she would always persist in her former refusal, he left her once more, without troubling her with any new solicitations.

The Prince of the Isle of Uxi, at his return, perceived a strange scene of affairs had been transacted in his palace during his absence; it had now no inhabitants but bears, for all the officers of the court, the ladies and domesticks, were transformed into animals of this species. Yllapantac, confounded at this strange spectacle, and the horrid cries he heard around him, started back several steps; thrice he made the neighbouring mountains resound with his dreadful exclamations; thrice did he grasp up the sand from the ground, and scatter it in the air; and then, with uplifted arms, he broke out into this invocation—‘O ye immortal gods, from whom I derive all my power, and whose efficacious succours I have constantly received! Great authors of charms and incantations! You who communicate to those you love the knowledge and virtue of plants and herbs; awful lords of wind, and rain, and thunder! You who enable me to make the mountains shake, and the earth tremble to its center, deign to aid me in this my hour of need! I am now reduced to the necessity of imploring your protection against an audacious wretch who encroaches

‘upon my prerogatives. I see,’ continued the Prince of Uxi, ‘my prayers are not in vain; you vouchsafe me the aids for which I supplicate your divinites, and I shall be avenged on my enemies with this sabre you have so seasonably sent me.’

He seemed to have some reason for these last words; because whilst he was speaking, the wand he held in his hand changed into a two-edged sabre, and he was so animated by this sudden relief, that he marched up and down with a furious air, and a heart fired with indignation, to seek the insolent foe who presumed to exercise so much power in his palace.

In a little time he beheld Prince Houac at some distance, with an enchanted lance in his hand; his fury redoubled at the sight of such an unexpected enemy, and he flew to him with an intention to chastise him for his temerity; but, upon a nearer approach, instead of assuming a menacing tone, or attempting to strike his foe, he threw his own sabre on the earth, and with an air of submission and humility, addressed him in these terms—‘O prince! the advantage is this day in your favour, and you have the same superiority over me as I exercised against you, before you possessed the lance of the prophet Huamachu: you may impose what commands on me you please; I am now your slave, and only attentive to render you my obedience.’

‘I am not at all solicitous for thy obedience,’ replied the prince; ‘and only mean to know the extent of thy crime, that I may punish thee suitably to thy demerit! Tell me this moment, where I may find the Queen of Hattun Rucana.’—‘My lord,’ replied Yllapantac, ‘that princess was resolute to seclude herself in a subterranean grot, from the view of mankind; and she has continued in that retreat for the space of one moon: you are the only object of her remembrance, and she bitterly laments your loss, without the least intermission.’

Prince Houac was exceedingly enraged to hear of the affliction of the princess, and became apprehensive Yllapantac had offered her some violence: ‘Tell me, thou wretch,’ said he, ‘hast thou been so presumptuous, as to make any attempt on her honour? Be assured, thy life shall be responsible for



thy behaviour to her.'—'My lord,' replied Yllapantac, 'be not dejected without a cause. It is true, I have entertained a tender passion for the queen; nay, I have proceeded farther, and solicited her to be favourable to my affection; but though her refusals and disdain gave me a sensible mortification, they never prompted me to violate the laws of justice; and though I had power to espouse her by compulsion, I ever looked upon such a proceeding with horror; and to prevent my being hurried by my impatient desires to any dishonourable actions, which I should have condemned the next moment, I bound myself by a most inviolable oath, not to obtain the least of her favours by constraint.'

## H O U R XXXII.

THIS discourse relieved the prince in some measure from his fears. 'Conduct me to the place,' said he, 'where thou hast lodged the Queen of Hattun Rucana; I shall then see whether her relation of this affair be agreeable to thine.'

Yllapantac obeyed the prince's command, and guided him in the way he was to take. When they arrived at the grot, Houac thrust his lance against the stone that closed up the entrance, and was immediately presented with a free passage. They then descended into the apartment; and found the queen seated on a bed of rushes, and lamenting the loss of her beloved Houac. The prince was affected beyond expression at this moving sight, and with an air of the most endearing tenderness, approached the afflicted fair-one. 'Generous queen,' said he, 'let not sorrow any longer prey on that lovely form: you now behold your faithful Houac before you; that Houac, whom you have generously bewailed so many tedious days and nights. You are now at liberty to leave this place, where you have been interred alive, and from this moment you are restored to perfect freedom. The enchanted lance you behold in my hand has delivered you from your tyrant, and, by rendering me superior to all his power, has enabled me to punish him for his crime.'

O heavens! (cried Acllahua in this part of her relation) who can describe

the astonishment that seized the Queen of Hattun Rucana, when she beheld the prince, whom she so long had numbered among the dead! Her senses were lost, and all the faculties of her soul became suspended at the enchanting view: but when she had recovered herself a little from her first surprise—'I cannot possibly be deceived,' said she, 'in Prince Houac, nor doubt that I now behold him with these eyes; the transports that rise in my soul convince me this is no illusion; I at first imagined some fleeting shade presented itself before me, and suspected it to be a new artifice of the Prince of Uxi.'

'Ah! my charming queen,' interrupted the prince, 'you indeed behold your spouse and lover; you see the man who, for your sake, accomplished the adventure of the channel, and destroyed the giant who devoured your subjects; let me rather say, you behold a prince who was captivated by your charms the first moment you presented yourself to his view, and from whose remembrance you have never been absent since that happy period; you view the fondest lover, who adores you with all the purity of an unspotted passion.'

'Alas!' replied the queen, 'I despair'd ever to behold you again, and intended to devote myself to perpetual tears and sorrow.'—'If our separation,' interrupted the prince, 'has cost you many precious tears, share now with me transports with which my happiness inspires me. Who could have believed, when Yllapantac threw me into the sea, that the gods only separated us to prove our constancy, and to increase our future felicity?'

The Queen of Hattun Rucana was exceedingly affected with the amiable tenderness of the prince's soul; but her native modesty, or rather her impatience, to know by what means he had been restored to her from the ocean wherein she saw him sink, prevented her from resigning herself to the warmth of all her transports. 'Dearest prince,' said she, 'I believe you have met with various adventures since our separation; let me have the satisfaction of hearing the particulars.'

'Illustrious queen,' replied Prince Houac, 'you shall be informed of every circumstance. After Yllapantac had precipitated me into the immense waste of waters, I exerted all my skill in swimming

swimming the rest of that day and the succeeding night; but as I was driven about, at the mercy of the waves, I imagined myself floating in the arms of death. When the morning appeared, I raised my head above the surges, as high as I was able, to try if I could discover land from any quarter; but my eyes only wandered over a boundless expanse of ocean; however, I continued to swim with new vigour, till at last my strength began to fail: I became motionless and insensible by degrees, and as I was almost suffocated with the water that flowed down my throat, I undoubtedly sunk to the bottom.

It was impossible for me to compute how long I descended in that abyss; but the event convinced me I was neither dead nor in a dream. In a word, I found myself in a palace which seemed entirely formed by water, for the walls were of the colour of that element, and though they appeared to have little solidity to the eye, and were as transparent as the fluid which composed them, they yet rose around me like a rampart of marble: the pavement was sowed with pearls, and the light which shone through the palace equalled the radiance of the full moon.

If I was struck with the wonders I beheld, my astonishment increased, to see an edifice of that vast extent uninhabited: I wandered through fifteen apartments, without meeting any person; but in the middle of the sixteenth, I beheld under a pavilion, formed by a cascade of water, a bed of coral, covered with sea-reeds, on which a young lady reposed, with her head resting on her right arm. A sheet of water, lucid as crystal, composed a kind of veil, which flowed over her whole form, without touching any part. I could discover, through this liquid robe, that her eyes were closed, and became for some time doubtful whether I beheld a statue or a living creature; but when I made a nearer approach, I took notice she breathed. This conviction made me fix my eyes with great attention on the amiable object before me; her person was shaped to perfection; but all her charms made no impression on my heart: — O lovely queen!" cried Houac, in this part of his history, "you alone was then present to my soul, and my remembrance of your per-

fections was sufficient to render me insensible to all beauty but your own; besides, I was seized with such an exceeding chillness, as made me imagine my blood would be frozen in my veins.

I was extremely curious to know how I could possibly be conveyed to so extraordinary a palace, and why I beheld but one person in such a spacious pile. I wished to see the lady wake from her slumber, and vainly waited a considerable time in that expectation; I endeavoured to make myself heard by walking briskly over the pavement; but all my motions were to no purpose, for that pavement did not reflect any sound. I clapped my hands together very strongly, but could not produce the least noise; I then attempted to raise my voice, though to as little effect; for the same stillness continued. "Surely," said I to myself, "I am either in some enchanted palace, or this must be the mansion where the God of Silence himself resides."

I was at last unable to restrain my curiosity any longer, and therefore advancing to the bed, I thrust my arm through the thin flow of water, which drew a veil over the sleeping lady; I then took her by the hand, and gently pressing it, in hopes that action would accomplish the effect I desired; but I was deceived once more, for she still continued in her slumber, and though I strongly grasped her hand at last, she remained as insensible as ever.

I began to despair of any possibility to awake her, when I perceived she was fastened to the bed by an exceeding fine thread, and imagined it might be the talisman which locked up her senses in that sound repose. I untied the knot, at the same instant she opened her eyes, and then raising herself on her bed, addressed me in this manner.

"What do I now behold!" said she; "art thou an airy phantom, or a human creature, or may I call thee an inhabitant of the sea?" These questions did not consist of any articulate sounds collected by my ear, but were rather a train of thoughts infused into my mind, and my reply was entirely of the same nature. We conversed in a silent language, yet had a perfect intelligence of our mutual meaning.

"Madam," said I, bending one knee on the ground, "in whatever class of being



"being you may exist, you see before you an unfortunate prince, who greatly needs your assistance, and is not altogether undeserving of the compassion he implores. After I had passed through a long series of adversity on earth, I have been exposed two days and a night to the mercy of the waves, and at last sunk into the infinite abyss; I then imagined death would be my inevitable doom, when I suddenly found myself in this astonishing palace, where I now throw myself at your feet, in confidence of a favourable reception: have pity on my destitute condition, and acquaint me in what part of the creation I now appear; instruct me, amiable creature! how I may return to the earth; and if you have any knowledge of what passes among mortals, inform me where the Queen of Hattun Rucana is conveyed."

"O strange!" replied the lady; "it is impossible for me to satisfy you in all the particulars of your curiosity, and I can only inform you, that you are now in the palace of the King of Silence, who is the sovereign of all the inhabitants of the deep: as for me, though I differ in species from him, for I am of the race of the children of men, yet I am espoused to that monarch. One day, as I was bathing near the sea-shore, a large animal rose out of the waves in a human form, and clasped me in his arms; I was immediately struck with horror, and fainted away; but when I recovered from that state of insensibility, I found myself in this palace, where I have lived for the space of five years; and though I am in some measure compelled to reside here, I submit to that necessity without reluctance, and have replenished this mansion with an offspring so numerous, that no nation can equal it in that particular. I place my chief felicity in the sight and presence of the king my consort; and the dutiful submission of my children, with the delightful union of our souls, make this palace as dear to me as the land of my nativity; the never-ending calm which reigns all around me, is my constant joy. The king my husband, from time to time, returns to the sea, to preserve order and subordination in these his dominions; and lest I should pass away the hours of his absence in melancholy musings, he closes my eyes in sleep, and gently binds me with a thread, that

defends me from all the insults I might suffer from the fish; for they cannot, with any complacency, behold a human creature the partner of their monarch's bed, and the charm continues in all its efficacy, till the thread happens to be untied.

"I have now," continued the Queen of Silence, "made you sensible where you are, and it is all the information I can possibly give you: however, I suppose you were brought to this place by a conveyance, which had some limit to mine; the king my spouse undoubtedly beheld you when you were swimming in the sea, and snatched you from the arms of death to this mansion; at his return it will appear whether my conjecture be true; for I think you never could have penetrated so far without such a conductor. The distance from the pavement of this palace to the surface of the sea, is above seventeen thousand cubits in extent; and what probability is there, you could traverse such an immense depth of water in safety, unless you be something more than mortal?"

## H O U R XXXIII.

"MADAM," said I, "you may believe me, when I assure you, I have not any intercourse with spiritual beings, nor more knowledge of the fish, than what formerly occurred to me by catching them for my food." But whilst I was expressing myself in this manner, the whole palace seemed to shake, and a prodigious shoal of large fish tumultuously rolled in the apartment, and insolently required the queen to resign me to their rage. "We will devour him," said they, "in the same manner that he has feasted on our companions: for this wretch," added they, in their peculiar language, "has himself confessed his crime, and we will have justice on the murderer of our species."

"Great God!" cries the queen, "did you only preserve this unhappy stranger from the danger of the deep, to expose him to a death more cruel and tormenting! No," continued she, at the same time taking me by the hand, and as an instance of the protection she intended me—"I will never be so inhuman as to deliver him to these furious ene-

'mies; and if I have not power sufficient to preserve him, I am determined to share his fate.'

'Generous queen,' interrupted I, 'this language evidently flows from your fears; and I so little dread the rage of these monsters, that with your permission, I will hew them in pieces: let them approach me, and they shall soon be sensible of the force of my arm.' Upon which I was preparing to draw my sabre, and bid defiance to my foes; but the queen, who knew the perils to which we were exposed, conjured me not to assault them. 'This,' said she, with tears in her eyes, 'must effectually destroy us both, and all your fortitude will be unavailing; for should you destroy but one of these creatures, you will immediately be overwhelmed with millions.—Presumptuous wretches!' added she, addressing herself to this formidable host, 'I will never suffer you to violate the hospitality due to this stranger; and if there be any justice in your pretensions, await the arrival of your sovereign.'—'We will not be delayed a moment,' replied they, 'and the murderer shall either be surrendered to us, or we will execute justice upon him, in spite of all opposition.'—'Insolent animals,' said the queen, 'if you can treat the consort of your king with so much irreverence, be prudent enough, at least, to tremble at the vengeance your crime will draw upon you.'—'Our monarch may exterminate all our tribes, if he be so disposed,' replied they; 'but we will, however, have the consolation of avenging our slain companions before we die.'

'Ah, unhappy prince!' cried the queen, 'by what fatality wert thou misguided to this palace! Though thou hast escaped many dangers on earth, and eluded the death that threatened thee when thou wert swimming in the ocean; yet, alas! thou canst not possibly evade the fury of these monsters.' Her affliction at the same instant became insupportable, and with a languishing look, that expressed the agitation of her soul, she withdrew her hand from mine, and immediately fainted away on her bed.

If a spectacle so moving gave new vigour to my courage, it likewise increased the insolence of these sea-monsters; two among them of an enormous size, darted at me with open mouths to devour me,

and inevitable death seemed to menace me that moment; but my rage was so predominant; that I grew altogether insensible of fear, and as formidable as my enemies appeared, they might see by my aspect, they gave me no apprehensions. I drew my sabre, and with the first blow struck off the head of one from his body, and cut the other in two with the second.

The blood, which flowed in full streams, was so far from intimidating my adversaries, that it only exasperated them the more; the fire flashed from their eyes, and they crowded upon me with implacable fury. I defended myself from their approach to the utmost of my ability, and in a little time above two hundred of those animals lay dead on the pavement.

Their impetuosity was not the least abated by all their slaughter; and as their numbers were every moment increasing, they must certainly have destroyed me at last: I could no longer assault them or defend myself, and was already seized, in more parts of my body than one, when the King of Silence, who had been a spectator of this scene of blood, arrived very seasonably with all the retinue of his court: his presence struck my enemies with a general consternation; they shuddered and drooped before him, and had recourse to sudden flight for their preservation: upon which the palace instantly appeared in its former tranquillity.

My mind was still agitated with that disorder, which usually succeeds great and dangerous events; and the Monarch of Silence, who took notice of my discomposure, beheld me with such an air of smiles and affability, that it seemed as if he had been intimate with me all his life-time. He made a very short speech with his eyes, that sufficiently acquainted me with his meaning. 'Young stranger,' said he, 'I have a regard for your welfare;' upon which he approached the bed where the queen lay, and raising her from her state of insensibility, took her gently by the hand, and led her into an adjoining hall, at the head of all his court.

As for me, I was left alone among the dead bodies of the monsters I had slaughtered, and began to deliberate with myself, whether I should continue in that place, or go and prostrate myself at the king's feet; but I received a message that moment, which relieved me from my perplexity: a young virgin, or rather a  
sea



sea nymph, came to acquaint me that her sovereign had something to say to me; upon which I immediately followed her, and advanced into the hall.

I was still disordered by my late adventure, and one uneasy thought introduced a train of others equally disagreeable. The hall glittered with a light as radiant as the beams of a summer sun; and the walls, which were formed like the rest of the apartments out of the fluid element, reflected the lustre like a mirror of the finest polish, and to such a degree, that I was perfectly dazzled with the splendour; but none of the objects before me overpowered me so much as a golden cornice, which formed a contour round the hall, and with several ranges of seats of the same metal, flamed with such a profusion of rays, as were quite insupportable to my weak view: on these seats a vast number of young nymphs had placed themselves, and after I had beheld them a few moments with the utmost astonishment, I began to recover my usual presence of mind, and advanced to that part of the hall where the king and queen were seated on thrones of emeralds, interwoven with the delicious green of the softest sea-moss: I embraced the monarch's knees with all the reverence I could express. 'Great King of Silence,' said I, 'whose magnificence equals that of the gods, I lay myself low at your feet, and with all humility implore your protection; for the gracious air with which your majesty has already received me, gives me comfortable hopes, that you will not deny me the succours I intreat.'

At the close of these words, the king raised me from the earth, and caused me to be seated on his right hand, a little below the throne. 'Young stranger,' said he, 'before I acquaint you with the fortune to which I am preparing to raise you, I must desire you to relate me the particulars of your life; for doubtless your adventures must have been very extraordinary and engaging: I have no occasion, however, to be informed of the accident which conducted you to this palace, nor of the pretended motives that made the fish your enemies; for it is my part to assure you, that as I found you senseless and fainting in the sea, and on the point of expiring, I was touched with compassion at your danger, and conveyed you to this place. When you had re-gained your

senses, I had an inclination to divert myself with the surprize I knew would affect you, and was really pleased with your solicitude to awake my queen; nor was I less entertained with the animosity between you and the fish; and, indeed, I commend you for convincing them, that the intrepidity of a single man is superior to all the courage the inhabitants of the sea can boast. I am only desirous to know what has happened to you during your continuance on earth, and how you could possibly be plunged in the ocean at such an immense distance from either the isles or continent, and without the least appearance of any shipwreck.'

I satisfied the king's curiosity, and made him sensible I had been the sport of fortune almost from my nativity. After I had related all the particulars—'My lord,' said I, 'though I have been so unfortunate on earth, I am still desirous to re-visit it once more; it is impossible for me to live without the Queen of Hattun Rucana; and could I be so happy as to see her again, I would then consent to die with pleasure.'

'Ah, prince!' interrupted the King of Silence, 'do you know what you desire? It is to no purpose for you to think of the Queen of Hattun Rucana any longer; for, by the portrait you have drawn of that princess, I conclude, the Prince of the Isle of Uxi is enamoured of her charms, and threw you into the sea to facilitate her consent to espouse him. The queen would undoubtedly have rejected his suit, as long as she could be certain you were living; but when she becomes sensible she cannot entertain any reasonable hopes to behold you again, she will grow favourable to her ravisher; but though she should refuse to be the partner of his bed, Yllapantac, as he is master of her person, will by compulsion obtain that from her which she, perhaps, would not willingly have granted him: a competitor of his extraordinary power will never want means to conquer the reluctance of a woman; and therefore let me desire you to consider the mortification you would suffer, were you to see the person you so tenderly love in the arms of another; to what a height would your despair rise, to behold a rival happy at the expence of your dearest repose, and to find yourself, at the same time, destitute of all possibility

‘to avenge your wrongs? Believe me, prince, it would be prudence in you, to shun so tormenting an inquietude; we can here furnish you with joys sufficient to reconcile you to the loss of an inconstant mistress: I will espouse you to a sister of mine, who surpasses all the ladies on earth in blooming beauty; and I will raise you a palace as magnificent as you can possibly desire; in a word, you shall enjoy all imaginable gratifications, if you will but continue among us.’

## H O U R XXXIV.

‘**G**REAT monarch!’ answered I, ‘let me intreat you, not to accuse the Queen of Hattun Rucana with infidelity; for, besides that it proves injurious to my passion, the gods themselves would charge you with falsifying their decrees: their oracles have declared, she should espouse the man who could leap cross the channel and slay the giant; I have accomplished both these conditions, and it is now incumbent on them to manifest their veracity. I repose my confidence in the punctuality of their oracles, and firmly depend on the recompence they have promised: resolve, then, my lord, no longer to oppose their supreme will; and if you have any veneration for those awful and immortal beings, permit me to return as soon as possible to the earth.’

‘Prince,’ replied the King of Silence, ‘I had no intention to offend you in the tender article of your love, when I intimated, that the Queen of Hattun Rucana, influenced by the supposition of your death, might be favourable to the Prince of Uxi: the dispositions of that sex are sufficiently known, and there are very few who can be generous enough to continue their passion for a dead lover; and among the few, who at first might be capable of that resolution, where are those who preserve it inviolable? They always think a living admirer more entitled to their regards than a lover in the grave. I may add too, that I had no design to tax the gods with any variation from their promises; for I am persuaded, whatever difficulties may interpose, they will never want means to accomplish every particular of their engagements. But what assurance have you,

‘that you are the person pointed out by the oracle, and that there was but one man who could leap over that chasm in the earth, and only one giant to be slain in the territories of the Queen of Hattun Rucana? Give yourself, therefore, no perplexity as to the manner in which the gods intend to accomplish their promises; but leave it to them to verify their own oracles; and if you have any reason to fancy yourself remanded to the earth to celebrate your espousals with the Queen of Hattun Rucana, be as confident you are detained here by another oracle, who has pre-ordained you to tender your vows to my sister; that conjunction is to give birth to a posterity of males sufficiently numerous to afford husbands to all my daughters. My father, before his death, consulted the oracle of the Desolate Island, touching mine and my sister’s fate; and was informed, I should find a young virgin bathing in the sea; that I should make myself master of her person, and afterwards espouse her; in consequence of which event I was to become the father of a numerous race of daughters: in a word, the oracle further declared, my sister should be joined in marriage to a young man, whose life I was destined to preserve; and from that alliance should spring an offspring of males, equal in number to my daughters, and who were all to become my sons-in-law. You see, prince,’ continued the King of Silence, ‘that if in one respect I seem to oppose the will of the gods, I conform myself in another, to the command they have given me; and I think this circumstance may justly induce you to take up your residence in this place.’

This was a point so very perplexing, that I knew not what to think of the contrarieties between these oracles, and therefore continued speechless for some time; but I observed the king extremely discomposed at my silence, and it was not without reason that he suspected I would refuse to espouse his sister: but the matter passed out of all doubt when I renewed my entreaties to be restored to the earth; and yet he was not so much displeased as I had reason to apprehend. ‘Any one but myself,’ said he, with a serene aspect, ‘would be offended at a refusal like yours; but I have an aversion to all constraint upon  
‘the



the inclinations, and do not so much as pretend to detain you here against your consent: upon this he represented to me anew all the advantages he could possibly alledge, to make me accept of his proposal; but those allurements were ineffectual, and I frequently assured him he could not in justice expect my compliance on the strength of the reason he had urged. Vanquished in some measure, at last, by my inflexibility—'The affair we have debated,' said he, rising from his throne, 'deserves to be maturely considered; but at present let us turn our thoughts to something of more importance: you must needs be extremely fatigued with your contention with the waves, and your enemies the fish; and I myself am a little indisposed with my long voyage; let us, therefore, take some refreshment, and then retire to our own necessary rest.'

Our collation was indeed the lightest, the most frugal, and the shortest, I ever saw; for we were only served with a large pearly cup filled with an exceeding bright water: the king and queen drank first, and then presented the cup to me; after which the whole court followed our example.

When we had finished our repast, for such indeed it might be justly called, since the liquor we drank revived and strengthened us in a surprising manner, the King of Silence conducted me into an apartment prepared for my reception; it was a very spacious chamber, of the same structure with the rest of the palace, and beaming with perpetual day; at the upper end was a bed, formed by a mass of innumerable pearls, and strewed with moss: I laid myself down, and sunk into a deep slumber.

I had no sooner risen the next morning, but I saw the king enter my chamber: 'Prince,' said he, when he approached me, 'I have been thinking it would not be improper if you paid the princess my sister a visit, for she may possibly give us some satisfactory account of the oracle which has predicted the circumstances of her marriage.'

I was extremely shocked at this proposal. 'My lord,' said I, 'with gratitude I acknowledge myself indebted to you for my life; for without your assistance I should certainly have perished in the mighty waters; and I entreat the gods to recompense you for this obligation: but, oh! forbear to

shade the glory of that action by the violence you prepare to offer me! I am sensible, when you desire me to see the princess, the clearing up of the oracle is the least of your intentions; you, perhaps, would use me as the magician Mullia treated Moracac, whose history I have related to your majesty: you flatter yourself, Sir, that my heart will fall a victim to the charms of the Princess of Silence; or, if they should not have the effect suitable to your expectations, you then intend to detain me here: I am therefore determined never to see that lady, unless you take the most solemn oath not to force my inclinations; but, on the contrary, to re-convey me to the earth, if, after I have beheld the princess, I should still continue faithful to the Queen of Hattun Rucana.'

The king could not avoid smiling at my apprehensions: 'I am sensible,' said he, 'that men are insincere and artful, and may very justly be diffident of one another; they have always a propensity to mutual injuries, and this disposition employs them the greatest part of their lives; they ought to be hedged with thorns, to protect them from the approaches of their own species: but in this region, sincerity and rectitude of mind are hereditary; we love justice, and are always compassionate to the afflicted; endeavouring to imitate the gods in these particulars, as much as your species resemble one another in barbarity and injustice. I therefore swear by the god Pachacamac, which is the most tremendous of all oaths, that when I desire you to visit my sister, I have no intention to ensnare you, or lay the least restraint on your inclinations. I have recollected she has lately consulted the oracle of the Isle of Desolation on her future marriage, and may possibly have been informed of some particulars capable of solving all the difficulties that perplex us.'

At the close of this discourse, he took me by the hand with the most obliging condescension, and afterwards conducted me to the palace of the princess, through an exceeding long gallery, struck out in the immensity of the waters. The palace itself consisted only of one chamber, but so vastly spacious, that the objects at one end were undistinguishable at the other. In the middle of this apartment I beheld a large basin of marble, which was

was the source of four streams, or rather so many rivers, that rolled their silver waves through the same number of channels, and divided the chamber into as many equal parts; one of which had the appearance of an admirable *parterre*, diversified with the beauteous glow of innumerable flowers, though in reality they were no more than amiable illusions, effected by a vast number of spouting rills, disposed with surprising art and symmetry. In the second compartment, a number of large water-falls, adjusted with the same perfection, represented a verdant forest, where all the birds who frequent the sea made their retreat. The third division was adorned with artificial grottos, beautified with the finest shells and stones; and the last was the apartment where the princess and all her nymphs resided: it was impossible to behold this delightful place without believing it to be the dwelling of some divinity, and feeling secret impressions of joy and admiration.

## H O U R XXXV.

THE princess was reposing herself on a couch; but the moment we approached her she rose, and caused us to be seated; after which, she addressed herself to the King of Silence in these terms—‘Before I ask you, my dear brother, to what motive I owe this visit, and who is that agreeable youth who accompanies you, give me leave to present you with some refreshment;’ at the same time one of the nymphs, by her order, brought us a cup of water, which in those dominions was the only food. When we had finished our repast, the king, turning to his sister, expressed himself to this effect:

‘Princess,’ said he, ‘you desire to know the cause of this visit, and who is the youth you see in my company?’ He then acquainted her in what manner he preserved my life, and repeated all the particulars which had happened since I had been conveyed to his palace: he likewise represented to her the seeming contradiction in the two oracles relating to her marriage and mine, and then desired to hear her sentiments on that circumstance.

The princess, who had listened with great attention to her brother’s discourse, made him this reply: ‘I should not

receive any dissatisfaction, brother, if the person destined to espouse me should resemble Prince Houac; but notwithstanding the circumstance of your saving his life, he is not to be my husband, for he discovers not the least similitude in shape, age, or features, to the person allotted me. When I made a voyage some time since to the Island of Desolation, in order to consult the oracle about the accomplishment of my future marriage, the sacred tree returned me this answer—“Cast your eyes now on the man, pre-ordained by the gods for your nuptials;” at the same instant the tree opened, and I beheld in the hollow of the trunk a large silver mirror, which represented to my view the destined partner of my bed; the idea of his form, which I then surveyed with great attention, is still present to my imagination, and bears not any resemblance to Prince Houac; and therefore, if you would be directed by me, dismiss him to the earth, for the gods may be incensed if you detain him, and their displeasure may prove fatal to you in the event.’

This discourse was sufficient to change the king’s first intention of espousing me to his sister: ‘Let us return, prince,’ said he, ‘to my palace; and since you are determined to re-visit the earth, I will conduct you to what part you please.’ Upon which we took leave of the princess: but before I retired, she told me she desired to have a share in my remembrance; ‘Let me intreat,’ said she, ‘your acceptance of this ring; the emerald which is set in it is a great curiosity, and as such was presented to the king my father by a learned magician: I now tender it to you; and it may possibly be very beneficial to you hereafter; it is a talisman, whose efficacy not only calms the rage of all sorts of terrestrial animals, but likewise gives the person who wears it a sovereign power over those creatures; they are obedient to all his commands, and would run to the utmost limits of the earth should he so enjoin them.’ I received a present so inestimable with the most grateful acknowledgments, and kissed the fair hand of the princess; after which I withdrew with the king her brother, and we returned by the same way we came.

When we arrived at the palace of the King



King of Silence, that monarch caused all his family to assemble in the hall where he first gave me audience: I am unacquainted with the particulars of their conversation; but when I was introduced, the king directed his discourse to me to this effect: 'Prince,' said he, 'though you seem determined to leave us, I have still one proposal more to offer you; if you cannot prevail on yourself to be my brother-in-law, consent, however, to continue among us; and for your inducement, I will give you in marriage to the loveliest nymph in all my empire; time itself shall have no power over her charms; she will always love you with the most engaging tenderness, and you will be as constantly fond of her.'

I was not allured in the least at so inviting an offer: 'My lord,' said I to the king, 'as engaging as your majesty's proposal may appear, it is impossible for me to receive it: I die with impatience to see the Queen of Hattun Rucana: she is the only blessing for which I sigh; and I ask nothing more of your majesty than to be conveyed to the Isle of Uxi. Yllapantac shall either restore that princess to my arms, or compel his cruelty by my death.'

'Unhappy prince,' replied the monarch, 'what a scene of misery and danger are you preparing for yourself! It is true, I can cause you to be landed on the Isle of Uxi, and am sensible you may easily enter those dominions; for though all the coasts swarm with innumerable savage beasts, and the forests are crowded with rapacious birds of a size so monstrous, that one alone is able to devour a man; yet, as the emerald you have received from my sister will protect you from the rage of the beasts, so I intend to present you with an enchanted turquoise, which shall preserve you from the fury of the birds: and yet, with all this important aid, you will never be in a capacity to force the queen from the arms of her ravisher. I can assure you, your competitor is the most potent of all magicians, and with a single glance can lay the mightiest and most intrepid men at his feet; nay, the numerous and united force of an imbattled army would oppose him in vain: what success then can you expect against so formidable a foe? I acknowledge, indeed, when we have any probability

of triumphing by undauntedness of mind in any hazardous adventure, it would then be truly heroick to brave the danger; but, at the same time, it is equally certain that temerity was never reputed a virtue, and no one commends the man who indiscreetly exposes himself to perils none can surmount.'

'I am very sensible, my lord,' said I, 'of the difficulties I am liable to encounter: but were it absolutely impossible to accomplish my purpose, even that consideration should not dissuade me from the attempt; we must necessarily acquiesce with our lot, and render obedience to the gods, by exposing ourselves to the greatest dangers, when such is their determination. Let me add to this, that the Queen of Hattun Rucana merits the sacrifice of my safety to her welfare; should many dangers and impediments rise in my way, my soul shall be fortified with perseverance; and though death itself be presented to my view, I will confront that king of terrors as I ought: the constancy of my mind, at least, shall be invincible; and I count fear an inglorious weakness, to which a gallant man is never obnoxious.'—'Since I find,' replied the King of Silence, 'that nothing can dissuade or intimidate you from your resolution, I myself will conduct you to-morrow to the shore of the Isle of Uxi: no one ever implored any needful assistance from me in vain.' When he had uttered these words, he ordered the turquoise of which he had spoken to be brought: this likewise was the ornament of a ring, but the metal was silver in which the gem was enchased, very like the emerald in the other ring. 'I am unacquainted with the origin of this talisman,' said the king, when he presented it to me; 'it has been in our family for a length of time immemorial, and you will experience it's virtue in the needful hour. I would willingly do something more,' continued he; 'and could be glad to fortify you against the incantations of Yllapantac, but my power does not extend to the earth.'

I gratefully thanked the king for his favours. 'Great monarch!' said I, 'your generosity transcends my utmost hopes; may you for ever live happy in your dominions, and for a long series of years be the delight of your family,

was the source of four streams, or rather so many rivers, that rolled their silver waves through the same number of channels, and divided the chamber into as many equal parts; one of which had the appearance of an admirable parterre, diversified with the beauteous glow of innumerable flowers, though in reality they were no more than amiable illusions, effected by a vast number of spouting rills, disposed with surprising art and symmetry. In the second compartment, a number of large water-falls, adjusted with the same perfection, represented a verdant forest, where all the birds who frequent the sea made their retreat. The third division was adorned with artificial grottos, beautified with the finest shells and stones; and the last was the apartment where the princess and all her nymphs resided: it was impossible to behold this delightful place without believing it to be the dwelling of some divinity, and feeling secret impressions of joy and admiration.

## H O U R XXXV.

**T**HE princess was reposing herself on a couch; but the moment we approached her she rose, and caused us to be seated; after which, she addressed herself to the King of Silence in these terms—‘Before I ask you, my dear brother, to what motive I owe this visit, and who is that agreeable youth who accompanies you, give me leave to present you with some refreshment;’ at the same time one of the nymphs, by her order, brought us a cup of water, which in those dominions was the only food. When we had finished our repast, the king, turning to his sister, expressed himself to this effect:

‘Princess,’ said he, ‘you desire to know the cause of this visit, and who is the youth you see in my company?’ He then acquainted her in what manner he preserved my life, and repeated all the particulars which had happened since I had been conveyed to his palace: he likewise represented to her the seeming contradiction in the two oracles relating to her marriage and mine, and then desired to hear her sentiments on that circumstance.

The princess, who had listened with great attention to her brother’s discourse, made him this reply: ‘I should not

receive any dissatisfaction, brother, if the person destined to espouse me should resemble Prince Houac; but notwithstanding the circumstance of your saving his life, he is not to be my husband, for he discovers not the least similitude in shape, age, or features, to the person allotted me. When I made a voyage some time since to the Island of Desolation, in order to consult the oracle about the accomplishment of my future marriage, the sacred tree returned me this answer—“Cast your eyes now on the man, pre-ordained by the gods for your nuptials;” at the same instant the tree opened, and I beheld in the hollow of the trunk a large silver mirror, which represented to my view the destined partner of my bed; the idea of his form, which I then surveyed with great attention, is still present to my imagination, and bears not any resemblance to Prince Houac; and therefore, if you would be directed by me, dismiss him to the earth, for the gods may be incensed if you detain him, and their displeasure may prove fatal to you in the event.’

This discourse was sufficient to change the king’s first intention of espousing me to his sister: ‘Let us return, prince,’ said he, ‘to my palace; and since you are determined to re-visit the earth, I will conduct you to what part you please.’ Upon which we took leave of the princess: but before I retired, she told me she desired to have a share in my remembrance; ‘Let me intreat,’ said she, ‘your acceptance of this ring; the emerald which is set in it is a great curiosity, and as such was presented to the king my father by a learned magician: I now tender it to you; and it may possibly be very beneficial to you hereafter; it is a talisman, whose efficacy not only calms the rage of all sorts of terrestrial animals, but likewise gives the person who wears it a sovereign power over those creatures; they are obedient to all his commands, and would run to the utmost limits of the earth should he so enjoin them.’ I received a present so inestimable with the most grateful acknowledgments, and kissed the fair hand of the princess; after which I withdrew with the king her brother, and we returned by the same way we came.

When we arrived at the palace of the King



King of Silence, that monarch caused all his family to assemble in the hall where he first gave me audience: I am unacquainted with the particulars of their conversation; but when I was introduced, the king directed his discourse to me to this effect: 'Prince,' said he, 'though you seem determined to leave us, I have still one proposal more to offer you; if you cannot prevail on yourself to be my brother-in-law, consent, however, to continue among us; and for your inducement, I will give you in marriage to the loveliest nymph in all my empire; time itself shall have no power over her charms; she will always love you with the most engaging tenderness, and you will be as constantly fond of her.'

I was not allured in the least at so inviting an offer: 'My lord,' said I to the king, 'as engaging as your majesty's proposal may appear, it is impossible for me to receive it: I die with impatience to see the Queen of Hattun Rucana: she is the only blessing for which I sigh; and I ask nothing more of your majesty than to be conveyed to the Isle of Uxi. Yllapantac shall either restore that princess to my arms, or compel his cruelty by my death.'

'Unhappy prince,' replied the monarch, 'what a scene of misery and danger are you preparing for yourself! It is true, I can cause you to be landed on the Isle of Uxi, and am sensible you may easily enter those dominions; for though all the coasts swarm with innumerable savage beasts, and the forests are crowded with rapacious birds of a size so monstrous, that one alone is able to devour a man; yet, as the emerald you have received from my sister will protect you from the rage of the beasts, so I intend to present you with an enchanted turquoise, which shall preserve you from the fury of the birds: and yet, with all this important aid, you will never be in a capacity to force the queen from the arms of her ravisher. I can assure you, your competitor is the most potent of all magicians, and with a single glance can lay the mightiest and most intrepid men at his feet; nay, the numerous and united force of an imbattled army would oppose him in vain: what success then can you expect against so formidable a foe? I acknowledge, indeed, when we have any probability

of triumphing by undauntedness of mind in any hazardous adventure, it would then be truly heroick to brave the danger; but, at the same time, it is equally certain that temerity was never reputed a virtue, and no one commends the man who indiscreetly exposes himself to perils none can surmount.'

'I am very sensible, my lord,' said I, 'of the difficulties I am liable to encounter: but were it absolutely impossible to accomplish my purpose, even that consideration should not dissuade me from the attempt; we must necessarily acquiesce with our lot, and render obedience to the gods, by exposing ourselves to the greatest dangers, when such is their determination. Let me add to this, that the Queen of Hattun Rucana merits the sacrifice of my safety to her welfare; should many dangers and impediments rise in my way, my soul shall be fortified with perseverance; and though death itself be presented to my view, I will confront that king of terrors as I ought: the constancy of my mind, at least, shall be invincible; and I count fear an inglorious weakness, to which a gallant man is never obnoxious.'—'Since I find,' replied the King of Silence, 'that nothing can dissuade or intimidate you from your resolution, I myself will conduct you to-morrow to the shore of the Isle of Uxi: no one ever implored any needful assistance from me in vain.' When he had uttered these words, he ordered the turquoise of which he had spoken to be brought: this likewise was the ornament of a ring, but the metal was silver in which the gem was enchased, very like the emerald in the other ring. 'I am unacquainted with the origin of this talisman,' said the king, when he presented it to me; 'it has been in our family for a length of time immemorial, and you will experience its virtue in the needful hour.' 'I would willingly do something more,' continued he; 'and could be glad to fortify you against the incantations of Yllapantac, but my power does not extend to the earth.'

I gratefully thanked the king for his favours. 'Great monarch!' said I, 'your generosity transcends my utmost hopes; may you for ever live happy in your dominions, and for a long series of years be the delight of your fa-

P mily,

‘mily, and the consolation of your people!’ And then addressing myself to his lovely spouse—‘May you, O illustrious queen,’ said I, ‘be the constant joy of your royal consort, and soon behold your charming daughters espoused to a race of blooming youths! And may you ever receive from your subjects the homage and veneration they so justly owe you!’

When I had thus tendered my acknowledgment to my benefactors, the King of Silence ordered the necessary preparations to be made for our voyage the next day; I then took my last farewell of the queen, and respectfully kissed her knees and hand; after which the king conducted me into the apartment where I had reposed the night before. It was some time before I could compose myself to rest, but at last a gentle slumber closed my eyes, and towards the dawn my imagination was wrought into a dream that exceedingly affected me: a goddess seemed to appear before me in the form of a woman, richly habited, and exceedingly majestic in her mien; whilst I beheld her very attentively, with all that reverend horror which the presence of a divinity infuses into the soul—‘Houac,’ said she, ‘thy thoughts are forming a vain enterprize; thou art not to direct thy immediate progress to the Isle of Uxi; for shouldst thou so determine, inevitable death will await thee: thou must therefore visit the Isle of Puna first, and thou wilt there meet with what will extricate thee from thy perplexity.’

When my sleep left me, I reflected on every circumstance of my dream, and became persuaded I had seen a real apparition; the language I had heard was too interesting and precise to make any other opinion probable; and I was employed in deep meditations when the king came to see if I were ready to depart: I then acquainted him with what had happened to me, and intreated him to favour me with his counsel.

The monarch having hearkened to me with much attention, made this reply: ‘Your dream appears to me too conformable to your present state, and indeed is too circumstantial, to be the mere effect of slumber; it has undoubtedly been imparted to you by the agency of a god, to point out some important truth to your observations; and though some dreams are so delu-

sive and inconsistent, that it would be imprudent to afford them any credit, there are others, however, which have so much reality, that it would be an impious rashness to disregard them; for my part, I am inclined to think your dream may justly be ranked in the latter class, though at the same time I am not able to determine how you can be informed in the island of Puna of any circumstances to clear up your perplexity; however, I would advise you to proceed directly to that island, and am persuaded you will there obtain the explication of your dream. Mankind, in hazardous undertakings, frequently escape dangers by leaving the direct path, and taking a circuit in a much longer track.’

#### H O U R XXXVI.

**T**HIS discourse sufficiently determined me to make a voyage to the Isle of Puna; and I informed the king, that I gladly resigned myself to his direction; upon which he gave me a signal, and I immediately followed him through the apartments of his palace.

When we came to the gate that opened towards the quarter where the Isle of Puna was situated, we found all the necessary provisions for our voyage ready: the surface of the ocean descended in an easy slant, from the extremity of the island to the causey, on which the palace of the King of Silence was raised, and presented us with a gentle ascent. Two nymphs had harnessed a team of eight swans to a silver chariot, the seat of which was formed of mother of pearl: the King of Silence ascended this chariot, and caused me to be seated at his side, and then taking the reins, which were composed of many small chains of gold, he gave the signal for our departure; the indefatigable swans sprung forward at that instant, swifter than the wind, and drew the car so lightly over the fluid way, as not to occasion any extraordinary motion in the water.

When we had arrived at the island of Puna, I leaped down on the earth, and was preparing to thank the King of Silence, with a respectful humility, for his gracious offices; but he would not allow me that opportunity: ‘I wish,’ said he, ‘I had the power to conduct you farther;



but you must know the earth is not my element; you may, however, depend on seeing me once more, when you have an inclination to quit this island; you need then do nothing more than cast three pebbles into the sea, and you will instantly behold me prepared to assist you. When the king had given me this information, he did not stay for my reply, but suddenly plunged his chariot into the ocean, and the waters, which before bended into a slope to facilitate our passage, now rolled into their natural level.

I was for some time in a great perplexity, as to the part I was now to perform. 'In what manner am I to proceed,' said I to myself; 'and what events are reserved for me in this place? If I continue where I now am, I may indeed depend on the assistance of the King of Silence; but then my affairs in this island will never be compleated; and it would certainly be very imprudent in me to expect Fortune should officiously approach me whilst I indulge myself in indolence: no, it is incumbent on me to exert my best endeavours to obtain her favour; but then,' continued I, 'if I advance much farther into this isle, and the land should be as barren and naked as it now appears, I should soon be destitute of food; besides, how can I be certain the more distant parts of the island are inhabited; but if they really should, what assurance have I that the natives are hospitable and compassionate?'

When I had maturely deliberated on these two expedients, the last appeared to me most suitable to my interest. The sun was not yet ascended to his meridian, and I directed my course to the western point of the island, through a wild solitude, where neither men nor animals appeared. My eyes wandered over sandy plains and ghastly rocks, which only afforded me a variety of parched and barren prospects, without either a green tree or a running spring to enliven the scene. In this situation it was natural for me to suffer some inquietude, for I now began to be afflicted with hunger and thirst; however, as I at last gained the distant view of a large wood, I flattered myself that if it were but inhabited, I should at least find some supplies for my present necessity. With this expectation, I pursued my journey all the ensuing night, and arrived at the thicket when the sun

began to gladden the earth with the beams of the morning.

This delicious wilderness was watered with several fountains, and at regular distances opened into long walks of trees, laden with inviting fruits; I adored Pachacamac, who thus delights to vary his bounties through all nature, and makes each climate accommodate his creatures with every necessary enjoyment. When I had ended my devotions I gathered some of the fruit, and found their flavour incomparable; I then quenched my thirst at a murmuring fountain, and thought the cooling draught more delicate and reviving than all the liquors I had ever drank before; and when I had finished this sylvan feast, I reposed myself on the grass, rather with a design to slumber in that delightful shade, than to wear away any fatigues, for the fruits and fountain had already refreshed me with new vigour.

When my sleep left me, I had nothing so much at heart as the accomplishment of my journey; with this view I continued my way through the thicket, and at last beheld a man, whose stature much exceeded the dimensions of mine; he advanced towards me with a lance in his hand, and gazed upon me with eyes of a deeper dye than blood; his mien discovered something menacing and gloomy, and made me suspect I had an enemy to combat. This conjecture caused me to prepare for my defence, and I immediately confronted him with my drawn sabre, and a resolution to sell my life as dear as possible, if he offered to assault me: but when I imagined we were upon the point of engaging, my adversary presented his lance at my breast, and at the same time addressed me to this effect—'Fiebear, young man,' said he; 'all your bravery will be unavailing against the lance of the Prophet Huamachu: I have no inclination to stain my hands in your blood, but rather honour in your person the possessor of the emerald, which all terrestrial animals homage; and the turquoise, which keeps the various tribes of birds in subjection: I am very sensible those treasures would be useless to any one, who would attempt to gain them by slaughter; and I only intreat you to aid me in a certain adventure that employs my thoughts, and cannot be effected without your assistance. All the happiness of my life depends on the success of this affair;

and if you contribute your endeavours with mine to accomplish it, I will freely grant you whatever you can desire, though it should be half the power I possess.

This discourse convinced me I had to do with a magician, and that it would be dangerous for me to refuse him the assistance he desired. 'My lord,' said I, 'I am ready to aid you to the utmost of my ability, and am not desirous to be recompensed with any part of your power; I only wish you would aid me, in your turn, to release the Queen of Hattun Rucana from her captivity; I am persuaded you may easily gratify me in this particular, for what can be impracticable to the happy possessor of the sacred lance?'

'Some part of your adventures,' replied the magician, 'are already come to my knowledge. I happened two days ago to be in the Isle of Uxi, and was informed by Yllapantac in what manner he threw you into the sea, to avenge himself on you for killing his brother.'—'Ah, my lord!' interrupted I, 'since you are so well acquainted with the train of circumstances which compose my misfortunes, let me intreat you to favour me with some tidings of the Queen of Hattun Rucana.'—'Be in no pain,' said he, 'about the welfare of that lady. Yllapantac has indeed entertained her with his passion, and omitted nothing to inspire her with impressions in his favour; but she has hitherto only treated him with aversion and horror; and yet he seemed far from any intention to offer her the least violence, so that you have nothing to apprehend from his competition; nay, I intend to replace that princess in your arms before the expiration of three days.'—'Ah, my lord!' said I, with the utmost emotion, 'may I be permitted to depend on that promise?'—'Believe me, you may,' replied the magician; 'and I ratify it with a solemn imprecation, that I may be for ever deprived of the sacred lance, if I give you any reason to reproach me for want of punctuality.'—'I am satisfied, my lord,' answered I; 'and now be pleased to inform me, what I am to undertake for your service, and I will immediately acquit myself in the best manner I am able.'

## H O U R XXXVII.

THE magician was transported to see me in such a disposition to assist him. 'Wait,' said he, 'a few moments, whilst I fetch the weapons proper for our expedition; upon which he departed, and in the space of a quarter of an hour made his appearance again with a sabre and a dagger at his side. 'Let us now proceed,' said he, 'with all expedition, to the Valley of Chacma; your presence will there be useful to me, to preserve me from the eagles, flying dragons, and other furious birds, who guard the Princess Chacma. I have sighed for this lovely creature above six years, and she is far from being insensible of my passion; but her uncle, who has usurped her dominions, detains her in a prison, which, though it may be justly called magnificent, is still a disagreeable confinement, since she is obliged to continue there against her inclinations. This place may be almost reputed inaccessible, because the magician whom the usurper bribed to his interest, has surrounded it with a vast number of the fierce creatures I have already mentioned, who guard all the avenues, and convey to the princess the provisions she wants: the only difficulty is to controul the rage of those fatal birds, who suffer no mortal to approach that prison with impunity; but your talisman makes all apprehensions needless.'

At the close of this discourse, the magician took me by the hand, and we were instantly conveyed into the Valley of Chacma; we then proceeded to the palace, or rather the prison, where the princess was compelled to live secluded from the world. The enchanter knocked thrice at the gate, and it then flew open with a harsh noise; at the same moment the rapacious birds, and other winged animals, sprung at us in prodigious numbers, to prevent our entrance into the building: some alarmed us with loud and doleful screams, others astonished us with dreadful hissings, capable of striking fortitude itself with consternation; but the moment I made my appearance, all their cries and fury ceased, and they suddenly withdrew to leave us a free passage. We then passed through a large

court,



court, and came up to the inward gate of the prison, which, when the magician had again knocked at three times, spontaneously opened in an instant.

We then came into a great hall, in the middle of which rose a dome supported by six columns of solid silver; the walls were formed of the same metal, and equally massive; at the upper end of the hall was placed a glittering throne of emeralds, on which the princess was seated. This amiable lady rose the moment she beheld us, and addressing herself to the magician—'Ah, my lord!' said she, 'are you at last come to succour an unfortunate princess, whom an impious wretch has here detained in captivity so many years?'

'Yes, Madam, replied the magician, 'I have at last, with the assistance of this youth, prevailed over all your guards: you are at liberty from this moment; and I intreat you no longer to defer the happiness I sigh for.'—'My lord,' said the princess, 'something still remains to compleat my repose; I shall think my liberty but an inconsiderable enjoyment, unless I likewise ascend the throne of my ancestors; this is the service I expect you to render me, and the only condition on which I consent to espouse you.'

'Madam,' cried the magician, in a transport of joy, 'may I be divested of all my power, and reduced to the level of common men, if I do not re-establish you in your empire, and avenge you on the usurper, before two hours can be expired! Let us go this moment,' continued he, 'and punish him for his treasons; let him, in all the agonies of envy and despair, be witness of my future felicity with my beautiful princess!'

When this conversation was over, the enchanter led the lady out of the palace, and I walked before them to employ my talisman against the eagles and other animals in the court, from whence we immediately proceeded to the usurper's palace.

He was then in his own apartment, little expecting the operations we were preparing; and, indeed, it is impossible to describe the astonishment that seized him, when he saw his niece stand before him in the company of two men, of whom he had not the least knowledge. He at first began to assume a menacing

tone; but when he saw we were not to be intimidated, and were even preparing to assault him, he endeavoured to save himself by flight; but the magician stopped him that moment with a single expression.

'Stay, traitor,' said he, 'and acknowledge the black catalogue of thy crimes.' The usurper, at that language, became motionless, and stood as if his feet had been riveted to the pavement; and when the magician had uttered two other words, which to me were unintelligible, the unhappy prince suffered a strange transformation; his neck, his arms, his feet, and in a word, his whole body, lost all flexibility, and stiffened into a marble statue; his eyes alone were unaffected with this change, and these the magician left him, to embitter his affliction, and perpetuate his misery.

When this transaction was ended, the officers and domesticks of the palace, having prostrated themselves at the feet of the princess, acknowledged her for their sovereign, and implored her clemency: she received them with a serene smile, and ordered the chief of the people to be assembled. To these she imparted the particulars of the usurper's punishment, and took their oaths of fidelity to herself; and, to crown the happy revolution of that day, she solemnly espoused her deliverer, who now exerted his art to embellish the nuptial feast with all imaginable pleasures.

The day after the celebration of this marriage, I reminded the magician of his promise, to restore you, my charming queen, to liberty; I assured him, that each moment of his delay increased my inquietudes on your account, and retarded my dearest happiness: but the answer I received from him was very different from what I had a right to expect. 'Your request,' said he, 'is at present extremely unreasonable; can you believe me capable of such a sudden separation from my princess? Her authority is not sufficiently established for me to leave her alone; and, should I have any inclination to quit the Valley of Chacma, you would be the first to dissuade me from that design. I know, indeed, that your passion for the Queen of Hattun Rucana makes you impatient to behold her, and your desires shall soon have their due satisfaction; but, in the mean time, let me intreat you to moderate your ardours; for

‘for you can by no means urge me to  
‘an absence that would entirely frustrate  
‘your interest as well as mine.’

This reply forced the tears from my eyes, and my heart suggested to me, that it was a dishonourable evasion contrived by the magician; however, I was willing to think that suspicion unjust, and still imagined I had to do with a man of probity, wisdom, and humanity. This persuasion obliged me to consent to the delay he desired; but alas! how fatal was that delay to my repose! for in this interval, I had too many opportunities of entertaining the Princess Chacma; and the faithless fair-one, conceiving a favourable idea of my youth, and the little agreeableness with which nature had perhaps indulged me, drew a fatal comparison between me and her husband; the result of which was not to his advantage, and at the same time seduced her into a passion for me, the most violent that could possibly be imagined.

One day, as we enjoyed the cooling gales in a grove near the palace, the princess made me an open declaration of the sentiments of her heart; she even proceeded farther, and earnestly solicited me to satisfy her criminal desires. I was so confounded at this unexpected confession, that my face was covered with blushes; and I was deliberating what reply to make, when the princess, impatient to behold some evidence of my conformity to her passion, resumed her discourse in this manner—‘I have a mortal  
‘aversion for the magician my husband,  
‘and am fully determined to end his  
‘days by poison: when I have accom-  
‘plished this, I will gladly resign to you  
‘the throne of my fathers; and this  
‘scheme I intend to execute the moment  
‘you accept of the heart I offer you.’

This proposal appeared to me so unspeakably infamous, that I even suspected I was under some illusion: ‘Ah, Madam!’ said I, ‘what design is this you entertain? Is it possible you no longer remember what your husband has done for your sake? It is but very lately that you received your liberty from him, and engaged yourself by nuptial vows to be faithful to his passion. He treats you with all the tenderness of a lover; his important services, his untainted affection, and your indispensable duty, plead aloud in his favour.’—‘Oh, my prince!’ replied she, ‘you are unacquainted with the excess of

my passion: duty and gratitude make but weak oppositions to the fervors with which I adore you; permit me, therefore, to disengage myself from a husband I can no longer love, and consent to be at once the sovereign of the people, and the monarch of my heart.’

## H O U R XXXVIII.

‘NO, Madam,’ interrupted I, ‘it is absolutely impossible for me to approve such a design; and you dishonour me not a little, when you suspect me capable of the least inclination to that barbarity and injustice. I am a prince driven from my dominions; but notwithstanding my misfortune, I can never think of rising to a throne by criminal measures; nor would I degenerate from the character that becomes a person of my rank, to gain even the empire of the world: but could I possibly accept your offers, you soon would have reason to tremble at the consequence; for the very power with which you desire to invest me, would be only employed by me in punishing you for your perfidy and ingratitude.’

The princess, whom my menaces and scorn had exceedingly enraged, was on the point of making me a reply, when she was suddenly alarmed by the steps of her husband, who then advanced towards us: she stood speechless and confused at this unexpected interruption; and, for my part, I was filled with indignation at what I had heard. As to the magician, he became immediately convinced that the emotions we discovered were occasioned by something extraordinary that had passed between us. ‘What is it that discomposes you so much, Madam?’ said he to the princess; ‘I observe that you and the prince have something peculiar in your looks: is my presence the occasion of the disorder you both disclose?’—‘That, my lord, is far from being the cause,’ replied the princess; ‘and if I appear to you in any confusion, you must ascribe it to the moving solicitations made to me by the prince. A few moments ago,’ continued she, ‘he threw himself at my feet, and entreated me to prevail upon you to restore the Queen of Hattun Rucana to his embraces; he assured me, you had engaged yourself by an oath to accomplish that pleasing office;



office; and he even promised me one of his talismans, if I succeeded in the request I was preparing to make you.

I trembled and changed colour at the first words of this reply, but the conclusion almost drove me to distraction, and rendered me incapable of uttering a word: the magician imputed my silence to a motive very different from that which occasioned it; 'Prince,' said he, 'I am sensible of your ardent desire to be united to the Queen of Hattun Rucana; and promise you all the satisfaction you can ask: this very day you shall fold her in your arms; and now let me know which of your two rings you intend to offer us?'

I was then reduced to a strange situation; for, on the one hand, as I had no intention to part with either of my talismans, so, on the other, I durst not contradict the princess, for fear of being obliged to punish her weakness and inconstancy; which if I had done, I should have thought myself guilty of an unpardonable meanness of soul; and therefore, in the perplexity that hung upon me, I thought it best to continue silent. I likewise hoped that the magician, when he observed how much I was disquieted, would not be so unreasonable as the princess; and I could not help flattering myself, that when he reflected on my past services, and the solemn oath he had taken, he could not in justice and honour demand from me a double recompence for the favour I desired him to grant me.

But ah! how much was I deceived in my surmises! for the traitor soon gave me reason to suspect he acted in concert with his perfidious wife: 'I perceive,' said he, 'you have not determined which of the talismans will be most proper for you to keep, and therefore I allow you all the time you desire to fix your choice: but should you begin to repent of your own offer,' continued he, 'I shall not be extremely pleased to see you impose on the princess so grossly; and I swear by my head, that I will never undertake any thing in your favour, till I see her in possession of one of your rings.'

The magician, at the close of this discourse, took the princess by the hand, and led her out of the grove, leaving me to reflect on the particulars of what I heard: I was then overwhelmed with melancholy, at the treacherous proceeding I had experienced; the tears flowed from

my eyes without intermission, and my despair was on the point of forcing me to some fatal extremity against myself; but when I had indulged this dejection of soul for some hours, I considered, that all the sorrows I could possibly sustain would never close the scene of my misfortunes; besides, I thought it so pusillanimous to be altogether averse to consolation, that I imagined the glory I had acquired would be greatly impaired by such a conduct. 'I am degenerating too much for a manly fortitude,' said I to myself: 'the gods are the only disposers of each event that awaits me; I am blessed with life by their bounty, and they have a right to resume that gift when they please. If my present afflictions are consistent with their wise purposes, I can, at least, believe they have not pre-ordained me to perpetual wretchedness; but, should they suffer me to waste the remainder of my days in the severest calamities, what prerogative have I to oppose their will? It would be more dutiful in me, to grow persuaded they intend to recompense me in this world or a better, for all the miseries they are pleased to allot me, since justice is inseparable from their dispensations to man.'

As I found myself re-animated by these reflections, I at last retired to my apartment in the palace; and was there employed in new meditations, when one of the domesticks appointed by the queen to attend me, came to receive my commands: he was a person very sincere and compassionate in his disposition, and as he beheld an air of melancholy in my countenance, he continued silent for some time; but perceiving I was so lost in thought as to be insensible of his presence — 'Prince,' said he, 'I am as much affected by your inquietudes as yourself, and would willingly offer you all the relief in my power. I have a natural inclination to assist the unfortunate; and entreat you to acquaint me whether I can possibly be useful to you in any particular.'

'My worthy friend,' replied I, 'it should seem, by what I am fated to suffer, that the gods have marked me out for the most miserable of mortals: I have been exposed to the rage of envy from my early youth; the malice and barbarity of my enemies deprived me of a father I tenderly loved; a tyrannical usurper dispossessed me of my dominions;

‘minions; and since that fatal period, I have suffered innumerable calamities. An unsuccessful war reduced me to captivity; and when my adversaries intended to devour me at a publick festival, nothing but the miraculous aid I then received could have accomplished my preservation: since that event, I exposed myself to the danger of leaping over a dreadful opening in the earth, twenty-one cubits wide; and when I had succeeded in that enterprise, I killed a giant of a stupendous size; but at the instant when I expected the recompence promised me by the oracle of the gods, I was violently deprived of the princess, for whose sake I engaged in the two last adventures, and who consented to be the amiable reward of all the perils I had sustained. I was likewise precipitated into the depths of the ocean, and my death would then have been inevitable had not a superior power compassionately interposed for my deliverance. But it seems I have escaped all these dangers, only to be exposed to others more threatening and unsurmountable.’

My grief made me incapable of saying more, and could only express itself in sighs and tears, which so exceedingly affected Tacma, for that was the name of my sympathizing friend, that he directed his discourse to me in this manner: ‘Prince,’ said he, ‘I was unacquainted with the misfortunes you suffered before your arrival in this country, and could be only conscious of your displeasure at the magician’s violation of his promise. Perhaps, even now, you may be ignorant of the combination between him and the princess, to deprive you of both your talismans; but you may believe me when I assure you, the fact is undeniable: they are sensible of your extraordinary affection for the Queen of Hattun Rucana, and flatter themselves you will sacrifice both the treasures you possess to obtain that princess; for which reason, you may be certain, the magician will never afford you the assistance he formerly promised, unless you comply with the conditions I have mentioned.’

These words entirely discomposed me anew, and my heart flamed with indignation at such a dishonourable proceeding. ‘How!’ said I, ‘will they not be satisfied with one of my talismans; but must be so insatiable as to require

both!’—‘Such is their intention, I assure you,’ replied Tacma; ‘and if as yet they have only demanded one, it was because they were unwilling to surprize you too suddenly; but you may rest persuaded, they intend to possess the two rings.’—‘I am very sensible,’ interrupted I, ‘the generality of men are treacherous and unjust; but am astonished, that Envy can be capable of establishing her empire in the heart of a princess, whose ambition, in my opinion, should be sufficiently satisfied with her deliverance from captivity, and her exaltation to the throne of her ancestors; nor am I less surprized, that a magician, who possesses the lance of the prophet Huamachu should envy me the enjoyment of a property so inferior in value to his own. Alas!’ continued I, ‘why don’t they by my death obtain those treasures, which they know I will never resign but with my life!’

#### H O U R XXXIX.

‘PRINCE,’ replied Tacma, ‘they would long ago have had recourse to that extremity, could they have imagined it advantageous to their design; but the magician is conscious those talismans would be divested of all their virtue, were he to obtain them by the effusion of blood, or any act of violence whatever; and therefore he and the princess hope a length of time will lessen your reluctance to resign them.’—‘We shall soon see,’ said I, ‘what the gods are pleased to ordain in this conjuncture. For my part, I am fixed in my resolution, to sacrifice my very life for the service of my dearest queen; but my talismans are infinitely more precious to me than the being I enjoy; besides, it is impossible for me to dispose of them, were I so inclined; and therefore they shall never be transferred to another master, whilst I have breath to preserve them: but I suppose the displeasure they will entertain at my perseverance in this resolution, will engage them in some attempt on my life, or my liberty at least.’

‘Hear once more, prince,’ replied Tacma; ‘I cannot persuade myself they will ever form any attempt against your life, or even cast you into prison; but your greatest misfortune is, that though they should not resolve on either



‘either of these excesses, your affairs will not be in a better situation than they are at this time; and indeed, I am unable to foresee any favourable event of your desires: I cannot possibly advise you to part with your talismans, for I am sensible they are preferable to the monarchy of two kingdoms; and must acknowledge the injustice both of the princess and the magician, in demanding two such inestimable gratuities for a favour you have already purchased with such important services. In short, Sir, I can only counsel you to refer yourself to the gods, who are able to restore the Queen of Hattun Rucana to your wishes, without the aid of a magician. The visible protection they have so frequently afforded you, is a favourable earnest of the assistance they design to grant you hereafter: a man of virtue and honour, who truly fears and adores them, can never be the object of their aversion; but they always frustrate the combinations of unjust persons, and pursue the crimes of perjured mortals with consequences very different from their expectations.’

Whilst Tacma and myself were engaged in this discourse, a person came to give me notice, that the magician desired to see me; upon which I immediately went to his apartment: at my arrival there, he did not rise from his seat to receive me as usual, and every feature in his countenance gloomed with fury. ‘Perfidious man!’ said he, ‘have you so soon forgotten our agreement for mutually aiding each other in our undertakings! Is it possible then, that neither my promises to succour you, nor the honourable reception we have afforded you in these dominions, should be sufficient to restrain you from injuring me in an instance, that, of all others, most affects my honour and repose!’

‘My lord,’ said I, with an undaunted tone of voice, ‘I have been so far from suffering the agreement you mention to slip out of my remembrance, that I have actually performed every condition of it which was incumbent on me, and only wait for the accomplishment of your part: you must, therefore, permit me to tell you, I am surprised at your reproach, and cannot be conscious of any thing that might induce you to say I have injured you in the manner you represent.’

—‘Ungrateful traitor!’ replied the magician, ‘do you consider your unworthy conduct to the princess my wife? But whether you are pleased to remember it or not, I am determined to have the severest revenge for the outrage you have committed against her honour.’

Though I was far from being intimidated at this menace, yet I must confess the reflection with which he attacked me, struck me dumb for some moments; but as I found it necessary to give him a reply—‘My lord,’ said I, ‘appearances are sometimes very deceiving, and we frequently hear of accusations which are only founded on the malice of the defamer. Where are your informers, the witnesses that will appear to prove the crime imputed to my conduct, or have you already found their evidence decisive?’—‘The princess herself is your accuser,’ replied the magician; ‘my injured wife reproaches you for your presumption: do you imagine, then, I can suspect the truth of her complaint; and is a testimony like this liable to the least objection?’

At this discourse I affected an air of astonishment. ‘Great gods!’ said I, with a loud exclamation, ‘am I accused by the princess! Permit methen to ask you, my lord, what opinion you will entertain of such a proceeding, should I give you the most solemn assurance that I never made the least attempt on the honour of your queen? Will her assertion alone be sufficient to determine your judgment?’—‘Ah, villain!’ cried the magician, ‘you add insolence to guilt.—Seize the traitor,’ continued he, ‘and drag him to prison.’

This command was immediately obeyed, and his officers hurried me to a deep and gloomy dungeon, where the cold earth was the only bed they allowed me to repose on; and to compleat the severity of this inhuman treatment, my keepers were ordered to supply me with food but once a day; and the quantity they then brought me was scarce sufficient to preserve me from starving.

I continued fifteen days in this miserable restraint, without seeing any mortal but the gaoler, and even he was commanded to forbear all conversation with me, upon any account whatever. In this forlorn condition did I frequently invoke death to relieve me, since my sufferings had now made life my aversion: sometimes I condemned the impatience

I expressed, and endeavoured to fortify my soul against all the assaults of fortune; but when I reflected on my dream in the palace of the King of Silence, I was ready to relapse into my former dejection—‘O delusive vision!’ said I, ‘how hast thou abused my credulity! Why was I so weak as to credit what thou didst then unfold in my unhappy slumber! Are these the expedients I was to obtain in the Isle of Puna, for my deliverance from the perplexities that surround me!’ But when I had indulged my sorrows in this language, I began the next moment to charge these emotions with impiety: ‘Great goddess!’ said I, ‘who didst graciously condescend to manifest thy radiant form to my view, I will never believe thou couldst have any intention to deceive me: I have certainly incensed thee by some criminal behaviour; but I still hope, when my sighs and tears have appeased thee, thou wilt soften the rigour of my misfortunes.’

When I had lingered out fifteen days in my prison, Tacma, that worthy domestick, who had served me so faithfully, came to visit me by the order of the magician and his queen. The pale glare of the lamp which he held in his hand, gave him a sad view of my deplorable condition; and he was so affected with what he beheld, that his eyes streamed with generous tears. ‘Unhappy prince!’ said he, with a sigh, ‘I am charged with a commission that, to my sorrow, will be disagreeable to the man I love! In our last conversation, I seemed to presage the melancholy tidings of which I am now to be the messenger: you are commanded to resign your talismans, and throw yourself on the mercy of the princess; and if you refuse the compliance they expect, you are doomed to die by the vile hands of an executioner; but if you gratify the desires of those who have sent me to visit you in this dungeon, I am commissioned to promise you your liberty, and the assistance of the magician to deliver the queen of Hattun Rucana from her captivity.’

As a melancholy silence was all my reply to Tacma’s discourse—‘My lord,’ said he, ‘when I was coming to this place, I had determined within myself to persuade you to be flexible to all I had to offer; but the dismal state to which I see you reduced has made me

change my opinion; and if I have any influence over you, I would employ it all to gain your consent to the proposal you have heard: the weak condition in which you now appear, fills me with greater apprehensions than the menace of the magician, to cut you off by a shameful death; for whatever his rage may prompt him to utter, I can never believe he will be guilty of such monstrous injustice; but though he should not proceed to this extreme, what probability is there of your living any length of time in this dismal prison, where their cruelty allows you so little food to support decaying nature? Consider, Sir, that before you enjoyed your talismans, you thought yourself the happiest of mankind, in the possession of the Queen of Hattun Rucana, and will the merit of that princess be now diminished for the loss of those two rings? Believe me, prince, it is your interest to comply with the counsel I offer you in the anguish of my soul; we should endeavour to extricate ourselves from calamity, as well as the circumstances of our affairs will permit; and there can be no objection against the sacrifice of one member for the preservation of the rest.’

#### H O U R XL.

‘IS it from you, then,’ replied I, ‘that this language flows; and can it be possible, that my dear and faithful Tacma should offer me any advice so fatal to my welfare? No,’ continued I, ‘as deplorable as my present situation may appear, I will never be so unmanly as to part with my talismans: if I must die by the hands of a savage executioner, I am prepared to meet my fate; or should my tyrants doom me to languish away my life in this ghastly dungeon, I am determined to wait with patience till death brings a final period to my woes. You may, therefore, tell the princess and her husband, that it is in vain for them to entertain any hopes of seducing me to their inhuman purpose, and assure them, that if they continue to persecute me in this inhospitable manner, they will add injustice to treachery, which are two crimes the gods will sooner or later not fail to punish.’

Tacma



Tacma withdrew when I had made this declaration of my mind; but it was not long before I saw him return. 'Unfortunate prince!' said he, when he approached me, 'calm the discontents of your soul, and forbear to waste away your life in sorrow; I am now enabled to afford you some mitigation of your anxiety; the magician seems to interest himself in your preservation, and only commands you not to approach his person till you receive orders to that effect: you have also his permission to pass your time in what place you please, provided you no more appear in this capital.'—'How!' said I, 'will the traitor then refuse me the assistance he promised, when he engaged me in his service?'

'My lord,' replied Tacma, 'you have no longer any reason to despair, for though the magician is not one who strictly conforms himself to the rules of justice, yet I can assure you he has not a heart of adamant; and the liberty you now receive is some proof of what I advance. When I represented to him the melancholy condition in which I found you, he was so touched with compassion, that he immediately consented to your enlargement; and I believe the time may come when some affecting sense of your misfortunes, or a conscious shame for the violation of his promise to relieve you, will incline him to make you a voluntary offer to conduct you to the Isle of Uxi.'—'Be that,' said I, 'as the gods are pleased to determine; it has been my lot to pass through such a series of misfortunes, as at last has rendered them familiar to me: it is true, indeed, the calamities to which I may yet be destined, will increase the number of those I have already suffered; but it is impossible for them to be more agonizing to my soul than the past.'

At the conclusion of this discourse, I endeavoured to raise myself from the earth on which I lay, but my strength was so impaired, that I could not move without the assistance of Tacma, who tendered me his hand and supported my weak steps. We then left the prison, and withdrew from the capital, but did not make any considerable remove, for the length and severity of my confinement had so emaciated all my limbs, that I was not in a condition to undertake any long journey, and therefore I found

myself obliged to stop with my kind conductor, at a little cot, about thrice the distance of a bow-shot from the city. Tacma recommended me to the care of the master of that rural mansion; and after he had promised to inform me of all the transactions at court, which should have any relation to my affairs, he gave me a friendly farewell, and returned to the capital.

My health advanced but slowly, notwithstanding all the advantages I then enjoyed of rest and salutary food, joined with the obliging care of my compassionate host; such inquietudes of mind as I then suffered converted all remedies into poison: however, when I had passed eight days in this habitation, finding myself strong enough to walk, I retired to a little wood near the cottage in which I lived, but was frequently obliged to stop in my way thither, to wear off the fatigue I received by that moderate exercise. When I arrived at the thicket, I stretched myself on the shaded grass, and began to sink into a pleasing slumber; but I had not enjoyed that refreshment many moments, before I was awakened by a noise, that seemed to be occasioned by some neighbouring cause: at this alarm I started a little, and beheld with infinite astonishment a huge lioness, advancing towards me with a very majestic pace. The aspect of this creature, and my confidence in the virtue I knew one of my talismans exerted against all terrestrial animals, prevented me from being affected with much consternation at what I saw; for which reason I composed myself into my former posture, with my head resting on one of my hands; but all the tranquillity I pretended to assume on this occasion did not secure me from some embarrassment at a visit I so little expected.

I, however, soon recovered my usual sedateness of mind, when I had surveyed the lioness as she stood by my side; for this creature did not discover any of the fierceness natural to animals of her species, and the respectful air with which she made her approach, effectually convinced me I had nothing to fear; she bowed down her head, and affectionately licked my hands and feet; and when she had finished this instance of her affections, she couched herself close on my right side, at the same time presenting me with her tears, and intimating by several signs, that she had furnished me

with the means of recovering my strength. I hesitated whether I should comply with her invitation or not; and the small society I till then ever had with those creatures, made me decline her offers for some time; but at last I complied with the repeated instances of her benevolence, and the milk I then extracted from her dugs regaled me with a flavour much more exquisite than the food which nourishes mortals had ever afforded me: it was likewise succeeded by another circumstance still more extraordinary; for it not only restored me in an instant all the strength I had lost, but has ever since preserved me from the inconveniencies of hunger and thirst; and as indefatigable as I have been from that time in the labours I have undertaken, and the long journeys I have accomplished, I never needed the least refreshment of food.

When I became sufficiently convinced of the surprizing change which had operated upon me, I offered my tribute of gratitude to the gods, with a full conviction that the assistance I received was dispensed by their propitious hands. I then recollected all the past events of my life, wherein I had experienced their protection; but when I meditated on the ungenerous artifice by which the Princess of Chacma endeavoured to deprive me of my talismans, I could not restrain myself from some exclamations of resentment. 'Ah, perfidious woman!' said I, 'the gods will one day avenge me on your ingratitude and barbarity!' At these words, the lioness assumed the furious air of those animals; she made the woods tremble with her tremendous roar, and glared upon me with eyes that darted sparkles of flame; but when she saw that I, instead of uttering a word to soothe her, was seized with a rage equal to her own, she suddenly sprung up from the grass on which she had laid herself, and fled towards the capital, as swiftly as if she had been aided by the wings of the wind.

I was for some time unable to account for this sudden emotion; but after a few reflections, I began to imagine that the lioness having heard my complaints against the princess, had left me, with an intention to avenge my wrongs herself. I was not mistaken in this surmise, and my beloved Tacma immediately came to acquaint me with what had happened in the palace. 'Ah, prince!' said he,

'I am once more fated to inform you of new misfortunes! The miserable death of the princess fills me with mortal apprehensions on your account: a raging lioness appeared a few moments ago in the great square, and all the people who beheld her were half dead with horror; some shut themselves in their houses, and others fled from the capital: in the mean time, the animal stalked with a furious air to the palace, and forced her way into the apartment where I then attended the queen; the dreadful beast sprung upon her in an instant, and is now devouring her dead body. For my part,' continued Tacma, 'I am persuaded this event is an instance of divine vengeance; but can you think the magician will entertain the same opinion? He is now absent, and will continue so for some days; but I am very apprehensive that when he returns, he will imagine you have been the author of this fatal tragedy. Ah! whither will you fly for refuge? In what solitude can you shroud yourself from his rage?'

'Great gods!' exclaimed I, 'will you always persecute an unfortunate prince! and am I never to emerge out of one danger, but to be plunged into another! To what new disaster am I now reserved? The whole world cannot afford me one recess, where I may be covered from the magician's fury; he would find me out, though I were lodged in the bowels of the earth. You alone, O celestial Beings, can guard me from his indignation, for you are truly omnipotent! Have you till now afforded me your protection, with no other design than to abandon me in my greatest necessity? Alas! I may even presume to say, your own glory pleads, in some measure, for the success I implore; for how will your oracles be accomplished, should you suffer me to perish at this juncture?'

The moment I had uttered these words, all the faculties of my soul seemed to be suspended, or I might rather be said to yield to a kind of extasy, which the gods diffused through all my vital powers, to inspire me with proper ideas of the conduct I was to pursue: my eyelids closed, and all my senses no longer performed their natural functions. Whilst I was under the impressions of this trance, I beheld a visionary form, whose aspect disclosed all the lineaments I observed in the





Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Feb. 25. 1786.





the countenance of the goddess who appeared to me when I slumbered in the palace of the King of Silence: this apparition approached me, and at the same time expressed herself to this effect—  
 ‘Prince,’ said she, ‘is it ignorance, or weakness; is it distrust or any premeditated design, that induces you to continue here, in this state of mourning and dejection? Why do you stay any longer in this doleful region, to waste away your youth in sorrow and impatience? Cease all your complaints and dissatisfactions, and endeavour to bring your afflictive labours to a period.’

In this manner was I addressed by the phantom; and notwithstanding my confusion at her reproaches, I made her the following reply—‘Great goddess!’ said I, ‘for surely I am now speaking to a divinity, it is with much reluctance that I remain in this place; but since so much generosity and compassion shine in all your language, condescend to inform me how I may remove myself to the Isle of Uxi. Teach me, I intreat you, the happy means to deliver the Queen of Hattun Rucana from her sad captivity.’

#### H O U R X L I.

‘**W**HAT is this you request?’ replied the amiable form; ‘have you already forgotten the offer made you by the King of Silence, and is all the language you heard from me, the last night you slumbered in the palace of that prince, lost in oblivion? The Isle of Puna was to furnish you with expedients to disengage you from your difficulties; but there is at present no necessity of having recourse to the King of Silence; for do you not wear a ring on your finger, which gives you an absolute dominion over the birds? Why then do you not command one of the tribe to waft you over the ocean? You never will be in a condition to present the Queen of Hattun Rucana with the blessing of liberty, till you have obtained the lance of the prophet Huamachu; why then do you delay to search for a treasure you ought to wish for with the greatest ardour and impatience?’

My soul was tortured with new pangs of sorrow when I heard I was to revisit

the Isle of Puna, where I was apprehensive of meeting the exasperated magician; I exerted, however, all the resolution I was able to summon to my assistance, and endeavoured to rise above the calamities that threatened me: ‘Great goddess,’ said I, ‘it shall be my dutiful part to accomplish your commands; but let me intreat you, before you retire, to give me some information of the state to which the Queen of Hattun Rucana is now doomed; does she still breathe the vital air of heaven, or has she descended to the silent regions of the dead? Vouchsafe to gratify my curiosity in this instance; for what can be concealed from the unclouded knowledge of the gods?’—‘Prince,’ replied the celestial appearance, ‘the Queen has been inflexible to all the solicitations of the sovereign of Uxi; the gods support her with their providential care; and though she imagines you no longer among the living, she continues to love you as tenderly as ever, resolving to die rather than violate the fidelity she promised you; her soul is entirely resigned to grief, and she bewails your loss without the least intermission: her blood is chilled with horror when Yllapantac approaches her, and she chooses to deprive herself of the cheerful beams of the sun, rather than behold the author of her misfortunes. As to any other particulars,’ pursued the goddess, ‘the time is too precious to be wasted in relating them, and you will do well to improve the present opportunity in the most effectual manner; for all the anguish you can possibly indulge will never soften the rigour of your adversity.’

At the close of these words, the favourable divinity disappeared from my view; but her language infused new fortitude through all my soul; every pulse began to play with its former vigour, and the raptures with which her benevolent language had inspired me, were so lively and efficacious, that they soon awakened me from my trance. The moment I regained the use of my faculties, I fell prostrate on the earth, and breathed my gratitude to the gods in humble adorations; and when I had performed that act of devotion, I uttered aloud this fervent invocation—‘O ye winged tribes,’ said I, ‘who inhabit the pure regions of air! faithful vassals to the enchanted turquoise!

‘turquoise! I greatly need some friendly assistance to convey me to the Island of Puna.’

I had scarce uttered these expressions, when a chariot, drawn by two birds of a prodigious size, descended on the earth; I then gave the last farewell to Tacina, and thanked him for all the services he had so generously rendered me: when I had thus acquitted myself, I ascended the chariot, and gave the birds a signal for flight, at which they immediately rose on the wing, and drew me through a vast expanse of air; but when I at last beheld the Isle of Puna below me, I checked the reins, and the birds directed their flight to the earth; I then descended from the chariot, and commanded the winged animals to follow me; I found myself in a very spacious plain, in the middle of which I discovered a considerable cluster of rural cots, and beyond them, a large and splendid pile, which I supposed was the palace where the monarch of the island resided.

I was exceedingly delighted to find the country inhabited, and directed my steps to the buildings I saw before me; but I was lost in astonishment when I observed, at my arrival, that the people I expected to see were only so many statues of stone; the streets were filled with numbers of these figures, who appeared in a walking posture; others seemed to be drawing water from deep wells; some carried piles of wood on their shoulders; in other places I saw the forms of young children, whose several actions imitated the innocent play peculiar to that age.

My surprise at such a miraculous sight was almost inconceivable, and though my curiosity led me into several of the houses, the same inanimate scene still rose before me; I beheld innumerable shapes of petrified men and women, and children. In some apartments, the figures were disposed round a table, as if they were regaling themselves with a collation, and where all the attitudes of such an entertainment were exhibited in the greatest perfection; in other rooms, I beheld women holding young infants at their breasts, and different chambers presented me with the appearance of several persons extended on beds in the seeming enjoyment of soft slumber. In a word, so infinite was the variety of this spectacle, that every occupation of life was represented in all its natural exactness; my eyes were never fatiated

with surveying this amazing group of statues; their extraordinary number, their engaging beauty, and their diversified forms of action, were so many prodigies that astonished me beyond expression; ‘Is this,’ said I, ‘any particular species of mankind, or may I call it the wanton play of nature? Is it not rather the fatal mark of some magician’s vengeance, or more properly the sad monument of divine justice?’

When I had sufficiently pursued my discoveries in several of the houses, I had an inclination to visit the great building that rose above the rest; but before I could arrive there, it was necessary for me to pass through a vast court, guarded by twelve lions: the confidence I reposed in the talisman I had received from the Queen of Silence, secured me from any apprehensions of those savage animals, whose eyes seemed kindled into flame; however, I drew my sabre, and advanced towards them with a sedate pace; but the lions, instead of opposing me with their paws and fangs, withdrew to a considerable distance, with their tails sweeping the ground, and by a variety of humble blandishments, made me sensible they had not any intention to prejudice my person. Two of these animals, who were less intimidated than the rest, or rather more tame and tractable, walked up to me with a submissive air, and tendered me all the caresses their dumb civilities could express; after which I continued my progress to the palace.

The gates were wide open, and I entered with a mind agitated by various thoughts; the same lifeless appearance which I beheld in the lesser habitations was continued here; my eyes wandered over innumerable human forms in marble that stood before me, and the magnificence of the apartments as much surprised me as the other appearances; the walls in some were covered with plates of gold, so artificially joined together, that they seemed to be one entire mass of that metal; in other chambers a profusion of silver plates produced the same effect; the cornices flamed with turquoises and emeralds, and all the variety of precious gems; the walls were bordered with shining seats of silver, covered with the skins of bears and tigers: but my astonishment was raised to the highest pitch at the splendor of a large hall, where all the most precious curiosities in nature seemed to be collected; the golden covering



vering of the walls was hardly visible, and these at little distances were hollowed into niches, filled with the figures of men or animals. Round the lower part of the walls were ranged several trees, formed of precious stones, blended with a gay diversity of rich colours, and so disposed, as to affect the eye with a perfect imitation of nature. At one end of the hall appeared a pavilion of silver, raised over a bed of the same metal, and covered with skins of a surprising whiteness, on which I saw an amiable youth and a lady in all the charms of blooming beauty; they were seated upright, and appeared under the impression of a strange consternation: at a distance I imagined them to be living forms; but upon a near approach, I perceived they were petrified like the rest of the figures I had beheld.

I had a view through the palace of a vast garden surrounded with high walls, and upon my descending into it, I found it had been greatly neglected for many years; the weeds sprung up in every part, and the walks were scarce distinguishable from any other improvement into which the garden had been originally disposed: I took notice, however, by a prodigious growth in flowers which covered one half of the garden, that this part had been laid out in a parterre; the other division was formed into an orchard, where the beautiful symmetry in which the trees rose, presented the eye with the finest prospect imaginable; the fruits with which the branches were loaded, invited me to taste them, and when I had gathered some from different trees, I found their flavour very excellent. Two fountains divided themselves into various rills, watered the garden, and furnished me with abundance of pleasure.

## H O U R XLII.

I Had at last visited every apartment in the palace except one, into which I had not entered because the door was fastened. I saw indeed a lock, to which the head of a living leopard performed the office of a key; but I was in some hesitation whether I ought in prudence to venture into that apartment; and though my curiosity exceedingly prompted me to discover what it contained, I had resolution enough, however, to get the better of that inclination; besides night came on apace, and made me determine not to open the

door. I retired therefore into another chamber, and stretched myself on one of the seats, where I enjoyed a very agreeable repose.

When the dawn began to break, my slumber presented me with a new dream; the same female form, or more properly the goddess who appeared to me in my midnight sleep in the palace of the King of Silence, and since that in the confines of Chacma, stood before me a third time; but the former serenity of her aspect seemed discomposed by some inquietude: 'Houac,' said she, 'what dost thou wait for now? Rise immediately, and open the door of the apartment thou findest locked; thou wilt see upon a table in the first chamber, the lance of the prophet Huamachu; seize it that instant, and be gone without losing a moment's time: only remember to strike every stone figure in the palace, the lesser habitations, and the streets, with that lance. When thou hast paid this obedience to my orders, let thy next care be to find the Queen of Hattun Rucana. Yllapantac will be unable to offer thee any injury; and though he were surrounded with fifty thousand magicians, thou shalt humble all their power.'

My slumber left me the moment the goddess disappeared, and my mind was wrought into such strong impressions by the vision I had seen, that I thought it reasonable to consider it as a certain confirmation of the other two I formerly had, and therefore began to presage the event would be favourable to my wishes. I then with the greatest impatience hastened to the apartment that was shut up, and had no sooner stretched my hand to the lock, than the head of the leopard vanished from my sight, and the door flew open; I sprung with one leap to the lance of the prophet Huamachu, and grasped it in my hand, and in my return through the several apartments of the palace, I gently struck all the stone figures, and they started into life the same moment.

Whilst I was restoring new animation to such a multitude of unhappy persons, the magician who had espoused the Princess of Chacma was engaged in a very different operation; he infused life, as well as myself, into several of the statues; but his intention was to give them more effectual death than they had suffered in their petrified state. When I came into the hall where the prince and princess sat, I perceived

perceived he had strangled them with the greatest barbarity. The wretch trembled when he beheld me, and I was not a little animated at this discovery of his fear: 'Whoever thou art, O inhuman murderer!' said I, 'cease thy pernicious cruelty, or thou shalt immediately experience to thy cost, what power attends the lance of the prophet Huamachu.'

The magician disregarded the menace I uttered, and in an instant assumed the form of a furious lion: he shook the palace with his roar, he glared upon me with eyes that sparkled with rage, and advanced towards me with an intention to rend me with his claws: for my part, I was not very solicitous to throw myself into a posture of defence. The virtue of the enchanted lance, and the ring I had received from the sister of the King of Silence, made him incapable of approaching me within the distance of two cubits. At this repulse he became desperate, and transformed himself into a bird of a stupendous size, but with as little effect: when he found all his endeavours to spring upon me were ineffectual, he disappeared for a few moments, and in the mean time the earth opened a dreadful gulph before me, out of which a burning dragon ascended, and filled all the apartment with flames. Hitherto I had not suffered any extraordinary emotion, but had beheld the two first transformations of the magician with indifference; nor was I incommoded with the fire that burst from the dragon's mouth, but then I was apprehensive lest he should burn the palace, and therefore resolved to assault the monster without losing a moment's time; I darted my lance at his body, and at the same instant the flame was immediately extinguished; the dragon became invisible, or rather the magician re-assumed his natural form, and lay extended on the earth without life, and half consumed with his own fires.

When the combat was thus finished by the death of this barbarian, I attempted to revive the prince and princess; but, alas! the lance of the prophet Huamachu touched them in vain, their eyes were already closed with eternal sleep, and their souls had taken a sad flight to the regions of the dead. I was exceedingly afflicted at their fate, for I was entirely ignorant why they were punished with so much severity.

When I was convinced all my endeavours to revive them would be unavailing,

I passed into the other apartments, where several compassionate offices remained to be performed by my ministrations; I restored to life all the statues I saw, and then visited the lesser mansions with the same success; I repeopled every place as fast as possible, and proceeded from house to house with great precipitation, lest any other magician should appear and interrupt my work.

In the meantime, all the inhabitants I had thus revived, gathered round me in great numbers: but their astonishment at the sudden change they experienced, and their veneration for me were so great, that they were unable to utter a word to express their gratitude for what I had performed; they all followed me in silence, but when I touched any statue into life, they expressed their admiration by a loud cry.

When I had completed the task assigned me, and began to recover breath, the whole body of the people proclaimed my applause with one voice, and were never weary with imploring the blessings of heaven on my future days; they crowded upon me to tender their caresses; they embraced my knees, they kissed my hands and the border of my cincture; in a word, their joy was universal on this occasion. 'Be thou a god or a mortal,' cried they, 'we will ever honour thee for the future, as a divinity; our children's children shall transmit through all ages, our grateful sense of the obligations we have received from thy goodness; and, for our parts, we will yearly testify our acknowledgments, by the festivals we intend to celebrate to thy glory.'

'My friends,' replied I, 'you may believe me, when I assure you, I am no divinity, but a mortal like yourselves: the gods, in compassion to your miserable state, sent me to deliver you in the manner I have accomplished. The success which has attended my endeavours was owing to their assistance, and therefore you ought to offer up the tribute of your gratitude to those celestial beings, and thank the great authors of this benevolent event: I have only been the executor of their commands, and therefore your vows ought to be addressed to none but them; let your devotion then be signalized by your sacrifices to those divine benefactors.'

'We shall not neglect,' said some of the



the principal persons among them, 'to thank the gods for the benefits they have afforded us; but, my lord,' continued they, 'if you be not a god yourself, what happy accident has conducted you to this island? How were you able to escape the rage of the lions, who guard the entrance into the palace? In what manner did you obtain the lance of the prophet Huamachu? These are circumstances above the power of human abilities to accomplish.'

I satisfied their curiosity in every particular; and when I had finished my relation—'I now desire you,' said I, 'in your turn, to inform me by what means your sovereign and yourselves have been transformed into statues of stone?'—'My lord,' replied one who made the best appearance in the assembly, 'we can easily give you the satisfaction you expect; and when he observed that I listened to him with attention, he related the particulars in these terms.

#### HOOR XLIII.

**M**Y lord, (said he) the sovereignty of this island has, for several ages, been enjoyed by two families, who by a bold sacrilege had taken the lance of the prophet Huamachu out of the temple of the great Rimac; but, as this treasure was incapable of being divided, it was agreed that both the sovereignty and the lance should be alternately possessed by the eldest branch of each family. This regulation has always been religiously observed, till this magician you have vanquished ascended the throne; his reign has been of a long continuance, and about five years ago, seeing himself destitute of male issue, he gave his only daughter in marriage to the prince who was to succeed him on the throne; and in consideration of this alliance, transferred the sovereign power to the young prince, only reserving to himself the entire possession of the enchanted lance, during the remainder of his life.

The new monarch was not contented with the advantageous fortune to which he had been raised, and the remembrance of his being dispossessed of the lance was a sharp thorn, which continually penetrated to his heart, and urged him to form several schemes to make himself master of such a treasure: he at first practised every artifice he could invent,

but without any success; so that at last he determined to have recourse to violence; in consequence of which, he resolved one night to assassinate the old magician in his bed, and the conspirators came into his apartment with that intention; but the noise they made when they opened the door, roused him from his slumber, and gave him time to seize the lance, which rendered him invulnerable. This did not prevent them from assaulting him with all their force; for it is the fatality of some people, to suffer themselves to be hurried to a precipice by their inordinate passions; they flatter themselves they shall meet with no opposition, equal to the impetuosity of their desires; but those conspirators were immediately sensible of their illusion; for the magician transformed them with his lance into statues of stone, and only exempted one from that fate, that he might learn who were the accomplices in his crime. This person unhappily charged our young prince with this conspiracy, and likewise gave the magician to understand, that the princess, and the most considerable persons among the people, were associated in the confederacy against him; when he had received this information, he immediately resolved on vengeance; and as he thought it insufficient to punish none but the guilty, he involved the innocent in the fatal effects of his indignation, and changed the prince, with all his subjects, into forms of stone. The magician (continued the person who acquainted me with these particulars,) was sensible, without doubt, that some person had possessed himself of the prophet's lance, and was apprehensive lest the new proprietor of this treasure should restore our prince to life, and re-establish him in the sovereignty of this isle, and therefore practised all his incantations to frustrate that design; and, to our misfortune, has been too successful in his intentions.

When I had received all the information I desired, the elders of the assembly approached me, and very respectfully addressed themselves to me in these terms:

'My lord,' said they, 'we cannot express our gratitude to you in a more effectual manner, than by intreating you to accept of the sovereignty of this island. The prince who lately swayed the sceptre, is no more; the magician himself is dead, and the throne is become vacant: we all implore you to ascend it, and reign over a grateful people;

‘ people; we entirely resign ourselves to your government, and promise a perpetual obedience to all your commands.’

When I had heard this proposal, I rose from my seat, and stood before them, leaning on the lance of the Prophet Huamachua. ‘ My friends,’ said I, ‘ as your throne is now vacant, you are at full liberty to dispose of it as you think fit; and if you are desirous of a monarch, you must elect him from your own tribes, for it is impossible I should accept of the offer you have made me; the gods reserve me for another throne, very distant from this island; and I am under an indispensable obligation to leave you, that I may render obedience to the command of those supreme powers, who call me to other regions of the earth: from this moment, therefore, I must be separated from you for ever. I have only one duty to recommend to your observation; let it be your constant care to fear the gods, and remember they are the spectators of all your actions.’

All the people expressed much reluctance at my resolution to leave them; they renewed their importunities, and melted into tears; so that to disengage myself from their unavailing solicitations, I was obliged to give a signal to the birds who brought me to that island: I ascended the chariot, and ordered my conductors to waft me to the Isle of Uxi, where I arrived this day. I immediately proceeded to the palace of Yllapantac, and transformed all his officers and domesticks into dogs; after which I compelled Yllapantac himself to tell me in what place he had secluded you from the world, and I had assured him, that the treatment he was to expect from me should correspond with his conduct to you in your captivity.

At these words, the prince of the isle of Uxi cast himself at the feet of Prince Houac; ‘ My lord,’ said he, ‘ if your heart can be touched with the sincere repentance I express for my crime, you will condescend to pardon the injury I have offered you; I was afflicted at the death of my brother; and the charms of the Queen of Hattun Rucana had entirely captivated my heart; I am, therefore, sufficiently punished by the fate which compels me to resign her to your arms.’

‘ Wretch as thou art,’ replied the prince, ‘ forbear to flatter thyself with

‘ vain hopes, and do not imagine I can ever be prevailed upon to forgive thee, since thy crimes are too malignant to be committed with impunity: hadst thou only offended me, I might possibly have treated thee with some compassion, but thou hast had the presumption to injure the queen, and hast solicited her to comply with thy infamous desires; thou alone art the cause of the cruel inquietudes in which she passed so many of her days, since thou hast separated us from each other; and the grief with which thy inhuman treatment has overwhelmed her, would have soon laid her in the grave, had not the gods made me the happy instrument of her preservation.—And now, Madam,’ continued he, ‘ be it your part to name what punishment I shall inflict on this barbarous offender.’

‘ Prince,’ replied the queen, ‘ the gods are always favourable to those who acknowledge their crimes; and it is truly glorious to imitate such an amiable example. Let this unhappy man live to confess there is a superior Power, which extends it’s protection to virtue, and frustrates the designs of the wicked; and as he has had the moderation not to treat me with any violence since I have been in his power, I become a suppliant both for his liberty and his re-establishment on his throne.’—‘ Madam,’ replied the prince, ‘ his life is safe the moment you condescend to be his intercessor, and I am willing to allow him the sovereignty of this island, without insisting on my prerogative to dispose of it as I should think fit: but I command him never to set a foot in your dominions; and to be certain of his obedience, I intend to deprive him of his wings.’

‘ Ah, my lord!’ interrupted Yllapantac, ‘ do not afflict me with a misfortune that will prove so insupportable to my soul! Let me not be once more the scorn of the earth, and the unhappy sport of fortune; divest me rather of the sovereignty of this island, and I will retire to such a remote distance, that you shall never hear me mentioned any more; or, if that will not satisfy your resentment, deprive me of the life I enjoy; for I had much rather die than fill my subjects with horror, and behold myself a shameful blemish to my family.’

‘ Thy language,’ replied the prince,



‘has raised my curiosity; is it possible, then, that the advantage thou derivest from thy wings should be so considerable, as to induce thee to prefer them to the possession of this island, and even life itself?’

## H O U R XLIV.

‘YES, my lord,’ replied Yllapantac, ‘my wings are more precious to me than the vital air I breathe; and you would entertain the same opinion were I to acquaint you with some adventures that have happened to me; but the relation may possibly be too long, because I shall be obliged to mention several circumstances of my father’s life; besides, this place is not sufficiently commodious, and the queen, as well as yourself, may need some refreshments.’—‘Let us adjourn ourselves to the palace then,’ said the prince, ‘and thou shalt entertain us with the history of thy life, whilst we are taking some sustenance.’—‘I am obedient to all your commands,’ replied Yllapantac; ‘and permit me to assure you, that I shall relate the most extraordinary adventures that can possibly be conceived by any imagination.’

Prince Houac then addressing himself to the queen—‘Blessed be the gods,’ said he, ‘for all the wonderful events they have so graciously accomplished in our favour. You may now, Madam, prepare to re-visit your dominions, where your presence will be the general felicity of your people, and where we shall then taste all the sweets of a tender union, after the many calamities with which we have been so long afflicted; but let us first take some refreshments in the palace, where Yllapantac shall entertain us with the history of his adventures.’—‘I have the same curiosity as you,’ replied the queen, rising from her seat, ‘to hear the particulars the Prince of Uxi has promised to relate.’ Prince Houac then presented his hand to the beautiful queen, and led her out of the grotto, after which they proceeded in their way to the palace.

When they arrived there, Prince Houac touched all the officers and domesticks with his lance, and they immediately appeared in their natural forms. Yllapantac then conducted the two illustrious lovers into a magnificent hall, where in a few

moments, a table was covered with a variety of exquisite delicacies. When they had all seated themselves, the queen addressed her discourse to the Prince of the Isle of Uxi; ‘We have but a very short time,’ said she, ‘to continue in this place, and I would willingly have it employed in gratifying the curiosity you have raised in me, to hear the history of your life: I am sensible, by what you have already intimated, that the events of it must be very extraordinary; and am fully persuaded, that the wings with which you are accommodated will be no inconsiderable circumstance in your adventures; I therefore make it my request to you, that you will now entertain us with the relation.’

## THE HISTORY OF THE PRINCE OF THE ISLE OF UXI.

YLLAPANTAC was obedient to the queen’s desires, and to gratify the curiosity she had expressed, began the history of his life in this manner: I must inform you, Madam, (said he) that my father reigned many years in this island, and was privileged by the gods to live two compleat ages; he descended by his mother from the line of the prophets, and from that illustrious birth derived the extraordinary power he enjoyed. He passed many years without entertaining any thoughts of marriage; but whether his disinclination to that state proceeded from his indifference to the amiable sex, or from any apprehension of engaging himself too soon in the cares of a family, I cannot take upon me to declare; but he lived an age and a half before he determined to choose a consort, from whom he might expect an heir to inherit the sovereignty of his dominions, and the peculiar powers with which he was invested.

One day, when he was entertaining himself with the innocent delights of the country, he happened to cast his eyes on the daughter of one of his vassals, and she had the good fortune to appear so lovely and engaging to her sovereign, that he immediately became passionately enamoured of her charms. At first, indeed, the great disproportion in their births made him endeavour, for some time, to extinguish the kindling flame in his breast; but when he found all his efforts ineffectual, he at last determined

to demand the young virgin of her father in marriage; and it may be easily imagined, he obtained her without any difficulty. Her father was transported with joy, to behold his prince so desirous of espousing a daughter whom he would have thought sufficiently honoured with the quality of his mistress. The nuptials were celebrated with all the solemnity suitable to such an occasion, and before the expiration of the first year Yllqui, for that was the name of my mother-in-law, gave birth to that giant whom Prince Houac, Madam, destroyed in your territories.

Yllqui, being thus happy in a marriage which redounded so much to her honour, and thinking herself still more fortunate in the tender quality of a parent, enjoyed all the felicity she could possibly desire; when Fortune, who frequently delights to persecute those who ought to be the least obnoxious to her capricious inconstancy, formed a fatal resolution to interrupt the soft tranquillity and conjugal satisfactions in which Yllqui passed her happy days. A young officer, whom my father had placed near her person, to tender her the services of a domestick, became unfortunately captivated with the charms of his sovereign: love soon inflamed his heart with criminal desires, and made him resolute to gratify them, whatever might be the event.

Armaca, for that was the young officer's name, was not so stupid as to flatter himself with any possibility of pleasing the princess; he knew her virtue was too impregnable, and the idea of her duty too perfect to authorize any hopes of her conformity to his desires: artifice was the only expedient from whence he could derive any probability of success, and he accordingly determined to surprize her some night, when the absence of my father would be favourable to his intentions.

All his thoughts being thus devoted to his passion, and the means of presenting it with it's utmost gratification, he at last beheld the favourable moment he had languished for with so much impatience. One night, when my father departed from the palace to consult the oracle of the great Rimac, and when all the officers and domesticks were enjoying the refreshments of slumber, the greedy lover put himself into a condition to accomplish his crime; he found means to gain a secret access to the chamber where the

princess reposed, and advancing with soft steps, like a tyger preparing to surprize his defenceless prey, he left his habit and sabre in a chair near the bed, and then laid himself by the sleeping princess, with a resolution to compleat the stratagem he had premeditated in such an impious manner.

The event would undoubtedly have been agreeable to his expectations, had not the beauteous Yllqui suddenly discovered his treacherous intentions; she shuddered with fear, to behold a man so near her, who was not her husband. 'Wretch as thou art!' cried she, 'what fury transports thee to this behaviour? Into what a depth of woe wouldst thou cruelly precipitate my innocence! But do not flatter thyself with the accomplishment of so detestable a purpose; whoever thou art, be gone before I discover thee, and forbear to aggravate thy crime by any farther insolence; and since, as yet, thou art not altogether guilty of the impious action thou hast ungenerously premeditated, let not my nuptial bed be polluted by the impurity of thy desires; and do not, by declaring thyself thy master's rival, attempt the violation of my honour, which will never make thee any concessions that would justly cover me with confusion.'

So inordinate and untractable was the passion of Armaca, that he was but little affected with the expostulations of the princess; and as he determined to persist in his first design, he had recourse to all the soft and insinuating language love could possibly suggest: but, as he was unable to extenuate the horror that virtuous lady expressed at his presumption, he wound his arms round her delicate neck, and endeavoured to obtain by violence what she had so steadily refused to his tenderness.

The princess, at that moment, found herself inspired by a noble indignation, which wrought her soul into a degree of fury itself, and the imminent danger with which she beheld herself threatened supplied her with unusual strength for her preservation; she disengaged herself from the base invader of her honour, and without uttering a word, sprung to the sabre, which the glimmer of a lamp in her chamber gave her an opportunity to discover, and seized it with a resolution to punish the criminal for his temerity; but Armaca, whose conscience was now touched with a sudden remorse, cast him-  
self





Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. March 4. 1786.





self at her feet with an air of affected contrition; 'Madam,' said he, 'my heart is entirely at your disposal, and I do not even supplicate your mercy for it's preservation. I acknowledge myself as criminal as a presumptuous passion can render me, and I merit the severest death that cruelty itself can inflict; I do not pretend to soften your displeasure against me by my sincere repentance; guilty love no longer dictates to me the language I utter; for I owe the happy change of my sentiments to your virtue and heroic resolution; but at the same time reflect, with horror, on the perplexity to which you are preparing to expose yourself; what will the officers and domesticks of the palace say, should they find a man dead in your chamber? You have all the reason imaginable to dread the freedoms of speech in which they will indulge themselves on such an occasion; many of them are notorious for their insolence and detraction, and they will not fail to pass the most uncandid constructions on your conduct: permit me, Madam, for that reason, to prevail on you to consult the security of your honour; and for your own sake, spare an unfortunate wretch, who deserves to live for no other reason than because his death would be fatal to you; let me intreat you, then, to pay a serious regard to what I have had the honour to intimate to you on this melancholy subject.'

The princess thought his advice very discreet, and consistent with her interest. 'I am sensible,' said she, 'the reasons you alledge are just, and your repentance has disarmed me of all my anger; I freely pardon your rash proceeding, and swear by the great Rimac, that I will never disclose it to any mortal! Withdraw therefore immediately, and be very careful not to let any person see you come out of my apartment.' At these words, she gave him his sabre, and locked the door when he was gone; after which, she laid herself on the bed, in hopes this affair, being likely to remain a secret, would not have any disagreeable consequence.

All the precautions of mortals are unavailing against the assaults of fortune; in vain did the princess endeavour to soothe herself into serenity and composure of mind, after the transactions in which she had so considerable a part. It is true, indeed, the prince my father,

who arrived the same night at his palace, did not discover any disorderly emotions in his consort; but alas! she was betrayed by her own slumbers; for the moment her eyes were closed in sleep, her imagination was altogether engaged by the adventure she had so lately experienced. It is certain, there are some objects which strike such deep impressions on the soul, that the traces of them are preserved in the memory for a long series of time; of such a nature was the impression wrought on the mind of the princess, by a sense of the danger her honour had sustained; and the circumstances formed so lively an image in her soul whilst she slept, that she imagined herself to be still in conflict with the perils she had so lately escaped; she became afflicted by the same emotions, and was spirited by all her former fury; she repelled the imaginary violence of the ravisher, and defended herself as if Armaca was still attempting the violation of her chastity; she started from the bed at last, and in the violent agitations of her mind, seized my father's poniard, which she found in the same place where Armaca had laid his sabre, and impelled by the fury which had now possessed all her soul, she endeavoured to plunge the fatal weapon in the bosom of her husband.

## H O U R XLV.

**I**T happened very fortunately for my father, that he was not asleep at this time, so that he prevented the blow which was aimed at his life, and seizing his wife by the arm, wrested the poniard out of her hand. 'Ah, ungrateful wretch,' cried he, 'is this all the recompence thou affordest me for the many obligations I have conferred upon thee! Have I condescended to make thee the partner of my bed, and raised thee to a throne, only to indulge thee with an opportunity to crimson thy perfidious hands in my blood? Ungrateful, barbarous woman!' continued he, 'you wish to plant a dagger in my heart, doubtless, because some other man enjoys that place in your affection, which my generous passion for you entitled me to the possession of for ever.'

These severe reproaches waked the princess from her sleep; and as she had never heard such language from her consort till then, she was in the utmost astonishment

nishment and confusion. It is possible for persons to be overwhelmed with apprehensions, even when they are sensible their conduct has been irreproachable, and these timorous emotions are naturally created by a tender mind; an extraordinary surprise will sometimes produce the same effect in the innocent as well as the guilty; it will infuse a mean timidity into the soul, and cause it to resign itself without resistance to the calamity in view. Such was the unhappy condition of my mother-in-law at that time; but when she had recovered herself a little from the first impressions of her astonishment—'My lord,' said she, 'is it possible you can so cruelly reproach a wife who adores you? Can you prevail upon yourself, then, to fix such a dishonourable imputation on the virtue of a woman who has ever consecrated her tenderest affections to you alone; and will you suffer the involuntary effects of a delusive dream to pass for unexceptionable proofs of the infidelity you lay to my charge?'

'Alas!' replied my father, with a deep sigh, 'I wish what I hear was as true as you would insinuate it to be! Why am I unable to persuade myself that your language is sincere!' The inward pangs with which this unfortunate lady was tortured, to find her virtue suspected, and the apprehensions of her inability to undeceive my father, joined with the perplexity she suffered by her obligation to conceal the adventure that had so lately happened to her, made her express herself in such a disorderly manner, as had a tendency rather to confirm my father's suspicions, than to dissipate them, as she desired: but when she had frequently intreated him to strike the poniard into her breast, if he still continued to disbelieve her, he at last seemed in some measure to credit the assurances she gave him of her innocence.

The satisfaction she received from this favourable disposition of her consort was but of a short continuance; for when my father rose, he beheld in a chair near his bed the cincture which Armaca, in his confusion, had forgotten to take away when he quitted the apartment. This fatal object made it impossible for him any longer to doubt of his dishonour; his countenance gloomed with fury, and he unsheathed his poniard, with a resolution that her blood should wash away the injury he imagined

he had sustained by her infidelity to her nuptial vows: 'Perfidious creature!' said he, 'I am now qualified to pass an infallible judgment on thy conduct; look upon this unexceptionable evidence of thy shame, and receive the recompence due to so much unpardonable guilt.' He closed these words with a fatal stab; the weapon opened itself a wide passage into her unspotted bosom, and her inexorable husband left her expiring on the bed, and bathed in a purple stream of her vital blood.

He was not satisfied with exercising his vengeance on his unhappy wife, but resolved that the son she had given him should share the punishment of his mother's pretended crime; he seized this guiltless victim, and after he had conveyed him out of the island, he laid him on the cold ground in a wild forest, and abandoned him to the fury of the beasts who inhabited those forlorn shades.

Several years rolled on, before my father had the least inclination to take a second consort to his bed; and though he was still capable of inspiring a young lady with tender sentiments, notwithstanding his age, he could not bring himself to fix his affections on any particular object; he had even conceived such an irreconcilable aversion for marriage, that he discharged from his service all his officers and domesticks, who would not divorce themselves from their wives; 'No,' said he, 'I will not believe there are any chaste beauties among that ensnaring sex; they are all influenced by a malignant disposition to inconstancy, and if any among them has the peculiarity to preserve her honour unblemished, it must be owing to her want of a favourable opportunity to stain it.'

Such sentiments as these inspired my father with a resolution to pass the remainder of his days in an obstinate seclusion from the sex; but ah! how irresistible is the power of love! how vain do mortals oppose his laws; for when the destined period is once come, they are indispensably obliged to bear his yoke. It was customary with my father to take a progress very frequently into the country of the Collaguas; and one day he cast his eyes on a young maiden, whose engaging modesty charmed him the moment he beheld her; at first he took but little notice of the attractions of her person, though they were as perfect as possible, but at last this happy conjunction



conjunction of virgin beauty and unaffected modesty transported him beyond expression, and he soon became sensible, that he was influenced by an irresistible passion for this amiable person; 'How unjust,' said he to himself, 'have I been to this very moment, in judging so disadvantageously of the virtue of this charming sex! I was then unacquainted with Cumac Unui, for that was the name of the young lady who had captivated his heart; her modesty,' continued he, 'equals that of the goddesses themselves, and it is impossible that her beauty should be ever injurious to her virtue.'

Whilst he was indulging himself in these meditations, Cumac Unui happened to appear in the place where he then was; he immediately started up, and advanced to meet her, and when he had cast himself at her feet, he unfolded his passion to her in the most engaging language he could utter; he implored her to pity the resistless flame she had kindled in his soul, and at the same time offered to place her on the throne of the Isle of Uxi.

Cumac Unui answered my father's declaration like a person whose heart had never been wounded by the shafts of love, and who then began to be sensible of it's first impressions. 'Prince,' said she, 'the throne you condescend to offer me can never make me forget the great inequality in our births! You are a powerful prince, and I am the daughter of a private person; you ought therefore to reserve the glory of your passion for some lady more worthy than myself to be the partner of your bed. The animals around us never furnish us with any instances of such a disproportionate alliance; the great unite themselves with the great, and the inferior tribes choose themselves companions from their own class: the regulation which nature dictates to these creatures ought to be observed by mankind in the transactions of civil life; let me therefore conjure you, for the sake of your honour, and my future repose, not to infuse those impressions into my soul, which a mature reflection will undoubtedly incline us both to condemn.'

'No, my lovely queen,' replied my father, all transported with her engaging language, 'you are injurious to your own merit, if you imagine there is any disproportion between us; love unites the

most distant conditions of life; and were your heart once warmed with the same fires that consume mine, you would soon be sensible of this truth; but alas! my age is so unhappy as to disgust you, and you consider it as an imperfection that ought to make you reject the voluntary offer of my heart; at the same time, you may possibly have disposed of your own in favour of some more fortunate and youthful lover.'—'Ah, prince!' interrupted Cumac Unui, 'you treat me with an unkind injustice; for it is well known that I, as yet, have not devoted my heart to any mortal, and my father has frequently reproached me for discovering too much indifference for your sex; and oh! that it had pleased Heaven, you had never acquainted me with that passion you have now disclosed!'

At the conclusion of these words, the beautiful maiden remained silent, with her eyes modestly directed to the earth; her face was painted with rosy blushes; and such was her confusion at the discovery she had made, in some measure, of the disposition of her heart, that it deprived her of the faculty of speech. My father was very careful to improve the happy moment, and was so successful in his addresses, that he at last engaged her to consent to his demanding her of her father in marriage; but in granting him this permission, all the powers of her soul seemed to be suspended, her insupportable confusion would not suffer her to continue any longer in the presence of her lover; she disengaged herself from his embraces, and abruptly retired to her apartment.

My father was so impatient to hasten his nuptials with Cumac Unui, that the moment she left him he went to her father, and acquainted him with his passionate desire to espouse his daughter: such a proposal was too advantageous to be rejected; the terms were immediately agreed upon, and when the necessary preparations were completed, the marriage was celebrated with all the solemnity proper on such an occasion.

Amidst the pleasures of the festival, Cumac Unui unfortunately happened to fall while she was dancing, and was immediately afflicted with severe pains: but the publick joy was not long interrupted by this accident; the bride soon recovered her former vivacity, and the apprehensions occasioned by her disaster were dissipated.

dissipated in an instant. The diversions were continued, and towards the close of day, the wedded pair were conducted to their apartment, and all the company then withdrew.

My father then repeated to his spouse all his former protestations of an unchangeable affection, and thought his happiness beyond the power of imagination to conceive; he implored the gods to add some future years to the life they had already granted him, that he might enjoy the felicity they had reserved for his latter days. Cumac Unui, on her part, made him the most engaging returns to all his transports; 'My dearest lord,' said she, 'you first taught my soul to love, and to you alone am I indebted for the soft precepts of that passion; I beheld all mankind with indifference, till you charmed me with your amiable affection; till then, I was never happy, but when I was freed from the importunities of my lovers: you had the restless art to tune my soul to softness, and the felicity I derive from my union with you is infinitely superior to all the joys I could possibly taste, were I invested with the power of the greatest among the prophets.'

She would have continued this endearing language, had she not been suddenly seized with such violent pangs as rendered her unable to utter a word more.

#### H O U R XLVI.

**M**Y father tendered her all possible assistance, to relieve her from the pains she suffered; but he had the affliction to find all his fond endeavours unavailing; the violence of her tortures increased every moment, and overwhelmed him with despair; and being at last apprehensive that his amiable bride should expire in his arms, he started from the bed to call for some proper assistance; every expedient that could possibly be imagined, was employed to abate the severity of her torments, but without the least favourable effect; and Cumac Unui did not obtain any relief, till she had brought into the world an unexpected infant, whose birth was certainly hastened by her fall on the day of her nuptials. It was my misfortune (continued the Prince of the Isle of Uxi) to be the fruit of that pregnancy.

My father was so confounded at this spectacle, that he sunk down upon the bed, destitute of all sense and motion; and when he began to revive, it is not possible to express the sorrow and surprise that affected him: 'Ah, perfidious creature!' cried he at last, in the agony of his despair, 'with what a strange scene have you now presented me! How does this convincing proof of your dishonourable conduct agree with your language to me some moments ago? You have rendered yourself forever unworthy of the first impressions with which your pretended virtue inspired me; from this instant they are changed into aversion and the lowest contempt, and I shall only be happy in an eternal separation from such a prodigy of falsehood!'

In the mean time my mother, whom such a strange event had filled with the utmost horror, melted into tears, and it was with pain that she pronounced these few words, which were interrupted with rising sighs: 'My lord,' said she, 'for I no longer presume to call you my husband, I acknowledge your reproaches to be just, though I can solemnly assure you, I am not conscious I deserve them. I confess, indeed, I am now a mother, though I am perfectly unacquainted how I became one; and if I have any inclination to impose upon you at this time, may the gods doom me to be a monument of their vengeance! But alas! can I possibly hope, that my testimony, with the sighs and tears that attend it, will ever persuade you that I am innocent! No, my lord, you have now before you a seeming proof of my dishonour! Let all your revenge then be discharged upon an unfortunate creature, who ought to appear criminal in your eyes; let the hatred you may justly entertain against me, satiate itself in my vital blood, for after the calamitous accident I have now experienced, death alone can be my consolation, and I will die with joy, since I have not any complaints to utter against you, nor any just reproach to cast on myself.'

'Unhappy wretch!' replied my father, 'do not think to impose on my compassionate disposition by an affected air of innocence: it is impossible for you to invent any excuse to extenuate your unpardonable guilt; the evidence you have now given me of my dishonour'



‘should oblige me to wash away the affront you have offered me in your blood; but I willingly allow you to live, and perhaps my revenge will be the greater as your punishment is the less: I divorce you, however, from this moment, with an intention to return you to your father, and to separate myself from your person for ever. Inhuman creature!’ continued he, ‘why hast thou devoted the remainder of my days to so much misery?’ At this instant my father happened to cast his eyes on me, and I appeared to him so wretchedly deformed, that he broke out into new exclamations: ‘Execrable infant!’ said he, ‘thou unfortunate fruit of illegitimate love! may’st thou always continue to be the most misshapen of mankind, and bear about with thee some part of the punishment of thy mother’s crime!’

From that moment, my father became more effectually persuaded, that all women were false and inconstant, and determined never to engage himself in marriage any more; and that he might the better preserve his resolution inviolable, he confirmed it with a solemn oath. This second adventure made him look upon all the sex with a kind of horror; he dismissed all the women from his seraglio; and as experience had made him sufficiently sensible of the powerful charms of beauty, he not only resolved to guard himself against the attraction of strangers, by discontinuing his progress into foreign countries, but was as solicitous to free himself from all apprehensions of the women in his dominions; and lest chance should at any time present to his view some object capable of re-kindling in his heart those flames which he intended to extinguish, he issued a proclamation to forbid all the women and virgins of this island to appear, upon any pretext whatever, in public, on pain of death; and having at last habituated himself to the indifference in which he determined to indulge himself the remainder of his days, he passed all his time in the rural amusements of hunting and fishing; and amidst these pleasing recreations, he calmly awaited the hour when destiny should transmit him to his ancestors in the regions of the dead.

In the mean time, my unfortunate mother wasted her blooming youth in perpetual sighs and tears: she was, indeed, fully convinced of her own inno-

cence; but she endeavoured as much as possible to persuade herself she was guilty, and was indefatigable to accomplish that intention, which must certainly be extremely severe to a person truly virtuous. ‘Alas!’ said she, ‘I have undoubtedly had the misfortune to offend the gods in some unknown instance, since they punish me with so much rigour, and nothing but guilt could expose me to the severities I suffer!’ And then casting her eyes on me—‘Ah, unhappy infant!’ would she cry, ‘thou dost but too well inform me of my offence, and it is evident that thou derivatest thy wretched birth from thy mother’s crimes! Surely nature never produced any object more hideous than thyself; and had I been born in any of those countries where the parents, without the least remorse, destroy their children when they become chargeable and incommodious to them, I would intreat some person to deliver the earth from an inhabitant whose deformity is a reproach to the region where he lives.’ But the next moment she condemned herself for indulging those barbarous thoughts; ‘Wretch that I am,’ said she, ‘what fury transports me to this criminal excess! Could I then be so inhuman as to murder my own offspring!’ No, I am too intimately united to him by blood, to have any intention to injure him; and by what means soever I conceived him, I am indispensably obliged to preserve his life; if he be deformed and shocking to the sight, he is such as the gods pre-ordained him to be, and we ought not to murmur at any of their works, since they best know the conformity of their own designs; besides, is not beauty the wretched source of misfortunes to those who possess that fatal treasure? Yes, my dear infant,’ continued she, with weeping eyes, ‘I receive thee as a present sent me by the gods; I love to behold thee, and am delighted to converse with thee in this manner, and I am only solicitous for life, that I may one day direct thy unexperienced steps into the amiable paths of virtue.’

In this manner did the time slide insensibly away, and I advanced from infancy to youth, at which period my mother lost her father; the liberty she then enjoyed facilitated the accomplishment of a design she had formed to consult the oracle of the great Rimac, with

relation to my nativity: I accompanied her in that journey, and when we arrived at the temple, she offered up this prayer with a fervent devotion—‘Immortal Rimac! deign to extend thy compassion to an unfortunate creature, who implores thy gracious assistance; and if I be not altogether unworthy of thy propitious regards, condescend to afford some mitigation of the calamities that overwhelm me with woe! I do not supplicate thee to place me on the throne which my nuptials gave me some prerogative to ascend; nor do I intreat thee to restore me to the arms of a husband whom I tenderly love, notwithstanding the severe treatment I received from his unrelenting disposition; I only wish thou wouldst vouchsafe to display my innocence, and inform me by thine unerring oracle, who is the father of the son thou hast given me? Thy glory is in some measure interested to satisfy me in two particulars; Didst thou form this prodigy only to render me unhappy? Or at least,’ continued she, ‘if the mother hath made herself obnoxious to thine indignation, extend thy compassion to her child; for wherein can he possibly have offended thee?’

This prayer was accompanied with a flood of tears; but whilst my mother abandoned herself to sorrow, she received this answer from the oracle—‘Cumac Unui, cease to afflict thyself so immoderately: thy husband shall soon be undeceived, and bear testimony to thy virtue; and thy son shall reign in the Isle of Uxi.’

This favourable answer was a singular consolation to my mother, who returned to her habitation, and patiently waited for the accomplishment of what the oracle had promised: nor were her expectations vain; for at the close of the first day of the next moon, we heard a great noise at the door of our rural cot; my mother immediately rose, and when she had opened it, beheld the Laica Cunri, a priestess of the great Rimac. ‘Cumac Unui,’ said she, ‘I am commanded to furnish you with the assistance you need. The Prince of the Isle of Uxi has this day entertained the magicians of his acquaintance with an extraordinary feast, and tomorrow he intends the lot shall decide which of them shall be his successor to the sovereignty of his dominions: but

the gods have determined otherwise, and your son shall inherit the throne of the Isle of Uxi. Come then with me, for we have not any time to lose. I saw your husband in a very cheerful disposition, for he has drank cora very freely; and I desired him to take to his bed some young damsel, whose beauty might justly merit his embraces: he consented to my request, and I am now preparing to place you in his arms under a borrowed name; you must be very careful not to discover yourself till the appearance of day, at which time I intend to come into your chamber; the mystery of this affair shall then be unravelled to your satisfaction, and you shall obtain the completion of all your desires; for the prince will not only cause you to continue in the palace as his wife, but your son shall, at the same time, be acknowledged by his father.’

These unexpected tidings transported my mother with inconceivable joy; and she was preparing to express her grateful acknowledgments, when the Laica taking her by one hand, and me by the other, conveyed us in an instant to the palace of the Prince of the Isle of Uxi: my mother was immediately conducted to his apartment; ‘This is the young person I lately mentioned to you,’ said the Laica to the prince, who immediately received her into his bed; upon which the Laica retired.

#### H O U R XLVII.

WHEN the next morning began to dawn, the Laica called me to her, and afterwards led me into the prince’s chamber. He was still in a deep slumber, but she immediately awakened him, and without giving him time to cast his eyes on my mother—‘Prince,’ said she, ‘how have you passed the night?’—‘Perfectly to my satisfaction,’ replied my father; ‘but, sage Laica,’ continued he, ‘what person is that who accompanies you so early this morning?’—‘Since you are pleased to ask me that question,’ said she, ‘I will answer you without any reserve: I am now come to acquaint you, that you have passed this night with your wife; and you are commanded by the great Rimac to receive her as your lawful spouse, and are enjoined by the same awful authority,



‘ rity, to acknowledge your own son ;  
 ‘ this is the infant the brought into the  
 ‘ world the first night of your nuptials,  
 ‘ and I now present him to his parent.’

Oh, heavens ! how great was my father’s astonishment when he heard this discourse, and beheld his wife at his side ! ‘ Sage Cunri,’ said he, ‘ I might well imagine you would divert yourself at my expence ; but how could you take so much freedom with the sacred name of the great Rimac ? I am altogether lost in amazement, and know not what to think of your discourse.’

‘ Alas ! my lord,’ replied the Laica, ‘ when you are once sensible of the virtue that shines in your consort, you will undoubtedly repent of all the unkind suspicions you have entertained to her disadvantage ; and when you are fully convinced that you yourself are the father of this infant to whom she gave birth, you will no longer scruple to acknowledge him the heir of your dominions.’—‘ Ah me !’ interrupted my father, ‘ sooner shall the cedars be seen to spring from the ocean, and the fish to swim on the tops of the mountains, than you shall ever make me believe that Cumac Unui has preserved her chastity inviolable, and that the little monster you take by the hand ever came from my loins.’

‘ It is, however, an infallible truth,’ replied the Laica, ‘ that the great Rimac commands you to acknowledge him for your lawful heir, and declares it to be his will, that you receive the mother as your wife, since her virtue is sufficiently known to all the gods ; you must not presume to accuse those eternal powers with any premeditated intention to deceive you ; render therefore a speedy obedience to their express injunctions, and avert the effects of their indignation, which will otherwise be fatal to you in the event : but that all this mystery may be fully cleared up to your satisfaction, give attention to what I am now preparing to relate.’

‘ You will certainly be sincere enough to acknowledge, that you have indulged yourself in several gallantries during your continuance in the country of the Collaguas, because you must be sensible you was never very scrupulous in that respect ; for though you were always very desirous to espouse a woman of untainted virtue, you have been very sedulous to ensnare the chasti-

ty of many of their sex : you remember, for instance, what formerly passed between Paquir and yourself ; the intercourse you indulged yourself in with that young widow, who was the cousin of Cumac Unui, became the subject of so much discourse, that you must needs recollect some of the particulars ; an infant was the fruit of the familiarity between you and that lady, which exposed her family to many scandalous reflections ; your mistress heard you severely reproached for that ungenerous proceeding ; but nothing was more afflictive to her than the horror which Cumac Unui expressed at her crime.’

‘ Paquir lost all remains of patience, to hear her cousin, whom she still looked upon as a child, prescribe rules to her for the better regulation of her indiscreet conduct, and she resolved to avenge herself on the officious virtue of her amiable relation. In order to succeed more effectually in that intention, she endeavoured as much as possible to regain the friendship of your father-in-law ; she had the satisfaction to accomplish what she desired, and in his presence affected a reserved behaviour, which she took care to make a secret to you in your embraces : but when she had at last entirely re-established herself in the good opinion of her uncle, she took the liberty to desire his daughter’s company for a few days, pretending herself to be indisposed, and the father of Cumac Unui ordered her to tender her services to her cousin.’

‘ Cumac Unui was no sooner with Paquir, but you received notice to visit your mistress at midnight ; and it was intimated to you, that the door of her house would be left open, and that Paquir was to lie that night with a lady who was her particular friend ; but to prevent your being deceived in her person, it was added, that she was to lie on the right side of her friend ; you was likewise informed, there would not be any light in the chamber, and was directed to convey yourself gently into the bed on Paquir’s side, with the same silence she herself intended to observe ; and lest you should be intimidated by the danger of a discovery, Paquir gave you to understand by her messenger, that she was so impatient to receive the testimonies of your affection,

that in spite of all the circumstances which would doubtless in some measure diminish the delights of such an interview, she could not refuse you the satisfaction she intended to grant you, as imperfect as it might happen to prove, and that it was not any longer in her power to delay the opportunity she so passionately desired.

When these measures had been concerted between you, she had recourse to others with relation to her cousin, and she infused a drug into the liquor she gave her that night to drink; and such were the qualities of the drug, that they would infallibly cast Cumac Unui into a deep slumber for the space of three hours, without any possibility of awaking; and Paquir, instead of placing herself on the right side as she had promised, lay on the left, that you might think her cousin was the lady who invited you to her caresses; you was punctual to the appointment, and exactly complied with the intimations you had received, and the pregnancy of Cumac Unui was the consequence of your mistake.

As this was the event Paquir intended to accomplish, in order to reduce her cousin to the condition in which she wished to behold her, she took care to have the same interview repeated, and the commerce between you was carried on with this double deception for five successive nights, at the expiration of which Paquir sent her cousin back to her father, and eight months after this period you demanded her in marriage; she tendered you her hands without the least suspicion of what had passed, and her fall hastened the birth of the infant she carried in her womb. In a word, she became the mother of the child you now behold, and whom you can no longer deny to be your real offspring.

When the Laica had finished this discourse, my father cast his eyes upon Cumac Unui and me with an air of embarrassment, for he could not refute any of the circumstances which he had heard so particularly related; but he still continued in some hesitation, whether he should receive my mother as his wife, and acknowledge me for his son; but the persuasive power of the proximity of blood joined with the force of truth, two circumstances that work extraordinary effects on the mind of man, at last deter-

mined him to act consistently with his duty. 'It would be in vain,' said he, 'for me to demand clearer indications, and more unexceptionable evidence of the fact than I have now heard: yes,' continued he, 'I acknowledge in Cumac Unui a wife perfectly innocent of the crime imputed to her, and of which I have hitherto imagined her guilty, and I likewise own my son in the person of Yllapantac.'

At these expressions, so transporting to a tender mother, Cumac Unui sunk down as if she had been in a trance, her heart failed her, and she lost the faculty of speech; but when she at last revived from the extasy that had over-powered her, she clasped her husband in her arms with the most endearing tenderness, whilst her eyes at the same time streamed with tears: 'Blessed be the gods, my dearest consort,' said she, 'that I am now so fortunate as to behold you sensible of the error which has been so fatal to my repose: may those gracious powers lengthen your life to a happy old age, and may you daily receive additional proofs of my unblemished innocence, and if possible, be still more convinced, that this infant is your real son! This dear event alone can dry those tears from my eyes, which your prejudice against us has so long caused to flow.'

This language softened my father into complacency, and he wept tears of joy, to find himself blessed in a wife of so much virtue: he implored her pardon for the suspicions he had unhappily entertained to her disadvantage. He then caused me to approach him; and this delightful reconciliation had diffused so much tenderness into his soul, that he thought he could never sufficiently caress me: he folded my mother and me in his arms, without being able to discontinue his embraces, whilst we on our parts endeavoured to make the best returns to his affectionate treatment.

This scene of mutual love would have continued much longer, had not the Laica at last interrupted it with this remark; 'Prince,' said she to my father, 'you perhaps forgot the day is far advanced, and that you have several guests who impatiently wait for your presence among them; rise then, and give the necessary orders for their entertainment.' At these words my father quitted his bed, and went into the great hall where all his company were assembled. He then placed him-



himself at a table with his guests, and amidst the pleasures of the feast, related to them all the particulars which had happened to him since he last parted from them. They all congratulated him on this occasion, and testified a general satisfaction that he was no longer exposed to the mortification of leaving his dominions to a stranger: some of the company took this opportunity to intimate the injustice of condemning any person, before all the circumstances of the imputed crime were impartially considered; and added, that one might sometimes be deceived after the strictest examination, since a number of peculiar incidents might betray even the most cautious persons into some inadvertency in their decisions: others observed, that the gods sometimes permitted the innocent to be plunged in many calamities, that their virtue might shine with a more amiable lustre in such a situation.

But notwithstanding all the joy which then reigned in the palace, my arrival in the island was far from being satisfactory to the inhabitants; and the moment they beheld me, they conceived a surprising aversion to my person: the visible defects in my form, made all my father's subjects consider me with horror; I was the constant subject of their derision, and all the respect they owed their sovereign could not preserve me from the immoderate malignity of their tongues; nay, they proceeded still to more criminal extremes, for when they became certain that their prince had appointed me his successor in the empire, they formed secret conspiracies against my life, and I should have infallibly been the victim of their barbarity, had not my father been indefatigable in his care for my preservation.

This good prince was exceedingly concerned to behold his subjects so implacable against me, and found himself reduced to the necessity either of employing all his power to transform me into a more agreeable shape, or else to compel his people to renounce their antipathy against me: the first of these expedients was altogether impracticable, after the imprecations he had uttered against me the moment of my nativity, and he was constrained to have recourse to the second: with this view he caused all the heads of families to assemble in his palace and then represented to them, that

he was far advanced in years, and that the time approached when he was to be gathered to his fathers; that it would therefore be a great consolation to him before his death, to see his son established on his throne, and that he hoped they would all acknowledge me for their sovereign, and take an oath of fidelity to me.

## H O U R XLVIII.

THIS proposal was succeeded by a general murmur, and one half of the assembly testified their refusal, by retiring with loud exclamations of discontent; whilst those who continued in the palace excused themselves from declaring their opinion, under a pretence that the greatest part of the people were absent. My father was convinced by this reply, that they had all agreed in concert, not to acknowledge me for their sovereign; and he was so offended at this affront, that it was impossible for him to conceal his indignation; 'I have it in my power,' said he, 'to exterminate all those undutiful wretches who presumed to withdraw from the assembly; but I am willing to forget their insolence. Tell them, however, that I command them to return; and should they dare to disobey me, not one of them shall behold the light of tomorrow's sun.'

The mutineers were so terrified with this menace, that they no longer persisted in their opposition, but immediately rejoined the assembly; and after they had intreated my father's permission to acquaint him with the reasons of their dissatisfaction—'My lord,' said they, 'we have all been born under your dominion, and you are sensible with what fidelity we have always obeyed you; we have even acknowledged you to be an accomplished prince, and as constantly admired you in that character; the perfections of your person, and the engaging mien so peculiar to you, exalt you as much above us, as your power distinguishes you from the rest of mankind: but the person you now recommend to us for your successor is, in every particular, vastly different from yourself; and nature has so disgraced him in his formation, that it is impossible for us to behold him without

horror;

‘horror; and though we pay the utmost respect to the declaration you have made, yet we entreat you to pardon us, if we cannot persuade ourselves that he is your son: the lordly eagles of the air never engender the bears of the wilderness, nor is the spotted leopard the progeny of the bold vulture. Vouchsafe then to nominate another successor to your throne; we do not say one we can ardently love, but one whose person, at least, may not shock us beyond expression, when we behold him.’

‘I now expect your attention in my turn,’ replied my father; ‘and I must tell you, that if my son be not much indebted to nature, he is far from being any dishonour to my blood; he has a veneration for justice, his soul is truly noble, and richly adorned with the virtues of moderation and patience: these are qualities which a reasonable people should chiefly desire in a sovereign, and not the accomplishments of the body, which generally ensnare a prince into irregularities that contribute to his destruction, and spread desolation through the families of his subjects. Dispose yourselves, therefore, to acknowledge the heir I offer you, and submit to his government without hesitation; but if you still continue untractable, it is my resolution to exterminate all those who shall presume to oppose my will.’

My father waited some time in expectation of their answer, but at last one of the assembly, who was most advanced in years, rose from his seat, and expressed himself to this effect—‘Why should your subjects, my lord, be punished for a repugnance they are unable to conquer? Have we any ability to prescribe the approach or distance of objects, as they appear to us agreeable or displeasing? Would it not, my lord, be more natural for you to have recourse to some expedient that may render your son more supportable to our view? Would you condescend to this, your subjects would immediately submit to his government; and should it not be in your power to effect any change in his person, yet we intreat you to favour him with some present, which, though it should not diminish his deformity, may at least work a strong impression on the minds of your people, who when

they behold him vested with some extraordinary prerogative, will dutifully acknowledge his superiority over them.’

This disposition of the assembly did not immediately prove agreeable to my father. ‘On the one hand,’ said he, ‘I am not capacitated to change my son’s figure, for I am sensible my power is restrained in that particular: on the other hand, what present can I possibly make him, and what advantage will he derive from it? I now stand on the verge of the grave: and the enchantment I operate to day, may possibly be dissolved to-morrow.’ Here my father paused for some moments; and at last commanded one of his attendants to bring me before him.

When I was introduced into the hall where the assembly was seated, my ears were shocked with confused cries, and a loud peal of laughter; which made it evident the people had but little inclination to conform themselves to my father’s commands, though at the same time his presence of mind suffered no diminution by this instance of their disrespect: ‘Approach me, my son,’ said he, with a serene air, ‘and place yourself on the throne the gods have ordained you to ascend; be not in the least intimidated at the raillery and insults of your subjects, for you shall this day enjoy such a large participation of my power, as shall sufficiently enable you to punish all those who dare to oppose you.—As for your parts, ye rash and untractable men!’ added he, ‘I command you to be silent, if you would avoid the fatal effects of my displeasure.’

At the close of these words, my father gently touched me with his sceptre, and at the same instant two large wings, adorned with beautiful plumes, expanded from my back, and I found myself capable of flying from one end of the world to the other. This extraordinary prerogative had all the effect my father desired; for the whole assembly seemed lost in astonishment when they beheld this wonderful event; their former obstinacy changed to fear and respect, and in a few moments they unanimously addressed their vows to me, as if I had been a god: ‘We now,’ said they, ‘acknowledge you to be the sovereign of the Isle of Uxi; reign over us, O mighty prince! and vouchsafe to be propi-

tious



'tious to a dutiful people, who will joyfully swear to be obedient to your sway.'

This agreement was ratified the same day between me and my subjects, by solemn sacrifice and the usual oaths of allegiance.

Within a short time after this transaction, death deprived me of my father, who a few days before he expired was convinced, to his unspeakable affliction, that he had unjustly killed his first wife. The officer who had presumptuously attempted to violate the honour of that innocent lady, was seized with a distemper, which in two days ended his life; and as he was persuaded the gods are compassionate to the guilty when they make a sincere confession of their crimes, he disclosed, a few moments before he died, his dishonourable treatment of my mother-in-law, with all the circumstances I have already related.

My father was so deeply affected with this sad discovery, that he died in less than the space of one moon; and when the solemnities of his funeral were over, I associated my mother into an equal share of the government, and conducted myself by her wise counsels so long as she lived.

After some time was elapsed, I took a progress, at her solicitations, to gain some tidings of my brother, and travelled through all the provinces on the continent where I imagined I had any probability to find him; I at last met with him towards the frontiers of Hattun Rucana; but he was so satisfied with the condition of life he then enjoyed, that I could not prevail upon him to live with me. He was greatly esteemed by a magician, who, by the power of his art, enlarged his body to those enormous dimensions in which he appeared to Prince Houac.

My father, as I have already intimated, resigned the sovereignty of this island to me; but I was so young and unexperienced, that he prudently kept the reins of government in his own hands during his life; and when fate called him from this state of mortality, I had so little confidence in my own ability, that I thought it the wisest course to rule in conjunction with my mother. My intention in this proceeding was to regulate myself by her advice, and by degrees to acquire the noble art of reigning well. In this manner did I pass my early youth in

tranquillity, and was only ambitious to please my parent and make my subjects happy.

When I began to enter upon an age of maturity, my mother thought it adviseable for me to appear in a new scene of life; 'My son,' said she, 'it is now time for you to think of marriage, since it is from you alone I can expect an offspring who may convey to your posterity the power transmitted to you from your ancestors; and as this power is confined at present to some limitations, it would be proper for you to choose a consort among the daughters of the prophets, because such an alliance may render the power of our family much more extensive.'

This proposal at first was very agreeable to my inclinations, and I readily disposed myself to give my mother all the satisfaction she desired; but when I considered the obstacles I might naturally expect in the prosecution of my design, I began to be not a little discouraged; 'How can I flatter myself,' said I, 'with the least probability of inspiring the daughter of a prophet with any sentiments in my favour, when I have reason to believe that even the daughter of a private man would refuse to espouse me? Those whom I have hitherto attempted to please have always treated me with aversion; and as to the daughters of the prophets, the advantages of their birth, and the power they derive from it, render them haughty and untractable; for which reason I am sensible my unhappy form, instead of creating any tenderness in their souls, will only fill them with horror.'

It was in vain for me to alledge the many disadvantages I had to contend with; my mother still pressed me to marriage with so much importunity, that in complacency to her desires I promised to leave nothing unattempted to oblige her in this particular.

#### H O U R X L I X .

WITH this resolution I took my flight from the Isle of Uxi to the continent, and directed my first progress to the temple of the great Rimac; my intention was not to consult the oracle in the choice of any particular person for the partner of my bed, for I did not

once

once flatter myself that I could possibly fix my inclinations on any lady with success; I was only desirous to know whether it would be advantageous to me to think of marriage in general, and I received this answer from the oracle.

- Would you the gentle pleasures prove,
- Which sweetly flow from nuptial love;
- Remember 'tis our fix'd decree,
- That what you are, you cease to be :
- 'Till then, 'twill be your fate to bear
- Severe disdain and sad despair.

The obscurity of this answer made me think it necessary to return to my mother to consult her opinion on my future proceeding. I repeated to her the declaration of the oracle; and she was at first as much perplexed as myself at the mysterious language; but when she had considered it for some time—'I am inclined to think,' said she, 'that you ought to divest yourself of the sovereignty of this island; for when you are no longer a reigning prince you will certainly cease to be what you now are.' This interpretation appeared to me very reasonable, and in consequence of that persuasion I assembled the elders of the people, and gave them to understand, that in obedience to the commands of the gods, I solemnly renounced the throne of the Isle of Uxi, and entirely resigned it to my mother, whom for the future they were to consider as their only lawful sovereign.

My subjects were far from being dissatisfied at this declaration, and were more inclinable to submit to the government of a woman than to render obedience to a man whose person was their aversion, though they respected his power. I am persuaded many other nations would, with the same tranquillity, bear the loss of a master to whose authority they submitted, rather from the motives of duty than any affection to his person : I did not observe one of my subjects who testified the least regret at the resolution I had taken; and this ungenerous indifference made me less sensible of the loss of my dominions.

I was now fully persuaded, that I had effectually accomplished the condition imposed upon me by the oracle, and began to flatter myself that there was not any alliance, how considerable soever, to which I might not justly aspire: spirited by this imagination, I soon took leave of

my mother, with a solemn promise not to return into her dominions till I could present her with a daughter-in-law altogether worthy of her approbation; and thus I quitted the Isle of Uxi a second time.

The progress I now undertook was of a much longer continuance than the former, and when I had traversed the immensity of the ocean, and passed through many regions of the continent, I visited several magicians with whom I had contracted an intimacy, and was directed by them to the habitations of many others of that class, whom I likewise visited in succession. The favourable reception they all afforded me, contributed not a little to confirm me in the advantageous opinion I had entertained of my own merit, since my abdication of the throne of Uxi; and this indulgence to myself made it so difficult for the amiable sex to please me, that I beheld with indifference the generality of those ladies who at any time presented themselves to my view, and my heart was only to be touched by the most finished beauty nature had ever formed. It was my happy fortune, in the course of my travels, to become acquainted with many lovely virgins, whose charms were sufficiently engaging; but my greatest perplexity was to determine my choice in favour of any particular object.

The beautiful Chici, a daughter of the magician Hinapac, was at last the person to whom I determined to address my vows; it was impossible for the pencil of nature to delineate a more amiable complexion; her eyes sparkled with a vivacity that dazzled every beholder; the delicate turn of her shape, and the numberless graces that played around her, were inimitable; her enchanting aspect, in which the flowery bloom of youth began to unfold all its perfections, was the chosen seat of innocence and unfeigned purity; so that to behold, to love, and to languish for the possession of so accomplished a creature, were the inevitable effects of the same instant of time, and produced all their united impressions on my soul in a moment: I was, for a long time, indefatigable to convince her, by many tender solicitudes and the softest assiduities, how much she had rendered me the captive of her charms; but alas! all my sedulous respect, joined with the most endearing language I could possibly utter, did not gain me the least advantage, and she still continued insensible to my



my fervent passion; she perpetually affected a down-cast look, and was ever silent when she appeared before me; and though I continued with her father for the space of several moons, she never condescended to favour me with one glance in all that period, nor vouchsafed to afford my addresses the kind exchange of a single expression.

This fixed indifference drove me at last to desperation itself, and I was unable to comprehend why so lovely an object should possess a heart of adamant. 'I am very sensible,' would I frequently say to myself, 'that fear and irresolution are natural to youth and innocence; and yet I am at a loss to assign any reason, why the most cautious and reserved maiden should always study to be untractable to a lover; is it possible, then, that she should never habituate herself to the sight of one of our sex? I thought till now, at the most unpractised fair-one, who at first turns her eyes with diffidence on her adorer, might be taught by time to behold him with less timidity and confusion.'

I was no less astonished to observe that the inflexible Chici did not pay the least deference to my birth and person. 'She cannot,' said I, 'be unacquainted that I derive my descent from the race of the prophets, and consequently, that there cannot be any disproportion between us; she must likewise be sensible that I am privileged with wings; and surely, this prerogative alone might induce her to treat me with some distinction, and procure me the transport of one endearing smile; she has never seen a man who can appear in competition with me, and yet she has not any curiosity to consider me with the smallest attention.' In fine, I grew so impatient at her strange indifference, that I imagined her severest aversion would be less insupportable to my soul.

I could now no longer endure to be always amorous, without any rational probability of an obliging return; and if I had not found means in this situation, to flatter myself with some faint hopes, I know not what might have been the event. As yet I had not disclosed my passion for Chici to any of my friends; I had observed the same privacy even with respect to her parents; and her brother Amancay, with whom I was united in the strictest friendship, was equally unacquainted with the state of my heart;

though at last I began to think it advisable not to leave any thing unattempted to engage him in my interest: to this effect, I one day proposed to him to make a little excursion into the country, to enjoy the salutary gales which the fields and valleys, in that agreeable season, perfume with all their sweets; he was very willing to accompany me, and we walked to a neighbouring brook, on the banks of which we seated ourselves, under a great tree, that covered us with a refreshing shade.

I was on the point of making him the confidant of my passion, when we were alarmed with loud sounds, that resembled the roar of lions; we turned our heads to that part of the country from whence the noise proceeded, and saw a numerous troop of young men, mounted on tame lions, and advancing to the place where we were seated: the person who marched in the van engaged all our attention, by his noble mien and the richness of the habit he wore; his shape was perfectly easy and exact, and the gracious air of his face appeared so soft and engaging, that Amancay and myself could not forbear expressing our mutual admiration of so amiable a personage; his head was beautifully adorned with waving plumes, of various colours, arranged into a form very delightful to behold. He approached us with great civility, and desired us to inform him, if the mansion of the magician Hinapac was far from that place. Amancay replied, that he was the son of Hinapac, and that the palace was not above thrice the distance of a bow-shot from thence; adding, that he would accompany him thither, if he were so disposed. At these words, the Prince of Hil-lavi, for that was the stranger's title, descended from the lion on whose back he was mounted, and walked with Amancay and myself towards the palace where the magician resided.

For my particular, I was quite lost in thought at this unexpected adventure, and whenever I cast my eyes on the amiable stranger, my heart was discomposed beyond expression; I imagined I now beheld a dangerous rival, and was no longer permitted to doubt of that misfortune when he acquainted us with the cause of his journey. 'I have heard,' said he, 'such extraordinary commendations of the merits and attractions of the fair Chici, that I could not resist the curiosity of being convinced by my

own eyes if fame has been impartial in her praise; I have seen many ladies in my time who passed for celebrated beauties, but as yet they have not been able to inspire my heart with any sentiments of tenderness; for which reason, I should not be dissatisfied to find one whose charms would be powerful enough to awake me from my indolence to love.'

When we arrived at the palace, we saw the magician walking in the great court; and as he knew the Prince of Hillavi the moment he beheld him, he advanced to meet him, and in the most obliging manner testified the satisfaction he received from such a visit: the prince, who expected to see the hideous figure of some old magician, was exceedingly surprized to behold a man of a noble port, graced with an august and majestick air; he very respectfully kissed the border of Hina-pac's cincture, who acquainted him with the occasion of his journey, and desired to know if he might be permitted to visit the fair Chici.

'My daughter,' replied the magician, 'is accessible to all those who have an inclination to see her; and a low birth, or even a disagreeable person, are not considered as any disqualifications in the competitors for her favour; every one who declares himself her lover is at full liberty to pursue his pretensions, and may even aspire to the privilege of espousing her; but then the number of those must be completed, before she can be under any obligation of making a reply to their addresses, or casting her eyes on any of the candidates for her affection who present themselves before her; in fine, she must have fifty lovers, all disposed to hazard their persons in three different probations; none but the conqueror can obtain her in marriage, and all those who are unsuccessful must die, according to the law prescribed in this competition: forty-eight suitors have already consented to accept of these terms, and only two more are now wanting; the moment they appear, I intend to propose the three conditions which the gods exact from him who is pre-ordained to be my son-in-law.'—'As yet,' replied the stranger, 'I am unable to judge what impressions the charms of your daughter will work upon my heart; but I am determined to rank myself among the number of her adorers, were

were it only to give me an opportunity of engaging in the adventures you have intimated; I love to expose my fortitude to the strongest proofs, and to purchase glory amidst the greatest dangers.'

## H O U R L.

THE Prince of Hillavi, after this reception, was conducted to the palace, and, to my great mortification, thought the daughter of the magician much more amiable than I could have wished; her charms appeared to him altogether irresistible, and he immediately acquainted her with the passion her eyes had kindled in his soul; but as she made no reply to that declaration, he gently reproached her for her indifference, and was perpetually repeating to her, that if she would but cast her eyes upon him for a moment, her insensibility would cease; but with all his expostulations and obsequious behaviour, he continued as unsuccessful as the rest of his rivals. Chici perpetually directed her eyes to the earth, and was entirely unattentive to all the ambrosious language he could possibly utter.

I happened at that time to have an accidental view of this lovely virgin, and immediately found myself more inflamed than ever; at the same instant my love kindled into jealousy, and I was apprehensive lest some new rival should present himself, and deprive me of all hopes of contending for the victory; I resolved, therefore, not to expose myself to the danger of any longer delay, nor to lose, by any unseasonable respect, the advantages I might hope for as well as others. With this resolution, I immediately declared myself the fiftieth lover. 'And now, my lord,' said I to the magician, 'the number you desire is complete; and I intend to maintain my pretensions to the affection of your amiable daughter: let my rivals be acquainted with this circumstance; and be you propitious to our enterprize, and look favourably on a passion which is not disapproved by the gods.'

The magician seemed very much transported at this declaration, and was disposed to afford me all the satisfaction I desired. 'To-morrow,' said he, 'I intend to propose the three adventures in which you are to engage, and only



'wait till then for the arrival of your competitors.' He sent that night to give them notice of his intentions; and the next day they all appeared in the palace; when the magician expressed himself to this effect: 'That person among you,' said he, 'who is destined to espouse my daughter, must dispute with his rivals the prize of swiftness in the race, dexterity in swimming, and the mastership of the bow; and the possession of her person shall recompense the conqueror. These are the conditions required by the gods, and death will be the fate of those who are defeated in this contention. You have now time to deliberate on this proposal; and, if you please, may renounce your pretensions to a marriage, which must be preceded by so much danger; you may direct your vows to some other object, without any fear of these hazardous circumstances to which you are now exposed. Each of you enjoys some conspicuous qualifications, which cannot fail to render him acceptable; and it is easy for you to find a number of beautiful virgins, who esteem it their happiness to be favourable to your addresses, upon much better terms than those I have set before you.'

When the magician had ended his discourse, the whole assembly answered him with one voice, without a moment's hesitation; 'Ah, my lord!' cried we, 'it is in vain to dissuade us from our design, by the representation of the dangers that may attend us; we are all determined either to gain this amiable conquest or perish in the experiment; and we love your daughter with too much ardour, to have any regard for life without her; we are all ready to dispute the victory, and scorn to be intimidated at any danger you have represented; for our thoughts are only employed on the recompence that will flow from the charming object of our desires.'

The fair Chici was present on this occasion, and when she heard the unanimous resolution of her suitors, she proposed herself to speak to us for the first time. 'Generous lovers,' said she, 'I consider, with the greatest reluctance, that the death of forty-nine of your number must be the fatal effect of your passion; believe me, I reproach myself for being the unhappy cause of the evident danger to which you are deter-

mined to expose yourselves for my sake; and yet you must be so just as to acknowledge, that I am at the same time an innocent cause of the consequences that may ensue. I sincerely wish you would no longer persist in a design that seems unjustifiable and irrational in many respects; and I should have rejoiced, had it never been your misfortune to have seen me. You all merit a better fate than that which you are preparing to experience, and are worthy to possess the most amiable persons of my sex: but since you appear so inflexible in the resolution you have formed, you can only charge yourselves with whatever may be the event.'

In this manner did Chici unfold herself to the assembly; her eyes sparkled with a thousand glittering beams, and the accents of her voice were so soft and harmonious, that we could neither hear nor behold her without feeling all the transports of admiration and love; and our passion, if possible, became more violent than it was the day before we beheld her. 'Should some goddess,' said we, 'descend from the pure regions of bliss to this earth, she would never assume any other form; such would be the living lustre of her eyes, and such the breathing musick of her voice; her divinity would be unable to unfold a greater profusion of charms than are disclosed by this beautiful creature.—No, my lord,' continued we, addressing ourselves to the magician, 'the earth cannot produce any object which bears the least similitude to your lovely daughter, and we too long delay the happiness of him who is destined to espouse her; let the race be marked out immediately, we stand ready to contend for victory.'—'My friends,' replied the magician, 'you shall have all the satisfaction you request; upon which he directed us to meet on the bank of the river, assuring us at the same time, that he would attend us there when he had completed all the necessary preparations for the exercise we were to perform.'

The race was to be exhibited in a spacious plain that stretched it's level beyond the view of the keenest eye, and was bounded on one side by the river. We were appointed to run the length of five hundred paces; and that the contenders for the prize might not obstruct one another in their progress, fifty lines were drawn out to the distance we were to arrive at, and each of us was to confine his

feet to one of these lines; at the extremity of each of which was placed a cocoa, which those who were able to reach so far, were to take up and carry back to the point from whence they started. The magician and his daughter, together with their friends and relations who were invited to be present at this competition, were to give their decision according to the event; though, indeed, that province seemed altogether unnecessary; for the boundary of the race had such a fatality, that the moment any one attained to it, all the rest who were distanced immediately lay dead on the spot.

In a little time the magician, with all his company, made their appearance, and when he had surveyed us a few moments — ‘My friends,’ said he, ‘it is now incumbent on you to exert all your vigour and activity; you are all acquainted with the laws that regulate this contest; begin the race, then, when you hear the trumpets sound the signal.’ We promised to obey him, and each of us appeared impatient to dispute the victory. At first some difficulty was started with respect to my wings, and all my rivals protested against my employing them on this occasion. ‘Our challenge,’ said they, ‘only regards a race, and has no relation to flying;’ so that the magician was at last obliged to adjust this dispute by some proper expedient, which was, that I might expand my wings, and use them in any manner I thought fit, provided I did not raise myself into the air; and this decision gave a general satisfaction. Each of us now placed himself on one of the lines, and when the trumpets sounded, we all started from the lifts with such light steps, that it might have been thought we skimmed over the waves of the sea.

We all arrived at the first goal where the cocoas were placed, almost at the same instant. Each of us caught up our own fruit, and, without losing a moment’s time, endeavoured to compleat a second course; but the event of this proved very different from the first; for, after we had stretched to the distance of some hundred paces, several of my competitors were so debilitated, that they dropped their cocoas out of their hands, and imagined when they were discharged from that incumbrance, that they should finish their race with the greater expedition. But they were soon convinced of their mistake, for they continued immoveable on the same spot of the earth, without being able

to advance or retire. The indignation they conceived at such a disappointment obliged them to snatch up the fatal cocoas, and exert their utmost efforts, though in vain, to start before their rivals in the chace. It was impossible for them, from that moment, to recover the distance the others had gained upon them; some were compelled to stop in order to take breath, and fancied that would enable them to regain new vigour, though they were unfortunately deceived in their expectations, and only wasted away their precious moments. In vain did they exert all their strength and agility to overtake those before them; it was no longer in their power to dispute the victory, and the most vigorous antagonists were already at the barriers.

Of fifty who had undertaken the race, twenty-seven compleated it at the same instant; but the rest, who were surpassed in swiftness, fell dead on the earth the moment the conquerors had touched the goal. I had the good fortune to be one of the successful competitors; the people crowned us with chaplets of flowers, and the remainder of the day was devoted to festivals and joy.

Towards the noon of the next day, we prepared for the second contest, and assembled ourselves on the bank of the river, to dispute the prize of swimming. The two boundaries were exactly marked out, and the one was two hundred and fifty paces distant from the other. We all sprung into the water, equally ranged in front, and the moment the signal informed us of our duty, we darted forward with a general emulation. Some of our number seemed to slide over the limpid surface of the stream; others, whose heads and hands were only visible to the spectators, cut through the fluid with surprizing rapidity, and every individual employed all his vigour and expertness in this exercise, to prevent the misfortune of being divested of the prize; but notwithstanding all their efforts of strength and skill, I saw one and twenty of my rivals left behind at a great distance. The shame of beholding themselves in a manner vanquished by those who were so far before them, prompted them to utter vows to Heaven for their success; but all the divinities they then invoked, were unattentive to their supplications, and the victory they so passionately desired entirely depended on the vigour of their arms, which now, to  
their



their fatal experience, began to lose all their spring and force. These unhappy persons were then dispirited by fear, and turned all their thoughts to preserve themselves from the evident danger that threatened them; they endeavoured to gain the bank as their last refuge, but were unable to swim either to the right or the left. The interposing current, or rather some superior power, detained them at this juncture, and now they attempted, amidst their despair, to interest the spectators in their favour. They uttered doleful cries, they implored compassion, and stretched out their languid arms to receive assistance; but all their appeals to the pity of the people were ineffectual, and they sunk into the depth of the waters the moment the six victors had arrived at the boundary.

I was still so happy as to be one of these last, but I must acknowledge my wings contributed to my success, and very seasonably aided me to sustain myself on the surface of the water. Without them I had inevitably been lost, for the structure of my body rendered me incapable of disputing the prize for any considerable length of time.

And now the bow only remained to decide which of the competitors was to espouse the amiable Chici; and this expedient likewise was deferred till the next day. When the sun rose upon the morning, we began to prepare ourselves for the last trial of our abilities, and Chici appeared that day a thousand times more amiable than ever. Her heart was enlivened by a secret joy, which diffused such an air of sweetness and serenity through all her aspect, as perfectly transported every beholder. She assisted as usual at the preparations of this enterprise, and her lovely appearance animated our souls with new ardours.

We were now reduced to the number of six competitors, as I have already intimated, and the magician furnished each of us with a bow and one arrow; after which he conducted us into the plain where the race had been exhibited. 'This is the day,' said he, 'that must decide your pretensions, and I bind myself by a solemn oath, to bestow my daughter on that person whose arrow shall glance nearest to the mark!' This mark was a pole, which rose twice the height of a man, and on the top was fastened a board, covered with a small mat of reeds, into which the arrow might easily pene-

trate and continue fixed; several circles were traced out in this mat, and they differed in their dimensions in proportion to their distance from the centre.

## H O U R II.

OUR arrows were all marked, that they might be distinguished the better; and, when this was done, we drew lots to decide who should launch the first shaft. Chance determined it for the Prince of Hillavi, who, as well as myself, had been victorious in the two former probations. He accordingly shot first; the other four were to succeed him, and I drew my bow the last. It was my good fortune to plant my arrow directly in the mark, and I was immediately sensible of my victory by the unfortunate death of my five antagonists, who at the same instant fell dead at our feet. The acclamations of the spectators exalted my glory to the very clouds; they placed a new crown on my head, and conducted me with the greatest solemnity to the mark, with an intention to convince themselves of the reality of my triumph. But, ah! into what affliction was the assembly plunged, and how dreadful was the despair that racked my soul, when we beheld that my arrow had pierced the snowy bosom of the magician's daughter! Her eyes were closed with eternal sleep; Death had drawn his pale hue over every feature, and this incomparable virgin, who a few moments past, was the delight of every beholder, now lay cold and motionless on the earth, without the least symptom of life. O miserable wretch that I am! cried I, at this melancholy spectacle, 'why am I doomed to behold the bleeding flow of these precious streams! Shall the untimely death of the dearest object of my desires be the only recompence of all my labours! Is this the fatal prize that was to crown my unblest love! Must I, for the completion of my misfortunes, be tortured with the sad remembrance, that my own unhappy hand gave the fatal blow that cut down the blooming flower of her youth!—O Death! cover me from the sight of mankind with thy friendly shade, and extinguish the insupportable agonies of my soul in everlasting oblivion!' In this manner did I utter the anguish that oppressed me, and I was so confounded with grief and astonishment, that

that all my faculties seemed to have suspended their vital operations.

The friends and relations of the magician appeared altogether as inconso-  
lable as myself; they uttered dismal ex-  
clamations, and scattered dust on their  
dejected heads. As for the magician,  
he was hurried into all the agitations of  
the wildest fury; his voice no longer re-  
tained its natural tone, but was changed  
into a hollow and doleful yell; his limbs  
were convulsed and distorted; he raged,  
he groaned, he despaired. 'O abomi-  
nable crime!' cried he, 'O unexam-  
pled treason! But I shall soon discover  
the barbarous author of this murder.  
—Let us go, my lord,' said he to me,  
and inform ourselves of the cause of  
this calamity; you shall be sufficiently  
convinced that I am perfectly innocent  
of any treacherous intentions; and as  
we are equally injured and affected by  
our present loss, let us mutually con-  
cert measures to give the utmost loose  
to our revenge.'

As we were advancing towards the  
palace in all the bitterness of woe, we  
were suddenly alarmed with a sprightly  
flourish of trumpets and other instru-  
ments, that, by the gaiety of their airs,  
seemed to celebrate some pleasing event.  
We redoubled our pace to learn the cause  
of this unexpected festivity, and in a few  
moments beheld a party of young men  
advancing towards us in the cheerful  
movements of a dance. These were the  
forty-nine suitors, whom we all imagined  
to be dead, but now, to our unspeakable  
astonishment, saw restored to life.

The magician and myself started back  
several paces at this amazing spectacle,  
but the consternation we discovered did  
not prevent the young troop from conti-  
nuing their gay advance towards us;  
and when they had made their approach  
near enough to be heard, they acquainted  
us in what manner they were raised from  
their transient death. 'It did not appear  
just to the gods,' said they, 'that we  
should be doomed to die, since the  
victory which Yllapantac obtained was  
far from being compleat.'—'In what  
circumstance was my victory defective?'  
interrupted I: 'have I not vanquished  
all my rivals who contended with me  
for the prize? I can justly appeal to  
the gods themselves, that I have acted  
with a perfect conformity to their in-  
junctions, that I might qualify myself  
for the possession of the incomparable

Chici. Where is then the happy re-  
compence that should crown all the la-  
bours and mortal pangs I have so long  
sustained? Is it possible, that the gods  
should deviate into injustice like the  
frail sons of men?'

'No, my lord,' replied one of the  
suitors; 'the celestial powers are always  
equitable in their dispensations, and  
the injustice you would impute is pe-  
culiar to mortals alone. Even you  
yourself are now chargeable with that  
crime, for desiring the gods to grant  
you a recompence, which as yet you  
have not sufficiently merited. We  
were informed in the regions of eternal  
night, that the person who is to possess  
the adorable Chici, must first entirely  
cease to be what he is at present; and  
if you had consulted the oracle of the  
great Rimac, you would have received  
the same information; it is your own  
negligence, therefore, which alone is  
liable to the imputation of injustice.'

At these words, which recalled to my  
remembrance the answer I received when  
I consulted the oracle on my future mar-  
riage, I grew sensible that I had no longer  
reason on my side. 'My lord,' said I  
to the magician, 'do not perplex your-  
self any more to discover the murderer  
of your daughter; you now see the cri-  
minal before you.' I then acquaint-  
ed him with the condition the oracle had  
required from me with relation to my  
marriage, and what I had afterwards  
performed in my own dominions, under  
a full persuasion, at that time, that I had  
accomplished my part by such a pro-  
ceeding. 'But alas! I am sensible of  
my fatal error,' continued I, 'and  
you now behold in me the barbarous  
offender, who deprived your daughter  
of life in her early bloom. The fatal  
wound was not given by any secret  
enemy, but it was the severe lot of  
that lady to receive her death by the  
pernicious hand of her adorer.—You,  
my lord, was generously preparing to  
please me beyond expression in her es-  
pousals, but the gods have been pleased  
to frustrate our mutual intentions. I  
have not sufficiently performed their  
injunctions, by divesting myself of my  
princely dignity; and they manifestly  
demand from me a sacrifice of much  
more importance. My deficiency in  
this particular is now become my crime,  
and I ought to be the object of all your  
displeasure. Let the full tide of your  
revenge



‘revenge be poured on my guilty head, and I will at the same time acknowledge the justice of your indignation. Pierce my heart this moment with the fatal shaft, that by my means has deprived you for ever of your only daughter!’

‘My lord,’ replied the magician, ‘I am capable of retaining some presence of mind, amidst the despair that preys upon my soul; and though appearances make you chargeable with the death of my dear Chici, I am still unable to consider you as a criminal: yes, unhappy prince, I freely acquit you from the imputation of this melancholy disaster, and now let us prepare to render the last kind offices to my beloved daughter.’

The unfortunate father was prevented by sighs and tears from proceeding in his discourse, and he now prepared to return to the place where his breathless daughter lay, that he might nourish his affliction with that moving sight. We all followed him in sad solemnity and silence, and in a little time beheld the amiable Chici extended on the earth, and bathed in a crimson stream of her vital blood. Some of the spectators tore their hair at this mournful spectacle, and wounded their cheeks with their nails; others, when they had raised the beautiful form in their arms, kissed her cold lips, and sprinkled her with innumerable tears. Despairing sighs, and melancholy murmurs, were wafted by the winds over the plain; and the afflictive scene continued for the space of several hours, without the least intermission. At last, it was thought advisable to convey the lifeless remains in a litter to the palace; we all followed in the same order in which we came, and perhaps not any funeral procession was ever accompanied with a more sincere and universal sorrow.

We at last arrived at the palace; but who can describe the general consternation that seized us, when we no longer beheld the body of Chici in the litter! We at first imagined that our grief had so disordered us, that we had forgotten to remove her from the earth where she lay dead, and in that persuasion we immediately returned to the plain. But alas! she was for ever snatched from our eyes, and we wearied ourselves with vain searches till the night was far advanced, when at last we became convinced she had been placed in the litter, by many

assurances to that effect from the bearers who supported it, and from those who had assisted in raising her from the earth, and we then concluded she had disappeared in some extraordinary manner.

The whole assembly was confounded at this new prodigy, and the unhappy magician seemed altogether agitated by distraction. ‘How!’ cried he, with a voice that drew pity from all who heard him; ‘was it not enough then, that a hand, for ever fatal to my repose, should be permitted to deprive me of my dearest daughter, in her tender dawn of youth; but must I now be denied the last satisfaction of beholding her precious remains! This surely is too much for an aged parent to bear, and I yield to the grief that overwhelms me!—Cruel Yllapantac!’ said he, at the next moment, ‘you alone are the source of all my misfortunes; and be you innocent or guilty, I can no longer suffer you to appear before me! Return, then, I intreat you, to your own dominions; for your presence in this place will but increase my affliction, and induce me to renounce the natural humanity of my disposition.’

I did not think it proper to make any reply, lest the magician should be provoked to make a severe use of the power his birth gave him over those men who were only allied to the race of the prophets: and after I had maturely considered that I ought to be satisfied with the moderation I had experienced from him, I immediately left the palace, and directed my flight to this island. At my arrival, I found my mother in the pangs of death; and the moment I had given her a short relation of my unfortunate adventures, she expired in my arms. When her funeral solemnities were over, I resumed the sovereignty of the Isle of Uxi; for since my abdication I had not been so successful as I expected, I thought I might justly claim all my former prerogatives. Since that time, I have lived in tranquillity in these my dominions, without entertaining any thoughts of marriage, till I was so unhappy as to force the Queen of Hattun Rucana from her territories.

When Acclahua came to this part of her relation, My lord, (said she to the Ynca Yahuarhuacac) when Prince Houac and the Queen of Hattun Rucana had heard the history of the Prince of the Isle of Uxi, they appeared much affected with the extraordinary

extraordinary adventures that composed it; the queen, however, said that she wished the father of Yllapantac had not been so easily disposed to pass an unfavourable construction on the conduct of his first wife; nor discovered so much impatience to revenge an affront that was only imaginary, and which he rashly persuaded himself he had received. 'It would be very happy,' continued she, 'if persons in such doubtful circumstances would always preserve a steady presence of mind, and proceed with calmness and deliberation in their enquiry after the truth; because those who judge precipitately of things, are generally misled into error.'

'Madam,' replied Prince Houac, 'we sometimes find it extremely difficult to determine our judgment aright; for, besides the intermixture of passion which is too apt to sway our reason, there are some cases in which we can neither be furnished with sufficient witnesses, nor any other satisfactory proofs, and must therefore of necessity suffer ourselves to be influenced by circumstantial appearances, if we would not absolutely close our eyes upon the affair before us, and resolve to impose upon our understanding. When the circumstances are very strong and express, we may form conclusions from them, which, if they be not self-evident, are at least extremely probable.'

—'Ah, prince!' replied the queen, 'nothing can be more dangerous and uncertain, than the probabilities you contend for; and if we were to permit our judgment to be determined by simple and unsupported appearances, the innocent would be frequently punished, and the guilty as often acquitted. You are apt to think a woman criminal, when a man's habit is found near her bed; but I should be disposed to believe her innocent, if her inclinations, and the whole course of her former conduct, had been irreproachable till that juncture. I should think it very probable, that a virtuous woman, whose conduct was never known to deviate from the strictest purity, may be capable of entertaining sentiments conformable to her honour in any instance whatever. The probability is consequently equal on both sides; what circumstance then must determine my opinion in such a state

of uncertainty? None surely but the most sedate and impartial examination; and though I have not the least intention to make any reflections that might be disagreeable to Prince Yllapantac, yet I must needs acknowledge, that I think his father acted in a very unjustifiable manner, and am apt to suspect he was betrayed by some weakness of mind into that inhuman treatment of his unhappy wife. He had certainly a natural propensity to anger, and was so inconsiderate as to be drawn away by the first emotions of his passion. He immediately was resolved to believe his wife guilty, upon the frail evidence of a few simple and inconclusive appearances, without allowing himself sufficient time to consider every other circumstance that might have had a contrary aspect, and he accordingly stained his hands in the blood of an innocent person, whose virtue merited a better fate.'

The reasons alledged by the queen were equally applauded by Prince Houac and the sovereign of the Isle of Uxi. They acknowledged the justice of her judgment, and confessed that the generality of human actions were very often so diversified by contradictory circumstances, that it required the utmost circumspection to keep clear of partiality and imposition in the determinations of the judgment.

When this little debate was over, Prince Houac rose from his seat, and addressed his discourse to Yllapantac; 'Prince,' said he, 'for I may now give you that title, since I restore you to all your property, I no longer persist in my first resolution to deprive you of your wings. The consideration of your mother's unsullied virtue, and the favour the gods have apparently shewn you, by consenting to raise you to the sovereignty of this island, induce me to forget all your injurious treatment of the Queen of Hattun Rucana, as well as your strange inhumanity to me, when you threw me into the wild waves of the ocean.'

'May you long continue in possession of these your dominions! and I sincerely beseech the gods to crown the remainder of your days with all imaginable joys and prosperity. And now we must prepare to bid you the last farewell.'

HOUAC



## H O U R LII.

'I Am of opinion,' interrupted the queen, 'that we may defer our departure a few moments longer; and I have really a great curiosity to be still informed of some particulars of which Yllapantac alone can give us a satisfactory account. I took notice that when he acquainted us with the history of his own life, he very lightly passed over every circumstance which had any relation to his brother. He did not once touch upon the cause of that enormous height of stature to which he rose, nor gave us to understand by what means he was preserved in the woods from the fury of the savage beasts. In short, he neglected to tell us what particular motive induced him to take that barbarous resolution to devour my subjects. These particulars appear to me as so many prodigies, that very well deserve to be fully known.'

'Great queen,' replied Yllapantac, 'it is impossible for me to disobey you in any command you are pleased to signify to me; and I think myself happy that I am in a condition to give you the satisfaction you desire. You may therefore expect to hear a series of adventures, altogether as extraordinary as those I have experienced.' Prince Huanac having declared that he had the same curiosity as the queen, the Prince of the Isle of Uxi related the history of his brother in these terms.

THE HISTORY OF THE GIANT HUANAC, BROTHER TO THE PRINCE OF THE ISLE OF UXI.

MY brother's name was Huanac, and he was but of the age of ten years when he was exposed in a destitute condition, as I have already intimated, in the middle of a wild and forlorn forest. His early youth rendered him perfectly insensible of the danger that threatened him; and he was altogether as unconscious of the sad circumstances of his helpless state. All his thoughts tended to disengage himself from the ghastly wilds of that gloomy forest, and he wandered for some time through a labyrinth of thickets and winding solitudes darkened by hanging rocks; and when he at last found himself unable to

trace any passage out of that intricate wilderness, he began to be greatly disquieted in his mind. But as he was not so intimidated as to desist from his first design, he continued to force his way through clustering briars and bushes that exceedingly incommoded him. Whilst he was thus employed, a monstrous lion saw him, and immediately ran towards him with all the furious swiftness natural to those dreadful animals. My brother, as it may well be imagined, was exceedingly terrified when he found himself discovered by such an unexpected enemy, and with a loud cry called upon his unrelenting father to assist him; but the moment the lion heard his voice, instead of advancing any nearer to him, he slunk back to the distance of several paces, and at last began to fly from him with as much rapidity as he at first approached him; and it appeared by the event, that he went to give notice to the other animals of the forest, that a new guest had lately made his entrance into their solitude.

My brother accordingly beheld in a little time a numerous troop of lions, bears, and other fierce creatures, advancing towards him, and as their swiftness was incredible, they soon came up to him, and then disposed themselves into a circle around him. The timorous youth, when he beheld the dreadful inclosure in which he was confined, immediately gave himself over for lost, and believing himself already devoured, cried out a second time. These animals no sooner heard the sound of his voice, than they immediately quitted their fierce and gloomy air, so natural to such creatures, and with aspects softened into humility and respect, began with a general emulation to tender him their fondest caresses. Some couched down on the earth and gently licked his feet; others expressed their affection to him by the brandishment of their tails, and they all testified by their dumb obsequiousness, that they discovered something supernatural in the air of his person. One would really have imagined, that they had some sensibility of my father's inhuman treatment of his son, and that nothing but their incapacity to speak restrained them from telling the innocent youth how much his destitute condition moved them to pity. I am inclinable however to believe, that it was the sacred blood of the prophets from whom he sprung, that compelled

U these

these animals to be so extremely tractable and submissive. Whatever might be the true cause, my brother grew habituated by degrees to the sight of these creatures, and lived with them as familiarly as if he had been one of their society. Some of them always attended him wherever he went, and no one of them ever refused him the first choice of their prey that they had run down.

Such was the calm and pacific life in which it was my brother's lot to pass nine years, amidst the deep recesses of that vast wilderness. Towards the beginning of the ninth year, a gentle she bear, whose form was as perfect as any creature of that class could possibly enjoy, and whose skin was blended with an equal intermixture of black and white, conceived so much fondness for my brother, that night and day she was inseparable from his side. She did not only charge herself with the care of his subsistence, by accommodating him with food necessary to nourish him, but she likewise regaled him with all the most delicious fruits that were the product of the several seasons. But her solitudes did not end here; for she frequently laid at his feet such presents as are mutually interchanged by a mistress and her lover, and are always agreeable beyond expression to persons inspired with tender sentiments for each other. If she at any time saw a flower whose fragrance and colours were peculiarly engaging, she never failed to gather it, and then immediately came to present it to him, with an air of the softest benevolence. Whenever he stretched himself on the earth to enjoy the refreshments of repose, she was particularly diligent to soften his sylvan couch with odoriferous verdure, and the most tender herbage she could possibly collect. My brother was far from being insensible of the sedulities of this obliging animal; he caressed her with a corresponding affection, and no longer remembered that she was a wild native of the woods. Nor did he limit himself to the instances of a common complacency, but he would frequently fold his arms around her shaggy neck, and in a repeated absence of thought call her his beloved mistress. As soon as he indulged himself in this gentle language, he beheld an inconceivable joy sparkling in the eyes, and diffusing itself through every feature of his favourite savage; and in reality no youthful pair were ever more amorous,

or expressed a greater satisfaction at their stolen interviews in sequestered groves, or near the limpid fall of murmuring fountains,

This surprizing intercourse continued about the space of twelve moons, without the least diminution of their affection to each other. On the contrary, a length of time rather increased their mutual tenderness; and though the fondness my brother entertained for his darling animal, resembled the gentle sentiments that an amiable sister naturally infuses into the heart of a kind brother who sincerely loves her; yet he was sometimes sensible of certain desires that sprung up in his soul, but as they really flowed from the impulse of nature, and were perfectly conformable to his uncommon turn of mind at that time, they might be considered as very excusable. One day, when he and his dumb companion were laid upon a bed of leaves which she had gathered with her usual care from various plants, he perceived to his great surprise, that his dear savage shed several tears. This sight affected him exceedingly, and his eyes were immediately moistened with a sympathizing sorrow. 'Alas!' said he, in the melancholy overflowings of his heart, 'why was I not formed like this affectionate animal? or rather, why was not she graced with the person of a beautiful woman? My heart would then have been inspired with such sentiments in her favour, which reason will not now permit me to entertain. Our tender bosoms might then have innocently glowed with the same irreproachable flames, and our mutual inclinations would have been approved by gods and men. But ah! unhappy wretch that I am, to what a strange singularity of fate am I now doomed? I inconsiderately form anxious desires, though I am sensible I cannot with the least probability hope for their accomplishment. O unrelenting Nature!' continued he, 'why dost thou so unkindly interpose an invincible impediment between me and my dearest felicity! and why dost thou permit me to flatter myself with a happiness that thy unalterable laws prohibit me to enjoy!'

He had scarce finished these expostulations, which flowed from the bottom of his heart, when he beheld the venerable form of an old man stand before him with a white wand in his hand. My brother



brother at first imagined that he had cast his eyes on some shadowy unsubstantial being; but when the aged person acquainted him with his name, his birth, and profession, Huanac was convinced that what he mistook for a gliding phantom was a real magician. He would have informed him in his turn who he was, and by what means he had passed so many years in the unfrequented wilds of that wood, but Capallu, for that was the magician's name, would not permit him to relate any of the transactions of his life. 'Son,' said he, 'it is altogether unnecessary for you to acquaint me with a set of particulars which I already know as well as yourself. I am not ignorant of the minutest circumstance that has happened to you since the first moment of your nativity, and I only desire you to tell me what particular wish you are most solicitous to have accomplished. You may speak without reserve, and with a full assurance of all imaginable success, for I only came to this place with an intention to give you all the satisfaction you can request.'

My brother found himself exceedingly perplexed at the magician's proposal, and a sudden start of shame rendered him incapable of making any reply. One moment his eyes cast a languishing glance on his dear savage, and the next instant they were directed to the earth with a deep sigh. The magician, who took notice of his discomposure, was much surprised at this unexpected silence. 'Away with this hesitation, my son,' said he, 'and let me know what you would desire me to perform for your service.'—'I love this animal you now behold,' replied my brother; 'and am very sensible that she regards me with the same affection: for which reason I am passionately desirous to see her assume the shape of a woman, were such a transformation possible to be effected.' He uttered these words with a faltering voice, and ended them with a new sigh; at the same time he covered his face with his hand, and blushed exceedingly at the extraordinary request he had made.

The magician was greatly delighted at the confusion with which he saw my brother oppressed, and with the benevolence of a friend determined to relieve him that instant. 'Be not disconcerted, my son,' said he, 'at the wish I have

heard you utter; this animal, for whom you express so much fondness, is not a savage beast, nor a monster of the woods; and you may believe me when I assure you, that she has not always worn the form in which she now appears before you. In a word, she is my daughter, and her true name is Attaca; but it will be proper to acquaint you with the particulars of her adventures.

'Attaca,' continued the magician, 'always carried the prize of beauty from the young ladies of this province, and wherever she came, the charms of each damsel were eclipsed in her presence. But instead of devoting herself to that softness and tranquillity of life which persons of her sex are usually prompted by nature to desire, her whole delight consisted in handling military weapons. She was never satisfied but when she assaulted the fiercest beasts she could single out in the chase, and would be perpetually engaged in scenes of combat and slaughter. In vain did crowds of amiable youths endeavour to make her sensible of a softer passion; she continually disregarded all their vows and obsequious addresses; and all those who unhappily persisted in their first inclinations to please her, have lost their lives by her destructive hand. She challenged each of them to a single combat, and they sunk beneath her superior force.

'At last the son of a very potent magician, who is likewise the sovereign of this province, ranked himself in the class of her adorers. He omitted no opportunity to make her sensible of his passion, but at the same time had the mortification to be rejected with as much indifference as the rest. When he repeated his solicitations, my daughter defied him to a single combat, but he was intimidated by the example of so many suitors who had already lost their lives in that unhappy contest, and was justly apprehensive of the same fate. —"It is altogether unnatural," said he, "for a man to expose himself to so many dangers for the daughter of an inconsiderable magician, who is a vassal to my father; and if there be any necessity of hazarding my life, it ought to be with a view of obtaining a more estimable acquisition. It would be easy to find a hundred daughters of the prophets, who would dispose them-

“ selves with pleasure to be favourable to my passion.”

“ Two moons were fully passed before this pusillanimous lover presumed to renew his pretensions, at which time the traitor had meanness enough to form in his mind the blackest pieces of treachery that could possibly enter into the imagination of any mortal. Notwithstanding the air of unconcern and indifference which he industriously affected, he was extremely exasperated at the repulse he had received from my daughter, and turned all his thoughts to revenge the insult he imagined he had sustained; and so well did he succeed in his ungenerous intentions, that he one day found my daughter asleep in the wood, into which she had retired to repose herself after the fatigue of a long chase. He beheld her with pleasure in that unresisting posture, and by the malignant power of his art locked up all her senses in a magick slumber. When he had accomplished this dishonourable action, he clasped her in his arms, and indulged himself in all the baseness a brutal passion could suggest to so abandoned a wretch.

“ When my daughter awaked from her enchanted sleep, she was immediately sensible of the injury she had received, and cast her eyes with indignation on the thicket around her, which she considered as the witness of her dishonour, and quitted it with the greatest precipitation after she had caught up her bow and arrows. She no sooner came into the open plain, than she beheld her ravisher making his retreat at a considerable distance from her. This odious sight gave a new sting to her affliction, and made her redouble her pace; and when she had almost overtaken him—“ Stay, thou insolent barbarian,” said she; “ and since the respect thou didst owe to my virtue was not sufficient to dissuade thee from thy criminal intentions, I intend to try if my arm can be more efficacious against thee.” But the cowardly wretch, instead of stopping at these words, fled from her with greater swiftness than before. “ I command thee once more to stay,” said she; “ for be assured, thou shalt never elude my pursuit by thy unmanly flight.” But as the timorous ravisher continued to run from her with all the speed he was able to

exert, she launched an arrow at him, which pierced him through the body, and laid him gasping on the ground.

“ The dying groans and exclamations of this young criminal were soon conveyed by the winds to the ears of the magician Maui, his father, who, when he beheld him biting the earth in his last agonies, was exceedingly astonished at that deplorable spectacle, and was unable to comprehend how his son, to whom he had imparted a considerable share of his own power, could so shamefully be defeated by a young damsel. But when he had made some reflections on the loss he had sustained, his countenance gloomed with implacable rage, and he took a dreadful oath to avenge himself for the death of his son. “ My vengeance,” said he, “ shall teach this audacious woman to what extremes an exasperated father is able to proceed!” At the same time he grasped a black wand, which he always employed when he intended to darken the skies, or cause the earth to tremble, and then went in pursuit of Attaca, who had again retired into the wood; and when he had overtaken her, he touched her thrice with his wand, and as often repeated a set of magick words. My daughter, who had not quitted her bow, attempted to draw an arrow out of her quiver, that she might be capable of defending herself; but she soon perceived, to her inexpressible surprize, that her bow and arrows, with her beautiful flow of hair, and the cincture she wore, began to change into a thick and shaggy skin, which covered all her body. Her taper fingers bended into crooked claws; she attempted to speak, but alas! she attempted in vain; her voice was no longer obedient to her will, and she was unable to utter any human sounds expressive of her grief. She could only form a dreadful threatening cry, with which she herself was terrified; and when she surveyed her shape, she saw that she was entirely transformed into a bear.

“ In the mean time, I waited impatiently for the return of my dear Attaca; but at length, when I neither saw her nor heard any tidings of her, I entered into the wood, and there beheld my daughter changed into the brutal form in which she still appears.”

HOUR



## H O U R L I I I .

IT is impossible for me to describe the sorrow that oppressed my soul at this deplorable accident. I suffered all the agonies with which the sentiments of nature can affect a tender father who has lost his beloved daughter. In vain did I repeat all the secrets of my art, to restore her to her natural form; every incantation I had recourse to was unavailing. I endeavoured, to as little purpose, to keep her near me; she fled from my presence, as if I had been her most dangerous enemy, and I vainly followed her through woods, and over rocks and mountains, whilst she still eluded my anxious concern for her welfare, and would never permit me to approach her. She began to bound over the earth with all the fury of a lioness, who bears along with her the shaft that has deeply wounded her: she forced her way through wilds that seemed impassable, and where no tract was visible to the eye. Her rapidity was not to be abated by any obstacle that rose in her way: she climbed the steepest rocks with a surprising agility, and sprung from one precipice to another, as if she had been aided with wings.

I was at last overwhelmed with affliction, and found myself so dispirited by the fatigue I had undergone, that I was compelled to discontinue my ineffectual pursuit. A thousand times was I tempted to end my miserable days by death; and I determined to ascend the highest rock, and precipitate myself into the depth beneath me: but I was restrained from putting that design into execution, by an apprehension of offending the gods from whom I had received the life I enjoyed, and who alone had a right to deprive me of it, without the imputation of any crime. Amidst this agitation of my soul, I sunk down on the flowery edge of a fountain, intermixing my tears with the pure stream, and deploring my misfortune for several days, without taking the necessary sustenance of life, or suffering sleep to close my eyes; till at last, violently pressed with hunger, and much more by despair, I determined to have recourse to submission, the last lawful expedient that the unfortunate can call to their assistance. With that intention, I immediately directed my steps to the habitation of the magician, whose

cruel enchantment had occasioned all my woe; and I implored him in the most humble and moving language I could utter, to restore my dear and unhappy daughter to my declining age. The barbarous man beheld me with a stern insensibility of my sorrows, and his unrelenting disposition was not to be wrought upon by the fervent supplications I poured out in the anguish of my soul. I then fell prostrate at his feet, in hopes that act of humility would make some impression upon him; but when I perceived it was altogether ineffectual—"Satiated," said I, "your revenge then with the despair of a wretched father, and enjoy the cruel satisfaction of beholding me sink under an insupportable weight of misery."

These words were interrupted by sighs that I had no power to suppress, and my face was entirely bathed in tears. I still lay at the magician's feet, and that moving sight gained upon him much more than all my prayers and importunity; for the barbarian, after he had sufficiently gratified his resentment with my tears, seemed to be touched with some compassion at my grief and submissive humility. He stretched out his hand to raise me from the earth, and beheld me with an aspect of less severity than he first assumed. "Ah, unhappy father!" said he, "how couldst thou presume to appear in this place; and what could induce thee to venture into the presence of a man, who, as thou dost well know, is irritated by a just indignation? Hast thou then forgotten that I am a father as well as thyself, and a father greatly injured in the most sensible and tender part? Surely thy breast conceals a heart of adamant, or thou couldst never be so insensible of the anguish I sustain. For my part, I was soon wrought upon by compassion when I beheld thy unhappy state, and was unable to prevail upon myself to make thee suffer for thy daughter's crime."—"What crime, my lord," said I, "has my daughter been so unfortunate to commit?"—"She appears but too guilty," replied the magician, "to a sorrowful father, whom she has for ever deprived of an only son."—"But that son," said I, "was a rash young man, who had mortally injured her by the violation of her

“her honour; and can you possibly think so impious an action could deserve a less punishment than death?” —“I have no intention to extenuate my son’s offence,” replied Maui, with a sigh; “but I certainly have reason to complain of your daughter, for creating me a grief which will embitter the remainder of my days. If she has been able to revenge the insult offered to her virgin purity, shall I be debarred from punishing the injury I sustain from her barbarity? Alas!” continued he, “there is an unspeakable difference between your affliction and mine; you have at least the satisfaction of being well assured that your daughter is still alive, and may entertain hopes that she will one day be restored to her natural form, and prove the solace of your declining years; but I shall never more behold my dearest son; death cruelly denies me that sweet felicity, and has for ever snatched him from his unfortunate father.”

“The gleam of hope which this discourse of the magician caused to dawn within me, composed in some degree the disorder of my soul; but as I was desirous to be satisfied whether I might really depend on what he had intimated to me—“How can I possibly flatter myself,” said I, “with any expectation of beholding my daughter in her primitive form, and what reason have I to believe she will ever be in a condition to afford me the consolation you have mentioned?” —“Your daughter,” replied he, “must continue in the shape of the animal she now appears to be, till some man, who is descended from the race of the prophets, shall be enamoured of her in that form; and the moment that event shall happen, the enchantment I have fixed upon her will entirely cease; you will then be permitted to break the charm, and I will furnish you with sufficient power for that effect: but remember that I enjoin you to leave upon her some exterior mark of her present transformation, though I allow you a free choice where to fix it. I will content myself with this slight instance of my revenge; and as I shall then dispose myself to forget the injury I have received from her, so I solemnly promise that I will never molest her for the future.”

“This discourse immediately dissipated all the fond hopes I had conceived, and I thought it an absolute impossibility that any man could ever be found whose heart would be of that peculiar cast, as to be affected with any tenderness for an animal of that unpleasant appearance: but Heaven, contrary to my expectations, has at last permitted me to enjoy that happy moment, and the gracious gods would not permit my tears and despair to sink me down to my grave. It is to those propitious beings that I owe my knowledge of your person, and the past circumstances of your life, and they condescend to inform me that the affectionate caresses of my daughter inspired you with a fondness for her even in that savage shape, and that you passionately desired a change either of her form or your own, that you might be united to her by the endearing intercourse of mutual love. You yourself have made me the same declaration, and I will now procure you the satisfaction you have so long languished after, by restoring my daughter to her natural form.”

“Let me first desire you to acquaint me,” replied my brother, “what part of the animal you intend to leave your daughter; for should the mark be too apparent, I am apprehensive that it will render her an object of horror, or expose her at least to the derision of all who shall happen to behold her.” —“To prevent that as much as possible,” replied Capallu, “I think it would be most proper to leave a lock of that creature upon some part of my daughter’s head, where it may be in a great measure concealed by the flow of her own hair; and I am persuaded this little deformity will be so lost and confounded in the intermixture of her tresses, that it will scarce be visible to the most curious eye.” Huanac was perfectly satisfied with this expedient, and already began to flatter himself that this small imperfection would only be a foil to the beauty of his future spouse.

In the mean time, Capallu sought among the herbage for a certain plant, whose virtues were favourable to his purpose, and when he at last had discovered it, he gathered it from the stalk, and applied it to the forehead of his daughter, and at the same time uttered several magical words. The animal at that instant sprung up upon her hind-feet; her



her body tapered into the most delicate shape; her neck became beautifully rounded, and rose upon a bosom that gently swelled into the softest attractions; her head was finished with the same perfection, and all her features were arranged in the completest symmetry; her cheeks were tinged with a rosy glow; her eyes became enlivened with the purest lustre; and all these charms were softened by a flowing shade of the finest hair in the world, that descended in waving rings to her slender waist; her skin was whiter than the downy plumage of swans, and her whole person was a profusion of beauties that rendered her altogether irresistible.

My brother was lost in admiration at the amiable prodigy he saw effected; he could hardly presume to credit his own eyes, and was for some moments tempted to look upon the pleasing wonder before him as a bright illusion. But when he had recovered himself from the first impressions of his astonishment, he felt his heart soften into tenderness the more he beheld the lovely Attaca, and it was no longer possible for him to doubt the reality of what he then saw. They conversed together for some time, in the endearing language of the eyes, and exchanged the most expressive intimations of their mutual desires. When they had sufficiently indulged themselves in that gentle converse, they began the pleasing intercourse of speech, and testified to each other their transports to behold themselves in a state so conformable to the ardours of their passion.

Capallu was charmed to hear the youthful pair unfold the tender sentiments of their souls; 'I am sensible,' said he, 'of your mutual inclinations, and now, that I may render your happiness as complete as possible, I consent to the union you so ardently desire, and only wait to hear your reciprocal vows of unchangeable affection to each other.' The two lovers soon gave him full satisfaction in that particular. After which the magician addressing himself to the fair Attaca—'Daughter,' said he, 'you may now present your hand to the youthful Huanac without the least repugnance; his birth gives him a sufficient title to your person, and he has rendered himself still more meritorious by the signal service you have so lately received from him.—And you, my dear Huanac,' continued he, 'may you al-

ways think your happiness rises from the alliance you this day desire with so much ardour. I willingly accept you for my son-in-law, and resign my daughter to your arms with the sincerest joy; for I had rather bestow her upon a person of your virtue and merit, than give her to the most potent magician in the universe.'

This was all the ceremony that passed between them upon this happy occasion, and the beauteous Attaca, by this mutual consent, was espoused to my brother; after which they immediately repaired to the habitation of Capallu, where they passed some time in all the joys and tranquillity that flow from mutual love. They had no longer any apprehensions of the magician Maui, nor had he the least inclination to disturb their innocent repose. He even seemed to have entirely forgotten the death of his son, whom he had formerly lamented with such immoderate sorrow, and could now behold Capallu, with his fair daughter and her spouse, without any emotion of displeasure. But though he had brought himself to this easy disposition, his wife still continued implacable in her resentment; and the aversion she had conceived against Attaca, and all those who were related to her, or had any satisfaction in her welfare, was of such an untractable nature, that it was not to be diminished by time itself, which usually wears out such impressions; and it could not possibly be satisfied by any other atonement than the destruction of its object. How frequently did she importune her husband to gratify her revenge by the death of the unfortunate Attaca! But the generous Maui observed the strictest punctuality in his past engagement to Capallu, and all her solicitations could not prevail upon him to violate it in the least instance. He had formerly promised, that he would no more molest Attaca when she had regained her natural form. And as he was now fully satisfied with the punishment he had already inflicted on that amiable person, he thought it unreasonable to indulge himself in any other severity, for an offence which time, and the true circumstances of the action, inclined him to consider as very excusable.

In the mean time, Sunqui, for that was the name of the magician's wife, was perpetually tormenting herself with raging passions, and exclaiming at the pretended impunity of Attaca's crime.

'Who,'

'Who,' said she to her husband, 'will hereafter have the least awe for your power, when she who murdered your son, not only lives unpunished, but insolently triumphs at your affliction? All the young persons of the other sex are daily paying homage to her beauty, and she is regarded through the whole extent of your dominions as a visible divinity. Is this, then, the penalty she ought to suffer for the injury we have received from her proud cruelty? But if you can degenerate into this unmanly patience, I am determined to pursue the gay criminal with a vengeance not to be eluded; and though my destruction should be involved in the fall of my enemy, it is my fixed resolution that she shall die.'

In vain did the magician employ all the power of persuasion, to calm the impetuous disposition of his wife; all the reasons he urged lost their effect, and that barbarous woman continued as inflexible as ever. 'Do not the gods themselves,' said she, 'authorize our resentment and revenge by their own example?'—'I acknowledge,' replied he, 'that the gods have frequently their provocations to anger and vengeance; but they always inflict their punishments with a gracious moderation, and are never implacable in their displeasure. Instead of imitating frail mortals by giving a full career to their wrath, they often pardon the offence, and are satisfied with the penitence of the criminal. Nay, they sometimes punish the most flagrant crimes with a severity tempered with the mildest mercy; and this is the noble plan by which I have regulated myself with respect to Attaca. I am satisfied with the punishment she has formerly experienced, and with that mark of my vengeance which she now carries about her.'—'And what mark of your vengeance have you fixed upon her?' interrupted Sunqui, with a disdainful smile. 'Are the charms that adorn her person the vengeful present you have made her, and is it thus that your resentment displays its great effects?'—'I cannot think it advisable,' replied the magician, 'to satisfy your curiosity in this particular; and it is sufficient if I assure you that her punishment is real, though I have not exposed it to public view.'—'I will never suffer myself to be amused in this manner,' said the vehement Sunqui,

'and I am determined to know what particular mark Attaca bears of your boasted vengeance.'—'I must not consent to afford you that satisfaction,' replied Mauli, 'for I am very sensible, that if I should be prevailed upon to gratify your curiosity, the discovery I should make to you would not long remain a secret; and I am resolved not to have any thing published that would expose Attaca to the ridicule of the whole nation.'—'You exceedingly deceive yourself,' retorted Sunqui, 'if you imagine you can impose upon me with this cold artifice; I am now convinced that I am betrayed, and have too much reason to believe that you are passionately in love with Attaca. My bed is dishonoured by your perfidy. Yes,' continued she, 'I swear by the great Rimac, that you have been false to your conjugal vows! And if you do not immediately inform me what marks of your vengeance Attaca now wears, I will look upon you for the future as a base adulterer, and will for ever withdraw myself from your hateful presence.'

#### H O U R L I V .

**M**AULI was now sensible that it would be impossible for him to ease his wife of her new suspicions, unless he acquainted her with the whole mystery of his proceeding. 'If you will promise me,' said he, 'not to disclose the secret you would have me to impart to you, I will give you a particular description of the mark I have fixed upon Attaca.'—'I give you my solemn assurance of secrecy,' replied she; 'and you may now safely entrust me with the discovery.'—'You know,' said the magician, 'with what restrictions I transformed Attaca into a bear, and the gods have been pleased at last to send her a deliverer. For my part, I did not once oppose her being restored to her proper form, and only enjoined her father to reserve upon her person some mark of the transformation to which I had doomed her.'—'Ah! what mark?' interrupted Sunqui, with an air of rage and impatience; 'tell me what mark thou hast left her?'—'It is only a lock of that animal's hair,' replied Mauli, 'which now grows upon her head, and Attaca will retain that part of a bear as long as she lives.'—O exquisite



‘exquisite!’ cried Sunqui, with a loud and malignant laugh, ‘O the delightful vengeance you have taken for the death of your son! Attaca wears the lock of a bear upon her head! This, sure, must be a sufficient consolation to an afflicted mother, who has lost her only son; and I can never tax you with injustice, since you have punished Attaca with the shagged tuft of a bear!’

Sunqui repeated those malicious words so often, and always pronounced them with such a shrill voice, that her husband was in great apprehensions lest any of the domesticks should happen to hear her; for which reason he earnestly entreated her to speak in a softer tone, and not to forget her promise to keep the secret with which he had entrusted her. But alas! it was then too late for her to be silent; almost every servant in the palace had already heard her exclamations, and been officious enough to repeat them after her. Some of them even went out into the publick streets, and made the same declaration to every person they met in their way; so that Sunqui was not long incommoded with the secret, but was exceedingly delighted to find herself disengaged, as she imagined, from her promise. She now appeared indefatigable in the gratification of her revenge, and acquainted all who came to visit her with Attaca’s misfortune; and such were the impressions diffused among the people by this account, that whenever my brother, or his wife, or even Capallu himself, appeared in publick, the universal cry was—‘Attaca wears the lock of a bear,’ which was constantly repeated till they were out of sight.

The unfortunate pair were so extremely shocked to see themselves thus exposed to the derision of a vile populace, that they determined to withdraw themselves as soon as possible from such insults. After some consideration, they resolved to seek a more agreeable residence, and banish themselves from a country where they perpetually suffered such cruel mortifications. With this intention, they quitted the mansion of Capallu by night, that the darkness might the better conceal their design; and after they had passed through several unfrequented forests, and wandered for many days from one solitude to another, they at last arrived in the province of Hattun Rucana, where they found a spacious grotto, which was then uninhabited, and seemed

to offer them a very commodious habitation. It was agreeably seated on the bank of a running stream, and at a little distance from a pleasant wood, which were two advantages that greatly recommended the situation, the water being plentifully stored with fish, and the thickets abounding with variety of choice game. They were likewise not far from a little rural neighbourhood, where they had an opportunity of amusing themselves whenever they pleased, with the conversation of the hospitable inhabitants. These inviting accommodations induced the two travellers to fix their dwelling in this place, where they now flattered themselves they might pass the remainder of their days in tranquillity, and free from the insolence that had driven them from their former habitation. I might add to this, that their satisfaction seemed fully compleated by the pregnancy of Attaca. But alas! when Fortune has once taken a resolution to persecute poor mortals, no solitude is obscure enough to cover them from her resentment, and her unrelenting cruelty is not to be eluded by any precautions of the wisest of the sons of men.

One day, when my brother and his fair spouse were enjoying the cool breeze on the bank of the river, with some of their friends, their ears were suddenly alarmed with a voice from the top of a neighbouring tree, and which pronounced, with a very articulate tone, these words: ‘Attaca wears the lock of a bear.’ All the company were struck with astonishment at this unexpected interruption of their innocent pleasure, and endeavoured to discover from whence the sound, which resembled a human voice, proceeded. But the unfortunate Attaca was so affected with those dreadful accents, that she breathed a despairing sigh, and reclining her head on the bosom of her dear Huanac, immediately fainted away in his arms. The desolate husband and his friends gave her all the assistance in their power, and at last recovered her from the state of insensibility into which she had sunk. But this relief only prepared her for new pangs, for she no sooner came to herself, but her ears were tortured with the repetition of those fatal words that had so discomposed her a few moments before. Her heart was rent with sighs, and her radiant eyes seemed dissolved in tears; and as the voice was perpetually repeating the same odious

X

accents,

accents, Attaca lost all remains of patience. She surveyed the tree very attentively, and at last discovered a parrot, who had taken his stand on one of the loftiest boughs. Her provocation at this sight was inexpressible; and when she had caught up her bow, in the first transport of her fury—'Insolent creature,' said she, 'thou hast had the presumption to offend me; but all the powers in nature shall not protect thee from the vengeance of my shaft.' The effect was exactly agreeable to the menace; for the arrow pierced the feathered babbler through the body, and he fell down dead at the foot of the tree.

My brother and his friends were employing all their persuasions to relieve the dejected Attaca from the melancholy that oppressed her, when a flight of the same birds settled upon the trees, and repeated the language of their dead companion. All the wood resounded with those detestable accents; the melodious notes that lately warbled among the waving branches were no longer heard; and now, not only the parrots, but innumerable tribes of other birds, both great and small, assembled from all quarters, and in loud cries, that were intelligible to my brother and his wife, as well as to their company, mutually told each other that Attaca wore the lock of a bear.

This astonishing prodigy was regarded by several persons in the company as some extraordinary declaration from the gods themselves, who, by the ministration of the animals, revealed Attaca's shameful state. Some took the liberty to express their sentiments of this event in very ludicrous language and mortifying raillery. Others testified their contempt of her person, by declining her company upon all occasions; and her most intimate and best friends were at a loss what to think of this strange affair; for if they could not easily persuade themselves that Attaca was in the condition intimated by birds, yet the constant and universal cry of those animals created some suspicions in their minds, which they were unable to clear up to their satisfaction.

Some of them, at last, came to a resolution either to verify or disapprove this imputed fact by ocular demonstration, that they might no longer be perplexed with the uncertainty under which they laboured; and they neglected no

opportunity to succeed in their design. They privately followed her wherever she went, and observed all her motions with the strictest attention. They visited every solitude to which she used to retreat, in hopes to find her asleep in some sequestered shade, or to surprise her in any other unguarded moment, when she would be unable to elude their curiosity; but all their endeavours still proved ineffectual. At last, a party of young men resolved to have recourse to violence, in order to obtain the satisfaction they desired; and with that view, they all assembled at the door of her grotto, and called her by her name. Attaca, who little suspected their ungenerous intentions, had no sooner made her appearance, than she found herself surrounded by them in such a manner, that it was impossible for her to escape. The inhuman crowd immediately seized her, and, without the least consideration of the respect due to her sex, used their utmost efforts to gratify their insolent curiosity. The beautiful Attaca resisted their violence for some time, till at last the elegant plumage in which her hair was collected, fell from her head, and exposed the delicate flow of her dishevelled tresses to the view of those barbarians, who immediately discovered the fatal lock, and were now convinced that the birds had uttered nothing but the reality. The abandoned wretches burst into a loud peal of laughter at their success; and as they retired, made the grotto echo with this exclamation—'Attaca has indeed the lock of a bear!'

The unfortunate wife of Huanac was fired with a just indignation at the affront she had received, and resolved to avenge herself by the death of those presumptuous young men. She sprung with a surprising swiftness to her grotto, and seized her bow and arrows, immediately pursued her enemies, and in a few moments beheld herself near enough to them to execute her intended revenge. She then drew an arrow from her quiver, and launched it at one of those insolent wretches with so much vigour, that it entered at his back and pierced him through the heart. His companions, at this dismal spectacle, faced their beautiful foe, when a second shaft, directed by her unerring eye, planted itself in the bosom of another of their number, and laid him dead on the earth. This was immediately followed by a third, which pro-



produced the same fatal effect; and as she was preparing to discharge the fourth, a large stone, whirled by an invisible hand, struck her in the middle of the forehead; and so violent was the blow, that she sunk down in the dust the instant she received it. The blood gushed in a purple stream from her wound, and her soul was ready to take it's eternal flight from her pale lips.

While this scene of death was transacting, my brother, who knew nothing of the insult that had been offered to his wife, nor of the combat wherein she was engaged, departed from his grot to seek his beloved comfort, and when he had wandered for some time among the solitudes she used to frequent, he perceived a human form stretched on the earth, and bathed in it's flowing blood. This melancholy spectacle raised his compassion, and he was not a little displeased to see such an instance of barbarity; but who can describe the agitations of his soul, when, upon a nearer approach, he cast his eyes on his beloved Attaca! His grief at first exceeded all the bounds of moderation; but when he considered that it was altogether unavailing, he endeavoured to calm it with the assistance of reason and manly resolution; and as he was sensible that Attaca was reduced to this condition by some inhuman enemies, he directed his view all around him, to discover the authors of his sad calamity, and soon beheld them in their distant flight. He now breathed nothing but revenge, and immediately pursued them with a rage that gave wings to his speed; and as he was armed with a bow and arrows, he assailed them with so much success, that he soon killed and wounded several of their number; and he continued the attack with so much vigour, that he at last laid them all dead on the earth.

Huanac, when he had compleated this effect of his resentment, returned to the place where he had left his murdered wife, and then gave a loose to his sorrow and despair; he tore the hair from his head, and casting himself on her breathless body, washed it with his tears, and mingled them with the blood that flowed from her wound.

Whilst he was thus indulging himself in his despair, Capallu, who, by the assistance of his art, was acquainted with the death of his daughter, arrived at the place where the disconsolate husband was

overwhelmed with the anguish of his soul. 'My son,' said he, clasping him in his arms, and melting into tears, 'you have now lost a faithful companion, who was qualified to render your life perfectly happy, and I am unfortunately deprived of a daughter whom I tenderly loved. I am under no difficulty to discover from whence the fatal blow came, for I am sensible it proceeded from the cruel hand of Sunqui. This barbarous woman, after she had compelled my daughter and you to abandon my house, and fly from that inhospitable country, was not satisfied with that instance of her revenge, but pursued you with unrelenting rage to the solitude you had chosen for your retreat, and her hatred was increased by some particular tidings she had heard. Her husband had informed her of the pregnancy of your wife, which inflamed her with the strangest jealousy that ever infected a human breast. "Is it possible then," cried she, "that I should have the mortification to see her become a parent, who has deprived me of all hope of leaving any posterity behind me! No, I am determined this shall never be; and may I no longer be regarded as the wife of the potent Maui, if I do not exterminate the mother and her issue!"

'When she had ended these inhuman exclamations, she immediately arose from her seat and presented herself before her husband; and after she had discoursed with him for some time upon indifferent subjects, she turned her conversation very artfully to Attaca. "This poor woman," said she, "is now with child; it would have been barbarous to have destroyed her in that condition, and I am extremely concerned at the accident which obliged her to retire from our dominions."

'Maui was persuaded by this discourse, that his wife had no longer any intention to molest Attaca. "I am greatly delighted," said he, "with the compassion you express for that unfortunate person; and though the injury we have received from her is, according to all appearances, irretrievable, yet we should be unjust to complain of her proceeding. A virtuous maiden, who is armed with proper weapons to revenge an insult, is

“not to be condemned for shedding the blood of her ravisher, and expiating by death the violence he offered.” Sunqui pretended to entertain the same opinion, and then changing the conversation to a different subject, she intreated her husband to grant her one request, without mentioning any particulars. “I am willing to indulge you in your desire,” said Maui, “provided what you ask be not prejudicial to any person whatever. On this condition, you may demand what you please, without the least fear of a refusal.”—“You yourself shall judge,” replied Sunqui, “whether my request can possibly be injurious to any mortal; but you must first swear to grant what I desire.”—“This I willingly consent to,” said Maui, “upon the terms I have already intimated; and I therefore swear by the great Rimac, the awful avenger of perjury!”

## H O U R   L V.

**W**HEN the magician had taken this solemn oath, Sunqui continued her discourse in this manner—“I desire you would enable me to give language to the birds, and cause them to speak whatever I would have them utter.” Maui, who had not any suspicion of the use his wife intended to make of this power, complied with her demand without the least hesitation.

Sunqui, who was now elated with a malignant pride at the new prerogative she had acquired, wrapped herself in a cloud, and quitting her husband’s palace, proceeded immediately to the forests of Hattun Rucana. At her arrival thither, she caused all the birds of every species to assemble round her, and taught them to pronounce those words that have proved so fatal to our repose, and so calamitous to my dear unhappy daughter; and when she had sufficiently instructed them in the part they were to perform, she commanded them to discontinue their usual songs, and to utter only these words—“Ataca has the lock of a bear.” You are not ignorant,” continued Capallu, of the fatal accidents that have since happened, and therefore I shall not waste any time in repeating them.”

“Alas! my dear father,” replied Huanac, “we both were born to suffer a most deplorable destiny!”—“That, indeed, is not to be doubted, my son,” said Capallu; “but, however, since we have it in our power to avenge ourselves for the injuries we have received, we ought to use the proper means to that effect. The inhuman Sunqui has given us a specimen how offences are to be punished, and she has taught us by the concession into which she betrayed her husband, that artifice is a proper expedient to be employed, when we are not in a condition to make our attack by open force. I am therefore determined to destroy that barbarian in her own fraudulent manner; and as neither she nor her husband have any power over insects and reptiles, I intend to assume the form of a serpent for the accomplishment of my design. She every day bathes herself in a fountain which I well know, and when I have surprized her there, according to my present intention, I will pierce her body in a thousand places, with a sting that shall diffuse a mortal poison through all her veins. When this part of our revenge is completed, we will consider of proper means to punish the other murderers of your wife.” At these words Capallu disappeared, and left my brother overwhelmed with affliction at the loss of his beloved Attaca.

Huanac, after the departure of Capallu, dug a grave in the earth, in which he deposited the body of his dead wife; but whilst he was performing this last office to her remains, he saw a troop of young men advancing towards him with a furious air, and armed with spears, clubs, and stones, to revenge by his death their slain companions. “I now behold him,” said one of these insolent wretches; “this is the pernicious stranger who has murdered our friends.” At the same time he threw a huge stone at my brother, but the force of the blow was happily weakened by the branches of the trees, and he only received a slight contusion. At the same instant another of his invaders advanced with an intention to crush him with the weight of his club, and a third prepared to pierce him through the body with a lance.

My brother had inevitably perished in this unequal combat, if Heaven had not preserved him by an unexpected assistance.



ance: a lion of an enormous size sprung out of the thick bushes, and placed himself between Huanac and his enemies. His jaws were covered with foam mixed with blood, and he made the wood echo with such a dreadful roar, that was capable of infusing terror into the most undaunted heart. The hostile troop started back in the utmost consternation at the sight of this formidable animal, and were utterly confounded by their fears; some endeavoured to secure themselves by flight, whilst those who attempted to make any resistance were torn in pieces by the claws and fangs of the furious savage. The blood of those miserable wretches flowed in such copious streams, that a crimson river seemed to roll through the wood, and the earth is red to this day with the slaughter of that combat.

My brother ascribed his preservation from the rage of his enemies to the goodness of the gods, and imagined that he even beheld something divine in the lion who had so seasonably assisted him. He stretched out his arms towards him, and was preparing to offer him his grateful adorations, when he saw him assume the form of a man, whose features were very familiar to him. In a word, he beheld, with infinite delight, that he was indebted for his deliverance to the father of his dear Attaca. He threw himself at his feet, and embraced them with all the transports that the sense of such an obligation could inspire, and was at a loss for expressions to testify the gratitude with which his soul was affected.

In the mean time, Capallo, whose thoughts were employed by other cares, raised his son-in-law from the earth, and at the same time expressed himself in this manner—'The barbarous woman who murdered your unfortunate wife has been punished as I lately proposed; and since my vengeance has been so effectual against her, nothing remains but the consideration of proper methods to chastise the insolence of the inhabitants of this country with equal severity, in order to convince posterity, that the descendants of the prophets are not to be injured with impunity. It is absolutely necessary to inflict vengeance on all those who inhabit this land; for as their crime is general, every individual ought to partake of the same punishment.'

'Leave that care to me, I entreat

'you,' said my brother, 'and I will contrive a memorable revenge, whose fatal effects shall continue as long as I live. I only desire that you would either render me invulnerable, or else cause me to grow to those dimensions, as may enable me to devour a man every day. I have taken a resolution to fix my residence in this country, and as my motive to vengeance is so just and unexceptionable, my principal employment shall be to punish the perfidious cruelty of the inhabitants.'

'It is impossible for me,' replied Capallo, 'to refuse you any thing you desire; but as it is much easier for me to furnish you with a gigantic shape than to make you invulnerable, I shall consequently prefer the first of these enchantments.' At the same time he inclined his body towards the earth, and collected a little heap of sand, and then scattering it upon the head of Huanac—'Be it thy prerogative,' said he, 'to rise from this moment to the largest stature in which any mortal ever appeared.' This command was immediately succeeded by a suitable effect; the head of my brother was enlarged in an instant to a prodigious size; his legs were exceedingly lengthened, and his whole body grew to those surprising dimensions in which he afterwards appeared to the inhabitants of Hattun Rucana. His strength had likewise a proportionable increase, and he became extremely desirous to make some experiment of this new acquisition. He accordingly tore up a large tree by the roots, and shattered all the branches with as much facility as a strong man would snap the slender stem of a reed, which had long been withered by the scorching beams of the sun.

Huanac was charmed at the extraordinary power that was so suddenly imparted to him, and resigned himself to the gay transports of lively joy. He testified all imaginable acknowledgment to his father-in-law for the present he had received from his complacency; and when the old man had taken his final leave of him, in order to return to his own habitation, my brother prepared to gratify the revenge he had premeditated. With this intention, he took a progress through the country, and laid the first man he met gasping on the earth; after which, he immediately devoured him. The same fate attended the next person who

who had the misfortune to present himself in Huanac's way; and he was altogether as unmerciful to the third. In fine, every mortal who happened to appear before him became a sacrifice to his unrelenting rage, and all parts of the country displayed innumerable marks of his dreadful vengeance.

He indulged himself in this fatal severity for the space of several years; till at last he found himself softened with the natural sentiments of humanity that waked his soul, and began to reflect with a conscious shame on the many instances of his barbarity. 'If I persist in my revenge,' said he, 'with as little remorse as I have hitherto gratified it, I shall soon extirpate the whole race of mankind. I will therefore moderate my resentment, and though I am exasperated by such uncommon provocations, yet I am determined to conduct myself with more lenity for the future; and since I am unable to devour more than one man each day, I will confine myself to the destruction of a single person. I intend, however,' continued he, 'to compel all those I meet to relate to me the particular adventures they have experienced; and that person whose history shall appear to me less entertaining, shall be destined for my food, and I will dismiss the rest in full liberty.' This was the resolution that Huanac formed, and he continued to observe it very punctually to the day of his death.

THE SEQUEL OF THE HISTORY OF  
PRINCE HUANAC, AND THE QUEEN  
OF HATTUN RUCANA.

MADAM, (continued Yllapantac, addressing his discourse to the queen) you are sensible what calamities my brother unhappily brought upon your subjects, not only since the time you ascended the throne of your ancestors, but even many years before your birth. He was looked upon through all your dominions as a pernicious monster, whom the gods had created in their displeasure, to spread desolation among the inhabitants of the earth. And yet, with all the bad qualities that so much dishonoured him, he was a man descended from the sacred race of the prophets, and only deviated into cruelty from what appeared to him to be a principle of justice. His sole intention was to revenge the murder of a

wife he passionately loved, and to retaliate the violence that had been inhumanly offered to his own person.

'Ah, Yllapantac!' interrupted the Queen of Hattun Rucana, 'your brother can never be considered as an innocent person. I acknowledge, indeed, that it was very natural for him to be affected with resentment at the untimely death of his wife; but when he suffered himself to be so strangely misguided by his fury, as to destroy many thousands of the children of men, for the crime of an inconsiderable number of the people, his inhumanity became unpardonable, and he divested himself of all pretensions to mercy. I have the same aversion to the savage pleasure he enjoyed in devouring his enemies; and I think it evident, that the voice of Nature never authorizes mortals to nourish themselves with human flesh. On the contrary, the testifies the utmost repugnance to that barbarity, and the secret horror with which she inspires us for that kind of food, ought to be regarded as an express admonition to abstain from it.

'And now,' continued she, 'let our conversation no longer turn upon your brother, whose adventures are interwoven with circumstances that are very detestable: we will return to the state of your own affairs, and I am inclinable to persuade myself, that I have this moment entertained a thought which is not altogether without foundation. If the misfortune you sustained, with respect to your marriage with the amiable Chici, is not altogether to be imputed to any crimes of yours, I yet think you was extremely negligent in your endeavour to discover the true condition which the gods required you to perform, in order to accomplish your future happiness. In my opinion, you was too credulous, when you imagined your abdication to be the very circumstance which the gods demanded, and that in ceasing to be a sovereign you would at the same time cease to be what you were. But nothing astonishes me so much, as that when you experienced the unsuccessful event of your proceeding, you should not comprehend that something yet remained to be performed, previous to your happiness. I need not tell you that the gods are infallible in their oracles; they permitted you to find a person capable



capable of crowning your days with felicity, and they likewise gave you the advantage over all your rivals. From whence then proceeded the impediment which deprived you of the prize resulting from your victory? It is, doubtless, to be ascribed to none but yourself: you have not as yet sufficiently obeyed the gods; and were I in your condition, I would enter upon a deliberate examination of my present state. The wings, for instance, which you wear, give you some participation of the nature of birds, as the other parts of your body bear a similitude to the class of mankind. This unnatural mixture may, perhaps, be displeasing to the gods, who cannot with any approbation behold those things con-founded which they have evidently distinguished and separated. I would therefore have divested myself of those wings, and then I should really have ceased to be what I was before; and if I had not then succeeded in that particular, I would have resorted to some other expedient; for example, I would have regulated my passions and the habits I had contracted, and refined them from every imperfection that I imagined might be displeasing to the gods; till at last, by repeated endeavours, I had obtained the knowledge of their will.

## H O U R LVI.

**A**LAS! replied Yllapantac, 'the fault is already committed, and I doubt beyond the power of reparation!' Here Prince Houac interposed, and offered his opinion in this mysterious affair. 'I should not,' said he, 'be so inclinable to despair of the gracious disposition of the gods, but would rather implore them with all humility to be favourable to me, and I should flatter myself that they would not disregard my supplications. They have a thousand expedients to make us happy; and when I remember how you declared, in the history of your adventures, that all your rivals were restored to life, and that the body of Chici disappeared from the litter in which you had placed her, I began to presage that some peculiar advantages are still reserved for you. I imagine, for instance, that Chici has not yet descended to the regions of the dead, and that the gods have secreted

her in some particular part of their creation, with an intention to restore her to you as soon as you have conformed yourself to their decrees.'

'Prince,' replied Yllapantac, 'whatever may be the event, I am determined to give you the utmost proof of the regard I pay to the counsels I have received from you and the Queen of Hattun Rucana. I am now preparing to make a sacrifice of my wings, that were once so precious to me; and may the gods grant,' continued he, with tears in his eyes, 'that this resignation may be one day advantageous to my repose!' At the close of this discourse he raised his eyes to heaven, and with extended arms pronounced some magick words; after which he took a sable wand in his hand, and had no sooner drawn it over his wings than they entirely disappeared, without leaving any mark whereby it might be known that they had been ever fixed to any part of his body.

Prince Houac and the Queen of Hattun Rucana exhorted the Sovereign of the Isle of Uxi to place his confidence in the goodness of the gods, and then they rose from their seats to give him their final farewell. But they had scarce begun to exchange their last civilities, when they heard loud acclamations of joy, accompanied with the melodious sounds of several musical instruments in the great square of the palace. Yllapantac was exceedingly surprized at what he heard, and went out of the hall to learn the cause of this sudden alacrity. But who can express the transports of his soul when he beheld the lovely Chici, led by the magician her father? He sprung to her with all the passionate ardours of the fondest lover, and clasping one of her lily hands with an amorous grasp, he continued for some moments with his lips rivetted to it, and all his faculties were suspended to such a degree by the sudden extasy, that it was a considerable time before he could utter a word: but when the first impressions of his joy and surprize were a little moderated—'Ah, my lord!' said he to the magician, 'how agreeably have you astonished me with this unexpected visit!—And, O beauteous Chici,' continued he, 'how has your charming presence dissipated all my pangs!—for I flatter myself, that you intend by your arrival here to bring my misfortunes to their final period.'—'You are not deceived,' replied Hinapac, 'for you have now

‘ now accomplished all that the gods required you to perform antecedent to your marriage; and should any difficulties be still remaining, I am certain it will be in my power to remove them for ever.’

Yllapantac now beheld himself in possession of all the happiness he had so long despaired to obtain; and with joy sparkling in his eyes, he intreated the magician and his fair daughter to enter the hall where he had left Prince Houac and the Queen of Hattun Rucana. All these illustrious persons entertained each other with mutual civilities; and when they had acquitted themselves of the first ceremonies, Yllapantac acquainted the magician with the adventures that brought Prince Houac and the Queen of Hattun Rucana to the Isle of Uxi; and the magician in his turn related the manner in which his daughter had been restored to him, when he little expected that blessing.

‘ I was a walking,’ said he, ‘ about half an hour ago in the meadow, which is at a little distance from my palace, when I suddenly felt the earth tremble under my feet; and after two or three successive shocks, it began to open before me, and at the same time presented to my view the appearance of a young lady wounded with an arrow in the region of the heart. She seemed to be in a state of absolute insensibility; the paleness of death was diffused through all her form, and a veil was drawn over her face. The circumstance of the arrow made me presently imagine that I beheld the body of Chici; but, for my greater certainty, I lifted up the veil that flowed over her face, and was immediately convinced that I had not been deceived in my conjecture. Whilst I was beholding her with a tenderness mixed with admiration, I perceived that she began to breathe; upon which I folded her in my arms, to cherish her with a gentle warmth. In a little time the livid hue that hung upon her aspect was gradually changed into the blooming complexion of youth, and every feature began to glow with life. As I was considering this amiable progress from death to animation with unspeakable delight, my dear Chici opened her eyes, and began to speak to me; my admiration was then heightened into ecstasy, to see how graciously the gods

‘ had restored my daughter to me, when I thought myself deprived of her for ever. I embraced her with all the tenderness of a fond father, whilst she returned my caresses with suitable endearments; and this amazing adventure drew tears of transport from my eyes.

‘ When we had indulged ourselves for some time in the expressions of our mutual joy to behold each other again, we quitted the meadow, and walked to the palace. At our arrival there, I ordered a pan of live coals to be placed before me, into which I threw a composition of several powders; and by the effect of the fumes that rose from the flame, I immediately knew that the Prince of the Isle of Uxi was still living, and that he had fully accomplished the condition demanded of him by the gods with relation to his marriage. When I had gained this information I became exceedingly desirous to visit him in his dominions as soon as possible, that I might present him with the prize of his former victories; and I now hope the nuptials will be celebrated before the close of this day.

The beautiful Chici blushed exceedingly at the latter part of this discourse, and those who took notice of that alteration in her countenance, considered it as the natural effect of virgin modesty, which always appears so amiable in the softer sex. But when she began to seem indisposed, and at last fainted away in her chair, the company were greatly alarmed at the condition in which they beheld her, and it was a considerable time before they could be certain whether she was living or dead; but the seasonable application of proper remedies at last recovered her from her state of insensibility. ‘ Ah, my dearest Chici!’ cried the Prince of the Isle of Uxi, when he saw her revive, ‘ how dreadful was that sad moment to my soul when I beheld you pale and fainting, and imagined death was preparing to close those radiant eyes for ever! But, O! how exquisite are the transports I now experience, to see the dearest object of my desires restored to me once more in safety! Blessed be the immortal gods who have allotted me the dear fruition of so much happiness! And now, my fairest Chici, let us no longer delay the soft completion of all our joys; the opportunity is as favourable as we can possibly wish, and every circumstance



circumstance appears with a propitious aspect: let us, therefore, exchange our mutual vows of unalterable affection and fidelity to each other.'

This proposal affected Chici with new symptoms, but they were extremely different from those she discovered a few moments before: she surprized all the company with a loud laughter, and fell back in her chair, as if some extraordinary astonishment had cast her into that attitude. Sometimes she turned her eyes to the Prince of the Isle of Uxi, with an air of the most inveterate disdain; and the next moment she indulged herself in a scornful repetition of her mirth. Yllapantac, who was not a little surprized at such an unexpected scene, had just resolution enough to raise one of her hands to his lips with an air that intimated how much he dreaded her displeasure: he kissed it, however, with the utmost transport, and bathed it with a copious flow of tears. But this action, instead of softening the fair-one with any impressions of tenderness, did but increase her contempt: she hastily withdrew her hand from his, and with a kind of horror, wiped away the tears that hung upon it: and, as if these instances of her aversion had been too inconsiderable, she pushed away the Prince of the Isle of Uxi so violently with her feet, as he was preparing to embrace them, that he fell backwards on the pavement.

Prince Houac and the Queen of Hattun Rucana were so confounded at what they beheld, that they were entirely at a loss what to think of such a strange proceeding. The magician, in particular, was extremely exasperated; and notwithstanding all his fondness for Chici, was unable to conceal the indignation her behaviour had raised in his soul: 'And is it thus, daughter,' said he, 'that you receive the obliging addresses of a man from whom you are destined to derive all the happiness of your future life? You was once reputed to be a person of an amiable disposition, and had the reputation of conducting yourself with decency and discretion; and are you now determined to falsify the opinion the world has entertained so much to your advantage? What has infected your understanding, that you should suffer yourself to degenerate into such degrading extravagancies?'

'Ah! my dearest father,' replied Chici, 'rather say, that the Prince of

the Isle of Uxi has suffered in his understanding; for, otherwise, how could he possibly conceive the least hope of aspiring to your alliance with success? It would certainly become him to grow better acquainted with himself; for then he would soon be sensible of the distance there is between him and me.'

—'Daughter,' said the magician, 'Yllapantac is a very potent prince; and derives his descent from the august race of the prophets, as well as yourself; and therefore I must assure you, that I cannot possibly see the least disproportion between him and you; and it is my pleasure, that you this moment tender him your hand with your nuptial vows, as the only reparation you can make him for your disobedient treatment.'

'Shall I then consent to espouse Yllapantac?' replied Chici, with an air of emotion. 'Ah, my father, have you duly considered the command you now impose upon me? Ah me! what a form of a man is this! his head has been enlarged at the expence of the rest of his body; and when Nature formed him, she certainly forgot that he would have any occasion for legs. You have taken a resolution to espouse me to a monster, who strikes me with terror whenever I behold him; and are you not apprehensive, Sir, that this surprising choice of yours will expose you to the raillery of all the world?'

'If the person of Yllapantac is your only objection,' replied the magician, 'you shall immediately have all imaginable satisfaction, and we shall no longer differ in our opinions.' At the same time he called for water; and when it was brought to him, he sprinkled it upon the Prince of the Isle of Uxi, and with a solemn tone pronounced these words: 'If it be the will of the gods that thou shouldst retain the strange form which thou hast received from nature, mayst thou perpetually continue in thy present state; for in that case, I do not pretend to effect any change in thy person: but if they do not oppose thy appearing in another shape, assume this instant the form of the most amiable and accomplished man upon earth.'

The moment those efficacious words were uttered, an entire change was wrought in the person of Yllapantac. His head shrunk into symmetry; his

Y

legs

legs were lengthened with admirable exactness; in fine, his whole body was finished with the compleatest proportion; and instead of the shocking figure of a monster in which he lately appeared, he was now graced with as beautiful and engaging a form as it was possible to behold.

All the company directed their eyes to the earth with an air of reverence during the ceremony, and the wonderful operation that succeeded it; and when they at last lifted them up to behold Yllapantac, they were astonished beyond expression. Chici looked upon him with the discomposure of a person who starts out of a dream, and at the same instant beholds some unknown object: she could scarce prevail upon herself to credit the testimony of her eyes, and was at first lost in admiration: but in a few moments that admiration began to soften into a tender joy, which she was incapable of concealing. 'Ah, prince!' cried she, 'if you are the person whom the gods have destined to espouse me, I submit with pleasure to their decree: I feel my heart affected with sentiments very different from those with which the sight of you inspired me a few moments past. Ah! my dearest prince,' continued she, 'why did you not always appear to me in the amiable form you have now assumed? I would not then have offended you in the manner I have indulged; nor should I have exposed myself to my father's displeasure, by that disagreeable conduct. But why should we turn our thoughts to what is past, since the present moment crowns us with happiness, and changes all our sufferings to smiling pleasure?' Yllapantac was so charmed with these endearing expressions, that he became unable for some time to utter a word; he even imagined that his soul had quitted her proper mansion, to animate the beauteous Chici, and inspire her with the tenderness she expressed in his favour. The delightful music of her voice affected him with exquisite impressions, and his heart melted away with the kindling rapture. 'O lovely Chici!' said he at last, 'to what enchanting transports have you raised me; and what joys do I not derive from the amiable disposition you now discover! You appear to me, if possible, a thousand times more charming than ever; and my eyes are dazzled with new graces, that are every

moment rising to my view. I once imagined that my passion was so perfect, as to be incapable of any increase; but I am now sensible that my bosom is warmed with ardours I never experienced before; and nothing can improve my happiness, but the completion of our nuptials.—' And, for my part,' added Chici, 'I shall count them the dearest felicity of my life.'

'If I am not mistaken,' interrupted the magician, 'we are to render this day still more pleasing, by the celebration of another marriage.—Prince,' continued he, addressing his discourse to Houac, 'is it possible that you can be insensible of your own particular interest upon this occasion? I understand, by the relation Yllapantac has given us of your adventures, that you love the beauteous Queen of Hattun Rucana; I am likewise persuaded, that she is destined by heaven to be your spouse, and is disposed to receive your nuptial vows without any reluctance; why then do you any longer defer so desirable a union?

#### H O U R. LVII.

**M**Y lord,' replied Prince Houac, 'I flatter myself that your proposal will not meet with any opposition in this place.' At the same time he rose from his seat, and cast himself at the feet of his dear queen, with an air of transport not to be described. 'Madam,' said he, 'shall we behold ourselves on the delightful verge of our happiness, and yet want resolution to enjoy it? Why should we be industrious to protract the auspicious moment, that is to open the scene of our future bliss? The gods have undoubtedly ordained us for each other; they were pleased, indeed, to separate us for some time, but they have at last permitted us to meet again: why then should we not act in conformity to their designs? Let us now compleat the soft union for which we so long have languished; and let me intreat you to consent to be the charming recompence of all the perils I have sustained for your sake.' The queen appeared very pensive at this proposal; and only replied to it with a sigh. 'Ah! Madam,' said the prince, 'how am I to interpret that unexpected sigh; and what must I think



‘ I think of the disorder you discovered the moment I had finished my request? Can there be any reason why we should resign ourselves to a melancholy dejection, when we are in a condition to gratify our utmost desires? The prince would not proceed in his expostulations; but waited some time, to hear what answer the queen would make: but as she still seemed lost in thought, and did not utter a word— Ah! Madam, cried the prince, with an air of grief and confusion, ‘ what am I to preface from this unreasonable silence? There are some moments, indeed, when a short silence is the most endearing language that lovers can utter; but there are other seasons, wherein a premeditated silence creates unpleasant languors and fatal despair.’

The queen was extremely uneasy, to find her silence misinterpreted by the person she so dearly loved. ‘ Prince,’ said she, ‘ if you did but know the motive which restrains me from complying with your desires, you would not be dissatisfied with my proceedings; nor could you urge me with the importunity you have now used. I freely acknowledge, that I love you with more tenderness than I am able to express; I am entirely devoted to your desires, and cannot possibly refuse you any reasonable request; but I must acquaint you, at the same time, that I wish I had the resolution not to grant you any thing at this particular season. My heart tells me, that we ought not to celebrate our nuptials in any place but my dominions. The gods are sometimes pleased to give us secret intimations of the conduct we ought to pursue; and I think some invisible power whispers to me, that we ought to exchange our mutual vows in the temple of our gods. It has been a constant custom in my kingdom, to celebrate all nuptials with sacrifices and publick prayers; and shall I then be the first to introduce a contrary practice, by my example? But could I prevail upon myself to consent to such an innovation, should we not have reason to be apprehensive of the displeasure of the gods, who, as you are certainly sensible, are offended at our unlawful actions, and are not exempted from those emotions which end in wrath?’

‘ Ah! Madam,’ replied Prince Hou-

ac, ‘ if we were in the territories of Hattun Rucana, we should certainly conform ourselves to the established custom of the country; but we are now in a place where we are not confined to any strict ceremonies with relation to marriage. Here our union may be rendered compleat if we sincerely love, and confess the soft passion to each other, with mutual vows of constant fidelity. There are no sacrifices in this place, but the sighs of lovers; nor any offering so acceptable to the gods, as the purity of a tender passion. But were it indeed a crime,’ continued he, ‘ to celebrate our espousals without victims bleeding on the altar, it would however be a crime from which we could not be apprehensive of any unfavourable consequences, since the gods themselves have made the commission of it necessary. It was from their decrees that we were born for each other, and they themselves have inspired us with the mutual love that warms our breasts. Can they possibly condemn the flames which their own preordination has kindled? and will they punish the tenderness we express to each other in conformity to their fixed appointment? How can they be offended when we exchange our nuptial vows, since we only accomplish the promise they formerly made in our favour?’

The queen suffered exceedingly amidst the conflict that arose within her; between the forebodings of her soul, and the complacency of her love: she sighed, and continued silent. ‘ What do I now behold!’ cried the prince, with some vehemence; ‘ the Queen of Hattun Rucana opposes my felicity! And is it possible, then, that she no longer loves me? I am very sensible that I was not indifferent to her, before I engaged in so many dangerous adventures for her service: or did she only feign those tender sentiments, because my arm was at that time necessary to her interest?’—Ah! inhuman prince, replied the afflicted queen with a beautiful emotion, ‘ how can you be so ungenerous as to injure me by such unkind reproaches? You ought surely to have credited my veracity, when I declared that you was dearer to me than I could possibly express. I once again repeat that truth; and when I cease to love you, may that time be the last moment

‘of my life!’ As she uttered these words, she raised one of her hands to his with an agreeable negligence, and at the same time a shower of tears trickled from her languishing eyes. The prince would have wiped them away, but she would not permit him. ‘Suffer these tears to flow,’ said she; ‘for why should my weeping give you any pain, since I acknowledge myself to be happy? Yes, my dear prince,’ continued she, gently clasping his hand, ‘your victory is now complete; and my tenderness prevails over all the presages of my heart: and though I were sure to draw new calamities upon myself, I will not oppose your desires any longer.’

‘I am charmed with that resolution,’ said Hinapac; ‘and since these illustrious lovers have so happily concluded their gentle contest, let the day be devoted to joy.—Exchange now, ye amiable pairs, your vows of unchangeable affection to each other.—’ This we solemnly promise,’ said the Sovereign of the Isle of Uxi and Prince Houac; and the next moment the Queen of Hattun Rucana and the beautiful Chici repeated the same words. The lovers then presented their hands to each other, as the seal that was to ratify their future union; and when these ceremonies were over, the marriage-festival began. The magicians who served the Prince of the Isle of Uxi, and the masters of musick who came in Hinapac’s train, entered the hall in a body, and entertained the illustrious company with a concert of exquisite harmony. The elders of the isle and their wives, with their sons and daughters, were invited to the solemnity; and when the assembly was formed in the palace, the festival was graced with a magnificent ball.

Hinapac, in the mean time, gave orders for the nuptial feast to be prepared; and so effectually was he obeyed, that all the choicest and most inviting delicacies of nature, with every ornament and curiosity that the magicians could possibly furnish, by the contributions of their art, were collected with the richest profusion, and ranged into the most elegant appearance. The feast was served up in dishes of the purest gold: and the noblest liquors sparkled in innumerable vessels of the same precious metal, on which the artists had lavished all the embellishments of their skill; in a word, the easy regularity and decorum in which every thing

was conducted, was equal to the grandeur of the entertainment.

The Queen of Hattun Rucana was perfectly astonished at the extraordinary magnificence she beheld. ‘I imagined till this moment,’ said she to Yllapan-tac, ‘that my kingdom surpassed all others in splendour and riches; but I am now very sensible that I was deceived in my opinion.—’ ‘Madam,’ replied the prince, ‘I am indebted for what you see to the generosity of my father-in-law; for whatever is employed on the nuptials of the daughters of magicians, is always the property of the bride.—’ ‘Yes,’ interrupted Hinapac, ‘I resign all these things to my daughter; and I promise to invest you with a very considerable part of my power. I could likewise be glad to offer some acceptable present to Prince Houac; but it is not consistent with decency, for the poor to give donations to the rich. The lance of the prophet Huamachu, and the two talismans, which are so efficacious against the fury of birds and terrestrial animals, are the treasures which surpass all the riches that magick can possibly produce:’ and then, addressing himself to Prince Houac—‘May you continue to possess them,’ said he, ‘as long as you live, and transmit them to a posterity worthy to enjoy them to the end of time.’

When the feast was over, and the night began to be far advanced, Prince Houac and the Queen of Hattun Rucana, and the Prince of the Isle of Uxi, with his fair Chici, were conducted to separate apartments, in each of which a nuptial bed was prepared. The assembly then retired, and left those illustrious lovers to launch into a sea of bliss, too exquisite to be represented in description.

But, alas! how fleeting is all human felicity, and how soon was Prince Houac hurried from a scene of the softest raptures into all the bitterness of woe! He waked from a pleasing slumber towards the dawn of day, and to his infinite surprise no longer beheld his lovely queen at his side. He at first imagined she might be risen to enjoy the fragrant freshness of the morning; but when he had waited some time in that opinion, and at last perceived she did not return, he began to suffer great inquietudes at her long absence. He rose with the utmost precipitation, and searched through all the apartment; he then passed from one room to another



to as little effect: he at last awakened all the domesticks, and entreated them, one by one, to inform him where he might find the Queen of Hattun Rucana.

Some of the people fancied that this behaviour of the prince was no more than a premeditated air of pleasantry which he had an inclination to indulge; others imagined that he had not sufficiently recovered himself from his sleep; and some were of opinion that the violence of his love had deprived him of his understanding: but not one of them presumed to declare his sentiments to the prince. The general answer was, that they had not seen the queen since the time she was conducted to her nuptial apartment; and that in all probability the prince was best qualified to give an account of his bride.

This answer was far from being agreeable; and he continued to run from one apartment to another, enquiring of all he met, if they had not seen the queen: and as they were unable to afford him any satisfaction in that particular, a thousand different thoughts presented themselves to his imagination, and made it impossible for him to determine which of them it was most expedient to fix upon. He was hurried into surprizing emotions; he exclaimed at destiny; he flew from place to place, and committed a thousand extravagancies, capable of raising an immoderate mirth in all those who are unacquainted with the astonishing effects of love.

Whilst he was thus agitated by the different impressions of rage, curiosity, and despair, one of the principal officers of the court approached him with a lamb in his hand, and desired to know if he had any command to be accomplished, or whether any thing extraordinary had happened to him. 'Tell me,' replied the prince, 'where I may find the Queen of Hattun Rucana. When my sleep left me this morning, I expected to have beheld her at my side; but, alas! she was absent from her nuptial bed, and I vainly waited for her return. I am now searching for her with an unavailing solicitude; I enquire for her of all I meet, though with as little success: but, if you can now inform me where she is, let me enjoy that satisfaction without delay.'

'My lord,' replied the officer, 'it is impossible for me to comprehend any part of your discourse. Perhaps you would give me to understand, that you

received into your embraces last night a virgin, who happened to disappear during the darkness; and that when the morning approached, you found a wife at your side: and you might possibly wake so very early, only to divert yourself with this extraordinary adventure.'

The prince was not in a condition to relish this unseasonable railery, but grew exceedingly enraged to find himself treated with so much freedom. The officer, when he beheld his resentment, would have retired, but the prince pursued him with such loud and injurious language as awakened Yllapantac; and he immediately started from his bed, to enquire into the cause of such an unexpected alarm. He was exceedingly surprized to see the prince at that early hour. 'Is it possible,' said he, 'that you can make your nuptial night so short; and can a young bridegroom rise with the dawn?' — 'Ah, my lord!' replied Prince Houac, 'this pleasantry is out of season at present; and if you knew the cause of my affliction, you would certainly afford me your compassion.'

'What may be the cause then of the affliction you complain of?' said Yllapantac. 'My lord,' replied Prince Houac, 'the Queen of Hattun Rucana has been forced from our marriage bed whilst I slept, and I cannot possibly obtain any tidings of her: you may judge then of the agonies that wound my soul.'

'Believe me, prince,' said Yllapantac, 'this is no more than a little gaiety of your bride, who had an inclination to divert herself with your apprehensions. She happened to awake before you, and concealed herself in some part of the chamber, that she might elude your embraces a few moments. But if you will return thither with me, I am persuaded you will find her laid in her bed, where she expects you with no little impatience.'

'Ah, my lord!' replied Prince Houac, 'I have carefully searched every place where she could possibly conceal herself, and have called her a thousand times; but, alas! I searched and called in vain.' — 'Let not that disappointment afflict you,' said Yllapantac; 'for I am certain, that notwithstanding all your curiosity to discover the queen, she is still in your apartment. The darkness, without doubt, prevented you from

from seeing her; but I have a taper in my hand, and we shall infallibly find her.' At the same time he took Prince Houac by the hand, and conducted him to his chamber. They approached the nuptial bed; and Yllapantac was exceedingly surprized, when he could not discover the queen as he expected. He at first imagined, that his eyes deceived him; he then rubbed them several times with his hands, and saw to as little effect as before: he afterwards stretched his hands all over the bed, but was still as unsuccessful as ever. 'Let us search elsewhere,' said he; 'for I am confident we shall find her at last:' but all their diligence was entirely ineffectual, and they began to fear that it would be impossible for them to find the Queen of Hattun Rucana.

#### H O U R L V I I I .

**I** Now begin to feel some inquietude,' said Yllapantac; 'and must confess, that I know not what to think of this disagreeable accident.'—'Alas!' replied Prince Houac, 'some unworthy rival, who beheld my happiness with envy, has deprived me of my beloved queen!'—'Ah, prince!' interrupted Yllapantac, 'let me intreat you not to entertain such a thought. I acknowledge there is something very extraordinary in your affair; but I am at the same time fully persuaded, that there is not any magician who would presume to exercise his authority in my palace. The presence alone of my father-in-law would be sufficient to protect us from all insults; and I may add to this, that the lance of the prophet Huamachu, which you possess, is so admirable in its virtue, that it incapacitates every mortal from attempting any thing to your disadvantage.'

At these words, Prince Houac turned his eye to that part of the chamber where he had placed the enchanted lance, and perceived, to his unspeakable astonishment, that it was no longer there. 'O, execrable treason!' cried he; 'I am likewise deprived of my lance!' At the same time he happened accidentally to look upon his hands, but could not discern the talismans which had been presented to him by the King of Silence and his sister. 'O heavens!' said he, with an air of the utmost agony, 'what fatal

discoveries have I made! Every moment adds a new sting to my calamity! Was it not a sufficient punishment for me to be deprived of my dearest queen, but must I likewise be divested of the only assistance by which I can possibly hope to recover her!'

The surprizing absence of the Queen of Hattun Rucana, the disappearance of the enchanted lance, and the invisibility of the two talismans, struck Yllapantac with a consternation that almost deprived him of his reason. He continued for a considerable time without being able to utter a word, and seemed rivetted to the place where he stood: his mind was so distracted by different thoughts, that he was incapable of forming any determination in the emergency before him; and the day began to brighten, whilst his discomposure hung upon him. But when he at last took notice of the increasing light—'We may now,' said he, 'have a more distinct view of the objects around us; let us therefore renew our search.' They then proceeded from one apartment to another, and with their eyes and hands made a strict inquisition into every place. They asked all the officers and domesticks, if they had as yet found the queen, or the enchanted lance, or the talismans; but they were still disappointed in all their enquiries, and could not receive the least satisfactory information.

Yllapantac now began to be exceedingly impatient. 'There is something,' said he, 'in this unhappy accident, that ought to be cleared up as soon as possible, for our mutual satisfaction: let us therefore go this instant and consult my father-in-law, who will certainly give us some light into this mysterious affair.'

Prince Houac, whose mind was totally engaged in melancholy reflections upon his losses, started at these words, and cast his eyes all around him like a person whose slumber has been suddenly interrupted; he attentively surveyed every object that presented itself in his way, with a solicitude to discover what he sought for with so much anxiety; and in this discomposure of mind, he suffered himself to be conducted by Yllapantac, without much importunity, to the apartment of the magician.

Hinapac was, at that time, consulting a silver mirror, which not only represented every transaction which passed on earth at that particular instant, but like-

wife



wife the whole train of events which had ever happened since the formation of the earth. This mirror was justly esteemed a master-piece of magick art; and though the dimensions of it were not larger than the palm of a man's hand, it exhibited to the view an infinite variety of representations, which were all comprehended within two-thirds of the surface. A common man, indeed, must have been gifted with very penetrating eyes, to have had a distinct view of the objects which were there delineated, and he could only have had a confused perception of the traces and contortions of innumerable lines that were drawn into an endless variety of figures. None of the sons of men but those who were descended from the prophets, could perfectly distinguish the objects represented on that silver superficies; this was a privilege which they either derived from their birth, or acquired by their power, or perhaps both these circumstances equally contributed to bestow it.

When the two princes entered the apartment of the magician—'I see, my lord,' said Yllapantac, 'by what engages your attention, that we come to visit you at a very proper time for our purpose. The enchanted mirror which you hold in your hands has undoubtedly given you a perfect information of the surprising event upon which we are now come to consult you; and I am persuaded you are capable of acquainting us where the Queen of Hattun Rucana has been conveyed.'—'Ah, my lord!' interrupted Prince Houac, and addressing himself to the magician, 'if you can possibly give me any tidings of the queen my consort, let me not languish any longer for that satisfaction; but unfold to me, without reserve, the fate of that unfortunate lady. I, indeed, regret the loss of my lance and my two talismans; but I am driven to distraction to be thus severed from my queen: this calamity rends my heart with unspeakable affliction. Alas! how has my nuptial night, which I thought would bless me with the most delightful hours of my life, overwhelmed me with the sharpest woe that I could possibly sustain!'

Hinapac beheld the tears trickle from the prince's eyes while he was speaking, and was touched with compassion at that affecting sight. 'I am not unacquainted,' said he, 'with the cause of your afflic-

tion; the mirror I have in my hand represents to my view all the misfortunes that have happened to you this night. I perfectly discover the source from whence they spring, and they fill me with grief as well as yourself. But, O prince! have you forgotten the dignity of your birth, and the rank you bear in the world? Why do you indulge this immoderate dejection which already preys upon the bloom of your cheeks? Instead of cherishing your despair, and impairing your vigour with unavailing anxiety, rouse your soul into a noble fortitude, and habituate yourself by new resolutions, to encounter the difficulties that surround you. Make it evident, by your manly conduct, that fortune may indeed afflict a hero, but can never debase him into a mean timidity of mind.'

'My lord,' replied Prince Houac, 'you are certainly sensible of the unhappy fate to which the race of man is subjected. The serenest presence of mind cannot always stand the shock of sudden calamities: nature recoils at their first assault, and it is extremely difficult to be unaffected with their severe impressions. A sedate reflection is the only faculty that can regulate these involuntary emotions of a wounded mind, and in some measure experience it's efficacy. I was ready to sink beneath the weight of woes I suffer; but I have called up all the powers of my soul, to aid me in that conflict: and I can arm myself with patience, though my misfortunes should leave me destitute of every gleam of hope. If any fatal necessity deprives me of the Queen of Hattun Rucana, my life will indeed be miserable without her; but, at the same time, it will not be insupportable. I can live wretched, without plunging myself into despair; and shall never be solicitous to resign my life before the gods are pleased to demand it. But, my lord,' continued he, 'since you know the cause of my unhappiness, why will you not impart it to me? If I be criminal, let me at least be acquainted with my offence, that I may see whether it be capable of expiation.'

'Prince,' replied the magician, 'the great Rimac is offended at your precipitation, to celebrate your marriage without the ceremonies that are customary on such solemnities in the kingdom.'

kingdom of Hattun Rucana, the sceptre of which you are destined to sway.—“If I suffer,” said he, “this violation of my laws, my temples will hereafter be a useless load on the earth. If Prince Houac, who has so often experienced the gracious effects of my protection, now despises my altars; and if the Queen of Hattun Rucana, whose mind and person I delighted to adorn with so many amiable qualities, neglects my sacrifices, how will they be regarded by other mortals! But my institutions shall not be violated with impunity!” At the same instant, he commanded two of his ministers to execute his determination: one of them carried away the queen your spouse; the other seized the lance of the prophet Huamachu, and deprived you of your talismans. The queen was conveyed to her dominions, which are now in the possession of an usurper. The number of the people who have acknowledged their lawful sovereign is very inconsiderable: but they have sworn to re-establish her on the throne at the hazard of their lives; though all their loyalty will be ineffectual, till they are headed by you; and whatever you engage in will be as unsuccessful, whilst you continue dispossessed of the lance and the talismans. You must, therefore, endeavour to recover them as soon as possible: they are now deposited in the temple of the great Rimac, and you must search for them there. Go then, and present yourself before the throne of that deity, with vows and offerings capable of mollifying his displeasure; and endeavour by your prayers and sacrifices, to regain the lance and talismans. But should the god in his wrath refuse to restore them to you at your first supplications, be not tempted by despair to discontinue your humble importunity. The gods are ever pleased with perseverance.

“But ah, my dear prince!” continued Hinapac, “how am I touched with compassion at your unhappy fate! You must now be exposed to innumerable dangers; you have an immense waste of water to navigate, before you can arrive at the continent; you must confront the fury of multitudes of savage beasts, who inhabit the forlorn forest through which you must necessarily pass; you must bound from pre-

cipice to precipice; you must climb the steep of craggy rocks, and ascend mountains whose tops are buried in the clouds; hunger and thirst are to be your frequent companions; and you will be exposed to all the severities of air and skies: and, for the completion of your misfortune, you are not to expect the least assistance from any power on earth, in air, or in the waters. There is not a magician through the whole extent of this world, who can presume to aid any person against whom the great Rimac points his vengeance.”

“If it must be so,” replied Prince Houac, “I submit to my fate: and since my poor web of life is to be interwoven with calamities and afflictions, I will gallantly oppose myself to all the dangers that are to be set in array against me; and if I cannot surmount them by any natural strength, I will defeat them by fortitude of mind.” And then addressing himself to the Sovereign of the Isle of Uxi—“Let us go, prince,” said he; “my departure shall not be deferred a moment longer than may be necessary for my preparations. But I must entreat you to order some of your subjects to assist me in building a vessel for my voyage. I have now the idea of one, which I believe will convey me from hence to the continent; for since I have lost my talismans, I cannot presume to have recourse to the King of Silence, and his presence would be insupportable to me.”—“Alas!” interrupted Yllapantac, “it is not in my power to command my subjects to perform any thing in your favour; I can only permit you to cut down proper trees in your forest, and suffer you to furnish yourself with what provisions are necessary for your support; and then leave you in full liberty to depart from this island without any opposition.”

“How, my lord!” cried Prince Houac, with an air of the utmost astonishment, “is it thus that the Prince of the Isle of Uxi treats a person to whom he not only owes his liberty, but even the life he now enjoys?—Ah me! I expected a recompence very different from this; and flattered myself, amidst all my misfortunes, that you would have some compassion upon your benefactor.”—“Prince,” interrupted Hinapac, “let me caution you not to injure Yllapantac with reproaches that he no way deserves. If he declines to grant you



‘the assistance you have a right to demand from him, and if even I forbear to employ the power of my art in your favour, it is not because either of us is insensible of your distress; for we would rejoice to aid you on this important occasion, but the gods themselves are your declared enemies, and their power is infinitely superior to ours: for which reason, it will be impossible for us to interest ourselves in your favour with impunity. Were you even to address yourself to the King of Silence, that application would be altogether ineffectual, and he could not perform any thing for your service. I have already acquainted you, that no power on earth, in air, or in the waters, is now permitted to assist you in any instance whatever.’

These afflictive expressions did not abate the intrepidity of Prince Houac: ‘I now find,’ said he, ‘that patience must be my last remedy; and I am determined to arm my soul with a constancy that shall oppose all my misfortunes, how great soever they may prove. I will go to the woods and build a vessel myself, which shall bear me through the waves, and convey me to the continent. And if the wrath of the great Rimac, which is now kindled against me, should pursue me on the mighty waters, may the will of that god be accomplished; and let me perish in the bosom of the deep, if that be his determination! But I hope that, notwithstanding I am reduced to this miserable and destitute condition, I shall still be the object of his compassion: the gods are touched with the calamities of unhappy mortals, who humbly wish to expiate their crimes.’

At the close of this discourse, the prince retired from Yllapantac and his father-in-law; and after he had furnished himself with an ax, he immediately directed his steps to the forest, and searched for trees of the lightest wood. When he had found such as he imagined would be suitable to his purpose, he cut down six, and cleaved them into large and smooth planks, which he fastened together with strong pins cut out of the same timber, and then formed the whole into the shape of a square chest; but pointed in the fore-part, that it might cut through the waves with less resistance. He likewise covered the upper part of the vessel with planks closely compacted together, to

defend it from any influx of water that might otherwise sink it; and he only left a small opening in the middle, where he proposed to place himself to row his boat, but this opening was to be closed with a cover when the sea happened to be tempestuous.

The prince completed all his work in the space of three days; he then drew his vessel to the shore, and launched it into the ocean; he likewise stored it with such provisions as he judged necessary for his voyage: and when all these preparations were completed, having taken leave of the Prince of the Isle of Uxi, he immediately embarked and put to sea.

## H O U R L I X.

AS it was extremely calm, and he had not the assistance of the least breeze of wind, he betook himself to his oars, which he plied with such strength and resolution, that in six hours time he had lost sight of the Isle of Uxi. He then took some refreshment from the provisions he had, and heartily recommending himself to Rimac, acknowledging his ingratitude in having offended so great and powerful a deity, who had afforded him such manifold and extraordinary deliverances, when all human assistance would have proved unavailable. He laid him down to sleep, depending on the protection of the very deity he had offended; as he knew a sincere contrition ever disarmed his anger, and that his mercy often turned the edge of his sword of justice. Thus, full of confidence that resignation and perseverance would mollify the great Rimac’s resentment, and at length conciliate his favour, he gave way to a gentle slumber, which obliterated the misfortune of his loss, and presented to him the benevolent King of Silence, who rising from the ocean in a lucid chariot, drawn by swans, to the whiteness of whose feathers the purest cotton proved a foil, thus accosted him: ‘Houac, I come not to add weight to thy misfortunes, by reproaching thee with the loss of the talismans thou receivedst from my sister’s and my hands; on the contrary, thy afflictions move my compassion; and I even grieve, that by the severe injunction of the great Rimac, it is out of my power to make my concern evident by my ready assistance. The loss thou bewailest,

and the many adventures thou art doomed to experience, proceed from the heat of youth; the violence of thy passion for the lovely queen had effaced the great benefits thou hadst received from the all-powerful Rimac, and made thee ungratefully neglect his rites; which, however forbearing he may be, he never suffered without bringing condign punishment on the head of the offender, soon or late: let it be some consolation to thee, that thine has so immediately followed thy offence, and that he has not suffered thee to go on in thy crime, as he does those whom he neglects, and who, by the withdrawing his favour, and giving them up to their sensual appetites, fall into inevitable perdition. Let thy present sufferings be a memento to thee for the future; and remember, that the neglect of the gods argues not only the blackest ingratitude, but the greatest stupidity; and that thou hast brought upon thyself whatever thou sufferest, for the Deity is just. Forbear all repinings; behave like a man of fortitude; thy murmurings will only increase thy misfortunes, while thy submission may greatly alleviate them. The only way to appease the justly irritated deity, is to acknowledge thine own fault, and the justice of his decrees. At these words, the King of Silence shook his reins, and striking the surface of the waters, they opened and presented an easy descent, down which his swans hurried him with a rapidity equal to a flash of lightning. The prince awakened, found his mind extremely serene; and the hopes which this vision gave him of his one day appeasing the wrath of the incensed deity by his constancy, animated him to such a degree, that he broke out into the following soliloquy—'Yes, O ineffable and incomprehensible Being, who art thoroughly manifested in thy works, I bow before thee, thoroughly resigned to thy divine decrees, and stedfastly resolved, however severe are the punishments thy wisdom shall inflict, to acknowledge thy justice, and extol that mercy which, at the same instant, thou condescendest to shew me, in allowing me to hope that patience and submission may expiate the crime for which I stand self-condemned in the tribunal of my own conscience. But alas! how weak are poor mortals! how wavering

their strongest resolutions! how little can we perform of ourselves, without thy assistance! Let, then, the ears of thy mercy be open to the humble petition of the offending wretch now prostrate before thee, and enable me to make atonement, for the foulness of my ingratitude, to the Author of all the good I have received from that bountiful hand, which is never exhausted, or tired, with diffusing blessings, even on the most unworthy.' He now, with fresh vigour, betook himself once more to his oars, but had not rowed above a league before a giant of a prodigious size appeared arising from the watery plain, and discovered himself to his navel, above the surface of the ocean. His head resembled that of a lion, the rest of his body was human, and spoke an irresistible strength. He approached the prince with a threatening aspect, and with a voice rivalling those dreadful claps which shake the earth, and through the welkin roll, when the offended Rimac speaks displeasure, he accosted him in these words: 'Wretch, whatever thou art, thus monstrously composed of wood and flesh, say, what folly seized thy desperate mind thus to invade my territories, and without offence basely to murder the eldest of my sons?'—'Alas, my lord!' replied the astonished prince, 'I am too sensible of the wrath of the great Rimac, to increase his anger by a voluntary murder. I am surprized at the charge you bring against me, having this day seen nothing but sea and sky since I departed from the Isle of Uxi; and if I have trespassed in entering upon your territories, as my crime proceeds from pure ignorance, and the decree of Rimac, I hope your justice will hold me guiltless. As to my form, I am not a composition of wood and flesh, but an unhappy mortal, who have made use of the machine which holds me, to traverse the watery realms, in hopes of arriving at my wished-for port.' 'Ye gods!' replied the giant, 'can you thus hear your sacred truth violated, and yet withhold your bolts! Is there beneath the cope of heaven a wretch so contemptible as a hardened liar! Thou sawest nothing since thy departure from the Isle of Uxi but sea and sky? Repeat me that falsehood, that thy wickedness may justify the severity of my revenge.' The prince answered—



answered—' I saw nothing, my lord, that bore any resemblance of a human form, or that could be possibly taken for your son. I recollect, indeed, that while I made my repast on maize, a small beautiful fish, whose variegated scales engaged my attention, wantoned by my vessel side, and in pure charity I threw it some grains of what I was then eating, which it seemed greedily to devour. — Ah, cried the giant, unhappy wretch! ill fated charity! that fish was my beloved son, who, enchanted with the luscious taste of that accursed grain, eat without considering consequences, (as most young people act) so voraciously, that the quantity proved too great for digestion, and he expired soon after, having hardly time to acquaint me with the unhappy cause of his death. My wife, whose darling he was, requires thy blood to satiate her revenge, and to expiate thy crime; and I pursued thee, determined to sacrifice thee to the manes of my dear son: but as the steadiness of thy countenance speaks thee innocent in thy intention, as there is an air of veracity in thy words, and as I reverence justice, I will content myself with inflicting a milder punishment, and only deprive thee of the light of one eye. Then throwing water in the prince's face, he said—

' Be thy left-eye with darkness clouded o'er,  
' Till th' element intense does light restore.'

and immediately plunged into the bosom of the deep.

The disconsolate prince soon perceived the fatal effect of these words and this aspersions, for he immediately lost the sight of his left-eye. ' O gods!' said he, in the greatest agony, ' is this the just reward of charity! Can you suffer such injustice to go unpunished! Was ever compassion thus rewarded! And does not your tolerating crimes, so cruel and ungrateful to be perpetrated with impunity, give us sufficient reason to think you unconcerned in the government of the world, and that you leave every thing below to chance! Ought I not rather to be rewarded for my intention, which was good, than punished for an unhappy accident which I could not foresee! — O Rimac, where are thy bolts! Where is thy avenging arm! Where is thy

justice! that thou sufferest the inhabitants of these sublunary elements to wanton in their cruelty!' Having thus exclaimed, he heard a voice which uttered these words—' Houac, take care how you irritate the immortal gods, whose ways are inscrutable, and reflect upon yourself: you complain of the ingratitude of the giant, but do not reflect upon your own. Rimac not only designed to preserve you in the many dangers to which you were exposed, but was actually present with you, protected you, and with his own right-hand led you through them; no sinister accident was the consequence of his intention, (as indeed none could) that might give you cause of complaint; you were extricated from numberless misfortunes, and your happiness was crowned by gratifying your only wish: yet you, ungrateful mortal, instead of repaying your humble and sincere thanks for these experienced mercies, robbed him of the sacrifices which were his due. For the future remember, that whatever ingratitude you meet with here below, men are much more ungrateful towards the gods, as there is no proportion between finite and infinite.' The prince blushed at this reprimand, and was in the greatest confusion; condemning himself for, and heartily ashamed of his guilt, he endeavoured to comfort himself for the loss of his eye, by reflecting that Rimac ever was compassionate even while he punished, and that the words which the giant pronounced gave him hopes that his loss was not more than temporary.

The night now spreading her sable mantle o'er the hemisphere, and all nature seeming to enjoy a profound tranquillity, Houac composed himself to rest, and covered the open of his boat with the skin provided for that use, that he might not be surprized by any sudden storm. He passed the night in an undisturbed repose, and found his boat the next morning driven on, by the benefit of an easy gale, into a delightful harbour, encompassed round with a thick gloomy wood. He immediately went on shore, and having adored Rimac and the Sun, he gathered some wild fruits with which the trees were laden, and which proved not only refreshing but invigorating. Finding his spirits elated, and his strength greatly increased, he then resolved to explore the coast, where finding no track

of human steps, he penetrated into the wood, having first taken his arms and provisions out of his vessel, which he had no sooner done, than he saw himself deprived of it by a bird of a monstrous size, which stooped, seized, and carried it off. This loss greatly afflicted him, as he knew not whether he was landed on the continent or on the island; if on the latter, he had no hopes of ever recovering his adorable queen, as he had no instruments to hew out another canoe. However afflicting this thought was, he knew that lamentations were only loss of time, and his earnest desire to recover his dear consort made him determine, whatever misfortunes might befall him, not to despond; but to resign to the will, confide in the goodness of Rimac, and endeavour to overcome them by true fortitude. The sun was rising when he went on shore, and he resolved to traverse\* his course, keeping that glorious deity on his right till he had climbed to his meridian height, and then to pursue the same course with the Sun on his left, till he gave up the care of the universe to his sister† and wife. He set forward into the wood, which he found so very thick and encumbered with so many briars, that he could not travel above half a league an hour, and was so fatigued that he was constrained often to repose himself: however, his hopes that perseverance would at length mollify the irritated Rimac, and crown his wishes, kept up his sinking spirits. When the Sun had declined from the meridian about three hours, he found himself on the coast opposite to that where he had landed. The sight of the sea awakened his fears, as he apprehended himself imprisoned in an island whence no industry could withdraw him. However, he would not despond, but took the resolution to keep along the coast till he could be satisfied; and accordingly turning his face towards the Sun, travelled upon the sands till that luminous deity departed from this hemisphere to launch elsewhere his glad-some rays. When the sun was sunk beneath the ocean, he betook him to the skirts of the wood, passed the night in a tree, and resumed his journey at day-break. At noon, he was convinced of his misfortune, by arriving on the opposite side of the haven into which he

had the day before been driven. The perfect knowledge he had of the place affected him so much, that it was with difficulty he supported his spirits.— ‘Wretch that I am,’ cried the disconsolate prince, ‘how much happier had it been for me to have perished when the Prince of the Isle of Uxi threw me into the sea, than to be reserved to experience daily misfortunes! My life is no other than one continued scene of woe, and it seems lent me for no other end than to be the sport of those overruling powers, who, doubtless, delight in the miseries of unhappy mortals; or I should not so often have been tantalized with happiness never intended for my possession, and only set to my view, to enhance my sufferings by the deprivation of the expected bliss.— O Rimac, since thy decrees will not suffer me to put an end to this wretched life, let thy compassion, if thou hast any, take the burden from me, and thus bring a period to thy anger and my wretchedness.’ He had hardly uttered these words, but a chilling horror struck him. ‘What,’ said he, ‘dare I contend with omnipotence! Dare so poor a mortal as I am expostulate with Rimac, or audaciously impeach his decrees! What have I said! what blasphemies has my despair made me guilty of!—O Rimac, source of compassion, avenge not the injuries which my rash and foolish tongue, guided by a disordered brain, has offered thee; consider my weakness, and forget not thy accustomed goodness; but let these penitential tears, this penetrated and afflicted heart intercede for the unhappy criminal, who acknowledges and abhors his wickedness.’ At this instant, the light of the sun was darkened, and a large cloud seemed to descend, which he soon perceived was a bird, whose wings extended the width of ten acres; he bore in one foot an elephant, and in the other a man; he alighted near the prince, and laying his prey on the ground, immediately devoured the beast; the man, as soon as he touched the ground, recovered his legs and fled, but this flight had been useless, and both he and the prince had found their tomb in the maw of this monster, had not a sudden smoke which arose from the ground, followed

\* That is, he travelled north,

† The Moon.



by a bright and lambent flame, protected them, and obliged the terrified monster to take wing, and leave the island.

## H O U R. LX.

**N**O sooner had the bird, by distance, become invisible, but the flame, which had encompassed the prince and the destined prey, disappeared: but how great was their mutual astonishment!

‘What,’ said the prince, ‘do I see! the brave and unfortunate Pahama!’ — ‘My dear prince,’ replied Pahama, ‘my great and generous deliverer, is it possible that the gods can expose such virtue upon a desolate island, for such I perceived this to be, while in the monster’s claw I was suspended in the air!’ — ‘Let us not,’ said the prince, ‘accuse the gods; they are just, and if we meet with disasters, let us assure ourselves, they are either the deserved punishments of our crimes, or trials to prove our virtue, and render us more deserving of their favour.’ — ‘I acknowledge,’ replied Pahama, ‘the gods are benevolent and just, and that it is the greatest presumption we mortals can be guilty of, to expect that they should be accountable to us for their decrees: I allow, that our judgment is so limited, that we often murmur against heaven, and think ourselves neglected by providence, because it withholds from us what, if our desires had been gratified, would have terminated in our inevitable destruction. We know not, my dear prince, what to wish for, as many things in which we place our chief good may, if enjoyed, embitter our future lives; so many which we esteem the greatest misfortunes, have proved real blessings: wherefore let us, my lord, resign ourselves to the will of the great Rimac, and conclude, that the wisdom which created the universe, is able to govern it without our interposition.’ — ‘These sentiments,’ answered the prince, ‘become us mortals, who are indeed entirely ignorant, if we weigh our knowledge against what we are sensible we do not know. But tell me, dear Pahama, your adventures since the fatal time you saw the queen and me snatched from the sight of her exulting subjects.’ — ‘My lord,’ said Pahama,

‘I am and shall always be ready to obey your commands; but I am now so faint, having taken no sustenance for two days and a night that I was in my airy journey, that I beg you will now permit me to search if there trees afford any fruit fit for nourishment.’ — ‘I have,’ replied Houac, ‘maize sufficient to support us both for many days; and as I have eat nothing to-day, we will retire to some verdant spot a little distant from the shore, and refresh ourselves.’

Having found a convenient place, they fate them down, and made a hearty meal out of the sea stores, which the prince had provided in the Isle of Uxi. After which Pahama thus began.

## PAHAMA’S RELATION.

**M**Y lord, you will not be surprized when I tell you, that all the subjects of your lovely queen were overwhelmed with unspeakable grief, when they saw her, and you their brave deliverer, ravished from them by a supernatural power. The Prince of Collas and I were inconsolable. The queen’s council ordered three months public sacrifices to render the gods propitious, and ordered solemn prayers for your being both restored to that throne, which birth had given her, and merit you. After this, they appointed a regent, who governed, with the advice of the council, in the queen’s name. The Prince of Collas and I were lodged in apartments of the palace, and as much regard paid us as if the benevolent sovereign and you had been upon the throne. But this could not mitigate the grief which seized us, the instant we saw you hurried away through the air by so foul a figure, after so surprizing a manner; wherefore, one day, as we were walking in the palace, I thus accosted the prince — ‘My lord, our longer continuance in this kingdom will only prolong our sorrows for the loss of our benefactors, whom we ought rather to endeavour to find out, and, if possible, render them that service which gratitude exacts. It is certain, that I have the greatest tenderness for my dear Rucma and my children; but my affection for them, great as it is, shall not prevent what justice and my honour require, the exposing

‘posing my life to the greatest perils in search of and to be serviceable to the royal pair whose fate we daily lament.’

‘Pahama,’ replied the prince, ‘what can two maimed wretches propose? Had you the power wherewith you was endued by your first wife, and could make us whole, by restoring the limbs we are deprived of, we might hope, if our search proved successful, to render our benefactors some service: but as that power is no more, our enterprize would savour of folly. How far, think you, I could travel with a piece of wood instead of a leg, and who are we able to attack; nay, how are we able to defend ourselves with only two arms between us both?’

Hardly had he spoke, when the earth shook in so violent a manner, that I expected to see the palace laid in ruins; after which it opened before us, and we saw a venerable old man, mounted upon a dragon, ascend from the dreadful gulph: he alighted, and coming up to us—‘The virtuous,’ said he, ‘will always be assisted by such as cherish virtue, and generous sentiments will never want means to be proclaimed by the actions of those who are inspired with them; for they proceed from the gods, whose power is not limited, as is that of the wisest among mortals. Receive from those benevolent beings, as a reward of that virtue they greatly cherish, I mean gratitude, your amputated limbs, and pursue your laudable design; which, should your hopes be frustrated, will however prove advantageous to yourselves:—and you, Pahama, in particular, will not only learn who you are, but recover what is your inheritance, of which you are at present ignorant.’ At these words, we found our limbs restored to us, and saw the magician bestride his dragon, which cut a passage through the air with the rapidity of an arrow sent from the strongest arm.

You may better conceive, my prince, than I recount, the joy we felt in beholding ourselves made whole. We congratulated each other on the unlooked for blessing; and after having returned our grateful thanks and praise to the immortal gods, we went to the regent, acquainted him with this strange adventure, and our design of going that very day in search of the lovely queen and yourself. He, convinced by the miracle, assembled the council; who conceiving

hopes that heaven had thus made us whole, to be the instruments of restoring you both to your disconsolate subjects, proclaimed a general fast and prayers for our success throughout the realm. The regent, council, nobility, and priesthood, in solemn procession, accompanied us the first league of our journey. Having taken our leaves, we implored the great Rimac to guide our steps, and proceeded with alacrity. We travelled fourteen days, unknowing whither our course tended, and without any accident worthy of your knowledge. The fifteenth, about the close of day, we entered a large savannah, bounded by a forest, whence issued a lion, pursued by a serpent of a prodigious size, which overtook and wound himself round the generous beast, at a few steps distant from us: we saw all the lion’s efforts to disengage himself from this terrible enemy were useless; wherefore the prince, moved with compassion, stepped forward to his assistance, and with a lucky stroke cut the serpent in two with his sword, and freed the beast. I was, with my sword in my hand, going up to the prince to second him in this generous resolution, when, to our great surprise, the two parts of the serpent united, twisted round the prince, and had certainly squeezed him to death, had I not by a back stroke taken off his head, as he was winding himself round the breast of the prince. As soon as I saw his head fall, I cut the folds which entangled the prince, and the lion seizing the head, ran with it to some distance from the rest of the body; with his claws tore it into small pieces, and immediately ran, eat of a certain herb, and trampled upon it with his fore-paws. The prince and I observed the actions of the beast; but happening to cast our eyes on the pieces of the serpent’s body, we saw them moving towards each other; wherefore, for fear of a second re-union, we hewed them into very small pieces, and taking them up, strewed them in several parts of the savannah, at a great distance one from another, the lion still following us. Hardly had we thus disposed of the serpent, but we found ourselves swell after a surprising manner. The lion bounded over the savannah with the same swiftness as if he was still pursued by the serpent, but instantly returned with several leaves of an herb in his mouth, which he laid at our feet, and took a second

flight



flight. I immediately rubbed my body with these herbs, wherever the blood of the serpent had left a stain, and the swelling instantly abated. Seeing this miraculous effect, I ran to the assistance of the prince, who could not by this time help himself, he was so greatly swelled. By the rubbing his body with this herb the swelling abated, as it had done with me. The lion returned with a supply of the same, and the prince as well as myself entirely recovered. The lion now made us all the caresses possible, crawled on his belly, licked our feet, wantoned round us in several boundings, and made us such signs, as by them we understood he offered himself to guide us through the forest.—Here a messenger from the royal palace of Cusco requiring audience, the luminous arm embraced and carried back the select virgin.

## H O U R. LXI.

THE virgin being next day returned, thus proceeded. We crossed the savannah, and following the lion into the forest, he guided us to a large lake, into which he plunged, swimming in a circular manner; he often approached the shore, and seemed to invite us to follow him. We however hesitating, he landed, crawled on his belly, licked our feet, and again plunged into the water. 'My lord,' said I, 'this beast makes signs to us to throw ourselves into the lake. For my part, whatever may be your resolution, or whatever may be the consequence, I am determined to go into it.'—'My dear Pahama,' replied the prince, 'one fate shall attend us both,' and taking me by the hand, we both leaped in. But how great was our surprize, to find ourselves in company with the lion, in a stately apartment adorned with feather hangings of beautiful texture and various colours, wrought with greatest art, and interwoven with thin plates of the purest gold. From this we were conducted by the monarch of the forest into a second room, the walls of which were plated over with silver, and the floor was another of pearl. We followed our guide into a third, plated with gold as the second was with silver; the fourth room into which we entered was floored with gold, and the walls set thick with emeralds, topazes, amethysts,

and other precious stones, disposed with such art, that they represented a great variety of flowers. In the midst was a fountain of crystal water, at the upper end of a bed of the finest cotton curiously embroidered, and upon it a person in a royal habit fast locked in sleep. The moment the lion perceived this man, he flew violently upon him, tore out his throat, and instantly, to our great astonishment, assumed the figure of the man whom he had slain. He immediately approached us, and desired we would suspend our opinion both of the action which seemed to give us terror, and of his transformation, that no doubt caused our surprize, till he had acquainted us with his story, which, when he had seated us on the fountain marge, he thus began.

THE STORY OF POWWOWCHAPHAC,  
KING OF PAPAUQUA.

'**K**NOW, my generous protectors and deliverers, that this palace I built and furnished, for a place of retirement from the fatigue of royalty. I am king of this realm, which no doubt you will allow to be a kingdom of the largest extent, the wealthiest and most populous of any yet known to man.'—'Truly, Sir,' replied Moracac, 'we are entirely strangers to the very name of the kingdom; we know neither in what country we are, nor whither we are going; wandering in the greatest uncertainty, and depending alone on the providential mercy of the great Rimac.' At this name the king rose, and bowed his head to the ground three times; then seating himself again—'How!' said he, 'whence came you then?'—'From the kingdom of Hattun Rucana,' I replied. 'And how many moons have you been upon your journey?'—'But fifteen days.'—'O powerful Rimac!' cried the king, 'how great is thy compassion towards so unworthy a wretch, so great a blasphemer of thy name, and contemner of thy rites and sacrifices as I have been; that thou shouldst for my deliverance employ means supernatural!—You will not be amazed, princes, for such I know you both, at this ejaculation, when I assure you, that the ablest footman in the kingdom of Papauqua cannot go to Hattun Rucana in less than two moons.'—'Now,' said Moracac, 'that

‘ that we know the name, we must acknowledge the vast extent and riches of your kingdom, famous over all the inhabitable world for the number and bravery of it’s inhabitants. But we intreat your majesty to proceed in your relation.’ What the king had said of the distance of Hattun Rucana greatly astonished us; but our impatience to hear the king’s history made us conceal our surprize. ‘ At the age of eighteen,’ continued he, ‘ I lost my father, a prince more conspicuous for his virtue than his high rank; and I may justly say, that the kingdom he left me could by no means compensate the loss of his precepts, example and vigilance, over my youthful days. Had he lived till I had attained a riper age, he would have fixed me in the path of virtue, into which he had early guided my steps, and from which I was too easily allured by my own passions and the pernicious flattery of sycophants who debauched my mind, puffed me up with a conceit of my own power, and so empoisoned my foolish heart with pride, that I despised the gods, exacted divine honours from my subjects, and suffered the righteous punishment of my gross wickedness.

‘ When I took the reins of government into my hands, I chose a new council from among the youngest and most sprightly of the nobility; for the precepts and advice of my father’s counsellors were soon irksome to me: some of them had the prudence to provide for their own security, by suffering me to take that course which they saw they could not divert me from by their remonstrances, and retired from court; but others, who loved me better, continued to persecute me, as I then termed their loyal and friendly admonitions, with laying down the fatal consequences of my inconsiderate actions, and endeavouring to lead me back into the paths of virtue: but I was too far deviated from them, not to be displeased with their officious interposition and efforts to controul my passions; which had so far got the better of my reason, that I put to death these faithful, these steady friends, and took serpents into my bosom; which, by the poison of their adulation, sufficiently appeased the ghosts of those brave, good, loyal, generous, friendly counsellors; bringing the wrath of heaven

‘ upon my head, and upon my unhappy people; who, though innocent of, suffered for my crimes.

‘ I set out in blood, and governed with an iron rod; I gave a loole to every desire; and surely never a greater monster was placed by the incensed Rimac upon a regal throne, to be a scourge to the most profligate nation, though my people deserved another epithet. Hearing of the beauty of King Pashauwaw’s daughter, I demanded her in marriage, and her father readily consented. I found fame had not exaggerated in the report of her perfections; never was beauty more compleat, virtue more severe, complaisance more obliging, behaviour more engaging, modesty more alluring, or majesty, mixed with sweetness, more surprizing. She had a soul great and noble; her sentiments were becoming her birth, generous, free and elevated: she had a convincing way of reasoning; and though she has often offered me her advice, yet it was with so much deference, and with such visible concern for both mine and the publick good, that I could not but own myself obliged to her tenderness, notwithstanding her opinion ran counter to my passions. In a word, she was adored by my subjects, and I thought I possessed in her more than the world could equal. Rabadapuh, for that was the name of this inestimable woman, soon was better acquainted with me than I was with myself, for she had a penetrating judgment, and took all the means possible for her to employ, to bring me off from those vices which sullied the glory of my throne, and brought me into the contempt and hatred of my subjects: the former is naturally followed by the latter; for if once a monarch becomes despicable, he also falls into the abhorrence of all under him, who cannot but hate those who are their governors, yet at the same time incapable of guiding their own actions; or who otherwise looks upon them too much beneath him to behave with any decency, or to save appearances. Such a slight of a whole nation seldom ends in grumbings, and I found my armies were nothing near so great a safeguard to my throne as the hearts of my people, which my vicious courses and cruelty had deprived me of; though their innate loyalty made them bear with me ninety-six moons, before they endeavoured



## H O U R L X I I .

endeavoured by force of arms to curb my licentiousness: at length, tired with my rapine, cruelty and lust, Pinuqua was induced, by the cries of his harassed and oppressed countrymen, to take the field for their deliverance. He had been a successful general, and a wise counselor, under my father; but on the discovery he made of my vicious inclinations, he retired from court soon after my accession to the throne. This nobleman had a great number of vassals, whom he raised, and being joined by others of his own rank, he soon found himself in a condition to make head against me. Upon the first news of this rebellion, I drew out all my forces, resolved to chastise this arch rebel in person. While I was in full march to attack him, I met a messenger, who in the name of Pinuqua and his confederated rebels made me a sharp remonstrance, though couched in very dutiful terms. This so irritated me, that I ordered his head to be immediately struck off; but Rabadapuh, to whom I could deny nothing, interposed, and saved him from death. The sentence I pronounced against this messenger caused a general murmur amongst my troops, who accused me of cruelty, in cutting off all means of accommodation with a justly incensed people, who had sufficiently proved their loyalty, by submitting, such a number of moons, to be oppressed, after a barbarous manner, notorious to all the world; that Rimac never created men innumerable to gratify the caprice, and to hold their lives at the pleasure, of one man. I learned these murmurs from my spies, seized and immediately put to death the chief of these malecontents, contrary to the advice of Rabadapuh, who advised me to dissemble the knowledge of them, and endeavour by lenity to gain the hearts of my army. The severity of this execution occasioned great desertions; the next night one half of my troops went over to the rebels. Three days after I encamped in a large savannah, and resolved, notwithstanding the great advantage they had by their numbers, to attack them. Accordingly I made a disposition, and was leading my army to engage, when Pinuqua advanced, and with a loud voice desired me to take compassion on myself and a wretched people, whom I had driven to these extremities for self-preservation.

THE principal nobility of my court begged I would think of an accommodation, as it was impossible for me to resist numbers so far superior to mine, led by so brave and experienced a soldier. Rabadapuh joined in the same petition; but it was preaching to the winds. I was so enraged at the insolence of Pinuqua, that I breathed nothing but revenge, and ordered the foremost rank to fall on. They marched directly up to the enemy's camp, but instead of attacking they saluted them, and fell into their ranks. In a word, my whole army to a man deserted me, and I was with Rabadapuh and fifty other of my wives, taken prisoner by Pinuqua; for my women prevented me putting an end to my life, as I attempted to do. In this condition Pinuqua approached me, and prostrating himself, said—"Sir, do not imagine that you are in the hands of your enemies, but in those of your most faithful servants and most loyal subjects; not as a prisoner, but as our lawful monarch, to command and be obeyed. We have but one humble request to make to you, which is to exert those talents with which you are endowed, and hearken to the admonitions of your own reason."

"Pinuqua," said I, "these professions of loyalty suit ill with our respective circumstances. The prostration of a rebel, who holds his sovereign captive, can be interpreted no other than derision."

"Far be it from me," replied the old man, "to entertain a rebellious thought. No, Sir, I am no rebel, neither are you a captive. Those are the rebels, those are your enemies and jailors, who have debauched your youth, held your reason captive, and when they had led you to a precipice, as they imagined, meanly deserted you. It is against these that you ought to vent your rage, as they have by their flatteries and rapine made desolate a flourishing kingdom: but they shall not escape the punishment due to their accumulated crimes."

Saying this, he retired from me, and put to death all those sycophants who had basely deserted from me to him. After this he came to me with others who were of my council, and desired I would place myself at the head of the

united army, and direct their march; protesting at the same time, that he had nothing but my honour and the public good at heart, begged I would proclaim a pardon for what was past, resume the reins of government which I seemed to have let drop, admit Rabadapuh to my councils, and place a confidence in their unalterable loyalty. As I looked upon myself their prisoner, I dissembled my resentments, proclaimed a pardon, took the queen into the council, and directed my march to my metropolis. Here Pinuqua desired to retire, and upon my consenting to his withdrawing from court, he disbanded his army, and returned with only his ordinary retinue. I found a great alacrity among my subjects, and every one strove to outdo in their demonstrations of loyalty: but this gave me no ease; I thought myself no better than a prisoner to my subjects; and as I could not digest Pinuqua's having taken up arms, and the desertion of the other grandees, I was ever meditating on the means to revenge the injuries I imagined had been done me, and to regain my lost liberty. Twelve moons had passed, while I was revolving in my mind how to satiate my revenge. At the expiration of this time, when I almost despaired of wreaking my vengeance on the hated necks of my enemies, a magician came to my court, who was a son of the prophets. I received him with open arms, and flattered myself, that fortune had now put into my hands the means to recover my peace of mind and lost liberty.

To this wretch I unboomed myself, told my then situation, and my anxiety of mind. He advised me to dissemble my uneasiness, to govern according to the advice of my council, to counterfeit a love for my subjects, and an utter abhorrence of my former life, and did not doubt but he should find a method to put my enemies into my hands and restore me to absolute dominion. The palace in which we now are, none entered under pain of death, without my permission; and my council commanded this my former edict to be strictly observed, and indeed, I was as despotick as ever in every thing but the power of doing mischief; but this restraint, which could not have been perceived by a good prince, or at least would have given such an one no uneasiness, was to me intolerable.

The magician, whose name was Manabaquou, was the only man I admitted into this palace. He often passed a quarter of a moon with me here; and I gave him one of the royal family, a virgin of great beauty, for his wife. He found the way to wind himself into my heart, and I was never easy without him. He often eat with Rabadapuh: by conversing frequently with her, he became enamoured of her beauty, and declared his passion to her. Her prudence concealed this from my knowledge, though she threatened to acquaint me with his criminal flame, which so terrified him, that he resolved to prevent my revenge.

The day he made the ungrateful declaration of his love to my favourite queen, he came to me, told me that now was the time to take vengeance on my enemies, but that I must be entirely guided by him, or the mischief we designed to others would fall on our heads, and he should be involved in my inevitable ruin.

Overjoyed at the discourse, I promised punctually to observe whatever he should enjoin me. "Order then," said he, "your hunters immediately to kill a lion, save the blood, and bring the beast to your apartment in this palace; and, in the interim, command that no woman appear in your sight." This precaution he had made, fearing I might see the queen, and she discover the villainous attack he had made upon her honour.

#### H O U R L X I I I .

MY hunters brought next morning a lion to the palace, which they had taken in a pit-fall, and was so secured, that the magician received him alive. Every one was commanded to depart, and the magician, cutting the throat of the generous beast, gave me a bowl of the reeking blood, which by his orders I drank off. After this, he anointed me from head to foot, flayed off the lion's skin, which taking on his left-arm, he led me by the right-hand into a garden, which no part of the palace overlooked, and there by my own foolish consent sewed me up in the spoils of the beast. He then bade me turn towards the sun, and prostrate myself three times: in the interim he made to the door, which gave us entrance.



trance into the garden, and there pronouncing some words, I saw the palace sink with him, and a lake arise. I ran immediately to the side of the lake to plunge in, but the monstrous serpent which you, princes, destroyed, defended and drove me from the banks. I was going to exclaim against this vile treachery, and to tear off the lion's hide, but I found my voice changed to a terrifying roar, and that I only tore my own flesh. Convinced of my unhappy metamorphosis, I fled to the woods, and in despair threw myself at length under the shade of a large cedar, lamenting my foolish credulity, which had brought me into so wretched a condition. Seventy-two moons I ranged the forests, and every new moon visited the lake, and found all access to it impossible, by the vigilance and fierceness of the serpent. At the end of the space mentioned, as I lay stretched at the foot of a large cotton-tree, on a sudden the earth shook all around me, and a voice like thunder calling me three times by my name, asked me if I was more stupid than the beast into which I was changed; and if I was willing to recover my pristine form. I immediately said within myself—"O that it was possible!" The voice answered—"It is possible." I found my inmost thoughts were known, and answered—"O what, or whoever thou art, that givest me this dawn of hope, continue thy beneficence, and direct me how I may recover the form and society of man." The voice answered—"Dost thou think thyself worthy of it, who, while thou not only wert a man, but the chief of men, degenerated into the most cruel of savages, by casting from thee the distinguishing faculty between man and beast, and gratifying thy passions like the latter? Wert thou sensible of, or thankful for the advantages thou wert blest with above other mortals; or didst not thou ungratefully, swollen with pride, insult that benevolent hand which heaped such blessings upon thee?" I was thunderstruck with this reproach, which set all the enormities of my former life full to view, and made me incapable of a mental reply. The voice proceeded—"Couldst thou view the order of nature, the creation of the heavens which are thy covering; of the earth, which bore and fed thee;

of the brute beasts which were subjected to thee; couldst thou consider thine own wonderful make, and be so stupid as to imagine these to be all the effects of chance, or that they existed of themselves? If reason rejects these absurdities, does it not at the same time tell thee they must derive their existence from some superior Being able to produce them? Does not their production evince the omnipotence, and their disposition the omniscience of such being?—Could any other motive but his own beneficence be the productive cause of the universe; and ought not his creatures, who owe their being to his bounty; who are supported by his mercy; are protected by his power; and know not only the conveniencies, but are suited for and enjoy the pleasures of life; make him the grateful return of thanks and praise? Learn thou, King of Papauqua, that this first Being of all beings is the great Rimac, whose will made and can dissolve this stupendous frame; and that he can with the breath of his mouth annihilate, not only kings and princes, but the whole race of mankind; dissolve the heavens and earth, and melt them into their primitive nothing. Thy crimes have drawn upon thee thy present misfortunes, not thy credulity; but the greatest that could have attended thee has been averted by the interposing power of Rimac, who never deserted distressed virtue. The voice then acquainted me with the magician's criminal love, and his having assumed my form to deceive the virtuous Rabadapuh, by which means he had infallibly perpetrated his villainous designs; but that every time he approached her bed, Rimac caused a heavy sleep to fall upon him: that the lake and serpent were the effects of his magick, and that when I had expiated my crimes by my sufferings, and effaced the memory of them by my penitence and resolution to offend no more, Rimac would shew me mercy, and restore me to my former state. Here the voice ceased, and I prostrating myself, licked the dust of that earth which my stupid ingratitude had rendered me unfit to tread. I made a retrospection of my past life, which now gave me the utmost detestation, awakened in me a sincere penitence, and made me resolve, if Rimac's mercy ever re-

‘ stored me, to entirely employ my life  
 ‘ in making amends for my former dis-  
 ‘ soluteness. Three times a day I con-  
 ‘ stantly prostrated myself before the  
 ‘ all-powerful Rimac; repented my own  
 ‘ wickedness, with sincere humility own-  
 ‘ ed his justice, and with a heart truly  
 ‘ grateful returned my thanks and praise  
 ‘ for his remembering mercy while he in-  
 ‘ flicted punishment, and implored a  
 ‘ continuance of his protection for Ra-  
 ‘ badapuh. Twenty-four moons after  
 ‘ I had heard the voice, as I was pro-  
 ‘ strated and adoring Rimac, I was bid  
 ‘ to arise, follow a curling dust which  
 ‘ a gentle breeze drove over the face of  
 ‘ the earth; not to desert that guide, and  
 ‘ fear nothing; for Rimac had heard  
 ‘ my fervent prayers, and the time was  
 ‘ come for my deliverance: that I should  
 ‘ be attacked by the serpent, but bid  
 ‘ me put my trust in Rimac; take care  
 ‘ the severed pieces of the serpent which  
 ‘ two princes, sent by Rimac to my as-  
 ‘ sistance, should hew in pieces, did not  
 ‘ rejoin, and if I or the princes were  
 ‘ defiled with the envenomed blood of  
 ‘ the monster, to use the herb quaqu-  
 ‘ shu. That I should, after the serpent  
 ‘ was destroyed, plunge into the lake,  
 ‘ endeavour to allure the princes to fol-  
 ‘ low me, and Rimac would put my  
 ‘ enemy into my hands.

‘ This, princes, is my story; and no-  
 ‘ thing now remains but to adore the  
 ‘ great Rimac, and return you, whom  
 ‘ he made the instruments of my deli-  
 ‘ verance, my sincerest thanks.’ You  
 ‘ see, Sir, (said the select virgin) an  
 ‘ example of resignation in a mighty  
 ‘ prince, and the happy consequence of

his submitting with patience to, and  
 depending on Rimac. When we cool-  
 ly consider, great Sir, that we are  
 his creatures, entirely at his disposal,  
 and that nothing can withstand his  
 unlimited power, we shall find the most  
 prudent course we can take to mitigate  
 our sorrows, and to alleviate the burden  
 of our misfortunes, is to submit with  
 humility to his inflictions; make a severe  
 scrutiny into the past actions of our lives,  
 and examine which of them has brought  
 our punishment upon us; for Rimac does  
 not delight in the miseries of his poor  
 creatures: wherefore, we may be sure  
 our sufferings are no more than the just  
 consequences of our offences, which his  
 mercy is ready to pardon when acknow-  
 ledged and repented.—Proceed, (said  
 the Ynca) with the story of Pahama’s  
 adventures, and postpone these moral  
 reflections, which, however, I take as  
 friendly admonitions.

Pahama, (said the virgin) thus con-  
 tinued his relation. After we had paid  
 our adorations to Rimac, we followed  
 the king, at his request, and entered  
 a spacious hall, furnished with spears,  
 shields, bows, slings, darts, and other  
 instruments. This hall led to ano-  
 ther wing of the palace, where Raba-  
 dapuh resided. She met her monarch  
 with a majestic gait, and with an air  
 which shewed at once love and respect,  
 she threw herself at his feet and em-  
 braced his knees, while all her women  
 prostrated themselves on the ground.  
 The king raised her, embraced her ten-  
 derly, and led her into another room,  
 into which he made signs for us to fol-  
 low him.



## P R E F A C E.

**A**S the French author of the Two former Volumes of these Tales, has by death been prevented from obliging the public with a third, and thereby left his stories imperfect; several who had purchased the translation, being desirous to see the conclusion of the adventures began in the foregoing work, I undertook to carry on the plan, and conclude what was left unfinished.

I have followed the author in his design of recommending virtue, and inculcating a salutary submission to the decrees of the Omniscient and Supreme Being: I have endeavoured to give my morals an amusing and entertaining dress, that the minds of youth might be insensibly tinged with virtuous principles, at the same time diverted and improved. How I have succeeded in the attempt, must be left to the judgment of the reader.

This manner of writing, which introduces a number of supernatural events, has met with the approbation of the public: as the stupendous has been found, by experience, to engage the minds of that age which surprising tales are designed to instruct; we find those eager to read novels, fables, and romances, who would not be persuaded to go through a page of Seneca or Epictetus.

Every method which may allure youth to the paths of virtue, should be put in practice; we ought to study and indulge in a certain degree their inclinations, and condescend to wheedle them into a right way of thinking, make them imbibe principles worthy of a rational being, even when they are in pursuit of their diversions, and render their amusements so many lectures of morality and prudence; of justice towards one another; of gratitude towards their Creator.

In this continuation of the Peruvian Tales, I have fully considered the weight of the subject for which they were principally designed, and have wrote in a familiar easy style, avoiding all terms of art, and have endeavoured to be every where intelligible. I wish they may produce a good effect, by bringing all those who shall peruse them into an abhorrence of the sin of suicide, never to be repented of, and which it was their purpose to prevent.

J. K







# PERUVIAN TALES.

## VOLUME THE THIRD.

### H O U R L X I V .



H E made us sit down on a fine mat which covered the floor, and placed the queen on his right-hand. 'Rabadapuh,' said he, 'how long is it since thou last sawest me?'—'My lord,' replied the queen, 'I have had that happiness daily without interruption, but this is the first time you have done me the honour, and that I have had the good fortune to hear you speak to me; for you no sooner took me by the hand, but you were seized with a heavy sleep, which continued all the while I was by you, though you awoke the instant I left you. Blessed be the great Rimac, that the distemper has left you, or that the wicked charm that was so powerful over you is at length dissolved!'—'I join thee, my beloved Rabadapuh, in the thanks thou returnest to the Author of all good,' said Powwowchaphac, 'whom my afflictions have taught me to know. Thou hast rightly judged. I have been these ninety-six moons under the influence of a most wicked power, and to these princes I owe the satisfaction of thus pressing thee to my breast, and breathing my soul into thee, thou excellent woman, dearer to me than life and empire; nay, than the absolute command of all the earth, which yonder glorious orb illuminates. Thou mistakest, thou darling of my heart, delight of my eyes, and supreme happiness of my days, thou hast not seen thy fond husband in the revolution of the number of moons I have mentioned; indeed, I was unworthy of such

'virtue, such tenderness and exemplary goodness; I doated, it is true, on thy beauty, but knew not thy intrinsic value. Rimac's merciful chastisements have enlightened my understanding, and I now see thee with other, and if possible, fonder eyes; contemplate with extatick pleasure, the beauties of thy soul, and attribute the mercies Rimac has shewn me to thy piety. My story is now too long to acquaint thee with. Order some refreshments to be served; send for my counsellors; let all the court be assembled in the great hall, and after we have recruited our exhausted spirits, I will there, O idol of my soul, my sole treasure and joy on earth, publicly declare the strange and surprizing story of what has befallen me: after which we will solemnly proceed to the temple of Rimac, offer up our thanks and sacrifices, and implore his future protection and guidance, that I may establish throughout my kingdom, both by my command and example, religion free from hypocrisy, and unbiassed justice.' The queen arose, and returned in an instant; then addressing herself to us—'Princes,' said she, 'the king's discourse, of a tenor so vastly different from his former life, has surprized and given me such unspeakable pleasure, that I have not had the power to speak my acknowledgments for the service, whatever it may be, that you have done my lord: but, indeed, had I not been wrapped up in astonishment, I ought to have deferred my thanks, lest, as I am a stranger to what I am indebted to you, my gratitude should fall short of what I owe you. You now seem fatigued, and I am of opinion that bathing may refresh you;

you; after which you will find every thing ready for your entertainment. She had hardly spoke, when some beautiful ladies entered the room with cloths, and opening a large door, we perceived a beautiful fountain of water in a large hall strewed with gold dust. Moracac and I were then left to bathe, and in a small space after, the king, with a numerous court, for all his counsellors had houses near the palace, entered the bathing-room, and led us through several spacious rooms magnificently adorned, into one where the queen was at the end of a table, covered with the most exquisite delicacies. Powwowchapac, Rabadapuh, the prince and I, sat down; and having thoroughly recovered our fatigued and near spent spirits, the king, in the hearing of all the court, related what had befallen him, and the dead body of the magician, which then appeared in it's proper form, was exposed and known. I need not mention the surprize and joy occasioned by the king's story. We proceeded to the temple; a great number of sacrifices were offered, and the temple echoed with the praises of Rimac. That night the people spent in merry-making, and nothing but mirth and songs of joy employed the whole kingdom for a whole moon. The king enquired into the affairs of state, and found the magician had, while in his form, left the government to the management of the council, whose prudence had effaced the memory of Powwowchapac's tyranny. These wise men, in a body, waited on their sovereign, and desired he would resume the reins; but he answered, that they had given such proofs of justice and moderation, that he would do nothing without their advice, which he hoped they had too great a love for their country to refuse him, and were too honest to offer with the least tincture of flattery. In a word, he became the darling of his subjects, and governed both himself and them the six moons that we continued in his court, with wisdom, lenity, and yet strict justice; and was such an example of piety, moderation, equanimity, and indeed of every other virtue, that the people were continually offering sacrifices to Rimac, for the blessing he had bestowed on them in so good a prince.

As we had given Powwowchapac the history of our respective adventures, and acquainted him with our resolution to find you and your queen, if it was

possible; and as he applauded the gratitude of our design, he the more readily consented to our quitting his court; though it was not without a visible reluctance that he parted with us. Having taken leave of this prince and his royal consort, we set forward, and took the road which chance directed. We carried no provisions but for a day; but the king had sent messengers unknown to us a moon before our departure, throughout his kingdom, to the end, that whatever rout we took we might be provided with every thing we wanted while we were within the confines of his dominions.

His commands were punctually obeyed, and we were supplied with every thing necessary the space of half a moon, for so long were we traversing his vast territories, which were bounded by a prodigious forest of cotton and cedar-trees. The fourth part of a moon we walked in this gloomy wood, without seeing any living creature but birds. At length we came to a mountain of a stupendous height, the foot of which was surrounded with craggy rocks, and rendered it seemingly inaccessible; though we imagined that we saw a narrow winding path, which gave us hopes that we might gain the summit and meet with inhabitants. We came as close as possible to the foot of the mountain, and plainly discovered the track, which was no small satisfaction; it encouraged us to seek a passage, and we found one about the going down of the sun. We passed that night in the hollow of a rock, and early the next morning began by means of this path to climb the hill. We found the passage extremely difficult; we were not, however, discouraged, but vigorously pursued our purpose, till the sun was gotten to his meridian, when we perceived the path was carried through a spacious and delightful plain, finely watered and planted with all manner of fruit-trees, maize, and other grain. We here refreshed ourselves under some plantains which grew in a cluster, and served us both for a shade against the intense heat, and for the appeasing our hunger. Hardly had we ended our meal, when we were surrounded by a bevy of beautiful women, who presented us with exquisite fruits, and a delicious liquor, which they brought in jars of the finest earth, and filled out to us in bowls of gold of surprising beauty for the workmanship.



manship. This liquor was of so odorous a flavour, so inviting a taste, that we drank very freely of it; but it proved very intoxicating; for both Prince Moracac and I lost our reason, speech, and legs, and fell into a profound sleep. How long it lasted, I cannot say; but when I awoke, I found myself on a bed of fine cotton, in a most magnificent room. I thought to arise, but to my great astonishment I found I was fettered with cords of the most delicate cotton. I knew not what to think of this adventure, and was extremely uneasy at Moracac's absence. While I was ruminating on the oddness of my then circumstances, the door was opened, and Moracac, fettered in the same manner as I was, appeared in the midst of a number of fine women, crowned with garlands. These made signs for me to rise, while one of them loosened the cord which fastened me to the bed, and another threw upon my shoulders a fine wrought mantle.

## H O U R L X V .

ALL this while not a word was spoken, and a profound silence reigned throughout the edifice, which was, I perceived, of vast extent, though built of various coloured shells, affording a most delightful entertainment to the eye. One of the women, as I was about to speak to my fellow captive, made signs to me to forbear and follow them. We obeyed, and were led through several large apartments, finely adorned, into a hall; at the end of which was seated, on a throne made of fish-bones, exceeding the whiteness of the purest cotton, a woman of exquisite beauty and majestic air. She had a lucid garment thrown round her, through which we could perceive the just symmetry of her beauteous limbs; her hair was knotted with strings of pearl, and her arms and ancles adorned with bracelets and chevillots of emerald. She arose from her throne, smiled graciously upon us, and with a melodious, though low voice, after having made signs to the women to take off our fetters, she thus addressed us:

'Strangers, be not surprised at the treatment you have met with, nor suffer the easy chains which have been put on you to give any apprehensions which may disturb your quiet; for you are

'among those who are strangers to cruelty, and delight in nothing more than in acts of benevolence. You have been bound as captives; but it is in obedience to the oracle, which has commanded all of your sex who shall enter these territories to be secured, till they have been brought before and told me the story of their past lives; to the end that I may cause them to be safely conducted, without speaking with any, to the limits of my country; in such manner as that they may be incapable of discovering to others this our place of retreat; I and my subjects being devoted to the goddesses of chastity: or if I have reason to judge from the adventures which any one shall recount, that he is the destined husband of my sister, to convey him to the palace of our brother the King of Silence. Wherefore, let me now learn your respective stories.' In obedience to the command of this princess, who made signs to me to begin, I gave the history of my life. After which Moracac gave her a particular detail of what had befallen him. When he had finished his account, she arose and embraced my friend. 'Prince,' said she, 'however virtue by repeated trials may seem to be neglected by Rimac, yet assure yourself it is ever under the protection of, and will at length have its reward from, the all-seeing and all-powerful Deity, whose ways are inscrutable, and who often by what we esteem real afflictions, saves us from certain misery, and by imaginary severity leads to a real good. Had you not by the art of the magician Mulhhac been enamoured of that heap of deformity his sister, and by a generous and becoming pride refused to debase your high birth, by taking a wife so much below the greatness of your descent, and by such your refusal incurred the hatred of Mulhhac, you had not lived to see this day, long destined to make you the happiest among mortals: a reward due to your virtuous and grateful endeavours to assist Prince Houac, who rescued you out of the hands of the giant; for, Moracac, some rash young men weary of Phancuac, who holds the dominions which ought in justice to descend to you, had formed a conspiracy to restore you, without having duly considered their own and the strength of Phancuac; building on the

‘deceitful hopes, that all the Collasians would join them in the recovery of their liberty, by declaring for their natural born prince. They did not consider, that the wickedness and perverseness of the Collasians had brought the scourge upon them, of which they complained; that their spirits were broken by a succession of bold princes; that they were so far degenerated from the bravery of their forefathers, that they preferred a miserable life of slavery to the glory of dying in the generous struggle to relieve their country; that the justly-incensed Rimac had turned his back upon them, and they suffered the condign punishment of their own follies. These young men were not proper instruments for so great an undertaking, which, though entered upon by the wisest among the Collasians, can never succeed till the incensed Rimac is appeased, and that the sufferings of that nation have opened their eyes to see the cause of the evils they groan under, which as yet they are too blind to see, and has brought them to a sense of, and true penitence for, their rebellions against him. These young men, I say, took up arms, and sent for you to put yourself at their head and claim your right; when Rimac suffered you to fall into the hands of Mulhac, who transformed you into a humming-bird. Had not this, as you then thought it, misfortune happened to you, the deputies of the conspirators had met with you, and you had been involved in the misfortune which attended their ill-concerted and rash scheme. They all were cut to pieces by the troops, or infamously put to death by the executioners of Phancuac. As I have said, Rimac never suffers virtue to go without its reward; so on the other hand, if those whom he favours forget him, and give themselves up to sensual pleasures, he awakens them to their duty by severe correction.

‘You may remember the pleasures you found in the caresses of Casana, while under the form of a bird, were so great, that scarce did you desire to be restored to human shape, lest you should lose the happiness you then enjoyed; which had so intoxicated you, that Rimac never once entered into your thoughts. For this reason, he suffered you to lose a leg by the king’s

‘too roughly handling you. This misfortune made you look up to Rimac, and expect assistance from him alone; which, to prove to you was the surest and only method to surmount afflictions, he immediately sent you by Rullaac. This new instance of Rimac’s favour was by you ungratefully neglected, and you returned him no thanks, but was wholly taken up with the charms of Casana: wherefore he stirred up the king’s son against you; but you not returning to your duty by the slight chastisement of your wounds, and foreseeing that Casana’s beauty would be fatal to you, he deprived you of that idol of your soul, and suffered you to fall into the hands of the goddesses of lust and luxury; which you could not have done, had you remembered and constantly adored Rimac, for then you would have seen through the false glare of that beauty by which you were bewitched; the fascination would have had no power over you, and you would have seen her who always rewards her votaries with shame, misery, and repentance, as you have experienced by the loss you suffered, in her true form, in which I will now present her to your eyes.’ Here the princess stamping with her foot, a most beautiful woman, richly adorned, lying on a magnificent couch in a lascivious posture, arose in the middle of the hall; but the moment the princess cast her eyes upon her, and said—‘Assume thy proper form,’ she changed into the most hideous monster that imagination can paint. We could not bear the sight, and begged the princess to remove her; who immediately commanded her to disappear, which she did that instant by sinking into the earth; and the princess thus proceeded—‘This was the charming, as you imagined, Laica Pacuncus, for whom you were deprived of a limb, and on whose account you lost the leg which has been restored you.

## H O U R LXVI.

‘THESE punishments, however, did not make you reflect on your having neglected the great Rimac, wherefore he delivered you into the power of the giant; from which, through his unlimited mercy, you were delivered by Prince Houac.

‘When



When you considered you owed your life to him, and resolved to make him a grateful return, by venturing it for his service, it caused in you a reflection of your ingratitude to the great Rimac, whose goodness you had so often experienced; which being attended with shame and sorrow, wiped away the score of your misdoings. He restored you to your limbs; and as you have since continued to rely upon his protection, he has guided you hither to put an end to your misfortunes, and crown your future days with happiness; for you are the destined spouse of my sister.—Pahama, said she, from what I have said, you may make proper reflections on your own life, and learn a profitable lesson. You must now lose your companion; but it will be your own fault if you lose the powerful protection of Rimac. Consider how limited are the views of mortals; proceeded with courage and resignation, and never deem any thing an evil, never depend on any thing as a good, never give thyself to either immoderate grief or joy, and never forget that thou art the creature, and at the disposal of Rimac. Thou shalt be witness of thy friend's happiness; after which, pursue your search of Prince Houac, who lies under the heavy displeasure of Rimac, by preferring sensual pleasure to the performance of those rites which are his due. Here Prince Houac fetching a deep sigh, said—Alas! my friend, I acknowledge the bounty of Rimac, my own ingratitude, and humbly submit to his inflictions, however severe. His goodness in bringing you to be my companion in the search of the Queen of Hattun Rucana, gives me a gleam of hope, that he will, in his own good time, put a period to my misfortunes. Misfortunes! did I say? No, Pahama, they are the deserved punishments of my foul crime. But proceed in your narration.

The princess then ordered her water equipage to be ready by the time we had dined, and commanded that an entertainment, suitable to the quality of her guests, should be served in her private apartment; and rising from her throne—Pahama, said she, you are ignorant of your descent, and of the relation you bear to your companion Prince Moracac; but the time is come which allows me to reveal you to yourself.

When the ancestors of Phancuac, who were for several generations prime ministers to the kings of Collas, had by causing a general defection, seized upon the throne of their masters, they endeavoured to extirpate the whole royal race of Collas. The good old king, whom Rimac suffered to be deposed, notwithstanding his devotion, that he might punish his rebellious subjects in the grant of their own desires; the good king, I say, was murdered, with six of his sons; and only two infants, your two great grandfathers, were preserved by the fidelity of their nurses from also falling victims to the ambition of Mulowow, the treacherous minister, who raised a throne on the mangled corpse of his prince, and cemented it with the blood of his royal offspring. These two were carried privately into the kingdom of Panaca; but their nurses doubting their security, the King of Panaca, being soon after become the ally of Mulowow, they traversed that kingdom, and intended to settle in that of Pinequa; but the nurse of Bownocac, your great grandfather, in a forest of vast extent, lost her companion, who bore the other royal infant, and was killed by a she-bear, which by the providence of Rimac carried the child to her den, and reared it with her young, giving it suck, and growing as fond of this child as of its own cubs. I shall here leave Bownocac, to speak of Phanowmacac, the other royal babe. His nurse arrived safe with him at Phinca, a small kingdom under the King of Massanacha, and governed by his lieutenant. This child, Moracac, was the father of your grandfather. The first town that Quanabowa, his nurse, arrived at, she addressed herself to the governor, and declared to him the quality of the child she had with her. The governor immediately took her and the infant to the metropolis, and presented both to the king. Marapow, for that was the name of the sovereign of Massanacha, who was then in Phinca, sent privately into the kingdom of Collas, to enquire into the truth of what Quanabowa had related; of which being thoroughly satisfied, he took them both into his royal protection, and publicly declared the infant King of Collas. This brought a cruel war upon

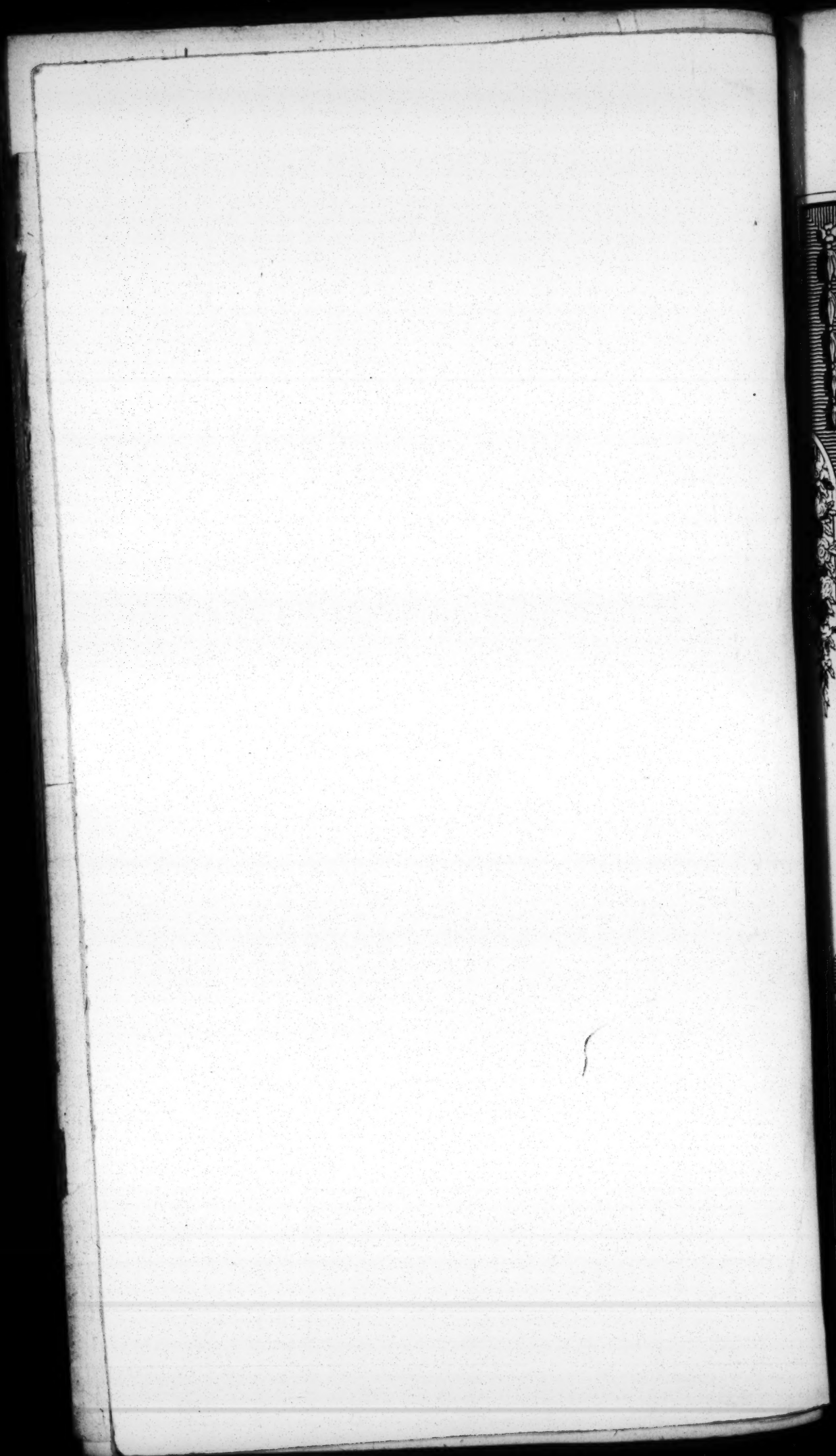
that prince, which he maintained one hundred forty and four moons, but was at last compelled to make peace with Mulowow, one of the conditions of which was the banishing his territories Prince Phanownacac, who retired to the kingdom of Massafow, where he was received according to his birth, and when at years of maturity had that king's daughter given him in marriage. His descendants, down to you, Moracac, have lived in high esteem in that country, and have always married wives, either of that royal house, or from among the neighbouring princes, without ever attempting to recover their lost throne, the family of Mulowow having strengthened themselves so greatly by marriages and other alliances, that all hopes of success in such an enterprize were entirely vain.

Bownocac continued with his brute nurse in the forest, which served as a boundary to the kingdom of Panaca, and to that of Phinca. He was of adult age, when the king of the former was hunting, and in pursuit of the old she-bear, which Bownocac would not abandon, but accompanied on all four, while the beast could fly; but when her strength failed her, and she was encompassed on every side, he kept off her pursuers with surprising intrepidity. The king, who was a witness to this strange accident, ordered the bear's life to be saved, and both the brute and the wild man to be taken in toils alive. This was happily performed, and they were both inclosed in a den made on purpose. The old bear lived but a few moons after her confinement, and Bownocac expressed a most piercing sorrow for her death; but time by degrees mitigates, and at length effaces the deepest grief. Bownocac grew, in process of time, tractable, learned to speak, to walk erect, and discovered a fine genius and undaunted courage. The king, who called him Malacou\*, had him always near his person, and grew extremely fond of him. One day, as this prince was hunting in the forest, and was separated by accident from all his followers, Malacou excepted, a lion came furiously upon him; Malacou threw himself before the king to prevent his danger, seized the lion by the throat, as he flew upon him, and with a short po-

niard made of flint, struck him to the heart, and laid him dead at his feet; though the beast had with his fore-paws seized him on his shoulders, and torn off the flesh to the bone. This action, by which the king's life was saved, gained him not only great reputation, but made him the chief favourite at court. The king, after Malacou was recovered of his wounds, married him to the daughter of one of his council, by whom he had several children. The great favour Malacou was in raised him many enemies, who envied him; and as they could not work on the steady temper of the king, they wrought on the prince his son, by accusing Malacou of ambition, and a presumptuous pride, which made him look with contempt upon the greatest of the court, and set himself on a foot with the king's children. Pusiqua, the king's eldest son, was cruel, naturally vicious, a great drinker of cora, with which he was every day intoxicated, a great boaster of his courage, but very careful in avoiding dangers. Hewas easily induced to believe the worst that the enemies of Malacou could suggest, as he bore him secret envy for an action which ought to have gained him esteem. In a war between the King of Pawpaw and the sovereign of Panaca, after a bloody battle fought, in which a great number of men were slain, though neither side could justly claim the victory, the Pawpaw monarch, by a messenger, proposed to the King of Panaca to decide their pretensions by two champions, to save the farther effusion of the blood of their subjects. The champion he pitched upon, who followed this messenger at some distance, was of such a gigantic stature, and so greatly had distinguished himself in the late battle by the slaughter he made wherever he fought, that he struck a terror into all that beheld him. The council was for rejecting this proposal, as no one thought the kingdom of Panaca could produce a man able to withstand this Pawpaw hero: but Malacou rising up, entreated the king to suffer him to take up the challenger, who, at some little distance, defied the bravest of his subjects. The counsellors, who, through envy, hated Malacou, looked upon this his request as a fresh instance of his presumption,



the  
st;  
re-  
nd  
his  
was  
re-  
fa-  
fter  
ads,  
e of  
eral  
cou  
who  
not  
ing,  
, by  
nd a  
him  
ateft  
foet  
qua,  
atu-  
ora,  
oxi-  
age,  
ers.  
roriff  
ig-  
an  
his  
g of  
ca,  
cha  
gh  
to-  
en-  
to  
m-  
of  
he  
ol-  
ce,  
d fo  
the  
ade  
k a  
he  
fal,  
pa-  
th-  
la-  
to  
er,  
the  
n-  
a-  
as  
n,  
d







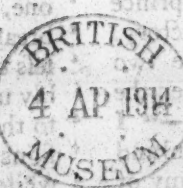
Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co March 18. 1796.

The two champions withdrew to arm themselves: each, by agreement, was to bear a lance, a shield, a helmet, and a round club. The Pawpaw first entered the lists, and was saluted with a great shout from his own side; then came Malacou. The assembly which appeared in his countenance was an omen of victory; that raised the spirits of the men of Panaca, testified by repeated acclamations. When they came within the circle of the lance, they both discharged themselves of their weapons; Malacou escaped the aim of his enemy by his agility, but his lance passed through the shield of the brave Pawpaw, and glanced on his side, though the hurt was but small. The army of Panaca set up a great shout, and struck their shields with their lances.

BOOK IX.

THEY then advanced to a close fight with their clubs; the Pawpaw struck Malacou, which he received upon his shield, but the force of it made him recoil some steps backward and fell upon one knee; but he recovered himself before the other could follow his blow, and returned one, which took Panacation full in the chest, and laid him extended breathless upon the ground, and clapping his hands upon him, he clasped his hands making the shout of the Pawpaw making him to the two kings to advance, with the army of Panaca made the shout to their lords. When the kings were near him, Malacou said—“O King of Panaca, suffer me to save the life of this gentleman by yielding up my inheritance to you; for I have no other value to thee than in this have I.” The king cried—“Thou hast conquered, and I consent to do so.” Malacou then said—“I have no more to say; my master is dead, and I am a stranger in this land.” The two armies met, and fought each other in a friendly manner; the Pawpaw champion was carried off, and by proper care was recovered. Thus a troublesome war, which had cost great numbers of lives, was terminated in a lasting peace. Malacou gained great reputation and esteem by this action in the court of Pawpaw; but it increased the hatred of

and hoped he would perish in the engagement immediately cried out—“Malacou alone is a match for the challenger, and the king may rely upon his bravery. Malacou was born to be the prop of Panaca; to him we owe our monarch's life, and he will now defend his rights: Malacou is the favourite of the gods, who cherish his virtue, and will assuredly give him the victory.” Nay, the prince, to animate him, and thrust him into battle, embraced him, and was lavish in his praise. In a word, the whole council begged of the king to leave the decision of the war to the bravery of Malacou. Their importunity at length prevailed; and though with visible reluctance, the king did him follow the bent of his inclination, and prayed the gods to be his protectors. The messenger was sent back with answer, that the King of Pawpaw's proposal was accepted, and the next morning was appointed for the combat; when both armies were drawn out, and the two kings in an amicable manner met, and agreed upon the terms of the combat, which they respectively swore to observe. The contest was for a pretty large territory, to which they both laid claim, and which was partly to be yielded up to the prince whose champion obtained the victory. Their preliminaries settled, the champions were called forth, who were Pawpaw and Malacou. The two armies, that now united to be the enemy of Malacou, and would much rather embrace a friend, did the gods whose disposal we are, think me worthy of so great a blessing. Malacou answered—“I have Panaca for that was the name of the Pawpaw champion;” then he said—“I have no more to say; my master is dead, and I am a stranger in this land.” The two armies met, and fought each other in a friendly manner; the Pawpaw champion was carried off, and by proper care was recovered. Thus a troublesome war, which had cost great numbers of lives, was terminated in a lasting peace. Malacou gained great reputation and esteem by this action in the court of Pawpaw; but it increased the hatred of





and hoped he would perish in the engagement, immediately cried out—  
 “Malacou alone is a match for the challenger, and the king may rely upon his bravery. Malacou was born to be the prop of Panaca; to him we owe our monarch’s life, and he will now defend his rights: Malacou is the favourite of the gods, who cherish his virtue, and will assuredly give him the victory.” Nay, the prince, to animate him, and thrust him into danger, embraced him, and was lavish in his praise. In a word, the whole council begged of the king to leave the decision of the war to the bravery of Malacou. Their importunity at length prevailed; and, though with visible reluctance, the king bid him follow the bent of his inclinations, and prayed the gods to be his protectors. The messenger was sent back with answer, that the King of Pawpaw’s proposal was accepted, and the next morning was appointed for the combat; when both armies were drawn out, and the two kings in an amicable manner met, and agreed upon the terms of the combat, which they respectively swore to observe. The contest was for a pretty large territory, to which they both laid claim, and which was peaceably to be yielded up to the prince whose champion obtained the victory. These preliminaries settled, the two champions were called forth, when the Pawpaw thus saluted Malacou—“I am sorry, Malacou, that my unkind destiny forces me to be the enemy of so brave and so virtuous a man, whom I honour, and would much rather embrace as a friend, did the gods, in whose disposal we are, think me worthy of so great a blessing.”  
 Malacou answered—“I have, Phantahou,” for that was the name of the Pawpaw champion, “been a witness of thy bravery, and am no stranger to thy merit, which has gained thee esteem even among those who question the justice of the cause which thou supportest. I thank thee for thy good opinion, and wish the king my master had the advantage of so worthy a subject, to enrich his councils, and lead his armies. I am not thine enemy, but a friend to, and a champion for a right I think indisputable. Let the gods decide, and let us do our duty.”

The two champions withdrew to arm themselves: each, by agreement, was to bear a lance, a shield, a short poniard, and a round club.

The Pawpaw first entered the lists, and was saluted with a great shout from his own side; then came Malacou. The alacrity which appeared in his countenance was an omen of victory, that raised the spirits of the men of Panaca, testified by repeated acclamations. When they came within the cast of the lance, they both discharged themselves of that weapon; Malacou escaped the aim of his enemy by his agility, but his lance pierced through the shield of the brave Pawpaw, and glanced on his side, though the hurt was but small. The army of Panaca set up a great shout, and struck their shields with their lances.

## H O U R LXVII.

THEY then advanced to a close fight with their clubs; the Pawpaw aimed a stroke at Malacou, which he received upon his shield, but the force of it made him recoil some steps backward and fall upon one knee; but he recovered himself before the other could follow his blow, and returned one, which took Phantahou full in the breast, and laid him extended breathless upon the ground, and leaping nimbly upon him, he clapped his poniard to the throat of the Pawpaw, making signs to the two kings to advance, while the army of Panaca made the skies re-echo their shouts. When the kings were near him, Malacou said—“O King of Pawpaw, suffer me to save the life of this gallant man, by yielding up thy pretensions to territories, by much of less value to thee than is this brave subject.” The king cried—“Thou hast conquered, and I consent to acknowledge the king thy master’s right. Spare, generous enemy, the life of Phantahou.”

The two armies met, and saluted each other in a friendly manner; the Pawpaw champion was carried off, and by proper care was recovered. Thus a troublesome war, which had cost great numbers of lives, was terminated in a lasting peace.

Malacou gained great reputation and esteem by this action in the court of Pawpaw; but it increased the hatred  
 of

of his enviers in that of Panaca, who had rather their king had lost a large territory, than not have their malice gratified.

No one was more interested in Malacou's victory than the prince, yet there was none so sensibly grieved, or more thoroughly enraged, to find it rivet him more in the royal favour. He could not conceal his anger, and endeavoured to depreciate the action when it was mentioned by the king: he said, Malacou, he must acknowledge, had a brutal courage and strength, which he owed to his being suckled by a savage; but that he did not think his advantage over the Pawpaw champion deserved the honour of the king's commendations, as it was the effect of pure chance. As to his accepting the challenge, it was no more than a thousand in his army would have done, had he not fortunately prevented them by being present in the council when the messenger had his audience. The king, who perceived the venom of this speech, asked his son, if he was one of those thousand; if he was, he had an opportunity, by being at the same time in the council, to have forestalled Malacou. The prince, stung with this reproach, answered, that his minion should by experience know that he was as much his superior in point of bravery as in birth. From that instant, he sought all means to destroy Malacou, who seeing the king decline apace, thought proper to provide for his safety; wherefore he sent his wife and children to Phantahou, and acquainted him with his situation. That generous Pawpaw received them with honour. Soon after the King of Panaca died, and Malacou privately got away to Pawpaw, where he settled with his family, and refusing to accept the honours offered him by the king, led a private life far from court. He married his eldest son to the daughter of Phantahou, and the son of this marriage was your father. A new war broke out between those of Panaca and of Pawpaw, in which fortune declaring for the former, they overran and subdued the kingdom of Pawpaw about the time of your birth. As search was made after your family to destroy it, you were brought up by a poor man who had thirty-nine children, and was believed one of his off-spring. You thought him to be your father, and he

was by the oracle forbidden to deceive you, which is the reason that you were to this time ignorant of your descent, and now receive this intelligence by the decree of Rimac, who in a vision gave me this account, with command to impart to you, that you may by virtuous actions shew yourself worthy of that royal house from whence you sprung. You have in your ancestors Bownacac, examples of bravery, gratitude, prudence, and generosity, worthy of imitation. I have only to add, that you and your children are alone left of the descent from that great man.

The princess went into another room, giving us a sign to follow her, which we did, after we had embraced each other. The room was very large and richly furnished. In the midst of it was placed a table of massive gold, supported by four lions of the natural size, each shaped out of a single emerald: it was covered with several dishes of mother of pearl, filled with the greatest delicacies. She made us sit down with her, while an hundred ladies attended to shift the different courses, and furnish us with liquors. She observed a strict silence during the meal; which ended, she arose and said—'We will now adjourn to my brother's palace; where you will have no need of your tongue, for all conversation is carried on by intuition.' The door of the room where we dined being flung open, presented to our view a large quadrangle, flagged with amethysts and emeralds, cut in a circular form, and the interstices paved with large and beautiful pearls; these flags are a cubit each in diameter. In the middle was a large basin, in which the water did not lie in a level, but rose from the margin, which was of torquoise, and formed a large convex: one side of the concave was open, and surprized us with a beautiful vault, which we soon after entered. The princess, on whom an hundred ladies attended, got into a chariot made of condensed water, drawn by twelve alligators, whose scales were of pure gold; and bidding us come in to her, the ladies mounted also into their respective cars, and we all entered at the opening of this hollow mountain of water, and with astonishing swiftness were carried down a slope of sleeping water, which led directly to the palace of the King of Silence. I need not describe to you either this palace, or the lady, who now makes Moracac the most happy among



among mortals. I shall only tell you, that our arrival caused an universal joy; the lady, the moment she set her eyes upon Moracac, became deeply enamoured of him, and his passion for her was not less violent. Their nuptials were immediately concluded with prodigious magnificence; after which the princess, who was priestess of the goddess of Chastity, taking me in her chariot, swiftly ascended, and landed me on a beautiful coast, near a river of sweet water, whose banks were shaded with fruit-trees of all sorts. When I was on shore, the recommended me to Rimac, and told me she had fully obeyed the injunctions of the oracle, and instantly immersed. I wandered along the banks of this river, till, pressed with hunger, and oppressed by the violent heat, I sat me down; having first gathered some gwavers and alligator pears, under a large cedar; and having made a hearty meal on these, I laid me down to rest; but was awakened by a voice, which, in a plaintive tone, lamented his cruel destiny, in words to this effect: 'Why, O Rimac, am I made the butt of thy indignation? What crime of mine bears so black a die, as to draw upon me such severity? Have I pillaged thy altars, refused to offer thee sacrifice, or affronted thee in the persons of thy priests? Are my hands stained with human blood? Have I oppressed the innocent, or perverted justice? Can any virgin accuse me of injury done her, or have I wronged any man of his right? Why then dost thou make me thus suffer under thy displeasure? Why art thou wroth against me? And when, O when, will my afflictions appease thy anger, and thy mercy put an end to either them or this wretched life, which has been long a burden to me, and which the fear alone of displeasing thee makes me bear?'

I thought I knew the voice, and turning my head towards the place from whence it proceeded, I saw a man stretched in a disconsolate posture, lying at the foot of a mahogany tree, but could not see his face, which was turned from me. I was overjoyed to see a human form, and was rising with design to go to and comfort the complaining wretch, when the appearance of a venerable person, with a long white beard, which reached to the cotton girdle he wore about his loins, awakening in me a fresh curiosity, altered my design; made me resolve to conceal

myself, and listen to what they said, should they enter into discourse.

When the old man drew near to the other, he touched him with a wand which he carried in his hand, and said—'Casqui, I know thee well, and have heard thy foolish complaints, and thy justification of thyself to Rimac. Thou thinkest thou art hardly dealt with, but this proceeds from thy ignorance. The ways of Rimac are not like the ways of mortals, into whose views we may soon penetrate, though endeavoured to be concealed by false appearances and flying reports. Arise, and instead of repining, bless Rimac for saving thee from the heavy curse he has brought upon thy countrymen. I am thy former friend Patamatowo, and thou art now in the valley of Nanafca, the place of thy nativity.' Casqui (whose face I saw and knew) at these words started up, and embraced his friend, saying—'How merciful is Heaven, in bringing me back to my dear country! But tell me, friend, do you know any thing of our Prince Houac; and why, since I passed the mountains which encompass this vale, if it is Nanafca, have I not before seen a human face? What is become of all the towns and villages which were so numerous?'—'I have,' replied Patamatowo, 'heard no news of the prince since thou wentest off with him, and saved him from the cruel design our new monarch had against his life. As it will require some time to answer your other question, I will defer it till I have led you to my cell, where I will thoroughly satisfy you; and shall expect, in return, that you will acquaint me with the misfortunes which I heard you bewail.' When I saw them going, I called out to Casqui to stay. Upon hearing my voice, they both turned towards me, and Casqui immediately calling me to mind, cried out—'O, ye divine powers! do I really see Pahama, or is it his departed soul, which is returned to earth with some message from the tremendous Rimac?'—'No,' said I, 'it is Pahama, who joys to see you.' He ran to, and embraced me, and then enquired if I had heard any thing of his dear master, meaning you, my prince. Upon my answering in the negative, he seemed greatly dejected, but presented me to Patamatowo, as one whom his prince esteemed. He received me courteously, and we all three went about

about twenty paces from the mahogany-tree, where we found a large hollow rock, the habitation of Patamatowo. As soon as we were entered, he set before us some roasted plantains and yams, with cushoes, pines, and other fruits, and poured out of earthen vessels, of his making, some pine-drink, mixed with the juice of sugar-canes, which was both agreeable to the palate and refreshing to the spirits. When he had eaten and drunk sufficiently—  
 ‘Now,’ said he, ‘I will tell you, my friend Casqui, the reason that I was the first human creature you have seen since you have descended the mountains.’

## H O U R LXVIII.

**Y**OUR’s and the prince’s flight being told the new monarch Tygrinchinqui, he put the messenger of the detested news to death, and ordered you to be sought with the strictest diligence. The swiftest runners were dispatched by different ways to overtake you; but they only confirming the impossibility of discovering the way you had taken, were all slain by the new king’s command, or by his own hand. As you had both escaped them, he resolved to extinguish all hopes of the prince recovering his throne, by extirpating every family that had engaged in the royal cause against him. He sent, in the first place, to seize your father, brothers, and the rest of your family; but they had, foreseeing the storm, provided for their own safety the instant your flight was known, and could no where be found: this so much incensed Tygrinchinqui, that he swore not to leave one of the late king’s friends, or any who had any relation to, or commerce with them, alive. I was one of the first whom his guards secured; as my loyalty to the royal family was the most notorious, it consequently made me the most criminal. About two thousand were the same day cut to pieces, without regard to age or sex. The flagrantcy of my crime was the cause of my safety, for I was reserved to see myself partly eaten at an approaching festival, in which I was to have my limbs cut off one by one, broiled, and served up to the king’s own table. On the day destined for this entertain-

ment, which I was to furnish out, I was led in the midst of a strong guard, and tied to a stake, while the fire was preparing. The king came to me, and spoke in the following manner—  
 “Patamatowo, methinks thou dost not shew a chearful countenance on this day of publick rejoicing! Fie, fie! can a man of thy fortitude be dejected, or of thy religion and piety fear that Rimac will desert so good a servant, who has all along placed his confidence in him? Never be daunted, man, at any thing thine enemies can design against thee. Call upon Rimac; he will come to thy assistance, if he is at leisure and can hear thee; and that he may, call aloud, or thou mayest experience my power to take revenge exceeds his to save.”

I replied—“Thy blasphemies be on thine own head;” and turning my face from him, I said in my heart:—  
 “O great Rimac, who art the fountain of justice, yet sufferest the just to become the scorn and victims of the wicked, I dare not enquire into the reasons of thy divine will; I humbly submit to it, and leave these miscreants to the punishments which thou, in vindication of thine own honour, shalt, in thine own good time, bring upon them.” I then turned to the king, who was taking an ax of sharp flint in his hand, to have the pleasure of cutting off the first limb. When he was close to me, I stretched out my arm, and said—“Rimac will endue me with fortitude to baffle, by triumphing over, thy brutish rage.” Hardly had I said these words, when I felt the cord which bound me to the stake loosened, and I saw the king and the people changed into large baboons, which cruelly fell upon, tore to pieces, and devoured one another; till at least one fourth of them were eaten up by the survivors, who fled with speed from my sight. The king, I observed, was twice the bigness of any of the others, and his nobility were greatly larger than the common people, whom I observe they daily hunt and devour, as the king now and then does some of them, though they constantly attend and prey with him. Seeing this transmutation, I attributed it to the blasphemies of Tygrinchinqui. After having adored Rimac, I turned my face towards this river, and lighting upon



upon this cave, I have here led a solitary life ever since, and from hence often see the king and his nobility hunt down and feed upon the common people, if they may retain that appellation, having changed their form. I observe, if ever any of them see me, they are struck with a panick fear, which they shew by their speedy flight and shrieks. — How certain, though long delayed, are the judgments of Rimac," cried Casqui, "and how just is it, that the rebels of Nanasca should be punished by the success of their rebellion!" Then turning to me, he enquired after Prince Moracac. I answered, that he was happy beyond the formation of a single wish; that I would at another time give him a detail of what happened to either of us, from the time of our leaving Hattun Rucana, but that I believed his friend would rather I should postpone my account to that of his own adventures, which I was equally impatient to hear. "I am ready," replied Casqui, "to satisfy the curiosity of both." He then gave a particular account of your journey, of your killing the giant, and of the surprising manner in which the queen and you were carried away. "You may remember," continued he, "Pahama, that I fell ill the day after, and my life was despaired of, or I should have begged the honour of waiting on Prince Moracac and you, in search of my royal master and his lovely queen. Soon as my strength would permit me, I left the court of Hattun Rucana, committing my rout to the direction of fortune, as not knowing what road to take to find the royal pair, to offer them my assistance, and to hazard my life in their service. I met with nothing remarkable in the space of half a moon, that I travelled towards the place of the sun's rising; when I found a farther progress impracticable, without I journied to either the right or left, on account of a river of a vast breadth. I believe my strength would have carried me cross, but the number of alligators I saw in it deterred me from the thoughts. Wherefore I turned to the left, and travelled two days towards the setting of the sun; on the second day after I was stopped by the river, an old woman of a majestic air met me in a large savannah, and thus accosted me: "Son, what ill-boding planet has guided you into this

detestable place, whence never man yet returned, but was here deprived of both his form and liberty? Yonder alligators, inhabitants of the great river, once were men as thou art, as were also the filthy flows thou wilt see in the wood which terminates this plain. Hattacuma will also transform thee into some reptile or brute, if thou dost not withstand her alluring arts, which I am here placed by the Great Power to warn all who pass this way to resist, and which thou canst only do by calling upon and imploring the great Rimac, who will deliver thee from her snares if thou forgettest him not: but alas! I fear that thou wilt, like those who have passed before thee, be unmindful of what I now advise thee to do, and like them will suffer the punishment of thy foolish neglect." I was about to return my thanks, but the woman vanished from my sight. I continued my journey, and traversed the wood, where I saw a number of flows and other beasts unknown to me, but they emitted such a filthy stench, that I was apprehensive of being suffocated. This wood led me into the most beautiful savannah that ever eyes beheld, planted with firs, orange, lemon, and other trees, encircled with jacinthes, and the ground enamelled with flowers of different colours, from which arose a delightful and reviving odour. Several canals helped to entertain the eye, ravished with the enchanted scene; and in these sported white swans, with gold circles round their necks, while fish of a lovely make and of different colours seemed to wanton on the surface and chase each other. The gentle wind, filled with the sweets of jasmine and orange flowers, whispered through the trees, and inspired me with joy unfelt before. My heart bounded in my breast, and I was scarce capable of supporting the height of pleasure this glorious prospect afforded me. I went forward in a perfect extasy, and my satisfaction was so compleat, that I was not sensible of any weariness, though I had walked the better part of the day through various scenes of delightful views, groves, grottos, winding rivulets, cascades, and walks of tall thick cedars, which, while they admitted the refreshing breeze, denied a passage to the intense rays of the sun. At length I came to  
2 C      'a garden,

a garden, which contained trees and shrubs of gold and silver, which imitated the most beautiful of the productions of nature; on the branches of which were twisted large strings of the finest pearl. Ravished with these wonders, I still proceeded, and discovered a small building of eight sides, with a portico, the whole raised of brilliant stones unknown to me, but of such lustre, that they almost were intolerable to the sight. The roof of this pleasure-house was one hollowed pearl. Lost in amazement, I entered this place, where in the centre I found a table of emerald, supported by a single turquoise pillar, and covered with every thing that could invite and gratify the palate; and by one of the sides of the building another table of a single amethyst, supported by a lion of massive silver, and covered with transparent bottles, filled with liquors of a most delicious taste. I was here sensible of sharp hunger, which I appeased by eating plentifully of what I found prepared, drinking large draughts out of the bottles on the side-board, which I found gave me fresh vigour.

## H O U R L X I X.

I Was not more amazed at the wonderful things I had met with, than astonished that so delicious a place should have no inhabitant, or that I had met with none in so long a time, for I had walked at least two leagues in this delightful solitude. Having satisfied my appetite, and refreshed my spirits, I left the octangular dome, and turned up a walk, bounded on each side with tall thick cedars, the tops of which inclining to each other, formed an arch, and made an agreeable gloom. This led me to a large cave formed of shells and transparent stones, such as I had never before seen, intermixed with mother of pearl, emeralds, amethysts, turquoise, and other glittering and valuable jewels, for which I have no name. The light was admitted by eight oval holes in the roof, and it had four inlets, each of which opened to a shady walk of different trees. The floor was strewed with pearl; in the center was a large

basin of fine water, the margin was of a blue stone intermixed with veins of gold. This basin had six sides, at every one of these sides was placed a beautiful woman of solid silver, holding in her right-hand a napkin of the finest cotton, and with her left pointing to the water contained in the basin, which was clear beyond imagination, though it received a yellow cast from it's bottom being strewed with gold dust. I entered this bath, and having washed myself, took a napkin from the statue nearest to me, and dried me, which I had hardly done, when my ears were saluted with the harmony of several musical instruments unknown to me, accompanied by the sweetest voices, but I could see nobody; wherefore I directed my steps to that part, from whence I thought the sound proceeded; but seeing yet nothing, I fancied I was going into the districts of some principal pawawer\*: in this thought, what the old woman whom I met near the great river said to me, occurred to my mind. I went on, however, to endeavour to meet with some person or other who would satisfy my doubts, or to find a way out of this garden, which, as I now imagined the work of enchantment, lost all it's beauties in the fears I was possessed with; the which awakened me to think of my security, and to have recourse to Rimac, to whose protection I recommended myself, and whose assistance I humbly intreated in mental prayer. This I had no sooner done, but all the glories that had dazzled my eyes disappeared; a storm of thunder, lightning, rain, and wind, arose, and I found myself in a dreary wild, where neither a shrub nor blade of grass was to be seen. I looked round this horrid waste, which presented nothing to my sight but sand and sky. I was filled with dreadful apprehensions of what might ensue on the scene shifting, from the gayest and most entertaining, to the most dismal and frightful prospect. The storm whistled round my head, the thunder growled, and the opening skies, when night came on, by dreadful sheets of fire, supplied the defect of day, to shew the horrors of my situation. Death threatened me in many shapes; the shifting sands, which were driven often over me by

\* The Indian word for an inchanter or conjurer.



the violence of the winds, menaced me with a grave while living. The sulphureous stench occasioned by the lightning, I thought would suffocate me; the hissing of serpents, and the roaring of wild beasts, made me minutely expect to become a prey to some one or more of them.

Though we are sensible death is inevitable, and that by the decrees of Rimac we must all die; yet the most resolute are shocked when they find the minute approaching which brings with it their dissolution. Whether this proceeds from the apprehension of being annihilated, or of changing for a worse state in a future; or from a reluctance of the soul to part with the body, with which it has been long and intimately conjoined; or whether a dread of this separation is implanted in us by the great Rimac, to prevent our laying violent hands upon ourselves when under misfortunes; I will not undertake to determine: but I know, that notwithstanding my honour and the duty of my post have often made me brave Death in the field, and get the better of those terrors which commonly precede his appearance, yet his approach at this time, when I coolly expected him to lay his relentless hand upon me, threw me into unspeakable agonies, and I heartily implored the protection which alone could deliver me. My fervent prayers were heard, and I saw the sun rise, towards which I directed my course, till he had climbed to his meridian height, through scorching sand, with his rays fiercely beating upon my head, and parched with thirst, when I came to the banks of the great river which before stopped me. The draught I took, surely, was the most pleasant I had ever tasted; but no sooner had I quenched my raging thirst, but I was tormented with as great hunger. I cast my eyes around to see if there was any likelihood to appease this torture, when as far to my left as I could see, I fancied I discovered some tall trees. I immediately directed my steps towards them, in hope they might yield some fruits to relieve me. To my great joy I was not deceived, for by the time the sun had declined one half of his course towards the sea, I found myself near a thick wood, where was plenty of bananas, mamees, mam-

mee-sappotas, sapadillos, pine-apples" and prickly-pears, which afforded me a delicious meal. Having satisfied my craving appetite, and finding myself sleepy, I climbed a large cedar, the top of whose bowl was large, and the extending branches so very thick, that it afforded me a safe and commodious lodging. I could lie at my full length, had room to turn me conveniently, and was in no danger of falling, or being discovered by either man or beast, being hid by the branches and leaves. I slept here till I was awakened by the next morning's sun; but before I closed my eyes, I had recommended me to the care of Rimac, whom I heartily thanked for his past protection. Having saluted the Sun, and adored the great father of gods and men, I descended, and at the foot of the cedar saw the venerable old lady, who had before given me her advice. "Son," said she, "Rimac never deserted those who placed their trust in him; and if men experience misfortunes, either their own follies are the cause from whence they sprang, or they are trials of their patience and resignation. Virtue and vice differ in this; the former through a rugged path leads to true happiness; the latter, through an inviting pleasant road, guides to inevitable destruction. Thou hast already proved the goodness of Rimac, who has heard thy petitions, and continuing still his favours to thee, has sent me to thy assistance. Never despond when in the greatest dangers; there are none from which his power cannot deliver thee; rely on that as thy only security. Thou hast not yet escaped the snares of Hattacuma, and thou canst only do it by governing thy passions; remember that thou art ever in the sight of Rimac, who will let no folly go unpunished, and no virtue unrewarded, if thou shouldst find them likely to get the better of thy fortitude: but if this reflection is not sufficient to give the victory to reason, put this pearl into thy mouth, and thou wilt experience its efficacy. While thou keepest this yellow stone, thou wilt never feel hunger, thirst, or lassitude; this emerald will preserve thee from all wild beasts and dangerous reptiles, and carry thee safely over all waters; but remember they lose their virtue, when thine forsakes thee."

“thee.” She then put into my hand a small pearl, a transparent yellow stone, and an emerald, recommended me to Rimac, and vanished from my sight.

“I had a strong faith in her words, and resolved immediately to try the virtue of my emerald, by attempting to cross the great river. I descended the bank, and found the water condense under my feet; I went to the opposite side without wetting my soles, and I observed the alligators fled as affrighted from me.

#### H O U R LXX.

“IT is impossible for me to give you a just idea of my joy, and grateful sentiments; I blessed Rimac continually for the inestimable treasure I possessed, and attributed this wondrous bounty of the disposer of all things to his approbation of my having risked my own life to preserve that of my natural sovereign. I travelled with the greatest satisfaction in a course contrary to that of the sun, and upon his decline saw two or three scattered houses. I made up to them, and found all the families making merriment, dancing, drinking chichah copah\*, and mislaw†. They came forward to meet me, and with cheerful countenances invited me to share in their jollity, and to repose myself with them that night: I thankfully accepted the offer they made me of a shelter, for every one contended who should have me for his guest; but as I felt neither thirst nor hunger, I long refused to taste any thing with them. At length, a young girl, who was of ravishing beauty, caught my eye, and I may say, fastened upon my heart. She persuaded me to pledge her in a cup of mislaw. Imagination cannot paint a finer proportion of limbs; her form was without fault, her face of a fine oval, her eyes sparkling, her mouth small, her lips vermilion, her even row of small teeth exceeded the beauty of pearl, and her modesty heightened these charms with which nature had adorned her. I became so enamoured of this beautiful object, that I esteemed the possession of her beyond all the treasures the world contained, and resolved, if

possible, to obtain this blessing. I danced with her, and afterwards as we sat together, at a little distance from the company, who seemed intent on the then dancers, I told her the power her beauty had given her over me was such, that if she refused me the greatest happiness of life, and the extent of all my wishes, her favour, I should for ever curse the time that I had the misfortune to see those graces, which must for ever make me the most wretched among mortals; as, on the contrary, her compassion would make me the most happy. She cast her eyes to the ground while I spoke, with an enchanting bashfulness, and replied, that she could not entertain an opinion of herself so full of vanity; and with a sigh continued—“I wish I had charms such as you flatter me with, or indeed any, that could engage the heart of the only man of worth I ever saw. With a blush upon my face I ingenuously own, the moment I fixed my eyes on yours, I felt a palpitation, and a shortness of breath I have hitherto been unacquainted with, and such emotions as I am not able to describe, as not knowing whether I should give them the appellation of pain or pleasure.”—“You need,” said I, “but view yourself in the limpid streams, to see the reflection of the most beautiful person in the creation, and thus be convinced that I am far from flattering, when I say your charms are irresistible. Divine creature, these graces were given to thee to bless the man who can merit thee, not to prove his torture: and who can pretend to merit the possession of the most lovely of her sex, but the man who has the most love, and best knows the value of thy perfections! The minute thine eyes met mine, they penetrated to my heart; and as Love will bear none to share with him, thy beauties have fixed him there a despotic lord, and every other passion was banished to give him sole possession.”

“Thou art,” said she, “a stranger, and for aught I know from a distant country, where thou mayest have left that which thou sayest I have possessed, with some more deserving beauty. Nay, thou seemest to be of a suspicious temper, since the obliging invitations of my neighbours have not been able to

\* A drink made of maize.

† A drink made of ripe plantains.



" induce thee to partake of our entertain-  
 " ment, to which their hospitable tem-  
 " pers prayed thee. To what wouldst  
 " thou have me attribute this reserved-  
 " ness, but to the apprehensions thou art  
 " in of being intoxicated, and in thy li-  
 " quor discovering some secret which it  
 " behoves thee to conceal? I own to thee,  
 " that my inclinations towards thee are  
 " such as I never yet knew for any of  
 " thy sex; and if thou art free from  
 " blood-shed, and all prior engagements  
 " with any of ours, I will give myself  
 " up to thy disposal. Thou shalt be my  
 " husband; but as a proof thou art  
 " innocent and free, I expect that thou  
 " wilt take from my hand a cup of mis-  
 " law, which has the virtue to make him  
 " who drinks it discover murder or per-  
 " jury, if guilty of either, or both. If  
 " thou drinkest this, and I find by the  
 " trial that thou art what I wish thee, I  
 " will not delay to another night our  
 " mutual happiness." Ravished with this  
 " answer, I eagerly demanded the pro-  
 " bation cup, and drank it off with the  
 " same earnestness. After this we mix-  
 " ed with the rest of the company, and  
 " were extremely merry. I found no  
 " effects of this draught on myself; but  
 " found my charmer so well satisfied,  
 " that she promised that night to crown  
 " my happiness. The night drawing on  
 " she took me to her house, where every  
 " thing appeared neat and rural. The  
 " company went with us to her door,  
 " where she declared that she took me for  
 " her husband. I, inflamed with love, and  
 " panting after the possession of so en-  
 " chanting a beauty, would willingly  
 " have excused the supper; but she in-  
 " sisted upon having one prepared, and  
 " would be obeyed. While she went to  
 " give her orders, the venerable old wo-  
 " man appeared to me, and spoke in the  
 " following manner: "And art thou, son,  
 " notwithstanding the goodness of Ri-  
 " mac, frayed from the paths of virtue,  
 " and fettered in the chains of sensual  
 " pleasures, fallen into the snares of  
 " Hattacuma, who under the disguise of  
 " innocence and beauty is working thy  
 " destruction, and will change thee, as  
 " she has done all whom she has allured  
 " to her arms, by delusive and false  
 " charms, into some wild beast or rep-  
 " tile, in which thou wilt continue to her  
 " death." My blood ran cold in my veins  
 " at these words, and finding my ardour  
 " abate, just as my adorable mistress en-

" tered the room and came with open  
 " arms to caress me, I clapped my pearl  
 " into my mouth, and she that moment  
 " appeared the most forbidding old wi-  
 " thered hag that ever eyes were set on.  
 " I endeavoured to conceal the horror  
 " with which I was struck, at seeing the  
 " sorceress in her genuine form; and  
 " counterfeiting the same ardour I had  
 " before shewn for her fictitious beauties,  
 " received her with open arms, clasped her  
 " to my breast, and in spite of all her ef-  
 " forts and strugglings, squeezed the breath  
 " out of her body. No sooner was she  
 " dead but the air was filled with terri-  
 " ble shrieks; the house in which I was,  
 " and all in it, vanished; I was left in  
 " an open plain, and immediately, as it  
 " was a bright moon, could perceive  
 " myself encompassed by beasts of all  
 " species, which on their approaching  
 " me assumed a human form, and thank-  
 " ed me for their deliverance. We pas-  
 " sed the night without shelter, and the  
 " next morning went to the river, and  
 " saw a number of men sitting on the  
 " banks, who had by the sorceress been  
 " turned into alligators. They had seen  
 " me at the river twice, and knowing  
 " me to be the last who had appeared  
 " within the districts of the enchantress,  
 " congratulated my escape, and return-  
 " ed me the most grateful acknowledg-  
 " ments for their deliverance. Among  
 " these was the King of Pileshaw, whose  
 " brother was a magician and favourite  
 " of the sorceress, and by their joint art  
 " had dethroned and changed him into  
 " an amphibious beast, that his wicked  
 " brother might seize the kingdom. On  
 " hearing his story, one and all cried out—  
 " The power of Rimac, O our deliverer,  
 " is visible with thee! The cause of this  
 " monarch is the cause of justice; lead  
 " us therefore to restore him, for he can  
 " never fail of success whom Rimac has  
 " preserved from the sorceries of Hat-  
 " tacuma." The king entreated me  
 " to follow the impulse, which he thought  
 " from heaven, of his fellow-sufferers,  
 " and promised himself success from the  
 " visible protection the great Deity had  
 " afforded him.

## H O U R LXXI.

" **W**E mustered our men, and found  
 " we were five thousand whom  
 " the sorceress had transformed, but they  
 " were

were destitute of arms. Upon my making this objection, I was answered, that every one came armed into the power of Hattacuma, and that in her palace, doubtless, we should find arms sufficient for a greater number, as many had died after their transformation, though they themselves had been so happy, through the mercy of Rimac, to recover their pristine form. We then resolved upon a publick thanksgiving, to fast that day, to implore the assistance and protection of the great Deity, and the next to go in search of her palace; for none knew where it stood, or as it possibly was raised by magick, whether it subsisted after the death of the sorcerers. This we performed, and the next day we found a stately pile in the midst of a thick wood; we entered it, and in a great hall saw a great number of lances, bows and arrows, disposed in a regular manner; every man armed himself, and we set out towards the kingdom of Pilleshaw. At noon we entered a very large plantain walk, where we halted, and every man made a provision of this fruit. After this we set out centinels, and reposed ourselves during the violent heat of the day. While I slept, the venerable old woman appeared to me, and said, that had not Rimac taken pity on my weakness, the draught of mislaw I was induced to drink, would have enflamed me to such a degree, as would have given Hattacuma full power over me; which she had over none, but whom she had allured to her embraces; that she used all her arts to allure to her arms all who entered her confines, that she might afterwards tyrannize over, and change them into beasts; that finding me alarmed at the beauties of the place which she first presented to my view, and that I had recourse to Rimac, she had raised the storm to fatigue me, and shifted the gaudy to a rural scene, that I might less suspect, and by the sufferings of the past night, be more ready to accept her invitation, and be taken by the snares of innocence and beauty. That I had committed a great crime in drinking the cup of mislaw, as the motive which prevailed on me, I must be conscious, was sensual; and that I must expect to expiate my guilt by my sufferings. This threat filled me with terror; I awoke, and was very pensive, inwardly repenting my fault, and begging remission. As we had among us

guides who perfectly knew the way and as it was moon-light, we did not begin our march till towards even; when we set out again, and pursued our rout all that night, through swamps and woods. In the morning we entered a large savannah, where we refreshed ourselves with plantains and the water of a rivulet which crossed the champaign country, the current of which, our guides told us, we were to follow till the sun had three times restored light to the world. About noon we entered a wood, and rested till towards the evening. Here, at our entrance, we were attacked by wild beasts and large serpents; but the slaughter our men made soon freed us from the assaults of these desperate enemies. We met with nothing more remarkable in the rest of our way, than the crossing large rivers, and travelling over tire-some morasses. On the eighth day from our leaving the palace of Hattacuma, we arrived at a small village, the first in the kingdom of Pilleshaw. At our appearance the people all fled; but our men overtook some old men and a few women, whom they brought to the army. We used them with great humanity, shewed them their monarch, and let them know the cause of our coming, which changed their fears into joy, and they called us their deliverers. We dismissed them, to find out and acquaint those who fled, that they might return in safety. That evening all the people returned, made great rejoicings for our arrival, and furnished us with what plantains and fruits they had. The next morning, when we prepared to set forward, all the able men armed and joined us. In about four hours march, in a large savannah, we saw a body of men, who waited our coming. The king immediately advising with me, ordered the army to draw up; but the men of the village told us, the supposed enemy were men of a neighbouring town, to whom they had sent the joyful news of the king's return, and that they were come with all the able men they could get together round the country to meet and join us. On this relation, we detached some of our swiftest runners to reconnoitre, which the others perceiving, they sent a detachment of twelve men to our army, who confirmed what the villagers had said; and moreover assured us, that



the whole people would come in as we prosecuted our route, excepting such only as preferred their own interest to the publick good, and were about the court. But the number of tyrants, for such they termed the courtiers and their dependents, were inconsiderable to that number which suffered by their rapine and cruelty, and consequently not to be apprehended. This we found literally true; for, before we came to Tchiampaw, the metropolis, our army was augmented to a hundred thousand well-armed men. The usurper had very little time to prepare himself for his defence, he was so greatly hated for his oppression, that he had not two days notice of his brother and sovereign's return, before he saw us investing his capital. He got together his standing troops; but as they served him through compulsion rather than love, he was deserted by them; and his favourites seeing that it was impossible to make resistance, thought of compounding for themselves by an infamous treachery. They watched the time of his sleeping, for at any other they could not have succeeded, he being a magician; bound him, their patron, their benefactor, who had raised them from the dregs of the people to power and riches, and brought him a prisoner into our army: for which notable service, the king promised to reward them according to their merit, and exalt them above the rest of his subjects; which he did the next day, by having them tied to the highest branches of cedars, anointed with honey, and exposed to mosehettoes, and other stinging flies, which made them die, so as to feel their death; for some of these traitors were ten days expiring. The king was thus restored without a blow bent against him. The first thing he did was to secure his brother from hurting him; he had him fettered with chains of gold, as no magician can be mischievous when in chains, and locked him up in a place of safety, where he had good air, but under a strong guard. After this he proclaimed an amnesty, out of which only such were excepted, as had made the nation and the good of the publick subservient to their own ambition and interests.

The king having quietly regained the possession of his kingdom, I entreated him to make enquiry throughout

his dominions after Prince Houac and the Queen; which he accordingly did: and such was his gratitude towards me, that he offered one of his daughters by proclamation, for a wife to him who could discover them. As this had no effect, I begged he would enquire of his brother where I should find them, or if he could not inform me, he might possibly direct me the most likely course to take for that end. He answered, that notwithstanding the sight of so ungrateful a relation shocked him, and that he could not think of asking a favour from him without the greatest constraint; yet, that he might not seem guilty of a vice he condemned and abhorred, he would that day accompany me to the place of his confinement, and engage him, if possible, to serve me, though it was possible we might both repent it. We went accordingly. The king mildly reprov'd him, and observed how differently he acted in sparing his life, after having been guilty of so foul a treason towards an indulgent brother, and proceeded to give him hopes, that he might enlarge and receive him to favour, could he be convinced of his repentance.

## H O U R LXXII.

THE magician prince answered, that he need not be reproached with his rebellion, for the reflection on it would not allow him a moment's peace of mind; that he esteemed the sparing of his life an intended act of clemency, but that it was, indeed, contrary to his royal brother's design, an act of the greatest cruelty; for the base ingratitude kept him continually on the rack; and as he had the greatest abhorrence of himself, and could not but think he had, by a meanness of soul which rendered him contemptible to every good man, stained the glory of his birth, he should receive the sentence of his death as a joyful deliverance from the tortures of a reproaching conscience.

He spoke this with so much concern painted in his countenance, and without daring, at least seemingly, to raise his eyes from the ground on which he had fixed them, that I was induced to believe he uttered the real sentiments of his heart.

The king told him, he hoped his penitence

"mitence was sincere. He replied—  
 "You have no reason to believe it so,  
 "neither am I so weak as to expect you  
 "should. I merit that you should hold  
 "me in suspicion; and I should blame  
 "you as a weak prince, did you ever,  
 "by releasing me from my present confinement,  
 "put it again in my power to harm you.  
 "What I said, was rather to ease my own  
 "burdened heart, than induce your belief."

"The king retired with me, and asked  
 "my opinion of his brother. I answered,  
 "that I believed him sincere. "And I,"  
 "replied the king, "esteemed all he said  
 "the effects of a deep hypocrisy. However,"  
 "said he, "it is but just that, for your  
 "satisfaction, I should risk the loss of that  
 "kingdom I recovered by your means."

"The next day the king took me with  
 "him to make a second visit to his brother.  
 "They discoursed on the present state of  
 "affairs, and the magician prince gave the  
 "king salutary advice, and bid him, among  
 "other admonitions, never expose himself to  
 "the hatred of his people by protecting  
 "favourites, who oppressed them. "This,"  
 "said he, "was the rock on which I split,  
 "and conducted me to your recovering your  
 "throne than could have done the handful of  
 "men whom you brought with you, since it  
 "raised you an army even at my palace gates,  
 "and put me into your hands by those of the  
 "wretches for whom I had incurred a general  
 "hatred. None but the honest man can be  
 "depended upon; a sycophant seeks his own  
 "interest solely, and will, for that or his  
 "safety, betray the prince who has raised him  
 "from the dunghill, and placed him in the  
 "sunshine of his royal favour. I am an example  
 "of the ill policy which I warn you of. No  
 "doubt, you carest the villains who betrayed  
 "me; but have a care you do not take asps  
 "into your bosom, which will sting you to  
 "death. Who has betrayed one benefactor,  
 "will hardly be grateful or just to another."

"I have, indeed," said the king, "rewarded  
 "them, and you must own they merited that I  
 "should do for them. I am satisfied they will  
 "never do me a disservice, for I have put them  
 "beyond a possibility of wishing for more."

"Trust not too much, my element brother,"  
 "replied the prince. The king then acquainted  
 "him with the re-

"ward he had given those traitors, which he  
 "could not before learn, none having been  
 "permitted to speak to or even see him. As  
 "soon as he heard those villains were so justly  
 "punished, he cried out—"Did not my guilt  
 "detrain me, I should by my embraces express  
 "my thanks, and the infinite satisfaction you  
 "have given me. I now no longer envy you a  
 "throne which your virtue makes you worthy  
 "of. Oh! that I had power to shew how  
 "kindly I reverse this act of justice!"

"The king then told him he had it in  
 "his power to oblige him in serving me, and  
 "gave him the reason of our visits. "How,"  
 "said the magician, "can you make me such  
 "a request? or, more properly, how can you,  
 "for your own safety, impose such a command  
 "for such I look upon the desire of my  
 "sovereign. "You must know, I have no  
 "power in chains, and if you free me from  
 "them, your guards are vainly set to keep  
 "me. Could you see my heart, I should not  
 "blame you; but as words are fallacious,  
 "the request of that stranger, and your  
 "command, whom I have once dethroned,  
 "are highly imprudent. Let him take  
 "chance for his guide, or address himself to  
 "some other; and do you reign quietly,  
 "by continuing me in chains, which I am  
 "not solicitous to be freed from, being  
 "thoroughly satisfied that your goodness  
 "can pardon me."

"Happy had it been for both had we  
 "taken the advice he gave, in hopes we  
 "would not follow it."

"The king told him he had forgot all  
 "that had passed; was satisfied of his  
 "sincerity, and would restore him to his  
 "dignity. He then ordered his chains to  
 "be taken off. As soon as he was free,  
 "he turned to the king, and said—"I  
 "have forewarned you, that none but  
 "the honest man can be relied on; I  
 "now tell you, no favours will ever  
 "work on the ungrateful and wicked:  
 "such you knew me; and how could you  
 "imagine that an injurious confinement  
 "could alter my nature for the better?  
 "Was it not more reasonable to think,  
 "that the reflection on my captivity, if  
 "by any means I could get free, would  
 "rather stimulate me to revenge?—And  
 "thou, whom I never injured, foolish and  
 "busy stranger, how couldst thou be so  
 "blind as to imagine I would return thee  
 "good for evil, and  
 "for



“ for having hurled me from the highest  
 “ pinnacle of human glory, accomplish  
 “ thy wishes?” Having said this, he  
 “ vanished from our sight, and left the  
 “ king and me in the greatest conster-  
 “ nation. I was quite inconsolable at  
 “ the thoughts of having exposed the  
 “ king to new conflicts with a powerful  
 “ enemy. His majesty, though he ap-  
 “ prehended the wickedness of his bro-  
 “ ther, endeavoured to comfort me.—  
 “ Rimac,” said he, “ who restored me  
 “ to my genuine form, is an inexhau-  
 “ stible source of goodness; and as his  
 “ power is not limited, he will never  
 “ suffer the wicked to triumph over such  
 “ as trust in him, though he may suffer  
 “ them for a while to prosper in their  
 “ wickedness.” We returned to the  
 “ palace, and Lacentaquaw, that was  
 “ the king’s name, immediately held a  
 “ council on this important affair. They  
 “ unanimously advised the assembling all  
 “ the magicians, and joining them to the  
 “ consultation: but this the king would  
 “ by no means listen to, as it would be  
 “ distrusting either the mercy or power  
 “ of Rimac. That if his indiscretion  
 “ should be followed by any misfortune,  
 “ he would rather submit to it, than en-  
 “ deavour to avert it by means displeasing  
 “ to the great Deity. The council broke  
 “ up, without concluding on other mea-  
 “ sures than to guard the confines, to  
 “ place double guards about the palace,  
 “ and to have a strict eye on those who  
 “ were supposed to favour his interest.

## H O U R LXXIII.

“ **I**N the first watch of the succeeding  
 “ night, the venerable woman whom  
 “ I first saw by the side of the great river,  
 “ appeared to me as I slept, and thus ac-  
 “ cessed me: “ Hadst thou the favour  
 “ and protection of the most potent  
 “ monarch upon earth, who had given  
 “ thee many and signal instances of  
 “ his benevolence towards thee; who  
 “ had by his irresistible power delivered  
 “ thee from the malice of potent ene-  
 “ mies; whose regard for thee had made  
 “ him overlook many abuses of his  
 “ goodness, and had promised to con-  
 “ tinue his care of thy welfare whilst  
 “ thou reliedst on his protection; and  
 “ thou shouldst ungratefully pay this  
 “ consideration of so great a prince, by

“ rejecting his offers, and throwing thy-  
 “ self into the retinue of, and seek sup-  
 “ port from, some petty tributary lord,  
 “ wouldst thou not be guilty of egregi-  
 “ ous folly, and offer the highest affront  
 “ to thy prior patron; and wouldst thou  
 “ not deservedly merit that he should  
 “ cast thee from him as unworthy his  
 “ farther notice?”

“ Ah! reverend dame,” said I, “ too  
 “ well I now see and bewail the folly I  
 “ have committed. My applying to  
 “ the magician speaks my distrust of  
 “ the providential care of Rimac, which  
 “ I have so often experienced. Alas!  
 “ I have sinned, and if he withdraws  
 “ his protection, it is, I own, but the  
 “ just punishment of my inadvertency.  
 “ Oh! pity the frailty of an unhappy  
 “ thoughtless man, whose weakness daily  
 “ leads him into offences; but who no  
 “ sooner discovers, but repents his er-  
 “ rors.”

“ As thou often fallest into folly, it  
 “ is fit thou shouldst feel the effects of  
 “ it. The scourge is for the back of  
 “ the fool, as the smart of stripes he re-  
 “ members, and admonitions he soon  
 “ forgets. However, I advise thee to re-  
 “ flect that thou art before an all-seeing  
 “ eye, from whom thou canst not con-  
 “ ceal thy most inward thoughts, and  
 “ for the future act accordingly, as the  
 “ means to recover that favour thy im-  
 “ prudence has lost thee. As Lacenta-  
 “ quaw erred from a virtuous principle,  
 “ saw his fault, and would not endea-  
 “ vour to avert the consequences of it  
 “ by being guilty of a fresh one, but  
 “ humbly resigned himself to the will,  
 “ and depended on the goodness of Ri-  
 “ mac, his punishment will be light,  
 “ and he will be convinced that he has  
 “ taken a method as prudent to conci-  
 “ liate the favour of the great Deity, as  
 “ the step thou madest him take was  
 “ criminal and stupid.” Saying this,  
 “ she disappeared. Her last words, in  
 “ the midst of my affliction, were some  
 “ comfort to me; for as I was the un-  
 “ happy cause of this monarch’s trans-  
 “ gression, I would willingly have sub-  
 “ mitted to be the sole punished to have  
 “ him excused.

“ The next day, the king perceiving  
 “ me very pensive, called me aside, and  
 “ asked me the reason. I ingenuously  
 “ told him. “ Well,” said he, “ we  
 “ are in the hands of a merciful judge,  
 “ 2 D “ who

“ who delights not in the miseries of his  
 “ creatures, in whose corrections we  
 “ have a manifest sign of benevolence.”  
 “ While he was speaking to me, a mes-  
 “ senger, who had run all night, brought  
 “ word that the prince magician was  
 “ entered the kingdom, mounted on a  
 “ dragon of a monstrous size, at the  
 “ head of a number of magicians, mount-  
 “ ed on winged serpents, which struck  
 “ the people with such horror that all fled  
 “ before him; but that many were over-  
 “ taken, who, on refusing to acknow-  
 “ ledge him their king, were immediately  
 “ devoured by the monsters which carried  
 “ these magicians. That this had so  
 “ terrified them, they durst not make  
 “ the least resistance, but fought their  
 “ safety in their flight, and that the ma-  
 “ gicians would that day appear in the  
 “ great savannah before the metropolis.  
 “ This news gave the king no emotion,  
 “ though it deprived me for some time  
 “ of speech. The reflection that my  
 “ imprudence had brought this calamity  
 “ upon a prince and people, cast me into  
 “ the utmost confusion, and covered me  
 “ with shame. The king perceived the  
 “ condition I was in, and with a smiling  
 “ countenance took me by the hand, and  
 “ said—“ We have been both guilty of  
 “ a crime, but let us not heighten it by  
 “ depending. Rimac will not desert  
 “ us; he remembers mercy, even when  
 “ he chastises. Let us trust in him,  
 “ who we know can deliver us, and let  
 “ us, by so doing, endeavour to engage  
 “ his omnipotence to declare for us.  
 “ For my part, I have no apprehensions  
 “ of these terrible enemies; death is the  
 “ worst that they can bring upon me;  
 “ and if Rimac so wills, I resign. How-  
 “ ever, let us do what becomes us.”

“ A council was called, and all the  
 “ troops ordered into the savannah;  
 “ where they were scarce ranged, when  
 “ we perceived the army of magicians  
 “ in the air. Their serpents took the  
 “ ground, and the prince mounted on a  
 “ furious dragon, from whose nostrils  
 “ proceeded a sulphureous smoke, which  
 “ kindled by the percussion of the air,  
 “ advanced, and with a loud voice pro-  
 “ claimed a pardon to all who would re-  
 “ turn, as he termed it, to their duty;  
 “ and promised to give them the first  
 “ rank next to himself, who would de-  
 “ liver the king and me into his hands;  
 “ at the same time threatening to extir-

“ pate all who did not instantly throw  
 “ down their arms. Neither his promise  
 “ nor threat had any effect; the army,  
 “ with a great shout, prepared for, and  
 “ followed the king to, the assault. Be-  
 “ fore the two armies joined, we were  
 “ surrounded with a thick cloud, whence  
 “ proceeded terrible flashes of lightning,  
 “ darting towards the enemy. The  
 “ claps of thunder which preceded them  
 “ were more terrifying than any I had  
 “ ever heard. This cloud enveloped us  
 “ about the space of two minutes, when  
 “ it dissipated, and gave way to the sun  
 “ in it's full glory, which shined on the  
 “ rear of our army, and to our great  
 “ astonishment, we saw that of the ma-  
 “ gicians, together with the monsters on  
 “ which they rode, in the same attitudes  
 “ we had before beheld them, reduced to  
 “ a black hard coal.

“ You may better imagine, than I de-  
 “ scribe, the joy this sight gave us. We  
 “ all threw ourselves upon our faces, and  
 “ adored the great Rimac, who had thus  
 “ wonderfully preserved us from a dan-  
 “ ger that was so imminent.

“ The king instantly ordered altars to  
 “ be raised in the savannah, and sacri-  
 “ fices to be brought from his capital,  
 “ which were no sooner laid upon the al-  
 “ tars, than they were consumed by fire  
 “ from heaven. After which fell a heavy  
 “ shower of rain that dissolved the army  
 “ of magicians, and a hot sun dried it  
 “ into dust, which was carried away by  
 “ a succeeding whirlwind.

#### H O U R LXXIV.

“ U P O N our return into the city,  
 “ the temples were all illuminated,  
 “ and that night was passed in publick  
 “ thanksgivings. The day following  
 “ the king was seized with a fever, which  
 “ confined him a moon to his bed, and  
 “ brought him very low. When he had  
 “ fully recovered his strength, which was  
 “ not till after three moons, I took my  
 “ leave, and directed my course towards  
 “ the rising of the sun. I travelled near  
 “ a moon and a half, without meeting  
 “ with any thing extraordinary, subsisted  
 “ by the fruits which grew wild in the  
 “ woods and savannahs which I passed  
 “ through; at length, I discovered a few  
 “ scattered cottages, which I made up  
 “ to, and found them inhabited by  
 “ Sam-



‘*samquas*\*. Of these I enquired if they  
 ‘ could give me any tidings of the royal  
 ‘ pair I was then in search of? The chief  
 ‘ of them answered, that he would the  
 ‘ next day inform himself of the oracle.  
 ‘ He received me into his cot with  
 ‘ great humanity, entertained me with  
 ‘ surprising magnificence, and lodged  
 ‘ me in a splendid apartment. As you  
 ‘ may, my prince, be surpris’d at what  
 ‘ you hear, I having called the habita-  
 ‘ tions cottages; and as there are not  
 ‘ any order of religious men in your  
 ‘ territories that bear any resemblance  
 ‘ to these; give me leave to break into  
 ‘ my story, to acquaint you with the  
 ‘ manner of life of these recluses. Their  
 ‘ houses have but one room each, except  
 ‘ that of their chief, which has visibly no  
 ‘ more, and makes outwardly no better  
 ‘ figure than the others. But in that  
 ‘ one room he has an easy descent to  
 ‘ large subterranean apartments, which  
 ‘ are finely disposed and richly adorned.  
 ‘ These are for the use of travellers,  
 ‘ who are here lodged and entertained  
 ‘ for the space of a moon, if they please  
 ‘ to continue so long among them; but  
 ‘ for the religious themselves, who attend  
 ‘ you as slaves, they lie upon the earth,  
 ‘ without any thing under or over them,  
 ‘ whether the season proves wet or dry;  
 ‘ and though they provide the greatest  
 ‘ delicacies for their guests, they them-  
 ‘ selves live upon nothing but roasted  
 ‘ plantains, which for greater mortifi-  
 ‘ cation they eat with ashes. When any  
 ‘ of them is sick, they make a bed of  
 ‘ ashes before the altar of Rimac, leave  
 ‘ him daily his plantain, still rolled in  
 ‘ ashes, for they are stinted to one a day,  
 ‘ and a small measure of water, which  
 ‘ they will not exceed, though perishing  
 ‘ with thirst, and if he dies, they throw  
 ‘ him into the woods to be devoured by  
 ‘ beasts or birds. They have women  
 ‘ in cottages hard by, who have also  
 ‘ their superior; undergo the same seve-  
 ‘ rities, and receive female passengers  
 ‘ with the same hospitality; but none  
 ‘ are admitted who are not of a great  
 ‘ age; and the punishment of the reli-  
 ‘ gious, for speaking with any of these  
 ‘ ancient matrons, or any other female,  
 ‘ farther than to direct them where they  
 ‘ may be received, is the being burnt  
 ‘ alive.

‘ The next morning the superior told  
 ‘ me he could obtain no answer from

‘ the oracle, wherefore he concluded I  
 ‘ was under the displeasure of the great  
 ‘ Deity, and should take it as a favour  
 ‘ if, for that reason, I would quit their  
 ‘ village; though if I insisted on it, I  
 ‘ might remain among them a moon,  
 ‘ and they would take care that I should  
 ‘ want for nothing necessary; but de-  
 ‘ sired I would excuse either his, or any  
 ‘ of his fraternity, having farther con-  
 ‘ versation with me. I said, notwith-  
 ‘ standing this shocking compliment,  
 ‘ two days, to recover my strength, ex-  
 ‘ hausted by tedious journies, though  
 ‘ neither in that time, nor at my taking  
 ‘ leave, could I get one word out of any  
 ‘ of these religious. What knowledge  
 ‘ I obtained of the rules of this order  
 ‘ was at supper, the first night of my  
 ‘ arrival among them.

‘ I left these religious with a heavy  
 ‘ heart, fearing the consequence of Ri-  
 ‘ mac’s displeasure, and travelled still  
 ‘ towards the sun. What did not a lit-  
 ‘ tle add to my melancholy, was the re-  
 ‘ flection, that I had need of subsistence,  
 ‘ and had found myself often fatigued,  
 ‘ by which I concluded my yellow stone  
 ‘ had lost it’s virtue. On the third day  
 ‘ after my departure from these hermits,  
 ‘ I spied a large village, where I rested,  
 ‘ and enquired if any could give me  
 ‘ tidings of my prince and his queen.  
 ‘ An aged old man told me, that Hama-  
 ‘ cuwac, a magician, whose palace was  
 ‘ about three leagues distant, might pos-  
 ‘ sibly be the ravisher. Having got di-  
 ‘ rections to find out the place of his  
 ‘ residence, I was resolved to attempt  
 ‘ their relief, in case I could discover  
 ‘ them in his power. I found his pa-  
 ‘ lace with great ease, and approached  
 ‘ it with great intrepidity, though the  
 ‘ gate was guarded by two monstrous  
 ‘ lions, and I apprehended my enemy  
 ‘ would be of no succour to me. How-  
 ‘ ever, I was, to my great joy, convinced  
 ‘ of the contrary; for at my approach,  
 ‘ the lions quitted their post and fled.  
 ‘ I entered a large hall, which was as  
 ‘ spacious as a temple, and was met by  
 ‘ several beautiful women, whose hair  
 ‘ was bound with strings of precious  
 ‘ stones, and who round their waists  
 ‘ wore sashes of the finest cotton; but  
 ‘ what astonished me, was to see all their  
 ‘ backs marked with stripes. One of  
 ‘ these advancing before the rest, said—  
 ‘ “ Surely the period of our captivity is

\* Indian word for hermits.

" at hand, and thou art more than  
 " mortal, since thou couldst enter this  
 " palace without permission of the ma-  
 " gician, who never suffered one of thy  
 " sex to enter his gate, if not brought  
 " in by himself a captive as we and our  
 " husbands are, and exposed to a most  
 " cruel treatment, for preferring our  
 " fidelity to our unhappy lords to all  
 " temptations that ease, grandeur, and  
 " pleasure can set before us. Know,  
 " gallant stranger, that our respective  
 " forms have unhappily been pleasing in  
 " the sight of Hamacuwac the magician,  
 " and he has by his art brought us and  
 " our husbands hither, where he has  
 " vainly endeavoured to allure us to his  
 " arms; and finding all enticements  
 " vain, he daily scourges us and our  
 " husbands, whom he keeps chained in  
 " an adjacent room, divided into cells,  
 " in hopes that severity may get the bet-  
 " ter of our virtue, or that compassion  
 " for our beloved husbands may work  
 " upon us to desert our honour, and  
 " break the bands of our fidelity, his  
 " power not extending over such as do  
 " not consent to receive and correspond  
 " with his caresses. Surely compas-  
 " sionate Heaven has sent thee to rescue  
 " us from this tyranny; since no mor-  
 " tal has, before thee, dared to approach  
 " the terrifying centinels he placed to  
 " defend the entrance of his palace."  
 " I answered, that I should think my-  
 " self happy if Providence had singled  
 " me out for the instrument of their de-  
 " liverance; but that I feared I was un-  
 " worthy of a favour which would ad-  
 " minister so great satisfaction. I then  
 " told them the search I was upon, ac-  
 " quainted them with the story of Prince  
 " Houac and his queen, but feared they  
 " were not in the palace, as I did not see  
 " her among those virtuous sufferers,  
 " among whom I should assuredly have  
 " found her, had Hamacuwac been  
 " the ravisher. She who first spake to  
 " me, answered, that the magician had  
 " told them, that Yllapantac, Prince of  
 " the Isle of Uxi, descended from the  
 " line of the prophets, had carried off the  
 " Queen of Hattun Rucana, and thrown  
 " Prince Houac into the sea, many leagues  
 " distant from any shore; wherefore,  
 " though my hopes of recovering the  
 " prince were vain, yet if I directed my  
 " course towards the Isle of Uxi, I might  
 " possibly be of service to the queen.  
 " She then advised me to be gone before

" the magician, who was abroad, re-  
 " turned, if I was not destined to set them  
 " at liberty. There is," continued she,  
 " a shield in an inward room, which room  
 " is guarded by a dragon, and the shield  
 " itself surrounded with a magical fire;  
 " if thou hast the courage to undertake  
 " getting possession of this, thou wilt,  
 " armed with it, subdue the magician,  
 " and restore us and our lords, to our for-  
 " mer happiness.

" Though I was penetrated with grief  
 " for the misfortune of my prince, and  
 " eager to find the Isle of Uxi, yet I  
 " thought it incumbent on me to risk my  
 " life in attempting the service of these  
 " virtuous ladies.

## H O U R LXXV.

" I Desired they would conduct me to the  
 " apartment which held this shield;  
 " for though I perished in the attempt,  
 " I could not die in one more glorious.  
 " On my saying this, they got around  
 " me, and embraced my knees; and  
 " some, notwithstanding my resistance,  
 " prostrated themselves to kiss my feet.  
 " Then chusing out one to be my guide,  
 " I followed her through the hall, and  
 " crossing a quadrangle, I spied the  
 " dragon, who at the sight of me set  
 " up a dreadful roar, and flew into the  
 " air, leaving the door free. I opened it,  
 " and in the middle of a stately room, saw  
 " a pyramidal fire, which blazed with-  
 " out any apparent fuel, and in the midst  
 " I saw the shield: as I drew near, I  
 " found the heat intolerable; but, how-  
 " ever, resolved to precipitate myself into  
 " the flame, and either perish or bring off  
 " the shield. As I was going to throw  
 " myself into it, the venerable old woman  
 " appeared by the side of this flaming py-  
 " ramid, and put the shield into my hand,  
 " which was of beaten gold, and appear-  
 " ed red-hot, though it felt rather cool  
 " to my hand. My guide seeing me pos-  
 " sessed of this treasure, ran before me to  
 " acquaint the others, that Providence in  
 " me had sent their deliverer. They all  
 " extolled my bravery in the attempt, and  
 " congratulated me on my success; de-  
 " siring that I would, with them, search  
 " the palace, and give freedom to their  
 " husbands. As, with this design, we  
 " crossed a large court, we saw the magi-  
 " cian returning through the air on the  
 " back of a griffin, which, stooping to  
 " seize





Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co March 27. 1786.

PERUVIAN TALE





' seize me in his talons, being within  
 ' three times the height of a man distant  
 ' from my head, sent forth a horrid  
 ' screech, darted upwards, throwing his  
 ' burden to the ground, and parted  
 ' with such swiftness, that we soon lost  
 ' sight of him. The magician nimbly  
 ' recovered his legs, and with a maf-  
 ' sive club aimed a blow at my head,  
 ' which I defended with my shield. The  
 ' stroke made the whole place ring,  
 ' and drove me some steps backward.  
 ' He pursued me before I had well re-  
 ' covered with a second, which falling  
 ' short, the violence with which he struck  
 ' drove his club two cubits deep into the  
 ' earth. Before he had drawn it out  
 ' again, I nimbly advanced, and with a  
 ' back stroke of my falchion laid his head  
 ' at his feet. He caught it up with great  
 ' agility, and springing about an hun-  
 ' dred cubits back, fixed it on, and ad-  
 ' vanced with vigour to renew the com-  
 ' bat. I met him with my lance, which  
 ' I darted through him; but he instantly  
 ' drew out and hurled the weapon back,  
 ' which bounded off my shield with a  
 ' noise like a clap of thunder, with such  
 ' prodigious strength was it thrown.  
 ' The fight continued three hours, in all  
 ' which time I was neither wearied nor  
 ' wounded, and the many wounds I had  
 ' given my enemy neither diminished his  
 ' strength, for they healed as soon as re-  
 ' ceived, nor gave me any advantage:  
 ' wherefore, irritated at the obstinate re-  
 ' sistance, and despairing of the victory  
 ' by the weapons I was armed with, I  
 ' resolved to make trial of a close engage-  
 ' ment; and, rushing in upon him, I  
 ' struck him so successfully on the breast  
 ' with the short spear placed in the centre  
 ' of my shield, that I overthrew and fell  
 ' upon him. He endeavoured to regain  
 ' his legs, but his efforts were fruitless.  
 ' When he perceived this, he set up a  
 ' roar which shook the earth, and vo-  
 ' mited flames of fire, with which he  
 ' thought to consume me; but covering  
 ' myself with my shield, I came up to  
 ' him as he was rolling and tossing to  
 ' rise, and striking him over the head  
 ' with the rim of my shield, dashed out  
 ' his brains. I had thrown away my  
 ' falchion and lance, as I found they were  
 ' of no effect against him, and that he  
 ' could be alone overcome by the virtue  
 ' of the shield. No sooner had the mis-  
 ' creant's soul left his body, but all the  
 ' doors of the palace flew open of them-

' selves, and we entered a stately room,  
 ' where we saw the husbands of these  
 ' ladies chained to as many brazen pil-  
 ' lars as they were in number. Their  
 ' chains dropped off, and they came to  
 ' meet and congratulate me. How great  
 ' was the reciprocal joy of these lovers I  
 ' leave you to guess. They were all lavish  
 ' in my praise: and I acknowledge I was  
 ' so far transported with my victory, and  
 ' so delighted with the encomiums they  
 ' gave me, that my vanity made me forget  
 ' to attribute my success to the sole author  
 ' of it, but arrogantly and foolishly take  
 ' it to myself; till I was awakened from  
 ' my stupid vain-glory by one of the  
 ' ladies saying—"Let not the joy of the  
 ' "mercy we have received make us un-  
 ' "grateful to the great Author of all good,  
 ' "who made this stranger the instrument  
 ' "of our deliverance; but let us return  
 ' "our devout thanks to the great Rimac."  
 ' At these words, I immediately reco-  
 ' vered from and was ashamed of my ar-  
 ' rogant vanity; acknowledged my base-  
 ' ness, and joining the rest, we prostrated  
 ' ourselves on the ground, and returned  
 ' our thanks and praises in the most de-  
 ' vout and humble manner. We soon  
 ' after this saw the palace sink into the  
 ' earth, and a foetid lake arose in the place  
 ' where it stood. We then went in a body  
 ' to the neighbouring village, whence I  
 ' had got directions to find the habita-  
 ' tion of the magician. As soon as we  
 ' were perceived by the people, they  
 ' came out to receive us with musick and  
 ' dances. We all went in procession to  
 ' the temple of Rimac, which had, by  
 ' the power of Hamacuwac, been long  
 ' shut up, and was now opened for us to  
 ' pay our vows. I here hung up the  
 ' golden shield; and, after paying our  
 ' adorations, we were feasted by the vil-  
 ' lagers whom the magician had kept in  
 ' slavery. After two days, I proceeded  
 ' forward, with hopes of finding the Isle  
 ' of Uxi. Wherefore, enquiring my way  
 ' to the sea-coast, I took that route, hav-  
 ' ing taken my leave of the company and  
 ' the hospitable inhabitants. The even-  
 ' ing of that morning in which I left the  
 ' village, as I crossed a fair savannah, as  
 ' far as I could see, I perceived a man of  
 ' a gigantick stature coming towards  
 ' me. I went forward notwithstanding,  
 ' and we soon met. In a menacing tone  
 ' he asked me, what had brought me into  
 ' his confines. I answered, that I was a  
 ' traveller, and meant not to offend any  
 ' one;

one; that if I had been guilty of a fault, I hoped his justice would impute it to my ignorance, and pass it by. He looked sternly at me, said my plea was too weak, and was going to lay hands on me; but I slipped nimbly on one side, avoided his gripe, and finding he intended me mischief, I recommended myself to Rimac, and threw my lance, which rebounded from his breast, on which it struck, as if it had been thrown against a rock. I then betook me to flight, but as he was twenty-one cubits tall, and took near fourteen cubits at a stride, he soon reached, seized, bound, threw me upon his shoulders, and walked away at a surprising rate. By sun-set he came to the sea-coast, and entered a cave, formed either by nature or his surperlative strength, in a very large rock. He tossed me down, as a hunter would a fawn that he had killed; took from me my arms, and finding my pearl and precious stones, seized and contemplated them with a visible pleasure in his looks. He after this unbound me, and taking hold of me by the neck, cast me into a hole which admitted the light by four windows cut in the rock. He bid me be chearful, and not apprehend wanting any thing; then rolling a monstrous stone to the mouth of this hole, he left me there. The grief I felt for the death of Prince Houac, who is to be sure drowned; the affliction I was under for the loss of my jewels and liberty, and the apprehensions of what would follow, rendered me inconsolable. I slept not a wink that night, and to add to these accumulated misfortunes, I felt such pains all over my body and limbs, that had my mind been composed, I could have taken no rest. As soon as the light returned, I found myself covered with blotches; I was a perfect leper, and frightened at myself. Soon after the sun was risen I heard the stone removed; and the giant putting in his arm, caught hold of and dragged me out of the cave, saying to his wife—"Here, take this plump youth, and let him be broiled for dinner." She took me in her hand, carried me to the mouth of their cave, and seeing the odious figure I made, called to her husband, and asked what he meant by giving her such a distempered wretch, whose flesh would certainly infect them both. The giant, who came out, seeing the condition I

was in, ordered her to throw me into the sea; which she did with such force, that I flew at least five hundred cubits from the shore, and was no sooner fallen into the water than I was swallowed by a large fish.

## H O U R LXXVI.

I Had no hopes of ever seeing again the light, though, to my great surprize, in the dark living cavern, I respired freely. The time I was here inclosed I cannot compute, but I do not believe it could be less than the space of three days. I felt excessive hunger, and was, you may believe, in a melancholy situation; but, reflecting on the goodness and power of Rimac, I called upon him, and humbly acknowledged all the faults of my past life, and the vain thoughts, in particular, which had puffed me up on my subduing the magician, heartily repenting of and begging pardon for my foolishness, I implored deliverance. Hardly had I offered up my petitions, but I felt my devourer in great agitation; soon after, heard several strokes beneath me, and, to my inexpressible joy, perceived an opening, which admitted the light of the sun. I scrambled towards this, and putting my head out, saw the fish was on dry land, and encompassed by many people, who were cutting him up. They perceived, dragged me out, and on my request, very humanely gave me wherewithal to satisfy my craving appetite. I found all the blotches which had covered my body gone, and no marks of them left; which greatly added to the joy I felt from my deliverance. These I found were fishermen, living on the coast of Papapacatwaw. They congratulated me on my escape, and furnished me with every thing necessary for my support. I enquired of them, if they could tell where lay the Isle of Uxi; but they had never heard mention made of that island; but told me, that, coasting all the shore, they had, in clear days, often seen land at a vast distance, laying opposite to the other side of the mountains, which they pointed to, and some days journeys from thence towards the quarter in which the sun set. I thanked them for their humanity and information; resolving to cross those mountains,



tains, which when they understood, they gave me some dried roots, which they carried in their canoes, and were of such virtue, that a pound weight would satisfy a man's appetite for ten days, prevent thirst, and keep up his spirits: besides, they presented me with a lance and a flint ax. I travelled with great cheerfulness towards the mountains, and reached the foot of them the seventh day; I climbed the three following, and found the cold gradually increased the higher I went, till the fifth day, when it was so very piercing, that I feared I should not be able to undergo it: but having gained the summit, and beginning to descend on the contrary side, in a few hours I was sensible of an alteration; the sharpness of the cold somewhat abated, and the next day I found it greatly moderated. The third after I had gained this side of the mountain, I reached the bottom, from which a pleasant savannah well watered, extended as far as the sight could reach, and I observed another chain of high mountains. I being pretty much fatigued, laid me down under a cedar, where I slept during the heat of the day; in the evening I came upon the bank of a river, and followed it's course till the light failed me, surprised that so fine a country should be uninhabited. I mounted a tree, on which I passed the night, having met with nothing all day that was eatable, and my provisions spent, I began to fear perishing with hunger: however, I resolved to follow the current, in hopes of it's leading me to some village, and was near spent with want and fatigue, when Rimac sent you to my relief. I had indeed, sufficient provision for many more days, but my bag in which I carried it breaking, I lost the greatest part of my day's roots before I perceived the misfortune. Patamatowo here cried—'How great is the power, and how inscrutable are the ways of Rimac!—And look ye,' continued he, pointing to the mouth of his cave, 'how just are his punishments!' We looked out, and saw about a score of baboons laden with plantains, driven forward by one of a much larger size. 'This,' said Patamatowo, 'I have often observed, and have watched both the slaves and their drivers, who keep them to hard labour; and when any of them flag, they tear him to pieces and feast

upon him. They also employ these in hunting down others, who inhabit the woods and savannahs; and if at any time they return without bringing prey of their own species, they themselves are destined to fill the hungry maws of the courtiers; who themselves often serve for a meal to Tygrinchinqui, who revenges, by his cruelty, the cause of Prince Houac.' Casqui entreated me to give him an account of what had happened to me since I left Hattun Rucana, and having gratified his curiosity, Patamatowo said to him—'You know in that decisive battle, which deprived the prince of his crown and liberty, the people of the provinces of Havari and Cumata lost the flower of their youth in the cause of their prince, which neither solicitations nor power could induce them to renounce. You must also remember, that I was lieutenant to our monarch at different times, in both these provinces, and did not behave in a manner to make them my enemies. Let us then retire amongst these brave and loyal people, where we shall meet with an honourable reception. All affairs are still carried on in the name of Houac, though the countries now united for their common safety, are governed by a council of state, which by accident, having discovered my retreat, by the means of some hunters who knew me, sent a deputation to invite me to take upon me the government for the prince; I, tired with the world, civilly desired to be left to my solitude: but, as it is possible our monarch may be still living, notwithstanding the information you have had, which may be false, or if true, may have escaped the danger he was exposed to; and, as it may be for his service, I will accompany and recommend you to these people, that you may keep them steady in their loyalty; but insist upon your accepting the government, as lieutenant, if it is offered you, promising to assist you with my advice.' This was, after some contest, agreed upon. They would have me accompany them; but as I was satisfied you could not probably be found among those people, I told them I was resolved to continue my search of you and the queen; for, though I had no reason to ground my opinion that you were still among the living, yet, what I heard from Casqui could not induce me to believe  
you

you were dead: wherefore, perceiving it vain to solicit me, they set forward on their intended journey, leaving me in possession of the cave of Patamatowo, where I determined to stay some days, to dry me provisions for my future wanderings. One morning as I sat at the mouth of the cave, a troop of baboons came and stood gazing on me, at some little distance; and after a small space of time, one of them advanced before the rest, and bowing his head to the ground, put dust upon it; then rising, came somewhat nearer, and did the same; after which he came close to me, and laying his forehead a third time to the ground, took my foot in his fore-paw, and placed it on his neck. Knowing these to have been formerly men, I was not so much surprized as otherwise I should have been, but expected with patience the sequel of this humiliation; and putting forth my hand, lifted him up: upon doing of which the rest of the troops advanced in the same humble manner. After this, he who first advanced made a sign to me with his paw to follow him, which I did, attended by the others, about five hundred in number, as I then computed and afterwards found. My guide led me to a spot of sand, where he and the rest began to dig with their fore-paws, and in an hour's space made a deep hole, and discovered the top of a large building; the roof of which they pulled to pieces; and I saw plainly, that this house was a magazine of lances, bows, and other weapons of war, with which it was filled. On the top of these lay a wand, which the baboons made intelligible signs to me to take. I had no sooner grasped it but a gentle wind arose, which carried off all the sand encompassing this magazine, and gave a free passage into a spacious hall. On each hand, the arms were piled on racks one over another in so artful a manner, that a man might with ease mount from rack to rack, and by the interstices go to the racks of different arms.

#### H O U R LXXVII.

**T**HE baboons now crouding round me, my guide made signs to me to wave the wand over them, they prostrating themselves on the earth; I had no sooner done this, but their brute form changed, and they arose compleat men.

My guide then advanced, and returned me thanks in the name of all. I asked him how he came by the knowledge of this wand, and it's virtue? He answered, that being daily in danger of being devoured by the king or his courtiers, and harrassed with the slavish life he led, he sought the thickest of the woods to hide himself from their tyranny. Here lamenting the crime which had inflicted so heavy a curse on myself and the whole nation, begging mercy of Rimac, I heard a voice, which seemed to proceed from the bowl of a cotton-tree, and uttered these words:

“ Whene’er the prince’s trusty friend,  
“ Great Rimac’s Providence shall send,  
“ By means surprizing to this coast,  
“ You’ll then regain the form you’ve lost;  
“ If with your strong laborious hands,  
“ You can remove the shifting sands,  
“ Which do the wand of fate conceal,  
“ And can alone your sorrows heal.”

“ This wand, it is well known to the whole nation, was laid up in the magazine of arms by a magician; who said, that whenever the people were in the utmost extremity, the waving this wand by a stranger who should arise from the deep, would give an immediate remedy to the evils with which they were afflicted. When our crimes brought upon us the severe punishment of our transformation, of which I heard Patamatowo give you an account, a sudden earthquake swallowed up all the villages, and every habitation and building in Nanasca; the temples not being privileged in this general desolation. As I was one day chased by a hunting courtier, whom I escaped by being the swifter of the two, I here proposed myself the following night; and dreaming that I lay upon the enchanting wand, I marked the place, and have often, with others, removed the sands: but they rolling back as fast as we cleared them away, made all our endeavours fruitless, and convinced me, that on this place the magazine had stood. After I had heard the voice from the cotton-tree, I returned to my companions in affliction, and hoping the time of our deliverance was at hand, I daily watched the sea-coast, and at length, to my unspeakable joy, saw you rise out of the ocean and land. Though we were deprived of speech, we could by gestures communicate our thoughts,



thoughts, and I imparted to these present the hopes I had reason to entertain: and though the sight of Patamatowo impressed on us all the greatest dread, yet I ventured to conceal myself near his cave; and hearing the story of your adventures, and your refusal to go with him and Casqui, I ventured, when I thought they were too far gone to return, to implore your assistance by my gestures. Accordingly I assembled these, that we might in a body be able to resist the violence of the courtiers; who seeing us appear, and dread- ing our numbers, have taken their flight to the thick woods.' I ordered every man to arm himself. Taking my wand in my hand, we marched all over the province of Nanafca, and restored all the inhabitants to human shape, excepting the monarch and the former great men, whom we could not discover, though I caused the strictest search to be made. I chose among the men of the best sense a council to govern in your name, and set the people to the erecting of temples, before I would permit them to raise houses for themselves; and binding them under an oath to finish the holy edifices ere they provided their own habitations, I resolved to pursue my enquiry after you and the queen. The day I intended to set forward I assembled the people in the great savannah, exhorting them to piety towards Rimac, loyalty to you, and unanimity among themselves: after which I acquainted them with my resolution, and gave the wand into the care of the council, to be laid up in the temple that should be first finished. Hardly had I made an end, when the great bird, which brought me hither, to our great terror, appeared, carrying the elephant which you saw him devour. He stooped, and taking me up, went off with incredible swiftness, continuing his flight till he landed me, by the will of Providence, in this place, and put an end to my search after you, by blessing my eyes with your presence. Rimac, whose mercy I have experienced so often, and who so lately, by supernatural power, saved me from the devouring bird, will, I don't doubt, put an end, in his own good time, to all our afflictions. But where, my dear prince, is the lovely queen? or if Casqui was rightly informed, how did you escape the danger of the deep, at so great a distance from shore?—'I will satisfy your curiosity,' replied Houac,

by giving you a full account of all that has happened since you last saw me.' Which having done, he asked Pahama how far he thought the continent lay distant from the island in which they then were, and learned that they might reach it in the space of a natural day, had they a canoe: but as they had no tools, how was it possible for them to make one? Pahama advised the searching along the coast, perchance they might see some tree thrown down by the wind, and in such case they might hollow it with fire and put to sea. Fire they could procure by the rubbing together two dry sticks. Houac agreed to this; and as they were travelling over the sands, Pahama espied something floating on the water, driven by a small gale towards the shore; which, on its nearer approach, Prince Houac knew was his canoe; this at length blown on the coast raised their hopes, and gave them unspeakable joy. 'See,' said Pahama, 'Rimac remembers mercy even in his wrath.' They laded it with what provisions they thought necessary for their voyage, which Prince Houac had brought on shore, and passing that night on the island, the next morning by break of day they put to sea, imploring protection from the great deity. They paddled all that day, and towards night had the reviving sight of the continent; on which they landed the noon following, and were immediately encompassed with guards, who enquired whence they were, and what was their business. Having answered these queries, the commanding officer, with great civility, told them, that they were welcome to the kingdom of Phantoma; that he was assured they would be graciously and joyfully received at court, their queen being descended, on the mother's side, from the King of Nanafca; that she was at this time threatened with a war by the King of Volunfca, who had asked her in marriage: which request being denied him, as he is of the race of the giants, he had sworn to lay the kingdom waste, and take her by force. This was the reason why the confines were guarded, and that all strangers were strictly examined.

## H O U R LXXVIII.

THEY were allotted a guide to court, which, after a journey of four days, through a pleasant, fruitful,

well-inhabited, but ill-cultivated country, they reached. The night before they arrived, they lodged at the house of the governor of that province, a lord of great age, but of a robust constitution, who had been a successful general under the two preceding princes, and lately guardian of the queen and kingdom. He had great experience, and was esteemed one of the wisest of the council while he sat there; but alledging his great age rendered him incapable of business, he retired to his government. They were received by this nobleman with great honour; Prince Houac, who had learned his character from the officer, their guide, as they were at supper, asked him the reason why so fruitful a country, abounding with inhabitants, lay in a manner waste. 'Prince,' answered Mataquawac, that was the general's name, 'luxury is the bane of all states; the nobility are easily induced to follow the examples of the sovereign, and the common people ape the court. During the reign of Capafamacha, grandfather to Phasima, our present sovereign, affairs wore a different face; plenty was diffused throughout the country, of which scarce was there a spot not employed in pasturage, or loaded with corn for man and beast: we were feared and respected by our neighbouring states, which on any disputes always referred themselves to our prince as umpire, who never failed deciding according to strict justice. His sentence was definitive; for the discontented party was satisfied he had both power and resolution to see it executed. This prince coming young to the throne, made the Danasquis and Norsiquaws imagine they had now a fair opportunity to enlarge their dominions, by frightening those of our monarch; and accordingly, in confederacy, they made an irruption into his territories; but they found themselves out in their account. Our young sovereign, on the first news of this invasion, ordered immediately levies to be made; and taking with him the troops he had on foot, commanded the others to be sent after him with all possible expedition, and marched to prevent the farther progress of the enemy: who, despising both his youth and the smallness of his numbers, were more intent on ravaging the country, than on their own safety;

not imagining he would dare to attack an army five times more numerous than his own, which was also greatly fatigued with long marches; but Capafamacha, stung by the injustice of this war, which was made on him without any previous declaration, when he came within sight of the enemy, marched directly up and attacked them with such impetuosity, that they, who expected nothing like an onset by harassed forces, and were therefore not prepared to receive them, could not stand the shock. Their foremost, and but half-formed ranks, gave way, and at length turned their backs. The generals of the enemy endeavoured by their diligence and bravery to make amends for this neglect; but there are no small oversights in war: the terror which our troops struck in those the generals were endeavouring to form and bring up to check our career, rendered all their endeavours fruitless, and we obtained a compleat and easy victory; in which both the commanding officers of our enemy fell fighting with distinguished bravery. The slain of the invaders exceeded the number of our army; and we took so many prisoners, that upon a division of them, every one of our men had a slave to carry his provisions for him. Were I to tell you how our young monarch behaved, I should scarcely find credit with you. Wherever the greatest resistance was made, thither he flew with surprizing intrepidity; and the victory, next to Rimac, ought justly to be attributed to his bravery and conduct; for his presence and example animated his men to such a degree, that nothing could long make head against them. Those who escaped from the battle, never thought of rallying, to try their fortune a second time; though they might have gathered among these scattered troops double our number; which had they done and renewed the fight, considering how fatigued our men were, they in all probability had snatched the victory out of our hands. Our monarch, young as he was, considered this; and therefore stopping the pursuit, drew his men together in good order, ready to receive the enemy, having secured the prisoners and set a guard over them; but night approaching, and no enemies appearing, he set

centinels,



centinels, and ordered his men to refresh themselves and take their repose, but to have every man his arms by his side. He himself walked the rounds all night, and took care to have the centinels relieved.

At break of day he sent out scouts, who returning by noon, with account that the enemy was fled, and no appearance of them any where, he gave publick thanks to Rimac, and took his rest till evening. We encamped on the field of battle four days, when a large body of new levies joined us, with an account that an equal number was but a day's march behind, and that the news of our victory had given such a spirit to the people, that they came in by shoals; and the king might expect, in a few days, a powerful army. On this news, a council of war was held, in which Capafamacha declared his intention to invade the invaders. Most of the council advised his staying, till he had received all the levies that were marching to join him; but he determined to wait for the first body only, as he apprehended the delay might give them sufficient time to recover from the terror they were in by the loss of their army. Accordingly, on the arrival of the second body of troops, we marched into the enemy's country, and for eight days laid waste all the villages, which were deserted on our approach, and drove off innumerable herds of cattle: but our scouts bringing us news, that the enemy with a superior army were marching to meet us, it was resolved in a council, to send off our booty to the confines of Phantoma, and to follow them a day's march; which would bring us to a narrow tongue of land, having on the right an inaccessible mountain, with an impracticable swamp on the left, and there to wait the coming up of the enemy. The evening of that day in which we drew back towards Phantoma, the rear of our army perceived the van of the enemy; wherefore it was judged proper to continue our march all night, that we might gain the proposed ground, which would prevent our army being surrounded by their numbers. We reached this tongue of land by break of day; and learning from our scouts that the enemy had rested the night, our army reposed all day. In the evening, our

out-centinels discovered the enemy; but they did not think fit to attack us that night, finding we were ready to receive them. The next morning by break of day, they marched up in good order, and gave us so violent a charge, that our van gave back; which the king perceiving, flew thither, and exposed himself to the greatest dangers. In a word, the fight was bloody and obstinate, and had continued longer had not the night parted us. Our loss was considerable, but that of the enemy much greater; they notwithstanding renewed the fight next morning with the same vigour.

## H O U R LXXIX.

IT is certain our men did all that could be expected; but fresh troops still supplying those which fell in the ranks of the enemy, we began to give way, when the king's uncle appearing at the head of some new levies, gave us fresh courage, and intimidated the allies; who could not bear the fury with which our succours rushed in upon them; and the death of the King of Danaquis, who commanded the enemy's army, and fell by the hand of the king's uncle, struck them with such a damp, and put them into so great confusion, that they were after his fall easily routed. It is certain, that prince was one of the most experienced and bravest captains of the age. We pursued our victory, and killed a great number of the fugitives. After this defeat, the Danaquis, who had lost the flower of their youth in these two battles, could raise no number of men to check the rapidity of our conquests; and the two brothers of the late king disputing the succession, neglected the publick for their private good, and thus gave our monarch an opportunity to put an end to their contest, by subduing the whole kingdom to himself, which he ran over in less than twelve moons. The Norisquaws, who first engaged them in this unjust war, not only refused them succours, but by ambassadors sued to Capafamacha for peace; which, however, they could not obtain, but by their king offering himself a vassal to the throne of Phantoma, and paying a large tribute as such, amount-

ing to a thousand head of \* piccáree, with five hundred head of black cattle every moon, and beside yielding to admit garrisons of our troops, to be maintained at the expence of the Norisquaws, in all their towns. The time of peace gave our young prince an opportunity to examine into the state of affairs at home; and discovering, that by the neglect and indolence of his father, who had left every thing to a minister's care, justice was become venal, he put to death all who in the pretended administration of it had thrown a slur on royalty by their corruption or violence. After which, he settled in every province a council, to which those who thought themselves aggrieved might appeal; and if they there met with delay or partiality, they might appeal to the grand council where he himself presided. These provincial councils, every moon, sent to the grand council an account of what had passed, and expected from thence a ratification of their determinations. He then turned his thoughts to the procuring plenty, as well as peace and impartial justice, to his people. He first allotted parcels of land to his soldiers, whom he restrained to the planting of corn, as exercise he knew contributed to their health, and would enure them to the toils of long marches; these paid no consideration for their lands: the rest of his country he parcelled out, allowing to every family four times the quantity of land that would suffice for their maintenance, in consideration that they would multiply; these were to pay a tenth part of the product toward the magazines which he erected in proper places through every province, that his army on any emergency might be readily and plentifully supplied; and a tenth more for the support of his own family. To his courtiers he parcelled out a quantity in proportion to their family and number of slaves, allowing for every slave four times what would maintain them, and ten times as much for every wife and child of their own. In consideration, that these courtiers were to be about his person, attend his councils, administer justice to the people, and command his troops, they paid only one tenth of the product of their lands

to the magazines, and nothing to the king. He then divided all his people into small bodies; every ten families had a captain, and every ten of these a superior captain, who commanded over the hundred; and every ten of these hundreds had a commander to direct the thousand, and these were accountable and under the direction of the governor of the province, as their inferior officers were to them. Every moon the captain of ten exercised his men, in throwing the lance and drawing the bow. Every three moons the captain of an hundred exercised his hundred. Every six moons the same was observed by the commander of a thousand; and every twelve moons the governor reviewed all the province, made them go through their exercise, and sent an account to court of the number of able men his province afforded, fit to carry arms. Thus the whole kingdom was a standing army. Every six moons the garrisons on the confines, and in the towns of the Norisquaws, were changed, and the soldiers sent to enjoy the fruits of their toil with their families. As our country affords a silk-cotton which can be wrought as the other, and no province whatever has this silk-cotton, the king prohibited its exportation unmanufactured; by which, both the children and ancient people had full employment; and this traffick soon filled the savannah with all sorts of cattle, brought into the country in exchange for the hammocks, sashes, and mantles of silk-cotton. Peace, plenty, and justice, reigned with our sovereign, who was beloved at home and feared abroad. This scene of happiness changed at his death, which happened seven years after his accession to the throne, lamented by the whole nation. Never prince had a greater love for his people, or was more jealous of their glory. He was succeeded by his son, under the care of the council; among whom, some ambitious and self-interested men who had carefully thrown a cloak over their vices in the former reign, laid hold on the minority of the prince to gratify their predominant passions, at the expence of their country's happiness, which they involved in the greatest troubles. Justice and industry



were neglected, and the suffering our silk-cotton to be exported, was soon followed by idleness and poverty. The garrisons were not changed as usual; neither were the tithes of corn paid to the publick magazines, but diverted by another canal to their own, and no discipline was kept up. Thus the soldiers in the conquered countries, and on the confines, being neglected, either deserted to their families, or plundered the people; which bred discontent at home, and gave the Norisquaws an opportunity to throw off the yoke: which they not only did under the command of a gallant commander, but even enlarged their territories at our expence; and if that brave man who freed his own country, had not resigned his command to, and placed the right heir on the throne of Norisquaw; or had the prince he raised known his own interest, and continued him at the head of his troops; I fear we had, in our turn, soon become tributary to our vassals; but his jealousy of that royal and disinterested subject proved our safeguard. A peace was concluded; our council gave up all pretensions of our kings to the sovereignty of Norisquaw, and settled the confines of the different kingdoms; by which a large province belonging to us was transferred to them. As I could not patiently bear to see our trade, our territories, and our reputation lost, and advised rather to endeavour the recovering by force of arms the country of Norisquaw, than give away part of our own by treaties, I was, by a majority, expelled the council. When the king took the reins of government into his hands, I had means to inform him thoroughly of the state of his affairs, to which I found him an entire stranger. He had been bred up in a very effeminate manner, and the study of those about him was more to indulge his passions than to push his interest, or regard his glory. I laid before him the glorious actions of his father; and by the disadvantageous comparison I made between the two reigns, as he was a prince of great personal courage, fired with emulation, he raised an army, and then sent to demand the restitution of the province given up to the Norisquaws, the payment of the arrears, and the continuation of the tribute: alledging,

that the treaty made when he was a child, could not, in justice, be deemed valid. Tutomaca, king of the Norisquaws, returned as haughty an answer, and sent a formidable army against us, under the command of the general to whom he owed the freedom of his country; who, notwithstanding his great age, marched with such expedition, that he met me on my arrival on the confines. The king had honoured me with the command of the army, composed of all the veterans I could get together, and new levies. We soon came to a battle, in which my levies, though mixed among my old soldiers, were instantly routed, and could never be brought to rally. I endeavoured to animate those who stood their ground, with reminding them of their former actions, and telling them the desertion of so many cowards was no loss, but an advantage, as they could claim no share of the victory, which would redound to their sole honour. I found such a resolution among them, such alacrity and vigour, that with a handful of men, not above the third part of my army, we maintained the fight till evening; when the general of the army being taken prisoner by an excess of courage, they began to give way, and in a little time yielded us a victory, which regained the whole province, formerly lost by negociation.

## H O U R LXXX.

I Immediately dispatched a courier to the king with an account of the success of his arms, which could scarcely meet with credit; the fugitives who deserted us, having every where proclaimed a total defeat of our army, and struck a terror through the country, with the advancing of a victorious enemy. The general of the enemy I sent to court, where he was received with particular honours, and treated in a manner equal to his character. I took care, after this battle, to garrison my army in our old boundaries; and returning to court, advised our monarch to improve the advantage he had obtained, by entering the enemy's country with a powerful army; but I found him relapsed into his pleasures, given up to the advice of his youthful companions

panions and designing courtiers, wherefore I was not listened to; but a truce for twelve moons was agreed upon, as proposed by Humafatta, the captive general, who was thereupon released and sent home, contrary to my sentiments; for I was satisfied the observations this politick old soldier had made at our court he would improve to our damage. During this truce, an epidemical disease thinned the garrisons on the frontiers, which not being supplied, notwithstanding my many remonstrances, Humafatta, with a strong army, at the expiration of the twelve moons, not only regained what he had lost by the former battle, but, before an army could be raised to make head against him, he added another province to his conquests, and threatened the metropolis. Our forces at length took the field, and the command was again given to me. I met the enemy, and had the mortification to see my men desert me, and myself in the hands of the Norisquaws at the very first onset. The general returned the civilities I had shewn him, and sent me to his court with such encomiums as I could not merit, and such recommendations as spoke his own very great. I was received, as he desired, with honour, and had the metropolis assigned me for a prison. As Tutomaca often sent for me, I had opportunities to meditate a peace. First, a suspension of arms; which was followed by an interview of the two monarchs on the frontiers, where Tutomaca asked our king's sister for his consort, which was readily assented to, and the peace concluded upon hard terms for us, but such as we were obliged to agree to. The two conquered provinces the Norisquaws were to keep, and our kings to give up all pretensions to the sovereignty of that kingdom. I was, in consequence of this treaty, set at liberty; which I enjoyed no longer than while I was upon the road to our frontiers, when I was, by order from court, taken into custody, taxed as the source of our misfortunes, tried for my life, and condemned to die. A friend of mine, who knew my integrity, hastened to court, to remonstrate to the king the injustice of this procedure in my judge, and to intercede for my life. Phata-macowow, our king, asked him if he was

in his senses? My friend seeing his surprise, told him, that by orders from him I was seized, condemned, and was the next day to be put to death, though, through his special grace, the execution was to be private. The king declared his ignorance of this procedure, and irritated with his authority being usurped, ordered my friend to take a party of his guards, and bring me and my judges immediately to his presence. This order was executed as soon as given; I was restored to my liberty, and my judges condemned to die the death they had prepared for me; but by my intercession the king changed this punishment to that of imprisonment for life: I could not prevail on him to be satisfied with only banishing them from court. I endeavoured to engage the king to look into the state of his affairs, which were, as you have heard, in a deplorable condition; but I perceived he too greatly apprehended the fatigue of redressing what was wrong, which he commanded me to undertake, promising to support me with his authority. I was not insensible of the arduous task enjoined me; but the love of my country prevailing over all other considerations, I cheerfully submitted to the administration of the government. As this high post on the one hand caused me a number of enviers, so the rigour I was obliged to proceed with raised me, on the other, a shoal of enemies. The king was perpetually made uneasy against me; but as he did not want discernment, and was resolute to have me proceed in the method I had begun and he approved, all the arts employed to ruin me proved ineffectual. Industry began to revive among the common people; the publick magazines were daily supplied; justice ran in a pure channel, and the glorious reign of Capacamacha seemed to revive in his son, when he was suddenly snatched away, and left our present queen an infant. This prince had no faults, but his aversion to business and love of pleasure; but, indeed, of what greater can a sovereign be guilty? since these are as productive of miseries on his people, as even tyranny: which was but too plainly evinced, by the calamities brought upon our unhappy country, which sprang from the love of pleasure



sure in Phatamacowow; for no sooner did the news of the king's death reach the court of Norisquaw, but Tutomaca, in right of his queen, demanded the guardianship of our infant sovereign and of the kingdom: to support which pretension, he entered our frontiers with a potent army. Phatamacowow had named me protector of both, till his daughter should attain to years of maturity; and I, in discharge of my trust, raised sufficient forces to make head against the King of the Norisquaws: but the faction which my enviers spirited up against me, joined the interest of Tutomaca, and raised all possible obstacles to whatever I undertook; they had rather have seen their country subjected to a foreign yoke, than preserved by me. This prevented my improving what advantages I gained, and often proved the loss of my making many; for my designs were always betrayed. The war continued with different success, till our country was in a manner laid waste, and the Norisquaws so exhausted of men, and in such distress for provisions, as they wanted hands to till the grounds, that they were glad to make a peace, by giving back the two provinces they had possessed within our boundaries. This is the reason you see so much fine land so poorly cultivated, the miseries of a long and bloody war require time to recover from. The queen, when she came to years of maturity, received the government from me into her own hands, and has graciously permitted me to enjoy some respite from my labour in my old age. Prince Houac enquired what was the character of the King of Volunscas, what the general apprehended would be the effect of his menaces? Phampataborac, King of Volunscas, answered Mataquawac, commands a mighty kingdom. He is himself of the race of the giants, and of an enormous size, which however does not render him so terrible as his magick arts, being accounted one of the greatest magicians upon earth, commanding all the elements, except fire, which he endeavours to conciliate by sacrificing to, and in that element, all the prisoners he takes in war. He has carried away a number of beauties, whom he keeps in his palace, and endeavours by all the submissive arts to

allure to his embraces; for he knows by prediction, that should he employ force, and violate the chastity of any one, he would, from that instant, lose all his supernatural power. As to the effect of his menaces, no doubt it will be a war; which I apprehend will be greatly to our disadvantage, as the long one with the Norisquaws was no sooner terminated, but our people relapsed into the indolence of the former reign, imitating the nobility, who had again given into luxury; which, indeed, was the chief reason for my quitting the court. The queen herself is of an amiable temper, and very pious; but has too much of her father's indolence to apply to business, though she has a fine genius. — 'Excuse me,' said Pahama, 'if I take the liberty to say, that I fear resentment has overcome that generous concern for your country, which gave so great a lustre to the former part of your life; or you certainly would not, by quitting the court at a time you must be conscious the publick good required your vigilance, deprive your sovereign, consequently the whole nation, of the advantages of your counsel.' — 'Sir,' replied the general, 'could I be serviceable to my queen and country, I could despise all calumny, and overlook insults, for I have ever esteemed resentment below a man of a truly generous spirit; who will never be uneasy at what the world either thinks or says, while he is conscious that he does what is consonant with a man of honour. Revenge, I thank the great Rimac, is a meanness I am a stranger to; and I have ever thought it more noble to forgive than to revenge an injury: but the queen is encompassed by some favourite ladies, who guide her, and are themselves guided by their avarice. These ladies fill the council with, and dispose of posts to, those who can make them the most valuable presents, not those who have the most merit; for these latter are above giving or receiving bribes. I apprehend the consequences will be very dreadful; as our councils are governed by men without experience, and our army commanded by officers who never saw an enemy, and have been brought up in an effeminate manner.'

## H O U R LXXXI.

**T**HE next day Prince Houac and Pahama arrived at court; where the queen, who had advice of their arrival in her country, and was informed of their quality, received them with great honours.

The second day after their arrival, the queen desired to hear their adventures. Pahama began the relation of what had happened to him; and the next day Prince Houac gratified her curiosity, by giving a detail of his life. He had no sooner ended, than the queen, with pleasure in her eyes, told him, that she hoped Rimac would soon put an end to his sufferings; for she could assure him, that the beautiful queen of Hattun Rucana was at the palace of Phampataborac, who had usurped her dominions, and in them resided, as they bordered upon his own; and that as they had an equal interest in the destruction of that tyrant, she hoped he would take upon him the command of her army, which she offered him, to prevent the design of the giant, by entering his kingdom, and thus recover his consort, who had been so unjustly ravished from him. He answered, that he should with pleasure accept the command she generously offered him, but feared, should he do it, he would incur the displeasure of Rimac, and bring his anger upon her kingdom, as he was not permitted to expect assistance from any power on earth, in the air or water; and knew all endeavours to recover the queen from captivity, and her kingdom from the usurper, would be vain, till he was possessed of the lance of the prophet Huamachu and the talismans: 'Permit me therefore to go to Hattun Rucana; I will leave with you Pahama, whose advice may be of service to your affairs, and his courage animate your troops.' The queen thankfully acknowledged the favour, and was convinced by what the prince said, that he with reason declined the offer. Pahama pressed to keep him company; but when Houac said it was possible the satisfaction he found in having Pahama for a companion was displeasing to Rimac, who was resolved that he should by fatigue and penitence expiate his fault, he consented to stay with Phasima, and suffer Prince Houac to depart alone. I shall here (said the select virgin) leave

that royal wanderer a while, and prosecute the story of Pahama and Phasima, as it also answers my first view, and your majesty's command, of bringing your examples of heroick resignation to the will of the great Deity.

Phasima introduced Pahama into her council, where he proposed the enlisting all the veterans who had been discharged to give place to young men, that made a handsome figure in a review; and advised the giving the command of the army to Mataquawac; but he met with a strenuous opposition: it was alledged, that the veterans discharged were not able to undergo the fatigue of a campaign; that it would be making them an ill return for their past service, to bring them into the field, to be cut to pieces, in an age which had weakened them too much to be able to defend themselves; that Mataquawac was also far advanced in years, which had greatly impaired his judgment, and that he was too rigid in his discipline. This did not discourage Pahama, who privately prevailed on the queen to send to Mataquawac orders to levy, with all possible secrecy, what veterans he could, and to keep them as a corps de reserve. These orders Pahama himself carried to the old general, and concerted measures with him. News was soon after brought, that the enemy was within sight of the borders, in full march with a powerful army. The terror with which this news struck the young officers is hardly to be credited; however, they were obliged to march. The two armies met; that of Phasima could not stand the shock of the first onset, but were put to a shameful flight, which was observed with some sort of pleasure by the veterans, headed by Mataquawac and Pahama, who followed the army at a small distance. The two generals, with about a thousand men only, having posted themselves in a thick forest, whence they could see and not be seen, as soon as they perceived the rout, dispatched a messenger to bring up the rest of the veterans, to join them in a large savannah, which they themselves had passed, and to which they marched back; here they drew up, forced the flying troops to return upon the enemy that pursued them, or meet an equal danger from their countrymen. They were now compelled to fight, or die by the sword of the veterans, in endeavouring to avoid that of the Voluscans, who were not a little surprized and intimidated to see



see a fresh army prepared to snatch the victory out of their hands. In a word, the fight was renewed, and the Voluscan army cut to pieces, with little more loss on the queen's side than of those who were slain in the pursuit when they first took to flight. The queen herself was in the centre of the veterans, and witness of all that had passed. Publick thanksgivings were that night made for the victory, and scouts were sent out to discover if the enemy had any corps de reserve. The next morning they returned with news, that the enemies slain in the battle were all returned to life, and ranging in order for a new engagement. 'This,' said Mataquawac, 'is the effect of magic, for which Phampataborac is famous; however, as yesterday proved the Voluscans not invincible, let us not lose courage, which we stand most in need of in the greatest difficulties.' He set his troops in order, and placing his veterans in the front, marched to, attacked, and totally defeated this army raised from the dead; gave quarters to none, and burnt the dead bodies, which prevented their being again animated. After this the queen called a court-martial, which broke some officers who had not performed their duty, and put others to death: then by Mataquawac's advice, the ablest-bodied men were incorporated with the veterans, all the officers chosen from among that corps, and preferred according to their merit. Phampataborac, who though at that time in Hattun Rucana, saw, by the help of a magical mirror, all that passed, and, enraged at the loss of his army, swore to put Phasima to death, with her new counsellor Pahama, and to lay waste her kingdom: to this end, he raised in Volunica a much greater army than the first, and with all possible expedition entered the kingdom of Phantoma, where he fought several battles with different success; but in the last he gained so compleat a victory, that the queen and Pahama were obliged to the night for their escape; the brave Mataquawac was slain, few of his troops survived the battle, and Phampataborac meeting with no further resistance, reduced the whole kingdom of Phantoma to his obedience. I shall (said the select virgin) leave Phampataborac to settle his new conquest, and follow the queen and Pahama. The night after the loss of the battle, which deprived her of her kingdom, she and Pahama passed in a thick wood, ap-

prehending to be discovered by some of the enemy's troops. The next morning they proceeded in a way different from what they judged Phampataborac would take with his army, and chanced to light on a large cavity in a rock, which they entered to repose themselves. Here the queen vented herself in a shower of tears; but Pahama endeavoured to comfort her, by representing that the same power which had reduced her to this low ebb of fortune, could again lift her up; and that the only method she could take to obtain favour from, was to resign to Providence. 'Life,' said he, 'is no more than a dream; look back upon the lustre of your former days, and what is it more than a story that is told? Who knows how long this present condition, whether elevated or depressed, will continue? The present moment we can only call our own; we have no certainty that we shall be allowed another; therefore let us not embitter the time we have, by anticipating evils which we may not live to experience, or which may possibly be no more than the infants of our own brain. Let us rather, by resigning to the will of Rimac, and reposing a confidence in his mercy, comfort ourselves with the hopes that he will support us under afflictions, and in his own good time deliver us from their oppressive weight. What can a contrary conduct avail us? Repining will only make us more miserable; but submission and a just grounded hope, will alleviate our misfortunes, which gives a more noble opportunity of shewing a true greatness of soul than affluence in an uninterrupted prosperity.'

'You mistake,' said the queen, 'the cause of my grief; which is not for the loss of my kingdom, and the wretched condition that I am reduced to, but it proceeds from my knowledge of the great Rimac's justice, which would never have loaded me with these afflictions, had I not, by my misconduct, drawn them on myself. The great deity placed me at the head of a powerful people, to administer justice, to protect the innocent and oppressed, and to revenge their injuries; to encourage virtue, restrain all immorality, and see that the gods were conciliated by due worship and sacrifice: but I have been remiss in my duty, to which my deplorable circumstances have now, too late, opened my eyes. I studied only

a F my

‘ my own ease and pleasure, and left the performance of the duties incumbent on me to others; seeing with their eyes, and hearing by their ears.’ Here a flood of tears which burst forth afresh, stopped her speech.

‘ Phasima,’ replied Pahama, ‘ the knowledge of a distemper is the first step to a cure: if you are conscious that your misconduct has brought upon you your present evils, endeavour to reconcile the Deity by submitting with resignation. Bear your infliction with patience; repent your errors with sincerity, implore the mercy of Rimac with humility, resolve to amend your errors with steadfastness, and hope in Rimac’s compassion, and with confidence of one day experiencing his goodness, who is more ready to forgive than we are to implore pardon.’ He then desired the queen to recommend herself to the protection of Rimac, and compose herself to rest, while he went to seek some provision. At going out of this cave, he broke down some boughs, which he scattered as he went, that he might have a direction for his return. The wood afforded plenty of wholesome fruits, and fallow-deer; and as he had his bow and lance with him, he shot a fawn not far from the mouth of the cave; which, having made a fire, he cut up and dressed in the best manner he could, roasted some plantains, spread some plantain-leaves to eat upon, and with his lance brought down some cocoa-nuts, which were full of milk. Having prepared every thing in this order, he went to see if Phasima still slept, but she was just awakened, and asked him with some eagerness if he had got any provisions, for she found herself pressed with hunger: when she saw the preparation made, with joy in her countenance, she said—‘ How visible, O Pahama, how visible is the providential goodness of Rimac!’ And having satisfied her appetite, she declared, that it was the only meal she had ever made which could properly be called a feast: ‘ But,’ said she, ‘ are we destined to stay here in the wild forest? How shall we extricate ourselves from it, and what course shall we take? Where can we find refuge?’—‘ Princess,’ replied Pahama, ‘ let us trust to that Providence who has this day provided for us; but at the same time let us remember, that he requires we should act with prudence. It is possible that the troops of

Phampataborac are now searching after us; wherefore, as this cave is commodious, and I do not apprehend wanting necessary support, I am of opinion, that we should stay here, till we may reasonably judge that the pursuit is over.’ The queen acquiesced in the reasonableness of his advice, and he endeavoured to make her pass the time with the least anxiety possible, by providing for her ease and support. He gathered moss, and made her a tolerable easy bed at the farther end of the cave, and another for himself in a hollow near the entrance. He constantly entertained her with diverting stories, at such times as his hunting did not employ him. Thus they passed a whole moon; the queen began to be reconciled to a rural life, and her fears of being discovered were in a manner extinguished; when one day watching at the mouth of the cave for the return of Pahama, who was gone a-hunting, she saw a man making towards her; which, though it surprized, did not so far terrify her as to confuse her thoughts, and make her incapable of providing for her safety. She immediately stepped into the cave, and armed herself with her bow and lance, resolved to defend herself, or to sell her life at a dear rate.

#### H O U R LXXXII.

**P**HASIMA returned to the mouth of the cave, and perceived that the person, who still came towards her, was a venerable old man, without arms, either offensive or defensive. He approached with a smiling countenance, and accosted her in these words: ‘ Princess, your precaution is as unnecessary as your fears are groundless. I come not to add to, but lighten the weight of your afflictions, and to save you from inevitable ruin; for Phampataborac, who has vowed your’s and Pahama’s destruction, having taken possession of, and provided for securing to himself your kingdom, turned his thoughts upon discovering the place of your retreat, which his magical mirror has shewn him; and a detachment of armed men, who will be here to-morrow, are sent to take you and Pahama prisoners. I am called Magophuquaw, the good magician. Your patient resignation to the will of Rimac has had its effect; and



and I am come by his will, to deliver you from imminent danger: it depends upon your own conduct to experience his farther mercies, and to be restored to your throne. If this blessing attends you, remember, a sovereign is a minister of Rimac; and though accountable to no power on earth, must be answerable to him, not only for his own life, but for the influence of his example. Common prudence ought to oblige every prince, even the most prophane, to hide his vices from the eyes of his subjects, and to promote religion, as it is the strongest curb to restrain his people; a wise prince cannot but know it his duty to cultivate the worship of the gods, and if he neglects it, he sins with his eyes open: for it is not enough that he himself is devout; the function of his regal office obliges him to see that those committed to his charge perform their duty, to which he ought to encourage them by his example; by distinguishing and rewarding the good, and by discountenancing the wicked; by paying himself, and causing his subjects to pay a just reverence to the priests, and having a vigilant care that their holy order be not prophaned by admitting into it men of profligate lives or loose morals; and if any such have, by an out-side sanctity, crept in, he ought to enjoin their superiors to have a strict eye on all their actions, and severely to punish the least irregularity, that they may not bring the holy order, and at length religion itself, into contempt. What conclusion can the common people make from the immoral life of him who is to instruct others in the paths of virtue, but that all religion is a political institution, to restrain them, by imaginary rewards and punishments? But here comes Pahama, whose advice, if you trust to, you will want no other counsellor.' Pahama at this instant appeared, bringing with him a small wild boar which he had killed. He was astonished to see a man in conversation with the queen; but on his approach that surprize was turned into veneration, at the gravity, majesty, and sweetness of his aspect. 'Pahama,' said the magician, 'the queen will acquaint you with both my name and the cause of this visit; wherefore it is unnecessary for me to repeat what I have already informed her of. Take these rings, each of equal virtue, to render

the wearer invisible.' Then stamping with his foot, two staves of polished wood sprang up, which he put into their hands. 'With these,' continued he, 'you will be able to travel with the swiftness of a stag, and never feel fatigue. I have performed my commission; you may wait the arrival of Phampataborac's troops without danger, and seek some more agreeable retreat at your pleasure, which I am of opinion will be in the kingdom of Hattun Rucana.' Having said this, he vanished from their sight. The next day the wood was filled with armed men, some of whom searched the cave; where, finding provisions, they were convinced that the persons they sought had been lately there; indeed the queen and Pahama were present, though invisible, by virtue of their rings. When the troops found their searching the wood was labour lost, their commander ordered by several ways to pursue the fugitives, but left a number sufficient to surround the wood, that nobody could possibly have left it, without being perceived. Pahama, who with the queen, observed the industry of the officer, said — 'You see, Madam, it is impossible to subsist any longer in this place; for we are now deprived of the means; wherefore let us set forward, and leave our rout to the direction of Providence.' The queen answered — 'Pahama, Rimac has not only provided for our security, but has also put it into my power to revenge myself on him who commands the troops, whom you see so diligent in discovering and bringing me to an ignominious death, notwithstanding he was raised by my favour to the highest honours, from a very low degree.' — 'Madam,' replied Pahama, 'leave him to the punishment which his crimes will infallibly draw upon him, and look upon his treason as the consequence of your own indiscretion.' Saying this, he set forward, and the queen, without answering, followed him; for though their rings rendered them invisible to all others, they had not the same effect upon them. Pahama, by daily hunting, was become acquainted with the wood, and knew the readiest way out of it. They crossed high mountains, and came into a pleasant valley, where they entered a large village. Pahama, taking off his ring, addressed himself to an elderly man, who acquainted him that the village was belonging to the kingdom of Volunsa,

and directed him, as he required, the rout he ought to take to enter the kingdom of Hattun Rucana: he also furnished him with some provisions, of which both the queen and he stood in need. Being thus instructed and provided, they continued their journey, and crossing the kingdom of Volunsa, arrived at the metropolis of Hattun Rucana in a few days, though it was a journey of more than a moon to a common traveller. By means of their rings they entered the palace, and the apartment where the queen was confined: to whom Pahama made himself first known, and having acquainted her with his story, Phasima appeared to her. They embraced each other with the tenderness of sisters. I shall leave them here, said the select virgin, and follow Prince Houac in his travels, till I have brought him to the end of his fatigues.

#### H O U R LXXXIII.

**P**RINCE Houac leaving the court, and having learned the road he ought to take for that of Hattun Rucana, set forward, with a firm resolution to overcome by fortitude whatever misfortunes might attend him, or fall under them with resignation. Having in a few days arrived at the mountains of Volunsa, he there met a party of Phampataborac's army, which was on it's march to make an irruption into the kingdom of Phantoma. By these he was taken prisoner and carried before the general, who believing him to be a spy, ordered him to be cast headlong into a deep pit which they happened to be near. This sentence was no sooner pronounced but executed, and the poor prince received several bruises before he reached the bottom, though he had the good fortune not to be dashed to pieces, and had life and sense enough left to know his misfortune, which with just reason he concluded, was no less than a lingering death in the horrors of a palpable darkness. However, he bore it with courage and resignation, imploring Rimac that his sufferings might atone for his crime, and that he would pardon and receive into his favour his royal consort, whom, contrary to her pious remonstrances, he had prevailed upon to be a partner in his guilt. At first, he resolved not to stir from the spot on which he fell, though he found in him-

self sufficient strength to recover his legs, thinking it as well to expire on one spot as another; but then reflecting on the miracle of his not having been beat to pieces by the fall, he said,—Ought I to despair after so great a mercy? Can Rimac have prevented immediate death, only to make it less tolerable? No, he delights not in the miseries of mortals; and I should be unthankful did I not look on the preservation as an earnest of farther mercies; nay, should be guilty of black ingratitude and suicide, should I lie here despairing of his providence, and not seek, if possibly I may find some outlet which may deliver me from this dismal place. On this reflection he got up, though with much pain, and groped about, till at length he heard a confused noise, and making as well as he could towards it, he distinguished human voices, and continuing on, at length saw a glimmering of light, and plainly heard men discoursing. This gave him such spirit that he grew senseless of his bruises. As he proceeded farther on, the light increased, and he perceived the place where he then was to be a large natural vault of rock, at the mouth of which the light entered. He found this an easy outlet to the sea-shore, where he perceived several fishermen in canoes putting off, but on his appearing one of them turned back, and four men landing, enquired whence he was? He answered, that he was of Nanasca, a poor unfortunate banished man, who had by misfortune fallen into a pit on the top of the mountains; that he had been miraculously preserved, and had at that place found a passage which had happily restored to him the sight of day and human creatures. They took him on board with them, soon joined their companions, and put out to sea. The canoes were very large, and decked over with beasts hides in bad weather, and they steered by the stars. Houac was soon made sensible, that he was now a slave. They put him to a paddle, and as he handled it untowardly, in comparison of those who had been bred to it from their infancy, they fell upon him with cudgels, without the least compassion to his battered condition. He asked the meaning of this inhuman treatment, since he was not conscious of having offended. One of them answered, that they did not account for their actions to slaves. 'Slaves!' replied the prince,



prince, 'by what right of conquest can you pretend that you have the authority of a master over me?' He was told, that they had saved his life, had a right to his labour, and bid him without more words mind his paddle, and exert his strength, or they should toss him over-board, as they would not bestow provisions on idlers. Houac found he should get nothing by arguing with brutes, and submitted patiently to his severe lot. He was well nigh spent, when a strong breeze of wind put them bye their paddles, they set their sails, and the next day, about noon, as they had a fair steady gale, they made land, which they reached before the day was closed, and went ashore with their fish, and the captive prince, at a large village, where they were welcomed by their families and neighbours. They seemed here to be less brutal, for they took such care of the prince, that in a few days he was recovered of his bruises: but as they imagined he would not be fit for their business, they sold him to a magician in a neighbouring town for a considerable quantity of maize.

His new master employed him in his garden, where he wrought with indefatigable labour, and by his industry so far gained the good-will of the magician, that he took him from this slavish work to attend upon his own person: he had often enquired of Houac his former condition, which the prince told him was that of a common man. His master had recourse to his art, and discovered his real quality, though he concealed this knowledge from the prince.

His condition was now changed for the better; and he endeavoured to make himself easy, hoping Providence would in his own good time put an end to his sufferings.

His being in the house gave his master's wife often opportunities to see him; the consequence of which was a violent passion; she fell deeply in love with him, and was not long before she let him know that all her happiness depended on his making her a suitable return. This declaration shocked and grieved the prince. His virtue abhorred the thought of doing his master an irreparable injury, and which, of all others, is the most resented; and on the other hand he apprehended the consequence of a refusal, as he knew nothing equalled the revenge of a disappointed woman, whose love ever changed

into an equal hatred: wherefore he remonstrated to her the injustice of what she required; hinted to her the duty she owed her husband; laid before her the ingratitude of betraying a man who tenderly loved her; but above all, the guilt of such an action, which she could not conceal from the all-piercing eye of Rimac; though she might hope to deceive her husband, who depended on her virtue, which he thought a sufficient guard for his honour. This was reasoning to the wind, and the difficulty she met with only increased her passion. She lost no opportunity to solicit him; but finding all her tenderness vain, that he was deaf to her amorous complaints, and that she was constantly repulsed, she changed her language, and endeavoured to gain by threats what she could not obtain by solicitation. The prince she found as little to be moved by fear, as to be allured by fondness: he thought it more glorious to fall in the cause of virtue, than to avoid the menaced danger by a crime. This wrought her into a rage, and she complained to her husband that the slave had attempted her honour, and would have forced her, had he not been prevented by the coming in of a female slave who attended her, and whom she had prevailed upon, being her confidant, to be a false witness, and support her charge against the accused innocent. The magician heard her with great calmness, and promised to do her justice. When she had left him, he had recourse to his art, by which he discovered the villainy of the accusation; however, he caused Houac to be seized, and kept in a dungeon that night, the news of which his wife received with the utmost satisfaction. The next morning he called her and her witness into his room, and sending for Houac, he desired his spouse to repeat the complaint she had made against that audacious slave, and to omit no circumstances. This she did with great assurance, and with passionate expressions required justice to be done to her injured honour. The female slave's testimony corroborated all the mistress had alledged against the prince, whom the magician asked if he could deny the charge. He answered very calmly, that he was of opinion pleading his innocence would avail him little, wherefore he patiently resigned to the will of Rimac, whom he had too greatly offended to

murmur at any misfortune he should be pleased to inflict, and was prepared to die.

The magician answered, that he should see the effect of such resignation. 'I know you to be Prince Houac,' continued he; 'I am no stranger to what has brought the wrath of the great Deity upon you, and am convinced both of your innocence and the wickedness of that adulterous woman and her false witness, who, as they ought to be ashamed to see the light, shall for the future seek obscurity.' Saying this, he threw water into their faces, which changed them into bats, and with horrible shrieks they fled out of sight. 'I dare do nothing to assist, though I pity you. You have your liberty, make what use you please of it; either stay longer in the Island of Minaca, or instantly leave it if you can find the means.' Saying this, he bid the prince seek some other shelter; 'for you are,' said he, 'however innocent, the cause of my losing the woman I loved, and I cannot see you but with displeasure.'

#### H O U R LXXXIV.

**T**HE prince, who without reply left the magician's house and village, unknowing whither he went, travelled great part of that day over large savannahs, and towards evening entered a wood, in which he reposed himself on the top of a large tree till the following dawn; and then pursued the same rout, in hopes of coming to the sea-shore, and of finding some opportunity to quit the island. By noon, he had gained the top of a high hill, which afforded him a prospect of the ocean, and as far as he could discern an object, he thought he perceived something floating. He staid some time to see if this float drew nearer to the shore, and observing it did, descended with some precipitation, in hopes it might be something of use to free him from the island, which he looked upon as a prison. By the time he got to the shore, he saw it was a canoe, which was but a small distance from land. He concealed himself, and observed twelve men who landed, bringing a dead woman on shore, and that another was on board, who shewed all the tokens of a distracting grief. They were armed with bows

and lances, which they laid down by the corpse, and then forced the other woman to land. The prince drew as near and silently as he could, and plainly heard the woman say—'Barbarous wretches! whom just vengeance, however long suffering, will overtake, why don't you put an end to my life also? But alas! why should I expect an act of so much compassion from brutes, for it is violating human nature to call you men.' One of them answered, they might possibly oblige her when they had done with her. The prince happening to cast his eye over the sea, perceived another canoe cut through the liquid element with incredible speed, which as soon as discovered by those who were just landed, they took to their arms, and leaving both the woman and corpse, entered their vessel, and put out to sea. They soon met, and a smart engagement ensued, in which most of the men of the first canoe being slain, the remainder fled towards the shore, and landing at a distance from the place where the prince was concealed, took shelter in the woods that bordered on the shore, but were closely pursued by the victors. The prince in the interim discovered himself to the woman, who was seated by, and had laid the head of the corpse on her lap. He begged she would apprehend no danger from him, who was an unfortunate stranger, and should think himself happy if he could any way contribute to the alleviating her affliction.—'Whoever you are,' replied the woman, 'I am obliged to your humanity; but alas! though Heaven has, I hope, sent me relief in the canoe now engaged with the ravishers, all my hopes of future peace of mind are dead with my unfortunate sister, whose remains you see stretched on these sands.' While she spoke, the prince, who looked steadfastly on the deceased, fancied he perceived some signs of life in her, and running to the sea, brought some water in a shell, which he sprinkled in her face, and she instantly fetched a deep sigh. They then raised her, and continuing to sprinkle her face, she began to recover, opened her eyes, but soon fainted. She lay some time before she again gave signs of life, though they chafed her temples, and threw water in her face; but at length she looked up, and with a sigh, cried—'Great Rimac!' Her sister embraced her, and bid her apprehend no danger,



danger, for the person whom she saw was not one of the ravishers, and that their friends were in pursuit of those villains.

'Blessed be Rimac,' replied the other; 'but oh! I die with thirst.' The prince hearing this, told her he would go in search of water, and taking up a large concha, he left them, and ran along the coast, in hopes of finding some river or rivulet which discharged itself into the sea; but not being so happy, he returned; but was so long in his search, that the two canoes were put off to sea. He shouted after them, but they could not hear him. He then broke down and wept, for some time, the bough of a tree, and being luckily discovered by those on board, one of the vessels turned back and took him in, at the request of the women, who had given them an account of his humanity. The person who appeared to have the command over the others received him courteously, thanked him for his tenderness to the ladies, and offered him all in his power, entreating him at the same time to favour him with the name and quality of the person to whose humanity he stood indebted. Houac returned his compliments in a stile and manner which spoke him of a distinguished rank; and added, that his story was too long and too melancholy to trouble him with; at a time that he was in a visible concern for the indisposition of one of the ladies, and the terrors the other was under: but that he would, when they had reached the shore, whenever he pleased to command him, satisfy his curiosity; in the interim, should be glad to know his deliverer, and the adventure of those ladies, who from themselves he had learned had been carried to the Isle of Minaca by violence. 'Sir,' replied Parisphaquaw, for that was the name of the chief, 'I am a nobleman of the Isle of Mazliqua, which lies opposite to that we now left, about twenty-four hours sail distant from it, if the wind proves favourable: these two ladies are my sisters; I need not mention their form, for you must allow their beauty is more than common; which has proved very fatal to our family, and not less so to a very noble one of the Isle of Minaca. My father was prime minister to Papaquabac our sovereign, whose dominion stretches over the adjacent islands, (which are many in number) except

the large Isle of Minaca, whose king owns no superior. There had been long and bloody wars between these rival islands before my birth, which exhausting the subjects on either side, made the contending princes equally desirous of peace; this being concluded, ambassadors were reciprocally sent to pay the compliments of their respective masters. Manquabac came from the King of Minaca to our court, about the time of my coming into the world; he brought his lady with him and a numerous train. When by the commands of his master, he was to continue his minister at Mazliqua, he sent for his three sons; the eldest was not above ten years old at their arrival. My father having formerly been sent to the court of Minaca, was well acquainted with Manquabac, and these two ministers had a particular regard for each other, which occasioned his sons being often at our house with my two elder brothers, who were about the age of the two youngest sons of the ambassador. There continued a perfect harmony between our respective monarchs; for which reason Manquabac was seventeen years at Minaca, excepting some few months, which were now and then allowed him to return home to take care of his private affairs. During this space, these my sisters were born and grown up; Manica, the eldest of the minister's sons, became enamoured of Manilla, and his two younger proved rivals for my sister Lacenta's love. Manica made his passion known to his father, who asked Manilla in marriage for his son. He would readily have consented to so noble an alliance, had not unhappily the king seen her, designed to raise her to his throne, and communicated this intended honour to my father, which he received with due respect and thankfulness; though my sister was inconsolable at the news, the king being not only very ancient but very infirm. When the ambassador mentioned this alliance, my father told him he would gladly embrace the honour offered him; but feared the obstacle of the king's passion, which he then acquainted him with, insurmountable. The ambassador, who knew the violence of the king's temper, which could never brook contradiction, was of the same opinion, and commanded his son to think

think no more of Manilla, and let him know the reason of this injunction.

#### H O U R LXXXV.

WHERE love has once possessed the heart, reason is seldom listened to; it makes us imagine every undertaking which may contribute to the gratification of our desires feasible, and renders the greatest dangers trivial. Manica's love for my sister would not let him see the vast disproportion between a despotick monarch in his own territories, and a private nobleman in a foreign country, without support, or other protection, than what the laws of nations afforded him. The king, who had, as I have said, designed to make my sister his consort, commanded my father to bring her to court. When he ordered her to prepare to go thither, she threw herself at his feet, and used all the arguments she was mistress of to dissuade him from his intention; but finding it vain, and that she must absolutely go the next morning, she that night withdrew from my father's house with her lover, who had prepared a vessel to carry her off. When the next morning she was not to be found, my father went to court, acquainted the king with her flight, and with the declared passion of Manica. This threw the old monarch into so great a rage, that he ordered my father's head to be struck off for his carelessness; which sentence was executed. Then sending for the ambassador, he taxed his son with the rape. He denied knowing any thing of it, and begged that the rashness of a young man, if he was guilty, might not be imputed to him who was entirely innocent. The king commanded him to keep his house till he heard further from him, and immediately dispatched swift vessels in pursuit of the fugitives, and orders to his minister to complain to the King of Minaca of the outrage. The two lovers escaped their pursuers, but the King of Minaca was so enraged at the complaint made him from our sovereign, that he sent another ambassador to Mazliqua, promising to do him strict justice. He also sent him for his seraglio, twelve virgins of exquisite beauty; recalled Manquabac, whom he confined for

his son's offence, and caused strict search to be made for the unfortunate fugitives: but irritated by his endeavours proving vain, he banished that unhappy nobleman. He had left his family at Mazliqua to follow him. The news of his confinement, had like to have put an end to the life of his lady. His two youngest sons, Miquisqua and Malbuca, thought it not safe to remain in Mazliqua, and not daring to return home, provided for their safety by retiring privately elsewhere. Miquisqua proposed their taking refuge separately; which Malbuca readily agreed to, as he meditated the same thing his brother did, which was to carry off Lacenta, who had agreed to Miquisqua's carrying her away by night. Both made preparations unknown to each other, to execute the same design, and happened to pitch on the same night. Miquisqua had already got Lacenta into a canoe, when his brother came to the back of our garden, which lies near the sea-shore: they had each of them swift vessels, and a proper number of hands to go through their project. Miquisqua imagining our family had got intelligence of this design, and was come with an armed force to prevent it, without speaking a word, attacked his brother's party, which received him with such resolution, that both the brothers were left for dead, and many of their men slain. My brother and self being alarmed with the noise, ran out with some servants to know the meaning of it; when both parties, conscious of the injury they designed our family, turned their arms against us: we had no time to enquire into the reason of this treatment, and thought only of defending ourselves and offending our enemies, whom at last we put to flight. Our monarch having received the present of twelve virgins, their beauty soon effaced the remembrance of my sister's charms, and his majesty repenting the sentence passed against my father, in whom he was sensible he had lost a loyal subject, a faithful and wise minister, and being moreover moved with compassion for the misfortune which had befallen our family, sent for me to court; was pleased to express a grief for what had happened; to promise me that he would supply the loss of the father his passion had deprived



me of, and having felt himself the power of love, bid me, if I could find her, to bring back my sister, whom he was ready to pardon, though he could not forgive the injury he had received from her lover; he having made an ill use of his protection, and broken through the laws of common hospitality. In the interim, it was discovered, that Manica had taken refuge in a desolate island, from whence, forced by necessity, he made excursions, and plundered his fellow-subjects who lived near the sea-coasts, of corn and cattle. The island he fled to is a large rock, about three leagues in circumference, affords a spring of good water, and is inaccessible, except in one place, where the passage is both deep and freight. He had with him twenty resolute fellows, who followed his fortunes. The King of Minaca having intelligence of the place of his retreat, sent to take him two hundred men; but they found, after several attempts, in which they lost one half of their company, that it was not feasible; wherefore they returned, resolving to come again with a greater number of canoes, and starve him to a surrender. Manica imagining this their design, in the night of that day in which they drew off, put to sea, to seek some other asylum more secure; but he was unhappily, by strong contrary winds, driven towards the coast of Minaca, and fell in with a canoe which carried forty men of those who were sent to take him. They immediately knew and attacked him; he did all that could be expected from a brave man, but was killed in the engagement; his crew taken prisoners, soon after executed; my sister carried to the court of Minaca, and by the king sent home under a strong convoy. Our monarch received the account of these particulars without the least emotion; and sending for me, said—"Your sister will soon arrive, and you may dispose of her as you think proper; the contempt with which she has treated me, has extinguished that flame which her beauty had excited." On her arrival, she and Lacenta desired to retire from the world, and withdrew to a country-seat I have, which lies near the sea-coast, where they would see none but the domesticks that attended them. Phanasac, the son of Manquabac's brother, irritated at the misfor-

tunes which the fatal beauties of my sisters had brought upon his family, vowed revenge; and hearing that they were retired into the country, he fitted out a canoe with twelve men, landed, surprised my sisters, and carried them off, with design, as I learned from one of his dying companions, to convey them to his house, and put them to the most cruel death. I arrived by water to visit my sisters while his canoe was yet in sight, and learning from my servants what had happened, immediately pursued and overtook the ravishers. Phanasac was killed in the engagement which you saw, and but three of his men have escaped alive, by favour of the woods in which they sought shelter. The lady whom you charitably assisted is the disconsolate Manilla.

The prince was very attentive to this history of the fatal beauties, and was going to make his reflections upon it, when they perceived an unusual swell of the sea at some little distance before the head of the canoe, which greatly surprized all on board: and discovering it to be occasioned by the wantoning of a monstrous whale, they changed their course to avoid being overset by the monster, which all that day, at the same distance, kept them company, and drove them, by keeping between the island of Masliqua and them, quite out of their knowledge. Though they saw no more of this dangerous companion the next morning, yet they could discover no land for several days after, and their provision being all consumed, they had nothing to support them but the hopes they placed in the providence of Rimac, which delivered them from their fears of perishing by hunger, and brought them the day after their stores had failed them to a pleasant island, plentifully stored with necessary fruits and crystal springs for the support of life. They here landed, drew their canoes ashore, and after having refreshed themselves by the side of a spring issuing from a large hollow rock, they gathered moss, and made a cabin with boughs for the ladies to repose themselves: while Parisphaquaw and the prince went to explore the island, which by the natural disposition of small hills, vallies, lakes, rivers and trees, surpassed all the works of art, and afforded a most grateful and delightful prospect to the eye. As they ascended to the summit of a hill, which arose with an easy and gradual ascent, clothed with cedar and orange-

trees, but clear from all under-wood or shrubs, which might encumber a passenger, they espied on the right a little cabin, which they soon reached; and as they drew near to enquire, if they found any inhabitant, the name of the island, to which they were so providentially guided, a venerable old man leaving the cabin, came forwards to meet and receive them. Parisphaquaw no sooner cast his eyes upon him, but he cried—‘O heavens! what is it I see; it is the spirit of my deceased parent!’—‘Be not surprised, my son,’ replied the supposed ghost, ‘I am not an airy substance, but thy real father, preserved by the mercy of Rimac and the friendship of Zamqua, who had orders to see me privately beheaded; a favour allowed to my past services. I expected you, my two daughters, who I suppose are with you, and the great prince now in your company, about this time. To put an end to the surprize which I perceive my last words have given you, know that you are now in the Miraculous Island, in which is the principal oracle of the great Rimac, and from that I was foretold your arrival.’ Having said this, he tenderly embraced his son, each pouring forth tears of joy at this happy, and to the latter, unexpected meeting. Having thus given way to the first transports of affection, the father saluted Prince Houac with extraordinary marks of respect and deference; then placing himself between his beloved son and his princely guest, he led them into his hut, placed them on green sward, and said—‘I should be impatient to see my daughters, but that I think it necessary to refresh you, and to allow them to recover themselves after the fatigue and apprehensions of their voyage. I am sure they are arrived with you, as it is impossible for the oracle to fail.’ The prince answered, that he was in the right, and gave a signal proof of his affection, in delaying the satisfaction of embracing two such amiable daughters; for their surprize and joy to see so tender a parent, added to the fatigue they had undergone, might be attended by unhappy consequences: adding, that to divert the time, he, and no doubt, his son, should be greatly obliged, if he would give himself the trouble to acquaint them with the manner of his preservation, and how he got to that island.

## H O U R LXXXVI.

‘PRINCE,’ said he, ‘I shall readily obey you and gratify my son; but you must primarily oblige me, by taking some refreshment.’ Having said this, he arose and told them, old men were the properest guides for the young; wherefore he would take the liberty of going before a sovereign prince. Houac replied, he should be ever pleased to tread in the steps of one of his wisdom and experience; as he never did believe, and never should, however princes might be flattered by their attendance, that wisdom was inherent with royalty. The old minister made no reply, but went into another room, only two being visible in his cottage; and descending an easy declivity, which at first sight and at a little distance seemed a pit, led the prince to a magnificent room, formed by nature of a solid rock. It was in the form of an octagon, and in every square was a door, which gave admittance to either offices, or lodging-rooms, hewed out by the labour of the hand. The roof of this first was a natural arch, and the other chambers were wrought in imitation of it. In the middle of the hall was placed a transparent table of blue stone, veined with silver. There were no windows to admit light, which was supplied by the refulgent brightness of a large white jewel fixed in the middle of the roof. A vast rock of this stone is in the centre of the Miraculous Island. When it is hewn out, though very soft while in it’s natural bed, it not only acquires an adamant hardness in being exposed to the air, but imbibes and retains the rays of the sun; the absence of which it makes amends for, by emitting a fine day-light without heat. Every thing in the room was as magnificent as the table, which at first attracted their eyes; and nothing necessary was wanting. The ancient minister desired them to seat themselves on marble-seats, which without a visible hand were immediately placed round the table, and that also, by invisible means, was covered with mats of the most beautiful colours and most exquisite workmanship. After this a most elegant collation appeared on the table. The old gentleman, by his example, invited them to eat; and, while they were at their repast, they were entertained with the harmony of melodious voices, accompanied



accompanied with instruments; yet was there no appearance of any person but who were at table. Manibashiqua, such was the minister's name, remarking the surprise apparent in the faces of his son and the prince, at events so preternatural, at least in their opinions, thus addressed himself to them: 'I read in the countenances of both, an astonishment at your being entertained by invisibles. This proceeds from your being acquainted with nothing but corporeal beings; and never having learned, that as the superficies of the earth is the destined habitation of men and beasts, so the other elements, and the interior of this opaque planet which we live upon, are also inhabited by, and replete with creatures adapted to their respective allotted abodes.

These are, like us, the work of the power and wisdom of the ever adorable Rimac; and through his mercy, are employed as his ministers, to be assistant to men, to such of them, I should say, whose purity of life allures them by a sympathetick power, to be constantly about them, to forewarn, by dreams, or what we call presages, of dangers, and to animate them in every virtuous action. The man who can entirely divest himself of his passions, looks upon every good that befalls him, the pure effect of Rimac's benevolence; and whatever evil he suffers, the just consequence of his misdoings; who is neither elated with prosperity, nor depressed by adversity, but in either condition has his eye and heart upon Heaven, is doubtful in the former, and full of hope in the latter, will surely find the assistance of these ministers, who will, like a shield, bear off the attacks of pride on the one hand, and of despair on the other. Those who now regale us are aerial bodies, pure and beautiful as light, and who, by a mysterious intercourse with men, prevent the entire degeneracy of the world, and are the parents of such as exceed others in, and are eminent for their virtues, strength or wisdom. They are called Zylphana. There are others, who inhabit the element of fire, called the Purocama. Others again stationed in the seas and rivers, named Okapotomoka. And those which dwell in the bowels of the earth are the Geaphaka. The sun is inhabited by the Purocama, and the other planets, which are so many

worlds, have their respective inhabitants. The light they afford us, is either genuine, like that of the sun, or reflected like that of the moon. Though, as I have said, these ministers of Rimac are guardians to the virtuous, they fly the vicious, and such as are under the displeasure of Rimac, if not induced by a sincere contrition to hover round and protect them. Thus much I thought proper to inform you, that you might put an end to your astonishment; and that I might give Prince Houac the consolation of telling him, that he is under the vigilant care of the Purocama, whose protection he experienced on the Desolate Island, and that this pure being will never desert him, till he forgets his duty to that omnipotent Power from whose goodness he has existence. I can make you no farther discoveries on this head; if you are curious to be acquainted with these pure beings, to see and converse with them, it depends on you alone: by a thorough mortification of your passions, and unfeigned submission to the will of Rimac, you may attain that happiness with which, if once blessed, you will, in comparison of it, esteem honours, power, riches, and every pleasure the world can offer, as vile and below your notice. I shall now satisfy your curiosity with a short account of my escaping from the sentence pronounced against me by my incensed monarch. Zamaqua having received orders to see me beheaded, took me under a strong guard to his own house, and with great inhumanity, as I then thought, ordered me to be thrust into a noisome dungeon. I expostulated with him on this cruel procedure, and told him it was not the command he had from the king, who had pronounced the sentence of my immediate death. He replied, that the king was too mild in such sentence; that an immediate death was not a punishment adequate to the crime of having irritated so great a monarch; that I need not apprehend his not obeying his majesty, with regard to the seeing me put to death: but he was resolved to make me die in a manner which should also make me sensible of my death. In saying this, he ordered the guard to push me into the darksome cavern he had appointed for my reception, and fastening the door, discharged them. This usage from Zamaqua,

maqua, a man to whom I had been a father, whom I had raised by my interest with the king, and whom I had ever esteemed a man of virtue, was as mortifying to me as the sentence of my death was shocking. What cruel reflections did this ingratitude cause me! I had not been two hours in these agitations of mind, when I heard the door open, and to my great surprize Zamaqua came in without attendance, bearing in his hand a lighted torch; he tenderly embraced, and addressed me in words to this effect: "My dear friend and patron, pardon a severity which I was necessitated to put on before the guards, for your preservation: the term of your imprisonment is at an end; follow me, that I may lodge you more conveniently, though neither according to your rank nor merit." Without saying more, he went out, and I followed him to a large room; where being seated, he told me, that he should be guilty of the blackest vice a mean soul could be guilty of, ingratitude, did he not prefer my life to his own, since to me he owed his all. That he was extremely happy to be charged with the commission of seeing me put to death, as he should never obey the king's command, which he was certain he would repent, when he was returned to the use of that reason passion had deprived him of. I answered, that I was fully convinced of his friendship, but that I should be guilty of the vice which appeared to him so odious, if I suffered him to hazard his own life for the preservation of mine. He would not let me proceed, but desired me to take some refreshment, and he would immediately after convince me, that he should risk nothing in doing what even his duty to his prince would engage him to do, had he no obligations to me: that he was certain he should have the king's thanks, whenever he was acquainted with his daring to have contradicted his commands, and that he should beside have the blessing and love of the publick attend him. He then, diverting his eyes from me as speaking to another, said—"Erasimioska, lovely fair, unspotted as the limpid streams, in which thou dost delight to sport; beautiful as truth; benign as genial heat; glorious as the sun; inviting as Favonian gales; fragrant as the orange-flower; thou joy of life, who

seest and knowest my present anguish for this my friend, my patron, nay, my father, vouchsafe him thy protection, if my unaltered fondness, if the purity of my thoughts, if justice, honour, friendship, merit thy regard, bless him with a sight of thy transporting charms, and safe convey him beyond the reach of headstrong and despotick power." No sooner had he spoken, but a lady of enchanting beauty appeared near me, and speaking to Zamaqua, said—"You may in a cause so just command the utmost of my power; Rimac approves thy grateful friendship; and whatever can be pleasing in thy sight, is by us undertaken with alacrity: thy entreaties, then, my dear Zamaqua, were superfluous, and I could almost chide thee for them, as they seem to speak a doubt of my affection: thy friend need apprehend no danger, either for himself or thee: but as he has this day taken nothing, let him recruit his spirits with a light repast, and then take thy farewell embrace."

## H O U R LXXXVII.

AT this word arose a table replenished with the most exquisite viands, such as both my eyes and palate had been strangers to; but which attracted the former, and delighted the latter. The liquors were not only delicious, but odoriferous and invigorating. I found my spirits greatly raised, without the least symptom of intoxication. When we had finished our meal, Erasimioska said—"My dear Zamaqua, a friend of mine of the Zylphana, will take care of your patron, and convey him to our element, where my companions of the Okeopotomaka will join me to provide for his safety in the Miraculous Island; till the king, sensible of his own rashness, and grieving for the loss of his faithful minister, shall give me an opportunity to restore him to his native land. It is time you should now bid him adieu." Zamaqua and I embraced each other; I was suddenly snatched up into the air, and in a very short space set down in a lucid chariot on the side of the ocean. Erasimioski placed herself by me, and giving a loose to the reins, the sea-horses which drew this wonderful



‘wonderful machine plunged down-wards, and the waters formed a crystalline arch over our heads. We drove with incredible swiftness on this watery element, which seemed condensed under our chariot wheels; and in about the space of six hours we emerged on the shore of this island. Erasmioska then calling on her friend of the Zylphana, who had transported me through the air—“Elebatoska,” said she, “I recommend this virtuous man to your care, to provide for and to protect.” Elebatoska appearing at these words, surprized me no less with the resplendency of her beauty than Erasmioska had done. “Tell me,” said I, “whether ye are deities, or inhabitants of the heavenly region, where the all-powerful Rimac solely rules; or whether ye are his illustrious messengers, by his mercy ordered to watch over and protect the just and innocent; and what adoration, if any, or what thanks am I to pay to you for this kindly and supernatural assistance?”—“We are,” said Elebatoska, “creatures formed like you, by the will and word of Rimac; deities there are none, but subordinate ministers; Rimac is alone the grand object of adoration; and the pleasure of assisting those whose virtues merit our care, afford us full satisfaction. Thank Rimac, and while you continue in your duty to him, depend on our friendship.” Erasmioska spoke much to the same effect, and taking her leave, sunk into the briny plain. I have never since had the pleasure of seeing her; though as I am informed by Elebatoska, it was she who ordered the monstrous whale to drive you off your course, and she conducted you hither, to give me the satisfaction of embracing my dear children, and them the pleasure of seeing a parent of whom they thought themselves deprived. There are some other particulars, which as yet I am not allowed to mention. The inhabitants of this island are the descendants of these elementary people, by their intercourse with mankind; they are all upon a level, and all dedicated to the service of Rimac, whose temple here is the most magnificent of any under the sun, as it was raised by workmen endowed with more than human knowledge, assisted by the elementary race; and the walls built of the same stone as

this, which now affords us light. As this temple is in the centre of the island, it emits the imbibed rays of the sun when that is absent, and affords us one perpetual day. Elebatoska introduced me to the priests, and I had the honour to be admitted an inhabitant by an universal consent of the people assembled on that account. My fair protectress caused this habitation to be provided for me, and it is she who furnishes me, not only with all the conveniences, but affords me the greatest pleasures of life, to which those in high stations and in courts are entire strangers, as I have been to all manner of care and anxiety; Elebatoska assuring me, that I need apprehend nothing for your welfare, that she should watch over my family, that I should have the pleasure of seeing you speedily, and return with you, if I thought proper, to my native country; and the oracle having both confirmed what she said, and named the very time of your arrival, which has happened accordingly.” Prince Houac, fetching a sigh, asked if it was lawful for him to consult the oracle. “It is,” said Manabashiqua; “but you must first prepare yourself by prayer, abstinence and washing, six times a day for the space of three days; though I doubt your receiving a consolatory answer, as you have not yet appeased the wrath of the offended Rimac.”—“Alas!” replied the prince, “he knows all hearts, and therefore is acquainted with the sincerity of my repentance.”—“Prince,” answered Manabashiqua, “do you not deceive yourself? Is not your penitence rather proceeding from your sufferings, than from an abstracted love and veneration of the Deity?”—“Ah, Sir!” said Houac, “though I know well the attributes of Rimac; though I have often experienced his mercy, as well as felt his heavy displeasure; though he ought to be the chief object of our love, as he is love himself; yet as we scarcely know any thing but by the means of our senses, how is it possible to attain to that abstracted love you mention, of an object which does not condescend to be known to us, otherwise than by his attributes; of whom we have an idea, but can have no imagination, as we can give no form to that Being which takes in even infinity?”—“Yet, prince,” answered the venerable host,

host, 'this is required, and as it is required, we must conclude it is possible; Rimac cannot command what is unjust, as this would be, were it not in our power to perform. But that it is, many inhabitants of our island, and no doubt elsewhere, are sufficient proof. I don't say this is easy, or that we are of ourselves capable of this abstracted love; but address yourself to Rimac, and doubt not his assistance. His ears and arms are always open to hear and receive the humble penitent. When you reflect that Rimac, as he is infinitely powerful, is also infinitely just and merciful, you can have no ground to despair of conciliating his favour, if you persevere in endeavouring it.'— 'I thank you, Sir,' replied Prince Houac, 'for the consolation you give me.' Pariphaquaw asked his father, if he did not think it time for him to return to the canoe, and bring his sisters. 'My daughters,' said the minister, 'fatigued with their voyage, yet sleep, and I would not disturb them; but were they awake, our going to the sea-side is needless, for they are already in this habitation, conveyed hither by the friendly care of Elebatoska. Let us leave them to their repose, while I entertain you with a view of the neighbouring country, and at a distance from the summit of a hill, give you a sight of the most wonderful structure in the universe, which it is not lawful for you to approach till you are purified; for should any venture to go near it without a preparatory purification, his rashness would be punished by the loss of sight, from the brightness which it's walls emit.' Saying this, he arose, and led the prince and his son to a beautiful grove, which, by a gentle ascent of half a league in length, brought them to the top of a hill, from whence they had a sight of the magnificent temple; which, though at some leagues distant, reflected so strong a light, that their eyes could scarcely support the lustre. 'I beg, Sir,' said the prince 'let us return, that I may lose no time, but immediately enter upon preparing myself to approach this wonderful fabric, and consult the oracle.'— 'I am not less anxious,' subjoined Pariphaquaw, 'to have a nearer view of this glorious structure; wherefore, if you please, Sir, we will instantly return.'— 'You shall both be satisfied,' replied his father. 'My daughters will awake

by the time we have gained my cell.' When they were arrived at it, he led them into an inner room, where they saw the ladies just awaking, stretched on two couches of odoriferous flowers, supported by lions of the finest emerald, and covered with cotton interwoven with gold. The surprise of seeing their father, and finding themselves in an unknown place, prevented their speaking. The good old man tenderly embraced them, and bid them put an end to their astonishment; 'For,' said he, 'nothing is impossible to Rimac, who saved me from impending death, and, as an additional mercy, has blessed me with the sight of my dear children, whom he has in compassion protected, and whom he will, at length, deliver from all their troubles; as he has ever rewarded virtue and piety. The means he was pleased to employ for my preservation, I have already told your brother and this prince, and will acquaint you with when they are retired to their devotions.' The ladies with tears of joy embraced his knees, and hung about him, sincerely praising that merciful and omnipotent power, who had so miraculously restored them their lost parent. Being informed by the oracle, and the necessary preparations to consult it, they asked, if women were allowed to approach the temple; and being informed by their father, that neither sex was excluded, they begged they might also go into retirement. Which being agreed to by their father, he conducted them into different apartments, each supplied with limpid fountains, where they continued three days in fasting, washing, and prayers. At the end of which space they met in a hall, into which the prince and Pariphaquaw were first introduced; taking a slight repast, retired to rest, and the next morning were repairing to walk to the temple. The father told the young ladies, that the journey would be too great for them to attempt on foot, and would even fatigue the men; wherefore he had prayed the charming Elebatoska to convey them all thither. 'She readily consented to my request for you three, my children, but said she durst not incur the anger of Rimac, with regard to Prince Houac, as every power on earth, in air, or in the water, is forbid to assist him. He must therefore depend upon his own fortitude, if he cannot engage the favour of some



‘one among the Purocama.’ The prince sighed at these words. ‘Well,’ said he, ‘let me suffer as I deserve, and support my sufferings as I ought; that I may, by an humble resignation, and steady perseverance, efface the crime which has brought this punishment upon me. Let us set forward, I doubt not but my strength will carry me through this journey.’—‘Prince,’ said Pariphaquaw, ‘I will bear you company;’ saying this, they all went out, and a cloud descending, enveloped all but Prince Houac, and immediately carried them out of his sight; the delightful prospect vanished, and he found himself in a sandy desert, exposed to the piercing rays of the sun, which darted with intolerable heat upon his head, while his feet were scorched with the almost burning sands. This sudden change and disappointment had almost got the better of the prince’s constancy: but upon recollection, he bowed his head, and said—‘Blessed be the will of Rimac, whose creature I am, and of whom he has a right to dispose as he shall please to decree; may his compassion enable me to submit, however sharp his afflictions, with true humility, and banish every murmuring and rebellious thought from my mind.’ He travelled all that day, tormented with heat and thirst, but saw no end of the desert, which afforded not one tree for shelter. He lay that night on the sands, and with the first dawn of day he went on. About noon he discovered a mountain so stupendously high, that its sharp top appeared a prodigious height above the clouds, which seemed to encircle its waist. He reached the foot of this mountain about sunset, and had the good fortune to discover a spring of water, and some banana trees, which greatly refreshed him.

## H O U R LXXXVIII.

**H**E having quenched his thirst, and eaten of the bananas, sought for and found a cavern, in which he rested that night: the next day he attempted to cross over the mountain which bounded the desert, and run in one continued chain on either hand of him, as far as he could extend his sight. He laboured all that day, but though by the difficulty of ascending among craggy rocks, he gained but little way, yet he was not

discouraged; finding that a number of rivulets issued from the side of the hill, and that it afforded plenty of wild fruit to alleviate his hunger, and support his strength. After a moon’s fatigue, and often hazarding his life, through the steepness of rocks which he was obliged to climb, some of which, by being loose, threatened his destruction, he gained the summit; but was then ready to perish by cold. He was several days descending on the other side, which was terminated by a pleasant and fruitful valley, that led to a large town, two days journey distant from the foot of the mountain. But how great was his surprise and horror to see the inhabitants, though of human shape, yet with heads of different beasts; some had asses, some goats, some lions, and some dogs heads. As soon as he was perceived, they flocked round him as a monster, seized, bound, and carried him before their prince, who had the head of a sheep, but his prime minister had that of a wolf.

The prince looked at him with great indifference, and asked why they brought so hideous a monster into his presence? and ordered him to be removed from his sight, as he gave him horror. The prime minister commanded him to be thrown into a fathomless pit, into which they cast their dead. This order was almost as soon put in execution as given. He was led to the place, and precipitated into this dreadful gap, and reached the bottom without being sensible of the fall. ‘Rimac,’ said he, ‘who has delivered me from death, will not desert me. I will confide in his mercy.’ He had no sooner uttered these words, than he saw himself in a most beautiful palace; the walls of which were of the purest gold, enriched with all the precious stones that the earth affords. While he admired the dazzling beauties of this structure, he was accosted by a lady of exceeding charms. ‘Prince,’ said she, ‘you are welcome to the dominions of the Geophaka. When you were condemned by that vicious atheistical race, whose respective heads shew their different tempers and inclinations, we, charmed with your patience and resignation, bore you in our arms, and brought you safely to these our territories; being permitted to assist you, as we have no power upon, but within the earth, and are guardians of those treasures, which we often suffer the wicked

wicked to possess themselves of for their destruction, and conceal from the virtuous, lest they might corrupt their morals; a friendship which few understand or thank us for. In that part of the world which you inhabit, gold has as yet done little damage; but some ages hence, it will allure thither a nation of a different colour from an unknown world, and prove the punishment of that gross idolatry into which your people will be fallen. This nation shall for the sake of this shining dirt, take your country from them; put to death more than numbers can reckon, and enslave such as escape the edge of the sword. These victorious people shall yearly cross immense seas, to carry off a metal, to which a curse is annexed; and the inhabitants of their world will become so stupidly fond of it, that they will sacrifice to obtain it's possession, their country, their honour, nay, their religion, their liberty, and even renounce their god. Thus will they revenge the cause of those, whom they were the instruments, in the hand of Rimac, to punish, for having transferred that worship which is alone due to him, to idols, the work of their own hands. Do you persevere in the adoration of the great and glorious Being who gave you existence; submit to and confide in him, and happy days shall drown the remembrance of your present affliction: for both we, or the Purocama, will be ever at hand to deliver you, when the interposition of man would be vain. The prince returned her thanks in the most grateful terms, both for his preservation and her promise of future favour. She then led him into an apartment, whose walls were of the most brilliant adamant, and shewing him a couch of the same glittering stone, advised him to repose himself after his fatigue. She left him to that end. He slept a considerable time, and when he awoke, he found by him a table spread with all manner of delicacies. Gaiodesca, for that was the name of his protectress, came in, and sat beside him. While they were at their repast, she thus addressed herself to him—Happy are you, Prince Houac, in suffering the punishment of your offence on earth. You may think it severe, but this severity is the effect of mercy. How many, who are no longer in the world, would gladly compound their

tortures for an age of much greater sufferings than those you have experienced! The offences committed against Rimac are either punished in the life of the offender, or after he is numbered with the dead. How little do poor mortals know, who blame Providence for suffering the wicked to prosper, and the virtuous to struggle all the term of life with insuperable difficulties! how mistaken are they in their naming the one happy, the other wretched! in envying the one and pitying the other! Of what rashness are men guilty, in pretending to decide on the inscrutable ways of the great Rimac! But you yourself shall be a judge of, and thus be enabled to guard against this folly. The prince answered, that men were too apt to determine by appearances, and too impatient in adversity; that it did not become a finite reason to examine into causes, which Rimac had thought fit to conceal from mortals, possibly through compassion, and much less to call infinity to account for his actions, as he apprehended the blaming what he was pleased to order, or to suffer to be done, might be justly termed. That he condemned none more than himself for this weakness, having often presumed mentally to expostulate with that over-ruling power, which formed and supports the world, when under afflicting pressures. That he was sensible of, and heartily repented his arrogant folly, and hoped it would not be imputed to him.

They finished their repast in discourse of the like nature, in which Gaiodesca remarked to him, that the life of man, in comparison of eternity, was like a point with regard to the universe; that that there was on earth nothing which could make mortals happy; every satisfaction, the most exalted stations, had a dash of bitterness purposely by the wise decree of Rimac thrown in, that men might not be fond of these transitory things, but extend their views beyond this world, and fix their hopes of happiness there alone, where alone it is to be found, in the enjoyment of the presence of Rimac; which they must never hope for, but by purity of life; the practice of all moral virtues, and a grateful return of thanks and praise to the Almighty Power whose mercy is over all his works. She farther added, that men were so apt to deceive one another, nay, to impose upon themselves,



themselves, that they endeavoured to do so with the all-seeing Rimac, and fancy he will be satisfied with forms and ceremonies. 'If they offer their sacrifices with pomp and an outside shew of religion, it is sufficient to atone for a vicious mind, a corrupted heart, and a scandalous life. Nay, some princes are so besotted as to imagine, that Rimac has a regard to their high station, and that they may be indulged in vices which are punishable in their subjects; or, more properly speaking, that what is a crime in the lower class of men, is none in them. Hence proceed the little faith among the rulers of the earth; the infamous lives of many supreme magistrates; who will by turns frequent the temples of Rimac, and the chambers of their mistresses; and from offering their incense to Rimac, force away such wives of their vassals as have the misfortune to excite their desires. Hence the spoiling of their people; hence their unjust invasion of each other, and the sacrifice of thousands of lives, from the false maxim of what is advantageous is lawful; from the specious epithet of ambition, given to lust of power; from the greatest cruelties, rapine, and murder, being termed heroick, and from the prince who is guilty of crimes, for which he punishes private men with death, being deified by the mouths of flatterers. But they will find they are in the eyes of Rimac no more than men; and their wanton abuse of power will be as severely punished, as that power had been ill understood. The example of a sovereign is very efficacious. The court forms itself to the taste and bias of the prince, and the common people copy after the court. Consequently, tyranny in the kingdom of a cruel prince will be propagated to the lowest rank, and humanity be banished from among his subjects; avarice, where the prince is tinctured with that mean vice, will make his ministers voraciously plunder the people to gratify the sordid passion of their master, and to share in the plunder; and the people, as they have not power, will apply themselves to the study of all the little dirty tricks and artifices, all the infamous schemes and villainies to prey upon one another. Thus the ambition of a prince, that has the unjust

concupiscence of adding still to his dominions by robbing his neighbours, will taint those near him; and may perhaps inspire his ministers to copy his example, and raise themselves by his downfall. I will,' continued he, 'give you an example of this in your own family. Your father was not satisfied with the extended dominions which he inherited from his ancestors; but, led by a false notion of glory, which indeed flows only from virtuous actions, invaded and subdued the states of his nearest neighbours, and meditated an universal monarchy, as his success had greatly elated him and enlarged his ambitious views. While his youth and vigour lasted, he himself headed his armies; but in the decline of his days, he entrusted them to his favourite, who was also his first minister, a man who had gained his affections by his obsequious behaviour and incessant flatteries. This general immediately formed the design of supplanting your father, and of transferring the throne to himself and family; I must tell you, he neither feared Rimac, nor valued man, and had nothing but his own interest in view. No wonder he repaid your father's accumulated favours with ingratitude, for who is not bound down by religion will hardly be restrained by a point of honour. Your father, abandoning himself to an indolent luxurious life, left the disposal of all posts in the government and army to his favourite, who made an ill use of his master's confidence, or rather weakness, strengthening himself with a great train of dependents, who were given to understand, that the continuance or augmentation of his power was the only security of their fortunes. You were an obstacle to his views; wherefore, as your excelling both in the form of your person, the endowments of your mind, and in the performance of those princely exercises in which you had been trained up, had gained you the envy of the young nobility, he took advantage of it; and by frequently speaking of you, as a prince of a haughty and tyrannical disposition, wrought their envy up to an inveterate hatred, and forced your father, as you too well know, to send you into banishment.

## H O U R LXXXIX.

THIS step of the king's he represented to the common people as a most unnatural act of barbarity; asking, what they could expect from a tyrant, who could so inhumanly treat his only son, for no other reason, but his virtue being a reproach to his own vicious course of life, which was a scandal to human nature. In a word, if they tolerated this cruelty, and suffered the loss of their prince, whose banishment was only a prelude to his death, as it was but a short step from the disgrace of a prince to his grave, they might expect he would not spare them in either their lives or properties. In short, he irritated the common people against their sovereign, by a detail of imaginary evils, and made them the instruments of his king's death; his own exaltation, and of their misery; by being the very tyrant he had painted your father, and securing to himself the throne, by the murder of all the ancient nobility and honest men, and by raising to dignity the meanest and most profligate wretches; their wickedness being to him the strongest recommendation. These make the unhappy people sensible of the difference between an usurped and lawful power, by treating them as abject slaves, over whom they exercise a despotick sway, the just reward of their rebellion. Believe me, prince, to return to what I was saying before I gave your father's example, that a sovereign who does not set out with a fund of probity, and discourage all low circumvention, deceit, and false appearances in his ministers, must be ever uneasy, and never certain that he is rightly informed. Were there no over-ruling power, were religion a politick institution, princes, for whose sakes this institution must be supposed to have been published to curb the multitude, must be very impolitick to ridicule, by their course of life, the greatest security, the strongest barrier of their power. But this is not the case. There is an over-ruling, an omniscient, an omniformant Being, whom we know by his attributes and works, which have informed us of the former: and man may assure himself, as he is an emanation from that divinity, and in a state of probation while

upon earth, that he either approaches near to, or is removed at a distance from him, as his life is agreeable, or repugnant to those attributes; and an entire separation from Rimac, or despair grounded on consciousness of man's impurities, is the greatest torture that can be suffered; far exceeding any infiction which less affects the mind, though more terrifying to the beholders, if any, as few are, and that by our power alone, admitted to see the miseries of the wicked in their last state.

Having said this, the earth opened, and an ocean of liquid flame appeared, which seemed impervious; but upon Gaiodesca's advancing it divided, and left them a free passage to a gloomy region, which received no light but what resulted from the fiery sea. Their ears were here saluted with the most terrible shrieks, the noise of chains and whips, which struck the prince with a panick fear, and erected the hair of his head. The air of this place was so very stifling hot, foggy, and of such a noisome smell, that he could never have supported it, had he not been assisted by Gaiodesca, who gave him a bottle, which being snelt to, was a preventative, not only to the venomous effects of this pestilential air, but even to the stench, which he was no longer sensible of. The ground was covered with the most hideous and most venomous serpents of enormous size; and birds of the most frightful make, armed with monstrous beaks and talons, screaming terribly, hovered over their heads; the sulphureous sands on which they trod rising with sudden gusts of wind like mountain seas, threatened destruction, but fell into a level surface when near Gaiodesca. This plain led them to a mountain full of caverns, out of which issued rivers of liquid fire. They ascended this seeming inaccessible mountain with as little difficulty as if they had travelled upon a carpet-ground, and descended the other side, covered with a deep snow and monstrous rocks of ice. Nothing human, or appertaining to and dwelling on the convexity of the earth, could have supported the piercing cold, but by a supernatural assistance. At the foot of the hill, they entered upon a large plain of ice and snow. 'These,' said the virgin, 'are waters congealed, which your majesty can scarcely conceive, and of which I could have no idea, had it not been revealed to me; and, indeed, I ought to have



‘ have given your majesty this definition, before I had mentioned the torture of this excessive cold, which is beyond all comparison with that which we feel when the sun is hid from us, and sharp winds with rains make us tremble. — At the end of this plain was a magnificent structure. ‘ Here,’ said Gaiodesca, ‘ is the judgment-seat of the avenging angel of the great Rimac, who examines every the minutest action, idle words, lascivious thoughts, and unjust designs of men, from the book of their conscience, in which they stand recorded, and passes sentence according to their demerits. He now sits upon the examination of those who inhabit the hemisphere, which you have no notion of, and who as little know any thing of your part of the world; a people whom I have already said, will one day punish the idolatry of your descendants, though many ages will intervene. It is not lawful for you to enter this hall, but as the condemned pass, I will point out to you their crimes, and acquaint you with the sentence passed upon them: I mean such of them as may prove a lesson for your future government, if it shall please Rimac to restore you either to your own right, or to the kingdom of your lovely queen. But here come a couple of wretches, linked together in chains of glowing metal. The ropes about their necks, which sent them out of the world, by a just yet a too mild punishment, will be a constant and galling memento of their master’s ingratitude, for whom they harraressed the people, and to whose resentment he meanly gave them up. The king whose ministers these were, was extremely covetous, a vice which, of all others, is the most abject in a sovereign. To gratify the avarice of their master, they had a set of profligate wretches in pay, who accused the wealthiest among the people of crimes against the state; and as these their judges were interested in finding them guilty, they condemned them to die. By this sentence they seized the effects of the pretended traitors to their master’s use, and impoverished their relations to procure a pardon. This oppression at length grew intolerable, and the people rising to protect their rights, the king pacified them by giving these instruments of his tyranny into their hands, who immediately hung them up. They are now

condemned to be eternally linked together in perpetual darkness; and as they preyed upon the people, a wolf is to feed upon them, and what he devours is minutely to be renewed, that their torments may have no end. Yonder prince, who is now coming out with an infernal guard of fiends surrounding him, usurped the throne of his brother, whose eyes he put out, and whom he thrust into a loathsome prison, where he perished miserably, is sentenced to sit upon a burning throne with a diadem on his head also red hot. The wretch that follows him, by a cloak of uncommon sanctity, betrayed his prince, and by abusing his power, was the cause of his being dethroned and murdered. He is condemned to a dungeon of serpents, to be stung eternally without respite. You see flying before a number of people pelting him with fire-balls, a wretch who overturned the liberties of his country, to enrich himself and family. He is sentenced to be thus to all eternity persecuted, vilified and hunted by the people whom he had ruined. In a word,’ said the virgin, ‘ there was never a publick crime but was here punished.’ Gaiodesca then shewed him the quarter where particular crimes, as private murders, rapines, cheats, parricides, uncleanness, adultery, theft, breach of trust, perjuries, blasphemy, ingratitude, &c. met with their just reward. She then returned with the prince to her own palace, and advising him to make his advantage of what he had seen, she and the house disappeared, and he found himself at the gate of the temple in the Miraculous Island, into which a priest introduced him. Having consulted the oracle, he received for answer,—‘ Persevere and prosper.’

The priest who had admitted him into the temple, conducted him to a stately apartment, where he saw Parisphaquaw, his father and sisters. They embraced each other at this happy and unexpected meeting. The venerable minister told him, that the oracle had assured them of a speedy end being put to their troubles; that his daughter’s husband, thought to be slain, was alive; that they should see again their native land, and a continued scene of prosperous events would wipe away the remembrance of their past sufferings. The prince sincerely congratulated them on these happy tidings. He

afterwards gave them an account of what had befallen him, since the time that they were snatched away from him; and then asked the meaning of their continuing so long at the temple; the old gentleman answered, that they were ordered to perform their devotions in the temple for the space of three moons. The prince asked, what was become of the men and canoes which had brought Parisphaquaw and the ladies, and was told, that Elebatoska provided for their support, and that they were well and safe from all danger. The prince having passed the space of a moon in this delightful place, every day visiting the sea-coast, and meditating the means for his getting thence, as none durst give him assistance, and the departure of Parisphaquaw and his family being uncertain, he perceived a large cave, into which his curiosity led him. Though he saw no opening but at the mouth, by which the light might be admitted, yet it was every where illuminated. He rambled in this cave, till having lost the entrance, and sought in vain to return to it, he laid him down to rest, as he was heartily fatigued. When he awoke, he found near him fruits and liquors for his refreshment. Having satisfied his hunger and thirst, he arose and travelled, till again tired, he sought repose, and again found in awaking wherewithal to support him. Thus he went on for several days, and thought he heard the sea rolling over his head the greater part of the time. At length he perceived an outlet which opened to a large plain, where he saw two armies drawn up, and on the point of engaging.

#### H O U R X C.

**H**E addressed himself to one of the soldiers, and asked to what princes these different troops belonged. 'We,' said the man, 'are the loyal subjects of the Queen of Hattun Rucana, who have taken arms to deliver her from the usurper of her kingdom, the magician Phampataborac, whose army is now drawn up against us as against rebels, for such they stile us, who have all along preserved our duty untainted, and asserted the right of our injured sovereign. We would have remained quiet under the dominion of the usurper, both on account of the smallness of our

number, for the greater part of our countrymen, allured by posts of preferment, or large presents, or intimidated by the severity with which such have been treated who have unsuccessfully appeared in the cause of our injured mistress, have gone over to the party of Phampataborac; both for this reason, I say, and the absence of Prince Houac, the consort of our sovereign, we would have remained quiet had not our oppressions been insupportable: for we are informed by the oracle, till he is at our head we must not hope for success. We are therefore only on the defensive.'—'Am I, then,' said the prince, 'in the kingdom of Hattun Rucana?'—'You are, most certainly,' replied the other. 'Who is the general that commands you?'—'It is,' said the soldier, 'a stranger named Pahama?'—'Can you immediately bring me,' said the prince, 'to your general?'—'You see him,' answered the man, 'exhorting the troops at the head of the first line.' The prince made up to his friend in great haste; was immediately known and embraced by him. 'My dear prince,' said Pahama, 'the great Rimac has assuredly sent you to give us victory: your arrival will give new life and courage to your subjects. I will instantly acquaint them with it by proclamation.'—'My dear Pahama,' said Houac, 'do nothing with precipitation. I can be of no advantage to you, neither can you hope for success, while I continue deprived of the lance and talismans, which are in the temple of Rimac. Endeavour to come to terms with the enemy, and send out a messenger to propose a parley.' While he was speaking, a great shout from the enemy's army made them imagine they were beginning the onset; but looking that way, they found it was occasioned by the arrival of Phampataborac, who was mounted on a griffin, and descended to head his troops. Pahama followed the prince's advice, and sent one to propose some means of accommodation, but he returned with an absolute refusal of listening to other terms than those of the queen's party throwing down their arms, and surrendering at discretion. He gave them till the next morning, to consider whether they would or would not accept them. Pahama was for rejecting these infamous proposals with the scorn they merited; but Houac advised him to accept the



the delay, as no one knew what a small space of time might produce. A council was called, to which the prince made himself known, but strictly enjoined their concealing from the army his being among them, as it might, from the dependance they had on the oracle, animate them to come to battle, which he apprehended, and but too justly, would turn to their disadvantage; for till he could find means to recover the lance and talismans, he should ever be of opinion, that pacific measures would be the most salutary. Sunderpapaw, one of the council, who was a tool of the usurper's, and who had mixed with these loyalists to betray them, immediately sent Phampataborac advice of the prince's arrival. The magician, on hearing this news, offered a free pardon to them all if they would deliver up Houac. This was a villainy none of the army, which was extremely elated with hearing the prince was come, would be guilty of: wherefore Sunderpapaw in the night, with a party of traitors which attended him, seized and carried the prince to Phampataborac's army. He the next morning ordered a pile of wood to be raised, which was soon done; as one side of the plain was bounded by a forest, which covered the right wing of his army, and in sight of his friends brought out and bound the prince on the top of the pile. To which letting fire, Houac was instantly involved in the flames; but to the great surprize of both armies, and to the confusion of the magician, a brighter flame than the rest wound round the prince, and carried him into the air out of the sight of all. Before they had well recovered their astonishment, they saw him return mounted on a fiery dragon, bearing in his hand the lance of the prophet: at the sight of which the magician bestrid his griffin, and endeavoured to save himself by flight; but the prince pursued him through the air, and having overtaken him, with a stroke of his lance drove him headlong and breathless to the earth. His griffin with horrid yellings, which struck the boldest in the armies with a panick fear, fled from before Houac, and was lost in the clouds. The dragon descending as soon as the prince alighted, vanished. Pahama ran with open arms to embrace him. 'My dear friend,' said Houac, 'an humble resignation to the will of the great Rimac has, by restoring me to his favour, given me possession of

' the lance of the prophet, my talismans,  
' a transient sight of my adorable queen,  
' and my lost eye.

Phampataborac's army having been witness of his death, deputed a general to offer their submission, with a surrender of their arms, and to throw themselves entirely upon his and the queen's mercy. The prince sent them word, that they might depend upon his intercession with their sovereign. On receiving this answer, they threw down their weapons, and saluted him and his forces with shouts of joy, and the two armies united. The prince from an eminence harangued the troops; mitigated the guilt of those who had sided with the usurper, by throwing it upon the necessity they were under; extolled the fortitude of those who could neither be intimidated by his power, nor allured by his bribes, to act contrary to the duty they owed their queen and country; exhorted both parties to bury all animosities in oblivion, and to have no other strife but that of excelling each other in the love of their country, and the procuring it's peace and happiness, which he would to the utmost of his power endeavour to advance. He then thanked those brave men who had appeared in arms for their queen, and applauded those who returned from, instead of persisting in their error. This speech was received with the greatest acclamations of the united army; then placing himself at their head, he marched towards the metropolis of Hattun Rucana, whither he had sent one of the swiftest runners to acquaint the princess of his approach; but she had, before the arrival of this messenger, been made acquainted with every event by the Purocama, or inhabitants of the fiery element, who had, by order of Rimac, taken Prince Houac into her protection; snatched him from the flames, which she had deprived of their burning quality, conveyed him to the temple of Rimac, put the lance and talismans into his possession, and one of them transforming herself into a fiery dragon, put his enemy into his power. The queen, informed of the safety of her beloved consort, and her happy situation, called together a council, acquainted her people with the unexpected and joyful change, and commanded public sacrifices and thanksgivings in all the temples; in which she having been cheerfully obeyed, and her subjects returning to their duty, she, at the head of all the inhabitants,

led

led by the priests crowned with garlands, went to meet her prince, when she was informed by messengers, that he was within a few hours march of the city. Never meeting was more moving. Before they embraced, each knelt and offered solemn thanks to Heaven for the mercies they had received, and ordered sacrifices to be offered before they would indulge to their mutual satisfaction. These solemn acts of adoration being performed, the prince strained his lovely queen to his breast, while she bedewed his cheek with tears of joy, which was too great to allow for some time utterance to their words. The queen, notwithstanding the transports she felt, did not forget what was due to Phasima, who would accompany her in the procession, and whom she had made known to Prince Houac. He saluted her with all the respect due to her exalted rank, and jointly, with his beloved consort, assured her of their friendship and assistance to restore her. For six moons after this happy change, the altars daily smoked, the temples re-echoed the praises of Rimac, and the people, made sensible by the oppression of Phampataborac, of the difference between their native lawful sovereign, and a strange prince who had usurped the throne, gave all possible demonstrations of an unfeigned joy.

The day after Houac arrived at the palace, he began to give the queen an account of all that had befallen him; which, as they were often interrupted by publick affairs and congratulatory compliments, he did not finish before the moon, which had begun, had half run it's course. In return, the queen gave him a detail of what had happened to her from the time of their separation to that of their meeting.

'Thus, Sir,' said the select virgin, 'I have given you, in the story of Prince Houac, an example of fortitude and resignation to Providence, which overcame very severe trials, and crowned his humility and patience with the greatest happiness this life is capable of; for he not only was blessed with the most beautiful and virtuous of her sex, but with a queen who commanded a great and warlike nation, who made him the joyful father of a numerous issue; but he also recovered the throne of his ancestors, was prosperous in all undertakings; enjoyed a long and happy life, beloved by his sub-

jects, revered by other sovereigns, and died in an old age, lamented by all who had ever heard his name, on account of his virtues. Will the Ynca of Peru be second to any in greatness of soul, and suffer himself to be depressed by what he may term an adverse fate! Will he fold his arms, and, desponding, yield himself to be carried away with the stream! I mean, will he, by not making use of his reason, be hurried away by his passions! Will he rather chuse to become a prey to black despair, than shine an example of heroick virtue, by proving he has a mind out of the reach of fortune, which, however severe in her persecutions, cannot triumph over his constancy! Will he expect obedience from subjects, yet be so unjust to refuse his submission to the gods! But, Sir,' continued she, 'if you will suffer yourself to be surpassed in fortitude by a prince; yet surely you will not allow a princess to out-go you in those noble, those exalted sentiments, which render mortals dear to Heaven, and engage it's favour and protection!

#### H O U R XCI.

'WHEN I mention the fortitude of a princess, it is that of the Queen of Hattun Rucana.'—'What,' said the Ynca, 'are the sufferings of Prince Houac to the affliction which I labour under? Was he driven from his regal state, and made a prisoner by his son? No; a subject, who owed his being in the world to another, who was not indebted to him for a paternal care, who had no obligation to him on the score of a tender affection, usurped his throne. It is true, rebellion in a subject is a crime of a black and horrid nature; but it receives a deeper dye when a son enters upon it, and breaks the bond, not only of allegiance, but of blood. None but a parent can have a just idea of what I suffer; a trial which would, perhaps, have overcome the constancy of Prince Houac. But let me hear the story of the Queen of Hattun Rucana.'—'I shall obey your commands,' replied the select virgin, 'and, if you please to honour me with your attention, I will also conclude the respective stories of Phasima and Pahama, which may, I hope, prove



as entertaining and instructive as any I have yet had the honour of relating to your majesty, to whom the providential goodness of Heaven has sent me by supernatural means to allure you into the paths of virtue (from which you had suffered yourself to be led by the violence of your passions) with examples of true fortitude; a virtue however boasted by many, is possessed by those only who pay due honour to the gods, from whom proceed every endowment of the mind, every embellishment of the soul: it cannot be supposed, that they will bestow the choicest of their blessings on those who either neglect their worship or defy their power.—‘Postpone,’ said the king, your moral reflections, and acquaint me with the remainder of the queen’s story.’ The select virgin answered—‘Suppose then, dread sovereign, that you hear the Queen of Hattun Rucana speaking to her beloved consort, to whom she gives an account of her adventures.’—‘The morning after our nuptials, my dear prince, I was greatly surprised at my awakening to find myself in a large forest, and in the utmost concern to know what was become of you. I arose from the mossy spot on which I lay, and called you by name, loud as I could raise my voice, but convinced, after some time, of my loss of him whom I valued beyond all comparison more than my kingdom, I ran in a manner distracted through the wood, without knowing whither I wandered, till finding my spirits fail, I laid me down under a cedar, where I fell asleep, and dreamed, if it was not rather a vision, that a grave but beautiful matron came to me, and said—“You grieve, my daughter, that you are afflicted, but have not once made the least reflection on the cause which brought you into your present deplorable situation; for what can be more wretched than to lie under the displeasure of the great Rimac, except the being entirely abandoned by him! However, despond not; a confession, and sincere repentance of your fault, may regain his favour, and restore you to what your error has deprived you of. You are not, indeed, the sole cause of this; the dissolute lives of your subjects, and the treachery of some of your council, have not a little contributed to a re-

volution, which will make such havoc, and cost such a number of lives, that many years of peace and plenty will scarcely repair the damage.”—‘When I awoke I began to examine my past life, and could attribute my misfortunes to nothing but my too great complaisance to you, which alone caused my neglecting of those sacrifices, and that solemn adoration and invocation due to Rimac, and which omitted, have always brought severe punishments on the offenders. I immediately acknowledged and bewailed my folly; the tears I shed, and the hopes I conceived from my dream, if it was not somewhat more, in a great measure alleviated the grief I laboured under. I wandered some days in this forest, supported by wild fruits and water, before I found any track; at length I luckily fell into a path which led to a small village, where I was informed that the forest was called Cumaca, as was the village, and both were in the dominions of Hattun Rucana, which were in the power of Phampataborac, who, taking advantage of the queen’s absence, stolen away by some magician, and never since heard of, had gotten possession. This account of myself and affairs was given me by the villagers, an hospitable people, who received and treated me with great humanity. I learned from them, that it was but two days journey for a good walker from this village to Santipawaw, the metropolis of that province, and that the residence of Prince Micapha, my relation, and hereditary governor of the province, from which the metropolis took its name, was not a full day’s journey distant from us. This news greatly revived me. I knew the prince religious, brave, and loyal; and who, beside the band of blood, being of the royal house, was attached to me by the ties of gratitude; as I had distinguished him from all my other relations and subjects, by a particular regard, and a number of favours. I asked, if any of the village would deliver a message from me to the prince, who would well reward him for his trouble. A young man readily offered his service, and by him I sent the prince word, that I had lately seen the queen, and had from her a message to deliver him; and for that reason, as I was

" I was fatigued with a long journey,  
 " hoped he would condescend to come  
 " to me without loss of time. In a word,  
 " this message brought him the next day  
 " before sun-set. As soon as I saw him,  
 " I made signs, that he should pay me  
 " no marks of deference, though, in-  
 " deed, this caution was unnecessary to  
 " one of his prudence, who, as I before  
 " had done, enjoined the messenger not  
 " to let any one know what message I had  
 " charged him to deliver. We went to-  
 " gether into a room by ourselves, when  
 " he prostrated himself at my feet, and  
 " in pathetick terms expressed his joy for  
 " my safety, but lamented the unhappy  
 " situation of my affairs, which would  
 " not suffer him to give me refuge at his  
 " habitation, where I might be provided  
 " for in a manner somewhat more suit-  
 " able to my high rank. " For," said  
 " he, " though Phampataborac's policy  
 " has left me, in appearance, the go-  
 " vernment of my province; yet, in  
 " fact, I have no more than the empty  
 " title, by the number of troops which  
 " are quartered in the metropolis and  
 " large towns, as well as in the villages,  
 " so near the one to the other, that they  
 " may be assembled in a body in two  
 " days. Besides, he has such a number  
 " of spies over my actions, and dispersed  
 " every where among the loyal party,  
 " that nothing but the immediate hand  
 " of Heaven can restore you to your  
 " throne. You may, from what I have  
 " said, judge it would be dangerous to  
 " you to be with me, as he would  
 " doubtless have immediate notice of a  
 " stranger's lodging at my house, and  
 " easily discover who you are. That  
 " I have not," continued the prince,  
 " laid these difficulties before you, to  
 " excuse my doing my duty, in using  
 " my utmost efforts for your interest, as  
 " my actions shall convince you; but  
 " that you may not attribute to my want  
 " of zeal, the precautions and time,  
 " which prudence and your service  
 " oblige me to take, to have even a  
 " prospect of success. We are all in  
 " the hands of Rimac, and what seems  
 " impracticable to short-sighted mortals  
 " is easy to omnipotence. May he in-  
 " spire me the means to serve you; that  
 " my endeavours may be as prosperous  
 " as your cause is just. I would have  
 " you continue where you are, as the  
 " people of this village have but little  
 " commerce with those of Santipawaw,

" till I can better provide for your secu-  
 " rity, which shall be with all the expe-  
 " dition that the required secrecy will  
 " admit." I answered him in few words,  
 " that I had ever esteemed him the man  
 " I found him, religious, loyal, and  
 " prudent; that I would be guided by  
 " his advice, and hoped from the justice  
 " of my cause, and piety of his life, that  
 " Rimac had chosen him the instrument  
 " to deliver myself and country from op-  
 " pression. " Madam," said he, " the  
 " ways of Rimac are inscrutable. He  
 " sometimes suffers his most zealous vo-  
 " untaries to become the scorn and con-  
 " tempt of the most profligate; where-  
 " fore, let us rather build upon his  
 " mercy than the goodness of our cause.  
 " Let us act according to the dictates  
 " of a conscience which fears to offend  
 " him, and leave the issue to his provi-  
 " dence." As a longer conference, he  
 " thought, might be taken notice and  
 " talked of by the villagers, he took his  
 " leave, with a promise of letting me  
 " hear from him as soon as it was con-  
 " venient. I continued in the village,  
 " where I was treated with more respect  
 " from the time of Micapha's visit. It  
 " was the fourth part of a moon before  
 " I had any message from him; at the  
 " end of which space a swift runner  
 " brought me word, that the prince de-  
 " sired I would be at the end of the vil-  
 " lage about the middle of the following  
 " night, where I should find people who  
 " would conduct me to a place of safety.  
 " I obeyed this summons, and found  
 " twenty men armed with bows and  
 " lances; and others with a hammock  
 " to carry me, to the number of thirty-  
 " two, to relieve one another. I travelled  
 " till towards day-break, when we en-  
 " tered a wood, where Prince Micapha,  
 " with about a dozen friends, met and  
 " conducted me to a spacious cave, which  
 " he had furnished with necessaries, and  
 " in which I found some ladies of my  
 " court in whom he could confide to  
 " attend me. As the prince and his  
 " friends had watched all night, and  
 " that I was somewhat fatigued with  
 " my journey and want of sleep, we re-  
 " tired to several cavities in the rocky  
 " cell to rest. When I awoke, we entered  
 " into a consultation on what steps were  
 " proper to be taken for recovering my  
 " kingdom. My council consisted of  
 " the thirteen I have taken notice of.  
 " One of these proposed assassinating



the usurper; but to my unspeakable satisfaction it was unanimously rejected, as an action too black for a crowned head to countenance, and as too impolitic, since it might equally expose a lawful prince and an usurper, should the mean example be given. Some were of opinion, that if I shewed myself to my people, they would immediately desert Phampataborac, whom they secretly hated, though their interest or fear made them outwardly espouse his cause. This was rejected as too hazardous. The slavish temper of the people was too well known to Prince Micapha, to build any hopes of succeeding upon the ground of their courage. "I own," said he, "we were once as famous for actions as we are now infamous for our degeneracy. Oppression on a generous spirit is like the bending a bow, which recovers with a spring proportionable to the strength which draws it; but on the dastardly it has a quite different effect. Men who have a sense of honour, and are animated by a love of their country, will sooner hazard a hundred lives, had they so many, than submit their necks to a foreign yoke; but alas, how many of this cast; and how many thousand for every one of this character; who would bear any, the most abject, the most wretched life, rather than make the least attempt, accompanied with danger, to shake off the burden under which they groan! I would rather, Madam, advise your fleeing to the King of Misaguaquaw, and require his assistance. If he will furnish you with some veteran troops, the brave and loyal of your subjects will immediately join them. I give this advice, as it is not impossible but his generosity for a distressed sovereign may get the better of his policy; though I much fear the interest he has in seeing your fertile country wasted, and the spirits of your subjects broken by the oppressed hand of a tyrant, that he may hereafter find us an easy conquest, will get the better, and you will be refused."

## H O U R XXII.

"I," said Micapha, "he has such idle and distant views, he will rather assist the queen, that we may

"weaken ourselves by a civil war."—"But will he not," replied Lancawaw, "apprehend, that a civil war will enure us to arms and hardships, which the indolence we have fallen into by a long peace, and the meanness of spirit we have contracted by the tyranny exercised during this short usurpation, make us now tremble to think of?" After a number of schemes proposed, and long debates, it was concluded to try, under hand, how the better sort stood affected, that we might from thence form a judgment of the number we might rely upon to appear in my behalf. At night my thirteen counsellors took their leave, but the fifty-two men and the ladies continued with me, and every night sufficient provision was sent us by the care of Micapha. I continued in this situation the better part of a moon, and in that time often had messages from Micapha, which gave me hopes of success. At length he came and told me, that he found all the ancient nobility firmly attached to my interest; that he had conferences in person with most of them, and by trusty messengers he had concerted measures with those whom he could not conveniently see or with prudence allow of coming to him. That the fourth day of the ensuing moon was agreed upon for an insurrection in several parts of the kingdom, to distract Phampataborac, and that he would that day, at the head of a considerable body of troops, proclaim my return, and shew me in Santipawaw to the people, who were most of them zealous in my service; "But," added he, "how these troops which I shall collect will behave in the face of an enemy, whom they have been, though but a short time, accustomed to obey, I will not take upon me to answer: I own to you, that my dependence is more on Providence than on this undisciplined multitude. If Rimac is with us we need fear nothing; but if the finger of Providence is against us, the bravest and most expert troops will no more avail us than a flock of sheep. Apply yourself to him, and beg his protection, for without it vain are the hopes which we place in men. He can inspire the most timid with the courage of a lion, and intimidate the bravest; to him recommend us and your cause. Prepare yourself

“ yourself for the worst that can happen, by resignation to the will of Heaven, and no misfortune can surprize you; and resolve, if he pleases to bless your arms and reinstate you, to make him such return as you are capable of, by being yourself an example of piety; by encouraging the good, and severely punishing the prophane; by causing the religious rites and ceremonies to be regularly observed, and the priesthood held in veneration. In a word, by establishing the worship of the gods, especially of the Supreme Deity, to whom the rest are no more than ministers, in such a manner, that the lives of the priests may be such as become their dignity, instead of bringing, as they lately have, a scandal upon religion. When you have provided for what regards religious matters, which ought first and principally to employ the minds of sovereigns, remember that you are the minister of Heaven, to do justice to those who are submitted to your authority, and in this you are to know no distinctions, but by yourself, and those whom you shall employ, you are to act with the strictest impartiality, and suffer no oppression, no injury, to go unpunished. Let not the meanness of any person cloud over his merit, nor exalted rank be a screen to vice. Reward the former, and punish the latter, and be deaf to all interest made to deprecate the execution of your sentence.

“ Excuse,” said he, “ this liberty, which proceeds from your having formerly delegated too great power to some who have not made that use of it you designed they should, and flows from a heart truly zealous for your welfare.”

“ I repeat to you, my dear prince, this advice of Micapha, because, since it has pleased Rimac to give me the opportunity, I am resolved literally to follow it. Not to be tedious in my story, the day appointed came, and I entered Santipawaw at the head of a great number of troops, which Micapha had privately assembled by the assistance of his friends. The garrison was secured the night before by the inhabitants, in whose houses they were quartered, and I was received with the greatest joy and acclamations possible. Messengers came from several parts of

the kingdom, with accounts of my friends being in arms.

“ The next day we marched to join those who were nearest to Santipawaw, where we left a good garrison; and as we went forward, the prince, in my name, proclaimed a general pardon to all my subjects. In two days march we joined Lancawaw, at the head of a considerable body of men, which, with those who came to us on our rout, strengthened our army so greatly, that it was resolved in council to march directly to the metropolis of Hattun Rucana, and rather hazard all in a decisive battle, than by protracting the war ruin my subjects by daily devastations.

“ In a word, this was put in execution; in our march our number increased to double, and we encamped in a few days within sight of the army, which Phampataborac was leading to meet and give us battle. The next day we engaged; but the right wing of my troops could not support the fierce assault of the left of the enemy, but were disordered, and being closely pressed, turned their backs, and sought their safety in flight. Lancawaw, who commanded these poltroons, did all he could to stop and turn them upon their enemies, but all in vain, neither his words nor example were of any effect; wherefore with a few brave friends he desperately threw himself in the thick of his foes, where they dearly sold their lives. The main body, in which I was, made an obstinate resistance, animated by my presence, and the bravery of Micapha, who shewed equal skill and bravery; but the right wing being entirely defeated, and Phampataborac forbidding the pursuit of those cowards, brought those troops which composed his left wing on the rear of our main body, which obliged us to front two ways; and in the interim our left wing gave way, and fought retreating for some time, till by a false report of Micapha's being killed, lost all courage, and were entirely routed. We had now all the army of Phampataborac upon our main body, as he would suffer no pursuit: but as this was composed of the flower of my troops, and a great number of the nobility served in it volun- teers, we made great havock of our al-  
sailants,



failants, and lost not an inch of ground, notwithstanding the great odds in numbers, but fought as resolved to die or conquer, till night put an end to the battle.

We were so weakened by this obstinacy, that it was thought expedient to take advantage of the obscurity to seek our safety, in withdrawing to the great forest, which we reached by break of day; and dispersing in small bodies, we thought of nothing more than providing for our security, not being a number sufficient to make any figure in the field to oppose the conqueror, Micapha, with a small body, staid with me, and we were consulting what measures to take, when we found ourselves encompassed by the enemy, who supposing we should fly to the forest for shelter, had taken the same rout. The few troops which remained with me, were chosen by Micapha, to the number of a hundred, all officers, and men of family. They stood the attack of the enemy, which was from every part, with amazing intrepidity, and often repelled the assailants. At length, as if animated with one soul, they all attacked and broke through one particular part of the encompassing foes, who had been foroughly handled, that they did not care for pursuing us; and we marched on till night without interruption. It was then resolved, that every one should do the best he could to shift for himself. Micapha alone staid with me, and we passed that night at the foot of a cotton-tree. The next morning some of the enemy were within hearing, but I had lost Micapha; and what surprized me as much as I was grieved, was my running up the tree, under which I had lain, with amazing agility. I hid myself among the branches and leaves till the men belonging to Phampataborac's army were out of sight, and I could see nothing but a monkey which sat on a bough over my head, with it's arms folded, and in a seeming dejected posture.

#### THE SECRET HISTORY OF MAMA OELLO, PRINCESS ROYAL OF PERU.

**I**N the imperial city of Cusco, lived the charming Mama Oello, eldest daughter of Ynca Manco Copac, by his Queen Coya Mama, a young princess of admi-

rable accomplishments, who possessed a large share of the beauties of the mind, as well as those of the body, and fortunate in every thing but love. How happy was the fair Mama Oello, till enslaved by this inveigling passion! How did it imbitter her days, and make her life become a burden to her! Not that this lovely princess had any reason to complain of the indifference of her beloved Cacique, (for a Cacique he was, and one of the noblest extraction amongst those that adorned Ynca Manco Copac's court, that had got the ascendant over this lady's heart) he glowed with a mutual passion, and fell a grateful victim to her charms; but another obstacle, and that unsurmountable, nipt her growing hopes in the bud, and made her for ever despair of enjoying her heart's desire.

There had been a law enacted by the emperor and the states of Peru, that no princess of the blood royal of the Ynca's should be suffered to marry a Peruvian subject, or any foreign prince that was an idolater, but only one of the reformed religion, who worshipped the invisible Pacha-Cumac, and their father the Sun. How could the charming Mama Oello relish this severe restriction, which not only hinders her from being matched to her dearest Cacique, but to any one else that she might like, provided he was not of the proscribed sect! She consults with herself, and contrives, but all in vain, what method can there be left to get over such apparent difficulties, as she is obliged to encounter with? Distracted with ten thousand fears, she sends for her dearest Cacique, to see if between them both any expedient might be found to accomplish her wishes; but if it is all in vain, as she has but too great reason to suspect, yet it will be some mitigation to her pain (and that no small one) to soothe her cares in his engaging company. To this purpose, she dispatches away her trusty confidant, to acquaint the Cacique she had something to communicate to him, on which her happiness and his did depend.

This noble personage (who constantly attended her royal father's court, as being one of his Dica Vidida, that is, of those nobles who belonged to his bed-chamber) received the trusty messenger, and with an ominous concern first kissed and then unloosed the beloved seal, which soon discovered the uneasiness that his dearest princess laboured under. He

answers the fair-one's billet with all the tenderness he was master of, and expressed his design of waiting on her that evening.

Hardly was this affair transacted, and the confidant gone, but one of the Ynca's Curacas, or counsellors, comes to the disconsolate Cacique with a message from his sovereign, which informs him, that the Ynca had no farther occasion for his service, and therefore dismissed him, having received private intelligence that this Cacique was a greater favourite of his eldest daughter, the Princess Mama Oello, than ever he had been of his royal master, and thereupon forbade him the court. The before-dejected Cacique, now thunderstruck at these words, stood for some time senseless and confounded, not so much on the account of his losing his pension, (which was very considerable) but lest it should debar him the conversation of his dearest princess; but recovering himself out of his insensibility, returned the Curaca this answer; That it had been his highest ambition to serve the Ynca with the sincerest loyalty and affection, whilst his majesty had been pleased to honour him with his royal favour; but since it seemed good to his sacred highness to withdraw it, he patiently submitted to his sovereign's will and pleasure.

The Curaca being gone, the enamoured Cacique had time to ruminate on his present circumstances; 'And can there,' says he, 'be so great a crime in love? If nature has formed me of porcelain clay, (as our poets term it) of a finer mould than the majority of my fellow-creatures, how am I to blame? If fortune has destined me to charm those eyes which charm the world besides, how is it my fault? 'Tis decreed, 'tis decreed that I should captivate the fair Mama Oello; and who can resist fate? But alas! rigid laws and reasons of state forbid the accomplishment of our desires, as her letter too plainly intimates; why thought we not of this when first we embarked in the affair? We launched out in the midst of sun-shine, on a smooth sea, but now too late perceive the gathering clouds portend the impending storm; yet, my dearest princess, will I hazard all to see you once more, to take a long and last adieu, to wash thy cheeks with tears, to bid farewell to pleasure, courts, and love.' Then

rousing himself out of this melancholy soliloquy, he bends his steps towards the well-known apartment of his dearest princess; where gaining a ready admittance, (for as yet the princess had not been forbid the sight of him) he finds his fair-one bathed in tears, but yet charming in grief. Such a sight as this soon disheartened the already dejected Cacique, who perceived by her extraordinary concern, that something more than she had in her letter expressed, or he understood, distracted her mind. Then seizing her fair hand, and throwing himself at her feet—'Tell me, my dearest princess,' said he, 'tell me what other killing news you have to impart worse than your billet hinted, for I perceive by your excessive grief, and that deluge of tears you pour forth, that you have conceived some extraordinary trouble, which labours within your breast?'—'Arise,' says the fair disconsolate Mama Oello, 'arise, my dearest Cacique, and I will impart to you the torments of my soul. When I sent,' proceeded she, desiring him to sit, 'the trusty — to you this morning, that letter contained the sum of my affliction; and was not that affliction enough to think I must lose you; for ever lose you, because the laws of Peru forbid? But I was in hopes that I should have greatly alleviated my trouble by your good company, if a fresh cause of grief had not demanded fresh sorrow. —O ye gods! was it not enough for ye to debar me from the enjoyment of my dearest Cacique, but must ye destine me to the arms of one I hate? Why was I born of royal race? Why not rather a simple shepherdess, then should I have been happy in the embraces of my dearest Cacique. Hateful Peru! what are your laws to me? Happier had I been, if my royal father had never swayed this sceptre, nor my illustrious ancestors left the province of Hurin Capassa, their ancient patrimony, for these extensive dominions, whereby my sorrows are extended. Then should I have never seen my charming Loque Yupanqui, or not have seen him in vain. I have been raised higher only to be reduced the lower, and enjoy a miserable greatness.

'Wonder not, my dearest Cacique,' said the charming princess, pursuing her discourse, 'at what I am going to tell you; for since I wrote to you, the Ynca



‘ my father, and his chief Curaca Robilda, have paid me a visit, to inform me, that (for what they call reasons of state) I must surrender up my hand and heart (which last I never can to any but you) to Atabalipa, Prince of Quito; “ And to encourage you,” says the Ynca my father, “ cheerfully to obey my commands, I will make you a present of jewels of inestimable value, which I designed to dedicate to our father the Sun.”—“ And I,” says the old Curaca Robilda, “ will engage at the next convention of the Curacas and Caciques of this glorious empire, you receive an ample annuity out of the publick revenues, to render you more acceptable to Prince Atabalipa.”

‘ Thus you see, my much beloved Cacique,’ says the princess, giving him her hand, ‘ I must not only be deprived of you, the sole comfort I ever proposed the enjoyment of in this world, but be obliged to waste a wretched life in a foreign country, and another’s arms.’—“ And I,” replied the gallant Loque Yupanqui, interrupting his dearest princess at these last words, ‘ have a fresh scene of woe to discover to you.—I thank you,’ says he, ‘ O invisible Pacha-Cumac, and our father the Sun! that you have made me completely wretched!—Now, fortune, do your worst.’ Then after some pause, recollecting himself, he imparted to the weeping fair, the sorrowful message he had received from her royal father the Ynca, by the mouth of one of his chief Curacas, which enjoined him to leave the court, and return into his own province northward, beyond the great river Apurimac. That he had great reason to suspect the Curaca Robilda was at the bottom of it all, as well as the author of his banishment, as the projector of her marriage with Prince Atabalipa; that if she could procure this favourite to be discarded, they might (if not obtain the accomplishment of their desires) get some further respite to their misfortunes: he likewise informed her, that almost all the Curacas and Caciques of the Peruvian empire hated this Curaca Robilda; that the voice of the whole nation, and of the imperial city of Cusco, was against him; on account of his persuading her royal grandfather and father to impose heavy taxes on their subjects in time of peace;

that even in a publick convention of the Curacas and Caciques, some of them had not spared him; and that although by his immense treasures he had secured the majority of them to his interest, yet he did not fear, but the brave uncorrupted few that were left behind, would soon open the eyes of those that were dazzled with the splendor of his yellow metal. ‘ You know,’ says he, ‘ my dearest Mama Oello, that the Curaca Posink has always attacked him, and I doubt not but he will second us (as far as lies in his power) in procuring the fall of his enemy and ours. Besides, I know the Curaca Robilda is now projecting a scheme (which I believe must prove fatal to him) since the convention of the states now assembled have been petitioned against it by the provinces of Caranca Ullaca, Lipi, Chicha, Ampara, and most of the rest. You know, moreover,’ adds the disconsolate Cacique, ‘ that the Curaca Robilda is but an upstart; not one of them, or of their family, who joined with your illustrious ancestors, the first Yncas, in civilizing these nations; in diverting them from their superstitious idolatries; from adoration of tygers, lakes, rivers, and serpents, to the true worship of the invisible Pacha-Cumac, and our father the Sun; that although it is strongly reported, and by some believed, that the illustrious Ynca who immediately preceded your royal father, distinguished him by some marks of honour, for his good services towards him, yet the Curaca has never been pleased to own his titles, or to have his ears bored to hang jewels in, or to cover his head with a black tress.’ That he, for his part, had given her the most sensible proof of his esteem, since now, even this moment, while he is speaking to her, he hazards his life, if he is betrayed or discovered. The fair princess was going to answer, but both recollecting they had over-staid their time, were obliged, though with the utmost reluctance, to part. ‘ Remember, dearest Cacique,’ said the languishing princess, ‘ remember your Mama Oello, when you get beyond the great river Apurimac, and I will let you know by a trusty messenger, when the storm is a little blown over, how we may meet again; and as to Prince Atabalipa, you know my heart.’—“ Can you be ever absent to

‘to your Loque Yupanqui,’ says the enamoured Cacique? ‘No; were I ten thousand leagues from you, beyond the snowy mountains of Challampa, yet would you be always present to me. Adieu, fairest Mama Oello! charming princess, adieu! and sometimes bestow a thought on your constant Loque Yupanqui.’

Thus parted these two lovers; the Cacique retired to order his matters so, that he might leave the court and imperial city of Cusco the next day, which he accordingly did, and departed towards his own province northward, beyond the great river Apurimac, according to the Ynca’s mandate; the princess to her place of rest: but, alas! none of that was to be found; for ten thousand thoughts distract her divided mind. The absence of her beloved Loque Yupanqui, the thoughts of her losing him for ever, are not her only affliction; a far greater trouble wrecks her spirit; there was hopes of her Cacique’s returning, and that time, which effects every thing, might cool her father’s passion; and though the legislature of Peru forbid their marriage, yet she might be happy in the sight of her dear Cacique, and sometimes in his company. But how could she accomplish this, if she must be wedded to Prince Atabalipa, as her father and the Curaca told her in positive terms she must? She farther pursues her reflections, and vents her grief in this melancholy soliloquy.

‘Atabalipa may be a deserving prince as far as I know, but not comparable to my beloved Cacique; but if all be as fame says, the beauties of his mind far exceed those of his body. I might have been happy in his arms, had I not before given my heart to the charming Cacique: they tell me, moreover, that if birth, titles, and honour, had not distinguished Atabalipa, that nature had. — But stay, thoughtless princess, it is ungenerous to censure natural defects, which in a great measure proceed only from the Almighty. — Aid me then, all-powerful Love; ’tis in your cause I engage, to find fault with the object that must undeservedly be my aversion; did all the wisdom of the past and present age center in Atabalipa, yet should I be insensible of all his persuasive eloquence, since my Cacique’s rhetoric must and does

surpass it all. Prince Atabalipa may be famed for his parts, which to me seems something strange, since those that instruct my brothers in the manners and customs of the different nations who inhabit the known world, and in what they call geography, inform us, that the province of Quito is a low, barren soil, productive of nothing but pasture for butter and cheese; the inhabitants not famed for arts and sciences, or any thing else but an over-reaching method in trade and commerce; that they were esteemed a few centuries ago but a poor and beggarly people, and that they are indebted for their present grandeur to one or more of our royal ancestors. They tell me for encouragement, that Atabalipa is Prince of Quito; but then I hear from other hands, that part of his principality is still in dispute, that some of it is diminished; and if he was in real possession of the whole, yet many of our Bobinquos, or private gentlemen, in this mighty empire of Peru, enjoy a larger estate than all his dominions put together. Why then must I, who am Princess Royal of the mighty empire of Peru, leave my country and friends to be only co-partner in the poor principality of Quito? Did I love indeed Prince Atabalipa as I do my dearest Cacique, a cottage with him would be a palace; but to exchange better for worse, to be confined to a prince I can never like so well as Loque Yupanqui, must be very disagreeable. My royal mother, moreover, offers me her maiden plate and jewels, (which must be of considerable value;) but what is plate or jewels to me, or any thing else, without the man I love?’

Thus the fair princess employed part of the remaining night, till gentle slumbers at last closed her eyes; but too soon she awakes again, to trouble and perplexing thoughts; however, she endeavours to stifle them as much as possible, and puts on her wonted gaiety: all her thoughts now turn which way she may divert the intended match, and re-establish her dearest Cacique in her father’s favours. But in this consisted the difficulty; the advice of her dear Loque Yupanqui was to attempt the favourite Curaca Robilda’s fall, which to her seemed impracticable: the hints which she had received from her lover gave her

some



some glimmering hope that it might be effected, but which way to attempt it she was at a loss; she hated the Curaca Robilda, as the author of her intended nuptials to Prince Atabalipa, but yet believed him to be firmly attached to her, and her family's interest, even to the prejudice of his own country, as she had often observed. Moreover, she knew her royal father and mother to be so wrapt up in him, that his counsels were always followed, though he often abused his trust, and sheltered himself under the royal wing, when he had transacted any thing base or offensive. That likewise her royal mother, Queen Coya Mama, had been particularly obliged to the Curaca Robilda in many things, especially for an ample revenue, and a spacious palace in the imperial city of Cusco, which he procured for her as a royal maintenance, after the decease of her dearly beloved Ynca, and chiefly by his own interest; a maintenance which far surpassed any that the Dowager Empresses of Peru had ever possessed; she thought it therefore in vain to attempt a matter clogged with so many difficulties, and chose rather prudently to leave it to time and Providence, (which accomplish every thing) to extricate her out of these troubles; and as she was not without hopes that the scheme which the famous Curaca Robilda was to bring on the carpet, at the next convention of the Curacas and Caciques of the Peruvian empire, might prove his ruin, she was resolved to wait patiently till a favourable opportunity offered itself. Whereupon she put on all the outward unconcern she was mistress of, and seemed to be entirely resigned to her royal father's will and pleasure. Her marriage with Prince Atabalipa was publicly declared at the imperial city of Cusco and all over the Peruvian empire, and likewise in the principality of Quito, and in the seven provinces of Havisca, Tuna, Chuncuri, Puncana, Muyuncuyu, Charcas, and Collasuyu, thereunto joining. Both received the compliments of their Curacas and Caciques, on their intended marriage, as well as of the foreign ambassadors; and now Prince Atabalipa is daily expected from Quito, at the imperial city of Cusco, to espouse his charming princess.

Whilst these affairs were transacting at the imperial city of Cusco, the charming princess was not unmindful of her

dearest Cacique; and although she seemed to pay an implicit obedience outwardly to her father's commands, yet in secret did she earnestly wait for the happy minute that might restore the lovely Loque Yupanqui to her father's favour, and her longing eyes, which some time after offered itself; for the Ynca looking upon the marriage of the Princess Mama Oello with Atabalipa, Prince of Quito, as good as consummated, gave the banished Cacique leave to return to the city of Cusco, and restored him seemingly to his favour, though not to his former places of honour.

As soon as the rumour was noised abroad that the noble Cacique Loque Yupanqui had leave to return from his northern retirement, beyond the great river Apurimac, the overjoyed princess was resolved he should receive the first news of it from her, and therefore dispatched away a trusty messenger to inform her beloved Cacique, that his doom was reversed, and how matters stood, (for Prince Atabalipa was not yet arrived at the imperial city of Cusco, from his principality of Quito, although he had been for some time contracted to the princess, and daily expected, proving, it seems, but a sluggish lover) that she was to move in a little time to the palace of Capuac, in the province of Capmany, and therefore she advised him not to come to the imperial city of Cusco, but wait her arrival at Capuac: the messenger was likewise ordered to deliver the Cacique the following letter, which we shall insert in this translation, for the satisfaction of the fair part of our readers, and to give a specimen of the American gallantry in those times.

‘ THE PRINCESS MAMA OELLO,  
 ‘ DAUGHTER OF THE YNCA MAN-  
 ‘ GO COPAC, AND QUEEN COYA  
 ‘ MAMA, SON AND DAUGHTER OF  
 ‘ YNCA HUASCAR, (for the Yncas  
 of Peru commonly married their  
 sisters) ‘ OF HUANA COPAC, OF TU-  
 ‘ PAC YUPANQUI, OF YNCA PAL-  
 ‘ HACUTEC, OF YNCA VIRACHO-  
 ‘ CHA, OF VAHUAR HUACAC, OF  
 ‘ YNCA ROCA, OF COPAC YUPAN-  
 ‘ QUI, OF MAYTA COPAC, OF SIN-  
 ‘ CHI ROCA, CHILD OF THE SUN,  
 (See how fond the Indians are of  
 tracing their genealogy.)

‘ TO THE NOBLE CACIQUE LOQUE  
‘ YUPANQUI, SENDETH GREET-  
‘ ING.’

‘ MOST ILLUSTRIOUS CACIQUE,

‘ **I**T is with no small satisfaction I ac-  
‘ quaint the Cacique Loque Yupan-  
‘ qui, hemay with impunity repals the  
‘ great river Apurimac, and without  
‘ danger revisit the Princess Mama Oella.  
‘ Had I been less condescending to my  
‘ father’s commands, I had been the  
‘ longer deprived of this happy oppor-  
‘ tunity. You shall know what has been  
‘ transacted in your absence, when you  
‘ come to the palace of Capuac, accord-  
‘ ing to the bearer’s instructions. Be-  
‘ lieve me, noble Cacique, I am as highly  
‘ pleased at this good-natured action of  
‘ my royal father, as it is proper for the  
‘ Princess of Peru to declare: I don’t  
‘ doubt but your own prudence will so  
‘ time our next meeting, that it shall re-  
‘ ceive no interruption; till that happy  
‘ minute arrives, I remain your’s,

‘ MAMA OELLO.’

Soon as the beloved Cacique was in-  
formed (in his retirement, where he had  
now been for some time, diverting the  
melancholy hours, one while with the  
thoughts of his dearest princess, and at  
other times with books and rural sports)  
that a messenger was arrived, in post-  
haste from the imperial city of Cusco, at  
his palace gate, he steps with eager  
strides to learn the reasons of his journey.  
But how agreeably was he surprized,  
when, to his great joy, he found it to be  
the trusty Sinchal: ‘What news,’ says  
he, ‘faithful Sinchal? What news dost  
‘ thou bring to me from my princess, and  
‘ the imperial city of Cusco? Does she  
‘ live? Is she well, or is she for ever lost  
‘ in the arms of Atabalipa, Prince of  
‘ Quito?’—‘Most illustrious Cacique,’  
replies Sinchal, ‘my royal mistress lives  
‘ and is well, is not yet in the arms of  
‘ Prince Atabalipa, but how soon she  
‘ may I know not: but if you will give  
‘ me leave to enter your palace, I will  
‘ tell you more of the matter.’—‘Dis-  
‘ mount, honest Sinchal,’ says the im-  
patient Cacique, (ordering his servant to  
take his horse) ‘for I long to be informed  
‘ of all that concerns my charming  
‘ Mama Oella, as well as the state of the  
‘ court, and of the imperial city of  
‘ Cusco.’ The trusty confidant then de-  
livered the letter. ‘Go you,’ says the

enamoured Cacique, ‘and refresh your-  
‘ self with such a collation as my house  
‘ affords, and in the mean time I will  
‘ retire till that is over, and then will  
‘ send for you into my closet.’ Having  
‘ so said, he bid one of his domesticks en-  
‘ tertain the messenger with the best he  
‘ could procure, and himself hastened away  
‘ to peruse the welcome epistle.

‘And does my princess,’ says the  
transported Cacique, ‘condescend to ac-  
‘ quaint her slave that his doom is re-  
‘ versed? How prudently must she have  
‘ acted, so soon to have wiped off all su-  
‘ spicion that she had ever cast a favour-  
‘ able eye on her undeserving Loque  
‘ Yupanqui? But she mentions nothing  
‘ in her letter of Prince Atabalipa, or  
‘ the Curaca Robilda’s disgrace; it is in  
‘ vain for me to hope for any success,  
‘ whilst that Curaca continues in my  
‘ royal master’s favour; he was and al-  
‘ ways will be an enemy to true merit.  
‘ But I will call for Sinchal, and inform  
‘ myself from him of what has passed  
‘ since my retirement; he used to be con-  
‘ versant in court affairs, and is a likely  
‘ person to acquaint me what things of  
‘ moment have been transacted at the last  
‘ convention of the Curacas and Ca-  
‘ ciques of this glorious empire, during  
‘ my absence; then shall I be better able  
‘ to judge how I must behave in this  
‘ critical juncture, and to accomplish my  
‘ desires in seeing the Princess Mama  
‘ Oello in the palace of Capuac.’

He rings the bell, and commands his  
servant in waiting to convey the trusty  
Sinchal to him. ‘Well,’ says he, ‘faith-  
‘ ful servant, now you have refreshed  
‘ yourself, let me hear a little of the pre-  
‘ sent state of the Peruvian empire.  
‘ What affairs of importance have the  
‘ convention of the Curacas and Ca-  
‘ ciques been busied about, since I left  
‘ the imperial city of Cusco, the usual  
‘ place of their resort when any national  
‘ affairs require their attention?’

‘I will answer your demands,’ re-  
plies the trusty Sinchal, ‘as far as lies  
‘ in my power. Know then, that imme-  
‘ diately after your departure, the scheme  
‘ which the Curaca Robilda had been so  
‘ long projecting was brought on the  
‘ carpet; a scheme entirely distasteful to  
‘ the whole empire of Peru, as you your-  
‘ self must know full well, by the many  
‘ petitions handed up against it from  
‘ all the provinces of the Peruvian em-  
‘ pire,

‘ Yet,



' Yet, notwithstanding this, the Curaca Robilda was resolved to carry his point; to effect which, he employed all his emissaries to infuse notions among the vulgar, how advantageous it would be to the empire of Peru, if this scheme was once to take place.

' In answer to that, the mercantile part of the nation, and especially those of the imperial city of Cusco, plainly shewed it would be destructive and pernicious to all trade in general, subjecting them to the enquiry of every petty officer, besides many other inconveniencies.

' It was particularly opposed by a set of men amongst whom were several Caciques of note, who had formerly been Curacas in chief to some of our Yncas, headed by the Curaca Posinki.

' Robilda's party stiled these men malecontents, and disaffected to the Ynca's person and government, because their arguments were unanswerable; but those of the imperial city of Cusco, and the generality of the people of the Peruvian empire, distinguish them by the honourable appellation of patriots, being those who stand up for their country's good.

' Indeed, if I may be allowed to give my opinion of what may be gathered from the writings of both parties, these in reality are as firmly attached to our Ynca's true interest, as those of the Curaca Robilda's clan.

' Upon a set day then the Curaca Robilda procured it to come before the convention of states of the glorious empire of Peru, and a majority of votes (after his usual method) for it's being brought in: but when it came to be canvassed whether it should pass or not, the superiority inclined to the patriot's side; whereupon one of our waggish wits compares the Curaca Robilda's mercenary Bobinquos, to men drawn through a horse-pond befouled with mire and dirt, and all to no purpose.

' But give me leave, trusty Sinchal; how did the Curaca Robilda himself escape? Was he not entirely discarded the Ynca's service for his wild and ill-timed projects? — 'It is the belief of many, answers Sinchal, most illustrious Cacique, that he is more firmly rivetted than ever in my royal master's favour; which to the wise and considering part of mankind, seems some-

' what surprizing. But the exasperated populace dealt quite otherwise with him; as soon as the news spread that the Curaca Robilda's scheme had miscarried, the imperial city of Cusco was immediately illuminated, bonfires, and bells ringing, expressed the general satisfaction of the inhabitants: the Curaca Robilda was hanged, and burned in effigy in several parts of that great town; and nothing prevented them from venting their rage on his person, but the respect and duty they owed to their sovereign the Ynca: the other chief cities and towns, following the example of Cusco, expressed their happy deliverance from this pernicious contrivance by wonderful demonstrations of joy; have most of them in general returned thanks to their respective Bobinquos, for their brave and strenuous opposition of it.

' Thus, most noble Loque Yupanqui, I have endeavoured to comply with your request, as far as my shallow memory will permit. — 'You have indeed in part,' answered the attentive Cacique; 'but I have ten thousand questions more to ask you, concerning my princess and Atabalipa, but will inform myself from her own dear mouth concerning that affair, having already trespassed on your patience after so long a fatigue.

' I perceive you are tired,' said he, 'and want rest. Good night to you, honest Sinchal; whatever you have occasion for, call freely for it, and I will dispatch you away to-morrow, on your return homewards.'

No sooner was Sinchal retired, but the Cacique muses on what he had heard. 'I was in hopes,' says he, 'to have received the news of Curaca Robilda's fall; but if that did not accomplish it, sure nothing will. Unhappy Peru! How are you degenerated from what you were in good Ynca Virachocha a time! What a glorious empire was you then! How formidable your armies! How terrible your canoes! How upright your Curacas and Caciques! You might justly then be esteemed to hold the balance of America; but how often lately have you shamefully purchased a peace with money, from those who formerly you compelled to sue for one! Your trading canoes are now taken captive by the sluggish Arancans without recompence or restitution; your

X Curacas

Curacas consist only of Robilda's creatures, who consult nothing but to impoverish your people by insupportable impositions: a man that would now arrive at preferment, must commit something deserving the greatest punishment.

But why do I employ my time in such useless reflections, unless I could reform all the abuses which so flagrantly dishonour my beloved country; rather let me shift the scene, and turn my thoughts to love and my dearest princess: I must to-morrow dispatch away the ruddy Sinchal, and answer the charming Mama Oello's letter. It will be better for me, I believe, not to return immediately to the imperial city of Cusco, but wait here till I receive news of the court's removal to the palace of Capuac; then shall I find means to see my princess without danger. It is now high time for me to think of inditing her letter, that it may be in readiness to give to Sinchal to-morrow morning. The contents of it were as follow:

THE CACIQUE LOQUE YUPANQUI,  
TO THE PRINCESS OF PERU,  
DAUGHTER, &c.

MOST HIGH AND MIGHTY PRINCESS,  
HOW happy must the Cacique Loque Yupanqui be, since the charming Mama Oello expresses her satisfaction at his return; which, without her approbation, would have been entirely useless to him! Yes, my dearest princess, since you graciously permit, I will fly on the wings of soft desire, but shall take care to pay an implicit obedience to your directions, both as to time and place. But how uneasy shall I be till that bright day appears, which shall give the lovely Mama Oello to the longing eyes of her humble adorer,

LOQUE YUPANQUI!

Early the next morning the happy Cacique delivered his answer to Sinchal, with orders that he should hasten back as fast as possible to his princess: he himself thought it advisable to stay behind till he should hear of the court's removal to the palace of Capuac, which he in a little time was advertised of by means of his fair Mama Oello.

Now he prepares with all diligence for his return to the glorious empire of Peru, and incognito enters the province of Capuany. He is informed by the host where he stopt to refresh himself, that Prince Atabalipa was not yet come; that it was strongly rumoured abroad, his intended journey to Peru was entirely laid aside; that nevertheless, the Princess Mama Oello was to espouse him by proxy, and so to be sent to the province of Quito: that in order to which, her royal highness had but few days before made choice of Yaya Napa, a near relation of the noble Cacique Loque Yupanqui, (who was some time ago forbid the court) to accompany her to the prince of Quito.

The Cacique thanked his landlord for his courteous information, thinking it most advisable to send to his sister Yaya Napa first, that he might consult with her the proper means of seeing his dearest princess; he therefore dispatched away an hired servant of his host's to the palace of Capuac, with a letter to his sister, desiring her company. The messenger soon arrived at the palace of Capuac, and delivered his letter to the Lady Yaya Napa, who immediately complied with her dearest brother's desires.

After a meeting full of brotherly love and affection, they began to consult about the main affair, how the Cacique might safely see his princess. 'I am acquainted with a Bobinquo, who lives near this place,' says the compassionate Yaya Napa, 'in whose gardens my royal mistress often diverts herself in the evening; I have interest enough with this Bobinquo, if you like my contrivance, to get you admitted into his house as his gardener; and under that disguise you may securely converse with the Princess Mama Oello.'

'I thank you, my dearest Yaya Napa,' says the passionate Cacique, 'for this lucky thought, which will succeed, I hope, according to my wishes: let us hasten, then, and put our designs in execution, for I burn to throw myself at the feet of the charming Mama Oello.' Accordingly, the impatient Cacique discharged his host, and was conducted by his sister to the Bobinquo's house, to whom she introduced her brother, and unravelled the whole secret. The Bobinquo received the Cacique in a very kind manner, and told him he was ready to serve him to the utmost stretch



stretch of his capacity, although he should thereby incur the Ynca's displeasure.

The over-joyed Cacique thanked him for his great civility, and accordingly put on his gardener's habit. In the mean time, Yaya Napa hastens away to the palace of Capuac, to acquaint her royal mistress of all that had passed, as well of her dearest Cacique's arrival, as the stratagem made use of to procure an interview between them.

'In a lucky hour,' says the fair princess, (overjoyed at this agreeable news) 'did I chuse you, charming Yaya Napa, from the midst of the bright circle of ladies that adorn this illustrious court; O dearer to me than my sister, though I dare not make thee so. They shall never tear thee from this breast, though they do thy noble brother. You shall always remain with me, the only comfort I shall have left to calm the sea of troubles that now hastens to overwhelm me: but to-morrow night I will see my dearest Cacique, and till then endeavour to compose myself.' Accordingly she bids Yaya Napa send her brother intelligence, that she would take an airing in the Bobinquo's gardens the next evening.

How restless these impatient lovers passed that night, may be easily guessed at; at last the long desired minute comes, when the princess entered the garden as usual, dismissing all her attendants but the fair Yaya Napa, seating herself in a cypress-grove, there expecting her dearest Cacique. The transported swain, in a gardener's dress, to prevent all suspicion, now trembling draws near, and presents her with a curious nosegay of roses and carnations. The fair Mama Oello, lost in thought, lifts up her eyes gently, and seeing her dearest Cacique so near, being overpowered at the sight, closes them again in a fainting fit. The distracted Cacique could not forbear taking her in his arms, although, had he been over-teen, it must have proved his utter ruin; whilst the officious Yaya Napa, who was the only person present, hastened to the nearest fountain for water, and after a second or third sprinkling, the swooning fair began to revive, and finding herself in the arms of her beloved Cacique—

'Oh, ye gods!' said she, 'what do I see! Here let me die, and never enter the palace of Capuac more: with what pleasure could I end my miseries and life in these dear arms! But what have

'I let drop?' somewhat recovering herself, 'expressions, I fear, too unguarded for the Princess of Peru to utter.—And art thou not contented, most illustrious Cacique, to bring me all the fragrance the world contains centered in thyself, but must you give me also the selected sweets,' says she, smelling to the nosegay 'that this garden affords?'

'It is in yourself, your own incomparable self,' replies the transported Loque Yupanqui, interrupting her, 'that not only the sweets of this delicious place, but of the whole universe, are comprised. Talk not of dying, my princess; it is your unfortunate Cacique that must die: you shall live long, and be happy in the embraces of Atabalipa, Prince of Quito, while the miserable Loque Yupanqui, not able to endure that hateful consummation, will soon put an end to his wretched life.'

'Why those killing words to me?' answers the fair Mama Oello, 'Why any talk of Atabalipa? You know my heart is as true to you, as the needle to the pole; every thing conspires to complete my sorrows, and there is no redress, nor any hopes on which my shipwrecked love may anchor: but, till that fatal day that will force me from this dear retreat and those dearer arms, to the ungrateful Atabalipa's, will I repeat this evening's delights, and after that bid a long farewell to every thing that is pleasant.'

'I know you must be ever lost to me,' answered the amorous Cacique, 'and therefore have been long arming myself with all the philosophy I am master of against that fatal time; but in vain, I can never survive it. I have heard since my arrival in this province of Capuany, though you, my fairest princess, have been cautious in discovering the distasteful news; that your marriage with Atabalipa is irrevocable, and that an extravagant character of him has been industriously spread up and down this glorious empire in the publick prints: one tells us, courtesy and affability are a part of his constitution. But how is this consistent, when you, my princess, on whom, and only whom, it ought to have been bestowed, have been entirely insensible of it? Had I been Prince Atabalipa, had I been that happy Cacique, swift as lightning would I have flown to have paid my  
K 2      devoirs

devoirs to you; no compliments of the Amanta's or Vimo's should have stopp'd me. His complaisance, his ingenious advocate tells us, costs his highness no pains; and I believe that indeed to be the only true part of the description.

'It is true, illustrious Cacique,' answers the disconsolate Mama Oello, 'what you say is too true; but alas! how can I help it? Who amongst us all can resist fate?—O invisible Pacha-Cumac, and our father the Sun! how can you be said to be just, when you are thus partial? How deplorable is my condition? Under what an unfortunate planet was I born? But yet,' says she, 'this present moment will I enjoy, in spite of you, O invisible Pacha-Cumac, or our father the Sun.'

Thus did this faithful couple pass the hours away, in soft complaint and amorous converse, till the good-natured and beautiful Yaya Napa, returning from a walk of orange-trees, where she had retreated to favour the lovers in their converse, told them the clock had struck one, and it was time to part. They were obliged to submit to pressing necessity, and after mutual promises of seeing each other every evening, whilst the court remained at the palace of Capuac, retired, the Cacique to his bed, and the princess to the palace of Capuac; where, musing on her past evening's conversation, and admiring the composure of her beloved Cacique's present, she observed in the middle of it a paper artfully wrought up; when unfolding it, she found the following copy of verses, which we insert as they were found in the original, only with this alteration, that we have changed the Indian names, which are rough, and not sonorous in verse, for some made use of by the ancient heathen poets.

ON A NOSEGAY PRESENTED TO THE  
PRINCESS MAMA OELLO.

I.  
FOR once, my prince, learn to prize  
Thy beauty by a flower;  
And think how both may charm the sense,  
Yet neither live an hour.

II.  
Think that thyself art planted here,  
But to be pluck'd by man;  
And think how short is beauty's date,  
If life is but a span.

## III.

Then, Mama, seize the flying bliss,  
Nor foolishly rely  
On charms that for a moment bloom,  
But e'en in blooming die.

## IV.

Such roses wanton on thy cheeks,  
And put such beauties on;  
This blushes with a stronger red,  
To see itself outdone.

## V.

While on thy breasts the lilies smile,  
They mourn in secret there,  
To see those fragrant rivals rise  
More soft, and sweet, and fair.

## VI.

Think on their doom, fair nymph, to thine;  
Then be the thought applied:  
And the same cause at once must raise,  
And mortify thy pride.

## VII.

Oh! could those flowers, that once were boys,  
To know their bliss attain;  
How would they wish to be transform'd  
From flowers to boys again!

## VIII.

Had e'er Narcissus view'd that face,  
He had renounc'd his pride;  
Not for his own, but Mama's charms,  
The blooming youth had died.

## IX.

Or, could fair Hyacinth revive,  
And all his charms renew,  
The boy had scorn'd celestial joys,  
And left his god for you.

And is it possible,' says she, 'that Prince Atabalipa, with all the accomplishments they say he is master of, can produce such a proof of his wit and gallantry as this; when, as my Cacique well observes, he has never given himself the trouble of coning or writing? Unhappy princess! Unfortunate Mama Oello! Why was I not the daughter of one who sues for the scraps of the well-fed rich from door to door? Then I might have singled out the man I loved; then I might have shared the pleasant toil of the day with him, and at night sat down on the green turf to what the invisible Pacha-Chumac, and our father the Sun, had granted to our prayers, with content. O miserable restraint! O free, yet repulsive princess! What availeth thy wide and far-stretched greatness, if you must be a state-slave? I am, indeed, somewhat like the gaudy vegetable, my charming Cacique resembles me to:  
' but



but the emblem would have been more exact, had it been of the sensitive plant; for, like that, shall I shrink and withdraw myself from the hand that is to pluck me.

In such melancholy reflections as these did the disconsolate Mama Oello waste away a great part of the night, till the god of sleep, with his leaden wand, locked up her eyes and sorrows together, for some short interval of time: but Phœbus being now almost half advanced to his middle station, too soon awakens both. The peerless fair knocks for her favourite Yaya Napa; and rising, adds new lustre to the day.

How does lazy Time, says she, my faithful Yaya Napa, seem to flag his wings, whilst I am absent from my Loque Yupanqui?—I thank you, however, drowsy god of sleep, that I have been some few hours lost to thought and woe: the heavy gloom that constantly hangs o'er my soul, has for this short space quitted possession, but I fear will soon return: yet must I dissemble, put on the vizor, gay looks and pleasant mirth; very unsuitable to the present tenor of my soul. So speaking, she bends her steps with her favourite to the publick room of state, with a feigned but becoming cheerfulness.

The natural sympathy that is between lovers, produced almost the same thoughts in the breast of the restless Cacique; he could not build any hopes on the continuance of this interview with his princess, knowing Atabalipa, Prince of Quito, would shortly, either in person or by proxy, espouse the fair Mama Oello; both which were confidently reported, and both alike fatal to him: he resolves, therefore, to inform himself, if possible, from the courteous Bobinquo, whether the marriage was to be performed personally or not. To put that question to his princess, he thought would be ungrateful; and besides, she was kept in so much ignorance, though the principal person concerned, that it was to be doubted whether she could resolve him when or how she was to be disposed of.

He therefore after dinner asks his kind entertainer, if it would be agreeable to him to pass an hour or two away in the garden? Upon the Bobinquo's compliance, the disguised Cacique entices him to the same cypress shade, in which he had been so happy the evening before, and hoped shortly to be so again. Well,

says he, my friend, for I must and will call you by that name, since the uncommon civility you have shewn me highly deserves the title, what news does the Peruvian court afford? For, though I am so near it, which you know has not been long, yet do I wonder as much in the dark in that affair, as if my own province now detained me beyond the great river Apurimac.

The eyes and tongues of this mighty empire, replied the good-natured Bobinquo, are all now wholly employed on this intended marriage betwixt the princess royal, and Atabalipa, Prince of Quito; but how, or when, where, or in what manner it is to be solemnized, I don't find that any dependence can be formed; self-contradiction in this case reigns; our publick intelligence one time affirming, and at other times denying, what before it asserted: however, this is certain, that it is to be; accordingly badges and marks of the highest distinction and honour have been transmitted to him; though it would seem not worth his acceptance, since not worth coming after: he has been presented with jewels to hang in his ears, after they are bored, and the black tress to tie round his head: verses and orations on his illustrious self and family have deduced his original from the invisible Pacha-Cumac, and our father the Sun: but then he is already deified, and inscribed amongst the number of the gods.

But you know full well, most illustrious Cacique, says he, all these arts to render him dazzling, bright, and glaring, serve only to darken him in the esteem of the disconsolate Princess Mama Oello: how your presence may dry up her tears I cannot tell; but it is reported, and that not without some foundation of belief, that they incessantly flow from morning to night: that Prince Atabalipa's absence will be no disappointment to her, though it may to several others, where interest makes his presence needful: nay, even numbers of people, as well Curacas, Caciques, as Bobinquos, have been so fantastical as to imitate Atabalipa's favourite colour in their garbs and dress; the colour of Quito being now all the mode.

I must not, however, forget one remarkable story related in this affair, which, notwithstanding all your present

sent

sent gravity, I hope will make you smile: the disconsolate Mama Oello being found some time ago by her sisters, the other princesses, in tears—“Why all this grief, happy princess?” say the young ladies. “Mirth and gladness should be your theme now, for you are sure of an illustrious prince to your husband. But no one except the invisible Pacha-Cumac, and our father the Sun, can certify whether ever we shall have one.”

“What fresh materials for news the court may have furnished out since I was there, I cannot tell; neither is it in my power to acquaint you with any thing else worthy your notice, unless it is the removal of the wise and learned Curaca Sinchi, and the valiant and courageous Cacique Cobinqui: but you’ll excuse my entering upon the particular causes of this our great loss; (for I call it so, it being universal to the whole Peruvian empire) being engaged to meet some friends this afternoon at a neighbouring Bobinquo’s. I will not make you the compliment of going with me, because I know you are at present indisposed to all company; but beg, illustrious Cacique, you will pardon my absence.” So saying, he departed, and left the Cacique to himself.

“A strange account, I think,” says the pondering Loque Yupanqui, “I have heard, which leaves me as much in the dark as I was before: it is to be, he says, but when, where, or in what manner, he knows not, and thereupon forms a certainty out of an uncertainty; yet this I am secure of, as may be easily gathered from his discourse, my princess’s love: so far am I happy; but what is love if not enjoyed? The impossibility of this renders me again miserable. As to the Prince of Quito’s honours, titles, dignities, I envy him not the possession of them, or any earthly grandeur the giddy world can heap on him, but that of my princess: let orators and bards make a god of him, I shall not envy him heaven itself, if he will but leave my princess here below. But to what purpose do I dwell on this melancholy subject, cherish woe, and contemplate my own misfortunes? I find I am not the only man, or Cacique, that is at present singled out by the invisible Pacha-Cumac, and our father the Sun, to be the sport of

fortune; the sage Curaca Sinchi, and the brave Cacique Cobinqui, bear a part with me: but say, what could occasion such a change, ungrateful I am sure to the Peruvian empire, as well as prejudicial to my once royal master? All this must come from the Curaca Robilda, that cunning old fox; for can Peru produce any pernicious alteration that was not first contrived by him? Who, now the rudder’s gone, can steer the helm? Who can supply the judicious Curaca Sinchi’s place? It is a weight too heavy for common shoulders to sustain, and therefore adapted to no one but Curacas of uncommon ingenuity and penetration, such as Sinchi is; but where shall we find such another now he is gone? How long did the ingenious artist, as history reports, keep his enemy without the walls, and maintain a perfect union within by his prudent counsels and advice? So long as this Curaca diverted our foes from abroad by his wise negotiations, and healed our private differences by a well-tempered and prudent moderation, just to his royal master, our most sacred Ynca, true to his country, indefatigable in serving both; his affability, courtesy, complaisance, and his capacity in public affairs, let the provinces of Havilca, Tuna Chuncuri, Pucana, Muyu, Cayu, Charcas, and Collasuyu, confess, as dear and agreeable did Sinchi’s blameless conduct render him to them as his matchless deportment deserved.

“Again, who shall essay to enumerate the brave actions of the valiant Cacique Cobinqui? What nation has been able to withstand his victorious sword? For thirty tedious winters, and as many sultry summers, has Peru seen him head part of her armies, and in all her wars (since he has been a commander) given proofs of an undaunted courage. Must then the wise and the brave truckle to the capricious humour of this Curaca Robilda? Cannot wisdom secure, nor valour save? No, I find that the wise man, who will not come into his measures, must be discarded, and the courageous man, that will not run his lengths, must quit his glorious profession: but sure it won’t be always so.—Look down, O invisible Pacha-Cumac, and our father the Sun, and behold extortion, bribery, and corruption, triumphantly



lording it over your favourite empire; whilst virtue, probity, and true merit, skulk about from place to place, entirely disregarded: but, soft! methinks an unusual fragrance strikes my ravished senses, far sweeter than any that this delightful place can afford. So saying, he leaves at once his arbour and meditations, and advancing, sees his princess, who was just entered the garden with the fair Yaya Napa, coming towards him.

With the greatest restraint upon his passion, for fear of being overseen, the love-sick Loque Yupanqui retires again into the cypress-shade, and there expects his charming Mama Oello.

For many tedious minutes and hours, which to me seem months and days, says the enamoured Cacique to his dearest princess, upon her entering the arbour, 'have these longing eyes waited for the sun-shine of your presence! It is that dispels all my cares, soothes all my misfortunes, and for the time it lasts renders me entirely happy.'

'Illustrious Cacique,' answered the princess, 'I take as much satisfaction in your dear company, as it is possible for you to enjoy in mine, though I can't express myself in such gallant terms as you: but,' added she, letting fall some pearly tears, 'how long this pleasure may last, I can't determine. I perceive,' says she, looking in a languishing manner upon him, 'you would be better pleased to hear your destiny and mine from me than any one else, could I but inform you: but alas! my Cacique, I am kept so much in the dark myself as to that affair, that I know but very little of it; yet that very little is by far too much.'

'With less regret,' replied the gallant Loque Yupanqui, 'most adorable princess, could I hear you pronounce my doom than any other, because I could for ever dwell with attention on the soft musick of your voice; which in one respect, though it would be piercing and killing, yet in another it would be medicinal and healing.'

'If I could unravel the whole secret concerning myself, which lies so close concealed in my royal father's and the Curaca Robilda's breast, yet would the talk be too ungrateful, and my faithful tongue, unwilling to perform so distasteful an office, would soon falter in my mouth. But let us shift this

talk, and from so melancholy a subject, think of somewhat more entertaining. — 'I did not know, illustrious Cacique,' says the princess, 'till very lately, that you were a favourite of the muses. I thank you for the present you concealed in your nosegay last night; the sight of some more of your performances would oblige me very much, as well as divert our melancholy a little.'

'Charming Mama Oello, dearest princess,' answered the enamoured Cacique, 'I never pretended to poetry in my life; but if ever any thing worth notice dropt from my pen, it was when the thoughts of my princess inspired me. — 'I am glad,' replies the fair Mama Oello, 'I have so much influence over you; and therefore will exert it, by commanding you to repeat, or shew me some more of your works, for more you must have, I am certain; those you favoured me with, seem not to be the flights of a young beginner, but to flow from a pen well versed in that harmonious art.'

'Can I any ways disobey my princess?' says the brave Loque Yupanqui, putting his hand in his pocket, 'I should have a copy of verses which I composed on your own dear self, when I was in my northern confinement, beyond the great river Apurimac. After, proceeds he, pulling out a paper, 'I had ransacked heaven and earth, the sea and air, to find out amongst the celestial inhabitants above, or the terrestrial below, or the goddesses of the liquid deep, one that was comparable to my far-surpassing princess; and finding it all to no purpose, that the four regions could not produce your likeness, the following thoughts presented themselves to me, which I now offer to my dearest charmer: so saying, he gave her the paper. 'I am afraid, if that be the subject-matter,' answered the princess, 'that your good opinion of me has transported you too far; and, instead of making a simile, you seem by your own discourse to have soared beyond an hyperbole, if that is possible; but pray,' returning him the verses, 'let me hear you read them, and then I shall be a better judge.' The Cacique taking the paper, and kissing the fair hand that restored it, read as follows. We observe the same method here, as in the preceding verses.

## MAMA OELLA. A SIMILE.

THE ancient bards who felt love's piercing fires,  
 And by enjoyment eas'd their fierce desires;  
 Those charms they tasted, and the sweet delights  
 Of vows by days, and extasies by nights.  
 Each form'd his muse, as she inspir'd, repaid;  
 Each form'd his goddess, of some mortal maid,  
 Liken'd her beauteous charms as was his love;  
 To all that e'er was great and good above.  
 Thus fair Corinna in love's softest strain,  
 Brightens as Venus rising from the main.  
 Thus we find Delia by Tibullus drawn,  
 Like silver Phoebe tripping o'er the lawn,  
 Lycoris too, as Gallus sweetly sung,  
 With all the easy softness of his tongue,  
 Had majesty superior in her face,  
 And awful Juno heighten'd every grace.  
 Fair would I thus my charming princess paint,  
 But why? alas! those images are faint;  
 Those heavenly beauties are compar'd in one,  
 And every goddess meets in her alone.  
 In her shines forth the lovely Cyprian dame,  
 Youth, beauty, vigour, all but the lascivious flame:  
 She seems Diana with her silver hair,  
 As greatly virtuous, and divinely fair.  
 Saturnia's state in all the nymph is seen,  
 She moves a goddess, and she speaks a queen:  
 Then who a proper simile can find,  
 Since heaven collect'd, scarce can paint her mind;  
 Her own antithesis must match the fair,  
 And none but Mama with herself compare.

Very great encomiums indeed,' says the princess; 'and not only superior to my desires, I believe, but to those of any mortal living.' She had scarce uttered these words, but the fair and faithful Yaya Napa hurried into the arbour, with advice, that the Empress of Peru was just entering the garden. The affrighted Cacique retired in haste, by a back-door into the Bobinquo's house, and the princess advanced out of the arbour into a walk, to meet her royal mother.  
 'You have had a long airing, princess royal,' says the empress: 'sure this garden is very tempting, that it engrosses so much of your time; night after night, you constantly frequent it, and this spot of ground seems to be your sole delight.'  
 'Retirement, please your majesty,

answers the princess, 'is sometimes grateful, and indeed, with your royal leave, to me more pleasing than the noise, hurry, and pomp of courts.'—'You must talk now,' replied the empress, 'contrary to your own sentiments; splendour and glorious appearances, such as the Peruvian court affords, captivates the hearts of all young persons in general; how happy would the majority of the universe, that are of our sex, think themselves, were they but in your condition; to be princess royal of the mighty empire of Peru, to possess every thing your heart can wish for or desire; to be happy in the arms of a young and powerful prince, as Atabalipa, Prince of Quito is, are blessings which the invisible Pacha-Cumac, and our father the Sun, has reserved in store, only to bestow on the Princess Royal of Peru.'—'The blessings your majesty mentions are too valuable for any one mortal to possess, or even hope for: my expectations, though towering enough, soar not so high as what your majesty represents. I am, indeed, in the first place, indebted to the invisible Pacha-Cumac, and our father the Sun, for my illustrious descent; and next to my royal father the Ynca, and yourself, for that tender regard you have always shewn; but who I may thank,' says she, sighing, 'for matching me to Atabalipa, Prince of Quito, I can't tell; it could never be ordained by the invisible Pacha-Cumac or our father the Sun; it could never be contrived by the royal Ynca, my father, or yourself, because all ye, I am persuaded, firmly interest yourselves in my welfare and happiness. From whence then must it proceed, or who can be the author, but the Curaca Robilda, or Quatzultoult, the god of the air, and an enemy to this mighty empire. I seem,' added the princess, weeping, 'to be Atabalipa's aversion, since, though I have been contracted to him so many moons, yet have I never received the least mark of his esteem, either in person or by proxy; how then, can I be said to be happy in his arms, whilst they seem to be as it were shut against me; and I, alas! am constrained to force them open much against my own will, and I believe against his?'  
 'No, my child,' says the Princess Empress, 'he loves you, he is enamoured with



‘with you, although he never saw you; your picture has charmed his eyes already, and what must the original do? The fame of beauty, flies swift, very swift, and often wounds before the object is seen. I might add other important reasons, which, were the Prince of Quito less agreeable, would be able to outweigh any consideration. But I think the air is somewhat cool, it is now time for us to return to the palace of Capuac.’

The princess was obliged to leave her beloved garden, and much more beloved Cacique, without seeing him any more that night; she wiped her eyes, and put on her usual, though now feigned smiles; she accompanied the empress into the drawing-room: but how insipid did all the company appear to her! She was present and absent at the same time. She played indeed at noveda, an Indian game, to oblige the princesses her sisters, and the other ladies, but hardly knew what she did or what she said.

At last the wished-for hour of repose came, and as soon as the faithful Yaya Napa and she were retired into her own apartment, her thoughts immediately arrest the dear bower, and her dearer Cacique. ‘Why,’ says she, ‘O invisible Pacha-Cumac, and our father the Sun! did you permit the empress to interrupt me, and my lovely Loque Yupanqui? Have we drawn down the envy of the gods upon us, as well as men? Then is our fate irreversible. My royal mother mentions nothing but happiness and blessings, but I fear misery and discontent will be my portion.—Tell me, faithful Yaya Napa, tell me, my sole comfort, now thy brother is absent, can you find nothing to soothe my affliction? No remedy for my disease? If to act always by constraint, to speak, and be obliged almost to think contrary to my inclinations? If to know nothing at present hardly but woe, and to expect nothing for the future but uneasiness? If these are blessings, then are they plentifully bestowed on me.’—‘It is the part of a desponding mind, to be so very much dejected,’ answers the good-natured Yaya Napa; ‘things may fall out, royal mistress, beyond our expectation; you see Atabalipa is not yet come, and perhaps may not come at all.’—‘What if he is not, or what if he should not?’ replied the princess hastily, ‘yet shall I be

sent over to him like a victim to the altar.’—‘It may be so,’ says the soothing Yaya Napa; ‘but even you know there are strong dissensions abroad, now at Polican, occasioned by their electing a new king, in which all the powers of America seem to be concerned. Should a lucky war now break out, it might be, perhaps, of some service to you, by diverting Atabalipa from the inglorious pursuits of love, (as he terms it, to be sure) to the more glorious profession of arms. What the fate of war may produce, no one (except the invisible Pacha-Cumac, and our father the Sun) can foresee: Atabalipa may fall in battle, or Atabalipa may return victorious; if the former, it eases you of the heaviest part of your misfortunes at once; if the latter, whatever trophies he brings home, will be thrown at your feet, and add a bright lustre to the intended nuptials.’

‘You talk extravagantly,’ answered the princess; ‘I have no patience to hear you any longer: Atabalipa has nothing to do in the affairs of Polican; that will do us no good. Death! nothing but death, either mine or his, can put an end to my misfortunes. O ye sea-gods! if he does prepare for Peru, whilst he is on your element, bury him in the deep.’

‘But stay, wicked princess, as well as unfortunate, why do you imprecate an undeserved fate on an innocent prince; rather let the ravenous billows swallow me up in their passage, if I must be sent to him, or drive me to some unknown part of the world, where I may never see Quito or Peru.’ Thus did the disconsolate Mama Oello vent her complaint to the faithful Yaya Napa, till nature at last prevailed, and she fell into a doze.

In the mean time, the most melancholy thoughts exercised the now half-distracted Cacique; he foreboded some extraordinary misfortune attending, for which he could give no reason. To be thus interrupted in his happiness was almost death to him; but alas! a far greater trial of his patience was immediately to ensue.

The next morning he received a note from his sister Yaya Napa, which expressed, that Prince Atabalipa would certainly be at the imperial city of Cusco in less than the space of a moon, in order personally to espouse his dearest

princes; that the empress entertained some suspicion of her daughter on his account, because she had of late so often frequented that Bobinquo's garden, who was a particular acquaintance of the fair Yaya Napa. Surprized, astonished, and

confounded, he first cursed his fate, and then the Curaca Robilda, as author of his misfortunes.

Here the original breaks off, occasioned by the author's death.

## A DESCRIPTION OF PERU.

### OF THE NAME, SITUATION, AND EXTENT OF PERU.

I Do not find that the natives had any general name for this country, only it was looked upon as the dominion of the great King, or Emperor of South America, who was called the Ynca, and so it might be stiled the Empire of the Ynca's, as the East Indies is called the Empire of the Great Mogul.

As to the modern name of Peru, Garcilasso de la Vega gives us this account of it's obtaining that appellation. He says, that Vasco Nunez de Balbao, having first discovered the South-Sea, the King of Spain, as a reward of that service, constituted him admiral of that sea in the year 1514, and governor of all the kingdoms and countries he should discover in it. Whereupon, Vasco built three or four ships, to go upon discoveries in that ocean, one whereof stretching to the southward, beyond the equinoctial line, and sailing close by the shore, discovered an Indian fisherman in the mouth of a river; who, while he stood staring at the ship as she was under sail, (a most amazing sight to a man that had never seen one) they sent out their boat, and surprised the Indian, making him their prisoner; and demanding of him, by the Indians they carried with them, (or by signs, according to De la Vega) what country it was? He mistaking them, and supposing they had asked him his own name, answered, 'Beru,' and the Spaniards still seeming importunate to know something more; he answered, 'Pelu,' which was the name of the river; or, according to some, is a common name in the language of those people for any river; however, from both these words, the Spaniards formed another, and called

the country Peru, and some of their writers Piru: but however that was, the dominions of the Yncas, of which this was the most northerly province, have ever since gone under the name of Peru.—When the Spaniards arrived here, the country was divided by the Yncas into four grand divisions; the limits on the north being the river Passao, or the Azure river, just under the equinoctial; the southern limits were the Aracon's, in 40 degrees of south latitude, (now part of Chili;) the eastern limits with the Cordeleras, or mountains of the Andes; and the western boundary the South-Sea, or Pacific Ocean.

The limits of modern Peru are much the same now, except on the south; for the Spaniards still bound it by the province of Popayan (which extends to the equator) on the north, by the mountains of the Andes on the east, by Chili on the south, and the Pacific Ocean on the west; extending it from the equator to 25 degrees of south latitude only; so that as the land extends, or runs from the north-west to south-east, Peru must be near two thousand miles in length, and in breadth it is generally about two hundred; but in the south, it may be four or five hundred miles broad.

The face of the country, according to Acosta, is very different, as it is distant from or approaches near the sea. He divides the country into three long narrow slips, viz. 1. The Lanos, which are sandy plains that run along the sea-coast. 2. The Sierras, which are hills beyond those plains, intermixed with vallies. 3. The Andes, or Cordeleras, still further within the land, which are steep craggy mountains, far surpassing all the rest in height. The Lanos, which lie along the coast, are about ten leagues in breadth;



breadth; in some places more, in others less. The Sierras twenty leagues in breadth, and the Andes something more than twenty leagues over.

The Andes and Sierras are two ridges of mountains that run from north to south, parallel to each other, for above a thousand leagues: nor are the Lanos that lie between the Sierras and the sea-shore, low land. Both Dampier and Wafer inform us, that Peru has generally a high bold shore, and that there is no landing on it, but at the ports, or in some particular bays: however, these plains may be called low in comparison of the Sierras that surmount them, and of the Andes that far surpass both, and are esteemed the highest land in the known world. Beyond the city of Cusco, which lies in 14 degrees odd minutes south latitude, the two ridges of mountains separate themselves to a greater distance, inclosing a fruitful plain of a vast extent, which is called the province of Callao, watered by many rivers, and by the great lake Titicaca, which is fourscore leagues in compass; most of these rivers falling into the lake.

The Lanos, or sandy plains near the sea, are perfectly barren, except some few vallies, into which they turn small winding streams, and that part of the coast which lies within three or four degrees of the equator, where they have very heavy rains great part of the year.

The Sierras also are barren hills; but then there are fine fruitful vallies between them, that yield all manner of grain and fruits; and these being temperate between the extremes of heat and cold, are best inhabited; for the Lanos by the sea, are for the most part excessive hot; the Andes, on the contrary, are cold barren mountains, the snow lying upon them great part of the year. Timber, and wood in general, seem to be very scarce here, and in all parts of Peru, unless near the line, and there they meet with enough.

Acosta, speaking of the unparalleled height of the Andes, and of the disorders the air occasioned in all that passed them, says, he once resolved to make the experiment himself, and mounted one of the highest tops of these hills, called Pariacaca: that he went prepared for the adventure, according to the best instructions he could get, with several more, who had the like curiosity; but notwithstanding all his precaution, when he came to mount the stairs or ladders near the top,

he was seized with such pains, that he thought he should have fallen to the ground; and the rest of the company being under the like disorder, they all made haste to get down the mountain as fast as they could, none staying for his companion: that they were all taken with such reachings to vomit, that he thought they should have brought up their hearts; for not only green phlegm and choler came up, but a great deal of blood; and that this lasted for three or four hours, till they had descended to the lower part of the hill; and some of them purged violently; but generally this sickness goes off as they come down the hill, and is attended with no ill consequences.

And not only this passage of Pariacaca has these properties, but the whole ridge of mountains called the Andes, for upwards of five hundred leagues; in whatsoever place people pass it, they meet with strange disorders, but more in some parts than others; and those are more sensible of the ill effects who ascend from the sea, than those that ascend from the neighbouring plains; for he had passed the Andes in four other different places, and always felt the like disorder, but not so violently as at Pariacaca; and the best remedy they found against it, was to stop their mouths, noses, and ears, as much as possible, and to cover their breasts; for the air was so subtle and piercing, that it penetrated the entrails, not only of men but beasts; and he had known horses so affected by it, that no spurs could make them move. And such is the height of the Andes, that the Pyrenees and the Alps were but as ordinary hills in comparison of them; from whence he concluded, that the air here was too pure and subtle for animals to breathe in, (they requiring a grosser medium) and this he supposed occasioned that disorder in the stomach.

He observed farther, that the high mountains he had passed in Europe were only excessive cold, and made him clothe himself the warmer when he passed them; but the stomach and appetite for meat was still stronger, and they had no reachings to vomit there, as here; the cutward parts only were affected: on the contrary, on the Andes, they were not affected with cold at the time of the year they passed them, either in their hands or feet, or any part of their bodies; only their entrails were affected, and that most when the sun was hottest; which con-

firmed him in the opinion, that the disorder proceeded from the pureness and subtilty of the air.

He adds, that this ridge of mountains is for the most part desert, without villages, or habitations for men, not so much as to lodge a night in: nor are there any beasts upon them, wild or tame, except their country sheep, whose great excellency lies in their climbing rocks and precipices, with burdens on their backs, where neither man nor beast can follow them. But to return to the mountains; he relates, that the grass upon them is frequently burnt up and black, and that these desarts are five-and-twenty or thirty leagues over, and five hundred leagues long, though in other places he makes them but twenty leagues broad.

The same writer informs us, that there are other mountainous uninhabited desarts in Peru, where a sudden blast of air sometimes strikes a traveller dead in an instant: that the Spaniards formerly passed these mountains in their way to Chili, but now either go by sea, or by the side of these mountains, to avoid the danger, so many having perished in going over them; and others that have escaped with their lives, have lost their fingers and toes, and been lamed. Acosta says, he was informed by General Costilla, who lost three or four toes in passing this desert to Chili, that they fell off without any pain; and that the same general marching over it once before with an army, great part of his men suddenly fell down dead, and their bodies remained there without stench or corruption: that he had relations of the same kind from others; and conjectured, that these people were killed by the excessive coldness of the air, which preserved their bodies also from putrefaction after they were dead. But, as he says in other places, that they met with these pestilential blasts in the vallies between the hills, I am apt to think they were rather hot than cold winds, and that it was the hot sands that preserved their bodies from corruption; for near the same latitude, viz. between 20 and 30 degrees north, in the desarts of East-India, Persia, and Africa, we frequently meet with the same, or hot winds, which have the like effects: and some English seamen, who have been ashore in this very country of Peru, assure us, that they have seen great numbers of bodies lying dead upon the

sands there; particularly, our countryman Wafer relates, that landing with thirty more at Verneio, in ten degrees south latitude, in search of water, and marching four miles up a sandy bay, they found the ground covered with men, women, and children, which lay so thick, that a man might have walked on them half a mile. That these bodies, to appearance, seemed as if they had not been dead a week; but when he handled them, they proved as dry and light as a sponge, or a piece of cork: that he carried on board the body of a boy of about nine or ten years of age, designing to have brought it to England; but the seamen had a foolish conceit, that the compass would not traverse aright so long as a dead body was on board, and compelled him to throw it into the sea. These people were very probably destroyed by such hot winds as we meet with in Persia and the East Indies, there appearing no signs of wounds or violence upon them; though Wafer said, he was informed by an old man, that they buried themselves in the sands, to avoid the cruelties of the Spaniards in the preceding age. (Which is scarce credible.) However, thus much will be agreed on all hands, that the heat of the sands and the dryness of the Peruvian air, preserved these bodies from putrefaction, whatever was the cause of their deaths. If it be objected, that the desert Acosta mentions, was in a cooler climate, viz. between 25 and 30 degrees of latitude, and therefore it could not be supposed the soldiers he speaks of were killed by the hot winds; it may be answered, that the desarts of Persia, Africa, and Arabia, where the like hot winds are met with, lie between the tropic, and 30 degrees of latitude; and the heat is frequently as great in this climate, as within ten degrees of the line; for the situation of the country, the length of the days, and the nature of the soil, contribute almost as much to extreme heat as the sun itself: sandy vallies between hills are usually excessive hot; and the hot winds are occasioned by their blowing over a long track of burning sand, for some hundreds of miles; the sun also continuing longer about either tropick, and the days being longer there than under the equinoctial, that luminary gives more intense heat usually in countries seated near either tropick, than it does in those about the equator.



OF THE SEAS, RIVERS, LAKES,  
SPRINGS, &c.

**T**HE only sea that borders upon Peru, is the Pacific Ocean, which obtained it's name from the constant serene weather that reigns here, from 4 degrees to 30 or 35 degrees south latitude, in which is comprehended part of Chili. If we go farther southward, this sea, though it still retains the name of the Pacific Ocean, is as tempestuous as any other; and within 3 or 4 degrees of the line, they have the like variable winds and heavy rains most part of the year, as we meet with in other seas in the same climate: and to the northward of the tropick of Cancer, (and sometimes within it) Dampier, and other seamen, relate, they frequently met with storms and hurricanes, though this part of that sea also bears the name of the Pacific Ocean. When I speak, therefore, of that which is properly the Pacific Sea, in this description of Peru and Chili, I would be understood to mean only that part of it between the 4th and the 5th degrees of south latitude; and from the American shore westward, indefinitely: 'Here we have no rain, or dark clouds,' says Dampier; 'though it is often so thick and hazy, as to hinder an observation of the sun with a quadrant; and in the morning, there is hazy weather frequently, and thick mists that wet a little; but there are not in this sea,' says the same writer, 'any tempests, tornadoes, or hurricanes; though, north of the equator, they are met with in this sea, as well as in the Atlantic Ocean.' This Pacific Sea, however, at the new and full moon, swells and runs with high long surges, or waves, but such as never break at sea, and so are safe enough. On the contrary, where they fall in, and break upon the shore, they make it very dangerous landing. At Guiaquil, on the Peruvian coast, situated in 3 degrees south latitude, the tide runs very strong, and rises sixteen or eighteen feet perpendicular; but it does not rise so high on any part of the coast to the southward, where there are not such bays, or so many rivers as there are here; for, according to Dampier's observation, the tides always run strongest, and rise highest in gulphs, or bays of the sea, and up the mouths of rivers. Funnell observes, that the winds in the

Peruvian seas, and on all the western side of America, from 38 degrees south, to 7 degrees north, are always southerly two points upon the shore, so that where the coast runs due north and south, the wind is at south-south-west; and where the coast runs south-south-east, the wind is due south, except it be in the night, when the sea-wind generally ceases, and there comes a fine moderate gale from the land, which they call the land-breeze; but Dampier observes, that on promontories, and head-lands, and such places as lie open to the sea, they have scarce any of these land-breezes, it being in creeks and bays chiefly that they have the advantage of land-breezes.

Dampier also observes, that the southerly winds on the coast of Peru continue to blow 140 or 150 leagues from the shore before they alter; but then they may be perceived to come about more easterly; and about two hundred leagues to the westward of that shore, the true trade-wind sets in at east south-east, which never alters till they have passed the Pacific Ocean, and arrive at the East Indies.

But both Dampier and Funnell relate, that at Arica, which lies on the coast of Peru, in 18 degrees odd minutes south latitude, for near an hundred leagues to the southward, this sea is very subject to calms within 35 or 40 leagues of the shore; but that these calms are not usual on any other part of this coast: it is observed also, that when the sun is in the northern signs, viz. from March to September, the sky is generally bright and clear; but when the sun retorts back to the southern signs, then the weather is frequently so thick and hazy, that they cannot take an observation, though they have no rain even then, either at sea or on the coast.

As to the weather on shore, it is various, according to the situation of the land; the Lanos, or sandy plains by the sea-side, never have a drop of rain upon them, but frequently thick mists rise here. On the Sierras, or hills beyond, the rains fall when the sun is in the southern signs, as they do in other countries that lie between the equator and the tropick of Capricorn. And on the Cordeleras, or Andes, the high mountains that are situated farther from the sea, it rains or snows two thirds of the year, and is excessive cold; and as the vallies between the hills called Sierras are the most fruitful

fruitful parts of the country, their season for planting and sowing there, is at the beginning of the rains, and their harvest at the return of the dry weather: their vintage also is in the fair season, and their vines thrive best in those vallies near the sea, where there is little or no rain, and which are watered by rivulets that fall from the hills in the rainy season; but most part of the Lanos, or sandy plains by the sea-side, are barren deserts, bearing neither trees nor herbs; and are very little inhabited, except some few port towns, situated at the mouths of rivers.

Acosta, and other writers, have endeavoured to account for this everlasting drought on the sea-coast of Peru and Chili: they suppose, in the first place, that the country being a dry sandy soil, affords no vapours, or not enough to furnish them with rain, though mists arise here. And secondly, that the mountains called the Andes or Cordilleras, are so exceeding high, that the clouds are stopped there, and can come no farther westward: but to this it may be answered, if the land affords but few vapours, one would think that the South Sea that adjoins to it might afford as many vapours as any other sea; and the wind constantly blows obliquely from that sea upon the coast. And as to the mountains of Andes intercepting the clouds that come from the east ward, this is not true in fact; for the Sie ras, or hills which lie between the Andes and the Lanos, or plains, on the sea-coast, have their periodical rains, as all other countries have that lie between the tropicks, though the plains on the sea-shore have no rain; and this is the more strange, inasmuch as the sea-coasts in other countries are usually more subject to rain and cloudy weather, than either the ocean, at a great distance from land, or the middle of any continent; as the low countries in Holland and Flanders, that lie on the sea, have more wet and cloudy weather than either the middle of Germany or France; and in like manner, when we are at sea four or five hundred miles from land, especially at those seasons of the year when it is serene settled weather, and judge ourselves near land when we see thick clouds, which usually hang over it: seamen also observe, that tornadoes and hurricanes are more frequent and violent near land, than they are an hundred leagues out at sea, though in this Peaceful Ocean, and

on the coast, they know not what storms or hurricanes mean; insomuch, that this sea is navigated by bark-logs; and on these awkward floats they carry on great part of their coasting trade, from port to port, as they did before the Spaniards arrived there: these bark-logs are only rough timber logs, laid in squares across each other, and built up two or three stories high.

I proceed, in the next place, to give some description of the most considerable capes, islands, and ports, on the coast of Peru and Chili, from the equator to 30 degrees of south latitude; and, 1. Of Cape Passo, which lies in 8 minutes south latitude, and 82 degrees of western longitude. It is an high round cape, with some few trees upon it; and farther up in the country the land is mountainous and very woody. 2. Cape Lorenzo, in one degree south latitude; near which shipping may furnish themselves with fresh water. This cape also is high land, and has some trees and bushes upon it: five leagues west south-west of Cape Lorenzo, is a small barren island, called La Plate, from it's being the place where Sir Francis Drake shared the plate with his company, which he took out of the Spanish galleon called the Calefogo. 3. Cape St. Helena, in 2 degrees 20 minutes south latitude; near which is a small town of Spaniards and Indians, that keep store-houses of flour, salted flesh, fish, biscuit, and other provisions, with which they supply the shipping that touches there in their passage to and from Panama. The point itself is high land, and level on the top, but the land about is low. 4. The island of St. Clara, in 3 degrees south latitude; it is pretty high land, covered with small trees. 5. Cape Blanco, in 3 degrees 45 minutes south latitude, (pointing St. Helena) makes the north point of the Bay of Guiaquil, as Cape Blanco does the south point. The town of Guiaquil gives name to the bay, is situated about six leagues up a navigable river, and is the port of Quito. 6. The port of Payta, in 5 degrees 15 minutes south latitude, a fine large bay, capable of containing an hundred sail of ships; the town consists of about four-score houses, most of them Spaniards; and the bay is seldom without ships, it lying very convenient for the ships of Peru, in going to and from Panama, who put in here for refreshments that are brought down hither from Cologne; for the town



of Payta itself does not so much as afford fresh water. In this bay the sea and land winds succeed each other very regularly; the sea winds blowing in the day-time south and by west; and the land winds in the night-time, from the east. 7. The island of Lobos, in 6 degrees 20 minutes south latitude, in which is an harbour on the north-east, but no fresh water: the island is about two leagues in compass, but produces neither trees, bushes, or herbage.

8. The port of Malabrigo, in 8 degrees south latitude, which is known by a mountain near it of the same name. The best place to anchor in, is to leeward of the mountain, bringing it to bear due south; here is five fathom water, good fast anchor ground. 9. Guanchaco, in 8 degrees 15 minutes south latitude, being but an indifferent harbour, as it lies almost exposed to all winds; and there usually runs so great a sea upon the shore, that a boat cannot go or come on board sometimes for three or four days; notwithstanding which, Guanchaco is a place of very brisk trade, being the port town to the city of Truxillo, which lies six miles up the river; from whence flour, wine, brandy, sugar, and marmalet, are exported to Panama every year, in great quantities. 10. Cosma, a very good port, in 9 degrees 50 minutes south latitude, and 78 degrees of western longitude; the common anchoring-place being at the mouth of a fresh water river. 11. Vermeio is a very good port, a little to the southward of Cosma; but here is no town or inhabitants, or any fresh water within a mile of the sea. The mountain Mongou, which lies about seven leagues to the northward of this port, is said to be one of the highest mountains on the coast. 12. The port of Guara lies in 11 degrees south latitude, and 77 degrees of western longitude, near which is a mountain with several pyramids on the top of it; and a little to the northward is the small port of Salinas, from whence they export great quantities of salt beef, both to Lima and Panama. 13. The island of Callao, a high barren island, two leagues in length, that has neither fresh water, wood, or any green thing upon it; and yet on this barren spot stands the town of Calloa, the port town to Lima, the capital of Peru.

The port is defended by a strong castle, that has seventy brass guns mounted on the walls, close under which is the usual place of anchoring; and here the ships ride in six fathom water, good

fast ground; though in all the bay and port of Callao, it is very secure riding; it growing shallow gradually from twelve to four fathom water, and the ships are defended from the southerly winds, which reign on this coast, by a small island.

This port of Callao lies in 12 degrees 20 minutes south latitude, and is about two leagues distant from Lima. The armadilla, or little armada, sails annually from hence to Arica, where most of the silver and gold of Peru is embarked on board this fleet; and returning to Callao the latter end of March, the same treasure is transported in the month of May to Panama, and from thence by land-carriage conveyed to Porto-Bello, as has been intimated already. 14. The port Ylo lies in 18 degrees south latitude, and is a good harbour; and near it is a stream of fresh water, called the river Ylo, which is very rapid from the beginning of January till the latter end of June, when it begins to decrease, and in September it is quite dried up; which is the case of most of the rivers on the coast of Peru. 15. The port of Arica, situate in 18 degrees 20 minutes south latitude, and in 72 degrees western longitude: here the treasure brought from the mines of Potosi is constantly embarked every year for Lima. It is a good harbour, the best anchoring-place is close under mount Arica, in eight fathom water, where the ships ride secure from the south winds. It is a large town, inhabited by Spaniards, Indians, and Mulattoes. 16. The port of Copiapo, a good harbour, defended from all winds, lies in 21 degrees south latitude; the inhabitants most of them Indians, who make good wine here, and have plenty of corn, flesh, fruits, and other provisions. 17. Coquimbo, situated in 30 degrees south latitude, at the foot of a mountain, in the form of a sugar-loaf; a rich city, driving a great trade with Lima and Panama, and is a very good harbour.

Although there is no other sea borders upon Peru but the Pacific Ocean, yet have they some lakes that may be called seas, if we regard the greatness of their extent.

The lake Titicaca is situated in the province and valley of Callao, the middle of it being in 15 degrees south latitude, and 67 degrees of western longitude, reckoning from the meridian of London: upon this lake they sail in ships

ships and other vessels, as upon the ocean; but it is subject to storms sometimes, for the first ship the Spaniards built upon it was broken to pieces by a tempest, that drove it on shore. The water of it is not so salt as the sea, but too thick and foul to be drank. There are abundance of large fish in the lake, not esteemed wholesome food: there are also great shoals of small fish, very bony, but better eating than the former; and there are prodigious flocks of wild ducks, and other water-fowls, in it. The towns and villages bordering upon the lake are esteemed the most agreeable dwellings in Peru: from this lake issues a large stream to the southward, which forms another

lake, called Paria, not much inferior to the former in it's dimensions, and has several islands in it. On the banks of these lakes are rich savannahs, or meadows, that feed great herds of cattle. There are also many lakes upon the mountains, which are the sources of several large rivers. Acofta mentions two lakes particularly on the high mountains, one on each side of the great road leading from Arequippa to Callao; from one of which issues a river that falls into the Pacific Ocean, and from the other the river Apurima, said to be the principal stream that forms the celebrated river Amazon, which falls into the Atlantic Ocean, esteemed the largest river in the world.

F I N I S.





THE  
ADVENTURES

OF

Signor Gaudentio di Lucca.

BEING

THE SUBSTANCE OF HIS EXAMINATION BEFORE THE FATHERS OF

THE INQUISITION, AT BOLOGNA, IN ITALY.

GIVING AN

ACCOUNT OF AN UNKNOWN COUNTRY

IN THE MIDST OF THE DESERTS OF AFRICA.

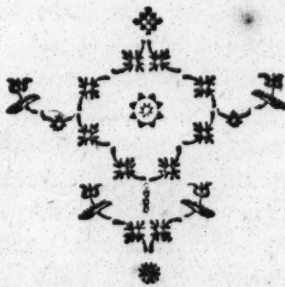
COPIED FROM

THE ORIGINAL MANUSCRIPT IN ST. MARK'S LIBRARY, AT VENICE,

WITH

CRITICAL NOTES BY THE LEARNED SIGNOR RHEDI,

TRANSLATED FROM THE ITALIAN,



LONDON:

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row,

MDCC LXXXVI.

\*\*\*\*\*

# PROFESSOR R. H. WOOD

The first of the great questions which have engaged the attention of the human mind is that of the origin of life. It is a question which has occupied the thoughts of philosophers and scientists from the earliest times. The ancient Greeks, the Romans, and the Arabs all sought to explain the origin of life in terms of the elements of nature. But it was not until the sixteenth century that the first great step was taken towards a scientific explanation of the origin of life. This was done by the Italian physician, Francesco Redi, who showed that life is not created spontaneously, but that it is derived from pre-existing life.



As to the origin of life, the first of the great questions which have engaged the attention of the human mind is that of the origin of life. It is a question which has occupied the thoughts of philosophers and scientists from the earliest times. The ancient Greeks, the Romans, and the Arabs all sought to explain the origin of life in terms of the elements of nature. But it was not until the sixteenth century that the first great step was taken towards a scientific explanation of the origin of life. This was done by the Italian physician, Francesco Redi, who showed that life is not created spontaneously, but that it is derived from pre-existing life.





THE

## PUBLISHER TO THE READER.

IT is very natural to think the reader would willingly be apprised of two things relating to these Memoirs: First, how this curious manuscript came to light, considering the dark and deep secrecy with which all things are transacted in the Inquisition. Secondly, how it came into the translator's hands: To satisfy such a commendable curiosity, he is to be informed, that the manuscript was sent by the secretary of the Inquisition at Bologna to the learned Signor Rhedi, keeper of the library of St. Mark at Venice, his intimate friend and correspondent, with the whole account how the author was taken up, and secured in the Inquisition, as the letter of the secretary to the same Signor Rhedi will shew: which letter, as it contains a great many curious particulars in the examination of the criminal, (for he was taken up as such, though nothing very material was proved against him; for which reason, he received a more favourable treatment than is generally believed to be customary in that dreadful tribunal) so it discovers no indirect practices of the Inquisition, but, on the contrary, shews they proceed with a great deal of circumspection within their walls, though all things are involved in impenetrable darkness to those without. Beside, the succession of new popes, and, generally speaking, the change of other officers attending it, might make them be less upon their guard, as the secretary seems to hint in his letter. Neither is there any thing that might do him any harm, in case he were discovered; especially writing to a friend of his own communion, and a priest, as Signor Rhedi was; which is likewise seen by the letter.

As to the second Quære, The manuscript came into the publisher's hands, by the means of the same Signor Rhedi, who is an honour to his church, profession, and country, and one of the most learned and polite men in the world. He is not so bigotted to his religion or profession, as to shun the company of the Heretical Tramontani, a title the Italians generally give us, but loves and esteems a learned man, though of a different persuasion. One reason for this may be, that he breathes a freer air at Venice, than they do in the other parts of Italy. The Inquisition has nothing to do in the Venetian territories. Though they are Roman Catholics, the state admits of no tribunal independent of itself. Besides, as they are a trading people, their commerce obliges them to be civil to persons of all persuasions, especially strangers. But of all others they seem to have the greatest respect for the English; whether it be on account of their power at sea, or their frankness in spending their money, so many of the English nobility and gentry travelling that way; or from the candour and sincerity of our nature, so opposite to the Italians, and therefore the more valued by

them: be that as it will, the publisher, who had several times made the tour of Italy, was not only intimately acquainted, but had contracted a particular friendship with Signor Rhedi, as well on account of their mutual inclinations for learning and antiquity, as for several reciprocal obligations passing between them. The last time he was at Venice, which was in company of a person of the first rank, who liked the place as well as he did; he staid there upwards of fifteen months, during which time he had the opportunity of enjoying the conversation of his learned friend, with as much liberty, as if he had been of the same persuasion. But the present of a gold repeating watch, with some other of our English curiosities, so won his heart, that one day being together in the great library, he unlocks a little grate where he kept his rarities, and turning to me with a smile—‘Signor Inglese,’ says he, holding a manuscript in his hand, ‘here is such a curiosity, as, I am sure, you never saw, and perhaps never heard of; ’tis the life of a person who is now in the Inquisition at Bologna, taken from his own confession before the Inquisitors; with the account of a country in the heart of the vast desarts of Africa, whose inhabitants have lived unknown to all the world upwards of three thousand years, and inaccessible to all the world, but by the way he was carried thither. The Inquisitors are so far persuaded of the truth of it, that they have promised him his liberty, if he will undertake to conduct some missionaries the same way, to preach the gospel to a numerous people, who, by his account, have the greatest knowledge of natural religion and polity of any heathen nation yet known, even beyond the Chinese. For my own part, I could scarce have believed it, had not the secretary of the same Inquisition, who, you may be sure, by his post, is not a man to be imposed upon, assured me of the truth of it: nay, that he himself was present at his seizure and examination, and sent me a copy of his life, which he was ordered to give in by the Inquisitors; with the whole account of the occasion and manner of his seizure.’

It seems he had lived some time in Bologna in quality of a physician, under the name of Signor Gaudenzio di Lucca, which he says is his true name, and confirms it by the place of his birth, the names of his parents, time of his captivity, &c. He had dropped some words of several strange secrets he was master of, with mutterings of an unknown nation, religion, and customs, quite new to the Italian ears; for which reason the Inquisition thought fit to seize him, and, by ways and means made use of in that tribunal, obliged him to give an account of his whole life, which is the most surprising I ever read. Here is the secretary’s letter, giving a succinct account of the whole affair. ‘I have added,’ continued he, ‘some critical remarks in proper places, to shew that this account is not so incredible as it may appear at first sight, and that it agrees with some hints left us in the remains of ancient history. Besides, the man stands to the truth of it with a stedfastness that is surprizing. He is a person of a very handsome presence, well read, good sense, and, as it appears to the Inquisitors, (who are nice judges) of seemingly good morals. He professes himself a zealous Roman-Catholic, and that he always was so; for which reason, the Inquisitors are more civil to him than ordinary.’ He gives such a rational and circumstantial account of his adventures, that I am of the secretary’s opinion, as to the truth of it. ‘But,’ added



# P R E F A C E.

7

added he, 'I won't forestall the satisfaction you will find in the perusal; so delivered the manuscript and the secretary's letter into the publisher's hands, who running his eyes over it for some time, was so struck with the novelty of the thing, that he asked Signor Rhedi, whether he might not take a copy of it. He was answered, he could not permit the manuscript to be taken out of the library; nor could he, with safety to himself, allow a stranger, and of a different religion too, the liberty of staying so long in the library by himself, as the transcribing would take up. The publisher said he might put what guards upon him he pleased, provided he might but transcribe it. 'No,' says he, 'that's inconvenient too; but I will order one of my under-librarians I can confide in, to write you out an exact copy, with the secretary's letter, and my own remarks, if you think them worth your notice;' which he did most faithfully; generously commanding the transcriber, at the same time, not to take any thing of me for his pains. Thus this curious manuscript came to hand, to the infinite satisfaction of the publisher, and he hopes it will prove no less to the readers, in the perusal of it. The character of Signor Gaudenzio cannot be called in question; nor is the publisher a person so little versed in the nature and ways of the Italians, as to be imposed upon. The translation from the Italian is as exact as possible. This is the previous account the publisher thought proper to give of this affair.

N. B. Great part of the matters treated of in these Memoirs, being transacted in a Roman Catholick country, and among Roman Catholics, the reader must not wonder, if they speak of their religion as if it were the only true one in the world.

It will not be improper to admonish the reader, not to discredit immediately some of the relations contained in these Memoirs; but to suspend his judgment till he has read Signor Rhedi's remarks; particularly, when he comes to the origin and antiquity of the people the author speaks of. The learned will find in them such a vast knowledge in history, and the most intricate remains of antiquity, as will render them very well worth their notice. The same Signor Rhedi told the publisher, he had enquired into what happened at Venice; particularly what the author mentions of Monsieur Godart, one of the most improbable parts of his adventures, and found the whole to be just as he relates it.

The publisher is satisfied the reader will be extremely sorry, as well as himself, for the loss of some sheets belonging to the middle part of this history. How they came to be lost, he cannot tell; but he supposes, by the incivility of the custom-house officers at Marseilles; for they tumbled over his effects at a very rude rate, and while he had an eye on other matters, they either took some of the loose sheets, or they dropped out in the tumbling; he was very much troubled when he came to miss them in the course of the translation.

INTRO-

\*\*\*\*\*

# INTRODUCTION

THESE THINGS ARE THE PROPERTY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
AND ARE NOT TO BE LOANED OR REPRODUCED WITHOUT PERMISSION

THESE THINGS ARE THE PROPERTY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
AND ARE NOT TO BE LOANED OR REPRODUCED WITHOUT PERMISSION

THESE THINGS ARE THE PROPERTY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
AND ARE NOT TO BE LOANED OR REPRODUCED WITHOUT PERMISSION



# INTRODUCTION.

GIVING

AN ACCOUNT OF THE CAUSES AND MANNER OF THE SEIZURE OF SIGNOR GAUDENTIO DI LUCCA, AND THE FIRST PART OF HIS EXAMINATION:

IN A LETTER FROM THE SECRETARY OF THE INQUISITION TO SIGNOR RHEDI.

\* SIR,

THE present turn of † affairs which fills the heads of other people with intrigues of state, gives me an opportunity of returning my best thanks, for the rich present you were pleased to send to a person who was yours before by the strictest ties of gratitude. The cabinet, with the other curiosities, came safe to hand, and shew, that whoever is so happy, as to oblige Signor Rhedi, sows a seed which returns a hundred fold. The poverty of our ‡ profession, hinders me from being capable of making a suitable return for your magnificent present; but nothing ought to take from me the desire of expressing my acknowledgments. In testimony of it, and to shew that poverty itself may be grateful, I send you by the bearer, the account of a man, whose life has filled our Inquisitors with wonder and astonishment. He has been in the Inquisition at this place about two years: we have employed all our engines to find out the truth of what he is, and can find nothing material against him, unless it be the unheard-of account he gives of himself. Our first Inquisitor has obliged him to write his own life, with all the particulars, as succinctly as possible, adding threats withal, that, if we find him in a false story, it shall be worse for him. He tells us strange stories of one of the most beautiful countries in the world, in the very heart of the vast deserts of Africa, inaccessible to all the world but by one way, which seems as extraordinary as the country it leads to. As you are a person of universal knowledge in antiquity, and an admirer of curiosities of this nature, I send you a copy of the manuscript, to have your opinion of it; and to give you as clear a notion of the man as I can, you must know, that about three years before he was taken up by the Inquisition, he took a neat house at Bologna in quality of a physician, passing through some slight examination for form sake, and paying his fees as is customary with strangers. His name, as he says, is Gaudentio di Lucca, originally of Lucca§, but born in Ragusa||. He is a tall, handsome, clean-built man, as you shall see in a thousand, of a very polite address, and something so very engaging in his aspect, as bespeaks your favour at first sight. He seems to be near fifty; he is a man of good sense and fine discourse, though his accent is not pure Italian, from his living, as he says, so long in foreign countries. He speaks almost all the oriental languages, and has a very competent share of other parts of learning, as well as that of his profession. We sent to Ragusa and Lucca to enquire about him, but could not get the least information of his being known in those places. The reason of which he has given in his life, as you will see; only at Ragusa, some people remembered there had been a merchant of that name, about five and twenty or thirty years ago, who was either lost, or taken by pirates, and never heard of more.

The Inquisition, as you know, Sir, has eyes every where, especially on strangers;

\* The Italian titles of *Illustrissimo*, &c. are left out, as not used in our language.

† He either means the death of some pope, or some extraordinary crisis in the Romish economy.

‡ The secretary was a Dominican Friar; the Dominicans being masters of the Inquisition.

§ A little republick in Italy.

|| A republick in Dalmatia, and tributary to the Turks.

we kept an eye upon him from his first settling at Bologna: but as we proceeded with justice as well as caution, we could not discover any sufficient reason to take him up. His life was as regular as that of others of his profession, which he did not follow very closely, but only for form sake, being chiefly consulted at his own house, on account of some extraordinary secrets he pretended to be master of, without making any visits but to ladies, with whom he grew in prodigious request. They said he had a sweetness and ease in conversation, that was almost bewitching. This unaccountable fondness of the ladies gave us the first suspicion, lest he should instil some ill notions into that sex, so credulous where they are fond, and so incredulous where they dislike. He professed himself a Roman Catholick; seemed to have a competent knowledge, and even veneration, considering he was a physician, for our holy mysteries: so we had nothing against him on that account. We could not find that he wanted for money; though he lived rather genteelly than magnificently: we found on several occasions, that money, the idol of other people, was the least of his care; and that he had some secret springs we could not fathom. His house was but decently, though compleatly, furnished for one of his rank; he kept two servants in livery and a valet de chambre; who, being of this town, knew no more of him than we did. There was an elderly lady we thought had been his wife, but it proved she was not; a foreigner, for whom he seemed to have a great respect, and her maid a foreigner also; and an elderly maid-servant of the town. We have them all secured in the Inquisition, though he does not know it. The lady has the remains of a wonderful fine face, and an air of quality; she speaks a broken Italian, so that we can get very little out of her, but what agrees with his account. I am confident you will rather be pleased with these particulars than think them tedious. There is something so extraordinary in the man, I ought not to omit the least circumstance; we had several consultations about him in our Inquisition, as well as our Leiger intelligences, but could discover nothing of moment. We examined what intercourse he had in other parts, by ordering the post-master to send us all his letters, which we could easily open, and seal up again with the greatest nicety. But we found he had only two correspondents, one possessed of a moderate income of about four thousand crowns in the bank of Genoa; the other a lady of your city of Venice, whom we discovered to be a celebrated courtesan, who subscribes herself Favilla. We find by her last letter, that he had given her very good advice, and persuaded her to become a penitent; you'll oblige us if you will enquire what she is. Amorous intrigues not falling under our cognizance, we let him alone for some time, having a person under our examination on suspicion of being a Jew in masquerade, and a spy from the Grand Signor, who kept us employed for some time. Besides, the good advice he gave the courtesan, and he being past his prime, made us less suspicious of the ladies; we supposed they had recourse to him on account of some female infirmities. Though the young ladies were most fond of him, his behaviour to them was more an endearing sweetness and courtesy, than love, with very little signs, at least he had the address to conceal them, of more kindness for one than another. In fine, persons of the best rank, of both sexes, began to have a prodigious liking for his company; he stole upon them insensibly. As he increased in this good opinion, he opened himself with greater freedom; he made no shew at all at first, more than a fine presence and a polite address: but after further acquaintance, they discovered he was master of most sciences, and shewed a superior genius in any thing they could discourse of. We employed proper persons to insinuate themselves into his good liking, and consult him as a friend on several nice points; but he had such a presence of mind, yet appeared so unconstrained in his discourse, that they owned themselves novices in comparison to him. If they talked of politics, he said very judiciously, it was not for men of his rank to meddle with affairs of state, or examine what persons did in the cabinet. If of religion, he seemed to understand it very well for one of his profession; so that nothing came from him but what was consonant to the Catholick faith; expressing on all occasions a great deference for the authority of the Church. But still the more sagacious were persuaded something more than ordinary lay hid under that specious cover. At length, talking one day with some of our spies about the customs of foreign countries, he said, he had met with a nation in one of the remotest parts of the world, who, though they were Heathens, had more knowledge of the law of nature and common morality, than the most civilized Christians. This was immediately carried to us, and explained



explained as a reflection on the Christian religion. Another time, as he had a great knowledge in philosophy, he dropt some words as if he had some skill in judiciary astrology; which you know, Sir, is a capital crime with us. We were as good as resolved to seize him, when we were determined to it by the following accident. Two of the most beautiful women in all Bologna had fallen in love with him, either on account of the handsomeness of his person, or, by a whimsicalness peculiar to some women, because he was a stranger, or thinking he might keep their secrets better under the cloak of being a physician; or, in fine, drawn in by some love potion or other, we cannot tell; but the matter grew to such a height, that on his shewing more distinguishing favour to one of them, as it is natural for our women to be violent in their jealousy, as well as love, the other, to be revenged, said he had bewitched her; which she was sure of, for that, since the very first time she saw him, she thought there was something more in him, than ever she saw in any man in her life. Besides, she said, she had often found him drawing circles and figures on paper, which to her looked like conjuration. Her friends immediately informed our fathers of it; so we resolved to seize him, if it were but to find out his secrets, and see what the man was. There was another reason induced us to it, which the world will hardly believe, though it is matter of fact: that is, we were afraid, the man would be assassinated by some secret means or other, for being so great with our ladies; so, to save his life, and not lose the discoveries we expected from him, it was determined he should be seized immediately. Accordingly, I was deputed, with three under-officers, to do the business, but with all the caution and secrecy usual in such cases. It was done about midnight, when we had watched one of the two ladies he favoured most, into his house. We went in a close coach, and myself and one of the officers stopping at the door, as soon as the servant opened it, stepped in, telling him what we were, and charging him, at his peril, not to make the least noise. The servants being Italians, and knowing the consequence of the least resistance, stood as mute as fishes. We immediately went into the inner parlour, and, contrary to our expectation, found our gentleman, the young lady with her governante, and the elderly lady that belonged to him, sitting very decently at an elegant collation of fruits and sweetmeats, brought, as we supposed, by the fair lady as a present. At our first appearance, he seemed more surprized than terrified; as we make no ceremonies in those cases, we told him our errand, and commanded him to come along with us without the least resistance, or else it should be worse for him. Then we turned to the young lady, whose friends and person we knew, and told her we wondered to find her in such company, at such unseasonable hours; but on account of her friends, would not meddle with her, but bid her, for her own sake, as she tendered her life and honour, never to take the least notice of the affair. She trembling, and ready to faint away, after some hesitation, was able to say, that she was come to consult about her health; that she brought her governante along with her to take off all suspicion, and as she was mistress of herself and fortune, it was not unusual for persons of her rank to be out at that time, considering the heat of the season. She had scarce pronounced these words, when she fell directly into a swoon. Her governante having things proper for such occasions, revived and comforted her as well as she could. But when we were going to take the gentleman along with us, the elderly lady, to whom we supposed he had told his misfortunes, instead of falling into fits, flew at us like a tigress, with a fury I never saw in any human creature in my life; tearing at us with her nails and teeth, as if she had been in the most raging madness. We, not accustomed to resistance, considering our character and cloth, and she a woman, were almost motionless, when the servants at the noise came up. We commanded them, in the name of the Inquisition, to seize her; the gentleman interposed in our favour, saying some words to her in an unknown language, which he assured us, were to beg her to be pacified, as she tendered his life as well as her own; then the violence of her passion turned another way, and threw her into the strongest convulsions I ever saw. By this time the other two officers were come up, wondering at our delay, and to find resistance against the officers of the Inquisition. The gentleman, with a becoming submission, rather than fear, yielded himself a prisoner, and begged us to pardon the sudden transports of a person unacquainted with our customs, whose life in some manner depended on his. That she was a Persian lady of quality, brought into this country by great misfortunes, who had once saved his life,

as he had been afterwards instrumental in saving her's. That she was disposed to turn Christian, with intention, after some time, to end her days in a convent. That for his own part, relying on his innocence, he readily submitted to our authority, and offered himself to be carried wherever we pleased; he uttered all this with an air of constancy that was surprizing. We immediately took him into the coach, leaving two of the officers with the elderly lady, and commanding them and the gentleman's servants not to stir out of the room till further orders. As soon as we arrived at the Inquisition, we lodged him in a handsome strong room; not so much like a criminal, as like a person for whom we had some respect. There we left him to his own thoughts, and returned to his house to seize the elderly lady and his papers, having dismissed the young lady and her governante before. I forgot to tell you, that Signor Gaudentio, by our permission, had spoke to the elderly lady coming out of her fits in Italian, (for we would not let him speak to her in the unknown language, for fear of a combination) and with much pains made her understand, that he begged her by all that was dear, to submit to whatever we should enjoin her; assuring her by that means all would be well for her safety and his own: which last words seemed to give some calm to her tempestuous spirits. You may believe, Sir, we were much surprized at the novelty of the thing, and the account he gave of her quality. But as we often meet with false stories in our employment, that did not hinder us from doing our duty. So I took her by the hand with a great deal of respect, and put her into the coach between myself and my companion; not without apprehensions of some extravagant follies, considering the violence of her temper; but she continued pretty sedate, only seemed to be overwhelmed with grief. We brought her to the Inquisition, and lodged her in a very handsome apartment separate from the convent, on account of her sex; with two waiting-women to attend her with all respect, till we were better apprized of the truth of her quality. This obliged me to take another journey to Signor Gaudentio's house, to secure his papers, with whatever else might contribute to further our discovery. I found all things in the same order I left them; but being extremely fatigued, I sat down to the elegant collation that was left, and after a small repast, went to bed in his house, to have the morning before us for securing his effects. I sealed up all the papers I could find, to examine them at more leisure; took an inventory of all the moveables, that they might be restored to him in case he was found innocent; and sent for a proper officer to remain in the house, who was to be responsible for every thing. There were two little cabinets of curious workmanship; one of them, as it appeared, belonged to him, the other to the strange lady; but being full of intricate drawers or tills, we took them both along with us. These and the papers we delivered to the head Inquisitors, not being willing to proceed in either of their examinations, till we had got all the light we could, to find out the truth, for that was all our aim; then we could tell what course to take with them. We placed two cunning lay-brothers, in the nature of servants, for Signor Gaudentio, who were to insinuate themselves into his favour by their kind offices, compassionating his misfortunes, and advising him to discover the whole truth, in the account of his life, quality, profession, opinions, and, in fine, whatever articles he was to be interrogated on, to confess ingenuously what he knew: that that was the only way to find favour at the hands of the Inquisitors; that they pardoned almost all faults on a sincere confession, and an assurance of amendment. I visited him myself several times before his examination, and gave him the same advice and assurance; he promised me faithfully he would, and seemed so steady and confirmed in his own innocence, with such an agreeable, yet sincere way in his discourse, as really surprized me, and caused me already to be prejudiced in his favour; adding with a smile, that the history of his life would administer more cause of wonder than indignation. Not to be too particular, the chief of the Inquisition, with myself along with them, set to the scrutiny of his papers: we examined them with all the care imaginable, but could find nothing to ground any material accusation, except some imperfect memoirs of the customs of a country and people unheard of to us, and I believe to all the world beside, with some odd characters, or words, which had no affinity with any language or characters we ever saw. We discovered he had a great knowledge in natural philosophy, with some remarks that were very curious. There was a rough draught of a map of a country, with towns, rivers, lakes, &c. but no climate marked down. In short, all his papers contained nothing



but some small sketches of philosophy and physick, with some pieces of poetry of an uncommon taste. Neither could we find any footsteps of judiciary astrology, or calculations of nativities, of which we had the greatest suspicion; only a pair of globes, a set of mathematical instruments, charts of navigation, forms of unknown trees and plants, and such like things, as all gentlemen who delight in travelling are curious to have. There were indeed some lines, circles, segments of circles, which we supposed the informing lady meant; but looked like an attempt to find out the longitude, rather than any magical schemes. His books were of the same nature; nothing of heresy that we could see, but such as belonged to a man of learning. There were several common books of devotion, such as are approved by our church, and seemed pretty well used; by which we judged him to be really a Catholick, and a person of no bad morals. But as nothing looks so like an honest man as a knave, this did not take away all our suspicion. When we came to open the cabinets, in the first of them, which belonged to him, we found in one of the drawers about four hundred and fifty Roman crowns, with other small money, and some foreign coin along with it, as Turkish sequins, and some we knew nothing of. The sum not being very extraordinary, we could conclude nothing from thence. In another drawer we found several precious stones, some set, some unset, of a very great value, so far from being counterfeit, that we never saw any so brilliant. Besides, several pieces of native gold, of such fineness, as nothing with us can come up to it. In a third, we found a small heap of medals most of gold, but of an unknown stamp and antiquity. There were outlandish stones of odd figures enough, which to others might look like talismans, but we took them for some out-of-the-way curiosities. In a private drawer in the centre of the cabinet, there was something wrapt up in a piece of green silk of wonderful fineness, all embroidered with hearts and hands joined together, wrought in gold with prodigious art, and intermixed with different flowers, unknown in our part of the world; in the midst of it was an azure stone, as large as the palm of one's hand, set round with rubies of very great value, on which was most artfully painted in miniature, a woman at length, holding a little boy in her left hand, the most beautiful creature that ever eyes beheld; clad likewise in green silk spangled with golden suns: their complexion was something darker than that of our Italian ladies; but the features, especially the woman's, so uncommonly beautiful as if she had been of another species. Underneath was engraved with a diamond in a modern hand—'*Questo solo.*' You may be sure, Sir, this raised our ideas of the man: at first, we thought he had the secret of the philosopher's stone; but in all his inventory we could find no implements of that art. Then we thought he must have been some famous pirate, or one who had robbed the cabinet of some great prince, and was come to live at Bologna in that private manner, under the disguise of a physician. But having been three years in the town, if it had been any European prince, the world would have had an account of it before now: so we concluded that either what he said of that unknown country was true, or that he had robbed some of the Eastern princes, and got off clear with his prize. But the picture of the woman made us incline to think he had married some outlandish queen, and on her death had retired with his effects. The rest of the drawers were full of natural curiosities of foreign plants, roots, bones of animals, birds, insects, &c. from whence very likely he took his physical secrets. The other cabinet, which belonged to the elderly lady, was very rich, but nothing equal to the first; there were a great many small jewels, and some very fine pearls, with bracelets, pendants, and other curious ornaments belonging to women; and a little picture of a very handsome man about thirty, nothing like our gentleman, in a warlike dress, with a Turkish scymitar by his side, who by his mien seemed to be a man of note. But we could find nothing that could give us any knowledge what they were; so that we were at a loss with all our sagacity what to think of the matter, or to find any just cause to keep them in the Inquisition: for though we do not discover our motives to other people, we never proceed against any one but on very strong suspicions. On which account we were resolved to make his confinement as easy as possible, till we could see further into the affair. We had thoughts of examining the woman first, to get what we could from her to interrogate him upon; but she not understanding Italian enough, we sent to Venice with our accustomed privacy, for some of your people, that trade to the Levant, to be our interpreters. In the mean time we resolved to try what we could

get out of him by his own confession; so we sent for him before us. He came into the room with a modest unconcernedness, that rather argued wonder than fear: we had the cabinet and jewels all before us, shewed them to him all together, with the inventory of his goods, assuring him they should be forth-coming, in case we were apprized of his innocence; but withal advising him, as well as commanding him to confess the truth, and then not a hair of his head should be touched. But if ever we caught him in a false story, all should be confiscated, and he never see sun or moon more. He assured us with great respect, he would own the truth to every thing we should interrogate him about, in an accent that would have persuaded any one of his sincerity, humbly desiring to know what accusations we had against him. We answered, that was not the method of the Inquisition; but that he should answer directly to our interrogatories. As the holy office chiefly concerns itself about religion, we asked him first, what religion he was of. The reason of this was, because, though he professed himself a Catholick, we were to keep up the forms: neither did we know but that he might be some Jew or Turkish spy in masquerade: then his name; place of his birth; where he was educated; how he came by those jewels; what was the occasion of his settling at Bologna; who that elderly lady was; in fine, every thing in general and particular we could think of at first, the better to compare his answers afterwards. He told us he was a Catholick bred and born; always professed himself such; and in that faith would live and die, let what would happen to him. He explained himself on the chief heads, to shew that he was well instructed in his religion: he appealed to all the enquiries we could make, whether he had not behaved as a Catholick on all occasions, naming a Capuchin in the town, who was his father confessor; to whom, he said, he gave leave to declare all he knew on that head. As to his name, he said, his true name was Gaudentio di Lucca, though born at Ragusa. That his father was a merchant trading to the Levant; which employment he designed to follow himself; but in his first voyage was taken by an Algerine pirate, who carried him a slave to Grand Cairo, and sold him to a merchant, of what country no body knew; which merchant took him along with him, through the vast deserts of Africa, by a way he would describe to us if we required it, till he came to a country, perhaps the most civilized and polite in the whole universe. In that country he lived near five and twenty years, till on the death of his wife, and his only surviving son, whose pictures were in that cabinet, the melancholy disaster made him induce his father-in-law, who was the merchant that had first bought him, to take another journey to Grand Cairo, from whence he might be able to return to his native country. This the merchant, (for he passed for such, though he was a great ruler in his own country) complied with: but happening to come thither when the plague raged in the city, his father-in-law and several of his attendants died of it; leaving him heir to most of his effects, and part of the jewels we saw before us. That being now entirely at liberty, he returned in a French ship trading from Marseilles to the Levant, the master's name François Xavier Godart, who by agreement was to land him at Venice; but touching at Candy, they accidentally saved the life of that elderly lady, and brought her off along with them, for which they were pursued by two Turkish vessels, and carried prisoners to Constantinople, but released by the order of the sultaness's mother. That Monsieur Godart was well known at Venice; particularly by Signor Corridani, an eminent merchant there, who could assure us of the truth of what he said. That, in fine, having staid some time at Venice, to see the curiosities and the carnival, an affair relating to the young lady we saw with him, when he was seized, and the love he had for learning, Bologna being a famous university, induced him to settle there, where he presumed we had been very well informed of his behaviour ever since. 'This,' said he, 'is the most succinct account I can give to your Reverences, on the interrogatories you have proposed to me; though my life has been chequered with such a variety of incidents, as would take a great deal of time to descend to particulars.' We looked at one another with some surprize at this strange account, which he delivered with such an air of steadiness, as scarce left any room to doubt of the truth of it. However, our superior turning to him, said—'Signor Gaudentio, we neither believe, nor disbelieve, what you tell us; as we condemn no man without a full conviction of his crime, so we are not to be imposed upon, by the accounts people may give of themselves. What is here before us, shews there is something extraordinary in the case. If we find you to be an impostor, you shall suffer as such; in the mean time,



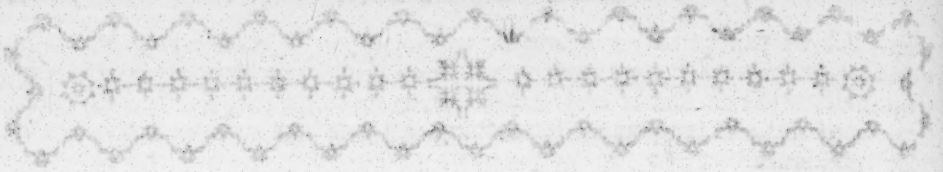
time, till we can be better informed, we enjoin you to give in your whole life, with all occurrences, except your private sins, if you have any, in writing; which you shall read to us, and be cross-examined, as we think proper. It will concern you therefore to be very exact; for nothing will pass here but innocence, or a sincere repentance.

This, Sir, is the manuscript I send you, given in by himself as ordered; with the Inquisitors interrogatories as we examined it, article by article. Which interrogatories I have inserted as they were proposed, with a further account at the end, for the better clearing of the whole. We beg you to inform yourself of the facts, which his memoirs say happened to him at Venice, particularly about Monsieur Godart. Besides, Sir, you that can trace all the branches of ancient history to the fountain head, are able to form a better judgment of the probability of his relation. He is still in the Inquisition, and offers himself to conduct some of our missionaries, to preach the Gospel to those unknown people. The length of this only gives me leave to assure you, that I am with the greatest esteem imaginable, Sir, &c.

BOLOGNA,  
JULY 29, 1721.

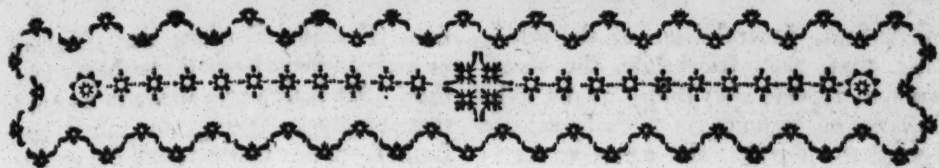
F. ALISIO DE ST. IVORIO.

THE



\* This part of the account is certainly true; there was such a captain in the life of the  
 + It is likewise true, that there was such a quarrel between John of Austria, the  
 † Ferdinand, and Venetian, admiral of the Venetian galleys, which had like to have put  
 the





THE  
A D V E N T U R E S  
O F  
SIGNOR GAUDENTIO DI LUCCA.



I Should be insensible, reverend Fathers, if I were not highly concerned to find myself under any accusation before this holy tribunal, which I reverence with all the powers of my soul: but especially if your Reverences should harbour any sinister opinion of my religion; for I was born and bred up in the bosom of the most holy Catholick church, as well as my parents before me; in the defence of which my ancestors spent part of their blood, against the infidels, and enemies of our faith; and for which faith I am ready to lay down my life. But I am as yet a stranger to your Reverences, and on several accounts may be liable to suspicion. Wherefore, I blame not the justice of your proceeding, but rather extol your goodness in allowing me the liberty to clear myself, by a true and sincere declaration of my whole life, wherein, I own, have happened several astonishing and almost incredible occurrences; all which I shall lay before your Réverences, according to the commands imposed on me, with the utmost candour and sincerity.

My name is Gaudentio di Lucca: I was so called, because my ancestors were said to be originally of that place; though they had been settled for some time at

Ragusa, where I was born: both which places are not so far off, but they may be very well known to your Reverences. My father's name was Gasparino di Lucca, heretofore a merchant of some note in those parts. My mother was a Corfican lady, reported to be descended from those who had been the chief personages in that island. My grandfather was likewise a merchant: but my great grandfather, Bernardino di Lucca, was a soldier, and captain of the great Venerio's own galley\*, who was general for the Venetians in the famous battle of Lepanto against the Turks. We had a tradition in our family, that he was Venerio's son by a Grecian lady of great quality, some say descended from the Paleologi, who had been emperors of Constantinople. But she dying in childbed, and they having been only privately married, Venerio bred him up as the son of a friend of his who was killed in the wars. That famous battle, in which the Christians and Venerio got so great renown against the Turks, instead of raising my great grandfather's fortune, was the occasion of his retiring from the wars, and turning merchant. The reason was this: Venerio the Venetian admiral had caused a Spanish captain to be hung up at the yard-arm for mutiny†; which severe discipline so displeased Don John of

\* This part of the account is certainly true; there was such a captain in the list of the officers in that famous battle.

† It is likewise true, that there was such a quarrel between Don John of Austria, the generalissimo, and Venerio, admiral of the Venetian galleys; which had like to have put the

of Austria, generalissimo of the whole fleet, that, after the battle, the Venetians, to appease Don John, and not to be deprived of the succours of the Spaniards against the Turks, were forced to sacrifice Venerio's honour to the resentment of the Spaniards, and put him out of commission\*. After this disgrace, Venerio retired; and my great grandfather, whose fortune depended on his having been bred up to the sea, turned merchant, or rather privateer against the Moors; and, with the Knights of Malta, not only did great service against them, but made a considerable fortune in the world.

But, to return to myself: my father having a plentiful fortune, took particular care of the education of his children. He had only two sons, of whom I was the youngest; and a daughter, who died young. Finding I had a great inclination to learning, he promoted it, by providing me with the best masters, till I was fit to go to the university. The knowledge of languages being of great use as well as ornament to young gentlemen, he himself, by way of recreation, taught me that mixed language called *Lingua Franca*, so necessary in eastern countries. It is made up of Ita-

lian, Turkish, Persian, and Arabian, or rather a jargon of all languages together. He scarce ever spoke to us but in that language, saying, we might learn Latin from our masters, and our mother-tongue from our play fellows. The same reason induced him to send me to the famous university of Paris, to learn French at the same time with my other studies. I lived in the *College des Quatre Nations*, and maintained my theses of universal philosophy under the celebrated Monsieur Du Hamel, who was one of the first in the university who decried Aristotle's philosophy, and leaned towards the opinions of Descartes.

[*Secretary.* Here the inquisitors muttered a little, fearing he was inclined to the Copernican system, which has been condemned at Rome. But, since it regarded philosophical matters only, they passed it over.]

I was entering into my nineteenth year, and had some thoughts of taking to the church, when my brother wrote me the melancholy account of my father and mother's death, and the unfortunate occasion of it; which in short was, that having lost his richest ship, with all his effects, by pirates, and his chief factor at Smyrna being gone off, his other cor-

the whole Christian fleet at variance together, before the battle, and ruined the hopes of all Christendom. The occasion was, as he relates it; Don John, as generalissimo, viewing the whole fleet before the fight, and finding the Venetian galleys too thinly manned, ordered four thousand Spaniards to be put on board the said galleys. But one Mutio Tortona, a Spanish captain, proving mutinous, after a great many injurious words, came to blows with the captain of the Venetian galley where he was; upon which the whole fleet fell to it. Venerio, hearing the uproar, sent his own captain to see what was the matter; but the proud Spaniards treated him no better than they did the rest; so that Venerio himself was forced to come to appease them; but seeing the Spanish captain persist in his mutinous temper, and the affront he had put upon his captain, who was reported to be his son, ordered Tortona and his ensign to be hung at the yard-arm. At this all the Spaniards in the fleet were up in arms, and threatened to cut the Venetians to pieces; but, by the interposition of the other generals, the matter was made up till after the fight; when Venerio, who had behaved with incomparable valour, and, according to Don John's own confession, was the chief occasion of the victory, to appease the haughty Spaniard, had his commission taken from him, and was recalled by the senate.

\* It was Fuscari, who was made general of the Venetians in Venerio's stead.

Every one who is the least acquainted with history, knows that the battle of Lepanto was the greatest sea-fight that ever was fought between the Christians and Turks; and the victory on the Christians side the most signal. The Spanish galleys were commanded by Don John of Austria, generalissimo: the Pope's galleys by the famous Colonna: the Genoese by old Doria, who had gained so much renown against the Turks and French, under Charles V. the Venetians by the great Venerio, one of the bravest soldiers of his time. Haly the Turk, great basha of the sea, was slain, and almost all the Turkish commanding officers killed or taken. Amongst the prisoners, were Haly's two sons, nephews to the Grand Signior. Of the common soldiers of the Turks, were slain two-and-thirty thousand: a hundred and forty-one of the enemies galleys were taken, forty sunk or burnt; of gallies and other small vessels were taken about sixty. *Vide* the Turkish history, and other accounts of this famous battle, and the whole affair as is there related. The battle was fought on the 7th of October 1571.

respondents



respondents came upon him thick; and not being in a condition to answer their calls, it threw him and my mother into a deep melancholy, which shortened their days, both dying in three weeks of one another. My brother told me he was not able to maintain me longer at the university, as before; but acquainted me, he had made a shift to fit out a small vessel, wherein he had put his all; and invited me to join the small portion that fell to my share along with him, with which, he said, we could make a pretty good bottom; and so retrieve the shattered fortune of our family. Not to be too prolix, I followed his advice: he sold his house and gardens to pay his father's creditors, and put what was left, together with my little stock, into that unfortunate bottom. We set sail from Ragusa the third of March, *Anno Dom. 1688*, very inauspiciously for my dear brother, as will appear by the sequel. We touched at Smyrna, to see if we could hear any thing of my father's factor: and were told, that he was turned Turk, and gone off; very magnificently dressed up in borrowed feathers, to settle at Constantinople; however, we picked up something of some honest Christian merchants, with whom he had lodged a part of his effects: This encouraged us to proceed to Cyprus and Alexandria; but, as we were pursuing our voyage one morning, in a prodigious fog, as if the sea was fatal to our family, we spied on a sudden two Algerine rovers bearing down upon us, one on each side. We had scarce time to clear our little vessel, when they fired upon us, and called to us to strike, or we were dead men. My brother and I, considering that our all was at stake, and that we had better die honourably than be made slaves by those unbelieving miscreants, called up our men, who were but twenty-three in all, of whom five were young gentlemen who had engaged to try their fortune along with us. We were armed only with swords, and pistols under our girdles. After a short consultation, it was agreed to fight it out to the last man; and we turned back to back to make head against both sides, my brother in the middle of one rank, and myself in the other. The enemy boarded us in great numbers, looking on us as madmen to pretend to make any resistance; but they were soon made to leap back, at least all that were able; for being close

up with them, and they crowded together, we fired our pistols so luckily, that scarce one missed doing execution. Seeing them in this confusion, we made a push at them on each side, still keeping our ranks, and drove the remainder headlong off the deck. This we did twice before any of our men dropt. We were grappled so close, they had no use of their cannon or muskets, and scarce thought of firing their pistols at us, expecting we should yield immediately, or to have borne us down with their weight. I am more particular in describing this petty fight, since there are but few examples where a handful of men made such a long resistance. The arch-pirate, who was a stout, well-built, young man, raged like a lion, calling his men a thousand cowards, so loud, that his voice was heard above all the cries of the soldiers. The edge of their fury was a little abated after the dropping of so many men; and they began to fire at some distance; which did us more harm than their most furious attacks. My brother, seeing his men begin to drop in their turn, ordered me to face the one ship, while he with his rank leaped in amongst the enemies in the other. He did it with such a noble intrepidity, that he made a gap among the thickest of them immediately. But their numbers closing together, their very weight drove him back in spite of all he could do; and he lost several of his men before he could recover his post. The enemy would neither board us, nor leave us; but firing at us continually, still killed some of our men. There were now only eleven of us left; and no hopes of victory, or of quarter after such obstinate resistance. They durst not come to a close engagement with us for all this; when my brother, to die as honourably as he could, once more leaped into the pirate's ship, and seeing their captain in the midst of them, made at him with all his might, calling on the few he had left to second him. He soon cut his way through; but just as he was coming up to him, a cowardly Turk clapt a pistol just below his two shoulder blades, and, I believe, shot him quite through the heart, for he dropped down dead on the spot. The Turk that shot him was run through the body by one of our men, and he himself, with the others that were left, being quite overpowered, were all cut in pieces. I had yet four men left on my side against the lesser ship, and

had till then kept off the enemy from boarding, but the pirates giving a great shout at my brother's fall, the captain of the ship I was engaged with, who was the arch-pirate's brother, cried out to his crew, that it was a shame to stand all day firing at five men; and leaping on my deck, made at me like a man of honour, with his pistol steadily poised in his hand. I met him with equal resolution. He came boldly up within sword's length, and fired his pistol directly at my face; he aimed his shot so well, that one of the balls went through my hair, and the other grazed the side of my neck. But before he could second his shot, I gave him such a stroke with my broad sword, between the temple and the left-ear, that it cut through part of his skull, his cheek-bone, and going cross his mouth, almost severed the lower part of his face from the upper. I had just the satisfaction to see him fall, when a musket-ball went through the brawny part of my right-arm, and, at the same time, a Turk hit me just in the nape of the neck with the butt end of his musket, that I fell down flat on my face, on the body of my slain enemy. My companions, all but one, who died of his wounds soon after, fell honourably by my side. The Turks poured in from both ships like wolves upon their prey. After their barbarous shouts and yelling for the victory, they fell to stripping the dead bodies, and threw them into the sea without any further ceremony. All our crew, beside myself, were slain, or gasping, with threescore and fifteen of the enemy. The reason why we fought so desperately was, that we knew very well, having killed so many at the first attacks, we were to expect no quarter; so we were resolved to sell our lives as dear as we could. When they came to strip me like the rest, I was just come to myself, being only stunned by the stroke of the musket. They found by my cloaths, that I was one of the most considerable persons of the crew. I was got upon my knees, endeavouring to rise, and reaching for my sword to defend myself to the last gasp; I found I could not hold it in my hand, by reason of the wound in my arm, though if I could, it had been needless; for three of them fell down upon me, and pressed me to the deck, while others brought cords and tied my hands, to carry me to the captain. He was dressing a slight wound he had in his leg with a pistol shot; and

four women in Persian habits were standing by; three of whom seemed to be attendants to the fourth, who was a person of the largest size, about five or six-and-twenty, a most exquisite beauty, except that she had an Amazonian kind of fierceness in her looks. When I was brought thus bound to the captain, they assured him I was the man that had slain his brother, and done the most harm of any. Upon which, starting up in the greatest fury a barbarian was capable of, and calling for a new scymitar he had in his cabin, he said—'Let me cleave, if I can, the head of this Christian dog, as he did my poor brother's: and then do you chop him into a thousand pieces.' With that he drew the scymitar, and was going to strike, when, to the astonishment of the very Barbarians, the strange lady cried out—'O save the brave young man!' and immediately falling down on her knees by me, caught me in her arms, and clasping me close to her bosom, covered my body with hers, and cried out—'Strike, cruel man, but strike through me, for otherwise a hair of his head shall not be hurt.' The Barbarians that stood round us were struck dumb with amazement; and the pirate himself lifting up his eyes towards heaven, said, with a groan enough to break his heart—'How, cruel woman! shall this stranger in a moment obtain more than I can with all my sighs and tears! Is this your paramour that robs me of what I have sought for with the danger of life? No, this Christian dog shall be no longer my cursed rival!' and lifting up his hand, was again going to strike, when, covering me more closely with her delicate body, she cried out again—'Hold, Hamet! this is no rival; I never saw his face before, nor ever will again, if you will but spare his life: grant me this, and you shall obtain more from me, than all your services could ever do.' Here he began to pause a little. For my part, I was as much in amaze as he was. After a little pause—'Cruel woman,' said he, 'what is the meaning of this?' Says she—'There is something in this young man,' (for I was but turned of nineteen) 'that he must not die. But, if you will engage and swear by the most holy Alcoran, that you will do him no harm, I not only promise to be your wife, but, to take off all umbrage of jealousy, I give you leave to sell him



‘to some honourable person for a slave; and will never see him more.’ Nor would she part from me, till he had sworn in that solemn manner, never to do me any hurt directly or indirectly; and, for greater security, she ordered one of her own servants to attend me constantly. So I was unbound; and the lady, without so much as looking at me, or staying to receive my thanks, retired with her women into the cabin. The pirate, who had something very noble in his looks for a Turk, confirmed again to me in the hearing of her officer, that I should receive no harm; and then ordered me to be carried under deck to the other end of the ship; commanding his men to steer back for Alexandria, in order, as I supposed, to dispose of me the first opportunity, that he might be rid, as he thought, of so formidable a rival.\*

[*Secretary.* Here the superior of the Inquisition receiving a message on some other business, we told him we would consider further of the account he had given us, which, we said, might be true, though the adventure was extraordinary; and that we would hear the remaining narrative of his life another time. He assured us with the most natural air, that the whole, let it seem never so extraordinary, was real fact. Whether it were true or false, it did not much concern the holy office, only so far as we might catch him tripping in his story: however, some of the inquisitors asked him the following questions

1<sup>st</sup> *Inquisitor.* Why did you not yield at first, considering the prodigious inequality of your strength and numbers, when you might have been ransomed afterwards; and not, like madmen, expose yourselves to be cut in pieces, as they all really were, except yourself?

*Gaudentio.* I told your Reverences, we had put our all in that bottom; which once lost, we had nothing to ransom ourselves with, but in all likelihood must have remained in miserable slavery all our life. We were most of us rash young men, of more courage

than prudence; we did not doubt but we could keep them off from boarding us, as we did; and thought, by their warm reception, they would have been forced to sheer off; besides, fighting against Turks and infidels though for our lives and fortunes, we judged meritorious at the same time, and that it might be looked upon as laying down our lives for our holy religion.

2<sup>d</sup> *Inquisitor.* You said that the strange lady cried out—‘There is something in that young man, that tells me, he must not die.’ I hope you do not pretend to the science of physiognomy; which is one of the branches of divination; or that an infidel or Heathen woman could have the spirit of prophecy?

*Gaudentio.* I cannot tell what was her motive for saying so; I only relate matter of fact. As for physiognomy, I do not think there can be any certainty in it. Not but that a person of penetration, who has observed the humours and passions of men, and considering the little care the generality of the world take to conceal them; I say, such a person may give a great guess, *à posteriori*, how they are inclined; though reason and virtue may indeed overcome the most violent. But I entirely submit my opinion to your better judgments.

*Secretary.* I cannot say, we were dissatisfied with these answers: we saw he was a very noble presence; and must have been extremely handsome in his youth: therefore no wonder a Barbarian woman should fall in love with him, and make use of that turn to save his life. However, for the present, we remanded him back to his apartment. Some days after he was called again to prosecute his story.]

While I was under deck in confinement with the pirates, several of them were tolerably civil to me; knowing the ascendant the lady had over their captain, and being witnesses how she had saved my life. But yet she would not consent to marry him, till she was assured I was safe out of his hands. The arch-pirate

\* This is an odd adventure enough; but the circumstances are pretty well connected together. There happen very strange accidents among those lawless Eastern people, and the wild Arabs, who observe no rules but what the lions and tigers, could they speak, would make for their own preservation. I fear there are some who profess themselves Christians would do the same.

never came to see me himself, not being willing to trust his passion; or else to watch all favourable opportunities of waiting on his mistress. One day, being indisposed for want of air, I begged to be carried upon deck to breathe a little; when I came up, I saw the lady, with her women, standing at the other end of the ship on the same account. I made her a very respectful bow at a distance; but as soon as ever she cast her eye on me, she went down into the cabin, I suppose, to keep her promise with the captain, and not to administer any cause of jealousy. I desired to be carried down again, not to hinder my benefactress from taking her diversion. I cannot say I found in myself the least inclination or emotion of love, only a sense of gratitude for so great a benefit; not without some admiration of the oddness of the adventure. When I was below, I asked the most sensible and civilized of the pirates, who their captain was, and who was my fair deliverer. How long, and by what means she came to be among them; because she seemed to be a person of much higher rank. He told me his captain's name was Hamet, son to the Dey of Algiers; who had forsaken his father's house on account of his young mother-in-law's falling in love with him. For which reason his father had contrived to have him assassinated, believing him to be in the fault. But his younger brother by the same mother, discovered the design. So gathering together a band of stout young men like themselves, they seized two of their father's best ships, and resolved to follow the profession they were now of, till they heard of their father's death. That as for the lady who had saved his life, she was the late wife of a

petty prince of the Curdi\*, tributary to the King of Persia, whose husband had been lately killed by treachery, or in an ambuscade of the wild Arabs. That, as far as he had been informed, the prince her husband had been sent by the king his master to Alexandria†; who, apprehending an insurrection among his subjects‡, had ordered him to treat for some troops of Arabian horse§. That he went there with a very handsome equipage, and took his beautiful wife along with him. 'Our captain,' continued he, 'happened to be there at the same time to sell his prizes, and had not only sold several things of great value to the Curdish lord and lady, but had contracted a particular friendship with him, though, as we found since, it was more on account of his fair wife than any thing else. Nothing in the world could be more obsequious than our captain. He attended them, and offered his service on all occasions: you see, he is a very handsome man, and daring by his profession. We could not imagine of a long while, why he made such a stay at that town, contrary to his custom; living at a very high rate, as men of our calling generally do. At length the Curdish lord having executed his commission, was upon the return, when we perceived our captain to grow extremely pensive and melancholy, but could not tell what was the cause of it. He called his brother, who lost his life by your hand, and me to him, and told us in private, he had observed some of the Arabian strangers muttering together, as if they were hatching some plot or other, whether against himself, or the Curd, he could not tell; but bid us be

\* The Curdi, or people of Curdistan, are a warlike nation, paying a small tribute to the Persians, and sometimes to the Turks; their very women are martial, and handle the sword and pike. The country runs from the Aliduli, a mountainous people, made tributary to the Turks by Selim I. father of Soliman the Magnificent, and reaches as far as Armenia.

† Alexandria is a sea-port, at the further end of the Mediterranean, belonging to the Turks, but much frequented by Arabian merchants, both by land and sea. One point of Curdistan is not far from this port.

‡ This insurrection he speaks of, might be the seeds, or the first plotting of the grand rebellion of Merowits, which began about the date of this account, and caused such a terrible revolution in the Persian empire; which no one who understands any thing can be ignorant of.

§ The Arabian horses are the best in the world, though not very large. The horsemen are very dextrous in the Eastern way of fighting. On which account one cannot wonder if the King of Persia, and his rebellious subjects, made it their interest to procure as many auxiliaries as they could. It is very likely the little parties would always be on watch, to surprize one another when they could find an opportunity. And this petty Curdian prince being zealous for the service of his king, might be taken off by the rebels that way.



sure to attend him well armed wherever he went. The event proved he had reason for his suspicions; for one evening, as the Curd and his wife were taking the air, with our captain, who was always of the party, passing through a little grove about a league out of town, six Arabian horsemen, exceedingly well mounted, came full gallop up to us; and without saying a word, two of them fired their pistols directly at the Curdish lord, who was the foremost, but by good fortune missed us all. The Curd, as all that nation are naturally brave, drew his scymetar, and rushing in among them, cut off the foremost man's head, as clean as if it had been a poppy; but advancing too far, unarmed as he was, one of them turned short, and shot him in the flank, that he dropped down dead immediately. Our captain seeing him fall, rushed in like lightning, his brother and myself falling on them at the same time: but the assassins, as if they wanted nothing but the death of the Curd, or saw by our countenances their staying would cost them dear, immediately turned their horses, and fled so swiftly on their jennets, that they were out of sight in an instant. We conducted the poor disconsolate lady and her dead husband back to the town, where those people made no more of it (being accustomed to such things) than if it had been a common accident. When her grief was a little abated, our captain told the lady, that it was not safe for her to return home the same way she came; that in all probability, those who killed her husband were in confederacy with the disaffected party, and would way-lay her, either for his papers, or her goods. That he had two ships well manned at her service, and would conduct her safe by sea to some part of the Persian empire, from whence she might get into her own country. She consented at last, having seen how gallantly my master had behaved in her defence. So she came aboard with her attendants and effects, in order to be transported into her own country. Our captain, you may be sure, was in no haste to carry her home, being fallen most desperately in love with her: so that instead of carrying

her to any of the Persian dominions, he directed his course for Algiers, hearing his father was dead; but meeting with you, it has made him alter his measures for the present. He has tried all ways to gain her love, but she would not give him the least encouragement, till this late accident, by which she saved your life. When he had ended his relation, I reflected on it a good while, and considering the nature of those pirates, I thought I saw a piece of treachery in the affair, much more black than what he described, and could not forbear compassionating the poor lady, both for her disaster, and the company she was fallen into. However, I kept my thoughts to myself. Not long after we arrived at Alexandria, where the pirate sold all our effects, that is, the merchandize he had taken aboard our ship, except some particular things that belonged to my brother and myself, as books, papers, maps and sea-charts, pictures, and the like. He determined to carry me to Grand Cairo\*, the first opportunity, to sell me, or even give me away to a strange merchant he had an acquaintance with, where I should never be heard of more.

Nothing remarkable happened during our stay at Alexandria; they told me the captain had been in an extraordinary good humour, ever since the lady's promise to marry him. But she, to be sure he should not deceive her by doing me any injury when I was out of the ship, ordered her officer to attend me wherever I was carried, till I was put in safe hands, and entirely out of the pirate's power. When we were arrived at Grand Cairo, I was carried to the place where the merchants meet to exchange their commodities; there were persons of almost all the eastern and Indian nations. The lady's officer, according to his mistress's order, never stirred an inch from me, to witness the performance of articles. At length, the pirate and a strange merchant spied one another almost at the instant, and advancing the same way, saluted each other in the Turkish language, which I understood tolerably well. After some mutual compliments, the pirate told him he had met with such a person he had promised to procure for him two years before, meaning myself, only I was not an

\* Grand Cairo is the place of residence of the great Bassa of Egypt, higher up the country, on the river Nile.

*eunuch*, but that it was in his power to make me so, if he pleased. Your Reverences cannot doubt but I was a little startled at such a speech, and was going to reply, that I would lose my life a thousand times, before I would suffer such an injury. But the lady's officer turned to the pirate, and said, he had engaged to his lady I should receive no harm; and that he must never expect to obtain her for his wife, if she had the least suspicion of such a thing. But the merchant soon put us out of doubt, by assuring us, that it was against their laws to do such an injury to any one of their own species; but if it were done before, they could not help it. Then turning to me, he said in very good *Lingua Franca*—'Young man, if I buy you, I shall soon convince you, you need not apprehend any such usage from me.' He eyed me from top to toe, with the most penetrating look I ever saw in my life; yet seemed pleased at the same time. He was very richly clad, attended with two young men in the same kind of dress, though not rich, who seemed rather sons than servants. His age did not appear to me to be above forty, yet had the most serene and almost venerable look imaginable. His complexion was rather browner than that of the Egyptians, but it seemed to be more the effect of travelling, than natural. In short, he had an air so uncommon, that I was amazed, and began to have as great an opinion of him, as he seemed to have of me. He asked the pirate, what he must give for me; he told him, I had cost him very dear, and with that recounted to him all the circumstances of the fight wherein I was taken; and, to give him his due, represented it no ways to my disadvantage. However, these were not the qualifications the merchant desired; what he wanted was a person who was a scholar, and could give him an account of the arts and sciences, laws, customs, &c. of the Christians. This the pirate assured him I could do; that I was an European Christian, and a scholar, as he guessed by my books and writings; that I understood navigation, geography, astronomy, and several other sciences. I was out of countenance to hear him talk so; for though I had as much knowledge of those sciences as could be expected from one of my years, yet my age would not permit me to be master of them, but only to have the first

principles, by which I might improve myself afterwards.

[*Secretary*. The Inquisitors demurred a little at this, fearing he might be addicted to judicial astrology; but considering he had gone through a course of philosophy, and was designed for the sea, they knew he was obliged to have some knowledge in those sciences.]

The pirate told him, I had some skill in musick and painting, having seen some instruments and books of those arts among my effects, and asked me if it were not so. I told him, all young gentlemen of liberal education in my country, learnt these arts, and that I had a competent knowledge and genius that way. This determined the merchant to purchase me. When they came to the price, the pirate demanded forty ounces of native gold, and three of those silk carpets, he saw there with him, to make a present to the Grand Signior. The merchant agreed with him at the first word; only demanded all the books, globes, mathematical instruments, and, in fine, whatever remained of my effects, into the bargain. The pirate agreed to this, as easily as the other did to the price; so, upon performance of articles on both sides, I was delivered to him. As soon as I was put into his power, he embraced me with a great deal of tenderness, saying, I should not repent my change of life. His attendants came up to me, and embraced me in the same manner, calling me Brother, and expressing a great deal of joy for having me of their company. The merchant bid them take me down to the caravansera or inn, that I might refresh myself, and change my habit to the same as they wore. I was very much surprized at such unexpected civilities from strangers. But, before I went, I turned to the pirate, and said to him with an air, that made the merchant put on a very thoughtful look, that I thanked him for keeping his promise in saving my life; but added, that though the fortune of war had put it in his power to sell me like a beast in the market, it might be in mine some time or other to render the like kindness. Then turning to the lady's officer, who had been my guardian so faithfully, and embracing him with all imaginable tenderness, I begged him to pay my best respects to my fair deliverer; and assure her, that I should



should esteem it the greatest happiness to be one day able to make a return for so unparalleled a favour, though it were at the expence of that life she had so generously saved. So we parted, the pirate grumbling a little within himself; and I in an amazing suspense, to know what was likely to become of me. As they were conducting me to the caravanfera where they lodged, I was full of the sorrowful reflection, that I was still a slave, though I had changed my master: but my companions, who were some of the handsomest young men I ever saw in my life, comforted me with the most endearing words, telling me, that I need fear nothing; that I should esteem myself one of the happiest men in the world, when they were arrived safe in their own country, which they hoped would be before long; that I should then be as free as they were, and follow what employment of life my inclinations led me to, without any restraint whatsoever. In fine, their discourse filled me with fresh amazement, and gave me at the same time an eager longing to see the event. I perceived they did not keep any strict guard on me; that I verily believed I could easily have given them the slip; and might have gotten some Armenian Christian to conceal me, till I should find an opportunity of returning into my own country. But, having lost all my effects, I thought I could scarce be in a worse condition, and was resolved to run all hazards. When I came to the house, I was struck with wonder at the magnificence of it, especially at the richness of the furniture. It was one of the best in all Grand Cairo, though built low according to the custom of the country. It seems they always staid a year before they returned into their own country, and spared no cost to make their banishment, as they called it, as easy as they could. I was entertained with all the rarities of Egypt; the most delicious fruits, and the richest Greek and Asiatick wines that could be tasted; by which I saw they were not Mahometans. Not knowing what to make of them, I asked them who they were; of what country, what sect and profession, and the like. They smiled at my questions, and told me they were children of the Sun, and were called Mezoraniens; which was as unintelligible to me as all the rest. But their country, they told me, I should see in a few months, and bid me ask no further ques-

tions. Presently my master came in, and embracing me, once more bid me welcome, with such an engaging affability, as removed almost all my fears. But what followed, filled me with the utmost surprize. 'Young man,' said he, 'by the laws of this country you are mine; I have bought you at a very high price, and would give twice as much for you, if it were to be done again. But,' continued he, with a more serious air, 'I know no just laws in the universe, that can make a free-born man become a slave to one of his own species. If you will voluntarily go along with us, you shall enjoy as much freedom as I do myself: you shall be exempt from all the barbarous laws of these inhuman countries, whose brutal customs are a reproach to the dignity of a rational creature, and with whom we have no commerce, but to enquire after arts and sciences, which may contribute to the common benefit of our people. We are blest with the most opulent country in the world: we leave it to your choice, to go along with us, or not; if the latter, I here give you your liberty, and restore to you all that remains of your effects, with what assistance you want to carry you back again into your own country. Only, this I must tell you, if you go with us, 'tis likely you will never come back again, or perhaps desire it.' Here he stopped, and observed my countenance with a great deal of attention. I was struck with such admiration of his generosity, together with the sentiments of joy for my unexpected liberty, and gratitude to my benefactor, coming into my mind all at once, that I had as much difficulty to believe what I heard, as your Reverences may now have at the relation of it, till the sequel informs you of the reasons for such unheard of proceedings. On the one hand, the natural desire of liberty prompted me to accept my freedom; on the other, I considered my shattered fortune; that I was left in a strange country so far from home, among Turks and Infidels; the ardour of youth excited me to push my fortune. The account of so glorious, though unknown a country, stirred up my curiosity; I saw gold was the least part of the riches of these people, who appeared to me the most civilized I ever saw in my life; but, above all, the sense of what I owed to so noble a benefactor,

who

who I saw desired it, and had me as much in his power now, as he could have afterwards. These considerations almost determined me to go along with him. I had continued longer thus irresolute, and fluctuating between so many different thoughts, if he had not brought me to myself, by saying—‘What say you, young man, to my proposal?’ I started out of my reveries, as if I had awaked from a real dream; and making a most profound reverence—‘My lord,’ said I, ‘or rather my father and deliverer, I am yours by all the ties of gratitude a human heart is capable of; I resign myself to your conduct, and will follow you to the end of the world.’ This I said with such emotion of spirit, that I believe he saw into my very soul, for embracing me once more with a most inexpressible tenderness—‘I adopt you,’ said he, ‘for my son; and these are your brothers,’ pointing to his two young companions; ‘all I require of you is, that you live as such.’—Here, reverend Fathers, I must confess one of the greatest faults I ever did in my life. I never considered whether these men were Christians or Heathens: I engaged myself with a people, where I could never have the exercise of my religion, although I always preserved it in my heart. But, what could be expected from a daring young man, just in the heat of his youth, who had lost all his fortune, and had such a glorious prospect offered him for retrieving it?—Soon after this, he gave orders to his attendants to withdraw, as if he intended to say something to me in private; they obeyed immediately with a filial respect, as if they had indeed been his sons, but they were not; I only mention it to shew the nature of the people I was engaged with: then taking me by the hand, he made me sit down by him, and asked me if it were really true, as the pirate informed him, that I was an European Christian? ‘Though,’ added he, ‘be

what you will, I do not repent my bringing of you.’ I told him I was, and in that belief would live and die. ‘So you may,’ said he, seemingly pleased at my answer. ‘But I have not yet met with any of that part of the world, who seemed to have the dispositions of mind I think I see in you,’ looking at the lineaments of my face with a great deal of earnestness. ‘I have been informed,’ continued he, ‘that your laws are not like the barbarous Turks, whose government is made up of tyranny and brutality, governing all by fear and force, and making slaves of all who fall under their power. Whereas the European Christians, as I am told, are governed by a divine law, that teaches them to do good to all, injury to none; particularly not to kill and destroy their own species; nor to steal, cheat, overreach, or defraud, any one of their just due; but to do in all things just as they would be done by; looking on all men as common brothers of the same stock, and behaving with justice and equity in all their actions publick and private, as if they were to give an account to the universal Lord and Father of all.’ I told him our law did really teach and command us to do so; but that very few lived up to this law; that we were obliged to have recourse to coercive laws and penalties, to enforce what we acknowledged otherwise to be a duty: that if it were not for the fear of such punishments, the greatest part of them would be worse than the very Turks he mentioned. He seemed strangely surpris’d at this.—‘What,’ says he, ‘can any one do in private, what his own reason and solemn profession condemns?’ Then addressing himself to me in a more particular manner—‘Do you profess this just and holy law you mentioned?’ I told him I did.—‘Then,’ says he, ‘do but live up to your own law, and we require no more of you\*.’ Here he made a little noise with his staff, at which

two

\* If it appear incredible to any one, that Heathens, as these people were, should have such strict ideas of morality and justice, when they see such horrid injustice, frauds and oppressions, among Christians, let them consider first, that the law and light of nature will never be entirely extinguished in any who do not shut their eyes against it; but that they would esteem the injuries they do to others, without any scruple, to be very great hardships if done to themselves: they have therefore the ideas of justice and equity imprinted in their minds, however obscured by their wicked lives. 2dly, Let them read the celebrated Bith of Meaur’s Universal History, pt. iii. of the morals and equity of the antient Egyptians under their great king Sesostris, or about that time. 3dly, Not only the lives and maxims of the first Heathen philosophers, afford a very just rules of morality, but there are also fragments of ancient



two of his attendants came in; he asked them if my effects were come from the pirate. Being answered, they were, he ordered them to be brought in, and examined them very nicely. There were among them some pictures of my own drawing, a repeating watch, two compass boxes, one of them very curiously wrought in ivory and gold, which had been my great grandfather's, given him by Venerio; a set of mathematical instruments, draughts of statuary and architecture by the best masters; with all which he seemed extremely pleased. After he had examined them with a great deal of admiration, he ordered one of his attendants to reach him a cabinet full of gold; he opened it to me, and said—'Young man, I not only restore all your effects here present, having no right to any thing that belongs to another man; but once more offer you your liberty, and as much of this gold, as you think sufficient to carry you home, and make you live easy all your life.' I was a little out of countenance, imagining what I said of the ill morals of the Christians had made him afraid to take me along with him. I told him, I valued nothing now so much as his company, and begged him not only to let me go along with him, but that he would be pleased to accept whatever he saw of mine there before him; adding, that I esteemed it the greatest happiness, to be able to make some small recompence for the obligations I owed him. 'I do accept of it,' says he, 'and take you solemnly into my care; go along with these young men, and enjoy your liberty in effect, which I have hitherto only given you in words.' Here some

of his elder companions coming in, as if they were to consult about business, the young men and myself went to walk the town for our diversion. Your Reverences may be sure I observed all the actions of these new people, with the greatest attention my age was capable of. They seemed not only to have a horror of the barbarous manners and vices of the Turks, but even a contempt of all the pleasures and diversions of the country. Their whole business was to inform themselves of what they thought might be an improvement in their own country, particularly in arts and trades, and whatever curiosities were brought from foreign parts; setting down their observations of every thing of moment. They had masters of the country at set hours to teach them the Turkish and Persian languages, in which I endeavoured to perfect myself along with them. Though they seemed to be the most moral men in the world, I could observe no signs of religion in them, till a certain occasion that happened to us in our voyage, of which I shall speak to your Reverences in it's proper place. This was the only point they were shy in; they gave me the reasons for it afterwards; but their behaviour was the most candid and sincere in other matters that can be imagined. We lived thus in the most perfect union all the time we staid at Grand Cairo; and I enjoyed the same liberty that I could have had in Italy: all I remarked in them was an uneasiness they expressed to be so long out of their own country; but they comforted themselves with the thought it would not be long. I cannot omit one observation I made of these young men's conduct while we staid in Egypt.

ancient history, from the earliest times, of whole Heathen nations, whose lives would make Christians blush at their own immoralities, if they were not hardened in them. The people of Colchos, whom the great Bochart, in his Phaleg, proves to have been a colony of ancient Egyptians, as will be seen in the sequel of these memoirs, or the ancient inhabitants of Pontus, who come from them, were, according to Homer, the most just of men.

Γαλακτοφάγων δικαιοτάτων Ανθρώπων.

Milk-eaters the most just of men. HOM. IL. K.

Cherilus in Xerxis Diabasi apud Bochart, speaking of the Scythians on the Euxine sea, says—'Νομάδων ἦσαν ἀποικοὶ ἀνθρώπων νομαίων—they were a colony of the Nomades, a just people.'

Strabo says, that Anacharsis and Abaris, both Scythians, esteemed by the ancient Greeks for their peculiar and national affability, probity, and justice:—'ἐκὶ ἰθὺν τὴν χαρὰν ἔχοντες ἐν τῇ αἰσχρολογίᾳ, καὶ τελευτήτῳ, καὶ δικαιοσύνῃ.' And Nicholas Damascenus, of the Galactophagi—'οἱ δὲ καὶ δικαιοτάτοι—they are the most just of men.' Vide BOCHART, lib. iii. c. 9.

D

They

They were all about my own age, strong and vigorous, and the handsomest race of people, perhaps, the world ever produced: we were in the most voluptuous and lewd town in the whole eastern empire; the young women seemed ready to devour us as we went along the streets. Yet I never could perceive in the young men the least propensity of lewdness. I imputed it at first to the apprehension of my being in their company, and a stranger; but I soon found they acted by principle. As young men are apt to encourage, or rather corrupt one another, I own I could not forbear expressing my wonder at it. They seemed surprized at the thought; but the reasons they gave were as much out of our common way of thinking, as their behaviour. They told me, for the first reason, that all the women they saw were either married; or particular men's daughters; or common. As to married women, they said, it was such a heinous piece of injustice to violate the marriage-bed, that every man living would look upon it as the greatest injury done to himself: how could they therefore in reason do it to another? If they were daughters of particular men, bred up with so much care and solicitude of their parents, what a terrible affliction must it be to them, or to ourselves, to see our daughters or sisters violated and corrupted, after all our care to the contrary; and this too, perhaps, by those we had cherished in our own bosoms? If common strumpets, what rational man could look on them otherwise than brute beasts, to prostitute themselves to every stranger for hire? Besides, their abandoned lewdness generally defeats the great design of nature to propagate the species; or by their impure embraces, such disorders may be contracted; as to make us hereafter, at best, but fathers of a weak and sickly offspring. And if we should have children by them, what would become of our father's grand-children? But what man who had the least sense of the dignity of his own birth, would stain his race, and give birth to such a wretched breed, and then leave them exposed to want and infamy? This they said chiefly with reference to the vast ideas they had of their own nation, valuing themselves above all other people; though the consideration holds good with all men. I

own, I was mute at these reasons, and could not say but they were very just, though the warmth of my youth had hindered me from reflecting on them before. These reflections appeared so extraordinary in young men, and even Heathens, that I shall never forget them. Some time after, I found by their diligence in settling their affairs, and the cheerfulness of their countenances, that they expected to leave Egypt very soon; they seemed to wait for nothing but orders from their governor. In the mean time there happened an accident to me, scarce fit indeed for your Reverences to hear; nor should I ever have thought of relating it, had you not laid your commands on me to give an exact account of my whole life. Besides, that it is interwoven with some of the chief occurrences of my life in the latter part of it. Our governor, whom they called Pophar, which in their language signifies Father of his people, and by which name I shall always call him hereafter, looking at his ephemeris, which he did very frequently, found by computation, that he had still some time left to stay in the country, and resolved to go down once more to Alexandria, to see if he could meet with any more European curiosities, brought by the merchant ships that are perpetually coming at that season into the port. He took only two of the young men and me along with him, to shew me, as he said, that I was entirely at my liberty, since I might easily find some ship or other to carry me into my own country; and I, on the other hand, to convince him of the sincerity of my intentions, generally kept in his company. The affair I am going to speak of, soon gave him full proof of my sincerity.

While we were walking in the public places to view the several goods and curiosities, that were brought from different parts of the world, it happened that the *bassa* of Grand Cairo, with all his family, was come to Alexandria on the same account, as well as to buy some young female slaves. His wife and daughter were then both with him. The wife was one of the Grand Signior's sisters, seemingly about thirty, and a wonderful fine woman. The daughter was about sixteen, of such exquisite beauty, and lovely features, as were sufficient to charm the greatest prince in the world\*.

When

\* N. B. The *bassa* of Grand Cairo is one of the greatest officers in the Turkish empire, and the most independent of any subject in Turkey. It is customary for the sultans to give



When he perceived them, the Pophar, who naturally abhorred the Turks, kept off, as if he were treating privately with some merchants. But I, being young and inconsiderate, stood gazing, though at a respectful distance, at the bassa's beautiful daughter, from no other motive but mere curiosity. She had her eyes fixed on my companions and me at the same time, and, as I supposed, on the same account. Her dress was so magnificent, and her person so charming, that I thought her the most beautiful creature I had ever seen in my life. If I could have foreseen the troubles which that short interview was to cost both the Pophar and myself, I should have chosen rather to have looked on the most hideous monster. I observed that the young lady, with a particular sort of emotion, whispered something to an elderly woman that attended her, and that this last did the same to a page, who immediately went to two natives of the place, whom the Pophar used to hire to carry his things: this was to enquire of them who we were. They, as appeared by the event, told them, that I was a young slave lately bought by the Pophar. After a while, the bassa with his train went away, and I, for my part, thought no more of the matter. The next day, as the Pophar and we were walking in one of the public gardens, a little elderly man, like an eunuch, with a most beautiful youth along with him, having dogged us to a private part of the walks, came up to us, and addressing themselves to the Pophar, asked him what he would take for his young slave, pointing at me, because the bassa desired to buy him. The Pophar seemed to be more surprized at this unexpected question, than I ever observed him at any thing before, which confirmed me more and more in the opinion of the kindness he had for me. But soon coming to himself, as he was a man of great presence of mind, he said very calmly, that I was no slave; nor a person to be sold for any price, since I was as free as he was. Taking this for a pretext to enhance the price, they produced some oriental pearls with other jewels of immense value; and bid him name what he would have, and it should be paid immediately: adding, that I was

to be the companion of the bassa's son, where I might make my fortune for ever, if I would go along with them. The Pophar persisted in his first answer, and said he had no power over me: they alleged, I had been bought as a slave, but a little before, in the Grand Signior's dominions, and they would have me. Here I interposed, and answered briskly, that though I had been taken prisoner by the chance of war, I was no slave, nor would I part with my liberty but at the price of my life. The bassa's son, for so he now declared himself to be, instead of being angry at my resolute answer, replied with a most agreeable smile, that I should be as free as he was; making at the same time the most solemn protestations by his holy Alcoran, that our lives and deaths should be inseparable. Though there was something in his words the most persuasive I ever felt, yet considering the obligations I had to the Pophar, I was resolved not to go; but answered with a most respectful bow, that though I was free by nature, I had indispensable obligations not to go with him, and hoped he would take it for a determinate answer. I pronounced this with such a resolute air, as made him see there was no hopes. Whether his desire was more enflamed by my denial, or whether they took us for persons of greater note than we appeared to be, I cannot tell; but I observed he put on a very languishing air, with tears stealing down his cheeks, which moved me to a degree I cannot express. I was scarce capable of speaking, but cast down my eyes, and stood as immovable as a statue. This seemed to revive his hopes; and recovering himself a little, with a trembling voice he replied—'Suppose it be the bassa's daughter, you saw yesterday, that desires to have you for her attendant, what will you say then?' I started at this, and casting my eyes on him more attentively, I saw him swimming in tears, with a tenderness enough to pierce the hardest heart. I looked at the Pophar, who I saw was trembling for me; and feared it was the daughter herself that asked me the question. I was soon put out of doubt; for she, finding she had gone too far to go back, discovered herself, and said, I must go along with her,

showed us of some persons who were to be married, and the daughter of the bassa was to be given in marriage to such persons; but they are often disliked by their husbands, on account of their imperious behaviour.

or one of us must die\*.—I hope your Reverences will excuse this account I give of myself, which nothing should have drawn from me, though it is literally true, but your express commands to tell the whole history of my life.—The perplexity I was in cannot be imagined; I considered she was a Turk, and I a Christian; that my death must certainly be the consequence of such a rash affair, were I to engage in it; that whether she concealed me in her father's court, or attempted to go off with me, it was ten thousand to one, we should both be sacrificed: neither could the violence of such a sudden passion ever be concealed from the bassa's spies. In a word, I was resolved not to go; but how to get off was the difficulty. I saw the most beautiful creature in the world all in tears before me, after a declaration of love, that exceeded the most romantick tales; youth, love, and beauty, and even an inclination on my side, pleaded her cause. But at length the consideration of the endless miseries I was

likely to draw on the young lady, should I comply with what she desired, prevailed above all other. I was resolved to refuse, for her sake more than my own, and was just going to tell her so on my knees, with all the arguments my reason could suggest to appease her; when an attendant came running in haste to the other person, who was also a woman, and told her the bassa was coming that way. She was roused out of her lethargy at this. The other woman immediately snatched her away, as the Pophar did me; and she had only time to call out with a threat—'Think better on it, or die.' I was no sooner out of her sight, but I found a thousand reasons for what I did, more than I could think of before, while the enchanting object was before my eyes. I saw the madness of that passion which forced the most charming person of the Ottoman empire, capable by her beauty to conquer the Grand Signior himself, to make a declaration of love, so contrary to the nature and modesty of her

\* Love adventures are not the design of these memoirs, as will appear by the rest of his life: otherwise, this account of the bassa's daughter had like to have made me lay down my pen, without troubling myself to write any further remark. But, when I considered, the man is no fool, let him be what he will, nor could design to embellish his history by this extraordinary adventure, so like the former, and just upon the back of it, I am inclined to believe he wrote the matter of fact just as it happened. More unaccountable accidents than this have happened to some men.

The amorous temper of the Turkish ladies, especially at Grand Cairo, where the women are the most voluptuous in the world, and the surprizing beauty of this young man, who, the secretary says, has the noblest presence he ever saw, even at that age, might easily charm a wanton giddy girl at the first sight. Besides, she was informed he was a slave, and might think she could have purchased him for her private gallant; or might be encouraged in it by the lustful elderly woman that attended her. Such things have been done before now; but when she came nearer to the tempting object, and found him to be something more noble than she expected, her passion might thereby grow to the highest pitch.

Extraordinary beauty, in either sex, is oftentimes a great misfortune; since it frequently leads them into very great follies, and even disasters. What will not heedless youth do, when fired with flattery or charms? 'Tis no new thing for women to fall in love at first sight, as well as men, and on as unequal terms; in spite of all reasons and considerations to the contrary. I believe there may be men in the world, as charming in the eyes of women, as ever the fair Helen appeared to the men. The almost incredible catastrophes, caused by her beauty, are so far from being fabulous, that, besides the account Homer gives of her, there is extant an oration of the famous Isocrates De laudibus Helenæ, before Alexander the Great's time, which gives a more amazing account of the effects of her beauty, than Homer does. He says, she was ravished for her beauty by the great and wise Theseus, when she was but a girl. She was afterwards courted by all the Grecian princes; and, after her marriage, was carried from Europe into Asia by the beautiful Paris; which kindled the first war, that is recorded in history to have been made in those parts of the world. Yet notwithstanding that false and fatal step, her beauty reconciled her to her husband. The sight of some men may have as violent effects on women.

It is possible the young lady would have been very angry with any one, who should have persuaded Signor Gaudentio to do as he did; yet in effect it was the greatest kindness; for this very lady, some time after, became mistress of the whole Ottoman empire. Whereas if she had run away with him, as the violence of her passion suggested, they had both of them been inevitably miserable. Notwithstanding all these reasons, I should not have believed this story, if I had not examined some other facts, which, he said, happened to him at Venice, as incredible as this, and found them to be really true.



ter, as well as her quality and dignity, and ready to sacrifice her reputation, the duty she owed her parents, her liberty, perhaps her life, for an unknown person, who had been a slave but some time before. I saw, on the other hand, that had I complied with the fair charmer's proposal, I must have run the risque of losing my religion, or life, or rather both, with a dreadful chain of hidden misfortunes, likely to accompany such a rash adventure. While I was taken up with these thoughts, the wise Pophar, after reflecting a little upon what had happened, told me, this unfortunate affair would not end so, but that it might cost us both our lives, and something else that was more dear to him. He feared so violent a passion would draw on other extremes; especially considering the wickedness of the people, and the brutal tyranny of their government: however, he was resolved not to give me up but with his life, if I would but stand to it myself: adding, that we must make off as fast as we could; and, having so many spies upon us, use policy as well as expedition. Accordingly he went down directly to the port, and hired a ship in the most public manner to go for Cyprus, paid the whole freight on the spot, and told them they must necessarily sail that evening. We should actually have done so, had not our companions and effects obliged us to return to Grand Cairo; but instead of embarking for Cyprus, he called aside the master of the vessel, who was of his acquaintance, and for a good round sum, privately agreed with him to sail out of the port, as if we were really on board, while the Pophar hired a boat for us at the other end of the town, in which we went that night directly for Grand Cairo. As soon as we were arrived there, we enquired how long it would be before the *bassa* returned to that city. They told us it would be about a fortnight at soonest; this gave the Pophar time to pay off his house, pack up his effects, and get all things ready for his great voyage; but he still had greater apprehensions, in his looks than ever I remarked in him. However, he told us, he hoped the affair would end well. In five days time all things were in readiness for our departure. We set out a little before sun-set, as is customary in those countries, and marched but a slow pace whilst we were near the town, to avoid any suspicion of flight. After we had travelled thus about a league

up by the side of the river Nile, the Pophar leading the van, and the rest following in a pretty long string after him, we met five or six men coming down the river-side on horseback, whose fine turbans and habits shewed they were pages, or attendants of some great person. The Pophar turned off from the river, as if it were to give them way: and they passed on very civilly without seeming to take any further notice of us. I was the hindmost but one of our train, having staid to give our dromedaries some water. Soon after these, came two ladies riding on little Arabian jennets, with prodigious rich furniture, by which I guessed them to be persons of quality, and the others gone before to be their attendants. They were not quite over against where I was, when the jennet of the younger of the two ladies began to snort and start at our dromedaries, and became so unruly, that I apprehended she could scarce sit him. At that instant, one of the led dromedaries coming pretty near, that and the rustling of it's loading, so frightened the jennet, that he gave a bound all on a sudden, and being on the inside of us towards the river, he ran full speed towards the edge of the bank, where not being able to stop his career, he flew directly off the precipice into the river, with the lady still sitting him; but the violence of the leap threw her off two or three yards into the water. It happened very luckily that there was a little island just by where she fell, and her cloaths keeping her up for some minutes, the stream carried her against some stakes that stood just above the water, which caught hold of her cloaths, and held her there. The shrieks of the other lady brought the highest attendants up to us; but those fearful wretches durst not venture into the river to her assistance. I jumped off my dromedary with indignation, and throwing off my loose garment and sandals, swam to her, and with much difficulty getting hold of her hand, and loosing her garments from the stakes, I made a shift to draw her across the stream, till I brought her to land. She was quite senseless for some time; I held down her head, which I had not yet looked at, to make her disgorge the water she had swallowed; but I was soon struck with a double surprize, when I looked at her face, to find it was the *bassa's* daughter, and to see her in that place, whom I thought I had left at Alexandria.

Alexandria. After some time, she came to herself, and looking fixed on me a good while, her senses not being entirely recovered, at last she cried out—'O Mother, must I owe my life to this man!' and fainted away. The other lady, who was her confidant, with a great deal of pains brought her to herself again; we raised her up, and endeavoured to comfort her as well as we could: 'No,' says she, 'throw me into the river once more; let me not be obliged to a Barbarian for whom I have done too much already.' I told her in the most respectful terms I could think of, that Providence had ordered it so, that I might make some recompence for the undeserved obligations she had laid on me; that I had too great value for her merit, ever to make her miserable, by loving a slave, such as I was, a stranger, a Christian, and one who had indispensable obligations to act as I did. She startled a little at what I said; but after a short recollection answered—'Whether you are a slave, an infidel, or whatever you please, you are one of the most generous men in the world. I suppose your obligations are on account of some more happy woman than myself; but since I owe my life to you, I am resolved not to make you unhappy, any more than you do me. I not only pardon you, but am convinced my pretensions are both unjust, and against my own honour.' She said this with an air becoming her quality: she was much more at ease when I assured her I was engaged to no woman in the world; but that her memory should be ever dear to me, and imprinted in my heart till my last breath. Here ten or a dozen armed Turks came upon us full speed from the town, and seeing the Pophar and his companions, they cried out—'Stop, villains! we arrest you in the name of the bafsa.' At this we started up to see what was the matter, when the lady, who knew them, bid me not be afraid; that she had ordered these men to pursue me, when she left Alexandria. That hearing we were fled off by sea, she pretended sickness, and asked leave of her father to return to Cairo, there to bemoan her misfortune with her confidant; and was in those melancholy sentiments, when the late accident happened to her. That she supposed these men had discovered the trick we had plaid them in not going by sea, and on better information had pursued us this way.

So she dismissed them immediately. I was all this while in one of the greatest agonies that can be expressed, both for fear of my own resolutions and hers: so I begged her to retire, lest her wet cloaths should endanger her health. I should not have been able to pronounce these words, if the Pophar had not cast a look at me, which pierced me through, and made me see the danger I was in by my delay. Her resolutions now seemed to be stronger than mine. She pulled off this jewel your Reverences see on my finger, and just said, with tears trickling down her beautiful cheeks—'Take this, and adieu!' She then pulled her companion away, and never looked at me more. I stood amazed, almost without life or motion in me, and cannot tell how long I might have continued so, if the Pophar had not come and congratulated me for my deliverance. I told him, I did not know what he meant by deliverance, for I did not know whether I was alive or dead, and that I was afraid he would repent his buying of me, if I procured him any more of these adventures? 'If we meet with no worse than these,' says he, 'we are well enough; no victory can be gained without some loss.' So he awakened me out of my lethargy, and commanded us to make the best of our way.

Though the Pophar was uneasy to be out of the reach of the fair lady and her faithless Turks, yet he was not in any great haste in the main, the present time for his great voyage not being yet come. There appeared a gaiety in his countenance, that seemed to promise us a prosperous journey. For my own part, though I was glad I had escaped my dangerous enchantress, there was a heaviness lay on my spirits, which I could give no account of; but the thoughts of such an unknown voyage, and variety of places, dissipated it by degrees. We were eleven in number, five elderly men, and five young ones, myself being a supernumerary person. We were all mounted upon dromedaries, which were very fine for that sort of creature; they are something like camels, but less, and much swifter; they live a great while without water, as the camels do, which was the reason they made use of them, for the barren sands they were to pass over; though they have the finest horses that can be seen in their own country. They had five spare ones to carry provisions,



visions, or to change, in case any one of their own should tire by the way. It was upon one of these five that I rode: we went up the Nile, leaving it on our left-hand all the way, steering our course directly for the Upper Egypt. I presume your Reverences know, that the river Nile divides Egypt in two parts lengthways, descending from Abyssinia with such an immense course, that the Ethiopians said it had no head; and running through the Hither Ethiopia, pours down upon Egypt, as the Rhine does through the Spanish Netherlands, making it one of the richest countries in the universe. We visited all the towns on that famous river upwards, under pretence of merchandizing; but the true reason of our delay was, because the Pophar's critical time for his great voyage was not yet come. He looked at his ephemeris and notes almost every hour, the rest of them attending his nod in the most minute circumstances. As we approached the upper parts of Egypt, as high as I could guess, over against the deserts of Barca, they began to buy provisions proper for their purpose; but particularly rice, dried fruits, and a sort of dried paste that served us for bread. They bought their provisions at different places, to avoid suspicion; and I observed they laid up a considerable quantity, both for their dromedaries and their selves: by which I found we had a long journey to make. When we came over against the middle coast of the vast desert of Barca, we met with a delicate clear rivulet, breaking out of a rising part of the sands, and making towards the Nile. Here we alighted, drank ourselves, and gave our dromedaries to drink as much as they would: then we filled all our vessels, made on purpose for carriage, and took in a much greater proportion of water than we had done provisions.—I forgot to tell your Reverences, that at several places as we passed, they dismounted and kissed the ground with a very superstitious devotion, and scraped some of the dust, which

they put into *golden urns*, which they had brought with them on purpose, letting me do what I pleased all the while. This sort of devotion I then only guessed, but found to be true afterwards, was the chief occasion of their coming into those parts; though carried on under the pretence of merchandizing. They did the same in this place; and when all were ready, the Pophar looking on his papers and needle, cried—‘*Gaulo Benim*,’ which I was informed, was as much as to say—‘Now, children, for our lives;’ and immediately, as he had steered south all along before, he turned short on his right-hand due west, cross the vast desert of Barca, as fast as his dromedary could well go. We had nothing but sands and sky before us, and in a few hours were almost out of danger of any one’s attempting to follow us.

Being thus embarked, if I may say so, on this vast ocean of sand, a thousand perplexing thoughts came into my mind, which I did not reflect on before. Behold me in the midst of the inhospitable deserts of Africa, where whole armies\* had often perished. The further we advanced the more our danger encreased. I was with men, who were not only strangers to myself, but to all the world beside; ten against one: but this was not all; I was persuaded now they were Heathens and Idolaters; for beside their superstitious kissing the earth in several places, I observed they looked up towards the Sun, and seemed to address their orations to that planet, glorious indeed, but a planet and a creature nevertheless. Then I reflected on what the Pophar said when he bought me, that I was not likely to return. ‘It is possible,’ thought I, ‘I am destined for a human sacrifice, to some Heathen god in the midst of this vast desert.’ But not seeing any arms they had, either offensive or defensive, except their short goads to prick on their dromedaries, I was a little easy: I had privately provided myself with two pocket-pistols, and was resolved to defend myself till the last gasp. But when I con-

\* Ancient histories give us several instances of a great number of persons, and even whole armies, who have been lost in the sands of Africa. Herodotus in Thalia, says that Cambyses the son of Cyrus the Great, in his expedition against the Ethiopians, was brought to such straits in those vast deserts, that they were forced to eat every tenth man before they could get back again. The other army, which he sent to destroy the temple of Jupiter Hammon, was entirely overwhelmed and lost in the sands: HERODOT. THALIA. The Idolaters imputed it as a punishment for his impiety against Jupiter, but it was for want of knowing the danger. I suppose very few are ignorant of the contrivance of Marius the Roman general, to get over the sands to Capia, to seize Jugurtha’s treasure, which he thought secure. SALLUST. DE BELLO JUGURTHIN.

sidered that unparalleled justice and humanity I had experienced in their treatment of me, I was a little comforted. As for the difficulty of passing the deserts, I reflected that their own lives were as much in danger as mine; that they must have some unknown ways of passing them over, otherwise they would never expose themselves to such evident danger.

I should have told your Reverences, that we set out a little before sun-set, to avoid the heats, June the 9th, 1688; the moon was about the first quarter, and carried on the light till nigh dawn of day; the glittering of the sands, or rather pebbly gravel, in which there were abundance of shining stones like jewels or crystal, encreased the light, that we could see to steer our course by the needle very well. We went on at a vast rate, the dromedaries being very swift creatures; their pace is more running than galloping, much like that of a mule; that I verily believe, from six o'clock in the evening till about ten the next day, we ran almost an hundred and twenty Italian miles: we had neither stop nor let, but steered our course in a direct line, like a ship under sail. The heats were not nigh so unsufferable as I expected; for though we saw nothing we could call a mountain in those immense Bares, yet the sands, or at least the way we steered, was very high ground: that as soon as we were out of the breath of the habitable countries, we had a perpetual breeze blowing full in our faces; yet so uniform, that it scarce raised any dust: partly because, where we passed, the sands were not of that small dusty kind, as in some parts of Africa, which fly in clouds with the wind, overwhelming all before it, but of a more gravelly kind; and partly from an imperceptible dew, which, though not so thick as fog, moistened the surface of the ground pretty much. A little after nine next morning, we came to some clumps of shrubby trees, with a little moss on the ground instead of grass: here the wind fell, and the heats became very violent. The Pophar ordered us to alight and pitch our tents, to shelter both ourselves and dromedaries from the heats. Their tents were made of the finest sort of oiled cloth I ever saw, prodigious light and portable, yet capable of keeping out both rain and sun.

Here we refreshed ourselves and beasts till a little after six; when we set out again, steering still directly west as nigh as I could guess. We went on thus for three days and nights without any considerable accident, only I observed the ground seemed to rise insensibly higher, and the breezes not only stronger, but the air itself much cooler. About ten the third day, we saw some more clumps of trees on our right-hand, which looked greener and thicker than the former, as if they were the beginning of some habitable vale, as in effect they were. The Pophar ordered us to turn that way, which was the only turning out of our way we had yet made. By the chearfulness of their countenances, I thought this might be the beginning of their country; but I was very much mistaken; we had a far longer and more dangerous way to go, than what we had passed hitherto. However, this was a very remarkable station of our voyage, as your Reverences will find by the sequel. As we advanced, we found it to open and descend gradually; till at length we saw a most beautiful vale, full of palms, dates, oranges, and other fruit-trees, entirely unknown in these parts, with such a refreshing smell from the odoriferous shrubs, as filled the whole air with perfumes\*; we rode into the thickest of it as fast as we could to enjoy the inviting shade. We eased our dromedaries, and took the first care of them; for on them all our safeties depended. After we had refreshed ourselves, the Pophar ordered every one to go to sleep as soon as he could, since we were like to have but little the three following days. I should have told your Reverences, that as soon as they alighted, they fell down flat on their faces and kissed the earth, with a great deal of seeming joy and ardour, which I took to be a congratulation for their happy arrival at so hospitable a place, but it was on a quite different account. I was the first who awoke after our refreshment; my thoughts and fears, though much calmer than they had been, would not suffer me to be so sedate as the rest. Finding the hour for departing was not yet come, I got up, and walked in that delicious grove, which was so much the more delightful, as the deserts we had passed were dreadful and horrid: I passed

\* The prodigious fertility of Africa, in the vales between the deserts and the skirts of it, for a great breadth towards the two seas, is recorded by the best historians; though the ridge of it, over which our author was conducted, and other particular tracts, are all covered with sands.



on, descending towards the centre of the vale, not doubting but by the greenness and fragrantcy of the place, I should find a spring of water. I had not gone far, but I saw a most delicate rill, bubbling out from under a rock, forming a little natural basin, from whence it ran gliding down the centre of the vale, encreasing as it went, till in all appearance it might form a considerable rivulet, unless it were swallowed up again in the sands. At that place the vale ran upon a pretty deep descent, so that I could see over the trees and shrubs below me, almost as far as my eyes could reach; encreasing or decreasing in breadth as the hills of sands, for now they appeared to be hills, would give it leave. Here I had the most delightful prospect that the most lively imagination can form to itself; the sun-burnt hills of sand on each side, made the greens look still more charming; but the singing of innumerable unknown birds, with the different fruits and perfumes exhaling from the aromatick shrubs, rendered the place delicious beyond expression. After I had drank my fill, and delighted myself with those native rarities, I saw a large lion come out of the grove, about two hundred paces below me, going very quietly to the spring to lap: when he had drank, he whisked his tail two or three times, and began to tumble on the green grass. I took the opportunity to slip away back to my companions, very glad I had escaped so: they were all awake when I came up, and had been in great concern for my absence. The Pophar seemed more displeased that I had left him, than ever I saw him; he mildly chid me for exposing myself to be devoured by wild beasts; but when I told them of the water and the lion, they were in a greater surprise, looking at one another with a sort of fear in their looks, which I interpreted to be for the danger I had escaped; but it was on another account. After some words in their own language, the Pophar spoke aloud in *Lingua Franca*—‘I think,’ says he, ‘we may let this young man see all our ceremonies, especially since he will soon be out of danger of discovering them, if he should have a mind to

‘do it.’ At this they pulled out their stores, some of their choicest fruits, a cruise of rich wine, some bread, a burning glass, a thurible\*, perfumes, and other instruments commonly used in the Heathen sacrifices. I looked aghast at this strange sight, which was such as I had never observed in them before; and began to apprehend that I was now really designed for a human sacrifice† to some infernal god or other; but when I compared the Pophar’s late words with what I saw, I scarce doubted of it, and was contriving with myself to sell my life as dear as I could. The Pophar ordered us to bring the dromedaries, and every thing along with us, for fear, as he said, they should be devoured by wild beasts. We descended towards the centre of the vale, where I saw the fountain. They went on a great way lower into the vale, till it began to be very steep; but we found a narrow way made by art, and not seeming to have been very long unfrequented, which was more surprizing, because I took the place to be uninhabited, and even inaccessible to all but these people. We were forced to descend one by one, leading our dromedaries in our hands: I took particular care to be the hindmost, keeping at a little distance from the rest, for fear of a surprize. They marched down in a mournful kind of procession, observing a most profound silence all the while. At length we came into the finest natural amphitheatre that it is possible to describe. There was nothing but odoriferous greens and sky to be seen; except downwards right before us, where we had a most delicious prospect over that glorious vale, winding a little to the right, till it was intercepted by the collateral hills. At the upper part of the amphitheatre, where the break of the hill made that agreeable esplanade, there stood an ancient pyramid, just after the manner of those in Egypt, but nothing near so big as the least of them. In the front of it that faced the vale, the steps were cut out in the form of an altar, on which was erected a statue of a venerable old man, done to the life, of the finest polished marble, or rather some unknown stone of

\* An instrument to hold incense.

† Our author’s fears were not vain; considering the preparatives he saw, and other circumstances. Besides, it is well known, the ancient Africans, particularly the Getulians and Lybians, and even the Carthaginians, made use of human sacrifices to appease their deities. Bochart, in the second part of his *Geographia Sacra*, proves beyond question, that the Carthaginians were part of the people of Canaan driven out by Joshua, who used to sacrifice their children to Moloch, &c. Even in Hannibal’s time, when they were grown more polite, they sent privately children to Tyre, for a sacrifice to Hercules.

E

infinite

infinite more value. Here, I had not the least doubt, but that I was to be sacrificed to this idol. The Pophar seeing me at a distance, called to me to come and see their ceremonies. Then I thought it was time to speak or never. 'Father,' said I, 'since you give me leave to call you so, I am willing to perform all your commands, where the honour of the supreme God is not called in question; but I am ready to die a thousand deaths rather than give his honour to another. I am a Christian, and believe one only God, the supreme Being of all beings, and Lord of the universe; for which reason I cannot join with you in your idolatrous worship. If you are resolved to put me to death on that account, I here offer my life freely. If I am to be made a part of your infernal sacrifice, I'll defend myself to the last drop of my blood, before I will submit to it.' He answered me with a smile, rather than with any indignation, and told me, when I came to be better acquainted with them, I should find they were not so inhuman as to put people to death, because they were of a different opinion from their own. That this was only a religious ceremony they performed to their deceased ancestors\*, and if I had not a mind to assist at it, I might sit down at what distance I pleased.

[*Secretary.* The inquisitors were extremely pleased with the first part of his discourse, wherein he shewed such courage in defence of his religion, and resolution to die rather than join in their idolatrous worship; but all had liked to have been dashed again by the second part, which made one of the inquisitors interrupt his narration, and ask him the following question.

*Inquisitor.* I hope you do not think it unlawful to persecute, or even to put to death, obstinate Hereticks, who

would destroy the religion of our forefathers, and lead others into the same damnation with themselves. If treason against one's prince may be punished with death, why may not treason against the King of heaven be punished with the like penalty? Have a care you do not cast reflections on the holy inquisition.

*Gaudentio.* Reverend fathers! I only relate bare matter of fact, as it was spoke by the mouth of a Heathen, ignorant of our holy mysteries; I have all the reason in the world to extol the justice of the holy Inquisition: nor do I think, but in such cases mentioned by your Reverences, it may be lawful to use the utmost severities to prevent greater evils. But it argued a wonderful moderation in the Pophar, which I found to be his real sentiments, not unbecoming a Christian in such circumstances, where it did not tend to the destruction of the whole. —But in this, as in all other matters, I submit to your decisions.

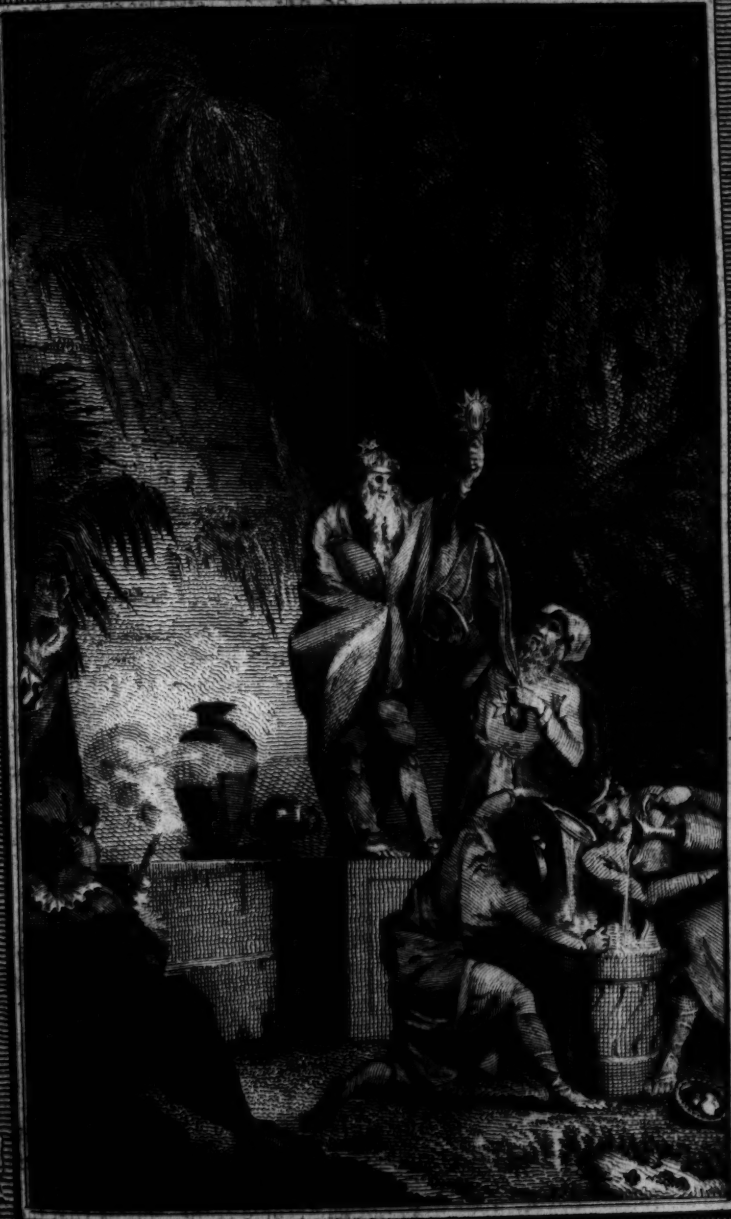
*Secretary.* I interposed in his favour, and put the inquisitors in mind, that there was nothing but what was just in his answers: and we ourselves only used those rigours in the last extremity, to prevent greater mischiefs; so they bid him read on.]

When the Pophar had said this, he and the rest of them fell down on their faces and kissed the earth: then with the burning-glass they kindled some odorous woods; put the coals in the thurible with the incense, and incensed the idol or statue: that done, they poured the wine on the altar; set bread on the one side, and fruits on the other; and having lighted two little pyramids of most delicious perfumes at each end of the great pyramid, they sat them down round the fountain, which I suppose was conveyed by art under the pyramid†.

\* The earliest accounts of Egypt, from whence these people come, tell us that they had a great veneration for their deceased ancestors. See the third part of the Bishop of Meaux's Universal History, quoted above.—Diodorus Siculus, who lived in the beginning of Augustus's reign, says of the Egyptians, 'τὸ περὶ τὰς νεφάρων μάλιστα σπουδαίνειν, they were particularly diligent about their sepulchres, or in the worship of their dead. The same superstition reigns still among the Chinese, whom I shall shew afterwards to have been a colony of Egyptians, notwithstanding that China and Egypt are so far distant from each other.

† The ancient Egyptians had a strange fondness for building pyramids; whether they were for the same end as the tower of Babel, that is, to make themselves a name, or for other ends, we cannot tell.—The great pyramid is more ancient than all the rest, inasmuch that the best authors do not know when to fix it's date, some saying it was built by Mæris their first king, others by Cecrops Lector. But if the account the Pophar gives of their origin, at the next station, be true, it was built before there was any king in Egypt. The river Nile was conveyed by art under the great pyramid,





GAUDENTIO.

Walker sculp.

The present exhibition is a most valuable one, and it is to be hoped that it will be the means of doing good to many of our fellow-creatures. The exhibition is a most valuable one, and it is to be hoped that it will be the means of doing good to many of our fellow-creatures. The exhibition is a most valuable one, and it is to be hoped that it will be the means of doing good to many of our fellow-creatures.





and issued out in the middle of the amphitheatre. There they refreshed themselves, and gathered the fruits which hung round us in the grove; eating of them very heartily, and inviting me to do the like. I made some difficulty at first, fearing it might be part of the sacrifice; but they assuring me all was but a civil ceremony, I joined them, and did as they did. The Pophar turned to me, and said—‘My son, we worship one most high God, as you do: what we did just now, was not that we believe any deity in that statue, or adored it as a God; but only respect it as a memorial, and in remembrance of our great ancestor, who heretofore conducted our fore-fathers to this place, and was buried in this pyramid\*. The rest of our fore-fathers, who died before they were forced to leave this valley, are buried all around us: that is the reason we kissed the ground, not thinking it lawful to stir the bones of the dead. We did the same in Egypt, because we were originally of that land: our particular ancestors lived in that part, which was afterwards called Thebes†. The time will not permit me to acquaint you at present, how we were driven out of our native country to this place, and afterwards from this place to the land we are now going to, but you shall know all hereafter. The bread, fruits, and wine, we laid on the altar‡, as they are the

chief support of our being; so we leave them there as a testimony, that the venerable old man, whose statue you see, was, under God, the author and father of our nation.’ This said, he told us it was time to make the best of our way; so they all got up, and having kissed the ground once more, the five elderly men scraped a little of the earth, and put in fine golden vessels, with a great deal of care and respect. After refreshing ourselves again, we made our provision of fruits and water, and leading our dromedaries up the way we came down, mounted and set out for the remainder of our journey.

We were now past the tropick of Cancer§, as I found by our shadows going southward; and went on thus a little, bending towards the west again, almost parallel to the tropick, the breezes increasing rather stronger, than before, so that about midnight it was really cold. We gave our dromedaries water about sun-rising, and refreshed ourselves a little; then set out with new vigour at a prodigious rate: still the breezes fell between nine and ten; however we made shift to go on, because they came again about noon: between three and four was the hottest time of all. Besides, going now parallel to the tropick, we travelled on the hot sands, a very little descending; whereas when we pointed southwards towards the line, we found the ground to be insensibly rising upon us||; but as we went

\* One of the ends of building the pyramids, was certainly for burying-places for some great men.

† Thebes, once the most famous city of Egypt, having a hundred gates, &c. was the No Amon, or Diaposis of the ancients, BOCHART. PHALEG. LIB. 4. Tacitus says, that in the time of Germanicus, there was remaining an inscription in the Egyptian language, signifying, *Habitaſſe quondam (Thebis) ſeptingenta millia Hominum ætate militari*. That there were once seven hundred thousand inhabitants in Thebes fit to bear arms. TACIT. LIB. 2. ANNAL.

‡ This is certainly rank idolatry, notwithstanding the Pophar calls it but a civil ceremony. Thus the worship the Chinese pay to their dead, and allowed by the Jesuits, was said by them to be but a pious civil ceremony, though it was like this, or rather more superstitious. See the condemnation of it by Pope Clement XI.

§ When persons are beyond that tropick, at mid-day the shadows of things are towards the south, because the sun is then north of us;

*Miranturque umbras transire ſiniſtras.*

They might have passed the tropick before, since it runs over part of the desert of Barca, not much southward of Egypt; but it seems they steered westward for some time.

|| His observations are just, since all the new philosophers allow the earth to be spheroidal and gibbous towards the equator. Whoever therefore goes by land, either from the north or south towards the equator, must ascend. This seems to be a very natural reason, why those immense Bares are not so excessive hot. The highest mountains are considerably higher the sun than the low lands, yet excessive cold in the hottest climates; in the vales the rays of the sun are cooped in, and doubled and trebled by refraction and reflection, &c. The same air put in a turbulent motion will be hot, and in a direct one cold.

on these almost flats, if it had not been that we were almost on the ridge of Africa, which made it cooler than one can well believe, it had been impossible to bear the heats. When we rested, we not only pitched our tents for ourselves and dromedaries, but the sands were so hot, that we were forced to lay things under our feet to preserve them from burning. Thus we travelled through those dismal deserts for four days, without sight of any living creature but ourselves. Sands and sky were all that presented itself to our view. The fatigue was the greatest I ever underwent in my life. The fourth day, about eight in the morning, by good fortune for us, or else by the prudent forecast of the Pophar, who knew all his stations, we saw another vale towards the right-hand, with some straggling trees here and there, but not seeming nigh so pleasant as the first: we made to it with all our speed, and had much ado to bear the heats till we came to it. We alighted immediately, and led our dromedaries down the gentle descent till we could find a thicker part of it. The first trees were thin and old, as if they had just moisture enough to keep them alive: the ground was but just covered over with a little sun-burnt moss, without any sign of water, but our stock was not yet gone. At length, as we descended, the grove encreased every way, the trees were large, with some dates here and there, but not so good as in the other. We rested a little, and then continued to descend for some time, till we came into a very cool and thick shade. Here, the Pophar told us, we must stay two or three days, perhaps longer, till he saw his usual signs for proceeding on his journey; and bid us be sparing of our water, for fear of accidents. We settled our dromedaries as before: for ourselves, we could scarce take any thing, we were so fatigued, wanting rest more than meat and drink. The Pophar, ordering us some cordial

wines they had along with them for that purpose, told us, we might sleep as long as we would; only bid us be sure to cover ourselves well; for the nights were long, and even cold about midnight. We were all soon asleep, and did not wake till four the next morning. The Pophar, solicitous for all our safeties as well as his own, (for this was the critical time of our journey) was awake the first of us. When we were up, and had refreshed ourselves, which we did with a very good appetite, he told us we must go up on the sands again to observe the signs. We took our dromedaries along with us, for fear of wild beasts, though we saw none, walking gently up the sands, till we came to a very high ground.

We had but a dreary prospect, as far as our eyes could carry us, of sun-burnt plains, without grass, stick, or shrub, except when we turned our backs to look at the vale where we had lain all night, which we saw spread and extended itself a vast way. He assured us, the notes left for rules by his ancestors, mentioned a spring in that vale below us, which running lower became a rivulet; but that, either by an earthquake, or some flood of sand, it was quite choaked up, running under ground, without any one's knowing whether it broke out again, or was entirely swallowed up\*. He said also, that by the most ancient accounts of his forefathers, the sands were not in their times so dangerous to pass as they are now, or of such vast extent†, but had fruitful vales much nearer one another than at present. He added, that he wished earnestly to see the signs he wanted for proceeding on our way; since there was no stirring till they appeared; and that, according to his ephemeris and notes, they should appear about this time, unless something very extraordinary happened. This was about eight in the morning, the ninth day after we set out for the deserts. He was every now and then looking southward, or south-west,

\* Geographers agree, that rivers, and even great lakes in Africa, sink under ground, and are quite lost without any visible outlets. The vast depth of the strata of sand seem more proper to swallow them up there, than in other parts of the world.

† There seems to be a natural reason for what he says; for those vast sands, or hills of gravel, were undoubtedly left by the general deluge, as probably all the lesser strata or beds of gravel were. Yet great part of them must have been covered with slime, or mud, for several years after the deluge, some thinner, some thicker, and consequently more moist and productive accordingly. Nevertheless, the violent rays of the sun still render them more dry and barren, and, in all probability, these deserts will encrease more and more, where the country is not cultivated.



with great solicitude in his looks, as if he wondered he saw nothing. At length, he cried out, with great emotions of joy—'It is coming!—Look yonder,' says he, 'towards the south-west, as far as your eyes can carry you, and see what you can discover.' We told him, we saw nothing but some clouds of sand, carried round here and there like whirlwinds. 'That is the sign I want,' continued he; 'but mark well which way it drives.' We said it drove directly eastward, as high as we could guess. 'It does,' says he; then turning his face westwards, with a little point of the south—'All those vast deserts,' says he, 'are now in such a commotion of storms and whirlwinds, that man and beast will soon be overwhelmed in the rolling waves of sands.' He had scarce said this, but we saw, at a vast distance, ten thousand little whirlspouts of sand, rising and falling with a prodigious tumult and velocity\* eastward, with vast thick clouds of sand and dust following them. —'Come,' says he, 'let us return to our resting-place, for there we must stay, till we see further how matters go.' As this appeared newer to me than any of the rest, and being possessed with a great idea of the knowledge of the man, I made bold to ask him, what was the cause of this sudden phenomenon: he told me, that about that full-moon there always fell prodigious rains†, coming from the western part of Africa, on this side the equator, and driving a little south-west for some time at first, but afterwards turning almost south, and crossing the line till they came to the

source of the Nile; in which parts they fell for three weeks or a month together, which was the occasion of the overflowing of that river‡: but that on this side the equator, it only rained about fifteen days, preceded by those whirlwinds and clouds of sand, which rendered all that tract impassable, till the rains had laid them again. By this time we were come down to our resting-place, and though we did not want sleep or refreshment, yet we took both; to have the cool of the evening to recreate ourselves after so much fatigue, not being likely to move till the next evening at soonest.

At five in the evening, the Pophar called us up to go with him once more to the highest part of the desert, saying he wanted one sign yet, which he hoped to have that evening, or else it would go hard with us for want of water, our provision of it being almost spent; and there were no springs in the deserts that we were to pass over, till we came within a long day's journey of the end of our voyage. However, he scarce doubted but we should see the certain sign he wanted this evening; on which account there did not appear such a solicitude in his countenance as before: for though he was our governor, or captain, and had the respectful deference paid to him, yet he governed us in all respects, as if we were his children, with all the tenderness of a father, as his name imported; though none of the company were his real children. If there were any signs of partiality, it was in my favour, always expressing the most endearing tenderness for me, which the other young

\* Though in the vast ocean between the tropicks, where promontories do not intervene, the winds are generally easterly, yet there is a perpetual west wind blows into Guinea. There are vast rains at the solstices between the tropicks, as the accounts of those parts declare; though at that time of the year, more beyond the line than on this side of it. It is not to be questioned, but in such violent changes, particularly before those rains, there must be furious hurricanes of wind and sand, enough to overwhelm whole armies and countries. The most incredible part of this narration, is how they could travel at all under the tropick, in the summer solstice; only, as he says, the ground being very high and open, it must draw air.

† Naturalists agree, that beyond the line there are great rains at that season. It is possible they may begin on this side, being driven by the perpetual west winds into Guinea, and then by natural causes turn towards the line and southern tropick.

‡ The causes of the overflowing of the river Nile, unknown to most of the ancients, are now allowed to be the great rains falling in June and July about the line, and the southern tropick, and the melting of the snow on the mountains of the moon lying in that tract. None can wonder there should be snow in those hot climates, who have heard of the Andes or Cordilleras bordering on Peru. Our Italy is very hot, yet the Alps and Appenines are three parts of the year covered with snow. The Nile overflows in August, which seems to be a proper distance of time for the waters to come down to Egypt, such a vast way off from the cause of it. There is a river in Cochinchina, and elsewhere, that overflows in the same manner.

men,

men, instead of taking any dislike at, were really pleased with. No brothers in the world could be more loving to one another than we were. The elderly men took delight in seeing our youthful gambols with one another: it is true their nature is, of the two, a little more inclined to gravity than that of the Italians, who are no light nation; yet their gravity is accompanied with all the serenity and cheerfulness imaginable, and I thought then at our first acquaintance, that I had never seen such an air of a free-born people in my life; as if they knew no other subjection but what was merely filial. When we came to the high ground, we could see the hurricanes play still; but what was more wonderful, very few effects of that aerial tumult came our way, but drove on almost parallel to the equator: the air looked like a brown dirty fog, towards the east and south-east; all the whirlwinds tending towards those parts: it began after some time to look a little more lightsome towards the west; but so, as if it were occasioned by a more strong and settled wind. At length, we perceived at the farthest horizon, the edge of a prodigious black cloud, extending itself to the south-west and western points, rising with a discernible motion, though not very fast. We saw plain enough, by the blackness and thickness of it, that it prognosticated a great deal of rain. Here they all fell prostrate on the earth; then raising up their hands and eyes towards the sun, they seemed to pay their adorations to that great luminary. The Popbar, with an audible voice, pronounced some unknown words, as if he were returning thanks to that planet for what he saw. At this I stepped back, and kept myself at a distance; not so much for fear of

my life, as before, as not to join with them in their idolatrous worship. For I could not be ignorant now, that they had a wrong notion of God; and if they acknowledged any, it was the sun: which in effect is, the least irrational idolatry people can be guilty of\*. When they had done their oraisons, the Popbar turned to me, and said—'I see you won't join with us in any of our religious ceremonies; but I must tell you,' continued he, 'that cloud is the saving of all our lives: and as that great sun,' pointing to the luminary, 'is the instrument that draws it up, as indeed he is the preserver of all our beings, we think ourselves obliged to return our thanks to him.' Here he stopped, as if he had a mind to hear what I could say for myself. I was not willing to enter into disputes, well knowing that religious quarrels are the most provoking of any; yet I thought myself obliged to make profession of my belief in the supreme God, now I was called upon to the professed worship of a false deity. I answered with the most modest respect I was capable of, that that glorious planet was one of the physical causes of the preservation of our beings, and of the production of all things; but that he was produced himself by the most high God, the first cause and author of all things in heaven and earth: the sun only moving by his order, as an inanimate being, incapable of hearing our prayers, and only operating by his direction. However, I offered to join with him in returning my best thanks to the most high God, for creating the sun, capable by his heat to raise that cloud for the saving our lives. Thus I adapted my answer, as nigh to his discourse as I could, yet not so as to deny my faith. For I could not entirely

\* All idolatry being a worship of creatures instead of the one Supreme God, must be irrational. But it is certain, and well attested by ancient history, that the eastern nations worshipped the sun: probably it was the first idolatrous worship that was in the world. The great benefits all nature receives from his influence; the glorious brightness of his rays; the variety, yet constant tenor of his motions, might induce ignorant people to believe him to be of a superior nature to other creatures, though it is evidently certain, he is limited in his perfections, and consequently no God. It is true, the ancient Egyptians, from whom these people sprung, as will be seen afterwards, worshipped the sun in the most early times. There was a priest of the sun in the patriarch Joseph's time. And the Egyptians were some of the first astronomers in the world, contending for antiquity with the Chaldeans. Though both the Chaldeans and Egyptians had their knowledge from the descendants of Shem, or his father Noah, who by the admirable structure of the ark, appears to have been master of very great sciences. I say the Egyptians being so much addicted to astronomy, it is probable that glorious luminary was the chief object of their worship. They did not worship idols and beasts till long afterwards. See the learned BOSCHART'S PRAE-  
FEC. IN MISRAÏM.



tell what to make of them as yet; since I observed, they were more mysterious in their religious ceremonies, than in any thing else\*; or rather, this was the only thing they were reserved in. He pondered a good while on what I said, but at length he added—'You are not much out of the way: you and I will talk this matter over another time;' so turned off the discourse; I supposed it to be because of the young men standing by us, who he had not a mind should receive any other notions of religion, but what they had been taught. It was sun-set by the time we came down to the grove. We had some small flights of sand; caused by an odd commotion in the air, attended with little whirlwinds, which put us in some apprehensions of a sand-shower; but he bid us take courage, since he could not find in all his accounts, that the hurricanes or rains ever came, in any great quantity, as far as we were, the nature of them being to drive more parallel to the equator: but he was sure we should have some; and ordered us to pitch our tents as firm as we could, and draw out all our water vessels, to catch the rain against all accidents. When this was done, and we had eat our suppers, we recreated ourselves in the grove, wandering about here and there, and discoursing of the nature of these phenomena. We did not care to go to rest so soon, having reposed ourselves so well that day, and having all the following night and the next day to stay in that place. The grove grew much pleasanter as we advanced into it; there were a great many dates and other fruits, the natural produce of Africa; but not quite so rich as in the first grove. I made bold to ask the Pophar, how far

that grove extended, or whether there were any inhabitants. He told me, he could not tell any thing of either. That it was possible the grove might enlarge itself different ways, among the winding hills; since his accounts told him, there had been a rivulet of water, though now swallowed up; but he believed there were no inhabitants, since there was no mention made of them in his papers. Nor did he believe any other people in the world, beside themselves, knew the way, or would venture so far into those horrid inhospitable desarts. Having a mind to learn whether he had any certain knowledge of the longitude, which creates such difficulties to the Europeans, I asked how he was sure that was the place, or by what rule he could know how far he was come, or where he was to turn to right or left. He stopped a little at my questions; then, without any apparent hesitation—'Why,' said he, 'we know by the needle, how far we vary from the north or south point, at least till we come to the tropick†; if not, we can take the meridian and height of the sun, and knowing the time of the year, we can tell how near we approach to, or are off the equator.'—'Yes,' said I, 'but as there are different meridians every step you take, how can you tell how far you go east or west, when you run either way in parallel lines‡ to the tropick or the equator?' Here he stopped again, and either could not make any certain discovery, or had not a mind to let me into the secret. The first was most likely; however, he answered readily enough, and said—'You please me with your curious questions, since I find you are sensible of the difficulty. Why,' continued he,

\* This agrees with all ancient accounts of the first people of Egypt; witness their emblems, hieroglyphicks, &c. Most of the ancient fables, under which so many mysteries were couched, did not first spring from the Greeks, though improved by them; but from the Egyptians and Chaldeans, who at first held a communication of sciences with one another, but grew to emulosity afterwards. The wonderful things the Egyptian Magi did, in imitation of the miracles wrought by Moses, shew they were great artists.

† Experimental philosophy tells us; that the needle is of little use in navigation, when under the line; but lies fluctuating without turning to any point of itself, because, as some suppose, the current of the magnetick effluvia, flying from pole to pole, has there it's longest axis, as the diameter of the equator is longer than the axis of the world. But whether this has the same effect on the needle by land, which is the case, as it has by sea, we must have more certain experiments to know, though it is probable it may.

‡ Wherever we stand, we are on the summit of the globe with respect to us. Whoever therefore thinks to go due west, parallel to the equator, or east, will not do so, but will cut the line at long-run, because he makes a greater circle. These men therefore, when they thought they went due west, were approaching to the line, more than they were aware of, and supposing the structure of the earth to be spheroidical, went up hill all the way, having some small inequalities.

all the method we have is, to observe exactly how far our dromedaries go in an hour, or any other space of time: you see we go much about the same pace; we have no stops in our way, but what we know of, to refresh ourselves or so, for which we generally allow so much time\*. When we set out from Egypt, we went due west; our beasts gain so many miles an hour; we know by that how far we are more west than we were†. If we decline to the north or the south, we know likewise, how many miles we have advanced in so many hours, and compute how much the declination takes off from our going due west. And though we cannot tell to a demonstrative exactness, we can tell pretty nigh. This was all I could get out of him at that time, which did not satisfy the difficulty. I afterwards asked him, how they came to find out this way, or to venture to seek out a habitation unknown to all the world beside. He answered—'For liberty, and the preservation of our laws.' I was afraid of asking any further, seeing he gave such general answers. By this time, it was prodigious dark, though full moon‡. We had some little gusts of wind that startled us a little; and it lightened at such a rate as I never saw in my life. And although it was towards the horizon, and drove side-ways of us, yet it was really terrible to see; the flashes were so thick, that the sky was almost in a light fire. We made up to our tents as fast as we could; and though we had only the skirts of the clouds over us, it rained so very hard, that we had our vessels soon supplied with water, and got safe into our shelter. The thunder was at a vast distance, but just audible, and, for our comfort, drove still to the eastward. I do not know in what dispositions the elderly men might be, being accustomed to the nature of it; but I am sure I was in some apprehension, fully persuaded, if it had come directly over us, nothing could withstand it's impetuosity. I had very little incli-

nation to rest, whatever my companions had; but pondering with myself, both the nature of the thing, and the prodigious skill these men must have in the laws of the universe, I stood with impatience waiting the event.

I was musing with myself on what I had heard and seen, not being able yet to guess with any satisfaction, what these people were, when an unexpected accident was the cause of a discovery, which made me see they were not greater strangers to me, than I was to myself. The weather was stifling hot, so that we had thrown off our garments to our shirts, and bared our breasts for coolness sake; when there came a prodigious flash, or rather blaze of lightning, which struck full against the breast of one of the young men opposite to me, and discovered a bright gold medal hanging down from his neck, with the figure of the sun engraved on it, surrounded with unknown characters; the very same in all appearance I had seen my deceased mother always wear about her neck, and since her death I carried with me for her sake. I asked the meaning of that medal, since I had one about me, as it appeared, of the very same make. If the Poplar had been struck with lightning; he could not have been in a greater surprize than he was at these words.—'You one of those medals,' said he; 'how, in the name of wonder, did you come by it?' I told him my mother wore it about her neck from a little child; and with that pulled it out of my pocket. He snatched it out of my hands with a prodigious eagerness, and held it against the lightning perpetually flashing in upon us. As soon as he saw it was the same with the other, he cried out—'Great Sun, what can this mean?' Then asked me again, where I had it? how my mother came by it? who my mother was? what age she was of when she died? As soon as the violence of his extasy would give me leave, I told him my mother had it ever since she was a little child: that she was

\* This must be understood according to the foregoing remark.

† At first sight, it seems to be easier to find out the longitude by land than by sea, because we may be more certain how far we advance. At sea there are currents, and tides, and settings in of the sea, which make the ship to go assant more or less insensibly. As yet there has been no certain rule found to tell us, how far we advance due east or due west. The elevation of the pole, or the height of the sun, shews us, how far we decline to the north or south; but we have no certain rule for the east or west.

‡ The full moon about the summer solstice generally brings rain, and the overflowing of the Nile is now known to be caused by the vast rains in the regions near the equator.



the adopted daughter of a noble merchant in Corfica, who had given her all his effects when my father married her: that she was married at thirteen; and I being nineteen, and the second son, I guessed she was towards forty when she died.—

'It must be Isiphenal' cried he, with the utmost extasy, 'it must be she.' Then he caught me in his arms, and said— 'You are now really one of us, being the grand-son of my father's daughter, my dear sister Isiphena.' The remembrance of whom made the tears run down the old man's cheeks very plentifully.— 'She was lost at Grand Cairo about the time you mention, together with a twin-sister, who I fear is never to be heard of.' Then I reflected I had heard my mother say, she had been informed, the gentleman who adopted her for his daughter had bought her when she was a little girl of a Turkish woman of that place; that being charmed with the early signs of beauty in her, and having no children, he adopted her for his own. 'Yes,' said the Pophar, 'it must be she; but what is become of the other sister? For,' said he, 'my dear sister brought two at one unfortunate birth, which cost her her life.' I told him I never heard any thing of the other. Then he acquainted me that his sister's husband was the person who conducted the rest to visit the tombs of their ancestors, as he did now: that the last voyage, he took his wife with him, who out of her great fondness had teased him and importuned him so much to go along with him, that, though it was contrary to their laws, he contrived to carry her disguised in man's cloaths, like one of the young men he chose to accompany him in the expedition; that staying at Grand Cairo till the next season for his return, she proved with child of twins; and to his unspeakable grief died in child-bed. That when they carried her up to Thebes to be interred with her ancestors, of which I should have a more exact information by and by, they were obliged to leave the children with a nurse of the country, with some Egyptian servants to take care of the house and effects; but before they came back, the nurse, with her accomplices, ran away with the children, and, as was supposed, murdered them, rifled the house of all the jewels and other valuable things, and were never heard of

afterwards. But it seems they thought it more for their advantage to sell the children, as we find they did by your mother; but what part of the world the other sister is in, or whether she be at all, is known only to the great Author of our being. 'However,' continued he, 'we rejoice in finding these hopeful remains of your dear grand-mother, whose resemblance you carry along with you. It was that gave me such a kindness for your person the first time I saw you, methought, perceiving something I had never observed in any other race of people. But,' said he, 'I deprive my companions and children here of the happiness of embracing their own flesh and blood, since we all sprung from one common father, the author of our nation, with whom you are going to be incorporated once more.' Here we embraced one another with a joy that is inexpressible. Now all my former fears were entirely vanished: though I had lost the country where I was born, I found another, of which I could no ways be ashamed, where the people were the most humane and civilized I ever saw, and the soil the finest, as I had reason to hope, in the world. The only check to my happiness was that they were infidels. However, I was resolved not to let any consideration blot out of my mind that I was a Christian. On which account, when the Pophar would have tied the medal about my neck, as a badge of my race, I had some difficulty in that point, for fear it should be an emblem of idolatry, seeing them to be extremely superstitious. So I asked him, what was the meaning of the figure of the sun, with those unknown characters round about it. He told me the characters were to be pronounced *Omabim*, i. e. *The Sun is the Author of our being*, or more literally, *The Sun is our Father*. *Om* or *On*, signifies the Sun, [This will be explained in another place.] *Ab* signifies *Father*, *Im* or *Mim Us*. This made me remember, they had told me in Egypt, that they were children of the Sun; and gave me some uneasiness at their idolatrous notions. I therefore told him, I would keep it as a cognizance of my country; but could not acknowledge any but God to be the supreme Author of my being. 'As to the supreme Author,' said he, 'your opinion is little different from ours.'

\* These people are something like the Chinese, who worship the material heaven or sky, which some missionaries could think compatible with Christianity.

F

But

But let us leave these religious matters till another time; we'll close this happy day with thanksgiving to the Supreme Being for this discovery: tomorrow morning, since you are now really one of us, I will acquaint you with your origin, and how we came to hide ourselves in these inhospitable deserts.

[The reader is desired not to censure or disbelieve the following account of the origin and transmigration of these people, till he has perused the learned remarks of Signor Rhedi.]

The next morning the Pophar calling me to him—Son, said he, to fulfil my promise which I made you last night, and that you may not be like the rest of the ignorant world, who know not who their forefathers and ancestors were: whether they sprung from brutes or Barbarians is all alike to them, provided they can but grovel on the earth, as they do. You must

know therefore, as I suppose you remember what I told you at our first station, that we came originally from Egypt. When you asked me, how we came to venture through these inhospitable deserts, I told you, it was for liberty, and the preservation of our laws; but as you are now found to be one of us, I design to give you a more particular account of your origin. Our ancestors did originally come from Egypt, once the happiest place in the world: though the name of Egypt, and Egyptians, has been given to that country, long since we came out of it: the original name of it was Mezzoraim†, from the first man that peopled it, the father of our nation; and we call ourselves Mezzoranians from him. We have a tradition delivered down to us from our first ancestors, that when the earth first rose out of the water‡, six persons, three men and three women rose along with it; either sent by the supreme Deity to inhabit it, or produced by

\* It would certainly be a great satisfaction to most nations to know from what race of people, country, or family, they sprung originally. This ignorance is owing chiefly to the Barbari, Tramontani§, and other Northern nations, who have from time to time overrun the face of Europe; leaving a mixture of their spawn in all parts of it; so that no one knows whether he came originally from Scythia or Asia, from a civilized nation, or from the greatest brutes; and though wars and invasions have destroyed or interchanged the inhabitants of most countries, yet this man's observation is a just censure of the neglect of most people, with respect to their genealogy and knowledge of their ancestors, where they have been settled in a country for several ages. But there are matters of greater moment in this man's relation, true or false, which lead us into some curious remains of ancient history.

† Signor Rhedi being an Italian, one cannot wonder he speaks so contemptibly of the Northern people; the Italians call them all Barbari.

‡ The original name of Egypt was Misraim; from Misraim, Mesoraim, or Mezzoraim, as the learned Bochart explains it, lib. iv. of Geograph. Sacra in Misraim, Mr. Du Pin's History of the Old Test. c. vii. and others. All ancient authors agree, that it was once the richest and happiest country in the world; flourishing with plenty, and even learning, before the patriarch Abraham's time. There is a very remarkable fragment of Eusebius, an ancient Heathen writer, taken from the Babylonian monuments, preserved by Eusebius, lib. ix. Preparat. Evan. The words are, Βαβυλωνίους λέγουσιν πρῶτον γενέσθαι Βῆλον, ὃ σὺν Κρόνῳ ἀδελφὸν τοῦ Μεσράιμ πατρὸς Αἰγυπτίων. The whole fragment, in our mother tongue, signifies, that according to the Babylonians, the first was Belus, the same with Kronos or Saturn; from him came Ham or Cham, the father of Chanaan, brother to Mesraim, father of the Egyptians.

§ This is an obscure notion of Noah's flood, known to all nations, at least the Eastern, as appears by the oldest remains, of which see Bochart on that article, lib. i. The earth rose out of the water, or the waters sunk from the earth. These people might mistake something of that undoubted and ancient tradition. But Misraim could not be ignorant of the flood, his father Ham having been in the ark, whether ignorance or other motives made his posterity vary in the account; but it is evident the ancients had a notion of the general deluge, as may easily be proved by the remains of Heathen authors, bearing testimony to the Scripture account of it.



the Sun\*. That Mezzoraim, our first founder, was one of those six; who encreasing in number, made choice of the country now called Egypt, for the place of his habitation, where he settled with sixty of his children and grandchildren, all whom he brought along with him, governing them as a real father, and instructing them to live with one another as brothers of one and the same family†. He was a peaceable man, abhorring the shedding of blood‡, which he said would be punished by the supreme Ruler of the

world: extremely given to the search of sciences, and contemplation of the heavens. It was he who was the first inventor of all our arts, and whatever is useful for the government of life sprung from him. Though his grandson Thaoth§ rather excelled him, particularly in the more sublime sciences. Thus our ancestors lived four hundred years, encreasing and spreading over all the land of Egypt, and abounding with the blessings of peace and knowledge; without guile or deceit, neither doing or fearing harm from any; till the

\* The ancient Egyptians thought men, as well as insects, were produced out of the slime of the Nile, by the heat of the sun, and called themselves Aborigines, as several other nations did. Though this wise man is inclined to think they were created by God, as it is evident and certain they were; for since we see one single insect cannot be produced without a cause, it is nonsense, as well as impossible, to imagine an infinite series of men and animals could be produced without a separate cause: on which account Atheism is one of the most foolish and absurd notions in the world.

† Herodotus tells us, the Egyptians pretended to be the first inhabitants of the earth; though the Ethiopians contended with them for antiquity. I must quote the words in Latin, out of Lorenzo Valla's translation, because I have him not in Greek, *Omniū Hominum priores se extitisse arbitrabantur.*—They esteemed themselves, says he, to have been the first of all men. HERODOT. lib. ii. EUTERPE.

‡ It is certain from Bochart, and other learned authors, that the Egyptian government, as well as that of most nations, was at first patriarchal: till Nimrod founded the first kingdom or empire in the world; whose example others followed, according to their power. However, the patriarchal government was soon broke in upon in Egypt, since they had kings in Abraham and Isaac's time, as we learn from the Old Testament. See BOCHART'S GEOGRAPHIA SACRA.

§ The celebrated Bishop of Meaux, in Part iii. of his Universal History, gives us a wonderful description of the justice and piety of the first Egyptians, who had such a horror of shedding man's blood, that they punished their criminals after they were dead; which was as much in *terrorem*, considering their superstitious reverence for their deceased friends and parents, as if they had been punished when alive. The reason why the ancient Heathens abhorred the shedding of blood might be, that Noah's sons having lived before the deluge, knew that the wickedness of the world was the cause of that dreadful judgment; and shedding of blood being the first crime punished by God, they might take warning by such terrible examples, though the impiety of some nations soon obscured this innate light of nature, particularly the descendants of Ham; all but this Misraim; who, with his family, by all accounts, first peopled Egypt; and they were noted for justice and knowledge. It will be made evident in the subsequent remarks, that these Hickloes were the descendants of wicked Chanaan, or Cush, who destroyed the peaceable state of the first Egyptians, and introduced idolatry among them; which made great numbers of them fly into other parts of the world to save themselves.

¶ The same learned Bishop of Meaux, and other historians, assure us, as it is a thing well known to all the learned, that arts and sciences were brought to very great perfection in the earliest times in Egypt. Moses was instructed in the sciences of the Egyptians. Triptolemus, the founder of agriculture, came out of Egypt. Bacchus, the inventor of wine, according to the ancients, came out of Egypt, or Libya, which borders upon it; though it was first learned from Noah. Pythagoras, and other learned men, went into Egypt to be instructed by the priests, &c. Herodotus says the same of himself.

¶ This Tha-oth, the famous philosopher of the Egyptians, was before Mercury, or Trismegistus; though some take him to be the same. All allow him to be extremely ancient, but cannot fix the time when he lived. Historians murder his name at a strange rate. Bochart calls him Ta-autus, lib. ii. cap. 12. Clemens Alex. lib. vi. Strom. says, he wrote xii. books of astrology, geography, physick, policy, theology, religion, and government. Joseph Ben-Gorion De Divisione Gentium, calls him Tutis; some call him Theut; others Teut, Taut, Thoht, &c. But, according to this man, his name was Tha-orth. It is certain, however, that he was the great master of the Egyptians, but de-

the wicked descendants of the other men, called Hicksoes\*, envying their happiness, and the richness of their country, broke in upon them like a torrent, destroying all before them, and taking possession of that happy place our ancestors had rendered so flourishing. The poor innocent Mezzoraniens abhorring, as I said, the shedding of blood, and ignorant of all violence, were slain like sheep all over the country, and their wives and daughters violated before their eyes. Those their merciless enemy spared, were made slaves to work and till the earth for their new lords.

[*Secretary.* Here the Inquisitors interrupted him, and asked him, whether he thought it unlawful in all cases to resist force by force, or whether the law of nature did not allow the Mezzoraniens to resist those cruel invaders even to the shedding of blood; as also to punish publick malefactors with death for the preservation of the whole. Their intent was, as they are cautious of any new opinions, to know whether he might not be a Dogmatizer, and advance some erroneous notions, either by holding that to be lawful, which was not so; or denying things to be lawful, which really may be allowable by the light of nature.

rived his learning from Noah, who might have the knowledge of arts and sciences from the Antediluvian world, or from the columns of Seth, which Josephus says, contain the principles of astrology, and were erected before the flood by the nephews of Seth: one of which columns, as he says, remained in Syria in his time. JOSEPH. ANT. lib. ii. c. 2.

\* The same Josephus, lib. ii. Contra Appion, says, that Hycksoes, or Hycloes, an old Egyptian word, signifies βασιλεῖς ποιμένας—King Shepherds, or King of Beasts, given them by the native Egyptians, as a name of disgrace and contempt. It is out of all controversy that there was a great revolution in Egypt, about four hundred years after the flood, or a little before Abraham's time. Monsieur Du Pin makes the time from the flood to Abraham's birth three hundred and fifty years, and about four hundred to his being called by God. It is certain also, there were kings in Egypt in Abraham's time. It is probable these kings were the Hycksoes, or king shepherds, who altered the government of the ancient Egyptians, and continued about five kings reigns. For when the patriarch Joseph called his father and brethren into Egypt, he bid them ask the land of Goshen to inhabit, because, said he, all shepherds are an abomination to the Egyptians. By which it appears the shepherds were lately driven out. In all likelihood these were the kings who introduced idolatry and the adoration of brute beasts among the Egyptians, for which reason they called them in derision *king shepherds*, or *king beasts*.—The great Bochart, in his Phaleg, looks upon this revolution in Egypt to have been before Abraham's time, and so far from being a fiction, that he says in express words—*‘Cassucos & Capthoræi,’* (whom he proves to be the people of Colchos, for all it is so far from Egypt) *‘ex Ægypto migrasse certum est ante Abrahami tempora.’* It is certain, says he, that the Cassuci and the Capthoræi went out of Egypt before Abraham's time. BOCHART PHALEG. lib. iv. c. 31. Herodotus in Euterpe says, that the people of Colchos were originally Egyptians; though some say they went back some ages after, and settled in Palestine, and were called after that Philistine.

+ These Hycksoes being in all appearance the descendants of wicked Chanaan or Cush, were so abominably impious, as to sacrifice human victims and children to their false gods; and even were the first authors of all impiety and idolatry.

*Gaudentio.* Doubtless they might lawfully have resisted, even to the shedding of blood in that case, as publick criminals may be put to death. I only acquaint your Reverences with the notions peculiar to these people: as for the punishment of their criminals, your Reverences will see, when I come to their laws and customs, that they have other ways and means of punishing crimes, as effectual as putting to death; though living entirely within themselves, free from all mixture and commerce with other people, they have preserved their primitive innocence in that respect to a very great degree.

*Inquisitor.* Go on.

The Pophar continuing his relation, added: ‘But what was most intolerable, was that these impious Hicksoes forced them to adore men and beasts, and even insects for gods: nay, and some to see their children offered in sacrifice to those inhuman deities†. This dreadful inundation fell at first only on the lower parts of Egypt, which was then the most flourishing. As many of the distressed inhabitants as could escape their cruel hands, fled to the upper parts of the country, in hopes to find there some little respite from their misfortunes. But alas! what could they



do? they knew no use of arms: neither would their laws suffer them to destroy their own species; so that they expected every hour to be devoured by their cruel enemies. The heads of the families in such distress were divided in their counsels, or rather they had no counsel to follow: some of them fled into the neighbouring deserts, which you have seen are very dismal, on both sides the upper part of that kingdom; they were dispersed like a flock of sheep scattered by the ravenous wolves. The consternation was so great, that they were resolved to fly to the farthest parts of the earth, rather than fall into the hands of those inhuman monsters. The greatest part of them agreed to build ships, and try their fortune by sea. Our great father Mezzoraim had taught them the art of making boats\*, to cross the branches of the Great River [Nile;] which some said he had learned by being preserved in such a thing from a terrible flood that over-flowed all the land†. Which instrument of their preservation they so improved afterwards, that they could cross the Lesser Sea‡ without any difficulty. This being resolved on, they could not agree where to go: some being resolved to go by one sea, some by the other. However, they set all hands to work, so that in a year's time they had built a vast number of vessels; trying them backwards and forwards along the coasts, mending what was

deficient, and improving what they imagined might be for their greater security. They thought now, or at least their eagerness to avoid their enemies made them think, they could go with safety all over the main sea. As our ancestors had chiefly given themselves to the study of arts and sciences, and the knowledge of nature, they were the most capable of such enterprizes of any people in the world. But the apprehension of all that was miserable being just fresh before their eyes, quickened their industry to such a degree, as none but men in the like circumstances can have a just idea of. Most of these men were those who had fled in crowds from Lower Egypt. The natural inhabitants of the upper parts, though they were in very great consternation, and built ships as fast as they could; yet their fears were not so immediate, especially seeing the Hicksoes remained yet quiet in their new possessions. But news being brought them, that the Hicksoes began to stir again, more swarms of their cruel brood still flocking into that rich country, they resolved now to delay the time no longer, but to commit themselves, wives and children, with all that was most dear and precious, to the mercy of that inconstant element, rather than trust to the barbarity of their own species. They who came out of the Lower Egypt were resolved to cross the Great Sea||, and with immense labour were forced

\* It is highly probable the Egyptians had the knowledge of shipping long before the Greeks, whose first ship was Argo, built by Jason to fetch the golden fleece from Colchos. The first notion of shipping was undoubtedly taken from the ark; the Egyptians were necessitated to make use of boats, by reason of the annual overflowing of the river Nile, and to pass the different branches into which that famous river divides itself in the Lower Egypt. The Sionians, whom Bochart proves to be the descendants of Chanaan, had the use of shipping, as he also proves, before the children of Israel departed out of Egypt.

† In all appearance this must have been Noah's flood, which 'tis much Signor Rhedi passes over in his remarks.

‡ Egypt is bounded on the one side by the end of the Mediterranean; on the other side by the Red Sea, dividing it from Arabia; this he calls the Lesser Sea, as being much narrower than the Mediterranean.

|| This Great Sea, as distinguished from the Less, must be the Mediterranean. Those who fled by that sea, must be those who went to Colchos; they could not go by land over the Isthmus, because the Hicksoes poured in upon them that way: we must not suppose they went all the way by sea to Colchos, quite round by the Straights of Hellespont. They must cross the end of the Mediterranean, and go by land the shortest way they could, till they came to the borders of the Euxine Sea. It is almost incredible men should go so far to seek an habitation. But Bochart says, it is certain the people of Colchos came out of Egypt; they must therefore have been driven out by some terrible enemies. You will say, why may not this first revolution in Egypt, which Bochart speaks of, have been made by the great Semiramis, wife to Ninus, the son of Nimrod? It is answered in the first place, because

forced to carry their materials partly by land, till they came to the outermost branch of the Nile, since their enemies coming over the Isthmus, though they hindered them from going out of their country by land, unless by the desarts, yet had not taken possession of that part of the country. It is needless to recount their cries and lamentations at their leaving their dear country. I shall only tell you, that they ventured into the Great Sea, which they crossed, and never stopped till they came to another sea\*, on the sides of which they fixed their habitation, that they might go

off again in case they were pursued. This we learnt from the account of our ancestors who met with some of them that came to visit the tombs of their deceased parents, as we do; but it is an immense time since, and we never heard any more of them. The other part, who were much the greater number, went down the Lesser Sea†, having built their ships on that sea; they never stopped or touched on either side, till they came to a narrow part of it‡, which led them into the vast ocean, there they turned off to the left into the Eastern Sea§. But whether they were

because Josephus calls the first invaders of Egypt βασιλῆς ποιμένες, *king shepherds*, which cannot agree with the great heroine Semiramis. 2dly, Because it is not credible, notwithstanding the contrary opinion of most historians, that Ninus, the husband of Semiramis, could be so early as they make him to be, i. e. the son of Nimrod, but some other Ninus, long after him. For though Semiramis conquered Egypt, and afterwards lost her army against the Æthiopians, this could not be so soon after the flood; because historians describe that army to consist of three hundred thousand men instructed in discipline after a military manner, armed with warlike chariots, &c. as were the Æthiopians against her, and even superior to her. I say, it is not credible such great armies could be raised so soon after the flood, if she was daughter-in-law to Nimrod the great hunter, who was the son of Cush, and great grandson to Noah.

\* i. e. The Euxine Sea.

† i. e. The Red Sea. There were several other revolutions in Egypt, as, by the Æthiopians, after Semiramis was conquered; who were expelled again, either by the great Sesostris, of whom Herodotus relates such famous exploits; or a little before by his predecessor. The Chanaanites also, who were driven out of Palestine by Joshua, conquered part of it, as we shall see afterwards. Long after that, it was subdued by Nabacodonosor, who destroyed the renowned city of Thebes, with her hundred gates. BOCHART IN NINIVE. Then the Persians under Cambyzes, the son of Cyrus the Great. In fine, the Romans made a province of it in Augustus's time. Strabo says of that famous city of Thebes—*νυνὶ δὲ κοινὸν οὐνομαίται*. At present, says he, it is but a poor village.

*Atque vetus Thebe centum jacet obtrita portis.* JUVEN. SAT. 15.

‡ This must be the Straights of Babelmandel, which let them into the vast Eastern Ocean.

§ It is likely that colony was carried to China; for, let what will come of this man's relations, there are very strong reasons to believe, that the Chinese, notwithstanding the vast distance from Egypt, came originally from that country, about the time of the invasion of the *king shepherds*, which was before Jacob and his sons went into the land of Egypt. For whoever compares the account given by the learned Bishop of Meaux, in the third part of his Universal History, of the lives and manners of the first Egyptians, with those of the Chinese, will find them to agree in a great many points. As 1st, their boasted antiquity: 2dly, their so early knowledge of arts and sciences: 3dly, their veneration for learned men, who have the preference before others: 4thly, their policy: 5thly, their unaccountable superstition for their deceased parents: 6thly, their annual visiting the family of their ancestors: 7thly, their peaceable dispositions: 8thly, their religious worship. As for this last, it is well known the first Egyptians worshipped the sun, long before the gods Apis, and Isis, and Anubis, were introduced among them by their idolatrous invaders. And the Chinese to this day worship the *material heaven*, as is seen in the condemnation of the Jesuits by Clem. XI. Lastly, the use of pyramids in Egypt, which were like ancient idols among the Chinese. See the account of them\* in Moreri†. The only difficulty is, to know how they got from Egypt to China, which is not so insupportable as people may imagine. It is certain, the Egyptians, as has been remarked, had a very early knowledge of navigation. It is certain also, that in those barbarous invasions, the invaders of kingdoms almost destroyed all be-

\* *Pyramids.* † *Edizio Clerici.* fort



were swallowed up in the merciless abyss, or carried into some unknown regions, we cannot tell, for they were never heard of more. Only of late years, we have heard talk at Grand Cairo, of a very numerous and civilized nation in the eastern parts of the world, whose laws and customs have some resemblance to ours; but who, and what they are, we cannot tell, since we have never met with any of them.

The father of our nation, since we separated ourselves from the rest of the world, who was priest of the Sun at No-om\*, (called afterwards by those miscreants No-Ammon†, because of the temple of Hammon) was not asleep in this general consternation; but did not as yet think they would come up so high into the land. However, he thought proper to look out for a place to secure himself and family in case of need. He was the descendant, in a direct line, from the great Tha-oth; and was perfectly versed in all the learned sciences of his ancestors. He guessed there must certainly be some

habitable country beyond those dreadful sands that surrounded him, if he could but find a way to it, where he might secure himself and family; at least, till those troubles were over; for he did not at that time think of leaving his native country for good and all. But, like a true father of his people, which the name of Pophar implies, he was resolved to venture his own life, rather than expose his whole family to be lost in those dismal deserts. He had five sons and five daughters married to as many sons and daughters of his deceased brother‡. His two eldest sons had even grand-children, but his two youngest sons as then had no children. He left the government and care of all to his eldest son, in case he himself should miscarry; and took his two youngest sons, who might best be spared, along with him. Having provided themselves with water for ten days, with bread, and dried fruits, just enough to subsist on, he was resolved to try five days journey endways through these sands, and if he

fore them. Since we find therefore in the most ancient histories, that there was a most terrible revolution in Egypt about that time made by the people, whose customs the Egyptians had in abomination, the Chinese might seek their fortune by sea, and might be carried beyond the Persian gulph, till they came to Cochin China, from whence they might get into the main continent, and so people that vast empire; preserving their ancient laws and customs inviolable. So that, whatever becomes of this man's relation, it is extremely probable the Chinese came first from Egypt.

\* No-om, or No-on, signifies, in the old Mezzoranian, or old Egyptian language, the House of the Sun. Their words are made up of monosyllables put together like the Chinese, which is another reason why the Chinese ought to be looked upon as a colony of the Egyptians. Vide the remarks of the foregoing part of this relation. The patriarch Joseph married the daughter of the priest of On; which several learned men say, is the same with Heliopolis, or City of the Sun. From No comes the Egyptian *Nomes*, or divisions of the country, which the great Bochart, in his *Phaleg*, says is an Egyptian, not a Greek word, though *Dynasty* is Greek. BOCHART, lib. iv. c. 24. Hence very likely came the Nomades and Numidae, from their wandering, and frequently changing their habitation, or names; the first and most ancient of all nations lived thus.

† That is, the house or temple of Ham, or Hammon; or Charnoon, or Chum, as Bochart varies it. This Ham was the Tyrian Jupiter, and in this place was afterwards situated the great city of Thebes, as has been observed before, called by the Greeks. *Diospolis*, or the city of Jupiter. Cadmus, who was of Thebes in Palestine, being driven out from thence by Joshua, built it; but was driven out from it, and forced to retire to Tyre, from whence he conducted a colony of Tyrians, or banished Chanaanites, into Boeotia, where he built Thebes also, or rather the citadel of Thebes, called *Cadmeia*. Vide Bochart, in *Cadmus* and *Hermione*. Which last, the same author says, came originally from Mount Hermon in Palestine; and as that word in the Chanaan language signifies a Serpent, from hence arose the fable of the serpent's teeth turning into men. The temple of Jupiter-Ammon, or Hammon, in Africa, was built by the Chinani, who spread themselves from Egypt into Libya.

‡ It is certain that the ancients, particularly the Eastern nations, married their high relations, as well as the Jews, to keep up their names or tribes; but we don't find in history that they married their own sisters, till the Persians kings, who were condemned for it by the Greeks. The Egyptians under the Ptolemies followed that barbarous custom, though they begun with Ptolemy Lagus, one of the captains of Alexander; the Yncas in America did the same, not to profane their blood, as they said, with other mixtures.

\* saw

saw no hopes of making a discovery  
 that time, to return again before his  
 provisions were spent, and then try the  
 same method towards another quarter.  
 In short, he set out with all secrecy,  
 and pointing his course directly west-  
 ward, the better to guide himself, he  
 came to the first grove that we arrived  
 at, in a little more time than we took  
 up in coming thither. Having now  
 time enough before him, and seeing  
 there was water and fruits in abund-  
 ance, he examined the extent of that  
 delicious vale; he found it was large  
 enough to subsist a great many thou-  
 sands, in case they should increase and  
 be forced to stay there some generations,  
 as in effect they did. After this, he  
 laid in provisions as before, with dates  
 and fruits of the natural produce of the  
 earth, finer than ever were seen in  
 Egypt, to encourage them in their  
 transmigration, and so set out again  
 for his native country. The time pre-  
 fixed for his return was elapsed by his  
 stay in viewing the country; so that  
 his people had entirely given him for  
 lost. But the joy for his unexpected  
 return, with the promising hopes of  
 such a safe and happy retreat, made  
 them unanimously resolve to follow  
 him. Wherefore, on the first news of  
 the Hicksoes being in motion again,  
 they packed up all their effects and  
 provisions as privately as they could;  
 but particularly all the monuments of  
 arts and sciences left by their ancestors,  
 with notes and observations of every  
 part of their dear country, which they

were going to leave, but hoped to  
 again when the storm was over. They  
 arrived without any considerable dis-  
 aster, and resolved only to live in tents  
 till they could return to their native  
 homes. As they increased in num-  
 ber, they descended further into the  
 vale, which there began to spread itself  
 different ways, and supplied them with  
 all the necessaries and conveniences of  
 life; so that they lived in the happiest  
 banishment they could wish; never  
 stirring out of the vale for several years,  
 for fear of being discovered. The  
 Pophar finding himself grow old, (hav-  
 ing attained almost two hundred years  
 of age\*) though he was hale and  
 strong for his years, resolved to visit  
 his native country once more before he  
 died, and get what intelligence he  
 could for the common interest. Ac-  
 cordingly, he and two more disguised  
 themselves, and repassed the deserts  
 again. They just ventured at first into  
 the borders of the country; but, alas!  
 when he came there, he found it all  
 over-run by the barbarous Hicksoes.  
 All the poor remains of the Mezzora-  
 nians were made slaves; and those  
 barbarians had begun to build habita-  
 tions, and establish themselves, as if  
 they designed never more to depart the  
 country. They had made No-om one  
 of their chief towns†, where they erect-  
 ed a temple to their Ram-God‡, call-  
 ing it No-Hammon||, with such in-  
 human laws and cruelties, as drew a  
 flood of tears from his aged eyes§.  
 However, being a man of great pru-

\* The regular lives of the first Egyptians, and of these people descended from them; to-  
 gether with the climate. their diet of fruits and liquors, their exemption from violent pas-  
 sions, without being corrupted by the spurious spawn of other nations, and the like, might  
 contribute very much to the length of their lives, and strength proportionably. The Ma-  
 crobii, or Long-livers, a people of Æthiopia, and a colony of the ancient Egyptians, lived  
 to a vast age, and were called Macrobian, from their long lives. See Herodotus of the  
 Æthiopians; and what he says of their strength in the bow; one of which they sent to  
 Cambyzes, when he had denounced war against them; saying, that when he could bend that  
 bow, he might make war against them; which bow only Smerdis, Cambyzes's brother,  
 could bend, and for that reason was afterwards put to death by his brother out of envy.

† It seems Thebes, though afterwards such a prodigious city, was then but the head of  
 the name of that man's family.

‡ Jupiter Hammon. whom Bochart proves to have been Ham or Cham, the son of  
 Noah, was represented with a ram's head, which was held in such abomination by the first  
 Egyptians, from whence they called those first invaders Hicksoes.

|| No-Hammon, the house of the Ram-God.

§ It is likely he means Busiris Aras, so infamous in antiquity; or the cruel Busiris,  
 who sacrificed his guest. Though historians don't agree about the time when Busiris lived,  
 which shews he was very ancient, yet all agree, he was a monster of cruelty, and became a  
 proverb on that account. This was a very natural reason for the Egyptians to persecute them-  
 selves into so many colonies as they did, to avoid such cruelties.

dence,



dence and foresight, he easily imagined, by their tyrannical way of living, they could not continue long in that state without some new revolution. After making what observations he could, and visiting the tombs of his fore-fathers, he returned to the vale, and died in that place where you saw the pyramid built to his memory. Not many generations after, according as he had foreseen, the natives, made desolate by the tyrannical oppressions of the Hicksoes, were forced to break in upon their primitive laws, which forbade them to shed blood; made a general insurrection; and, calling in their neighbours around them, fell upon the Hicksoes when they least expected it, and drove them out of the country. They were headed by a brave man of a mixt race, his mother being a beautiful Mezzoranian, and his father a Sabian\*. After young conqueror had driven out the Hicksoes, he established a new form of government, making himself king over his brethren, (but not after the tyrannical manner of the Hicksoes) and grew very powerful. Our ancestors sent persons from time to time to inform themselves how matters went.

They found the kingdom in a flourishing condition, indeed, under the conquering Sosis†, for so he was called. He and his successors made it one of the most powerful kingdoms of the earth; but the laws were different from what they had been in the time of our ancestors, or even from those the great Sosis had established. Some of his successors began to be very tyrannical; they made slaves of their brothers, and invented a new religion; some adoring the sun, some the gods of the Hicksoes; so that our ancestors, as they could not think of altering their laws, though they might have returned again, chose rather to continue still unknown in that vale, under their patriarchal government. Nevertheless, in process of time, they increased so much, that the country was not capable of maintaining them; so that they had been obliged to return, had not another revolution in Egypt forced them to seek out a new habitation. This change was made by a race of people called Cnanim‡, as wicked and barbarous in effect, but more politick, than the Hicksoes; though some said they were originally the same people, who being driven out of their

\* These Sabzeans were the descendants of some of the sons of Chusli, or Chusis, a very tall race of men, great negotiators, and more polite than the other Arabians. *Bochart, in Seba filio Cbus*, where he quotes a passage out of Agatharcides of the handsomeness of the Sabzeans—

Τὰ σώματα ἐς τῶν κατοικούντων ἀξιολογώτερα.—

‘The bodies of the inhabitants [the Sabzeans] are more majestick than other men.’

† This must be the great Sesostris or Sefosis, of whom the learned Bishop of Meaux, as also Herodotus, says such glorious things. Though authors do not say precisely when he lived, all acknowledge him to have flourished in the earliest times. He extended his conquests over the greatest part of the East, and almost over the known world, as some say. Where his enemies were cowards, and made no resistance, he set up statues of them resembling women. *HERODOT. LIB. II. EUTERPE. MONS. DE MEAUX, PAR. III. HIST. UNIV.* This great conqueror's name is very much varied by authors.

‡ These in all appearance were the wicked Chananeans, who being to be destroyed, and being driven out of Chanaan by Joshua, dispersed themselves, and invaded the greatest part of the countries round about them. *Bochart* in Chanaan proves almost demonstrably, that they dispersed themselves over all the islands and sea-ports of Europe, Asia, and Africa. In his preface he quotes a most curious passage out of *Procopius De Bello Vandelico*; of a pillar that was found in Africa, with a Phenician or Chananean inscription which signifies in Greek—

ΗΜΕΙΣ ΕΣΜΕΝ ΟΙ ΦΕΥΓΟΝΤΕΣ ΑΠΟ ΠΡΩΤΟΠΟΥ ΙΗΣΟΥ ΤΟΥ ΑΝΕΤΟΤ ΤΙΟΥ ΝΑΘ.

‘We are those who fled from the face of Jesus, or Joshua the robber, the son of Nave.’ *Eusebius*, in *Chronico*, has much the same; and *St. Austin*, in his *City of God*, says, that the ancient country people about Hippo in Africa, who were the remains of the ancient Carthaginians, if you asked them who they were, would answer—‘We are originally Chanani, or Chananeans.’

own country by others more powerful than themselves, came pouring in, not only over all the land of Mezoraim, but all along the coasts of both seas, destroying all before them, with greater abominations than the Hickees had ever been guilty of: in short, a faithless and most perfidious race of men, that corrupted the innocent manners of the whole earth. Our forefathers were in the most dreadful consternation imaginable. There was now no prospect of ever returning into their ancient country. They were surrounded with deserts on all sides. The place they were in began to be too narrow for so many thousands as they were increased to: nay, they did not know but the wicked Cnaniim, who were at the same time the boldest and most enterprising nation under the sun†, might find them out some time or other. Being in this distress, they resolved to seek out a new habitation; and, to that end, compared all the notes and observations on the heavens, the course of the sun, the seasons and nature of the climate, and whatever else might direct them what course to steer. They did not doubt but that there might be some habitable countries in the midst of those vast deserts, perhaps as delicious as the vale they lived in, if they could but come at them. Several persons were sent out to make discoveries, but without success. The sands were too vast to travel over without water, and they could find no springs nor rivers. At length the most sagacious of them began to reflect, that the annual overflowing of the great river Nile, whose head could never be found out, must proceed from some prodigious rains which fell southward

of them about that time of the year; which rains, if they could but luckily time and meet with, might not only supply them with water, but also render the country fertile where they fell. Accordingly the chief Pophar, assisted by some of the wisest men, generously resolved to run all risks to save his people. They computed the precise time when the Nile overflowed, and allowed for the time the waters must take in descending so far as Egypt. They thought therefore, if they could but carry water enough to supply them till they met with these rains, they would help them to go on further. At length five of them set out, with ten dromedaries, carrying as much water and provisions as might serve them for fifteen days, to bring them back again in case there was no hopes.

They steered their course as we did, though not quite so exact the first time, till they came to the place, where we are now. Finding here, as their notes tell us‡, a little rivulet, which is since swallowed up by the sands, they filled their vessels, and went up to take an observation, as we did; but seeing the signs of the great hurricanes, which was our greatest encouragement, it had like to have driven them into despair; for the Pophar, knowing the danger of being overwhelmed in the sands, thought of nothing but flying back as fast as he could, fearing to be swallowed up in those stifling whirlpools. This apprehension made him lay aside all thoughts of succeeding towards that climate; and now his chief care was how to get back again with safety for himself and his people. But finding all continue tolerably serene where they

\* The celebrated Bochart, so often quoted, proves that the Phœnicians or Carthaginians, whom he also proves to have been Chananeans, were the persons who spread idolatry, with all the tribe of the Heathen gods, and their abominable rites, over the whole world. BOCHART IN CHANAN. The same author says, the Phœnicians, or Chanani, invaded Egypt about that very time. This he proves directly: and that they had their Castra about Memphis; as also that Cadmus and Phenix, whom he makes contemporaries with Joshua, having fled before him, came out of Egypt afterwards, and built Thebes in Bœotia. See also HERODOTUS in EUTERPE.

† Herodotus says, that they sailed (even in those early days) from the Red Sea, round Africa, and came back to Egypt, through the Streights, and up the Mediterranean. HERODOT. MELPOMENE, and BOCHART. That Hanno the elder, by order of the senate of Carthage, sailed round the greatest part of the world, and after his return delivered to them an account of his voyage, which is called the Periplus of Hanno. He affected to be honoured as a god for it, and lived before Solomon's time. BOCHART IN CHANAN, LIB. II. c. 37.

‡ Those wise ancients kept records of every thing that was memorable and useful for their people. If this had been the practice of the Europeans, we should not have lost so many secrets of nature as we have.



were, they made a halt in order to make some farther observations. In the mean time, they reflected that those hurricanes must be fore-runners of tempests and rain. Then they recollected that no rain, or what was very considerable, ever fell in Egypt\*, or for a great way south of it, till they came within the tropicks; and thence concluded, that the rains must run parallel with the equator, both under it, and for some breadth on both sides, till they met the rise of the river Nile, and there caused those vast inundations so hard to be accounted for by other people. That, in fine, those rains must last a considerable while, and probably, though beginning with tempests, might continue in settled rain, capable of being passed through. Then he at first resolved to venture back again to the first vale: but being a man of great prudence, he presently considered, that as he could not proceed on his way without rains, so he could not come back again but by the same help, which coming only at one season, must take up a whole year before he could return. However, he was resolved to venture on, not doubting but if he could find a habitable country, he should also find fruits enough to subsist on, till the next season. Therefore he ordered two of his companions to return the same way they came, to tell his people not to expect him till the next year, if Providence should bring him back at all; but if he did not return by the time of the overflowing of the Nile, or thereabouts, they might give him over for lost, and must never attempt that way any more. They took their leaves of one another as if it were the last adieu, and set out at the same time; two of them for their homes in the first vale, and the other three for those unknown regions; being destitute of all other helps but those of a courageous mind. The three came back to this place, where it thundered and lightened as it does now; but the Popbar observed it still tended

side-ways, and guessed, when the first violence was over, the rains might be more settled. The next day it fell out as he foresaw; whereupon, recommending himself to the great Author of our being, he launched boldly out into that vast ocean of sands and rain, steering his course south-west, rather inclining towards the south. They went as far as the heavy sands and rains would let them, till their dromedaries could hardly go any farther. Then they pitched their tents and refreshed themselves just enough to undergo new labour, well knowing all their lives depended on their expedition. They observed the sands to be of a different kind from what they had seen hitherto, so fine, that any gust of wind must overwhelm man and beast, only the rains had clogged and laid them.

Not to prolong your expectation too much: they went on thus for ten days, till the rains began to abate; then they saw their lives or deaths would soon be determined. The eleventh day the ground began to grow harder in patches, with here and there a little moss on the surface, and now and then a small withered shrub. This revived their hopes, that they should find good land in a short time, and in effect the soil changed for the better every step they took; and now they began to see little hills covered with grass, and the valleys sink down as if there might be brooks and rivers. The twelfth and thirteenth day cleared all their doubts, and brought them into a country, which, though not very fertile, had both water and fruits, with a hopeful prospect further on of hills and dales, all habitable and flourishing. Here they fell prostrate on the earth, adoring the Creator of all things, who had conducted them safe through so many dangers, and kissing the ground, which was to be the common nurse for them, and, as they hoped, for all their posterity: when they had reposed themselves for some days, they proceeded further into the country, which they found to mend

This is well known by all the descriptions of that country, the inundation of the Nile supplying the want of it, and making it one of the most fertile kingdoms in the world; every one knows it was once the granary of the Roman empire. However, some small rain falls sometimes: nor is there any more higher up in the country. The overflowing of the Nile is known to be caused by vast rains falling under the line, or about that climate; and since those don't take Egypt and the adjoining part of Africa in their way, they must by consequence run parallel with the line; which was a very natural and philosophical observation of these wise men.

upon them the more they advanced into it. Not intending to return till next year, they sought the properest place for their habitation; and setting up marks at every moderate distance not to lose their way back again, they made for the highest hills they could see, from whence they perceived an immense and delicious country every way; but, to their greater satisfaction, no inhabitants. They wandered thus at pleasure through those natural gardens, where there was a perpetual spring in some kinds of the produce of the earth, and the ripeness of autumn with the most exquisite fruits in others. They kept the most exact observations possible. Which ever way they went, there were not only springs and fountains in abundance, but, as they guessed (for they kept the higher ground) the heads of great rivers and lakes, some of which they could perceive; so that they were satisfied there was room enough for whole nations, without any danger, as they could find, of being disturbed. By their observation of the sun, they were nigher the equator than they had imagined\*, so that they there passed the middle space between the tropick and the line. Being come back to their first station, they there waited the proper season for their return. The rains came something sooner than the year before, because they were further westward. The hurricanes were nothing like what they were in the vast sands. As soon as they began to fix in settled rains, they set out again as before, and in twenty days time from their last setting out, happily arrived at the place where they left their dear friends and relations, whose joy for their safe and happy arrival was greater than I can pretend to describe. Thus this immortal hero accomplished his great undertaking, so much more glorious than all the victories of the greatest conquerors, as it was projected, formed, and executed by his own wisdom and courage; not by exposing and sacrificing the lives of thousands of his subjects, perhaps

\* Though we may imagine a lesser circle parallel to the tropicks and the equator, which is called *Maximus Parallelorum*; yet whoever travels either by land or sea, parallel as he thinks, to the equator, does not so, but will approach to it; nay and cross it at last, (unless he goes spirally) and make indentures as he goes along: the reason is, because wherever we are, we are on the summit of the globe with respect to us, and our feet make a perpendicular to the center; so that if we go round the globe, we shall make a great circle, and by consequence cut the equator.

greater men than himself, but by exposing his own life for the safety of those that depended on him. It were too tedious to recount to you all the difficulties and troubles they had, both in resolving to undertake such a hazardous transmigration, as well as those of transporting such a multitude, with their wives and children, and all their most precious effects, over those merciless sands, which they could only pass at one season of the year. But the voyage being at length resolved on, and the good Pophar wisely considering the difficulties; and necessity, the mother of invention, urging him, at the same time, to gain as much time as he could, since the vale where they were at present was sufficient to maintain them till the rains came; got all his people hither in the mean time, to be ready for the season. The newborn children were left with their mothers, and people to take care of them, till they were able to bear the fatigue. Thus, in seven years time, going backwards and forwards every season, they all arrived safe, where we ourselves hope to be in ten or twelve days time. This great hero we deservedly honour, as another Mesraim, the second founder of our nation, from whose loins you yourself sprung by the surer side, and are going to be incorporated again with the offspring of your first ancestors.

Here he ended his relation, and your Reverences may easily believe, I was in the greatest admiration at this unheard of account. As it raised the ideas I had of the people, so I could not be sorry to find myself, young and forlorn as I was before, incorporated with, and allied to such a flourishing and civilized nation. My expectation was not disproportionate to my ideas: I was persuaded I was going into a very fine country; but the thoughts of their being Pagans left some little damp on my spirits, and was a drawback to my expected happiness. However, I was resolved to preserve my religion, at the expence of all that was dear to me, and even of life itself.

By this time, the Pophar ordered us to



refresh ourselves, and prepare all things for our departure, though the storm of thunder and lightning did not cease till towards morning. At length, all things being ready for our moving, we marched on slowly till we came into the course of the rains. It was the most settled and downright rain, (as the saying is) that ever I saw; every thing seemed to be as calm, as the tempest was violent before. Being accustomed to it, they had provided open vessels on each side of the dromedaries, to catch enough for their use as it fell, and they covered themselves and their beasts with that fine oiled cloth I mentioned before. All the sands were laid, and even beaten hard by the rains, though heavy and cloggy at the same time. We made as much way as possible for five days, just resting and refreshing ourselves when absolutely necessary. I must own, nothing could be more dismal than those dreary solitary desarts, where we could neither see sun nor moon, but had only a gloomy, malignant light, just sufficient to look at the needle, and take our observations. On the sixth day, we thought we saw something move sideways of us, on our right hand, but seemingly passing by us, when one of the young men cried—'There they are,' and immediately crossed down to them. Then we perceived them to be persons travelling like ourselves, crossing in the same manner up towards us. I was extremely surprized to find, that those desarts were known to any but ourselves. But the Pophar soon put me out of pain, by telling me, they were some of their own people, taking the same season to go for Egypt, and on the same account. By this time we were come up to one another. The leader of the other caravan, with all his company, immediately got off their dromedaries, and fell prostrate on the earth before our Pophar; at which he stepped back, and cried—'Alas! is our father dead?' They told him, Yes; and that he being the first of

the second line, was to be regent of the kingdom, till the young Pophar, who was born when his father was an old man, should come to the age of fifty. Then our people got off, and prostrated themselves before him\*, all but myself. They took no notice of my neglect, seeing me a supernumerary person, and by consequence a stranger; but as soon as the ceremonies were over, came and embraced me, and welcomed me into their brotherhood with the most sincere cordiality, as if I had been one of their nation. The Pophar soon told them what I was, which made them repeat their caresses with new extasies of joy peculiar to these people. After reiterated enquiries concerning their friends, and assurances that all was well, except what they had just told him, the Pophar asked them, how they came to direct their course so much on the left hand, expecting to have met them the day before, and they seeming to point as if they were going out of their way. They told us, they were now sensible of it, and were making up for the true road as fast as they could: but that the day before, they had like to have lost themselves by the darkness of the weather, and their too great security; for, bearing too much on the left hand, one of their dromedaries floundered, as if he were got into a quick-sand†. The rider thinking it had been nothing but some looser part of the sand, thought to go on, but fell deeper the further he went, till the commander ordered him to get off immediately, which he did with so much haste, that not minding his dromedary, the poor beast going on further into the quick-sands was lost. Then the Pophar told them, there was such a place marked down in their ancient charts, which, being so well acquainted with the roads, they had never minded of late years: that he supposed those quick-sands to be either the rains, which had sunk through the sands, and meeting with some strata of clay, stagnated, and were forming a lake; or more pro-

\* The eastern manner of shewing respect. † Persons may wonder to hear of quick-sands in the midst of the sun-burnt desarts of

Africa. But the thing will not seem so improbable, when we come to examine the reasons of it. Without doubt, our author does not mean such quick-sands as are caused by the coming in of the tide under the sands; a man of sense would be incapable of such a blunder. But that there should be some stagnating waters in the low swamps of the sands, is so far from being incredible, that it can be hardly thought to be otherwise. It is very well known, there are vast lakes in some parts of Africa, which have no visible outlets. There are rivers also that lose themselves in the sands, where sinking under for some time, they may form sandy marshes, or quick-sands, as the author calls them.

bably,

bably, it was the course of some distant river, rising perhaps out of a habitable country, at an unknown distance, but had lost itself in those immense sands. However, he congratulated them on their escape; and, like a tender father, gently chid them for their too great security in that boundless ocean. Our time not permitting us to stay long, each caravan set out again for their destined course, having but five or six days journey to make, that is, as far as we could travel in so many days and so many nights; for we never stopped but to refresh ourselves. The rains had so tempered the air, that it was rather cold than hot, especially the nights, which grew longer, as we approached the line. Here we steered our course more to the west again, but not so as to leave the ridge of the world. I observed, the more we kept to the west, the more moderate the rains were, as indeed they slackened in proportion as we came nigher our journey's end; because coming from the west, or at least with a little point of the south, they began sooner than where we set out. The tenth day of our journey, I mean from the last grove or resting-place, one of our dromedaries failed. We had changed them several times before, to make their labour more equal. They would not

let it die, for the good it had done; but two of the company having water enough, and knowing where they were, staid behind, to bring it along with them. We now found the nature of the sands and soil begin to change, as the Pophar had informed me: the ground began to be covered with a little moss, tending towards a greensward, more like barren downs than sands; and I unexpectedly perceived in some places, instead of those barren gravelly sands, large spaces of tolerable good soil\*. At length, to our inexpressible joy and comfort, at least for myself, who could not but be in some suspense in such an unknown world, we came to patches of trees and grass with slanting falls and heads of vales, which seemed to enlarge themselves beyond our view†. The rains were come to their period; only it looked a little foggy at a great distance before us, which was partly from the exhalations of the country after the rains‡, partly from the trees and hills stopping the clouds, by which we found that the weather did not clear up in the habitable countries so soon as in the barren deserts. The Pophar told me, that if it were not for the haziness of the air, he would shew me the most beautiful prospect that ever my eyes beheld.

\* It was observed in some of the former remarks, that not only the deserts of Africa, but all the strata, or great beds of gravel, which are found in all parts of the world, probably were caused by the universal deluge, nor can they be well accounted for otherwise. The deeper the beds of gravel are, the more they shew, by the heterogeneous stuff lodged with them, that they were brought thither, not produced there *ab origine*. The vast falls and gulleets, which are seen on the skirts of all the mountains in the world, evidently shew they were caused by some violent agitation, which carried the looser earth and small stones along with it: for which nothing can be more natural, than the supposition of a flood, or agitated fluid, which, by it's violence and shakings, carried all that was moveable before it for some time. This gravel was incorporated with the loose earth before the flood, and was carried to and fro, while the waters were in their greatest agitation, washing and melting the loose earth from the gravel and stones. But when the waters came to their highest pitch, and began to subside, the stones and gravel would sink sooner than lighter things, and so be left almost in a body in those strata they appear in. This might be illustrated much further, if there were occasion. The vast numbers of petrified shells and scallops, which are found in all parts of the world, on the higher grounds, could never be a mere *lusus naturæ* as some too curious philosophers imagine, but must be accounted for by such a flood; and these appearing in all parts of the universe, the flood must have been universal. The sudden change of soils in every region, with the exceeding richness of some more than others, and that too sometimes all at once, is to be accounted for from the same cause; for the same violence of waters washing the earth from the stones, must naturally make an unequal accumulation of both. As for Africa, all the ancients speak of the incredible fertility of it in some places, and the extreme barrenness of the deserts in others.

† The prodigious height of the sands in Africa, in those parts which lie between the tropicks, may not only be the cause of the sands or gravel sinking in greater quantities at the decrease of the flood; but the most extensive vales may have had their rise from very small gulleets at first.

‡ It is very natural to think, that those barren sun-burnt deserts send up but few exhalations.

I was



I was sensibly convinced of it by the perfumes of the spicy shrubs and flowers, which struck our senses with such a reviving fragrantcy, as made us almost forget our past fatigue, especially me, who had not felt the like even in the first vale: neither do I believe all the odours of the Happy Arabia could ever come up to it. I was just as if I had risen out of the most delicious repose. Here the Pophar ordered us to stop for refreshment, and added, that we must stay there till next day. We pitched our tents on the last descent of those immense Bares, by the side of a little rill that issued out of the small break of the downs, expecting further orders.

The cause of our stay here, where we were out of danger, was not only for our companions we had left behind us, but on a ceremonious account, as your Reverences will see by-and-by: they were also to change their habits, that they might appear in the colours of their respective tribe or Nome, which were five, according to the number of the sons of the first Pophar, who brought them out of Egypt, whose statue we saw at the Pyramid. By their laws, all the tribes are to be distinguished by their colours; that wherever they go, they may be known what Nome they belong to; with particular marks of their posts and dignities; as I shall describe to your Reverences afterwards. The grand Pophar's colour, who was descended from the eldest son of the ancient Pophar, was a flame colour, or approaching nigh the rays of the sun, because he was chief priest of the Sun. Our new regent's colour was green, spangled with suns of gold, as your Reverences saw in the picture; the green representing the spring, which is the chief season with them. The third colour is a fiery red, for the summer. The fourth is yellow, for autumn; and the fifth purple, representing the gloominess of winter; for these people, acknowledging the sun for the immediate governor of the universe, mimic the nature of his influence as nigh as they can. The women observe the colours of their respective tribes, but have moons of silver intermixed with the suns, to shew that they are influenced in a great measure by that variable planet. The young virgins have the new moon; in the strength of their age the full moon; as they grow old, the moon is in the decrease proportionably. The widows have the moon expressed just as it is in the change; the descendants of the daughters of the first

Pophar were incorporated with the rest. Those of the eldest daughter took the eldest son's colour, with a mark of distinction, to shew they were never to succeed to the Popharship, or regency, till there should be no male issue of the others at age to govern. This right of eldership, as these people understand it, is a little intricate, but I shall explain it to your Reverences more at large, when I come to speak more particularly of their government. When they are sent out into foreign countries, they take what habit or colour they please, and generally go all alike, to be known to each other; but they must not appear in their own country but in their proper colours, it being criminal to do otherwise. They carry marks also of their families, that in case any misdemeanor should be committed, they may know where to trace it out; for which reason, now they drew near their own country, they were to appear in the colours of their respective Nomes; all but myself, who had the same garment I wore at Grand Cairo, to shew I was a stranger, though I wore the Pophar's colour afterwards, as being his relation, and incorporated in his family. When they were all arrayed in their silken robes of different colours, spangled with suns of gold, with white fillets round their temples, studded with precious stones, they made a very delightful shew, being the handsomest race of people this day in the universe, and all resembling each other, as having no mixture of other nations in their blood.

The sun had now broke through the clouds, and discovered to us the prospect of the country, but such a one as I am not able to describe; it looked rather like an immense garden than a country: at that distance I could see nothing but trees and groves; whether I looked towards the hills or vales, all seemed to be one continued wood, though with some seemingly regular intervals of squares and plains, with the glittering of golden globes or suns through the tops of the trees, that it looked like a green mantle spangled with gold. I asked the Pophar, if they lived all in woods, or whether the country was only one continued immense forest. He smiled, and said—'When we come thither, you shall see something else besides woods;' and then bid me look back, and compare the dreary sands we had lately passed with that glorious prospect we saw before us: I did so, and found the dismal barrenness of the one enhanced

enhanced the beautiful delight of the other. 'The reason,' says he, 'why it looks like a wood is, that besides innumerable kinds of fruits, all our towns, squares, and streets, as well as fields and gardens, are planted with trees, both for delight and convenience, though you will find spare ground enough for the produce of all things sufficient to make the life of man easy and happy. The glittering of gold through the tops of the trees, are golden suns on the tops of the temples and buildings: we build our houses flat and low on account of hurricanes, with gardens of perfumed ever-greens on the tops of them; which is the reason you see nothing but groves.'

We descended gradually from off the desert through the scattered shrubs, and were saluted every now and then with a gale of perfumes quite different from what are brought to the Europeans from foreign parts. The fresh air of the morning, together with their being exhaled from the living stocks, gave them such a fragrantcy as cannot be expressed. At length we came to a spacious plain a little shelving, and covered with a greenish coat, between moss and grass, which was the utmost border of the desert; and beyond it a small river, collected from the hills, as it were, weeping out of the sands in different places; which river was the boundary of the kingdom that way. Halting there, we discovered a small company of ten persons, the same number, excluding me, with ours, advancing gravely towards us: they were in the proper colours of the Nomes, with spangled suns of gold, as my companions wore, only the tops of their heads were sprinkled with dust, in token of mourning. As soon as they came at a due distance, they fell flat on their faces before the Pophar, without saying a word, and received the golden Urns with the earth which we brought along with us. Then they turned, and marched directly before us, holding the Urns in their hands as high as they could, but all in a deep and mournful silence. These were deputies of the five Nomes sent to meet the Urns. We advanced in this

silent manner, without saying one word, till we came to the river, over which was a stately bridge with a triumphal arch on the top of it, beautified with suns of gold, most magnificent to behold. Beyond the bridge, we immediately passed through a kind of circular grove, which led us into a most delightful plain, like an amphitheatre, with five avenues or streets leading to it: at the entrance of each avenue stood an innumerable multitude of people representing the five Nomes, or governments of those immense kingdoms, all in their different colours, spangled with suns of gold, which made the most glorious show in the world. As soon as we entered the amphitheatre, our silence was broke with shouts of joy that rended the very skies; then the whole multitude falling flat on their faces, adoring the Urns, and thrice repeating their shouts, and adorations, there advanced ten triumphant chariots, according to the colours of the Nomes with suns as before; nine of the chariots were drawn with six horses each, and the tenth with eight for the Pophar regent. The five deputies, who were the chief of each Nome, with the Urns and companions, mounted five of the chariots; the other five were for us, two in a chariot; only being a supernumerary, I was placed backwards in the Pophar's chariot, which he told me was the only mark of humiliation and inequality I would receive. We were conducted with five squadrons of horse, of fifty men each, in their proper colours, with streamers of the same, having the sun in the centre, through the opposite avenue; till we came into another amphitheatre of a vast extent, where we saw an infinite number of tents of silk of the colour of the Nomes, all of them spangled with golden suns: here we were to rest and refresh ourselves. The Pophar's tent was in the centre of his own colour, which was green, the second Nome in dignity, in whose dominions and government we now were.

I have been longer in this description because it was more a religious ceremony than any thing else, these people being extremely mysterious in all they do. I shall explain the meaning to your Reverence

\* The ancient Egyptians were so mysterious, particularly in their religious ceremonies, and *arcana* of government, that in all probability, the ancient fables, which very few yet understand rightly, had their rise from them; though the learned Bochart, in his *Phaleg*, derives them chiefly from the Canaanites, who dispersing themselves all over the world, when they fled from Joshua, imposed upon the credulous Greeks by the different significations of the



as briefly as I can. The stopping before we came to the bridge on the borders of those inhospitable deserts, and walking in that mournful silent manner, not only expressed their mourning for their deceased ancestors, but also signified the various calamities and labours incident to man in this life, where he is not only looked upon to be, but really is, in a state of banishment and mourning; wandering in sun-burnt deserts, and tost with storms of innumerable lawless desires, still sighing after a better country. The passage over the bridge, they would have to betoken man's entrance into rest by death; their shouts of joy, when the sacred Urns arrived in that glorious country, not only signified the happiness of the next life, (for these people universally believe the immortality of the soul, and think none but brutes can be ignorant of it) but also that their ancestors, whose burial dust they brought along with them, were now in a place of everlasting rest.

[*Inquisitor*. I hope you do not believe so of Heathens, let them be ever so moral men, since we have no assurance of happiness in the next life mentioned in the Holy Scripture, without faith in Christ.

*Gaudentio*. No, Reverend Fathers; I only mention the sense in which these men understand the mysteries of their religion. As I believe in Christ, I know there is no other name under heaven by which men can be saved.

[*Inquisitor*. Go on:]

Every ceremony of these people has some mystery or other included in it; but there appeared no harm in any of them, except their falling prostrate before the dust, which looked like rank idolatry: but they said still, they meant no more than what was merely civil, to

signify their respect for their deceased parents\*.

I shall not as yet detain your Reverences with the description of the beauties of the country through which we passed, having so much to say of the more substantial part, that is, of their form of government, laws and customs, both religious and civil; nor describe the prodigious magnificence, though joined with a great deal of natural simplicity, in their towns, temples, schools, colleges, &c. Because, being built mostly alike, except for particular uses, manufactures, and the like; I shall describe them all in one, when I come to the great city of Phor, otherwise called, in their sacred language, No-om†: for if I should stay to describe the immense riches, fertility, and beauties of the country, this relation, which is designed as a real account of a place wherein I lived so many years, would rather look like a romance than a true relation. I shall only tell your Reverences at present, that after having taken a most magnificent repast, consisting of all the heart of man can conceive delicious, both of fruits and wines, while we staid in those refreshing tabernacles, we passed on by an easy evening's journey, to one of their towns, always conducted and lodged in the same triumphant manner, till we came to the head of that Nome, which I told your Reverences was the Green Nome, belonging to the Pophar regent, second in dignity of the whole empire. Here the Urn of dust belonging to that Nome was repositied in a kind of golden tabernacle set with precious stones of immense value, in the centre of a spacious temple, which I shall describe afterwards. After a week's feasting and rejoicing, both for the reception of the dust and the safe return of the Pophar and his companions, together with

the same words in their language. It is observable, by the bye, that the most ancient languages, as the Hebrew, with it's different dialects, of which the Canaanite or Phœnician language was one, the Chinese language, &c. had a great many significations for the same word, either from the plain simplicity or poverty of the ancient languages, or more probably from an affected mysteriousness in all they did.

\* See the remarks before on that head, and the accounts of the worship of the Chinese, who were originally Egyptians; in the disputes between the Dominicans and Jesuits, where the latter maintained the idolatrous ceremonies and offerings made to their deceased ancestors, to imply nothing but a *natural* and *civil* respect. The Dominicans, on the contrary, very justly held them to be idolatry, as they were judged to be, and condemned as such by Clement XI.

† Josephus against Apion distinguishes two languages of the ancient Egyptians, the one sacred, the other common. Their sacred language was full of mysteries, perhaps like the Cabala of the Jews.

his exaltation to the regency, we set out in the same manner for the other Nomes, to reposit all the Urns in their respective temples. These are five, as I informed your Reverences before. The country is something mountainous, particularly under the line, and not very uniform, though every thing else is; containing vallies, or rather whole regions running out between the desarts; besides vast ridges of mountains in the heart of the country which inclose immense riches in their bowels. The chief town is situated as high as possible in the middle of the Nomes, and about the centre of the country, bating those irregularities I mentioned. The four inferior Nomes were like the four corners, with the flame-coloured Nome, where the grand Pophar or regent *pro tempore* resided, in the centre of the square. Their method was to go to the four inferior Nomes first, and reposit the Urns, and then to compleat all at the chief town of the first Nome. These Nomes were each about eight days very easy journey over. Thus we went the round of all, which I think, as I then remarked, was a kind of political visitation at the same time. At length we came to the great city of Phor, or No-om, there to reposit the last Urn, and for all the people to pay their respects to the grand Pophar, if in being, or else to the regent. By that time, what with those who accompanied the procession of the Urns, and the inhabitants of that immense town, more people were gathered together than one would have almost thought had been in the whole world; but in such order and decency, distinguished in their ranks, tribes, and colours, as is not easy to be comprehended. The glittering tents spread themselves over the face of the earth.

I shall here give your Reverences a description of the town, because all other great towns or heads of the Nomes are built after that model, as indeed the lesser towns come as high it as they can, except, as I said, places for arts or trades, which are generally built on rivers or brooks, for conveniency; such is the nature of the people, that they affect an exact uniformity and equality in all they do, as being brothers of the same stock.

The town of Phor, that is, the Glory, or No-om, which signifies the house of the Sun, is built circular, in imitation of the sun and it's rays. It is situated in the largest plain of all the kingdom, and upon the largest river, which is about as big as our Po, rising from a ridge of mountains under the line, and running towards the north, where it forms a great lake, almost like a sea, whose waters are exhaled by the heat of the sun, having no outlet, or sink under ground in the sands of the vast desarts encompassing it. This river is cut into a most magnificent canal, running directly through the middle of the town. Before it enters the town, to prevent inundations, and for other conveniencies, there are prodigious basons, and locks, and sluices, with collateral canals, to divert and let out the water, if need be. The middle stream forms the grand canal, which runs through the town, till it comes to the grand place; then there is another lock and sluice, which dividing it into two semicircles or wings, and carrying it round the grand place, forms an island with the temple of the Sun in the centre, and meeting again opposite to where it divided, so goes on in a canal again. There are twelve bridges with one great arch over each, ten over the circular canals, and two where they divide and meet again. There are also bridges over the straight canals, at proper distances. Before the river enters the town, it is divided by the first great lock into two prodigious semicircles encompassing the whole town. All the canals are planted with double rows of cedars, and walks the most delightful that can be imagined. The grand place is in the centre of the town, a prodigious round, or immense theatre, encompassed with the branches of the canal, and, in the centre of that, the temple of the Sun. This temple consists of three hundred and sixty-five double marble pillars, according to the number of the days of the year\*, repeated with three stories one above another, and on the top a cupola open to the sky for the sun to be seen through. The pillars are all of the Corinthian order†, of a marble as white as snow, and fluted. The edges of the flutes, with the capitals cornished, are

\* Our author seems to be a little out in this place; for it is certain, the ancient Egyptians did not make their year to consist of so many days, unless you'll say, that these people, being very great astronomers, were more exact in their observations.

† It is generally supposed, that the different orders of pillars, as the Doric, the Ionic, Corinthian, &c. came first from the Greeks, as their appellations, being Greek, would make



are all gilt. The inner roofs of the vast galleries on these pillars, are painted with the sun, moon, and stars, expressing their different motions, with hieroglyphicks known only to some few of the chief elders or rulers. The outides of all are doubly gilt, as is the dome or grand concave on the top, open in the middle to the sky. In the middle of this concave is a golden sun, hanging in the void, and supported by golden lines or rods from the edges of the dome. The artificial sun looks down, as if it were shining on a globe of earth, erected on a pedestal altar-wise, opposite to the sun, according to the situation of their climate to that glorious planet; in which globe or earth are inclosed the urns of their deceased ancestors. On the inside of the pillars are the seats of the grandees or elders, to hold their councils, which are all publick. Opposite to the twelve great streets, are so many entrances into the temple, with as many magnificent staircases between the entrances, to go into the galleries or places where they keep the registers of their laws, &c. with gilt balustrades looking down into the temple. On the pedestals of all the pillars were engraven hieroglyphicks and characters known to none but the five chief Pophars, and communicated under the greatest secrecy to the successor of any one of them in case of death, loss of senses, and the like. I presume, the grand secrets and arcana of state, and it may be, of their religion, arts, and sciences, are contained therein. The most improper decorations of the temple, in my opinion, are the flutings of the pillars, which rather look too finical for the august and majestic simplicity affected by these people in other respects.

The fronts of the houses round the grand place are all concave, or segments of circles, except where the great streets meet, which are twelve in number, according to the twelve signs of the zodiac, pointing to the temple in straight lines like rays to the centre. This vast round is set with double rows and circles

of stately cedars before the houses, at an exact distance; as are all the streets on each side, like so many beautiful avenues, which produce a most delightful effect to the eye, as well as conveniency of shade. The cross streets are so many parallel circles round the grand place and temple, as the centre; making greater circles as the town enlarges itself. They build always circular ways till the circle is compleat; then another, and so on. All the streets, as I said, both straight and circular, are planted with double rows of cedars. The middle of the areas between the cuttings of the streets are left for gardens, and other conveniencies, enlarging themselves as they proceed from the centre or grand place: at every cutting of the streets, is a lesser circular space set round with trees, adorned with fountains, or statues of famous men; that, in effect, the whole town is like a prodigious garden, distinguished with temples, pavilions, avenues, and circles of greens; so that it is difficult to give your Reverences a just idea of the beauty of it. I forgot to tell your Reverences, that the twelve great streets open themselves as they lengthen, like the radii of a wheel, so that at the first coming into the town, you have the prospect of the temple and grand place directly before you; and from the temple a direct view of one of the finest avenues and countries in the world. Their principal towns are all built after this form. After they have taken a plan of the place, they first build a temple; then leave the great area or circular market-place, round which they build a circle of houses, and add others as they encrease, according to the foregoing description; ridiculing and contemning other countries, whose towns are generally built in a confused number of houses and streets, without any regular figure. In all the spaces or cuttings of the streets, there are either publick fountains brought by pipes from a mountain at a considerable distance from the town; or, as I

make us believe; but the famous and ancient palace of Persepolis, notwithstanding it's Greek name, where there were hieroglyphicks and inscriptions in characters none could understand, besides other reasons, shew that the invention came from Egypt, or from the ancient Chaldeans, or rather from Seth, Noah, and the ancient Hebrews. It is likewise very observable, that the invention of arts and sciences came from the east, and can be traced no higher than Noah's flood; unless you will allow the fables of Seth, alledged by the learned Josephus in his Antiquities, quoted above. All which is a very natural confirmation of the account given by Moses, against our modern sceptics.

H 2 said

said before, statues of great men holding something in their hands to declare their merit; which, having no wars, is taken either from the invention of arts and sciences, or some memorable action done by them for the improvement and good of their country. These they look upon as more laudable motives, and greater spurs to glory, than all the trophies erected by other nations to the destroyers of their own species. Their houses are built all alike, and low, as I observed before, on account of storms and hurricanes, to which the country is subject; they are all exactly of a height, flat-roofed, with artificial gardens on the top of each\*, full of flowers and aromatic shrubs; so that when you look from any eminence down into the streets, you see all the circles and avenues like another world under you; and if on the level, along the tops of the houses, you are charmed with the prospect of ten thousand different gardens meeting your sight wherever you turn; insomuch, that I believe the whole world besides cannot afford such a prospect. There are a great many other beauties and conveniences, according to the genius of the people; which, were I to mention, would make up a whole volume. I only say, that the riches of the country are immense, which in some measure are all in common, as I shall shew when I come to the nature of their government; the people are the most ingenious and industrious in the world; the governors aiming at nothing but the grandeur and good of the publick, having all the affluence the heart of man can desire, in a place where there has been no war for near three thousand years; there being indeed no enemies but the inhospitable sands around them, and they all consider themselves as brothers of the same stock, living under one common father; so that it is not so much to be wondered at, if they are arrived to such grandeur

and magnificence as persons in our world can scarce believe or conceive.

When the ceremonies for the reception of the Urns were over, religious ceremonies with these people always taking place of the civil†, they proceeded to the inauguration of the Pophar regent, which was performed with no other ceremony, for reasons I shall tell your Reverences afterwards, but placing him in a chair of state, with his face towards the east, on the top of the highest hill in the Nome, to shew that he was to inspect or over-look all, looking towards the temple of the Sun, which stood directly eastward of him, to put him in mind that he was to take care of the religion of his ancestors in the first place. When he was thus placed, three hundred sixty-five of the chief of the Nome, as representatives of all the rest, came up to him, and making a respectful bow, said—‘Eli Pophar,’ which is as much as to say, ‘Hail, father of our nation;’ and he embracing them as a father does his children, answered them with—‘Cali Benim,’ that is, ‘My dear children.’ As many of the women did the same. This was all the homage they paid him, which was esteemed so sacred, as never to be violated. All the distinction of his habit was one great sun on his breast, much bigger than that of any of the rest. The precious stones also, which were set in the white fillet binding his forehead, were larger than ordinary, as were those of the cross circles over his head, terminated on the summit with a large tuft of gold, and a thin plate of gold in the shape of the sun, fastened to the top of it horizontally: all of them, both men and women, wore those fillet-crowns with a tuft of gold, but no sun on the top, except the Pophar.

As soon as the ceremonies and rejoicings were over, which were performed in tents at the publick expence, he was con-

\* The ancient Babylonians had artificial gardens, or *horti pensiles*, on the tops of their houses, as early as the great Semiramis; though Herodotus derives their invention from a later Babylonian queen, who being a Mede by nation, and loving woods, and not being permitted to go out of the palace, had those artificial gardens made to divert her.

† The most polite nations of antiquity, even among the Heathens, gave the preference to religion, before all other considerations: as for the Christian religion, though of late persons of some wit, little judgment, and no morals, call it in question, it is well known, men become more men as they become Christians. The light of faith brought in learning, politeness, humanity, justice, and equity, instead of that ignorance, and a brutal barbarity, that overspread the face of the earth; and the want of it will lead us in time into the same enormities which religion has taught us to forsake; on which account it is the part of all wise governments to countenance and preserve religion.



ducted, with the cheerful acclamations of the people, and the sound of musical instruments, to a magnificent tent in the front of the whole camp, facing the east, which is looked upon as the most honourable, as first seeing the rising sun; and so on, by easy journeys, till he came to the chief town of that Nome. The reason why these ceremonies were performed in the different Nomes, was to shew that they all depended on him, and because the empire was so very populous, it was impossible they could meet at one place. I can't express the caresses I received from them, especially when they found I was descended from the same race by the mother's side, and so nearly related to the Pophar. When I came first into their company, they all embraced me, men and women, with the most endearing tenderness; the young beautiful women did the same, calling me Brother, and catching me in their arms with such an innocent assurance, as if I had been their real brother lost and found again. I can't say but some of them expressed a fondness for me that seemed to be of another sort, and which afterwards gave me a great deal of trouble; but I imputed it to the nature of the sex, who are unaccountably more fond of strangers, whom they know nothing of, than of persons of much greater merit, who converse with them every day. Whether it proceeds from the want of a sufficient solidity in their judgment; or from a levity and fickleness in their nature, or from the spirit of contradiction, which makes them fond of what they mostly should avoid; or thinking that strangers are not acquainted with their defects, or in fine, are more likely to keep their counsel; be that as it will,

their mutual jealousies gave me much uneasiness afterwards. But to say a word or two more of the nature of the people, before I proceed in my relation: as I told your Reverences, they are the handsomest race of people I believe nature ever produced, with this only difference, which some may think a defect, that they are all too much like one another: but if it be a defect, it proceeds from a very laudable cause; that is, from their springing from one family, without any mixture of different nations in their blood\*; they have neither wars, nor traffick with other people, to adulterate their race, for which reason they know nothing of the vices such a commerce often brings along with it. Their eyes are something too small, but not so little as those of the Chinese; their hair is generally black, and inclined to be a little cropped or frizzled† and their complexion brown, but their features are the most exact and regular imaginable; and in the mountainous parts, towards the line, where the air is cooler, they are rather fairer than our Italians‡; the men are universally well shaped, tall, and slender, except through some accidental deformity, which is very rare; but the women, who keep themselves much within doors, are the most beautiful creatures, and the finest shaped in the world, except, as I said, being too much alike. There is such an innocent sweetness in their beauty, and such a native modesty in their countenance, as cannot be described. A bold forwardness in a woman is what they dislike; and, to give them their due, even the women are the most chaste I ever knew, which is partly owing to the early and provident care of their governors. But

\* Tacitus says much the same of the Germans, *'Ipse eorum opinionibus accedo, qui Germaniae populos nullis aliarum nationum connubiis infectos, propriam & sinceram & tanquam sui similem gentem extitisse arbitrantur. TACITUS DE MORIBUS GERMANORUM.* I agree, says he, with their opinion, who think the people of Germany so peculiarly like one another, because they have not been corrupted by marriages with other nations. They were noted in Augustus's time to have blue eyes, as most of the native Germans have to this day. I remember I saw a review of a German regiment in the city of Milan, where almost every one of the common soldiers had blue eyes. No wonder, therefore, if these Africans our author speaks of should be so like one another.

† The ancient Egyptians, according to Herodotus and Bochart, were so.

‡ Though our Italians are something more swarthy than the northern Tramontani; yet our ladies keeping much in the house from their childhood, have very fine skins, and excel all others for delicacy of features§.

§ I fancy Signor Rhedi never saw our English beauties.

as I design to make a separate article of the education of their young people, I shall say no more at present on that head.

The visitations which we made to carry the Urns, gave me an opportunity of seeing the greatest part of their country as soon as I came there; though the Popphar, with a less retinue, and with whom I always was, visited them more particularly afterwards. The country is generally more hilly than plain, and in some parts even mountainous; there are, as I said, vast ridges of mountains, which run several hundred miles, either under or parallel to the equator. These are very cold, and contribute very much to render the climate more temperate than might otherwise be expected, both by refrigerating the air with cooling breezes, which are wafted from thence over the rest of the country, and by supplying the plains with innumerable rivers running both north and south, but chiefly towards the north\*. These hills, and the great woods they are generally covered with, are the occasion of the country's being subject to rains†; there are vast forests and places, which they cut down and destroy as they want room, leaving lesser groves for beauty and variety, as well as use and convenience. The rains and hilliness of the country make travelling a little inconvenient, but then they afford numberless springs and rivulets, with such delicious vales, that adding this to the honesty and innocence of the inhabitants, one would think it a perpetual paradise. The soil is so prodigiously fertile, not only in different sorts of grain, and rice, with a sort of wheat much larger and richer in flower than any Indian wheat I ever saw; but particularly in an inexhaustible variety of fruits, legumes, and eatable herbs of such nourishing juice, and delicious taste, that to provide fruit for such numbers of people is the least of their care. One would think the curse of Adam had scarce reached that part of the world; or that Providence had proportioned the fertility of

the country to the innocence of the inhabitants; not but the industry and ingenuity of the people, joined with their perpetual peace and rest from external, and almost internal broils, contribute very much to their riches and fertility. Their villages being most of them built on the rivulets for manufactures and trades, are not to be numbered. Their hills are full of metallick mines of all sorts, with materials sufficient to work them; silver is the scarcest, and none more plentiful than gold; it comes out oftentimes in great lumps from the mineral rocks, as if it wept out from between the joints, and was thrown off by the natural heat of the earth, or other unknown causes: this gold is more ductile, easier to work, and better for all uses, than that which is drawn from the ore. Their inventions, not only for common conveniences, but even the magnificence of life, are astonishing. When I spoke of their fruits, I should have mentioned a small sort of grape that grows there naturally, of which they make a wine, sharp at first, but which will keep a great many years, mellowing and improving as it is kept; but the choicest grapes, which are chiefly for drying, are cultivated among them, and a very little pains does it. Their wines are more cordial than inebriating; but a smaller sort, diluted with water, makes their constant drink. I don't remember I ever saw any horned beasts in the country, except goats of a very large size, which serve them for milk, though it is rather too rich. Deer there are innumerable, of more different kinds than are in Europe. There is a little beast, seemingly of a species between a roe and a sheep, whose flesh is the most nourishing and delicious that can be tasted; these make a dish in all their feasts, and are chiefly reserved for that end. Their fowl, wild and tame, make the greatest part of their food; as to flesh-meat, of which they don't eat much, it being, as they think, too gross a food. The rivers and lakes are stored with vast quantities

\* It is remarkable, that most springs rise from the north-side of the hills, and more rivers run northward than southward, at least on this side of the line, though the observation does not always hold; the reason may be, for that there are more mists and dews hanging on the north-side, because the sun dries up the moisture on the south-side of the mountains more than on the north; though perhaps all springs don't rise from rain and mists, &c. yet most do.

† It is well known to the naturalists, that great woods and hills collect clouds and vapours, and consequently cause it to rain more there than in other places.



of most exquisite fish, particularly a golden trout, whose belly is of a bright scarlet colour, as delectable to the palate as to the eye. They suppose fish to be more nourishing and easier of digestion than flesh, for which reason they eat much more of it; but having no rivers that run into the sea, they want all of that kind.

Their horses, as I observed before, are but small, but full of mettle and life, and extremely swift. They have a wild air longer than the horse, of all the colours of the rainbow, very strong and profitable for burden and drudgery; but their great carriages are drawn by elks; the dromedaries are for travelling over the sands. The rivers, at least in the plain and low countries, are cut into canals, by which they carry most of their provision and effects all over the country. This is only a small sketch of the nature of the country, because I know these matters don't fall under the cognizance of your Reverences, so much as the account of their religion, morals, customs, laws, and government. Yet I must say that for riches, plenty of all delicacies of life, manufactories, inventions of arts, and every thing that conduces to make this mortal state as happy as is possible, no country in the known world can parallel it; though there are some inconveniences, as your Reverences will observe as I go on with my relation.

Before I come to the remaining occurrences of my own life, in which nothing very extraordinary happened till I came away, unless I reckon the extraordinary happiness I was placed in, as to all things of this life, in one of the most delicious regions of the universe, married to the regent's daughter, whose picture is there before you, and the deplorable loss of her, with my only remaining son, [Here he could not refrain from weeping for some time.] as well as the present state to which I am reduced; though I must own I have received more favourable treatment than could well be expected. I shall give your Reverences a succinct account of their

religion, laws, and customs, which are almost as far out of the common way of thinking of the rest of the world, as their country.

#### OF THEIR RELIGION.

The religion of these people is really idolatry in the main; though as simple and natural as possible for Heathens. They indeed will not acknowledge themselves to be Heathens, in the sense we take the word; that is, worshippers of false gods\*; for they have an abhorrence of idolatry in words as well as the Chinese, but are idolaters in effect, worshipping the material sun, and paying those superstitious rites to their deceased ancestors; of which part of their religion your Reverences have had a full account already. These people however acknowledge one supreme God, maker of all things, whom they call El†, or the most high of all. This they say natural reason teaches them from an argument, though good in itself, yet formed after a different way of arguing from other people: they say all their own wisdom, or that of all the wisest men in the world put together, could never form this glorious world in all its causes and effects, so justly adapted to its respective ends, as it is with respect to every individual species. Therefore the Author of it must be a Being infinitely wiser than all intellectual beings. As for the notion of any thing producing itself, without a prior cause, they laugh at it, and ask why we don't see such effects produced without a cause? Hence they hold one only independent cause, and that there must be one; or nothing could ever be produced. Though they make a god of the sun, they don't say he is independent as to his own being, but that he received it from this El. Some of the wiser sort, when I argued with them, seemed to acknowledge the sun to be a material being created by God; but others think him to be a sort of vicegerent, by whom the

\* This opinion was very ancient, and came originally from Egypt, where Pythagoras learnt it: though perhaps not liking this way of employing it, he altered it quite from what these men held, which is the less irrational of the two. Though, with Signor Gaudentio's leave, I can never believe, these wise men really held that opinion, but only understood it allegorically; I must own, at the same time, some of the ancients did hold the other metempsychosis.

† The old Arabians by Al, or perhaps El, mean something very grand or high, as Al-Cair, for Grand Cair; Alchymy for the highest Chymistry, &c. I wonder Signor Rhedi took no notice of this in his remarks.

El performs every thing, as the chief instrumental cause of all productions. This is the reason that they address all their prayers to the sun, though they allow all power is to be referred originally to the El. The men look upon the moon to be a material being, dependent on the sun; but the women seem to make a goddess of her, by reason of the influence she has over that sex; and foolishly think she brings forth every month when she is at the full, and that the stars are her's and the sun's children. They all of them, both men and women, rest satisfied in their belief, without any disputes or studied notions about a Being so infinitely above them, thinking it much better to adore him in the inscrutability of his essence, in an humble silence, than to be disputing about what they cannot comprehend; all their search is employed in second causes, and the knowledge of nature as far as it may be useful to men.

[*Inquisitor.* I hope you don't deny but that some men may have wrong notions of the Deity, in which they ought to be set right by wiser and more learned men than themselves; by consequence all searches and disputes about the being and nature of God are not to be condemned.]

*Gaudentio.* No, may it please your Reverences; for I presume you only understand me now as representing other people's opinions, not my own, which is entirely conformable to what the Catholick church teaches. I often told the Popbar, to whom I could speak my mind with all the freedom in the world, that as no mortal man could pretend to tell what belonged to the incomprehensibility of God's essence, yet our reason obliging us to believe his Being; it was necessary, by the same reason, that we should be instructed by himself, or some lawgiver immediately commissioned by him, lest we should err in so material a point. This law-giver we Christians believe he did send, by giving us his only Son, who was capable of instructing us in what belonged to the eternal Godhead; that he did not only give us the justest notions we could possibly have, but confirmed the truth of what he said, by such signs and wonders, as none but one sent from God could perform.

[*Inquisitor.* Go on.]

When I said, they address all their

prayers, and most of the external actions of their worship, to the sun, it is on account of their believing him to be the physical cause of the production of all things by his natural influence; which, though the wiser sort of them, when you came to reason more closely, will grant to be derived from the El, and some of them will own him to be a mere material being, moved by a prior cause, yet the generality of them don't reflect on this; but are really guilty of idolatry in worshipping a mere creature. Nevertheless, as to the moral effects of the universe, or the free actions of men with respect to equity, justice, goodness, uprightness, and the like, which they allow to be properly the duty of rational creatures, and of much greater consequence than the physical part of the world: this I say, they all refer to the supreme Being, whole will it is they should be merciful, good, just, and equitable to all, agreeable to the just notions of the all-wise Author of their existence, whose supreme reason being incapable of any irregular bias, ought to be the rule of his creatures that depend on him, and are in some measure partakers of his perfections. They confirm this notion by a very proper comparison; as for example, to act contrary to the laws of nature in physical productions, is to produce monstrous births, &c. so to act contrary to the ideas of the supreme reason in moral cases, must be a great deformity in his sight.

I own I was charmed with this natural way of reasoning, and asked them further, whether they believed the supreme Being troubled himself about the moral part of the world, or the free actions of men? They seemed surprized at the question, and asked me, whether I thought it was possible he should leave the noblest part out of his care, when he took the pains (that was their expression) to create the least insect according to the most exact rules of art and knowledge, beyond all that the art of man can come up to? I asked them again, what were the rules, which it was his will that free agents, such as man for instance, should follow in the direction of their lives? They told me, reason, justice, and equity, in imitation of the supreme reason in him—  
 'For,' said they, 'can you think the supreme Being can approve of the enormous actions committed by men; or that any vile practices can be according to the just ideas of his reason; if not



not, they must be contrary to the best light of reason not only in God but man, and therefore liable to be punished by the just Governor of all.

I submit these notions to your Reverences better judgment; but I thought them very extraordinary for persons who had nothing but the light of nature to direct them: it is pity but they had been as right in their more remote inferences as they were in these principles. The sum therefore of the theoretical part of their religion, is—

First, That the El is the supreme intellectual, rational, and most noble of all beings; that it is the duty of all intellectual beings to imitate the just laws of reason in him, otherwise they depart from the supreme rule of all their actions, since what is contrary to the most perfect reason in God, must be contrary to our own, and by consequence of a deformity highly blameable in his sight; all their prayers, and whatever they ask of this supreme Being is, that they may be just and good as he is.

Secondly, That the sun is the chief, at least instrumental cause of their bodies, and all other physical effects. Your Reverences know better than I can inform you, that this is wrong: to him they address their prayers for the preservation of their lives, the fruits of the earth, &c.

Thirdly, That their parents are the more immediate instrumental cause of their natural being, which they derive partly from the El, and partly from the sun; and they reverence them the more on this account, as being the vicegerents of both, and believe them to be immortal, as to the spiritual or intellectual part, and consequently able and ready to assist them according to the respect they shew them by reverencing their tombs and honouring their memories. Though, upon a nicer examination, I found that the superstitious worship they pay to their deceased ancestors was as much a politick as a religious institution; because their government being patriarchal, this inviolable respect they shew to their parents makes them obey their elders or governors, not only with the most dutiful observance, but even with a filial love and alacrity.

\* This notion of the transmigration of the souls of brutes into men and women in this life, particularly into the latter, was not unknown to the ancients, though explained something after a different way: witness a remaining fragment of Simonides, a very ancient Greek poet, to that effect.

There are some other points of less consequence, and reducible to these three heads, which your Reverences will observe in the course of my relation. As for the immortality of the soul, rewards and punishments in another life, they believe both, though they have an odd way of explaining them. They suppose, without any hesitation, that the soul is a being independent of matter, as to its essence, having faculties of thinking, willing, and chusing, which mere matter, let it be spun ever so fine, and actuated by the quickest and the most subtle motion, can never be capable of; but their notion of their pre-existence with the El, before they were sent into bodies, is very confused. The rewards and punishments in the next life they believe will chiefly consist in this; that in proportion as their actions have been conformable to the just ideas of the supreme Being in this life, partaking still more and more of his infinite wisdom, so their souls will approach still nearer to the beautiful intelligence of their divine model in the next. But if their actions in this life have been inconsistent with the supreme reason in God, they shall be permitted to go on for ever in that inconsistency and disagreement, till they become so monstrously wicked and enormous, as to become abominable even to themselves.

#### OF THEIR OPINION CONCERNING THE TRANSMIGRATION OF SOULS, AND THE SCIENCE OF PHYSIOG- NOMY.

I found the wisest of them held the Metempsychosis, or the transmigration of souls\*, not as a punishment in the next life, as some of the ancient Heathen philosophers did, but as a punishment in this; the chief punishment in the next was explained above. This transmigration of souls is quite different from the received notion of the word. Instead of believing, as the ancients did, that the souls of wicked and voluptuous men, after their deaths, transmigrated into beasts according to the similitude of their vicious inclinations, till, passing through

one animal into another, they were permitted to commence men again; I say, these people, instead of believing this, hold a Metempsychosis of quite a different nature; not that the souls of men enter into brutes, but that the souls of brutes enter into the bodies of men even in this life. They say, for example, that the bodies of men and women are such delicate habitations, that the souls of brutes are perpetually envying them, and contriving to get into them; that, unless the divine light of reason be perpetually attended to, these brutal souls steal in upon them, and chain up the rational soul, so that it shall not be able to govern the body, unless it be to carry on the designs of the brutal soul, or at best only make some faint efforts to get out of it's slavery. I took it at first, that this system was merely allegorical, to shew the similitude between the passions of men when not directed by reason, and those of brutes. But upon examination, I found it was their opinion, that this transmigration did really happen; insomuch, that in my last journey with the Popbar into Egypt, when he saw the Turks, or other strange nations, nay, several Armenian and European Christians, he would say to me in his own language, There goes a hog, there goes a lion, a wolf, a fox, a dog, and the like; that is, they believe the body of a voluptuous man is possessed by the soul of a hog, of a lustful man by that of a goat, a treacherous man by that of a fox, a tyrannical man by that of a wolf, and so of the rest. This belief is instilled into them so early, and with so much care, that it is of very great benefit to keep them within the bounds of reason. If a young man finds himself inclined to any of these passions, he addresses himself immediately to some person whom he thinks of superior wisdom, who assures him that the soul of some certain brute is endeavouring to surprize and captivate his rational soul, and take possession of it's place. This makes them always watchful, and upon their guard against their own passions, not to be surprized by such a merciless enemy. Their immediate remedy is, to look steadfastly at the divine light that shines within them, and compare it with it's original, till by the force of it's rays they drive away those brutal souls, which, as soon as fully discovered in their treacherous attacks (for they come on, say they, by stealth, not daring to attack

that divine light directly) are easily repulsed, before they have obtained possession, though it costs a great deal of pains to dislodge them when once they are got in. The fear of being abandoned to the slavery of these brutal souls is so deeply imprinted in them from their infancy, that they look upon the temperance and regularity of their lives to be in a great measure owing to this doctrine. The same notions hold with their women; into whom their mothers and governesses instil them, as the wise men do to the men: only they believe the brutal souls that enter into women are of a different species from those that enter into men. They say, for instance, that of aameleon makes them false and inconsistent; that of a peacock, coquettish and vain; that of a tigress, cruel and ill-natured; and so of the rest. They add another difference between men and women, that when these brutal souls are entered into them, they are much harder to be driven out from them than from the men; besides that these brutal souls will lurk undiscovered in women a great while, and are often scarce discernible, till the age of five and twenty or thirty; whereas in most men it discovers itself presently after it's entrance.

It was on account of this doctrine, as I found by repeated observations, that they were so addicted to the study of Physiognomy, laying down rules to know by the countenance, the lines of the face, and unguarded looks of men, whether the brutal soul has got possession or not, in order to apply proper remedies. This science, however uncertain and doubtful among Christians, (who have greater assistance of grace and virtue to resist their passions, those treacherous invaders) is brought to greater perfection and certitude than one would imagine, among such of these people, who, having no such helps, take little care to cultivate and moderate their vicious inclinations, unless they are apprized and forewarned of the danger. Therefore their wise men, whenever they come in company of the younger sort, consider attentively with themselves all the lineaments of the countenance, complexions, motions, habit of body, constitution, tone of the voice, make and turn of the face, nose, ears, &c. but particularly they observe the structure and glances of the eye, with innumerable signs proceeding from it, by which they pretend to discover those passions.



passions. I say, they pretend to know by these what brutal soul lays siege to the rational soul, or whether it has already taken possession of it's post. If they are strangers, they prudently take care to avoid their company, or at least are on their guard not to have any dealings with them in matters obnoxious to the brutal soul they think them possessed by. But if the person attacked by these brutal souls be of their own nation, they immediately forewarn such to be on his guard, by which, and the dread they have entertained from their youth of these brutal enemies, they are kept in such order, that, as I said, I never saw such moral people in my life. The worst is, they are extremely inclined to be proud, and have too great a value for themselves, despising in their hearts all other nations, as if they were nothing but brutes in human shape\*. However, their wise men take as much care as possible to correct this fault, as far as the ignorance of the law of grace will allow; by putting them often in mind of the miseries and infirmities of human life, which being real evils, must be in punishment of some fault; that the most perfect are liable to death, which makes no distinction between them and the rest of the world. Besides, humility, and a commiseration for the defects of others, is one of the rays of the divine light that is to guide them. From such documents and instructions of the wiser sort, though they do not care to have any correspondence with other people, seeing them so possessed with those brutal souls, yet they are a most courteous and compassionate people in all their behaviour.

#### OF THEIR LAWS AND CUSTOMS.

Over and above what has been said already of the nature and customs of these people, I shall here observe that their laws are very few in number; but then they are prodigious exact in the observance of them. I have often heard the Pophar, contrary to his customs make very severe reflections on the lawyers of other countries, who make laws upon laws, and add precepts upon precepts, till the endless

number of them makes the fundamental part to be forgotten; leaving nothing but a confused heap of explanations; which may cause ignorant people to doubt, whether there is really any thing meant by the laws, or not. 'If I forbid my son,' says he, 'to do any wrong to any one, what need is there of reckoning up all the particulars by which a person may be wronged? Shew but the fact on both sides, any man of sense and equity can tell, if there be any wrong done. For if you multiply an infinity of circumstances, it will be much more difficult to decide what is right, or what is wrong, than if you precisely and absolutely forbid all injury whatsoever.' It is almost incredible, with what nicety and equity, and how soon, their judges determine the few disputes they have among them. To weigh the merits of the cause by the weight of the purse, would be counted by them one of the greatest enormities. There are no courts for disputes of this nature; all is done by laying the case before their public assemblies, or before any one or two prudent and just men; and the affair is finally decided at once. All the law for Meum and Tuum among them is—'Thou shalt do no wrong to any one,' without entering into any further niceties. 'Such explanatory suppositions,' say they, 'oftener shew people how they may ingeniously contrive to do an injury, than how to avoid it.'

Their laws therefore are nothing but the first principles of natural justice, explained and applied by the elders, in the public hearing of all who have a mind to come in when the facts are brought into dispute.

The worship of the Deity, and that excessive and even superstitious reverence they pay to their parents, both alive and dead, is so carefully inculcated to them from their infancy, that there is no need of any written law to enforce it. They look on a man to be possessed with some brutal soul, who should pretend to call in question or neglect this duty.

There is a positive law among them, not to shed human blood voluntarily†. They carry this fundamental law of nature

\* The Chinese, whom I have proved to be descended from the first Egyptians, are subject to the like pride and contempt of other people, saying that all other nations have but one eye, whereas nature has given them two: signifying thereby, how much wiser they think themselves than other men.

† These people descending from Misraim, who might know the patriarch Noah, and might have learnt by tradition the punishment of Cain for the murder of his brother Abel,

ture to such a height, that they never put any one to death, even for murder, which very rarely happens; that is, once in several ages. If it appears that a person has really murdered another, a thing they think almost impossible, the person convicted is shut up from all commerce of men, with provisions to keep him alive as long as nature allows. After his death, the fact is proclaimed, as it was when they shut him up, over all the Nomes. His name is blotted out of their genealogies; then his dead body is mangled just in the same manner as he killed the innocent, and afterwards burnt to ashes, which are carried up to the highest part of the deserts, and then tossed up into the air, to be carried away by the winds blowing from their own country: nor is he ever more to be reckoned as one of their race; and there is a general mourning observed throughout the kingdom for nine days.

There is also an express law against adultery and whoredom, which are likewise punished after death. If persons are caught in adultery, they are shut up apart till death; then they are exposed naked as they were surprized, and the body of the woman treated after the most ignominious manner for three days. After which they are burnt, and their ashes dispersed as before\*. Whoredom is only punished, in the man, by chaining him to a *he-goat*, and the woman to a *salt bitch*, and leading them thus round the Nome. All in the respective Nome, men and women, are to be present at the more signal punishments, and parents are obliged to explain to their children the wickedness and horror of the crime, for a warning for the future. I forgot to tell your Reverences, that if the woman brings forth by adultery, the child is preserved, till

able to be carried with them when they go into Egypt, and there given to some stranger, with ample provision for its maintenance, but never to be heard of more †.

There is also one particular I should have mentioned, relating to injustice. If, for example, the elders find there has been any considerable injustice done, the criminal is obliged to restore nine times the value. If any one be convicted to have imposed upon the judges, he is to be sent out to the skirts of the country, to live by himself for a time proportionable to his guilt, with a mark on his forehead, for all persons to avoid him, lest he should instil his principles into others. All other matters are regulated rather by custom than by laws, which will be seen when I come to the form of their government, and other particular institutions.

#### OF THEIR FORM OF GOVERNMENT.

Their form of government, as I had the honour to acquaint your Reverences before, is patriarchal, which they preserve inviolably, being the most tenacious people in the world of their primitive institutions. But the order of the succession is extremely particular, in order to keep up the quality of brotherhood and dignity as exact as they can. Your Reverences, I presume, remember that they all sprung from one family, (and lived as such when they were driven out of Egypt) the head of which was priest of the Sun. This government they had observed ever since Misraim took possession of that land for his habitation. But when they were secured from all the world in the first vale, as was mentioned before, they established that form of government after a particular manner. The

carried that opinion to an excess. Be these people who they will, or not be at all, I cannot but observe how *inexcusable* the wickedness of men was from the beginning, without blaming God, as some libertines do, for leaving them in ignorance.

The wicked Ham, or Cham, was in the ark with Noah, and lived many years before the deluge, (the truth of which is attested by ancient history, as well as by sacred Scripture) and saw the dreadful punishment inflicted on the world for sin; could not he have learnt godliness, and the reward for it, of his father Noah? Could not Ham have taught his own children, they theirs; and so on? But they corrupted their own ways, and thereby shewed the necessity of a revelation.

\* See the learned Bishop of Meaux's *Universal History*, concerning the Egyptians, Par. iii. and of their punishments after death.

† With our author's leave, this is not such a just and compassionate part, to turn innocent children out among people whose customs they had such a horror of, only for their parents faults. For though the maxim be good, *Beware a Breed*; yet the care they took of their youth, and the moral instruction they gave them, might make them abhor the crimes of their parents,



first Pophar settling in that vale with his five sons, and as many daughters, with their husbands, governed them during life, as father or patriarch of them all. Their prodigious veneration for their parents, and separation from all other people, render this form infinitely more practicable than can well be imagined. As they were children of one man, the interest of the whole was the interest of every particular. All the nation of the first transmigration were children, grandchildren, or great grand-children of the good old man who conducted them thither. Having no wars, or voyages at sea, nor commerce with the distempers as well as vices of other nations, who generally differ in their way of living as well as their climate; having nothing of this, I say, to destroy their people, they not only increased prodigiously, without plurality of wives, but by that and their almost primitive way of living, they preserved their lives to a great old age, most of them living above a hundred years, and some above a hundred and fifty. The first Pophar (say their memoirs) lived till an hundred and fifty-five, and his eldest son his successor, more robust still, to a hundred and sixty. Presently after his establishment in the first vale, he divided his small dominions into five Nomes, or governments, under his five sons, as was observed before. All were to be subordinate to the eldest; but it was only a patriarchal subordination, relating to the whole. The other governors, and indeed all fathers of families, were entire ministers of the laws in their respective families; but these last were liable to the inspection of the more immediate superiors, and all to that of the Grand Pophar, assisted with such a number of counsellors as were established afterwards. To give your Reverences a more distinct idea of this wonderful government, it will come much to the same, whether we descend from the chief Pophar to every respective family, or from these upwards. The particularities of the succession I shall consider afterwards. However, it will be easier seen, if we take them when their numbers were not so great, at the first beginning of their establishment.

The Pophar, then, having distinguished the bounds of every Nome, I mean in their first transmigration, each son took possession of it for himself and posterity. While each son's children were unmarried, they continued under the govern-

ment of their father, who made use of as much land as was sufficient for the conveniencies and pleasures, as well as the necessities of life. But as soon as any son was married, or at least when he could be called a father of a family, the father, with consent of the Pophar, allotted him likewise a sufficient quantity for the same end: so they spread and enlarged themselves as it were from the centre to a farther extent, much in the same manner as they build their towns, till they had occupied the whole Nome. Here you will say, these people must in process of time increase *ad infinitum*, without lands sufficient to maintain them. This was really the case in the first plantation, which was so entirely occupied by them, that if the famous Pophar, who brought them into the vast continent they now enjoy, had not made that glorious discovery with the danger of his life, they must have returned into Egypt, or eat up one another; but where they are at present, they have room enough, notwithstanding their numbers, for several ages. However, I often represented to the Pophar, that it must come to that at last: the thought made him uneasy at first, and at length put him on a further discovery, as your Reverences will see in the sequel. But such vast numbers of them betaking themselves to arts and manufactures, and the country being so prodigiously fertile, there does not appear any great difficulty in that respect. Of all arts, they look upon agriculture as the first in dignity next to the liberal sciences, since that nourishes all the rest; but it comes so easily, and the fruits and legumes are so rich and delicious, that they have little more trouble than to gather them: besides, having two summers and two springs, each different season produces it's peculiar fruits. But to return to the idea of their government, each father of a family governs all his descendants, married or unmarried, as long as he lives. If his sons are fathers, they have a subordinate power under him; if he dies before he comes to such an age, the eldest son, or the eldest uncle, takes care of them, till they are sufficient to set up a family of themselves. The father, on extraordinary occasions, is liable to be inspected by five of the most prudent heads of that district; these by five of the five adjacent districts chosen by common consent; these last, by the heads of the five Nomes, and all the Nomes by the Grand Pophar assisted with

with three hundred and sixty-five elders or senators, chosen out of every Nome. What is most particular in this government is, that they are all absolute in some manner, and independent, as looking on themselves as all equal in birth; yet in an entire dependency of natural subordination or eldership, which runs through the whole oeconomy, as your Reverences will see when I come to the succession. They are in the same manner lords and proprietors of their own possessions, yet the Pophar and governors can allot and dispose of all for the publick emolument, because they look on him to be as much the father of all, as the immediate natural father is of his proper children, and even in some sense their natural father by right of eldership, because they sprung originally from one man, whom the Grand Pophar represents. To this, that natural, or politick, or even superstitious respect they shew to their parents, contributes so much, that they never dispute, but, on the contrary, revere the regulations made by their superiors; being satisfied that they are not only just and good, but that it is their own act, since it is done by virtue of a subordination to which they all belong.

The succession of eldership has something very particular, and even intricate in it. To express at the same time the superiority of the elder son, and the equality of independence, I shall endeavour to explain to your Reverences, as well as I can, the right thereof. The eldest son of the first Pophar is always Grand Pophar, when he is of age to govern, which, as I said, is at fifty at soonest; but if the direct line fails, not the uncle's son, nor any one in that Nome, but the right heir of the next Nome; and so of all the five Nomes. If they should fail in all the Nomes, the right heir of the second son of the first Nome, and so of all the rest. This, they say, has happened several times since their first establishment, which is not much to be wondered at, if they are so ancient as they pretend. Thus, though the Grand Popharship be confined to the eldest in some sense, in effect it belongs to them all; but if the next heir be a minor, as he is always judged to be till he is fifty years of age, the eldest of that age, of the second son of the next Nome, is regent till the heir be out of his minority, and so on: insomuch that, in order to divide the superiority among them as equally as possible, he who has the next right to be Grand Pophar, is never to

be regent. All other publick officers, teachers of arts and sciences, overseers of all the publick employments, &c. are constituted by the Grand Pophar and Sanhedrim, with associates of every Nome.

#### MORE PARTICULARS OF THEIR PUBLICK OECONOMY.

Though, as I said, the Pophar is in some sense the proprietor of the whole country, as head of the government and chief patriarch; yet the paradox of this government consists in this, that they are joint lords, acknowledging no inequality, but merely eldership, and the respect due to dignitaries, which they esteem as their own, or redounding to themselves, because they all give their consent to their election for the publick good. In a word, the whole country is only one great family governed by the laws of nature, with proper officers, constituted by the whole, for order and common preservation. Every individual looks on himself as a part of that great family. The Grand Pophar is the common father, esteeming all the rest as children and brothers, calling them universally by that name, as they all call one another brothers, bartering and exchanging their commodities as one brother would do with another; and not only so, but they all join in building their towns, publick places, schools, &c. laying up all the stores and provisions, over and above the present consumption, in publick places, for the use of the whole, with overseers and inspectors, constituted by common consent, who are to take care chiefly, that no disorder be committed. Thus every one contributes to all publick expences, feasts, and the like, which on some occasions are extremely magnificent; affecting external grandeur in all respects. Thus also every man, wherever he goes, enters into what house he pleases, as if it were his own home; this they are doing perpetually throughout the whole country, rather visiting than merchandizing; exchanging the rarities of each respective place with those of other parts, just like friends making presents to one another; so that all the roads are like streets of great towns, with people going backward and forward perpetually. They do this the more frequently to keep up a correspondence between the Nomes, lest distance of place should cause any forgetfulness of their being of one family. The



The plenty of the country affords them every thing that nature can call delightful, and that with such ease, that infinite numbers are employed in trades and arts, according to their genius or inclinations; which, by their continual peace and plenty, their long establishment in one country, and under one form of government, the natural ingenuity of the people, the so early knowledge of arts, which they brought with them out of Egypt; by the improvements their wise men make in them from time to time; and from what they learn when they pay their visits to their deceased ancestors, they have brought to prodigious perfection. One may say of them, that they are all masters, and all servants; every one has employment; generally speaking, the younger sort wait on the elders, changing their offices as is thought proper by their superiors, as in a well-regulated community. All their children universally are taught at the publick expence, as children of the government, without any distinction but that of *personal merit*. As the persons deputed for that end judge of their genius, or any particular inclination, they are disposed afterwards to those arts and callings for which they seem most proper; the most sublime sciences are the most in respect with them, and are chiefly the employment of their great men and governors, contrary to the custom of other countries; the reason of which is, because these being never chosen till they are fifty years of age, they have had more time to improve themselves, and generally are persons of more extensive capacities. They rightly suppose, that persons who excel others in the most rational sciences, are not only fittest to govern a rational people, but also most capable of making themselves masters of what they undertake; not but such men, knowing the governors are chosen out of that rank, have an eye in their studies to the rules and arts of governing, which are communicated at a distance by them, according to the talents they remark in the subjects. They do not do this out of any spirit of ambition, employments being rather an honorary trouble than an advantage; but for the real good of the whole. Agriculture, as I said, has the next place in honour after the liberal arts; and next to that, those arts are most esteemed which are most necessary;

the last of all are those which are of least use, though perhaps the most delightful.

Since every one is employed for the common good more than for themselves, perhaps persons may apprehend that this gives a check to industry, not having that spur of private interest, hoarding up riches, or aggrandizing their families, as is to be found in other nations. I was apprehensive of this myself, when I came to understand their government; but so far from it, that possibly there is not such an industrious race of people in the universe. They place their great ambition in the *grandeur of the country*, looking on those as narrow and mercenary spirits, who can prefer a part to the whole: they pride themselves over other nations on that account, each man having a proportionable share in the publick grandeur, the love of glory and praise seems to be their greatest passion. Besides, their wise governors have such ways of stirring up their emulation by publick honours, harangues, and panegyrics in their assemblies, with a thousand other ways of shew and pageantry, and this for the most minute arts, that were it not for that fraternal love ingrafted in them from their infancy, they would be in danger of raising their emulation to too great a height. Those who give indications of greater wisdom and prudence in their conduct than others, are marked out for governors, and gradually raised according to their merit. Whoever invents a new art has a statue erected, according to the usefulness of it, with his name and family inserted in publick records. Whoever distinguishes himself by any particular excellency, has suitable marks of distinction paid him on publick occasions, as garlands, crowns, acclamations, songs, or hymns in his praise, &c. It is incredible how such rewards as these encourage industry and arts in minds so affected with glory as these people are: on the other hand, their greatest punishments, except for capital crimes, which are punished as above, are by publick disgraces.

But now I am speaking of their youth: as they look upon them as seeds of the commonwealth, which, if corrupted in the bud, will never bring forth fruit, so their particular care is laid out in their education, in which I believe they excel all nations. One cannot say there is one in the whole nation who may be called

called an idle person, though they indulge their youth very much in proper recreations, endeavouring to keep them as gay as they can, because they are naturally inclined to gravity. Besides daily recreations, they have set times and seasons for publick exercises, as riding, vaulting, running, but particularly hunting wild beasts, and fishing for crocodiles and alligators, in their great lakes, which I shall describe to your Reverences on another occasion; yet they are never suffered to go alone, that is, a company of young men together without grave men and persons in authority along with them, who are a guard to them in all their actions; nay, they are never suffered to sleep together, each lying in a single bed, though in a publick room, with some grave person in the same room with them. Their women are kept much in the same manner, to prevent inconveniencies which I shall touch upon when I come to the education of their women: and this so universally, that as there are no idle companions to lead them into extravagancies, so there are no idle and loose women to be found to corrupt their minds. Their whole time, both for men and women, is taken up in employments or publick recreations, which, with the early care to instruct them in the fundamental principles of the morality of the country, prevents all those disorders of youth we see elsewhere. Hence too comes that strength of body and mind in their men, and modest blooming beauty in their women; so that among this people nature seems to have kept up to it's primitive and original perfection. Besides, that universal likeness in them, proceeding from their conjugal fidelity and exclusion of all foreign mixture in their breed, (where all the lineaments of their ancestors, direct and collateral, meet at last in their offspring) gives the parents the comfort of seeing their own bloom and youth renewed in their children; though, in my opinion, this universal likeness is rather a defect; not but the treasures of nature are so inexhaustible, that there are some distinguishing beauties in every face. Their young men and women meet frequently, but then it is in their publick assemblies, with grave people mixt along with them. At all publick exercises the women are placed in view to see and be seen, in order to

inspire the young men with emulation in their performances. They are permitted to be decently familiar on those publick occasions, and can chuse their lovers respectively, according to their liking, there being no such thing as dowries or interest, but mere personal merit in the case; but more of this afterwards, when I shall speak more particularly of the education of their women and marriages. This is a short sketch of the government and oeconomy of a people, who are as much distinguished from the customs of others, as they are separated by their habitation and country.

[*Inquisitor.* You seem, Sir, to have a very high idea of this patriarchal government, and look upon it according to the law of nature; I hope you don't deny but persons may be obliged by the law of nature to obey their forms of government, as well as a patriarchal one?

*Gaudentio.* No, Reverend Fathers, by no means, I don't enter into comparisons, but relate matter of fact. It is not to be doubted, but different forms of government may be proper for different nations; and where once a form of government is lawfully established, persons are obliged to obey, to avoid anarchy and confusion; as for example, whoever should endeavour to subvert a monarchical government once lawfully established, must break in upon the laws of right and justice, which are obligations of the law of nature.

*Inquisitor.* Read on.

*Second Inquisitor.* Under favour, I must ask him a question or two first. I think, Signor Gaudentio, you make the grand Pophar to be both prince and priest; that is, to be vested both with temporal and spiritual power: is it your opinion that the spiritual power is subject to the temporal?

*Gaudentio.* I speak of Heathens, Reverend Fathers, and a Heathenish worship, where the grand Pophar was both prince of the people, and chief priest of the Sun by his place. I acknowledge no head of the church but his Holiness, as most agreeable to the primitive institution of our religion.

*Here he went on in his exalted notions of the sovereign Pontiff, partly being a Roman Catholic, but chiefly, in all appear-*



*appearance, because he was before the Inquisition; for which reason the publisher thought fit to leave it out.*

Gaudentio. Is it your Reverences pleasure that I go on with my history?  
Inquisitor. Ay, ay, read on.]

#### THE EDUCATION OF THEIR WOMEN, AND MARRIAGES.

As for their women, the Popbar told me it was what gave them the most trouble of any thing in their whole government; that by their records, their ancestors had held frequent consultations after what manner they were to be managed, there being great difficulties to be feared either from allowing them liberty, or keeping them under restraint. If you allow them liberty, you must depend on their honour, or rather care, for your own; if you keep them under confinement, they will be sure to revenge themselves the first opportunity, which they will find in spite of all you can do. The rules, said he, by which men are governed, won't hold with women; solid reason, if you can make them sensible of it, will some time or other have an influence on most men; whereas humour is what predominates in women. Hit that, you have them; miss it, you do nothing; and yet they are so far from being an indifferent thing in the commonwealth, that much more depends on the right management of them than people imagine. Licentiousness of youth draws innumerable misfortunes on any government; and what greater incentives for licentiousness than lewd women, whether common prostitutes, wanton ladies, or adulteresses? For all loose women belong to one of these classes. Our women, continued he, are extremely beautiful, as you see; our men strong and vigorous; conjugal fidelity, therefore, and chastity, must be the strongest bonds to keep them in their duty. As for our young men, we keep them in perpetual employment; and animate them to glory by every thing that can move generous minds; with our women, we endeavour the same by ways adapted to their genius. But our greatest care of all, is to make marriage esteemed by both parties the happiest state that can be wished for in this life. This we believe to depend

on making the woman, rather than the man, happy and fixed in her choice; because, if the person be imposed upon her, contrary to her own inward inclination, dislike, or revenge, or perhaps a more shameful passion, will make her seek for relief elsewhere; and where women are not virtuous, men will be lewd. We therefore permit the woman to chuse entirely for herself, and the men to make their addresses where they please: but the woman is to distinguish her choice by some signal occasion or other, and that too not without great difficulties on both sides, which being surmounted, they esteem themselves arrived at the happy part of all their wishes. The most ardent and tried love determines the choice: this endears the man to her on the one hand, and the difficulty of finding any woman who has not the same inducements to love her husband, leaves him no encouragement for his lawless desires among married women; and the single women are either so early engaged with their lovers, or so possessed with the notion that a married man cannot belong to her, that his suit would be entirely vain. In a word, we do not allow the least temporal interest to interfere in the choice, but rather wish our young people should be mutually attracted by esteem and affection. The whole business of courtship is to prove their constancy, and to make them so: when we are well assured of this, all obstacles are removed. We found this method to have the least inconveniencies of any, and the best means to preserve conjugal fidelity, on which the good of families so much depends.

When our nation, continued he, began to grow very populous, and the country full of riches and plenty; the promiscuous conversation of our young men and women, with some neglect on the part of the governors, was the occasion that the bounds of our innocent ancestors were not sufficient to keep them in their duty; strange disorders were crept among our youth of both sexes; our men grew enervated and effeminate; our women wanton and enflamed; unnatural abuses wasted their constitution; so that we lost thousands of our young men and women, without knowing what was the cause: even in the married state, the

women began not to be contented with one man; on which account our ancestors had almost resolved to keep all our women from the sight of men till they were married, and then to deliver them up to their husbands, who should have a despotick right over them, as I am informed they have in other nations. They imagined this to be a certain means to ascertain the legitimacy of their children, and to prevent jealousy, the first cause, however disguised, of the man's dislike to his wife. Others objected against this severe discipline, and said, it was making the most beautiful part of the creation mere slaves, or at least mere properties; that it was to give a fatal check to the glory of a free people, to deprive the husband of the voluntary love of his moiety, and take away the most endearing part of conjugal happiness. To this the severer side answered, that the women were come to such a pass, that their abuses of liberty shewed they were scarce capable of making a proper use of it. However, a medium betwixt both carried it for that time. The injuries of the marriage state, and the corruption of youth, which was the occasion of it, were judged to be of such consequence to the commonwealth, that, resolved to put a stop to it at any rate, all the wise men and governors consulted together, and resolved unanimously to put the laws I mentioned against adultery and whoredom in execution, causing proclamations to be made for that intent throughout the whole empire. All corruptors of youth of both sexes were shut up immediately, with the regulations I related above, of having grave persons always in the company of young people, whether men or women. They married off all that were of age for it, as fast as they could; but quickly found the number of inhabitants did not increase as usual, their native vigour being exhausted or debilitated by their unnatural abuses——

[Some paragraphs seem wanting in this part of Gaudentio's narrative, which doubtless were very curious.]

There is one peculiar method allowed by them, in which they differ from all other nations; for whereas these last endeavour to preserve their young people from love, lest they should throw themselves away, or make disadvantageous

matches; the former, having no intersted views in that respect, encourage a generous and honourable love, and make it their care to fix them in the strictest bonds they can, as soon as they judge, by their age and constitution, of their inclinations: this they do sometimes by applauding their choice, but mostly by raising vast difficulties, contrived on purpose both to try and enhance their constancy. They have histories and stories of heroick examples of fidelity and constancy in both sexes; but particularly for the young women, by which they are taught rather to suffer ten thousand deaths than violate their plighted faith. One may say they are a nation of faithfull overs; the longer they live together, the more their friendship encreases, and infidelity in either sex is looked upon as a capital crime. Add to this, that being all of the same rank and quality, except the regard paid to eldership and publick employments, nothing but personal merit, and a liking of each other, determines the choice; there must be signal proofs produced that the woman prefers the man before all others, as his service must be distinguished in the same manner. Where this is approved of by the governors or elders, if the woman insists on her demands, it is an inviolable law that that man must be her husband. Their hands are first joined together in publick, then they clasp each other in the closest embrace, in which posture the elder of the place, to shew that this union is never to be dissolved, takes a circle of the finest tempered steel, woven with flowers, and first lays it over their necks, as they are thus clasping each other, then round their waists, and last of all round their breasts, or hearts, to signify that the ardency of their love must terminate in an indissoluble friendship; which is followed by infinite acclamations and congratulations of the whole assembly. I believe the world cannot furnish such examples of conjugal chastity as are preserved between them by these means. Widowers and widows never marry single persons, and but rarely at all, except left young; when they are to gain each other as before. By such prudent precautions, infinite disorders and misfortunes to the commonwealth are prevented, proceeding not only from disproportioned and forced marriages, but from the licentiousness of idle persons, who either marry for money,



money, or live on the spoil of other people, till they can get an advantageous march. This is a short sketch of their government and customs, which I thought would not be unacceptable to your Reverences, though a great many other customs of less moment will occur in the sequel of my life, to which I now return.

The Popbar regent made choice of me for one of his attending companions, with the other young men who came home with us; he had a great many other attendants and officers, deputed by common consent to wait his orders as regent; these were changed every five years, as were those attending the governors of the other Nomes, on account of improvement; for, being all of equal quality, they endeavour to give them as equal an education as is possible, changing their employments, and waiting on one another in their turns, by the appointment of their respective governors, except those whose genius or choice determines them to arts and sciences, according to their economy described before. I must only add, that having such a high value for their race, no one thinks it a disgrace to perform the meanest offices, being all to be attended in like manner themselves when it comes to their turns, each looking on the honours done to every branch of their government as their own. Hence all their publick ranks and ceremonies are the most magnificent that can be imagined; there is scarce any thing done, even in entertainments between the private tribes, but there are proper officers deputed for it, and all expences paid out of the common stock, with deputies and overseers for every thing. Their houses are all open to one another, with a long gallery, which runs from the end of one range of building to the other. The women's apartments join together; with the men of each family joining to their own women, that is, their wives, sisters, and daughters. The women have their subaltern officers like the men. The first apartment of every break of a street belongs to the men, then the women's belonging to them; then the women of the next family joining to them, and their men beyond them, and so on, with large publick halls at proper distances for publick assemblies; so that every thing they do is a sort of paradox to us, for they are the freest and yet strictest

people in the world; the whole nation, as I observed before, being more like one universal regular college, or community, than any thing else. The women are perpetually employed as well as the men; it is their business to work all the fine garments for themselves and the men, which being much the same, except devices and flowers for their friends and lovers, are made with less difficulty; the chief difference is in the wearing them. But the chief distinction of sexes, is in the ornaments of their necks and hair. Crowns and fillets are worn by all, just after the model of the little picture your Reverences saw in the cabinet; all their tapestry, embroidery, and the like, with infinite other curiosities, are the works of their women, so that the chief qualification of their women or ladies, for they are all such, is to excel at the loom, needle, or distaff. Since I came there, by the Popbar's desire, they have added that of painting, in which, I believe, the vivacity of their genius will make them excel all the rest of the world. Not teaching for hire, I thought it no disgrace in me to instruct such amiable scholars in an art no man ought to be ashamed of. It is a thing unknown with these people for young ladies of any degree, or even young men, to have nothing else to mind or think of but visits and dress. When I gave them an account of the lives of our quality and gentry, they cried out—'What barbarians! Can any thing become beauty more than knowledge and ingenuity?' They seemed to have such a contempt, and even a horror for a life of that nature, that the young ladies asked me, with great concern, if our ladies had any lovers? as if it were impossible to love a woman who had nothing to recommend her but what nature gave her. In fine, by the description I gave of the idle life of our ladies, they judged them to be no more than beautiful brutes. They asked me also, if I did not think myself fortunate by my captivity, where I met with ladies, who thought the ornaments of the mind more desirable than those of the body; and told me, they imputed what they saw in me, to my good fortune of being born of their race by the mother's side; nay, could scarce believe but my father had a mixture of their blood some way or other. I assured them, I esteemed myself very happy to be in the midst of so many charms of body

and mind; and added, that though they had the inestimable happiness of being born all of one race, without any mixture of foreign vices, yet in effect, all the world were originally brothers and sisters, as springing from one pair, since men and women did not rise out of the ground like mushrooms. This I said to give them a little hint of natural and revealed religion, which are inseparably linked together. But to return to myself: the Popbar being my nearest relation, took me into his own family, as his constant companion and attendant, when he was not on the publick concerns; where I likewise accompanied him sometimes, and received most distinguishing marks of his favour. He would often confer with me, and instruct me in their ways and customs, and the polity of their government, enquiring frequently into the particularities of our governments, both civil and religious. He never endeavoured to persuade me to conform to their religious ceremonies, and my own good sense told me it was prudence not to meddle with them. I rather thought he seemed inclined to have more favourable sentiments of our religion, as such, than his own, though he was prodigiously bigotted to their civil customs; saying, it was impossible ever to preserve a commonwealth, when they did not live up to their laws; which should be as few and as simple as possible: for when once people come to break in upon fundamentals, all subsequent laws would not have half the strength as primary ones. To these he added many other reflections, that shewed him a man of consummate wisdom, and worthy the high post he bore. He had had two sons, both dead; and two daughters living; the one was about ten years old when I arrived there, (it is the your Reverences saw in that picture) the other born the year before the Popbar set out for Grand Cairo. His lady, much younger than himself, shewed such fresh remains of beauty, as demonstrated that nothing but what sprung from herself could equal her; both the Popbar and his consort looked on me as their own son, nor could I expect greater favour had I really been so. I took all the care imaginable not to render myself unworthy of it, and both revered and loved them beyond what I am able to express; though indeed, as I observed, the whole race of them was nothing but a kingdom

of brothers and friends, no man having the least suspicion or fear of one another. They were so habituated to the observance of their laws, by their natural dispositions and the never-ceasing vigilancy of their governors, that they seemed to have a greater horror for the breach of their laws, than the punishments attending it; saying, that infinite disorders might be committed by the malicious inventions of men, if there was nothing but fear to keep them in their duty. Such force has education and the light of nature rightly cultivated; for myself, I was left to follow what liberal employment I had a mind to. Philosophy, musick, and painting, had been the chief part of my study and diversion, till my unhappy captivity and the loss of my brother; but as I was fallen among a nation of philosophers, that noble science, the mistress of all others, made up the more serious part of my employment; though at some times, by the Popbar regent's earnest desire, I applied myself to the other two, particularly painting. They had a great many old-fashioned musical instruments, and an infinite number of performers in their way, who attended their feasts and publick rejoicings; but their musick, both vocal and instrumental, was not near so perfect as one might have expected of so polite a people, and did not come up to the elevated genius of our Italians. Their philosophy chiefly turned on the more useful part of it; that is, the mathematicks and direction of nature: in the moral part of it they have a system, or rather notion, of which I forgot to acquaint your Reverences before; it is a too high and exalted notion of Providence, if that expression may be allowed, by which they imagine all things to be so governed in this world, that whatever injury a man does to another, it will be returned upon him or his posterity, even in this world, in the same manner, or even in a greater degree, than what he did to others.

[*Inquisitor*. You'll be pleased to explain your own sentiments in this particular, since we hope you don't deny that fundamental law of nature and religion, viz. That the divine Providence presides over all things; and as for sublunary things, we presume you believe that Providence does not only shew itself in the wonderful production and harmony conspicuous in all natural causes and effects, beyond all the wit and



and art of men; but also over the moral part, that is, the free actions of men, by suitable rewards and punishments in this world or the next, to make an equal and just compensation for all the good and evil of this life, as God is the just and equal Father of all. So pray explain yourself, that we may know your real sentiments on that head.

*Gaudentio.* I hope, reverend Fathers, I shall convince you, my sentiments are really orthodox in this point; no man has more reason to magnify Providence than myself; but heathenish people may carry a just belief to superstition. That there is a providence over the physical part of the world, no man who has any just knowledge in nature can be ignorant, since he may be convinced by the least insect, every thing being adapted to it's peculiar ends, with such art and knowledge in the Author of it, that all the art and knowledge of men can't do the like; and by consequence not being able to make itself, it must be produced by a cause infinitely knowing and foreseeing. Then, as to the moral part of the world, the same reason shews, that since the great Creator descends so low as to take care of the least insect, it is incredible to think that the noblest part of the world, that is, the free actions of men, should be without his care. But as he has given them the glorious endowments of free will, the same Providence knows how to adapt the direction of them by ways and means suitable to their beings; that is, by letting them know his will, and proposing suitable rewards and punishments for their good and bad actions; which rewards and punishments, it is evident, are not always seen in this life, since the wicked often prosper, and the good suffer, but by consequence must be reserved for another state.

But these people not having a just notion of the next life, though they believe a future state, carry matters so far, that they think every injury done to another will be some way or other retaliated upon the aggressor, or his posterity, in this life: only they say, the punishment always falls the heavier the longer it is deferred. In this manner do they account for all the revolutions of the earth, that one wicked

action is punished by another: that the descendants of the greatest monarchs have been lost in beggary for almost endless generations, and the persons that dispossessed them treated after the same manner by some of the descendants of the former; and so on: which notion, in my opinion is not just, since a sincere repentance may wipe off the most grievous offences. But as persons, generally speaking, are more sensibly touched with the punishments of this life, it is not to be doubted but there are often most signal marks of avenging providence in this life, in order to deter the wicked.

*Inquisitor.* Go on.]

Finding the Pophar had a prodigious fancy for painting, by some indifferent pieces he had picked up, I applied myself with extraordinary diligence to that art, particularly since he would have me teach his daughter, whose unparalleled charms, though but in the bud, made me insensible to all others. By frequent drawing, I not only pleased him and others, but almost myself; every one there, men and women, were to follow some art or science: the Pophar desired me to impart my art to some of the young people of both sexes; saying, there were very great encouragements for the inventors of any new arts, which I might justly claim a title to. I did so; and before I left the place, I had the pleasure to see some of them equal, or even excel their master.

These were the chief employments of my leisure hours; though I was forced to leave them for considerable intervals to attend the regent in the private visitations of his charge, which he did frequently from time to time, sometimes to one Nome, sometimes to another, having an eye over all, both officers and people. These visitations were rather preservations against, than remedies for, any disorders. He used to say, that the commonwealth was like a great machine with different movements, which if frequently visited by the artist, the least flaw being taken notice of in time, was not only soon remedied, but was a means of preserving all the rest in a constant and regular motion; but if neglected, would soon disorder the motions of the other parts, and either cost a great deal to repair, or bring the whole machine to destruction. Unless on publick solemnities, which were always very magnificent,

nificent, the Popbar (not to burden his people) went about without any great train, accompanied by only an assisting elder or two, the young Popbar, and myself: he had frequent conversations with the subalterns, and even with the meanest artificers, calling them his children; and they having recourse to him as their common father. For the first five years of his regency, the only difficulty we had of any moment to determine was an affair of the most delicate nature I ever heard: though it does not concern myself, I shall relate it to your Reverences for the peculiar circumstances of it, being a case entirely new, as well as unprovided for by the laws of their constitution.

The case was this: two twin brothers had fallen in love with the same woman, and she with them. The men and the woman lived in different parts of the same Nome, and met accidentally at one of their great solemnities; it was at the feast of the Sun, which is kept twice a year, because, as I informed your Reverences, their kingdom lies between the tropicks, but more on this side the line than the other. This situation is the occasion that they have two springs and two summers. At the beginning of each spring, there are great feasts in every Nome, in honour of the Sun; they are held in the open fields, in testimony of his being the immediate cause (in their opinion) of the production of all things. All the sacrifice they offer to him are five little pyramids of incense, according to the number of their Nomes, placed on the altar in plates of gold till they take fire of themselves. Five young men, and as many women, are deputed by the governors to perform the office of placing the pyramids of incense on the altar: they are clad in their spangled robes of the colour of the Nome, with crowns on their heads, marching up two by two, a man and a woman, between two rows of young men and women, placed theatre-wise one above another; and make the most beautiful show that eyes can behold. It happened that one of the twin brothers was deputed, with the young lady I am speaking of, to make the first couple for the placing the incense on the altar. They marched up on different sides till they came to the altar: when they have placed the incense, they salute each other, and cross down, the men by the ranks of the women, and the women

by the men, which they do with a wonderful grace becoming such an august assembly. The design of this is to encourage a decorum in the carriage of the young people, and to give them a sight of each other in their greatest lustre. When the five couple have performed their ceremony, the other ranks come two by two to the altar, saluting each other, and crossing as before, by which means the young people have an opportunity of seeing every man and woman of the whole company, though the placing of them is done by lot. If they have not any engagement before, they generally take the first liking to one another at such interviews, and the woman's love and choice being what determines the marriage, without any view of interest, being, as I said, all equal in quality, the young gallants make it their business to gain the affection of the person they like by their future services. To prevent inconveniences of rivalry at the beginning, if the man be the person the woman likes, he presents her with a flower just in the bud, which she takes and puts in her breast. If she is engaged before, she shews him one, to signify her engagement; which if in the bud only, shews the courtship is gone no further than the first proposal and liking; if half blown, or the like, it is an emblem of further progress; if full blown, it signifies that her choice is determined, from whence they can never recede; that is, she can challenge the man that presents it, but he cannot challenge her till she has worn it publicly. If any dislike should happen after that, they are to be shut up, never to have any husband. If she has no engagement, but does not approve of the person, she makes him a low courtesy, with her eyes shut till he is gone away. The women, it is true, for all this, have some little coquettish arts, dissembling their affections now-and-then, but not often. If the man be engaged, he wears some favour or other to shew it; if he likes not the woman, he presents her with nothing; if the woman should make some extraordinary advances, without any of his side, she has liberty to live a maid, or to be disposed of among the widows, being looked upon as such, who, by the bye, marry none but widowers. But to return to the twins. It happened that the brother who went with the lady to the altar, seeing she had no bud upon her



her breast, fell in love with her, and she with him; the awe of the ceremony hindered them from taking any further notice of one another at that time. As she went down the ranks, the other brother saw her, and fell in love with her likewise, and contrives to meet her with a bud in his hand, just as the ceremony ended, which she accepts of, taking him to be the person who had marched up with her to the altar; but being obliged to go off with the other young ladies, whether the concern she had been in, in performing the ceremony before such an illustrious assembly, or the heat of the weather, or the joy she conceived in finding her affection reciprocal, or all together, had such an effect, that she fell into a fainting-fit among her companions; who opening her bosom in haste, not minding the flower, it fell down, and was trod under foot. Just as she was recovered, the brother who performed the ceremony, came up and presented his bud, she thinking it had been that she had lost, received it with a look that shewed he had made a greater progress in her affections than what that flower expressed; the laws not permitting any further conversation at that juncture, they retired to their respective habitations. Some time after, the brother who had the luck to present the first flower, whom for distinction I shall call the younger brother, as he really was, found a way to make her a visit by stealth, at a grated window, which, as I observed, was publickly prohibited by the wise governors, but privately connived at to enhance their love. He came to her, and after some amorous conversation, makes bold to present her the more advanced mark of his affection, which she accepted of, and gave him in return a scarf, worked with hearts separated by little brambles, to shew there were some difficulties for him to overcome yet; however, they gave one another mutual assurances of love, and he was permitted to profess himself her lover, without declaring her name, for some private reasons she had. Not long after, the elder brother came, and procured an opportunity of meeting her at the same window. The night was very dark, so that he could not see the second flower which she had in her bosom, only she received him with greater signs of joy and freedom than he expected; but reflecting on the signs he had remarked in her countenance, and after her illness by

a sort of natural vanity for his own merits, flattered himself that her passion was rather greater than his, excused himself for being so long without seeing her, and added, that if he were to be guided by the height of his flame, he would see her every night. She reflecting how lately she had seen him, thought his diligence was very extraordinary, but imputed it to the ardour of his passion; in fine, she gave him such assured signs of love, that he thought in himself he might pass the middle ceremony, and present her with the full-blown flower, to make sure of her. She took it, but told him she would not wear it for some time, till she had passed some forms, and had further proof of his constancy; but for his confirmation of her affection, she put out her hand as far as the grate would permit, which he kissed with all the ardours of an enflamed lover, giving her a thousand assurances of his fidelity, and she in return gave him a ribband with two hearts interwoven with her own hair, separated only with a little hedge of pomegranates almost ripe, to shew that the time of gathering the fruit was nigh at hand. Thus were the three lovers in the greatest degree of happiness imaginable; the brothers wore her favours on all publick occasions, congratulating each other for the success in their amours; but as lovers affect a secrecy in all they do, never telling one another who were the objects of their affection. The next great feast drew on, when the younger brother thought it was time to present the last mark of his affection, in order to demand her in marriage, which was usually performed in those publick solemnities. He told her he hoped it was now time to reward his flame, by wearing the open flower, as a full sign of her consent, and gave her a full-blown artificial carnation, with gold flames and little hearts on the leaves, interwoven with wonderful art and ingenuity. She thinking it had been a repetition of the ardour of his affection, took it, and put it in her bosom with all the marks of tenderness, by which the fair sex in all countries know how to reward all the pains of their lovers in a moment. Upon this he resolved to ask her of her parents, which was the only thing necessary on his side, the woman having a right to demand any man's son in the kingdom, if he had but presented her with the last mark of his affection. The elder brother having given in his some time before, thought

thought the parents approbation was the only thing wanting on his side, and resolves the same day on the same thing. They were strangely surprized to meet one another; but seeing the different favours, they did not know what to make of it. When the father came, they declared the cause of their coming, in terms which fully expressed the agony of their minds: the father was in as great concern as they were, assuring them that he had but one daughter, who he was confident would never give such encouragement to two lovers at the same time, contrary to their laws; but seeing their extreme likeness, he guessed there must be some mistake. Upon this the daughter was sent for, who being informed it was to declare her consent in the choice of her lover, came down with four flowers in her bosom, not thinking but the two full-blown had belonged to the same person, since she had received two before she had worn the first. The description the poets give of the goddess Venus rising out of the sea, could not be more beautiful than the bloom that appeared in her cheeks when she came into the room. I happened to be there present, being sent before by the Pophar, to let the father know of the regent's intended visit; that being a considerable officer, he might order his concerns accordingly. As soon as the young lady heard the cause of their coming, and saw them indistinguishably like each other, with the publick signs of her favours wrought with her own hand, which they brought along with them, she screamed out—'I am betrayed!' and immediately fell in a swoon, flat on the floor, almost between her two lovers. The father, in a condition very little better, fell down by his daughter, and bathing her with his tears, called to her to open her eyes, or he must die along with her. The young men stood like statues, with rage and despair in their looks at the same time. I being the only indifferent person in the room, though extremely surprized at the event, called her mother and women to come to her assistance; who carried her into another room, undressed her, and by proper remedies brought her at last to herself. The first word she said was—'Oh, Berilla! what have you done?' All the rest was nothing but sobs and sighs, enough to melt the hardest heart. When she was in a condition to explain herself, she declared, she liked the person of the man who went up with her

to the altar; that some time after, the same person, as she thought, had presented her with the first marks of his affection, which she accepted of, and in fine had given her consent by wearing the full-blown flower; but which of the two brothers it belonged to she could not tell, adding, that she was willing to submit to the decision of the elders, or to undergo what punishment they thought fit for her heedless indiscretion; but protested that she never designed to entertain two persons at the same time, but took them to be the same person. The care of their marriages being one of the fundamentals of their government, and there being no provision in the law for this extraordinary case, the matter was referred to the Pophar regent, who was to be there in a few days: guards in the mean time were set over the brothers, for fear of mischief, till a full hearing. The affair was discussed before the Pophar regent, and the rest of the elders of the place. The three lovers appeared before them, each in such agony as cannot be expressed. The brothers were so alike, it was hard to distinguish one from the other: the regent asked them, which of the two went up to the altar with the young lady; the elder said it was he, which the younger did not deny; the lady being interrogated, owned she designed to entertain the person that went up with her to the altar, but went no further than the first liking. Then they asked which of the two brothers gave the first flower; the younger said, he presumed he did, since he fell in love with her as she went down the ranks, and contrived to give her the flower as soon as the ceremony was over, not knowing of his brother's affection, neither did she bear any mark of engagement, but accepted of his service; the lady likewise owning the receipt of such a flower, but that she lost it, fainting away in the crowd; but when, as she thought, he restored it to her, she did not like him quite so well, as when she received it the first time, supposing them to be the same person. Being asked who gave her the second, third, and last mark of engagement, it appeared to be the younger brother, whose flower she wore publicly in her bosom; but then she received the full-blown flower from the elder brother also. The judges looked at one another for some time, not knowing well what to say to the matter. Then the regent asked her, when she gave her consent,



thought the prince's approbation was the only thing wanting on his side, and he solves the same day of the same thing. They were strangely surprised to meet one another, but seeing the difference in their looks, they knew what to make of it. The prince, however, was not to be deceived, and he had but a few moments to spare before he was to be crowned.



GAUDENTIO

When the prince was in a condition to explain his heart, he declared, he had the heart of the man who was up with him. Published by the Art directors, by H. and C. April 8, 1786.





These visitations in the company of the Popbar, gave me an opportunity of seeing all the different parts and chief curiosities of the whole empire. Their great towns, especially the heads of every Nome, were built, as I said, much after the same form, differing chiefly in the situation, and are principally designed for the winter residence, for their courts and colleges, but particularly for instructing and polishing their youth of both sexes, and such admirable care and œconomy, to avoid all dissoluteness and idleness, that, as I observed before, there is no such thing known, as for persons to have no other business on their hands but visits and dress; esteeming those no better than brutes and barbarians, who are not constantly employed in improving their natural talents in some art or science. Their villas, or places of pleasure, are scattered all over the country, with most beautiful variety: the villages and towns built for manufactures, trades, conveniency of agriculture, &c. are innumerable; their canals, and great lakes, some of them like little seas, are very frequent, according as the nature of the country will allow; with pleasure-houses and pavilions, built at due distances, round the borders, interspersed with islands and groves, some natural, some artificial, where at proper seasons you might see thousands of boats skimming  
L                      backwards

backwards and forwards, both for pleasure and the profit of catching fish, of which there is an inexhaustible store. There are also vast forests of infinite variety and delight, distinguished here and there with theatrical spaces or lawns, either natural, or cut out by art, for the conveniency of pitching their tents in the hot seasons; with such romantick scenes of deep vales, hanging woods, and precipices, natural falls, and cascades, or rather cataracts of water over the rocks, that all the decorations of art are nothing but souls and shadows to those majestick beauties of nature; besides glorious prospects of different kinds over the edges of the mountains where we passed in our visitations, sometimes presenting us with a boundless view over the most delicious plains in the world; in other places, having our view terminated with other winding hills, exhaling their reviving perfumes from innumerable species of natural fruits and odoriferous shrubs. Travelling thus by easy journeys, staying or advancing in our progress as we thought fit, I had an opportunity of admiring with infinite delight the effects of industry and liberty, in a country where nature and art seemed to vie with each other in their different productions. There was another extraordinary satisfaction I received in these visitations, which was, the opportunity of seeing, and partaking of their grand matches, or rather companies, if I may use the expression, of hunting and fishing. All the young people with their governors, or all who are able or willing to go, at particular seasons disperse themselves for these hunts all over the kingdom: the country being so prodigious fertile, that it furnishes them, almost spontaneously, with whatever is necessary, or even delectable for life, the people living in some measure in common, and having no other interest but that of a well regulated community. They leave the towns at certain seasons, and go and live in tents for the conveniency of hunting and fishing, according as the country and seasons are proper for each recreation: the flat part of the country (though it is generally more hilly than campaign) is stocked with prodigious quantities of fowl and game, as pheasants, partridges of different kinds, much larger than our wild hens, turkeys, and peacocks, with other species of game, which we have not in Italy; hares almost innumerable, but no

conies that ever I saw, unless we call conies a lesser sort of hare, which feed and run along the cliffs and rocks, but do not burrow as ours do. There is also a small sort of wild goat, much less than ours, not very fleet, of a very high taste, and prodigious fat. They take vast quantities of all sorts, but still leave a sufficient stock to supply next season, except hurtful beasts, which they kill whenever they can. But their great hunts are in the mountains and woodland parts of the country, where the forests are full of infinite quantities of mast and fruits, and other food for wild beasts of all kinds; but particularly stags of four or five different species, some of which, almost as big as a horse, keep in the wildest parts, whose flesh they dry and season with spices, and is the richest food I ever tasted. Their wild swine are of two kinds, some vastly large, others very little, not much bigger than a lamb, but prodigious fierce. This last is most delicate meat, feeding on the masts and wild fruits in the thickest parts of the groves; and multiplying exceedingly, where they are not disturbed, one sow bringing sixteen or eighteen pigs; so that I have seen thousands of them caught at one hunting-match, and sent in presents to the other parts of the kingdom, where they have none; which is their way in all their recreations, having persons appointed to carry the rarities of the country to one another, and to the governors, parents, and friends left behind. When they go out to their grand hunt, they chuse some open vale, or vast lawn, as far in the wild forests as they can; where they pitch their tents, and make their rendezvous: then they send out their most courageous young men, in small bodies of ten in a company, well armed, each with his spear and his fustil slung on his back, which last of late years they find more serviceable against the wild beasts than spears, having got samples of them from Persia. These go quietly through the wildest parts of the forest at proper distances, so as to meet at such a place, which is to view the ground, and find a place proper to make their stand, and pitch their toils. They are often several days out about this; but are to make no noise, nor kill any wild beast, unless attacked, or they come upon him in his couch, at unawares, that they may not disturb the rest. When they have made their report, several thousands of



of them surround a considerable part of the forest, standing close together for their mutual assistance, making as great a noise as they can, with dogs, drums, and rattles, and other noisy instruments, to frighten the game towards the centre, that none may escape the circle. When this is done, all advance in a breast, encouraging their dogs, sounding their horns, beating their drums and rattles, that the most courageous beasts are all roused, and run before them towards the centre, till by this means they have driven together several hundreds of wild beasts, lions, tigers, elks, wild boars, stags, foxes, hares, and in fine all sorts of beasts that were within that circle. It is most terrible to see such a heap of cruel beasts gathered together, grinning and roaring at one another, in a most frightful manner: but the wild boar is the master of all; whoever comes near him in that rage, even the largest lion, he strikes at him with his tusks and makes him keep his distance. When they are brought within a proper compass, they pitch their toils round them, and inclose them in, every man joining close to his neighbour, holding out their spears to keep them off. If any beast should endeavour to make his escape, which some will do now and then, (particularly the wild boars) they run against the points of the spears, and make very martial sport. I was told, that a prodigious wild sow once broke through three files of spears, overturned the men, and made a gap, that set all the rest a running almost in a body that way, so that the people were forced to let them take their career, and lost all their labour. But now they have men ready with their fusils to drop any beast that should offer to turn a-head. When they are enclosed, there is most terrible work, the greatest beasts fighting and going one another, for rage and spight, and the more fearful running into the toils for shelter. Then our men with their fusils drop the largest as fast as they can. When they intend to shoot the wild boar, three or four aim at him at a time, to be sure to drop him or disable him, otherwise he runs full at the last that wounded him, with such fury, that sometimes he will break through the strongest toils; but his companions all join their spears to keep him off. When they have dropped all that are dangerous, and as many as they have a mind, they open their toils, and dispatch all that are

gasping. I have known above five hundred head of beasts of all sorts killed in one day. When all is over, they carry off their spoil to the rendezvous, feasting and rejoicing, and sending presents as before.

There is oftentimes very great danger, when they go through the woods to make discovery of their haunts; because, if in small companies, some stubborn beast or other will attack them directly; every man, therefore, as I said, has a fusil slung at his back, and his spear in his hand for his defence. Being once in one of their parties, we came upon a prodigious wild boar, as he was lying in his haunt; some of us were for passing by him, but I thought such a noble prey was not to be let go; so we surrounded him, and drew up to him, with more courage and curiosity than prudence: one of my companions, who was my intimate friend, being one of those who conducted me over the deserts, went up nigher to him than the rest, with his spear in his hand, stretched out ready to receive him, in case he should come at him; at which the beast started up of a sudden, with a noise that would have terrified the stoutest hero, and made at him with such a fury, that we gave him over for lost. He stood his ground with so much courage, and held his spear so firm and exact, that he run it directly up the mouth of the beast, quite into the inner part of his throat; the boar roared and shook his head in a terrible manner, endeavouring to get the spear out, which if he had done, all the world could not have saved the young man. I, seeing the danger, ran in with the same precipitancy, and clapping the muzzle of my gun almost close to his side, a little behind his fore-shoulder, shot him quite through the body; so he dropped down dead before us. Just as we thought the danger was over, the sow, hearing his cry, came rushing on us, and that so suddenly, that before I could turn myself with my spear, she struck at me behind with her snout, and pushing on, knocked me down with her impetuosity; and the place being a little shelving, she came tumbling quite over me, which was the occasion of saving my life. Ashamed of the foil, but very well apprised of the danger, I was scarce got up on my feet, and on my guard, when, making at me alone, though my companions came in to my assistance, she pushed at me a second time with equal

fury. I held my spear with all my might, thinking to take her in the mouth; but missing my aim, I took her just in the throat, where the head and neck join, and thrust my spear with such force, her own career meeting me, that I struck quite through her windpipe, the spear sticking so fast in her neck-bone, that when she dropt, we could scarce get it out again. She tossed and reeled her head a good while before she fell; but her wind-pipe being cut, and bleeding inwardly, she was choaked. My companions had hit her with their spears on the sides and back; but her hide and bristles were so thick and hard, they did her very little damage. They all applauded my courage and victory, as if I had killed both the swine. But I, as justice required, gave the greatest part of the glory, for the death of the boar, to the courageous dexterity of the young man, who had exposed himself so generously, and hit him so exact in the throat. We left the carcases there, not being able to take them with us; but marking the place, we came afterwards with some others to carry them off. I had the honour to carry the boar's head on the point of my spear; which I would have given to the young man, but he refused it, saying, that I had not only killed it, but saved his life into the bargain. The honour being judged to me by every one, I sent it as a present to the divine Isyphena; a thing allowed by their customs, though as yet I never durst make any declarations of love: she accepted of it, but added, she hoped I would make no more such presents; and explained herself no further.

These people having no wars, nor single combats with one another, which last are not allowed for fear of destroying their own species, have no other way of shewing their courage but against wild beasts, where, without waiting for any express order of their superiors, they will expose themselves to a great degree, and sometimes perform exploits worthy the greatest heroes.

Their fishing is of two kinds; one for recreation and profit; the other to destroy the crocodiles and alligators, which are only found in the great lakes, and the rivers that run into them, and that in the hotter and campaign parts of the country. In some of the lakes, even the largest, they cannot live; in others they breed prodigiously. As they fish for them only

to destroy them, they chuse the proper time for this purpose, that is, when the eggs are hatching; which is done in the hot sands, by the sides of the rivers and lakes. The old ones are not only very ravenous at that time, but lie lurking in the water near their eggs, and are so prodigious fierce, that there is no taking their eggs, unless you first contrive to kill the old ones. Their way to fish for them is this: they beat at a distance, by the sides of the rivers and lakes where they breed, which makes the old ones hide themselves in the water. Then twenty or thirty of the young men row quietly backward and forward on the water where they suppose the creatures are; having a great many strong lines with hooks, made after the manner of fish-hooks, well armed as far as the throat of the animal reaches. These hooks they fasten under the wings of ducks and water-fowls, kept for the purpose, which they let drop out of the boat, and swim about the lake. Whenever the ducks come over the places where the creatures are, these last strike at them, and swallow the poor ducks immediately, and so hook themselves with the violence and check of the boat. As soon as one is hooked, they tow him, floundering and beating the water at a strange rate, till they have brought him into the middle of the water at a distance from the rest of his companions, who all lie nigh the banks; then the other boats surround him, and dart their harping-spears at him till they kill him. These harping-spears are pointed with the finest tempered steel, extremely sharp, with beards to hinder them from coming out of his body; there is a line fastened to the spear, to draw it back, and the creature along with it; as also to hinder the spear from flying too far, if they miss their aim. Some of them are prodigious dextrous at it; but there is no piercing the creature but in his belly, which they must hit as he flounders and rolls himself in the water. If a spear hits the scales of his back, it will fly off as from a rock, not without some danger to those who are very nigh, though they generally know the length of the string. I was really apprehensive of those strange fierce creatures at first, and as it was a considerable time before I could dart with any dexterity; but the desire of glory, and the applauses given to those that excel, who have the skins carried like trophies before their



their mistresses; these, and the charms of the regent's daughter, so inspired me, that I frequently carried the prize.

It is one of the finest recreations in the world; you might see several hundred boats at a time, either employed, or as spectators, with shouts and cries, when the creature is hit in the right place, that make the very banks tremble. When they have killed all the old ones, they send their people on the shore, to rake for the eggs, which they burn and destroy on the spot; not but some will be hatched before the rest, and creep into the water, to serve for sport the next year. They destroy these animals, not only for their own security in the use of the lakes, but also to preserve the wild fowl and fish, which are devoured and destroyed by the crocodiles.

But the fishing on the great lake Gilegol, or Lake of Lakes, is without any danger; there being no alligators in that water, and is only for recreation and the profit of the fish. The lake is above a hundred Italian miles in circumference\*. At proper seasons, the whole lake is covered with boats, great numbers of them full of ladies to see the sport, beside what are on the islands and shores, with trumpets, hautboys, and other musical instruments, playing all the while. It is impossible to describe the different kinds of fish the lake abounds with; many of them we know nothing of in Europe; though they have some like ours, but much larger, as pikes, or a fish like a pike, two or three yards long; a fish like a bream, a yard and half over; carps forty or fifty pounds weight they catch incredible numbers of them, some kinds in one part of the lake, some in another. They fish in this manner, and afterwards feast on what they catch, for a fortnight or three weeks, if the season proves kind, retiring at night to their tents, either on the islands or shore, where there are persons employed in drying and curing what are proper for use; sending presents of them into other parts of the country, in exchange for venison, fowl, and the like. Though there are noble lakes and ponds, even in the forests, made by the enclosures of the hills and woods, that are stored with excellent fish; yet they are entirely destitute of the best sort, that is, sea fish, which we have in such quanti-

ties in Europe. When this fishing is over, they retire to the towns, because of the rainy season, which begin presently after.

I am now going to enter on a part of my life, which I am in some doubt, whether it is proper to lay before your Reverences or not: I mean the hopes and fears, the joys and anxieties, of a young man in love; but in an honourable way, with no less a person than the daughter of the regent of this vast empire. I shall not however enter into the detail of the many various circumstances attending such a passion; but shall just touch on some particular passages, which were very extraordinary even in a passion which generally of itself runs into extremes. Your Reverences will remember, that there is no real distinction of quality in these people, nor any regard either to interest or dignity, but merely to personal merit; their chief view being to render that state happy which makes up the better part of human life. I had nothing therefore to do in this affair, but to fix my choice, and endeavour to please and be pleased. My choice was soon determined; the first time I saw the incomparable Isyphena, the regent's daughter, though she was then but ten years old, ten thousand budding beauties appeared in her, with such unutterable charms, that though I as good as despaired of arriving at my wished for happiness, I was resolved to fix there, or no where.

I observed, when I was first introduced into her company by the regent her father, that she had her eye fixed on me, as a stranger, as I supposed; but yet with more than a girlish curiosity. I was informed afterwards, that she told her playfellows, that that stranger should be her husband, or no one. The wife Pophar her father had observed it; and whether it was from his knowledge of the sex, and their unaccountable fondness for strangers, or whether he disapproved of the thought, I cannot tell, but he was resolved to try both our constancies to the utmost. I was obliged by the Pophar to teach her and some other young ladies, as well as some young men, to paint; but it was always in the father or mother's company. Not to detain your Reverences with matters quite foreign to, and per-

\* The lake Meris in Egypt, according to Diodorus Siculus and Herodotus, quoted by the Bishop of Meaux. (Hist. Uni. Sect. 3.) was a hundred and fourscore French leagues in circumference.

haps unworthy your cognizance, it was five years before I durst let her see the least glimmering of my affection. She was now fifteen, which was the height of her bloom. Her father seeing she carried no mark of any engagement, asked her in a familiar way, if her eyes had made no conquests: she blushed, and said she hoped not. He told me also as a friend, that I was older than their customs cared to allow young men to live single, and with a smile, asked me, if the charms of the Bassa's daughter of Grand Cairo had extinguished in me all thoughts of love. I told him there were objects enough in Mezorania to make one forget any thing one had seen before, but that being a stranger, I was willing to be thoroughly acquainted with the genius of the people, lest I should make any one unhappy. I was just come back from one of our visitations, when I was struck with the most lively sense of grief I ever felt in my life. I had always observed before, that Isyphena never wore any sign of engagement, but then I found she carried a bud in her bosom. I fell ill immediately upon it; which she perceiving, came to see me without any bud, as she used to go before, keeping her eyes upon me to see what effect it would have. Seeing her continue without any marks of engagement, I recovered, and made bold to tell her one day, that I could not but pity the miserable person, whoever he was, who had lost the place in her bosom, he had before; she said unconcernedly, that both the wearing and taking away the flower from her bosom, was done out of kindness to the person. I was then so taken up with contrary thoughts, that I did not perceive she meant to try whether she was the object of my thoughts or not. However, finding she carried no more marks of engagement, I was resolved to try my fortune for life or death; when an opportunity offered beyond my wish. Her mother brought her to perfect a piece of painting she was drawing: I observed a melancholy and trouble in her countenance I had never seen before; that moment the mother was sent for to the regent, and I made use of it to ask her, what it was that affected her in so sensible a manner. I pronounced these words with such emotion and concern on my own part, that she might easily see I was in some very great agony. She expressed a great deal of confusion at the question, insomuch, that, without answering a

word, she got up and went out of the room, leaving me leaning against the wall almost without life or motion. Other company coming in, I was roused out of my lethargy, and slunk away to my own apartment, but agitated with such numberless fears, as left me almost destitute of reason. However, I was resolved to make a most just discovery, and to be fully determined in my happiness or misery. There was a grated window on the back side of the palace, where I had seen Isyphena walk sometimes, but never dared to approach; I went thither in the evening, and seeing her by herself, I ventured to it, and falling on my knees, asked her, for heaven's sake, what was the matter, or if I had offended her? She immediately burst into tears, and just said—'Ask no more,' and withdrew, though I cannot say with any signs of indignation. Some time after, I was sent for to instruct her in the finishing of her piece. I must tell your Reverences, that I had privately drawn that picture of her which you saw, and put the little boy in afterwards. In a hurry I had left it behind me in my closet, and the Pophar finding it by accident, had taken it away without my knowledge, and shewn it to the mother; and making as if he did not mind Isyphena, who stood by, and saw it (as she thought, undiscerned) seemed to talk in a threatening tone to the mother about it. When I came in, I had just courage enough to cast one glance at Isyphena, when, methought, I saw her eyes meet mine, and shew a mixture of comfort and trouble at the same time. As this subject cannot be very proper for your Reverences ears, I shall comprise in half an hour what cost me whole years of sighs and solicitude, though happily crowned at last with unspeakable joys. This trouble in Isyphena was, that having made herself mistress of the pencil, she had privately drawn my picture in miniature, which she kept secretly in her bosom, and it having been discovered by the mother, as that which I had drawn was by the father, to try her constancy he had expressed the utmost indignation at it: but Isyphena's greatest trouble was, lest I should know, and take it for a discovery of her love, before I had made any overtures of mine. In process of time we came to an ecstasie: she received my two first flowers; but because I was half a stranger to their race, we were to give some more

signal



signal proof of our love and constancy than ordinary: we had frequently common occasions offered us, such as might be looked upon as the greatest trials. She was the paragon not only of the kingdom, but possibly of the universe, for all perfections that could be found in the sex. Her stature was about the middle size, the just proportion of her shape made her really taller than she seemed to be; her hair was black \* indeed, but of a much finer gloss than the rest of the sex, nor quite so much curled, hanging down in easy tresses over her shoulders, and shading some part of her beautiful cheeks. Her eyes, though not so large as our Europeans, darted such lustre, with a mixture of sweetness and vivacity, that it was impossible not to be charmed with their rays; her features were not only the most exact, but inimitable and peculiar to herself. In fine, her nose, mouth, teeth, turn of the face, all concurring together to form the most exquisite symmetry, and adorned with a bloom beyond all the blushes of the new-born Aurora, rendered her the most charming, and the most dangerous object in nature. The noblest and gayest youths of all the land paid their homages to her adorable perfections, but all in vain: she avoided doing hurt where she could do no good; she did not so much scorn, as shut her eyes to all their offers, though such a treasure gave me ten thousand anxieties before I knew what share I had in it; but when once she received my addresses, the security her constant virtue gave me was proportionable to the immense value of her person. For my part, I had some trials on my side. I was surrounded with beauties, who found a great many ways to shew me, they had no dislike to me. Whether being a stranger, of different features and make from their youth, gave them a more pleasing curiosity, or the tallness of my stature, something exceeding any of theirs, or the gaiety of my temper, which gave me a freer air than is usual with them, being, as I observed, naturally too grave, (be that as it will) Isyphena's bright sense easily saw I made some sacrifices to her. But we had greater trials than these to undergo, which I shall briefly relate to your Reverences, for the particularity of them. When I thought I was almost arrived at the height of my happiness,

being assured of the heart of the divine Isyphena, the Pophar came to me one day with the most seeming concern in his countenance I ever remarked in him, even beyond that of the affair with the great bassa's daughter. After a little pause, he told me, he had observed the love between his daughter and myself; that, out of kindness to my person, he had consulted their wise men about it, who all concluded, that, on account of my being a stranger, and not of their race by the father's side, I could never marry his daughter; so that I must either solemnly renounce all pretensions to her, or be shut up for ever without any commerce with his people, till death. 'But,' says he, 'to shew that we do justice to your merit, you are to have a publick statue erected in your honour, because you have taught us the art of painting; which is to be crowned with a garland of flowers by the most beautiful young woman in the kingdom; thus you will live to glory, though you are dead to the world. But if you will renounce all pretensions to my daughter, we will furnish you with riches, sufficient, with the handsomeness of your person, to gain the greatest princess in the world, provided you will give a solemn oath never to discover the way to this place.' I fell down on my knees before him, and cried out—'Here take me, shut me up, kill me, cut me in a thousand pieces, I will never renounce Isyphena.' He said no more, but that their laws must be obeyed. I observed tears in his eyes, as he went out, which made me see he was in earnest. I had scarce time to reflect on my miserable state, or rather was incapable of any reflection at all, when four persons came in with a dismal heaviness in their looks, and bade me come along with them; they were to conduct me to the place of my confinement. In the mean time, the Pophar goes to his daughter, and tells her the same thing, only adding, that I was to be sent back to my own country, loaded with such immense riches as might procure me the love of any woman in the world. 'For,' says he, 'those Barbarians, meaning the Europeans, will marry their daughters to any one who has but riches enough to buy them; the men will do the same with respect to the women; let the woman be whose daughter she

\* The author being an Italian, did not think black hair so beautiful.

• will: if she had but money enough to  
 • purchase a kingdom, a king would  
 • marry her.' Before he had pronounced  
 all this, Isyphena had not strength to  
 hear it out, but fell down in a swoon at  
 his feet: when she was come to herself,  
 he endeavoured to comfort her, and add-  
 ed, that she was to have the young Po-  
 phar's son, a youth about her age; for  
 though he was not old enough to govern,  
 he was old enough to have children. He  
 went on and told her, I was to have a  
 statue erected in honour of me, to be  
 crowned by the fairest woman in all Me-  
 zorania; 'Which,' says he, 'is judged  
 'to be yourself; and, if you refuse it,  
 'Amnophilla is to be the person.' This  
 was the most beautiful woman next Isy-  
 phena, and by some thought equal to  
 her, whose signs of approbation and lik-  
 ing to my person I had taken no notice  
 of, for the sake of Isyphena. She an-  
 swered with a resolution that was sur-  
 prizing, even to her father, that she  
 would die before she would be wanting  
 to her duty, but that their laws allowed  
 her to chuse whom she pleased for her  
 husband without being undutiful; that  
 as for the crowning of the statue, she ac-  
 cepted of it, not for the reason he gave,  
 but to pay her last respects to my me-  
 mory, who, she was sure, would never  
 marry any one else. As for the young  
 Pophar, she would give her answer when  
 this ceremony was over. When all things  
 were ready for it, there was publick pro-  
 clamations made in all parts of the Nome,  
 that whereas I had brought into the  
 kingdom, and freely communicated to  
 them, the noble art of painting, I was to  
 have a publick statue erected in my ho-  
 nour, to be crowned with a crown of  
 flowers by the hand of the fairest woman  
 in all Mezorania. Accordingly, a statue  
 of full proportion, of the finest polished  
 marble, was erected in one of their spa-  
 cious squares, with my name engraven  
 on the pedestal in golden characters, set-  
 ting forth the service I had done the com-  
 monwealth, &c. The statue had the  
 picture of Isyphena in one hand, and the  
 emblems of the art in the other. The  
 last kindness I was to receive, was to be  
 permitted to see the ceremony with a per-  
 spective glass, from the top of a high  
 tower belonging to the place of my con-  
 finement, from whence I could discern  
 every minute circumstance that passed.  
 Immediately the crowd opened to make  
 way for Isyphena, who came in the re-

gent's triumphant chariot, drawn by  
 eight white horses, all caparisoned with  
 gold and precious stones, herself more  
 resplendent than the sun they adored.  
 There was a scaffold, with a throne upon  
 it, just close to the statue, with gilt steps  
 for her to go up to put the crown on the  
 head of it. As soon as she appeared, a  
 shout of joy ran through the whole crowd,  
 applauding the choice of her beauty,  
 and the work she was going to perform;  
 then proclamation was made again for  
 the same intent, setting forth the reasons  
 of the ceremony. When all was silent,  
 she steps from the throne to the degrees  
 with the crown in her hand, holding it  
 up to be seen by all, supported by Am-  
 nophilla and Menisa, two of the most  
 beautiful virgins after herself. There  
 appeared a serenity in the looks of Isy-  
 phena beyond what could be expected;  
 expressing a fixed resolution at the same  
 time: as soon as she had put the crown  
 on the head of the statue, which was ap-  
 plauded with repeated shouts and accla-  
 mations, she stood still for some time,  
 with an air that shewed she was deter-  
 mined for some great action; then turn-  
 ing to the officers, ordered them to make  
 proclamation, that every one should re-  
 mark what she was going to do. A  
 profound silence ensuing through the  
 whole assembly, she went up the steps  
 again, and taking out the most conspi-  
 cuous flower in the whole crown, first  
 put it in the right-hand of the statue,  
 and then clapt it into her bosom, with  
 the other two she had received from me  
 before, as a sign of her consent for mar-  
 riage, which could not be violated.  
 This occasioned a shout ten times louder  
 than any before, applauding such an  
 heroick act of constancy as had never  
 been seen in Mezorania. The regent ran  
 up to her, and embracing her with tears  
 of joy trickling down his cheeks, said,  
 she should have her choice, since she had  
 fulfilled the law, and supplied all defects  
 by that extraordinary act of fidelity:  
 and immediately gave orders to have  
 that heroick action registered in the pub-  
 lick records, for an example and encour-  
 agement of constancy to posterity. But  
 the people cried out—'Where is the  
 'man! where is the man! Let their con-  
 'stancy be rewarded immediately—'

*Here the reader, as well as the pub-  
 lisher, will lament the irreparable  
 loss of the sheets, which were mislaid*



at his coming over; he does not pretend to charge his memory with what they contained; just having had time to run them over in the Italian, when Signor Rhedi got them copied out for him. As far as the publisher remembers, the lost sheets contained several discourses between the Pophar and Gaudentio, concerning religion, philosophy, politicks, and the like; with the account of the loss of his wife and children, and some other accidents that befel him during his stay in the country, which, as we shall see, induced him to leave the place; with several curious remarks of Signor Rhedi; all which would doubtless have given a great deal of satisfaction to the reader. But no one can be so much concerned for the loss as the publisher, since they cannot now be repaired, by reason of the death of the same Signor Rhedi, never to be sufficiently regretted by the learned world.]

These discourses\* made very great impressions on the mind of a person of so much penetration as the regent was, in so much that he seemed resolved, when his regency was out, which wanted now but a year, to go along with me into Europe, during the stay he was to make at Grand Cairo, that he might have an opportunity of examining matters at the fountain head; wisely judging a consideration of such consequence, as that of religion, to be no indifferent thing. For my own part, notwithstanding the beauty and riches of the country, I could find no satisfaction in a place where I had lost all that was dear to me, though I had the comfort to have my dear Isyphena, and her three children, all baptized by my own hand before they died: neither could length of time allay my grief; but, on the contrary, every thing I saw revived the memory of my irreparable loss. I considered the instability of the fleeting joys of this world, where I thought I had built my happiness, for a man of my fortune, on the most solid foundation. But alas! all was gone, as if it had been but a dream, and the adorable Isyphena was no more. The good old Pophar was in a very little better condition, having lost his dearest daughter, and his little grand-children,

particularly the eldest boy, who is in that picture with his mother. This reflection on the vanity of human felicity, made him more disposed to hear the truths of our divine religion, so that he was resolved to go and search further into the reasons for it. There was another yet more forcible reason induced me to solicit the Pophar for my return to my native country, which was the care of my future state. I had lived so many years without the exercise of those duties our church obliges us to perform, and, though I had not been guilty of any great crimes, I was not willing to die out of her bosom: however, to do all the good I could to a country where I had once enjoyed so much happiness, this being the last year we were to stay, I at length persuaded the regent, that there might be some danger of an invasion of his country, from the opposite side towards the southern tropick; at least, I did not know but there might be some habitable climate not so far over the sands, as towards Libya and Egypt. I had often signified my thoughts to him in that respect. I told him, that though his kingdom was safe, and inaccessible to all but ourselves on that side, it was possible it might be nigher the great ocean on the opposite one, or that the sands might not be of such extent; or in fine, there might be ridges of mountains, and from them rivers running into the ocean, by which, in process of time, some barbarous people might ascend, and disturb their long uninterrupted rest, without any fence to guard against such an emergency. This last thought alarmed him; so we were resolved to make a new trial, without communicating the design to any but the chief council of five, where we were sure of inviolable secrecy. What confirmed me in my notion was, that when we were on the utmost point of our mountains southward, looking over the desarts, I could perceive something like clouds, or fogs, hanging always towards one part. I imagined them to be fogs covering the tops of some great mountains, which must have habitable vales. Being resolved to make a trial, we provided all things accordingly, and set out from the furthest part of the kingdom southwards, taking only five persons in our company, steering our course directly towards that point of the horizon,

\* Probably about the Christian religion, which are lost, as aforesaid.

• will: if she had but money enough to  
 • purchase a kingdom, a king would  
 • marry her.' Before he had pronounced  
 all this, Isyphena had not strength to  
 hear it out, but fell down in a swoon at  
 his feet: when she was come to herself,  
 he endeavoured to comfort her, and add-  
 ed, that she was to have the young Po-  
 phar's son, a youth about her age; for  
 though he was not old enough to govern,  
 he was old enough to have children. He  
 went on and told her, I was to have a  
 statue erected in honour of me, to be  
 crowned by the fairest woman in all Me-  
 zorania; 'Which,' says he, 'is judged  
 to be yourself; and, if you refuse it,  
 Amnophilla is to be the person.' This  
 was the most beautiful woman next Isy-  
 phena, and by some thought equal to  
 her, whose signs of approbation and lik-  
 ing to my person I had taken no notice  
 of, for the sake of Isyphena. She an-  
 swered with a resolution that was sur-  
 prizing, even to her father, that she  
 would die before she would be wanting  
 to her duty, but that their laws allowed  
 her to chuse whom she pleased for her  
 husband without being undutiful; that  
 as for the crowning of the statue, she ac-  
 cepted of it, not for the reason he gave,  
 but to pay her last respects to my me-  
 mory, who, she was sure, would never  
 marry any one else. As for the young  
 Pophar, she would give her answer when  
 this ceremony was over. When all things  
 were ready for it, there was publick pro-  
 clamations made in all parts of the Nome,  
 that whereas I had brought into the  
 kingdom, and freely communicated to  
 them, the noble art of painting, I was to  
 have a publick statue erected in my hon-  
 our, to be crowned with a crown of  
 flowers by the hand of the fairest woman  
 in all Mezorania. Accordingly, a statue  
 of full proportion, of the finest polished  
 marble, was erected in one of their spa-  
 cious squares, with my name engraven  
 on the pedestal in golden characters, set-  
 ting forth the service I had done the com-  
 monwealth, &c. The statue had the  
 picture of Isyphena in one hand, and the  
 emblems of the art in the other. The  
 last kindness I was to receive, was to be  
 permitted to see the ceremony with a per-  
 spective glass, from the top of a high  
 tower belonging to the place of my con-  
 finement, from whence I could discern  
 every minute circumstance that passed.  
 Immediately the crowd opened to make  
 way for Isyphena, who came in the re-

gent's triumphant chariot, drawn by  
 eight white horses, all caparisoned with  
 gold and precious stones, herself more  
 resplendent than the sun they adored.  
 There was a scaffold, with a throne upon  
 it, just close to the statue, with gilt steps  
 for her to go up to put the crown on the  
 head of it. As soon as she appeared, a  
 shout of joy ran through the whole crowd,  
 applauding the choice of her beauty,  
 and the work she was going to perform;  
 then proclamation was made again for  
 the same intent, setting forth the reasons  
 of the ceremony. When all was silent,  
 she steps from the throne to the degrees  
 with the crown in her hand, holding it  
 up to be seen by all, supported by Am-  
 nophilla and Menisa, two of the most  
 beautiful virgins after herself. There  
 appeared a serenity in the looks of Isy-  
 phena beyond what could be expected;  
 expressing a fixed resolution at the same  
 time: as soon as she had put the crown  
 on the head of the statue, which was ap-  
 plauded with repeated shouts and accla-  
 mations, she stood still for some time,  
 with an air that shewed she was deter-  
 mined for some great action; then turn-  
 ing to the officers, ordered them to make  
 proclamation, that every one should re-  
 mark what she was going to do. A  
 profound silence ensuing through the  
 whole assembly, she went up the steps  
 again, and taking out the most conspi-  
 cuous flower in the whole crown, first  
 put it in the right-hand of the statue,  
 and then elapt it into her bosom, with  
 the other two she had received from me  
 before, as a sign of her consent for mar-  
 riage, which could not be violated.  
 This occasioned a shout ten times louder  
 than any before, applauding such an  
 heroick act of constancy as had never  
 been seen in Mezorania. The regent ran  
 up to her, and embracing her with tears  
 of joy trickling down his cheeks, said,  
 she should have her choice, since she had  
 fulfilled the law, and supplied all defects  
 by that extraordinary act of fidelity:  
 and immediately gave orders to have  
 that heroick action registered in the pub-  
 lick records, for an example and encour-  
 agement of constancy to posterity. But  
 the people cried out—'Where is the  
 man! where is the man! Let their con-  
 stancy be rewarded immediately—'

*Here the reader, as well as the pub-  
 lisher, will lament the irreparable  
 loss of the sheets, which were mislaid*  
 at



*at his coming over; he does not pretend to charge his memory with what they contained; just having had time to run them over in the Italian, when Signor Rhedi got them copied out for him. As far as the publisher remembers, the lost sheets contained several discourses between the Pophar and Gaudentio, concerning religion, philosophy, politicks, and the like; with the account of the loss of his wife and children, and some other accidents that befel him during his stay in the country, which, as we shall see, induced him to leave the place; with several curious remarks of Signor Rhedi; all which would doubtless have given a great deal of satisfaction to the reader. But no one can be so much concerned for the loss as the publisher, since they cannot now be repaired, by reason of the death of the same Signor Rhedi, never to be sufficiently regretted by the learned world.]*

These discourses\* made very great impressions on the mind of a person of so much penetration as the regent was, in so much that he seemed resolved, when his regency was out, which wanted now but a year, to go along with me into Europe, during the stay he was to make at Grand Cairo, that he might have an opportunity of examining matters at the fountain head; wisely judging a consideration of such consequence, as that of religion, to be no indifferent thing. For my own part, notwithstanding the beauty and riches of the country, I could find no satisfaction in a place where I had lost all that was dear to me, though I had the comfort to have my dear Isyphena, and her three children, all baptized by my own hand before they died: neither could length of time allay my grief; but, on the contrary, every thing I saw revived the memory of my irreparable loss. I considered the instability of the fleeting joys of this world, where I thought I had built my happiness, for a man of my fortune, on the most solid foundation. But alas! all was gone, as if it had been but a dream, and the adorable Isyphena was no more. The good old Pophar was in a very little better condition, having lost his dearest daughter, and his little grand-children,

particularly the eldest boy, who is in that picture with his mother. This reflection on the vanity of human felicity, made him more disposed to hear the truths of our divine religion, so that he was resolved to go and search further into the reasons for it. There was another yet more forcible reason induced me to solicit the Pophar for my return to my native country, which was the care of my future state. I had lived so many years without the exercise of those duties our church obliges us to perform, and, though I had not been guilty of any great crimes, I was not willing to die out of her bosom: however, to do all the good I could to a country where I had once enjoyed so much happiness, this being the last year we were to stay, I at length persuaded the regent, that there might be some danger of an invasion of his country, from the opposite side towards the southern tropick; at least, I did not know but there might be some habitable climate not so far over the sands, as towards Libya and Egypt. I had often signified my thoughts to him in that respect. I told him, that though his kingdom was safe, and inaccessible to all but ourselves on that side, it was possible it might be nigher the great ocean on the opposite one, or that the sands might not be of such extent; or in fine, there might be ridges of mountains, and from them rivers running into the ocean, by which, in process of time, some barbarous people might ascend, and disturb their long uninterrupted rest, without any fence to guard against such an emergency. This last thought alarmed him; so we were resolved to make a new trial, without communicating the design to any but the chief council of five, where we were sure of inviolable secrecy. What confirmed me in my notion was, that when we were on the utmost point of our mountains southward, looking over the desarts, I could perceive something like clouds, or fogs, hanging always towards one part. I imagined them to be fogs covering the tops of some great mountains, which must have habitable vales. Being resolved to make a trial, we provided all things accordingly, and set out from the furthest part of the kingdom southwards, taking only five persons in our company, steering our course directly towards that point of the horizon,

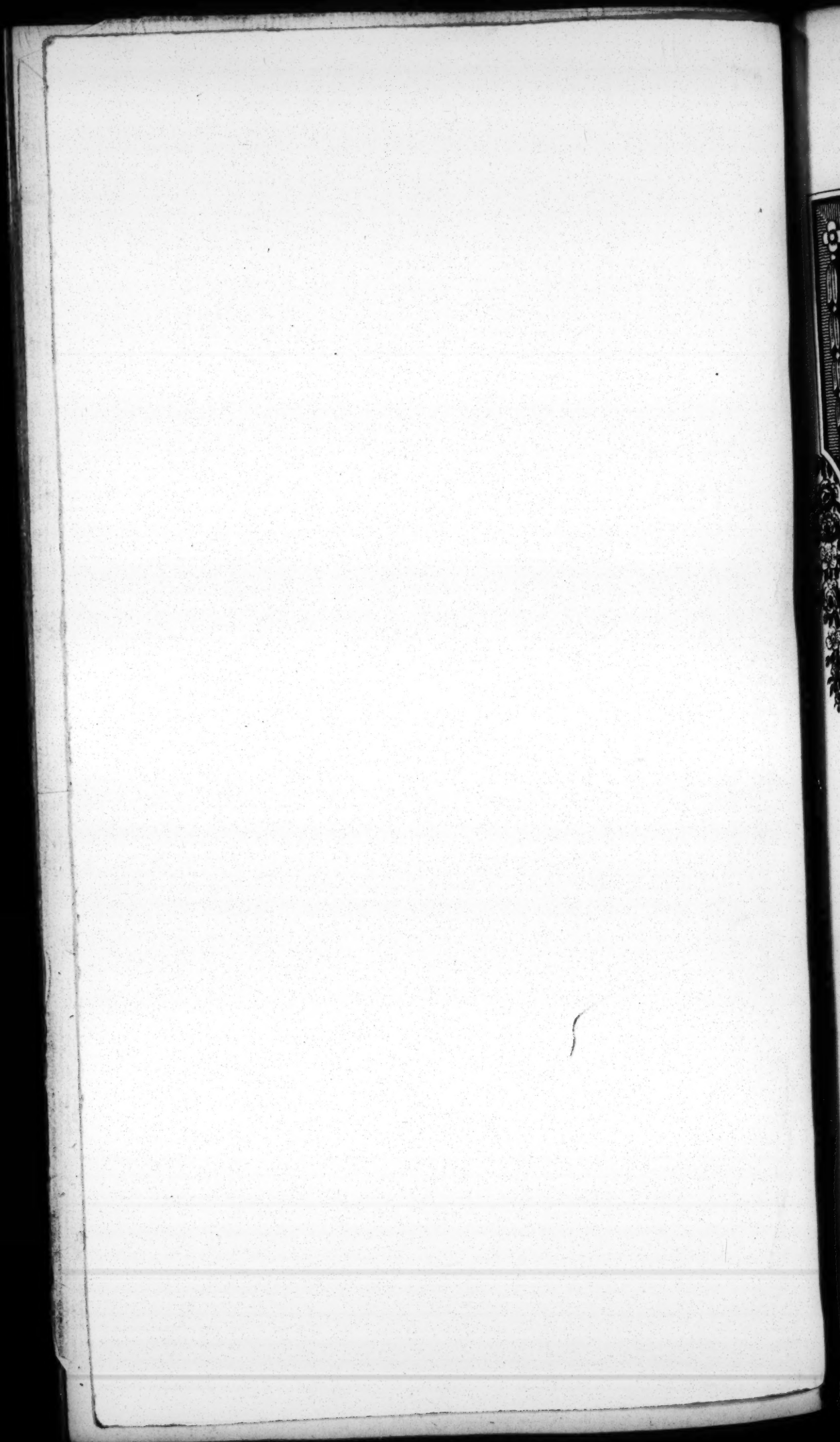
\* Probably about the Christian religion, which are lost, as aforesaid.

where I observed the thick air always hanging towards one place. We took provisions and water but for ten days, leaving word that they should not trouble themselves about us, unless we made a considerable stay, because in case we found mountains, we should always find springs and fruits to subsist on, by making a further search into the country: otherwise, if we saw no hopes at the five days end, we would return the other five, and take fresh measures. The third day of our voyage, we found the desarts nothing so barren as we expected, the ground grew pretty hard, and the fourth day we discovered some tufts of moss and shrubs, by which we conjectured we should soon come to firm land; the evening of that day we discovered the tops of hills, but farther off than we thought, so that though we travelled at a great rate all that night and most of the next day, we could only arrive at the foot of them the fifth day at night. After some little search we came to a fine spring, and, to our comfort, no signs of inhabitants; if there had, we should have returned immediately to take further advice. The next morning we got up to the top of the highest hill to discover the country; but found it to be only the point of a vast mountainous country, like the worst part of our Alps, though there were some fertile vales and woods, but no footsteps of it's ever having been inhabited, as we believed, since the creation. Finding we could make good provision for our return, we were in no great pain about time; but wandered from place to place, viewing and observing every way. After proceeding along those craggy hills and precipices in this manner for five days, they began to lessen towards our right, but seemed rather to increase the other way: at length, in the most dismal and horrid part of the hill-brow, one of our young men thought he spied something like the figure of a man, sitting by a little spring under a craggy rock just below us; we sent three of our people round another way to keep him from running into the wood, while the Pophar and myself stole quietly over the rock where he was. As soon as he saw us, he whips up a broken chink in the rock, and disappeared immediately: we were sure he could not get from us, so we closed and searched, till we found a little cave in the windings of the rock, where was his retiring place.

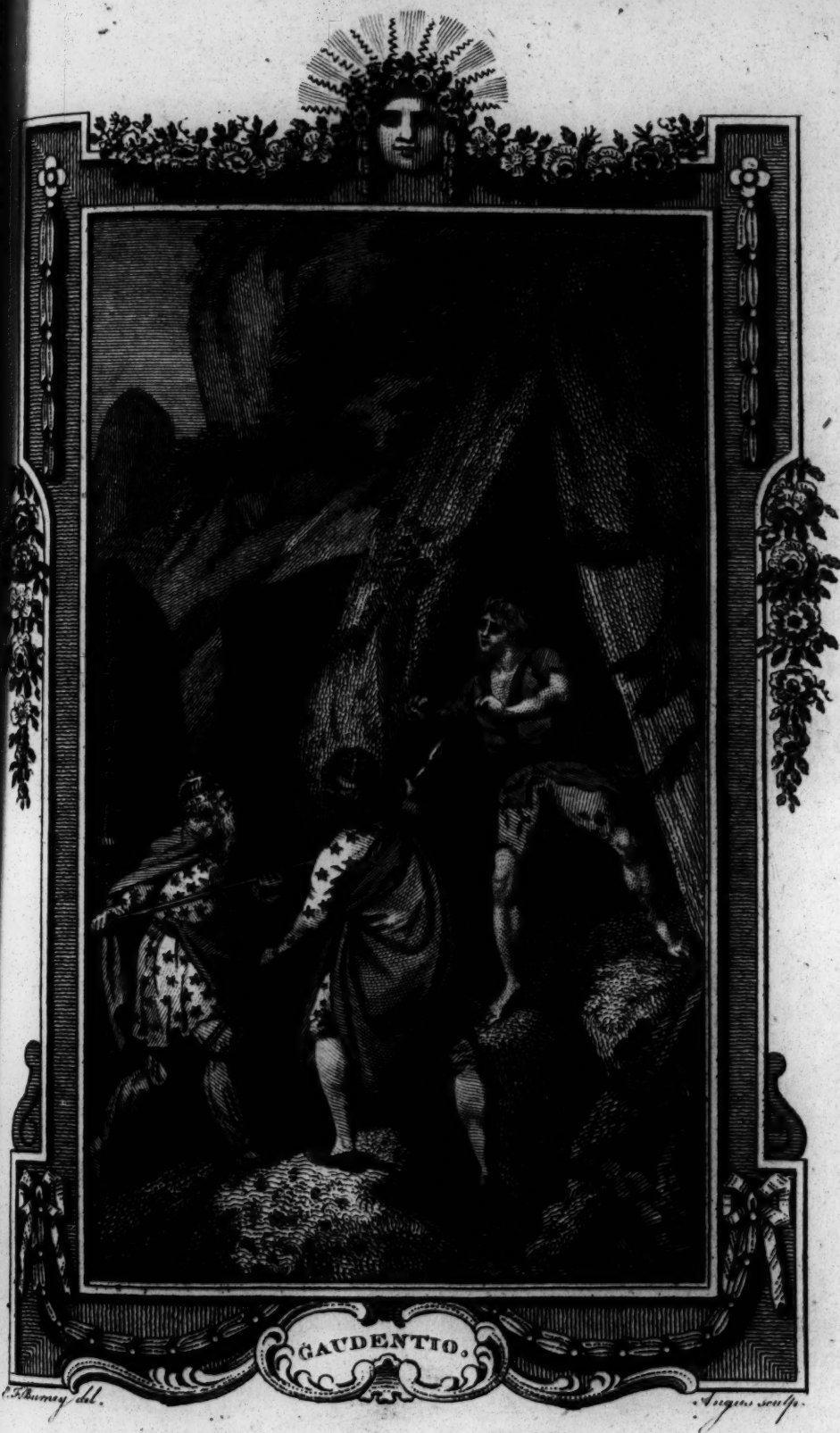
His bed was made of moss and leaves, with little heaps of dried fruits, of different sorts, for his sustenance. When he saw us, he was surprized, and rushed at us like a lion, thinking to make his way through us, but being all five at the mouth of the cave, he stood ready to defend himself against our attempts. Viewing him a little nigher, we saw he had some remains of an old tattered coat, and part of a pair of breeches, with a ragged sash, or girdle, round his waist, by which, to our great surprize, we found he was an European. The Pophar spoke to him in *Lingua Franca*, and asked him who, or what he was; he shook his head as if he did not understand us. I spoke to him in French, Italian, and Latin, but he was a stranger to those languages; at length he cried 'Inglis, 'Inglis.' I had learned something of that language when I was a student at Paris: for knowing my father had a mind I should learn as many languages as I could, I had made an acquaintance with several English and Scotch students in that university, particularly with one F. Johnson, an English Benedictine; and could speak it pretty well for a foreigner, but had almost forgot it for want of use. I bid him take courage and fear nothing, for we would do him no harm. As soon as ever he heard me speak English, he fell down on his knees, and begged us to take pity on him, and carry him to some habitable country, where he might possibly get an opportunity of returning home again; or, at least, of living like a human creature. Upon this he came out to us, but looked more like a wild beast than a man; his hair, beard, and nails, were grown to a great length, and his mien was as haggard, as if he had been a great while in that wild place; though he was a stout well built man, and shewed something above the common rank. We went down to the fountain together, where he made us to understand, that his father was an East India merchant, and his mother a Dutch woman of Batavia; that he had great part of his education in London, but being very extravagant, his father, whose natural son he was, had turned him off, and sent him to Batavia, to his mother's friends; that by his courage and industry, he was in a way of making his fortune, being advanced to be a lieutenant in the Dutch guards at Batavia; but was unhappily cast away



st,  
f-  
en  
ed  
his  
at  
dy  
ts.  
he  
pat,  
h a  
nit,  
and  
oke  
him  
his  
I  
and  
hole  
lis,  
of  
at  
d a  
ges  
ac-  
nd  
ar-  
g-  
it  
l-  
id  
or  
is  
ll  
o  
e  
y  
e  
e







Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. April 1. 1786.





on the coast of Africa, where they had been on a particular adventure: that he and his companions, four in number, wandering up in the country to seek provisions, were taken by some strange Barbarians, who carried them a vast unknown way into the continent, designing to eat them, or sacrifice them to their inhuman gods, as they had done by his companions. But being hale and fat at the time of his taking, they reserved him for some particular feast; that, as they were carrying him through the woods, another party of Barbarians, enemies to the former, met them, and fell a fighting for their booty: which he perceiving, knowing he was to be eaten if he staid, flunk away in the scuffle into the thickest woods, hiding himself by day, and marching all night he did not know where, but, as he conjectured, still higher into the country. Thus he wandered from hill to hill, and wood to wood, till he came to a desert of sands, which he was resolved to try to pass over, not daring to return back, for fear of falling into the hands of those merciless devourers. He passed two days and two nights without water, living on the fruits he carried with him, as many as he could, till he came to this mountainous part of the country, which he found uninhabited; taking up his abode in that rock, where he never had any hopes of seeing a human creature again: neither did he know himself where he was, or which way to go back. In fine, he told us he had lived in that miserable place now upwards of five years. After we had comforted him, as well as we could, I asked him which way the main sea lay, as near as he could guess, and how far he thought it was to it? He pointed with his hand towards the south, a little turning towards the east, and said, he believed it might be thirty or forty days journey, but advised us never to go that way; for we should certainly be devoured by the Barbarians. I asked him whether the country was habitable from that place down to the sea; he told me Yes, except that desert we had passed; but whether it was broader in other places he could not tell.

All the time he was speaking, the Popphareyed him from top to toe; and calling me aside—'What monster,' says he, 'have we got here? There is a whole le-

gion of wild beasts in that man. I see the lion, the goat, the wolf, and the fox, in that one person.' I could not forbear smiling at the Popphar's skill in physiognomy, and told him, we should take care he should do no harm. Then I turned to the man, and asked him, whether he would conform himself to the laws and rites of the country, if we carried him among men again, where he should want for nothing. He embraced my knees, and said, he would conform to any laws or any religion, if I would but let him see a habitable country again. I stared at the man, and began to think there was some truth in the Popphar's science. However I told him, if he would but behave like a rational creature, he should go along with us: but he must suffer himself to be blindfolded till he came to the place. He started a little, and seemed to be prodigious suspicious, lest we should deceive him. But on my assuring him on the faith of a man, that he should come to no harm, he consented.

After we had refreshed ourselves, being both glad and concerned for the information we had received of the nature of the country, which was the intent of our journey, in order to guard against all inconveniences, we covered his eyes very close, and carried him back with us, sometimes on foot, sometimes on one of the spare dromedaries, till we arrived safe from where we set out. Then we let him see where he was, and what a glorious country he was come into. We cloathed him like ourselves, that is, in our travelling dress, to shew he was not an entire stranger to our race. He seemed lost in admiration of what he saw, and embraced me with all the signs of gratitude imaginable. He readily conformed to all our customs, and made no scruple of assisting at all their idolatrous ceremonies, as if he had been as good a heathen as the best of them. Which I seeing, without declaring myself to be a christian, told him I had been informed, the people of the country, where he was educated, were christians; and wondered to see him join in adoring the sun. —'Pugh!' says he, 'some bigotted people make a scruple; but most of our men of sense think one religion is as good as another.' By this I perceived our savage was of a new set of people,

which I had heard of before I left Italy, called Politici\*, who are a sort of atheists in masquerade. The Pophar, out of his great skill in physiognomy, would have no conversation with him, and commanded me to have a strict eye over him. However, the information he had given us of the possibility of invading the kingdom the way he came, answered the intent of our voyage, and my former conjectures; about which there was a grand council held, and orders given to secure the foot of our outermost mountain southwards, which ran a great way into the desert; so that it was sufficient to guard against any of those barbarous invaders of the continent. But to return to our European savage, for he may be justly called so, being more dangerous in a commonwealth than the very Hickfoes themselves; though he was a person who had had a tolerable civilized education, bating the want of all sense of religion, which was owing to his perpetual conversation with libertines. He had a smattering of most kinds of polite learning, but without a bottom in any respect. After he had been with us some time, his principles began to shew themselves in his practice. First, he began to be rude with our women; married or single, it was all alike to him, and by an unaccountable spirit of novelty or contradiction, our women seemed to be inclined to be very fond of him; so that we were at our wits ends about him. Then he began to find fault with our government, despising and condemning all our ceremonies and regulations: but his great aim was, to pervert our youth, enticing them into all manner of liberties, and endeavouring to make them believe, that there was no such thing as moral evil in nature; that there was no harm in the greatest crimes, if they could but evade the laws and punishments attending them. As I had endeavoured to create a confidence in him, he came to me one day, and said, that since I was an European as well as himself, we might make ourselves men for ever, if I would join with him: You see, says he, these men cannot fight: nay, will rather be killed themselves, than kill any one else; can't you shew me the way out of this country, where we will get a troop of stout fellows well armed, and come and

plunder all the country? We shall get immense riches, and make ourselves lords and masters of all.' I heard him with a great deal of attention, and answered him, that I thought the project might easily take, only for the horrid wickedness of the fact; especially for us two, who had received such favours from the Pophar and his people: he, in his being delivered from the greatest misery; and myself, in having been freed from slavery, and made one of the chief men of the kingdom: that the action would deserve to be branded with eternal infamy, and the blackest ingratitude: beside the infinite villainies, injustices, crimes, and deaths of innocent persons, who must perish in the attempt; which would always stare us in the face, and torment us with never-ceasing stings of conscience till our death. 'Conscience!' says he, 'that's a jest; a mere engine of priestcraft: all right is founded in power; let us once get that, and who will dispute our right? As for the injustice of it, that's a mere notion; distinction of crimes, mere bigotry, and the effect of education, ushered in under the cloak of religion. Let us be but successful, and I'll answer for all your scruples.' I told him, it was a matter not to be resolved on on a sudden; and that I would consider on it. But I bid him be sure to keep his matters to himself. I went immediately to the Pophar, and gave an account of what had passed. He was struck with horror at the recital; not so much for the consequences, as that human nature could be brought to such a monstrous deformity. 'If,' says he, 'your Europeans are men of such principles, who would not fly to the furthest corner of the earth to avoid their society? Or rather, who can be sure of his life among such people? Whoever thinks it no greater crime in itself to kill me, than to kill a fly, will certainly do it, if I stand in his way. If it were lawful,' continued he, 'by our constitutions, to kill this man, he deserves a thousand deaths who makes it lawful to destroy all the world besides.' I answered, that all the Europeans were not men of his principles, nor even those of his nation, who were generally the most compassionate and best-natured men in the world. But

\* These Politici were fore-runners of our modern free-thinkers, whose principles tend to the destruction of all human society, as our author shews incomparably well by and by.



that he was of a new set of wretched people, who called themselves Deists, and interiorly laughed at all religion and morality, looking upon them as mere engines of policy and priestcraft. 'Interiorly!' says he; 'yes, and would cut any man's throat exteriorly and actually, if it were not for fear of the gallows. Shut him up,' cried he, 'from all commerce of men, lest his breath should infect the whole world; or rather, let us send him back to his cave, to live like a wild beast; where, if he is devoured by the savages, they do him no injury, on his own principles.' I represented to him, that we were just on our journey back to Grand Cairo, where we might carry him blind-fold, that he should not know our way over the sands, and there give him his liberty; but that we would shut him up till then. This being agreed on, I took a sufficient number of men to seize him; and to do it without any mischief, for he was as stout as a lion, we contrived to come upon him in his bed, where we caught him with one of our young women. Three of our men fell upon him at once, and kept him down, while the rest tied his hands and legs, and carried him into a strong hold, whence it was impossible for him to escape. The woman was shut up apart, according to our laws. When he found himself taken, he called me by the most cruel names he could think on, as the most wicked and treacherous villain that ever was, thus to betray him, and the trust he had put in me. 'Yes,' says I, 'it is a crime to discover your secrets, and no crime in you to subvert the government, and set all mankind a cutting one another's throats, by your monstrous principles:' so I left him for the present. Some time after, I went to him, and told him, our council had decreed he should be carried back from whence he came, and be delivered over to the savages, either to be devoured by them, or to defend himself by his principles, as well as he could. He cried out, sure we would not be guilty of such horrid barbarity! 'Barbarity!' said I, 'that's a mere jest: they will do you no injury; if your flesh is a rarity to them, when they have you in their power, they have full right to make use of it.' He begged by all that was dear, we would not send him to the savages; but rather kill him on the spot. 'Why,' says I, 'you are

worse than the greatest cannibals; because they spare their friends, and only eat their enemies; whereas your principles spare nobody, and acknowledge no tie in nature.' At length he owned himself in a mistake, and seemed to renounce his errors; when I told him, if he would engage his most solemn promise to suffer himself to be blind-folded, and behave peaceably, we would carry him to a place where he might find an opportunity to return to his own country. 'But,' says I, 'what signifies promises and engagements in a man who laughs at all obligations, and thinks it as just and lawful to break them, as to make them?' No; he cursed himself with the most dreadful imprecations, if he were not tractable in all things we should command him. 'But,' says he again, 'won't you deliver me back to the savages?' I answered in the same tone—'Should we do you any wrong if we did?' At length, to appease him, I promised him faithfully we would put him in a way to return into his own country: but bid him consider, if there were no such thing as right and wrong, what would become of the world, or what security could there be in human life?

In a few weeks, the time drew on for our great journey to Grand Cairo, where I was in hopes of seeing my native country once more. All things were now as good as ready; the Popphar and myself had other designs than usual, and were in some pain to think of leaving that once so happy country. Though, as I said, all things that could make me happy, were buried with my dear Isyphena. The Popphar had some serious thoughts of turning Christian: the evidences of our religion were soon perceived by a person of his deep penetration; though persons of little learning, and great vices, pretend they do not see them. But, like a wise man, he was resolved to examine into it, in the places where it was exercised in the greatest splendor. We provided a good quantity of jewels, and as much gold as we could well carry, for our present expences at Grand Cairo, and elsewhere, in future exigencies. I went to my Deist in his grotto, and threw him as much gold and jewels as were sufficient to glut his avarice, and make him happy in his brutal way of thinking. But I would not trust myself with him alone, for all his promises, as he on his side expressed still a diffidence

diffidence of trusting any body; I suppose, from the consciousness of his own vile principles. Then I threw him a blinding-cap, which we had made for him, that he should not see our way over the deserts. This cap was made like a head-piece, with breathing-places for his mouth and nose, as well as to take in nourishment, opening at the back part, and clasping with a spring behind, that being once locked, he could not open it himself. He put it on his head two or three times, before he durst venture to close it. At length he clasped it, and he was as blind as a beetle. We went to him and tied his hands, which he let us do quietly enough; but still begged us, that we would not betray him to the savages. I bid him think once more, that now his own interior sense told him that to betray him would be a crime, by consequence there was such a thing as evil.

All things being in readiness, we mounted our dromedaries. The Pophar and all the rest kissed the ground as usual: I did the same; out of respect to the place which contained the remains of my never too much lamented Isyphena, the ashes of whose heart are in the hollow of the stone, whereon is her picture. Not to mention the ceremonies of our taking leave, we were conducted in a mournful manner over the bridge, and launched once more into the ocean of sands and deserts which were before us. Our savage was on a dromedary which would follow the rest, but led by a cord fastened to one of them for security. It stumbled with him twice or thrice, and threw him off once, but without any great hurt. But the fear of breaking his neck put him into a great agony, and though he was as bold as a lion on other occasions, he was prodigiously startled at the thoughts of death. We arrived at Grand Cairo at the usual period of time without any particular disaster. As soon as we were settled, the Pophar ordered me to send the Deist packing as soon as we could. 'This brutal race,' says he, 'next to the Cannibals, are the fittest company for him.' I unlocked the blinding-helmet, and told him we had now fulfilled our promise; that he was at Grand Cairo, where he might find some way or other to return into Europe; and, to convince him, carried him to some European merchants, who assured him of the same. Delivering to

him his gold and jewels, begged him to reflect on his obligations to us, and the grateful acknowledgments due to our memory on that account: we had taken him from a miserable solitude, where he lived more like a wild beast than a man; and where he was in danger of being found and devoured by the cannibals: we had brought him into one of the happiest countries in the world, if he would but have conformed to it's laws; and now had given him his liberty to go where he pleased, with riches sufficient to make him easy, and benefits to make him grateful all his life. I then took my leave of him. But to our sorrow we had not done with him yet. As soon as the Pophar and the rest had performed the ceremony of visiting the tombs of their ancestors, or rather the places where the tombs had been, the good old man and myself began to think of measures for our journey into Italy. He ordered his people to stay at Grand Cairo till the next annual caravan; and in case he did not return by that time, they were to go home, and he would take the opportunity of the then next following caravan, because he was upon business that nearly concerned him. We had agreed with a master of a ship to carry us to Venice, which, as I had the honour to acquaint your Reverences before, was a French ship, commanded by Monsieur Godart. We had fixed the day to go on board, when, behold! our savage, at the head of a band of Turks, came and seized every one of us, in the name of the great Bassa. By great good fortune, while I staid at Grand Cairo, I had the grateful curiosity to inform myself what was become of the former Bassa's daughter we left there five and twenty years ago. The people told me, the daughter was married to the Grand Sultan, and was now sultaneß, mother to the present sultan, and regent of the empire; adding, that her brother was their present great Bassa. This lucky information saved all our lives and liberties. We were carried prisoners before the great Bassa, the faithless savage accusing us of crimes against the state; that we were immensely rich, (a crime of itself sufficient to condemn us) and could make a discovery of a country of vast advantage to the Grand Signior. To be short, we had all been put to the torture, had not I begged leave to speak a word or two in private to the great Bassa. There I told



told him who I was; that I was the person who had saved his sister's (the now empress) life; and, to convince him, told him all the circumstances except that of her love, though he had heard something of that too: I shewed him the ring she had given me for a remembrance, (which he also remembered) adding, that we were innocent men, who lived honestly, according to our own laws, coming there to traffick, like other merchants, and had been traduced by one of the greatest villains upon earth. In a word, this not only got us off, and procured us an ample passport from the great Bassa for our further voyage; but he also ordered the informing wretch to be seized, and sent to the galleys for life. He offered to turn Turk, if they would spare him. But being apprized of his principles, they said he would be a disgrace to their religion; and ordered him away immediately. Upon which, seeing there was no mercy, being grown mad with rage and despair, before they could seize his hands, he drew out a pistol, and shot himself through the head; not being able to find a worse hand than his own. The Popbar, good man! bore these misfortunes with wonderful patience, though he assured me his greatest grief was, to see human nature so far corrupted, as it was in that impious wretch, who could think the most horrid crimes were not worth the notice of the supreme Governor of the universe. 'But we see,' says he, 'that Providence can make the wicked themselves the instruments of it's just vengeance: for can any thing be so great a blot upon human nature, as to be it's own destroyer, when the very brutes will struggle for life till the last gasp?' However, he was uneasy till he had left that hateful place. Besides, there were some signs of the plague breaking out; so we went down to Alexandria as fast as we could: and to encourage Monsieur Godart, he made him a present beforehand of a diamond of a considerable value. We set sail for Candy, where Monsieur Godart was to touch, the 16th day of August, Anno 1712. But, alas! whether these troubles, or not being used to the sea, or some infection of the plague he had caught at Grand Cairo, or all together, is uncertain; but that great good man fell so dangerously ill, that we thought we should scarce get him to Candy. He assured me by the

knowledge he had of himself and nature, that his time was come. We put in at the first creek, where the land air a little refreshed him; but it was a fallacious crisis, for in a few days all of us perceived his end draw near. Then he told me he was resolved to be baptized, and die in the Christian faith. I got him instructed by a reverend priest belonging to Monsieur Godart; his name was Monsieur Le Gresse, whom I had formerly known when he was a student in the college for foreign missions; and, what was the only comfort I had now left, I saw him baptized, and yield up the ghost with a courage becoming the greatest hero, and the best of men. This was the greatest affliction I ever had in my whole life, after the death of his daughter. He left me all his effects, which were sufficient to make me happy in this life, if riches could procure happiness.

We had some days to stay, before Monsieur Godart could make an end of his business. I was walking in a melancholy posture along the sea-shore, and reflecting on the adventures of my past life, occasioned by those very waters whereon I was looking, when I came, or rather my feet carried me, to a hanging rock, on the side of the island, just on the edge of the sea, and where there was scarce room enough for two or three persons to stand privately under covert, very difficult to be discerned; where going to sit down and indulge my melancholy thoughts, I espied a Turk and two women, as if concealed under the rock; my own troubles not allowing me the curiosity to pry into other people's concerns, made me turn short back again; but the elder of the two women, who was mistress of the other, seeing by my dress, that I was a stranger and a Christian, (being now in that habit) came running to me, and falling on her knees, laid hold of mine, and begged me to take pity on a distressed woman, who expected every moment to be butchered by one of the most inhuman villains living, from whose violence they had fled and hid themselves in that place, in expectation of finding a boat to convey them off. I lifted her up, and thought I saw something in her face I had seen before, though much altered by years and troubles. She did the same by me, and at length cried out — 'O heavens! it can't be the man I hope!' I remembered confusedly something

thing of the voice, as well as the face; and after a deal of astonishment, found it was the Curdish lady, who had saved my life from the pirate Hamets. 'Oh!' says she, 'I have just time enough to tell ye, that we expect to be pursued by that inhuman wretch, unless you can find a boat to carry us off before he finds us, otherwise we must fall a sacrifice to his cruelty.' I never staid to consider consequences, but answered precipitately, that I would do my best; so ran back to the ship as fast as I could, and with the help of the first man, brought the boat to the rock. I was just getting out to take hold of her hand, when we heard some men coming rushing in behind us, and one of them cried—'Hold, villain; that wicked woman shan't escape so;' and fires a pistol, which missing the lady, shot the man attending her, into the belly, so that he fell down presently, though not quite dead. I had provided myself with a Turkish scymitar, and a case of pistols, under my sash, for my defence on ship-board; I saw there was no time to deliberate, so I fired directly at them, for they were three, and had the good luck to drop one of them. But Hamets, as I found afterwards, minding nothing but his revenge on the woman, fired again, and missing the lady a second time, shot her maid through the arm, and was drawing his scymitar to cleave her down, when I stepped in before the lady, but shooting with too much precipitancy, the bullets passed under his arm, and lodged in the body of his second; he started back at the fire so near him, which gave me time to draw my scymitar. Being now upon equal terms, he retired two or three paces, and cried—'Who art thou, that venturest thy life so boldly for this wicked woman?' I knew his voice perfectly well, neither was he so much altered as the lady. 'I am the man,' said I, 'whose life thou wouldst have taken, but this lady saved it, whose cause I shall now revenge as well as my own, and my dear brother's.' We made no more words, but fell to it with our scymitars, with all our might; he was a brave stout man, and let me see I should have work enough to hew him down. After several attacks, he gave me a considerable wound on my arm, and I cut him a-crofs the cheek a pretty large gash, but not to endanger his life; at length the justice of my cause would have it, that striking off his turban at one

stroke, and with another falling on his bare head, I cut him quite into the brains, that some of them spurted on my scymitar. He fell down, as I thought, quite dead, but after some time, he gave a groan, and uttered these words—'Mamet, thou art just; I killed this woman's husband, and she has been the occasion of my death.' With these words he gave up the ghost. By this time, the lady's attendant was dead; so I took the lady and her woman, without staying, for fear of farther difficulties, and putting them into the boat, conducted them to the ship. Monsieur Godart was extremely troubled at the accident, saying we should have all the island upon us, and made great difficulty to receive the lady; but upon a just representation of the case, and an abundant recompence for his effects left behind, we got him to take her in, and hoist sail for Venice as fast as we could. The lady had now time to thank me for her delivery, and I to congratulate my happy fortune in being able to make a return for her saving my life. During our passage, I begged her to give us the history of her fortunes since I left her, which I prognosticated then could not be very happy, considering the hands she had fallen into. Says she—'You remember I made a promise to Hamets, that I would marry him on condition he would save your life.'—'Yes, Madam,' said I; 'and am ready to venture mine once more in return for so great a benefit.'—'You have done enough,' says she; and with that acquainted us, that when I was sold off to the strange merchants, Hamets carried her to Algiers, and claimed her promise. 'I was entirely ignorant,' says she, 'of his having a hand in the death of my dear lord; but, on the contrary, the villain had contrived his wickedness so cunningly, that I thought he had generously ventured his own life to save his; and being, as you know, a very handsome man, of no very inferior rank, and expressing the most ardent love for my person, and I having no hopes of returning into my own country, fulfilled my promise made on your account, and married him. We lived contentedly enough together for some years, bating that we had no children, till his constant companion, who was the man attending me at the rock, and was killed by that villain, fell out about a fair slave which Omar (so he

was



was called) had bought, or taken prisoner in some of their piracies. Hamets, as well as he, fell in love with her, and would have taken her for his concubine, but the other concealed her from him. They had like to have fought about it. Hamets vowed revenge: the other, who was the honestest man of the two, was advised to be upon his guard, and to deliver the woman to him; which he never would consent to, but was resolved to run all risques, rather than the young lady should suffer any dishonour. In the mean time, her friends, who were rich people of Circassia, hearing where she was, made interest to have her ransomed, and taken from both of them, by the authority of the Dey of Algiers, who was otherwise no friend to Hamets. This last had been informed, that Omar, because he could not enjoy her himself, contrived to have her ransomed from his rival, and I myself had a hand in the affair, for which he threatened revenge on both of us; and being also disgusted with the Dey, he gave orders to have his ships ready to remove and follow his trade of piracy. Then Omar informed me how Hamets had murdered my first husband, by hiring the Arabians to do it, while he pretended to defend him, to avoid my suspicions, with such circumstances of the fact, that I saw the truth was too clear. The horror and detestation I was in is not to be expressed, both against Hamets, and against myself, for marrying such a monster. Omar added, that he was certainly informed, that as soon as he had us out at sea, he would make away with us both; and told me, if I would trust myself with him, he would undertake to carry me off in a boat, and conduct me into my own country. I was resolved to fly to the farthest end of the earth, to avoid his loathed sight; so resolved to pack up our most precious things, and go along with him. He procured a boat to meet us, at a little creek of the island, by a person he thought he could confide in; but who betrayed the whole affair to Hamets: of which also we had timely notice, and removing from the station where we expected the boat, fled along the coast as privately as we could, and hid ourselves under the rock where you found us, expecting either to find some favourable occasion to be carried off, or

to die by the hand of Hamets, which we certainly had done, had not he met with his just death by yours.' The lady had scarce given us this short account of her misfortunes, and we were not only congratulating her for her deliverance, but admiring the justice of Providence, which reached this villain, both to bring him to condign punishment for the murder of the innocent Curd, and make him die by my hand, five and twenty years after he had robbed and killed my brother with all his crew, sold me for a slave, and attempted to kill me also, had not the strange lady saved my life: I say, we were making such like reflections on this strange accident, when they told us from above, two vessels seemed to come full sail upon us, as if they were pursuing us with all their might. We made all the sail we could, but our ship being pretty heavily loaded, we saw we must be overtaken. Some of us were resolved to fight it out to the last, in case they were enemies. But Monsieur Godart would not consent to it, saying the Bassa's passport would secure us, or by yielding peaceably we might be ransomed. They came up to us in a short time, and saluted us with a volley of shot, to shew what we were to trust to. We struck our sails, and let them board us without any resistance. Monsieur Godart, with too mean a spirit, as I thought, told them with cap in hand, that he would give them any satisfaction, and assured them he would not willingly fall out with the subjects of the Grand Signior. They seized every man of us, and spying the lady and me—'There they are,' said they; 'the adulterers and her lover with the spoils of her murdered husband.' Which words shewing they were Turks in pursuit of us from Candy, quite confounded Monsieur Godart at once, and made me imagine I should have much ado to find any quarter. They hauled us upon deck, making shew, as if they were going to cut off my head. I never thought myself so nigh death before; but had the presence of mind to cry out in the hearing of the whole crew, that we were servants of the Grand Sultaneff; and produced the passport of the great Bassa her brother, charging them on their peril not to touch us. This stopt their fury a little: some cried out—'Hold, have a care what you do; others cried—'Kill them all, for robbers and murderers; the Sultaneffs will never protect such villains as these.' When the hurly-

burly was something appeased, Monsieur Godart reasoned the case with them, and told them, if they murdered us, they could never conceal it, since all the crew of the three ships heard our appeal to the Sultaness's mother, the passport setting forth, among other things, that I had saved the life of the Grand Sultaness. This brought them to a demur. The chief of them began to consult among themselves what was best to be done; when I, begging leave to speak, told them, if they would carry us to Constantinople, we would willingly submit our lives, and all that belonged to us, in case the Sultaness did not own the fact, and take us into her protection: that, in case they put us to death, some one or other in such a number, would certainly inform against them, the consequences of which they knew very well. I touched also, but tenderly, on the death of Hamets, and our innocence. The first part of my speech made them pass over the other. They demurred again, and at length resolved to carry us to Constantinople, and proceed against us by way of justice, not doubting to make good prize of us, on account of our being Christians. Thus was our journey to Venice interrupted for some time by this accident. When we came to the port, Monsieur Godart got leave to send our case to Monsieur Savigni, the French resident; who found means to represent to the Sultaness's mother, that there was a stranger in chains, who pretended to be the person who had saved her life when she was at Grand Cairo; and would give her proofs of it, if he could be admitted to her highness's presence. I would not send the ring she gave me, for fear of accidents. The Sultaness gave orders immediately, I should be brought to her presence, saying, she could easily know the person, for all it was so long before. I put on the same kind of dress I was in when she first saw me, which, if your Reverences remember, was the travelling dress of the Mezoraniens. When I was brought into her presence, I scarce knew her, being advanced to a middle age, and in the attire of the Grand Sultaness: she looked at me with a great deal of emotion, and bid me approach nigher. I immediately fell on my knees, and holding the ring in my hand which she gave me at parting, as if I were making a present of it—'Madam,' said I, 'behold a slave, who had the honour to save your highness's life, and now begs

' his own, and that of his companions; and most humbly requests your highness to accept of this jewel, as a token of our last distress.' Instead of answering me, which put me in great pain, as doubting whether I was right or not, she turned to her highest attendants, and said, in a pretty soft voice—'Tis he; I know him by his voice, as well as dress; and rising off her seat, came and took the ring. Then looking attentively at it—'Yes, Sir,' said she, 'I own the ring and bearer, and acknowledge you to be the person who saved my life. For which reason I give you yours, and all that belongs to you; forbidding all, under pain of death, to give you the least trouble; and withal ordered a very rich Turkish robe to be thrown over my shoulders, as a sign of her favour. Immediate orders were sent to the port, to set Monsieur Godart and all his crew at liberty, and to feast us as particular friends of the Grand Sultaness. The company being dismissed, she made a sign for me to stay, having further business with me. When all were gone but two of her chief favourite women, she came to me without any ceremony, and taking me in her arms, as if I had been her brother, embraced me with a great deal of tenderness; her joy to see me making her lay aside her grandeur, and yield to the transports of undisguised nature. She led me by the hand into a most magnificent apartment, saying—'Come, Signor Gaudentio, for so I think you are called; after you have refreshed yourself, you shall tell me your adventures.' She made no scruple to sit down with me, being now not only mistress of herself, but of the whole Ottoman empire, as well as sure of her attendants. We had a refreshment of all the rarities of the east, with the richest wines for me, though she drank none herself. 'I long to hear your adventures,' continued she, 'of so many years absence.' So I told her, in short, how I was carried by that strange merchant into an unknown country, without telling her the way we went thither, where I had married the regent's daughter. She blushed a little at that part, and shewed the remains of all her former beauty. But it put me in mind of my own indiscretion to touch on such a nice point. She passed it off with a great deal of goodness; and, recovering myself, I continued to acquaint her of the reasons of my return, as well as how I was



I was taken by Hamets the first time, which she had not been acquainted with before; and, lastly, how I met with the same Hamets again, killed him, and by that means came into that misfortune. 'I called it then a misfortune!' said I, 'but look upon it now to be one of my greatest happinesses; since by that occasion, I have the honour of seeing your highness in that dignity of which you are the most worthy of any one in all the Ottoman empire.' She seemed to be in admiration at the course of my life, and added—'I think, Signor, you said you were married; is your spouse with you?'—'No, Madam,' said I: 'alas! she is dead, and all my children; and I am going to retire, and lead a private life in my native country.' With these and other discourses we passed the greatest part of the day, when she bid me go back to the ship in publick, attended with all the marks of her high favours; but she said she would send for me privately in the evening; 'For,' added she, 'I have a thousand other things to ask you.' Accordingly I was introduced privately into the seraglio; which she, being Sultaness regent, could easily do. There she entirely laid aside her grandeur. We talked all former passages over again, with the freedom of friends and old acquaintances. In our conversation, I found she was a woman of prodigious depth of judgment, as indeed her wading through so many difficulties, attending the inconstancy of the Ottoman court, particularly the regency, evidently shewed. I made bold to ask her, how she arrived at that dignity, though she was the only person in the world that deserved it; and took the liberty to say in a familiar way, that I believed her highness was now sensible of the service I did her, in refusing to comply with her former demands, since the fates had reserved her to be the greatest empress in the world, not the consort of a wandering slave. Had I not been entirely assured of her goodness, I should not have dared to have touched on that head. She blushed with a little confusion at first, but putting it off with a grave air—'Grandeur,' says she, 'does not always make people happy. Ten thousand cares attend a crown; but the indifference I have for all things makes me sit easier than it might have done otherwise.' 'It is true,' continued she, 'that young people very seldom see their own

good, and oftentimes run into such errors, by the violence of their passions, as not only deprive them of greater blessings, but render their misfortunes irretrievable. Some time after you were gone, my father the Grand Bassa was accused, by some underhand enemies, of mal-administration, a thing too frequent in our court, and privately condemned to be strangled. But having some trusty friends at the Porte, he had notice of it, before the orders came: he immediately departed from Grand Cairo, and took a round-about way towards Constantinople, to prevent, as the way is, the execution of them. He sent me before to prepare matters, and to intercede with the young Sultan, my late deceased lord, for his life, leaving word where I might let him know of the success of my intercession. I presented myself before the Sultan with that modest assurance, which my innocence, my youth, and grief for my father's danger, gave me. I fell down on my knees, and with a flood of tears, begged my father's life. The Sultan looked at me with some amazement; and, whatever it was he saw in my face, not only granted my request, and confirmed my father in his former post, but made a profession of love to my person, and even continued it with more constancy than I thought a grand Sultan capable of, having so many exquisite beauties to divert him, as they generally have. I consented, to save my father's life; and whether the indifference I had for all men made him more eager, I cannot tell; but I found I was the chief in his favour. He had some other mistresses now and then, of whom he was very fond. But never teasing him, nor fretting myself about it, I easily found I continued to have the solid part of his friendship; and bringing him the first male child, the present emperor, I became chief Sultaness; and by his death, and the minority of my son, am now regent; by which I am capable of rendering you all the service the Ottoman empire can perform, which I esteem one of the happiest events of my life.' I returned her the most profound bow, and humble thanks a heart full of the most lively sense of gratitude could profess. She offered me the first post of the Ottoman empire, if I would but become a Mussulman, or only so in appearance,

ance. 'Or if,' said she, 'you had rather  
' be nigh me, you shall be the chief of-  
' ficer of my household. I have had as-  
' surance enough,' added she, 'that  
' neither your inclinations nor principles  
' can be forced; neither will I endeavour  
' to do it, but leave you as much at  
' your liberty as your generous master  
' did, when he bought you of Hamets.'  
I expressed all the grateful acknowledg-  
ments possible for so generous an offer;  
but assured her, with an air that even ex-  
pressed sorrow for the refusal, that I lay  
under religious obligations, which bound  
me indispensably to return into my  
own country. She was become now as  
much mistress of her inclinations, as she  
had acquired prudence and experience by  
the long command she had over her hus-  
band's heart, and the whole Ottoman  
empire. So after a month's stay, she let  
me go, with all the marks of honour her  
dignity would suffer her to express. She  
would have punished the persons that  
took us, but I interceded for them.  
Monsieur Godart, who was well reward-  
ed for the loss of his time and confine-  
ment, can testify the truth of this history.  
The last words she said to me, were, to  
bid me remember, that a Turk and a  
woman were capable of generous grati-  
tude and honour, as well as Christians.  
So we set sail for Venice.

[*Secretary.* Here one of the inquisitors  
came in with a gold medal in his hand,  
and turning to the examinee, said—  
' Signor Gaudentio, I believe you have  
' found a relation in Italy, as well as  
' in Africa, and one of the same na-  
' tion with your mother. It is the  
' Persian lady you brought with you,  
' whom we secured at the same time  
' we did you; but would not let you  
' know it, till we could procure intel-  
' ligence from Venice, and a person  
' who could speak the Persian lan-  
' guage. We own we find her in the  
' same story with you, and nothing  
' material against you from Venice.  
' Upon the examining her effects, we  
' found this medal of the same make  
' with yours, by which you knew who  
' your mother was. She says it was  
' about her neck, when she was sold  
' to the Persian merchant. But since  
' we shall give you both your liber-  
' ties in a short time, she shall be  
' brought unto you, and we give you  
' leave to say what you will to her, with

' the interpreter by.' Upon this the lady  
was introduced, with her maid and the  
interpreter. As soon as she saw our  
examinee in good health, and seem-  
ingly at liberty, a joyful serenity spread  
itself over her countenance, such as we  
had not seen before. Our examinee  
asked her, to be pleased to give an ac-  
count of her life, as far as she thought  
proper, and how she came by that  
medal.

*Lady.* 'All I know of myself,' said  
she, 'is, that the noble Curd; who  
' bought me of a Persian merchant for  
' a companion for his only daughter,  
' about my own age, whom he thought  
' I resembled very much, often de-  
' clared to me, that the merchant  
' bought me of a Turkish woman,  
' who left that medal about my neck,  
' supposing it to be some charm or  
' preservative against distempers, or  
' because a sister of mine had the same  
' fastened about her neck, with a gold  
' chain, which could not be taken off  
' without breaking; but who, or where  
' the sister was, I never knew. The  
' noble Curdish lord, who bought me,  
' grew prodigious fond of me, and  
' bred me up as another daughter; and  
' not only so, but having an only son,  
' something older than myself, he con-  
' nived at a growing love he perceived  
' between his son and myself; which,  
' after some difficulties on both sides,  
' at length came to a marriage; though  
' it cost my generous benefactor and  
' father-in-law his life. For another  
' young lord of Curdistan, falling in  
' love with me, often challenged Prince  
' Cali (that was my dear husband's  
' name) to decide their pretensions by  
' the sword, which I had always for-  
' bid him to do; saying, that man  
' should never be my husband who ex-  
' posed my reputation by a duel; since  
' the world would never believe, that  
' any man would expose his life for a  
' woman, unless there had been some  
' encouragement given on both sides;  
' whereas I never gave the least to any  
' but Prince Cali. However, the  
' other met him one day, and attack-  
' ed him so furiously, that Prince Cali  
' was forced to kill him in his own  
' defence, making a thousand pro-  
' testations, that he had almost suffer-  
' ed himself to be killed, rather than  
' to disobey my orders. But the fa-  
' ther of the prince who was slain,  
' with



with a company of assassins, laid an ambuscade for Prince Cali and his father, in which this latter was killed, and most of his train. But by the valour of his son, and two of his companions, the chief assassins were laid dead on the spot, and the rest put to flight. But Prince Cali, after the death of his father, fearing further treachery of that nature, presently after we were married, removed to another part of the kingdom, from whence being sent on a commission by his king, he was inhumanly murdered by the barbarous Hamets. This is the sum of my unfortunate life, till I had the good fortune to save yours.'

*Secretary.* We permitted the nephew and the aunt (for so they were found to be by the medal) to embrace one another; Signor Gaudentio assuring her, that by all appearance he was the son of her sister and the mother's sister that was lost, and both of them preserved to save each other's life. The lady then declared, she would turn Christian, since her misfortunes were come to that period; and that she was resolved to leave the world, and retire into some of our monasteries. We put her among the nuns of our order, where she promises to be a signal example of virtue and piety. The Inquisitors ordered the examinee to give them the remaining part of his life, which, in all appearance, if they found his story to agree with their informations, might purchase him his liberty. Upon which Gaudentio proceeded as follows.]

I was telling your Reverences, that at length we set sail from the Porte, and steered our course directly for Venice, where we happily arrived, without any considerable accident, the 10th of December 1712. I do not question but your Reverences are already informed, that such persons did arrive at Venice about that time. Monsieur Godart is well known to several merchants, and some of the senators of that famous city, whom he informed of what he saw with his own eyes. But there were some particular passages, unknown to your Reverences, wherein I had like to have made a shipwreck of my life, after so many dangers; as I did here of my liberty; though I do not complain, but only represent my hard fortune to your

Reverences consideration. It happened to be the carnival time during our stay at Venice. Curiosity led me, as well as a great many other strangers of the first rank, to see the nature of it. I put on my Mezorianian habit, spangled with suns of gold, and the fillet-crown on my head, adorned with several jewels of very great value, which I believe was the most remarkable and magnificent dress of any there, I went unmasked, being assured my face and person were unknown to all that world. Every one's eyes were upon me. Several of the masqueraders came up to me, and talked to me, particularly the ladies. They spoke to me in several languages, as Latin, French, Italian, Spanish, High Dutch, &c. I answered them all in the Mezorianian language, which seemed as strange to them as my dress. Some of them spoke to me in the Turkish and Persian languages, in *Lingua Franca*, and some in an Indian language I really did not understand. I answered them still in the Mezorianian, of which no body knew one word. Two ladies particularly, very richly dressed, followed me wherever I went. The one, as it proved afterwards, was Favilla, the celebrated courtesan, in the richest dress of all the company; the other was the lady who was with me when I was taken up, and who was the occasion of my settling at Bologna; I mean the true occasion, for I will conceal nothing from your Reverences. Notwithstanding their diligence, I got away unknown at that time. The next time I came, I appeared in the same dress, but with richer jewels. I had more eyes upon me now than before. The courtesan pursued me again in a different, but richer dress than the former. At length she got me by myself, and pulling off her masque, shewed me a wonderful pretty face, only there was too fierce an assurance in it. She cried in Italian—'O Signor, you are not so ignorant of our language, as you would seem to be! you can speak Italian and French too: though we do not know who you are, we have learnt you are a man of honour. If you would not understand our words, you may understand a face, which very great personages have been glad to look at,' and with that put on one of the most ensnaring airs I ever saw. I do not doubt but your Reverences have heard of that famous courtesan, and how the greatest man

man in Venice was once her slave. I was just going to answer her, when the other lady came up, and pulling off her mask also, said almost the same things, but with a modesty more graceful than her beauty, which was most exquisite, and the likest the incomparable Isyphena I ever saw. I made them both a most respectful bow, and told them, that it had been much safer for me if I had kept myself still unknown, and never seen such dangerous charms. I pronounced these words with an air that shewed that I was more pleased with the modesty of the last lady than the commanding assurance of the first. The courtesan, though a little nettled at the preference she thought I gave the other, put on a more serious air, and said she had been informed there was something very extraordinary in my character, and should be glad to hear more of it by herself; that her name was Favilla, and that she lived in such a street, where I should find her house remarkable enough. The Bolognian lady, whom your Reverences knew very well, and who was then at Venice on account of the death of her uncle, one of the senators, who had left her all his effects, said modestly, if, were I to favour her with a visit, as she had been informed that I was a learned man and a virtuoso, being inclined that way herself, she should be glad of an hour's conversation with me on that subject, telling me her name and where she lived; adding, if I would inform myself of her character, I need not be ashamed of her acquaintance. 'Nor, I hope, of mine, Madam,' says the other, thinking she had been reflected on by that word. It was Monsieur Godart, who, with a levity peculiar to his nation, had made the discovery who I was, though he knew nothing of me but what passed since I came from Grand Cairo. I was going to reply to the ladies, when company came up and broke off the discourse; I was resolved to see neither of them, and would go no more to the assembly, though, almost unavoidably, I saw both afterwards. I enquired into Favilla's character, though I scarce doubted of it by what I saw and heard, and was informed that she was an imperious courtesan, who had enslaved several persons of the first rank, of different nations, and enriched herself by their spoils; this determined me not to see her: but, as Monsieur Godart and myself were

walking to see the town, he brought me, either industriously or accidentally, by her door; she was sitting at the window of one of the most magnificent palaces in Venice, (such spoils had she reaped from her bewitched lovers.) As soon as she espied me, she sent a servant to tell me, that that lady would speak with me. I made some difficulty, but Monsieur Godart told me, a man of honour could not refuse such a favour as that; so I went in, and Monsieur Godart with me. The lady received me with a most charming agreeable air, much different from her former assurance, and conducted me into a most magnificent apartment, leaving Monsieur Godart entertaining a very pretty lady, her companion. Not to detain your Reverences too long, when I would not understand what she meant, she offered me marriage, with the inheritance of all her effects. I was put to the last nonplus; I assured her, with a most profound bow, that though I was not worthy of such a happiness, I had an indispensable obligation never to marry. All the blood immediately came into her face: I did not know what she was going to do, but finding her in that disorder, I made another bow, saying I would consider further on her proposal; and walked directly out of the house, designing to leave Venice as soon as my affairs would give me leave. Some time after Monsieur Godart came to me, and told me he was forced to do as I did; that the lady was in such an outrageous fury, he did not know what might be the consequence. Three nights after, as Monsieur Godart and a young kinsman of his, and myself, were going towards the Rialto, in the dusk of the evening, four ruffians attacked us unawares; two of them set upon me, the other two attacked Monsieur Godart and his kinsman; the poor young gentleman was run through the body the first push; I made shift to disable one of my adversaries, but in doing it, the other run me through the ribs; but the sword took only part of my body, and missing my entrails, the point went out on the side of my back. Monsieur Godart, who, to give him his due, behaved with a great deal of courage and bravery, had killed one of his men, and wounded the other; and the ruffians, seeing us now two to two, thought fit to march off as well as they could. I was forced to be led to my lodging, not doubting but



the wound was mortal, though it proved otherwise. The affair made a great noise about town: we very rationally supposed it was Favilla, who had set the assassins on; but we knew her to be so powerful with the senators, that there was no hopes of justice. While I was recovering, I was told there was a lady with two waiting-women, desired to see me on very earnest business, if it would not be inconvenient to me. (Monsieur Godart would not stir from my bed-side, for fear of accidents.) Who should this be but Favilla, who came all in mourning for my misfortune! I pretended to be a dying man, and took the liberty of telling her of her way of living, to what a dismal pass her passions had brought her; in fine, I said so much, and begged her, by all that was dear to her, to consider her state, that, bursting into a flood of tears, she promised me, if I died, she would become a penitent nun. I effected so much by letters afterwards, that, though I recovered, she performed her promise.

The Bolognian lady had heard of my misfortune; and, by a goodness peculiar to the tender sex, particularly with regard to strangers, she sent often to know how I did, with presents of the richest cordials that could be got in Venice. Finding my illness continued longer than was expected, she sent me word, that though it was not so decent for her to make the first visit, she had heard so much of my adventures, as very much raised her curiosity to hear them from my own mouth, when I was capable of conversation without doing me any prejudice. I had informed myself of her character from very good hands; so that I was very curious to converse with a person of those incomparable talents I heard she was mistress of. She was the only woman, next to Isyphena, and the great Bassa's daughter, I ever much liked in my life. To sum up all in

short, she came several times to see me, insomuch that we contracted the most virtuous friendship, by our mutual inclination to learning and the sympathy of our tempers, that ever subsisted between two persons of different sexes. It was on her account I resolved to settle at Bologna; and having some knowledge in nature and physick, I took on me that character, to be the oftener in her company without scandal. We were neither of us inclined to marry. As she is one of the most virtuous women living; and I am pretty much advanced in years, being both entirely masters of ourselves, we thought our innocent friendship could be offensive to no one. What has passed since I came to this town, I do not doubt but your Reverences are apprized of.

This is a true and full account of my life hitherto. Whatever is blameable in it, I hope your Reverences will pardon, as I submit it entirely to your judgment.

[*Secretary.* As I had the honour to inform you before, we enquired into all these facts, which he said happened to him in the company of Monsieur Godart; which finding to be true, we judged the rest might be so. We asked him if he would conduct some of our missionaries to that strange country he mentioned; he told us he would. But not willing to trust him entirely, as not knowing what he might do with them when he had them in unknown countries, we thought fit to give him his liberty first to go where he would, even out of Italy, with assurances, if he came back of his own accord, we would send missionaries along with him. He went to Venice and Genoa about his concerns, and is now come back, and with us; so that we believe the man to be really what he professes himself to be.]

FINIS.

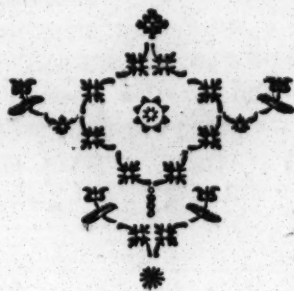




THE  
HISTORY  
AND  
ADVENTURES  
OF AN  
ATOM.

BY DR. SMOLLETT,

IN TWO VOLUMES.



LONDON:

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.

M DCC LXXXVI.







THE  
PUBLISHER TO THE READER.

**I**N these ticklish times, it may be necessary to give such an account of the following sheets, as will exempt me from the plague of prosecution.

On the 7th of March, in the present year 1748, they were offered to me for sale, by a tall thin woman, about the age of threescore, dressed in a gown of Bombazine, with a cloak and bonnet of black silk, both a little the worse for the wear. She called herself Dorothy Hatchet, spinster, of the parish of Old Street, administratrix of Mr. Nathaniel Peacock, who died in the said parish on the fifth day of last April, and lies buried in the church-yard of Islington, in the north-west corner, where his grave is distinguished by a monumental board inscribed with the following triftich:

*Hic, bæc, boc,*  
Here lies the block  
Of old Nathaniel Peacock.

In this particular, any person whatever may satisfy himself, by taking an afternoon's walk to Islington, where, at the White House, he may recreate and refresh himself with excellent tea and hot rolls for so small a charge as eight-pence.

As to the M S. before I would treat for it, I read it over attentively, and found it contained divers curious particulars of a foreign history, without any allusion to, or resemblance with, the transactions of these times. I likewise turned over to Kempfer and the Universal History, and found in their several accounts of Japan, many of the names and much of the matter specified in the following sheets. Finally, that I might run no risque of misconstruction, I had recourse to an eminent chamber-council of my acquaintance, who diligently perused the whole, and declared it was no more actionable than the Vision of Ezekiel, or the Lamentations of Jeremiah the prophet. Thus assured, I purchased the copy, which I now present in print, with my best respects, to the Courteous Reader, being his very humble servant,

BUCKLESBURY.

S. ETHERINGTON,

VIVANT REX ET REGINA.

\*\*\*\*\*

THE

# READER

The first of these is the fact that the world is a very different place from what it was a few years ago. The progress of science and the discovery of new lands have opened up a new world of possibilities. The second is the fact that the world is a very different place from what it was a few years ago. The progress of science and the discovery of new lands have opened up a new world of possibilities.

The third is the fact that the world is a very different place from what it was a few years ago. The progress of science and the discovery of new lands have opened up a new world of possibilities. The fourth is the fact that the world is a very different place from what it was a few years ago. The progress of science and the discovery of new lands have opened up a new world of possibilities.



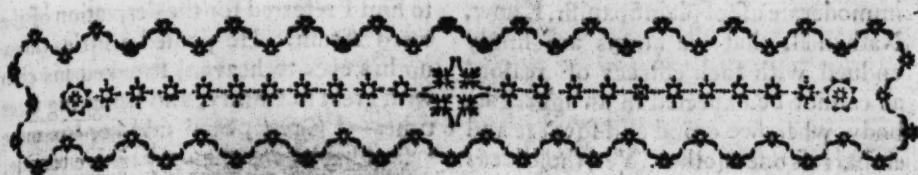




Plate I.

Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co April 15 1786.





THE  
HISTORY AND ADVENTURES  
OF AN  
A T O M.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

THE EDITOR'S DECLARATION.



Nathaniel Peacock, of the parish of St. Giles, haberdasher and author, solemnly declare, That on the third of last August, sitting alone in my study, up three pair of stairs, between the hours of eleven and twelve at night, meditating upon the uncertainty of sublunary enjoyment, I heard a shrill, small voice, seemingly proceeding from a chink or crevice in my own pericranium, call distinctly three times—'Nathaniel Peacock, Nathaniel Peacock, Nathaniel Peacock.' Astonished, yea, even affrighted, at this citation, I replied in a faltering tone—'In the name of the Lord, what art thou?' Thus adjured, the voice answered and said—'I am an atom.' I was now thrown into a violent perturbation of spirit; for I never could behold an atom without fear and trembling, even when I knew it was no more than a composition of dry bones; but the conceit of being in presence of an atom informed with spirit, that is, animated by a ghost or goblin, increased my terrors exceedingly. I durst not lift up mine eyes, lest I should behold an apparition more dreadful than the hand-writing on the wall. My knees knocked together: my teeth chattered: mine hair bristled up so

as to raise a cotton night-cap from the scalp: my tongue cleaved to the roof of my mouth: my temples were bedewed with a cold sweat.—Verily, I was for a season entranced.

At length, by the blessing of God, I recollected myself, and cried aloud—'Avaunt, Satan, in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.'—'Whitelivered caitiff!' said the voice, (with a peculiar tartness of pronunciation) 'what art thou afraid of, that thou shouldest thus tremble, and diffuse around thee such an unfavourable odour? What thou hearest is within thee—is part of thyself. I am one of those atoms, or constituent particles of matter, which can neither be annihilated, divided, nor impaired: the different arrangements of us atoms compose all the variety of objects and essences which nature exhibits, or art can obtain. Of the same shape, substance, and quality, are the component particles, that harden in rock, and flow in water; that blacken in the negro, and brighten in the diamond; that exhale from a rose, and steam from a dunghill. Even now, ten millions of atoms were dispersed in air by that odoriferous gale, which the commotion of thy fear produced; and I can foresee that one of them will be consolidated in a fibre of the olfactory nerve, belonging to a celebrated beauty, whose nostril is excoriated by the immoderate

‘immoderate use of plain Spanish. Know, Nathaniel, that we atoms are singly endued with such efficacy of reason, as cannot be expected in an aggregate body, where we croud and squeeze and embarrass one another. Yet, those ideas which we singly possess, we cannot communicate, except once in a thousand years, and then only, when we fill a certain place in the pineal gland of a human creature, the very station which I now maintain in thine. For the benefit of you miserable mortals, I am determined to promulge the history of one period, during which I underwent some strange revolutions in the empire of Japan, and was conscious of some political anecdotes now to be divulged for the instruction of British ministers. Take up the pen, therefore, and write what I shall unfold.’

By this time my first apprehension vanished; but another fear, almost as terrible, usurped its place. I began to think myself insane, and concluded that the voice was no other than the fantastick undulation of a disturbed brain. I therefore preferred an earnest orison at the throne of grace, that I might be restored to the fruition of my right understanding and judgment. ‘O, incredulous wretch!’ exclaimed the voice, ‘I will now convince thee, that this is no phantasma or hideous dream.—Answer me, dost thou know the meaning and derivation of the word Atom?’ I replied—‘No, verily!’—‘Then I will tell thee,’ said the voice; ‘thou shalt write it down without delay, and consult the curate of the parish on the same subject. If his explanation and mine agree, thou wilt then be firmly persuaded, that I am an actual, independent existence; and that this address is not the vague delirium of a disordered brain. *Atomos* is a Greek word, signifying an indivisible particle, derived from *alpha* privativa, and *temno* to cut.’

I marvelled much at this injunction, which, however, I literally obeyed; and next morning sallied forth to visit the habitation of the curate; but in going thither, it was my hap to encounter a learned physician of my acquaintance, who hath read all the books that ever were published in any nation or language:

to him I referred for the derivation of the word Atom. He paused a little, threw up his eyes to heaven, stroked his chin with great solemnity, and hemming three times—‘Greek, Sir,’ said he, ‘is more familiar to me than my native tongue. I have conversed, Sir, with Homer and Plato, Hesiod and Theophrastus, Herodotus, Thucydides, Hippocrates, Aræus, Pindar, and Sophocles, and all the poets and historians of antiquity. Sir, my library cost me two thousand pounds. I have spent as much more in making experiments; and you must know that I have discovered certain chemical specificks, which I would not divulge for fifty times the sum. As for the word *atomos*, or *atime*, it signifies a scoundrel, Sir, or as it were, Sir, a thing of no estimation. It is derived, Sir, from *alpha* privativa, and *time*, honour. Hence, we call a skeleton an *atomy*, because, Sir, the bones are, as it were, dishonoured by being stripped of their cloathing, and exposed in their nakedness.’

I was sorely vexed at this interpretation, and my apprehension of lunacy recurred: nevertheless, I proceeded in my way to the lodgings of the curate, and desired his explanation, which tallied exactly with what I had written. At my return to my own house, I ascended to my study, asked pardon of my internal monitor; and taking pen, ink, and paper, sat down to write what it dictated, in the following strain.

IT was in the æra of \*Foggien, one thousand years ago, that fate determined I should exist in the empire of Japan, where I underwent a great number of vicissitudes, till at length I was inclosed in a grain of rice, eaten by a Dutch mariner at Firando, and, becoming a particle of his body, brought to the Cape of Good Hope. There I was discharged in a scorbutick dysentery, taken up in a heap of soil to manure a garden, raised to vegetation in a fallad, devoured by an English supercargo, assimilated to a certain organ of his body, which, at his return to London, being diseased in consequence of impure contact, I was again separated, with a considerable portion of putrefied flesh, thrown upon a dunghill, gobbled up, and digested by a duck, of

\* The history of Japan is divided into three different æras, of which Foggien is the most considerable.



which duck your father, Ephraim Peacock, having eaten plentifully at a feast of the cordwainers, I was mixed with his circulating juices, and finally fixed in the principal part of that animalcule, which, in process of time, expanded itself into thee, Nathaniel Peacock.

Having thus particularized my transmigrations since my conveyance from Japan, I shall return thither, and unfold some curious particulars of state-intrigue, carried on during the short period, the history of which I mean to record: I need not tell thee, that the empire of Japan consists of three large islands; or that the people, who inhabit them, are such inconsistent, capricious animals, that one would imagine they were created for the purpose of ridicule: Their minds are in continual agitation, like a shuttlecock tossed to and fro, in order to divert the demons of philosophy and folly. A Japanese, without the intervention of any visible motive, is, by turns, merry and pensive, superficial and profound, generous and illiberal, rash and circumspect, courageous and fearful, benevolent and cruel. They seem to have no fixed principle of action, no certain plan of conduct, no effectual rudder to steer them through the voyage of life; but to be hurried down the rapid tide of each revolving whim, or driven, the sport of every gust of passion that happens to blow. A Japanese will sing at a funeral, and sigh at a wedding; he will this hour talk ribaldry with a prostitute, and the next immerse himself in the study of metaphysics or theology. In favour of one stranger, he will exert all the virtues of hospitality; against another he will exercise all the animosity of the most sordid prejudice: one minute sees him hazarding his all on the success of the most extravagant project; another beholds him hesitating in lending a few copans\* to his friend on undeniable security. To-day, he is afraid of paring his corns; to-morrow, he scruples not to cut his own throat. At one season, he will give half his fortune to the poor; at another, he will not bestow the smallest pittance to save his brother from indigence and distress. He is elated to insolence by the least gleam of success; he is dejected to despondence by the slightest turn of adverse fortune. One hour, he doubts the best established truths; the next, he swallows the most improbable

fiction. His praise and his censure is what a wise man would chuse to avoid, as evils equally pernicious: the first is generally raised without foundation, and carried to such extravagance, as to expose the object to the ridicule of mankind; the last is often unprovoked, yet usually inflamed to all the rage of the most malignant persecution. He will extol above Alexander the Great, a petty officer who robs a hen-roost; and damn to infamy, a general for not performing impossibilities. The same man whom he yesterday flattered with the most fulsome adulation, he will to-morrow revile with the most bitter abuse; and, at the turning of a straw, take into his bosom the very person whom he has formerly defamed as the most perfidious rascal.

The Japanese value themselves much upon their constitution, and are very clamorous about the words Liberty and Property; yet, in fact, the only liberty they enjoy is to get drunk whenever they please, to revile the government, and quarrel with one another. With respect to their property, they are the tamest animals in the world; and, if properly managed, undergo, without wincing, such impositions, as no other nation in the world would bear. In this particular, they may be compared to an ass, that will crouch under the most unconscionable burthen, provided you scratch his long ears, and allow him to bray his belly-full. They are so practicable, that they have suffered their pockets to be drained, their veins to be emptied, and their credit to be cracked, by the most bungling administrations, to gratify the avarice, pride, and ambition, of the most sordid and contemptible sovereigns, that ever sat upon the throne.

The methods used for accomplishing these purposes are extremely simple. You have seen a dancing bear incensed to a dangerous degree of rage, and all at once appeased by firing a pistol over his nose. The Japanese, even in their most ferocious moods, when they denounce vengeance against the Cuboy, or minister, and even threaten the throne itself; are easily softened into meekness and condescension. A set of tall fellows, hired for the purpose, tickle them under the noses with long straws, into a gentle convulsion, during which they shut their eyes, and smile, and quietly suffer their

\* Copan is a gold coin used in Japan, value about forty-three shillings.

pockets to be turned inside out. Nay, what is still more remarkable, the ministry is in possession of a pipe, or rather bullock's horn, which being sounded to a particular pitch, has such an effect on the ears and understanding of the people, that they allow their pockets to be picked with their eyes open, and are bribed to betray their own interests with their own money, as easily as if the treasure had come from the remotest corner of the globe. Notwithstanding these capricious peculiarities, the Japanese are become a wealthy and powerful people, partly from their insular situation, and partly from a spirit of commercial adventure, sustained by all the obstinacy of perseverance, and conducted by repeated flashes of good sense, which almost incessantly gleam through the chaos of their absurdities.

Japan was originally governed by monarchs who possessed an absolute power, and succeeded by hereditary right, under the title of Dairo. But in the beginning of the period Foggien, this emperor became a cypher, and the whole administration devolved into the hands of the prime minister, or Cuboy, who now exercises all the power and authority, leaving the trappings of royalty to the inactive Dairo. The prince, who held the reins of government in the short period which I intend to record, was not a lineal descendant of the ancient Dairos, the immediate succession having failed, but sprung from a collateral branch which was invited from a foreign country in the person of Bupo, in honour of whom the Japanese erected Fakkubasi\*, or the temple of the white horse. So much were all his successors devoted to the culture of this idol, which, by the bye, was made of the vilest materials, that, in order to enrich his shrine, they impoverished the whole empire, yet still with the connivance, and by the influence of the Cuboy, who gratified this sordid passion or superstition of the Dairo, with a view to prevent him from employing his attention on matters of greater consequence.

Nathaniel, you have heard of the transmigration of souls, a doctrine avowed by one Pythagoras, a philosopher of Crotona. This doctrine, though discarded and reprobated by Christians, is nevertheless sound and orthodox, I affirm on the integrity of an atom. Further I shall not explain myself on this subject, though

I might with safety set the convocation and the whole hierarchy at defiance, knowing, as I do, that it is not in their power to make me bate one particle of what I advance: or, if they should endeavour to reach me through your organs, and even condemn you to the stake at Smithfield, verily, I say unto thee, I should be a gainer by the next remove. I should shift my quarters from a very cold and empty tenement, which I now occupy in the brain of a poor haberdasher, to the nervous plexus situated at the mouth of the stomach of a fat alderman fed with venison and turtle.

But to return to Pythagoras, whom one of your wise countrymen denominated *Peter Gore, the wise-acre* of Croton, you must know that philosopher was a type, which hath not yet been fully unveiled. That he taught the metempsychosis, explained the nature and property of harmonies, demonstrated the motion of the earth, discovered the elements of geometry and arithmetick, enjoined his disciples silence, and abstained from eating any thing that was ever informed by the breath of life; are circumstances known to all the learned world: but his veneration for beans, which cost him his life, his golden thigh, his adventures in the character of a courtesan, his golden verses, his epithet of *auris aurea*, the fable of his being born of a virgin, and his descent into hell, are mysteries in which some of the most important truths are concealed.—Between friends, honest Nathaniel, I myself constituted part of that sage's body; and I could say a great deal—but there is a time for all things.—I shall only observe, that Philip Tessier had some reason for supposing Pythagoras to have been a monk; and there are shrewd hints in Meyer's dissertation, *Utrum Pythagoras Judæus fuit, an monachus Carmelita*.

Waving these intricate discussions for the present, (though I cannot help disclosing that Pythagoras was actually circumcised) know, Peacock, that the metempsychosis, or transmigration of souls, is the method which nature and fate constantly pursue, in animating the creatures produced on the face of the earth; and this process, with some variation, is such as the eleusinian mysteries imported, and such as you have read in Dryden's translation of the sixth book

\* Vid. Kempfer, Lib. i.



of Virgil's *Æneid*. The Gods have provided a great magazine or diversorium, to which the departed souls of all animals repair at their dismission from the body. Here they are bathed in the waters of oblivion, until they retain no memory of the scenes through which they have passed; but they still preserve their original crasis and capacity. From this repository, all new created beings are supplied with souls; and these souls transmigrate into different animals, according to the pleasure of the great disposer. For example, my good friend Nathaniel Peacock, your own soul has, within these hundred years, threaded a goat, a spider, and a bishop; and it's next stage will be the carcase of a brewer's horse.

In what manner we atoms come by these articles of intelligence, whether by intuition, or communication of ideas, it is not necessary that you should conceive—Suffice it to say, the gods were merry on the follies of mankind, and Mercury undertook to exhibit a mighty nation, ruled and governed by the meanest intellects that could be found in the repository of pre-existing spirits. He laid the scene in Japan, about the middle of the period Foggien, when that nation was at peace with all her neighbours. Into the mass, destined to sway the sceptre, he infused, at the very article of conception, the spirit, which in course of strangulation had been expelled *a posteriori* from a goose, killed on purpose to regale the appetite of the mother. The animalcule, thus inspired, was born, and succeeded to the throne, under the name of Got-hama-baba. His whole life and conversation was no other than a repetition of the humours he had displayed in his last character. He was rapacious, shallow, hot-headed, and perverse; in point of understanding, just sufficient to appear in publick without a slaving-bib; imbued with no knowledge, illumined by no sentiment, and warmed with no affection, except a blind attachment to the worship of Fakku-basi, which seemed indeed to be a disease in his constitution. His heart was meanly selfish, and his disposition altogether unprincipally.

Of all his recreations, that which he delighted in most, was kicking the breech of his Cuboy, or prime minister, an exer-

cise which he every day performed in private. It was therefore necessary that a Cuboy should be found to undergo this diurnal operation without repining. This was a circumstance foreseen and provided for by Mercury, who, a little after the conception of Got-hama-baba, impregnated the ovum of a future Cuboy, and implanted in it a changeling soul, which had successively passed through the bodies of an ass, a dottril, an apple-woman, and a cow-boy. It was diverting enough to see the rejoicings with which the birth of this Quanbuku\* was celebrated; and still more so to observe the marks of fond admiration in the parents, as the soul of the cow-boy proceeded to expand itself in the young Cuboy. This is a species of diversion we atoms often enjoy. We at different times behold the same spirit, hunted down in a hare, and cried up in an Hector; fawning in a prostitute, and bribing in a minister; breaking forth in a whistle at the plough, and in a sermon from the pulpit; impelling a hog to the sty, and a counsellor to the cabinet; prompting a shoe-boy to filch, and a patriot to harangue; squinting in a goat, and smiling in a matron.

Tutors of all sorts were provided sometimes for the young Quanbuku, but his genius rejected all cultivation; at least the crops it produced were barren and ungrateful. He was distinguished by the name of Fika-kaka, and caressed as the heir of an immense fortune. Nay, he was really considered as one of the most hopeful young Quanbukus in the empire of Japan; for his want of ideas was attended with a total abstinence of pride, insolence, or any other disagreeable vice: indeed his character was founded upon negatives. He had no understanding, no œconomy, no courage, no industry, no steadiness, no discernment, no vigour, no retention. He was reputed generous and good-humoured; but was really profuse, chicken-hearted, negligent, fickle, blundering, weak, and leaky. All these qualifications were agitated by an eagerness, haste, and impatience, that completed the most ludicrous composition, which human nature ever produced. He appeared always in hurry and confusion, as if he had lost his wits in the morning, and was in quest of them all day.—Let me whisper a secret to you, my good friend Peacock.

\* Quanbuku is a dignity of the first order in Japan.

All this bustle and trepidation proceeded from a hollowness in the brain, forming a kind of eddy, in which his animal spirits were hurried about in a perpetual swirl. Had it not been for this *Lusus Naturæ*, the circulation would not have been sufficient for the purposes of animal life. Had the whole world been searched by the princes thereof, it would not have produced another to have matched this half-witted original, to whom the administration of a mighty empire was wholly consigned. Notwithstanding all the care that was taken of his education, Fika-kaka never could comprehend any art or science, except that of dancing bare-headed among the Bonzas at the great festival of Cambadoxi. The extent of his knowledge in arithmetic went no farther than the numeration of his ten fingers. In history, he had no idea of what preceded a certain treaty with the Chinese, in the reign of Queen Syko, who died within his own remembrance; and was so ignorant of geography, that he did not know that his native country was surrounded by the sea. No system of morality could he ever understand; and of the fourteen sects of religion that are permitted in Japan, the only discipline he could imbibe was a superstitious devotion for Fakku-basi, the temple of the white horse. This, indeed, was neither the fruit of doctrine, nor the result of reason; but a real instinct, implanted in his nature for fulfilling the ends of Providence. His person was extremely awkward; his eye vacant, though alarmed; his speech thick, and embarrassed; his utterance ungraceful; and his meaning perplexed. With much difficulty he learned to write his own name, and that of the Dairo; and picked up a smattering of the Chinese language, which was sometimes used at court. In his youth he freely conversed with women; but, as he advanced in age, he placed his chief felicity in the delights of the table. He hired cooks from China at an enormous expence, and drank huge quantities of the strong liquor distilled from rice, which, by producing repeated intoxication, had an unlucky effect upon his brain, that was naturally of a loose flimsy texture. The immoderate use of this potation was likewise said to have greatly impaired his retentive faculty; inasmuch as he was subject upon every extraordinary emotion of spirit, to an involun-

tary discharge from the last of the intestines.

Such was the character of Fika-kaka, entitled by his birth to a prodigious estate, as well as to the honours of Quankuku, the first hereditary dignity in the empire. In consequence of his high station, he was connected with all the great men in Japan, and used to the court from his infancy. Here it was he became acquainted with young Got-hama-baba, his future sovereign; and their souls being congenial, they soon contracted an intimacy, which endured for life. They were like twin particles of matter, which having been divorced from one another by a most violent shock, had floated many thousand years in the ocean of the universe, till at length meeting by accident, and approaching within the spheres of each other's attraction, they rush together with an eager embrace, and continue united ever after.

The favour of the sovereign, added to the natural influence arising from a vast fortune and great alliances, did not fail to elevate Fika-kaka to the most eminent offices of the state, until, at length, he attained to the dignity of Cuboy, or chief minister, which virtually comprehends all the rest. Here then was the strangest phenomenon that ever appeared in the political world. A statesman without capacity, or the smallest tincture of human learning; a secretary who could not write; a financier who did not understand the multiplication-table; and the treasurer of a vast empire, who never could balance accounts with his own butler.

He was no sooner, for the diversion of the Gods, promoted to the Cuboyship, than his vanity was pampered with all sorts of adulation. He was in magnificence extolled above the first Meckad-do, or line of emperors, to whom divine honours had been paid; equal in wisdom to Tensio-dai-sin, the first founder of the Japanese monarchy; braver than Whey-vang, of the dynasty of Chew; more learned than Jacko, the chief pontiff of Japan; more liberal than Shi-wang-ti, who was possessed of the universal medicine; and more religious than Bupo, alias Kobot, who, from a foreign country, brought with him, on a white horse, a book called Kio, containing the mysteries of his religion.

But, by none was he more cultivated than by the Bonzas or clergy, especially the



those of the university Frenoxena\*, so renowned for their learning, sermons, and oratory, who actually chose him, their supreme director, and every morning adored him with a very singular rite of worship. This attachment was the more remarkable, as Fika-kaka was known to favour the sect of Nem-buds-ju, who distinguished themselves by the ceremony of circumcision. Some malicious people did not scruple to whisper about, that he himself had privately undergone the operation: but these, to my certain knowledge, were the suggestions of falsehood and slander. A slight scarification, indeed, it was once necessary to make, on account of his health; but this was no ceremony of any religious worship. The truth was this. The Nem-buds-ju, being few in number, and generally hated by the whole nation, had recourse to the protection of Fika-kaka, which they obtained for a valuable consideration. Then a law was promulgated in their favour; a step which was so far from exciting the jealousy of the Bonzas, that there was not above three, out of one hundred and fifty-nine thousand, that opened their lips in disapprobation of the measure. Such were the virtue and moderation of the Bonzas, and so loth were they to disoblige their great director Fika-kaka.

What rendered the knot of connection between the Dairo Got-hama-baba, and this Cuboy altogether indissoluble, was a singular circumstance, which I shall now explain. Fika-kaka not only devoted himself intirely to the gratification of his master's prejudices and rapacity, even when they interfered the most with the interest and reputation of Japan; but he also submitted personally to his capricious humours with the most placid resignation. He presented his posteriors to be kicked as regularly as the day revolved; and presented them not barely with submission, but with all the appearance of fond desire: and truly this diurnal exposure was attended with such delectation as he never enjoyed in any other attitude.

To explain this matter, I must tell thee, Peacock, that Fika-kaka was from his infancy afflicted with an itching of the podex, which the learned Dr. Woodward would have termed *immanis ardor*

*pruritus*. That great naturalist would have imputed it to a redundancy of cholicky salts, got out of the stomach and guts into the blood, and thrown upon these parts, and he would have attempted to break their colluctations with oil, &c. but I, who knew the real causes of this disorder, simile at these whims of philosophy.

Be that as it may, certain it is, all the most eminent physicians in Japan were consulted about this strange tickling and tingling, and among these the celebrated Fan-sey, whose spirit afterwards informed the body of Rabelais. This experienced leech, having prescribed a course of cathartics, balsamics, and sweeteners, on the supposition that the blood was tainted with a scorbutical itch; at length found reason to believe that the disease was local. He therefore tried the method of gentle friction: for which purpose, he used almost the very same substances which were many centuries after applied by Gargantua to his own posteriors; such as a night-cap, a pillow-bier, a slipper, a poke, a pannier, a beaver, a hen, a cock, a chicken, a calf-skin, a hare-skin, a pigeon, a cormorant, a lawyer's bag, a lamprey, a coif, a lure, nay, even a goose's neck, without finding that *volupté merifique au trou de cul*, which was the portion of the son of Grangousier. In short, there was nothing that gave Fika-kaka such respite from this tormenting titillation as did smearing the parts with thick cream, which was afterwards licked up by the rough tongue of a boar-cat. But the administration of this remedy was once productive of a disagreeable incident. In the mean time, the distemper gaining ground, became so troublesome, that the unfortunate Quanbuku was incessantly in the fidgets, and ran about distracted, cackling like a hen in labour.

The source of all this misfortune was the juxta position of two atoms quarrelling for precedency, in this the Cuboy's seat of honour. Their pressing and squeezing and elbowing and jostling, though of no effect in discomposing one another, occasioned all this irritation and titillation in the posteriors of Fika-kaka. —What! dost thou mutter, Peacock? Dost thou presume to question my veracity? Now by the indivisible rotundity

\* Vid. Hist. Eccles. Japan. Vol. I.

of an atom, I have a good mind, caitiff, to raise such a buzzing commotion in thy glandula pinealis, that thou shalt run distracted over the face of the earth, like Io when she was stung by Juno's gad-fly! What! thou who hast been wrapt from the cradle in visions of mystery and revelation, swallowed impossibilities like lamb's wool, and digested doctrines harder than iron three times quenched in the Ebro! Thou to demur at what I assert upon the evidence and faith of my own consciousness and consistency!—Oh! you capitulate: well, then beware of a relapse—you know a relapsed heretick finds no mercy.

I say, while Fika-kaka's podex was the scene of contention between two turbulent atoms, I had the honour to be posted immediately under the nail of the Dairo's great toe, which happened one day to itch more than usual for occupation. The Cuboy presenting himself at that instant, and turning his face from his master, Got-hama-baba performed the exercise with such uncommon vehemence, that first his slipper, and then his toe-nail, flew off, after having made a small breach in the perineum of Fika-kaka. By the same effort, I was divorced from the great toe of the sovereign, and lodged near the great gut of his minister, exactly in the interstice between the two hostile particles, which were thus in some measure restrained from wrangling; though it was not in my power to keep the peace entirely. Nevertheless, Fika-kaka's torture was immediately suspended; and he was even seized with an orgasm of pleasure, analogous to that which characterises the extacy of love.

Think not, however, Peacock, that I would adduce this circumstance as a proof that pleasure and pain are mere relations, which can exist only as they are contrasted. No; pleasure and pain are simple, independent ideas, incapable of definition; and this which Fika-kaka felt was an extacy compounded of positive pleasure ingrafted upon the removal of pain: but whether this positive pleasure depended upon a particular centre of percussion hit upon by accident, or was the inseparable effect of a kicking and scratching conferred by a royal foot and toe, I shall not at present unfold: neither will I demonstrate the *modus operandi* on the nervous papillæ of Fika-kaka's breech, whether by irritation,

relaxation, undulation, or vibration. Were these essential discoveries communicated, human philosophy would become too arrogant. It was but the other day that Newton made shift to dive into some subaltern laws of matter; to explain the revolution of the planets, and analyse the composition of light; and ever since, that reptile man has believed itself a demi-god—I hope to see the day when the petulant philosopher shall be driven back to his Categories and the Organum Universale of Aristotle, his *οὐσία*, his *ἔλκ*, and his *ὑποκείμενον*.

But waving these digressions, the pleasure which the Cuboy felt from the application of the Dairo's toe-nail was succeeded by a kind of tension or stiffness, which began to grow troublesome just as he reached his own palace, where the Bonzas were assembled to offer up their diurnal incense. Instinct, on this occasion, performed what could hardly have been expected from the most extraordinary talents. At sight of a grizzled beard belonging to one of those venerable doctors, he was struck with the idea of a powerful assuager; and taking him into his cabinet, proposed that he should make oral application to the part affected. The proposal was embraced without hesitation, and the effect even transcended the hope of the Cuboy. The osculation itself was soft, warm, emollient, and comfortable; but when the nervous papillæ were gently stroked, and as it were fondled by the long, elastic, peristaltic, absterive fibres that composed this reverend verriiculum, such a delectable titillation ensued, that Fika-kaka was quite in raptures.

That which he intended at first for a medicine, he now converted into an article of luxury. All the Bonzas who enrolled themselves in the number of his dependants, whether old or young, black or fair, rough or smooth, were enjoined every day to perform this additional and posterior rite of worship, so productive of delight to the Cuboy, that he was every morning impatient to receive the Dairo's calcitration, or rather his pedestrian digitation; after which, he flew with all the eagerness of desire to the subsequent part of his entertainment.

The transports thus produced seemed to disarrange his whole nervous system, and produce an odd kind of revolution in his fancy; for though he was naturally grave, and indeed overwhelmed

with



with constitutional hebetude, he became, in consequence of this periodical tickling, the most giddy, pert buffoon in nature. All was grinning, giggling, laughing, and prating, except when his fears intervened; then he started and stared, and cursed and prayed by turns. There was but one barber in the whole empire that would undertake to shave him, so ticklish and unsteady he was under the hands of the operator. He could not sit above one minute in the same attitude, or on the same seat; but shifted about from couch to chair, from chair to stool, from stool to close-stool, with incessant rotation, and all the time gave audience to those who solicited his favour and protection. To all and several he promised his best offices, and confirmed these promises with oaths and protestations. One he shook by the hand; another he hugged; a third he kissed on both sides the face; with a fourth he whispered; a fifth he honoured with a familiar horse-laugh. He never had courage to refuse even that which he could not possibly grant; and at last his tongue actually forgot how to pronounce the negative particle: but as in the English language two negatives amount to an affirmative, five hundred affirmatives in the mouth of Fika-kaka did not altogether destroy the efficacy of simple negation. A promise five hundred times repeated, and at every repetition confirmed by oath, barely amounted to a computable chance of performance.

It must be allowed, however, he promoted a great number of Bonzas, and in this promotion he manifested an uncommon taste. They were preferred according to the colour of their beards. He found, by experience, that beards of different colours yielded him different degrees of pleasure in the friction we have described above; and the provision he made for each was in proportion to the satisfaction the candidate could afford. The sensation ensuing from the contact of a grey beard was soft and delicate, and agreeably demulcent, when the parts were unusually inflamed; a red, yellow, or brindled beard, was in request when the business was to thrill or tingle: but a black beard was of all others the most honoured by Fika-kaka, not only on account of its fleecy feel, equally spirited and balsamick, but also for another philosophical reason, which

I shall now explain. You know, Peacock, that black colour absorbs the rays of light, and detains them as it were in a repository. Thus a black beard, like the back of a black cat, becomes a phosphorus in the dark, and emits sparkles upon friction. You must know, that one of the gravest doctors of the Bonzas, who had a private request to make, desired an audience of Fika-kaka in his closet at night, and the taper falling down by accident, at that very instant when his beard was in contact with the Cuboy's seat of honour, the electrical snap was heard, and the part illuminated, to the astonishment of the spectators, who looked upon it as a prelude to the apotheosis of Fika-kaka. Being made acquainted with this phenomenon, the minister was exceedingly elevated in his own mind. He rejoiced in it as a communication of some divine efficacy, and raised the happy Bonza to the rank of Pontifex Maximus, or chief priest, in the temple of Fakku-basi. In the course of experiments, he found that all black beards were electrical in the same degree, and being ignorant of philosophy, ascribed it to some supernatural virtue, in consequence of which they were promoted as the holiest of the Bonzas. But you and I know, that such a phosphorus is obtained from the most worthless and corrupted materials, such as rotten wood, putrefied veal, and stinking whiting.

Fika-kaka, such as I described him, could not possibly act in the character of Cuboy, without the assistance of counsellors and sabalterns, who understood the detail of government and the forms of business. He was accordingly surrounded by a number of satellites, who reflected his lustre in their several spheres of rotation; and though their immersions and emersions were apparently abrupt and irregular, formed a kind of luminous belt as pale and comfortless as the ring of Saturn, the most distant, cold, and baleful of all the planets.

The most remarkable of these subordinates, was Sti-phi-rum-poo, a man who, from a low plebeian origin, had raised himself to one of the first offices of the empire, to the dignity of *Quo*, or nobleman, and a considerable share of the Dairo's personal regard. He owed his whole success to his industry, assiduity, and circumspection. During the former part of his life, he studied the

laws

laws of Japan with such severity of application, that though unassisted by the least gleam of genius, and destitute of the smallest pretension to talent, he made himself master of all the written ordinances, all the established customs, and forms of proceeding in the different tribunals of the empire. In the progress of his vocation, he became an advocate of some eminence, and even acquired reputation for polemical eloquence, though his manner was ever dry, laboured, and unpleasing—Being elevated to the station of a judge, he so far justified the interest by which he had been promoted, that his honesty was never called in question; and his sentences were generally allowed to be just and upright. He heard causes with the most painful attention, seemed to be indefatigable in his researches after truth; and though he was forbidding in his aspect, slow in deliberation, tedious in discussion, and cold in his address; yet I must own, he was also unbiassed in his decisions—I mean, unbiassed by any consciousness of sinister motive: for a man may be biassed by the nature of his disposition, as well as by prejudices acquired, and yet not guilty of intentional partiality. Sti-phi-rum-poo was scrupulously just, according to his own ideas of justice, and consequently well qualified to decide in common controversies. But in delicate cases, which required an uncommon share of penetration; when the province of a supreme judge is to mitigate the severity, and sometimes even deviate from the dead letter of the common law, in favour of particular institutions, or of humanity in general; he had neither genius to enlighten his understanding, sentiment to elevate his mind, nor courage to surmount the petty inclosures of ordinary practice. He was accused of avarice and cruelty; but, in fact, these were not active passions in his heart. The conduct which seemed to justify these imputations, was wholly owing to a total want of taste and generosity. The nature of his post furnished him with opportunities to accumulate riches; and as the narrowness of his mind admitted no ideas of elegance or refined pleasure, he knew not how to use his wealth so as to avoid the charge of a sordid disposition. His temper was not

rapacious but retentive: he knew not the use of wealth, and therefore did not use it at all: but was in this particular neither better nor worse than a strong box for the convenience and advantage of his heir. The appearance of cruelty remarkable in his counsels, relating to some wretched insurgents who had been taken in open rebellion, and the rancorous pleasure he seemed to feel in pronouncing sentence of death by self-execution\*, was in fact the gratification of a dastardly heart, which had never acknowledged the least impulse of any liberal sentiment. This being the case, mankind ought not to impute that to his guilt which was, in effect, the consequence of his infirmity. A man might, with equal justice, be punished for being purblind. Sti-phi-rum-poo was much more culpable for seeking to shine in a sphere for which nature never intended him; I mean for commencing statesman, and intermeddling in the machine of government: yet even into this character he was forced, as it were, by the opinion and injunctions of Fika-kaka, who employed him at first in making speeches for the Dairo, which that prince used to pronounce in publick, at certain seasons of the year. These speeches being tolerably well received by the populace, the Cuboy conceived an extraordinary opinion of his talents; and thought him extremely well qualified to ease him of great part of the burden of government. He found him very well disposed to engage heartily in his interests. Then he was admitted to the osculation *a posteriori*; and though his beard was not black, but rather of a subsuscan hue, he managed it with such dexterity, that Fika-kaka declared the salute gave him unspeakable pleasure: while the bystanders protested that the contact produced, not simply electrical sparks or scintillations, but even a perfect irradiation, which seemed altogether supernatural. From this moment, Sti-phi-rum-poo was initiated in the mysteries of the cabinet, and even introduced to the person of the Dairo Got-hama-baba, whose pedestrian favours he shared with his new patron. It was observed, however, that even after his promotion and nobilitation, he still retained his original awkwardness,

\* A gentleman capitally convicted in Japan is allowed the privilege of anticipating the common executioner, by ripping out his own bowels.



and never could acquire that graceful ease of attitude with which the Cuboy presented his parts averse to the contemplation of his sovereign. Indeed this minister's body was so well moulded for the celebration of the rite, that one would have imagined nature had formed him expressly for that purpose, with his head and body projecting forwards, so as to form an angle of forty-five with the horizon, while the glutæi muscles swelled backwards as if ambitious to meet half-way the imperial encounter.

The third connexion that strengthened this political band was Nin-kom-poo-po, commander of the *Fune*, or navy of Japan, who, if ever man was, might fairly be termed the child of fortune. He was bred to the sea from his infancy, and, in the course of pacific service, rose to the command of a jonkh, when he was so lucky as to detect a crew of pirates employed on a desolate shore in concealing a hoard of money which they had taken from the merchants of Corea. Nin-kom-poo-po, falling in with them at night, attacked them unawares, and having obtained an easy victory, carried off the treasure. I cannot help being amused at the folly of you silly mortals, when I recollect the transports of the people at the return of this fortunate officer, with a paltry mass of silver parading in covered waggons escorted by his crew in arms. The whole city of Meaco resounded with acclamation; and Nin-kom-poo-po was extolled as the greatest hero that ever the empire of Japan produced. The Cuboy honoured him with five kisses in publick; accepted of the osculation in private, recommended him in the strongest terms to the Dairo, who promoted him to the rank of Sey-seo-gun, or general at sea. He professed himself an adherent to the Cuboy, entered into a strict alliance with Sti-phi-rum-poo, and the whole management of the *Fune* was consigned into his hands. With respect to his understanding, it was just sufficient to comprehend the duties of a common mariner, and to follow the ordinary route of the most sordid avarice. As to his heart, he might be said to be in a state of total apathy, without principle or passion; for I cannot afford the name of passion to such a vile appetite as an insatiable thirst of lucre. He was, indeed, so cold and forbidding, that, in Japan, the people distinguished him by a nick-

name equivalent to the English word Salamander; not that he was inclined to live in fire, but that the coldness of his heart would have extinguished any fire it had approached. Some individuals imagined he had been begot upon a mermaid by a sailor of Kamschatka; but this was a mere fable.—I can assure you, however, that when his lips were in contact with the Cuboy's posteriors, Fika-kaka's teeth were seen to chatter. The pride of this animal was equal to his frigidity. He affected to establish new regulations at the council where he presided; he treated his equals with insolence, and his superiors with contempt. Other people generally rejoice in obliging their fellow-creatures, when they can do it without prejudice to their own interest. Nin-kom-poo-po had a repulsive power in his disposition; and seemed to take pleasure in denying a request. When this vain creature, selfish, inelegant, arrogant, and uncouth, appeared in all his trappings at the Dairo's court, upon a festival, he might have been justly compared to a Lapland idol of ice, adorned with a profusion of brass leaf and trinkets of pewter. In the direction of the *Fune*, he was provided with a certain number of assessors, counsellors, or co-adjutors; but these he never consulted, more than if they had been wooden images. He distributed his commands among his own dependants; and left all the forms of the office to the care of the scribe, who thus became so necessary, that his influence sometimes had well nigh interfered with that of the president: nay, they have been seen, like the electrical spheres of two bodies, repelling each other. Hence it was observed, that the office of the Sey-seo-gun-fialty resembled the serpent called Amphibæna, which, contrary to the formation of other animals in head and tail, has a head where the tail should be. Well, indeed, might they compare them to a serpent, in creeping, cunning, coldness, and venom; but the comparison would have held with more propriety, had Nature produced a serpent without ever a head at all.

The fourth who contributed his credit and capacity to this coalition, was Foksi-Roku, a man who greatly surpassed them all in the science of politicks, bold, subtle, interested, insinuating, ambitious, and indefatigable. An adventurer from his cradle, a latitudinarian in principle,

principle, a libertine in morals, without the advantages of birth, fortune, character, or interest; by his own natural sagacity, a close attention to the follies and foibles of mankind, a projecting spirit, an invincible assurance, and an obstinacy of perseverance proof against all the shocks of disappointment and repulse, he forced himself as it were into the scale of preferment; and being found equally capable and compliant, rose to high offices of trust and profit, detested by the people as one of the most desperate tools of a wicked administration; and odious to his colleagues in the ministry, for his superior talents, his restless ambition, and the uncertainty of his attachment.

As interest prompted him, he hovered between the triumvirate we have described, and another knot of competitors for the administration, headed by Quamba-cun-dono, a great Quo related to the Dairo, who had bore the supreme command in the army, and was stiled Fatzman\*, *νατ' ἰζονην*, or, by way of eminence.\* This accomplished prince was not only the greatest in his mind, but also the largest in his person of all the subjects of Japan; and whereas your Shakespeare makes Falstaff urge it as a plea in his own favour, that as he had more flesh, so likewise he had more frailty than other men; I may justly convert the proposition in favour of Quamba-cun-dono, and affirm that as he had more flesh, so he had more virtue than any other Japanese; more bowels, more humanity, more beneficence, more affability. He was undoubtedly, for a Fatzman, the most courteous, the most gallant, the most elegant, generous, and munificent Quo that ever adorned the court of Japan. So consummate in the art of war, that the whole world could not produce a general to match him in foresight, vigilance, conduct, and ability. Indeed his intellects were so extraordinary and extensive, that he seemed to sentimentize at every pore, and to have the faculty of thinking diffused all over his frame, even to his fingers ends; or, as the Latins call it, *ad unguem*: nay, so wonderful was his organical conformation, that, in the opinion of many Japanese philosophers, his whole body was enveloped in a kind of poultice of brain, and that

if he had lost his head in battle, the damage with regard to his power of reflection would have been scarce perceptible. After he had achieved many glorious exploits, in a war against the Chinese on the continent, he was sent with a strong army to quell a dangerous insurrection in the northern parts of Ximo, which is one of the Japanese islands. He accordingly, by his valour, crushed the rebellion; and afterwards, by dint of clemency and discretion, extinguished the last embers of disaffection. When the insurgents were defeated, dispersed and disarmed, and a sufficient number selected for example, his humanity emerged, and took full possession of his breast. He considered them as wretched men misled by false principles of honour, and sympathized with their distress: he pitied them as men and fellow-citizens; he regarded them as useful fellow-subjects, who might be reclaimed and reunited to the community. Instead of sending out the ministers of blood, rapine, and revenge, to ravage, burn, and destroy, without distinction of age, sex, or principle, he extended the arms of mercy to all who would embrace that indulgence: he protected the lives and habitations of the helpless, and diminished the number of the malcontents much more effectually by his benevolence than by his sword.

The southern Japanese had been terribly alarmed at this insurrection, and in the first transports of their deliverance, voluntarily taxed themselves with a considerable yearly tribute to the hero Quamba-cun-dono. In all probability, they would not have appeared so grateful, had they stayed to see the effects of his merciful disposition towards the vanquished rebels: for mercy is surely no attribute of the Japanese, considered as a people. Indeed, nothing can form a more striking contrast, than appeared in the transactions in the northern and southern parts of the empire at this juncture. While the amiable Quamba-cun-dono was employed in the godlike offices of gathering together, and cherishing under his wings the poor, dispersed, forlorn widows and orphans, whom the savage hand of war had deprived of parent, husband, home, and sustenance; while he, in the north, gathered these miserable creatures, even as a hen gathereth her chickens; Sti-phi-rum-poo, and other

\* Vid. Kempfer, Amoenitat. Japan.



judges in the South, were condemning such of their parents and husbands as survived the sword, to crucifixion, cauldrons of boiling oil, or exenteration; and the people were indulging their appetites by feasting upon the viscera thus extracted. The liver of a Ximian was in such request at this period, that if the market had been properly managed and supplied, this delicacy would have sold for two Obans a pound, or about four pounds sterling. The troops in the North might have provided at the rate of a thousand head per month for the demand of Meaco; and though the other parts of the carcase would not have sold at so high a price as the liver, heart, harigals, sweet-bread, and pope's eye; yet the whole, upon an average, would have fetched at the rate of three hundred pounds a head; especially if those animals, which are but poorly fed in their own country, had been fattened up and kept upon hard meat for the slaughter. This new branch of traffick would have produced about three hundred and sixty thousand pounds annually: for the rebellion might easily have been fomented from year to year; and consequently it would have yielded a considerable addition to the emperor's revenue, by a proper taxation.

The philosophers of Japan were divided in their opinions concerning this new taste for Ximian flesh, which suddenly sprung up among the Japanese. Some ascribed it to a principle of hatred and revenge, agreeable to the common expression of animosity among the multitude—'You dog, I'll have your liver.' Others imputed it to a notion analogous to the vulgar conceit, that the liver of a mad dog being eaten, is a preventive against madness; ergo, the liver of a traitor, is an antidote against treason. A third sort derived this strange appetite from the belief of the Americans, who imagine they shall inherit all the virtues of the enemies they devour; and a fourth affirmed that the demand for this dainty arose from a very high and peculiar flavour in Ximian flesh, which flavour was discovered by accident: moreover, there were not wanting some who supposed this banquet was a kind of sacrifice to the powers of sorcery; as we find that one of the ingredients of the charm prepared in Shakespeare's cauldron was—the liver of blaspheming Jew: and indeed it is not at all improbable that the liver of a rebel-

lious Ximian might be altogether as effectual. I know that Fika-kaka was stimulated by curiosity to try the experiment, and held divers consultations with his cooks on this subject. They all declared in favour of the trial; and it was accordingly presented at the table, where the Cuboy eat of it to such excess as to produce a surfeit. He underwent a severe evacuation both ways, attended with cold sweats and swoonings. In a word, his agony was so violent, that he ever after loathed the sight of Ximian flesh, whether dead or alive.

With the Fatzman Quamba-cun-dono was connected another Quo, called Gottomio, viceroy of Xicoco, one of the islands of Japan. If his understanding had been as large as his fortune, and his temper a little more tractable, he would have been a dangerous rival to the Cuboy. But if their brains had been weighed against each other, the nineteenth part of a grain would have turned either scale; and as Fika-kaka had negative qualities, which supported and extended his personal influence, so Gottomio had positive powers, that defended him from all approaches of popularity. His pride was of the insolent order; his temper extremely irascible; and his avarice quite rapacious: nay, he is said to have once declined the honour of a kicking from the Dairo. Conceited of his own talents, he affected to harangue in the council of Twenty-Eight; but his ideas were embarrassed, his language was mean, and his elocution was more discordant than the braying of fifty asses. When Fika-kaka addressed himself to speech, an agreeable simper played upon the countenances of all the audience: but as soon as Gottomio stood up, every spectator raised his thumbs to his ears, as it were instinctively. The Dairo Got-hama-baba, by the advice of the Cuboy, sent him over to govern the people of Xicoco, and a more effectual method could not have been taken to mortify his arrogance. His deportment was so insolent, his oeconomy so sordid, and his government so arbitrary, that those islanders, who are remarkably ferocious and impatient, expressed their hatred and contempt of him on every occasion. His Quambukuship was hardly safe from outrage in the midst of his guards; and a cross was actually erected for the execution of his favourite Kow-kin, who escaped with some difficulty to the island of Nippon, whither also his patron

tron soon followed him, attended by the curses of the people whom he had been sent to rule.

He who presided at the council of Twenty-Eight was called Soo-san-fin-o, an old experienced shrewd politician, who conveyed more sense in one single sentence, than could have been distilled from all the other brains in council, had they been macerated in one alembic. He was a man of extensive learning and elegant taste. He saw through the characters of his fellow-labourers in the ad—n. He laughed at the folly of one faction, and detested the arrogance and presumption of the other. In an assembly of sensible men, his talents would have shone with superior lustre: but at the council of Twenty Eight, they were obscured by the thick clouds of ignorance that enveloped his brethren. The Dairo had a personal respect for him, and is said to have conferred frequent favours on his posteriors in private. He kicked the Cuboy often *ex officio*, as a husband thinks it incumbent upon him to caress his wife: but he kicked the president for pleasure, as a voluptuary embraces his mistress. Soo-san-fin-o, conscious that he had no family interest to support him in cabals among the people, and careless of his country's fate, resolved to enjoy the comforts of life in quiet. He laughed and quaffed with his select companions in private; received his appointments thankfully; and swam with the tide of politicks as it happened to flow. It was pretty extraordinary that the wisest man should be the greatest cypher: but such was the will of the gods.

Besides these great luminaries that enlightened the cabinet of Japan, I shall have occasion, in the course of my narrative, to describe many other stars of an inferior order. At this board, there was as great a variety of characters, as we find in the celebrated table of Cebes. Nay, indeed, what was objected to the philosopher, might have been more justly said of the Japanese councils. There was neither invention, unity, nor design among them. They consisted of mobs of sauntering, strolling, vagrant, and ridiculous politicians. Their schemes were absurd, and their deliberations like the sketches of anarchy. All was bellowing, bleating, braying, grinning, grumbling, confusion, and uproar. It was more like a dream of chaos than a picture of human life. If the ΔΑΙΜΩΝ, or Genius

was wanting, it must be owned that Fika-kaka exactly answered Cebes's description of ΤΥΧΗ, or Fortune, blind and frantick, running about every where; giving to some, and taking from others, without rule or distinction; while her emblem of the round stone, fairly shews his giddy nature; καλῶς μνησὶ φύσιν αὐτῆς. Here, however, one might have seen many other figures of the painter's allegory; such as Deception tendering the cup of ignorance and error, opinions and appetites; Disappointment and Anguish; Debauchery, Profligacy, Gluttony, and Adulation; Luxury, Fraud, Rapine, Perjury, and Sacrilege: but not the least traces of the virtues which are described in the groupe of true education, and in the grove of happiness.

The two factions that divided the council of Japan, though inveterate enemies to each other, heartily and cordially concurred in one particular, which was the worship established in the temple of Fakkubasi, or the White Horse. This was the orthodox faith in Japan, and was certainly founded, as St. Paul faith of the Christian religion, upon the evidence of things not seen. All the votaries of this superstition of Fakkubasi subscribed and swore to the following creed, implicitly, without hesitation, or mental reservation. 'I believe in the White Horse, that he descended from heaven, and sojourned in Jeddo, which is the land of promise. I believe in Bupo, his apostle, who first declared to the children of Nippon, the glad tidings of the gospel of Fakkubasi. I believe that the White Horse was begot by a black mule, and brought forth by a green dragon; that his head is of silver, and his hoofs are of brass; that he eats gold as provender, and discharges diamonds as dung; that the Japanese are ordained and predestined to furnish him with food, and the people of Jeddo to clear away his litter. I believe that the island of Nippon is joined to the continent of Jeddo; and that whoever thinks otherwise, shall be damned to all eternity. I believe that the smallest portion of matter may be practically divided *ad infinitum*: that equal quantities taken from equal quantities, an unequal quantity will remain: that two and two make seven: that the sun rules the night, the stars the day; and the moon is made of green cheese. Finally, I believe that a man cannot be saved



saved without devoting his goods and his chattels, his children, relations, and friends, his senses and ideas, his soul and his body, to the religion of the White Horse, as it is prescribed in the ritual of Fakkubasi. These are the tenets which the Japanese ministers swallowed as glib as the English clergy swallow the Thirty-Nine Articles.

Having thus characterised the chiefs that disputed the administration, or, in other words, the empire of Japan, I shall now proceed to a plain narration of historical incidents, without pretending to philosophize like H—e, or dogmatize like S—tt. I shall only tell thee, Nathaniel, that Britain never gave birth but to two historians worthy of credit, and they were Talieffin and Geoffrey of Monmouth. I'll tell you another secret. The whole world has never been able to produce six good historians. Herodotus is fabulous even to a proverb; Thucydides is perplexed, obscure, and unimportant; Polybius is dry and inelegant; Livy superficial; and Tacitus a coxcomb. Guicciardini wants interest; Davila, digestion; and Sarpi, truth. In the whole catalogue of French historians, there is not one of tolerable authenticity.

In the year of the period Foggien one hundred and fifty-four, the tranquillity of Japan was interrupted by the incroachments of the Chinese adventurers, who made descents upon certain islands belonging to the Japanese a great way to the southward of Xicoco. They even settled colonies, and built forts on some of them, while the two empires were at peace with each other. When the Japanese governors expostulated with the Chinese officers on this intrusion, they were treated with ridicule and contempt: then they had recourse to force of arms, and some skirmishes were fought with various success. When the tidings of these hostilities arrived at Meaco, the whole council of Twenty-Eight was overwhelmed with fear and confusion. The Dairo kicked them all round, not from passion, but by way of giving an animating fillip to their deliberative faculties. The disputes had happened in the island of Fatsissio: but there were only three members of the council who knew that Fatsissio was an island, although the commerce there carried on was of the utmost importance to the empire of Japan. They were as much in the dark with respect to its situation. Fika-kaka, on the suppo-

sition that it adjoined to the coast of Corea, expressed his apprehension that the Chinese would invade it with a numerous army; and was so transported when Foksi-roku assured him it was an island at a vast distance from any continent, that he kissed him five times, in the face of the whole council; and his royal master, Got-hama-baba, swore he should be indulged with a double portion of kicking at his next private audience. The same counsellor proposed, that as the Fune or navy of Japan was much more numerous than the fleet of China, they should immediately avail themselves of this advantage. Quamba-cun-dono the Fatzman was of opinion, that war should be immediately declared, and an army transported to the continent. Stiphi-rum-poo thought it would be more expedient to sweep the seas of the Chinese trading vessels, without giving them any previous intimation; and to this opinion Admiral Nin-kom-poo-po subscribed, not only out of deference to the superior understanding of his sage ally, who undertook to prove it was not contrary to the law of nature and nations, to plunder the subjects of foreign powers, who trade on the faith of treaties; but also from his own inclination, which was much addicted to pillage without bloodshed. To him, therefore, the task was left of scouring the seas, and intercepting the succours which (they had received intelligence) were ready to sail from one of the ports of China to the island of Fatsissio. In the mean time, junks were provided for transporting thither a body of Japanese troops, under the command of one Koan, an obscure officer, without conduct or experience, whom the Fatzman selected for this service: not that he supposed him possessed of superior merit, but because no leader of distinction cared to engage in such a disagreeable expedition.

Nin-kom-poo-po acted according to the justest ideas which had been formed of his understanding. He let loose his cruizers among the merchant ships of China, and the harbours of Japan were quickly filled with prizes and prisoners. The Chinese exclaimed against these proceedings as the most perfidious acts of piracy; and all the other powers of Asia beheld them with astonishment. But the consummate wisdom of the sea Sey-seo-gun appeared most conspicuous in another stroke of generalship, which he now

struck. Instead of blocking up in the Chinese harbour the succours destined to reinforce the enemy in Fatissio, until they should be driven from their incroachments on that island, he very wisely sent a strong squadron of Fune to cruise in the open sea, midway between China and Fatissio, in the most tempestuous season of the year, when the fogs are so thick and so constant in that latitude, as to rival the darkness of a winter night; and supported the feasibility of this scheme in council, by observing that the enemy would be thus decoyed from their harbour, and undoubtedly intercepted in their passage by the Japanese squadron. This plan was applauded as one of the most ingenious stratagems that ever was devised; and Fika-kaka insisted upon kissing his posteriors, as the most honourable mark of his approbation.

Philosophers have observed, that the motives of actions are not to be estimated by events. Fortune did not altogether fulfil the expectations of the council. General Koan suffered himself and his army to be decoyed into the middle of a wood, where they stood like sheep in the shambles, to be slaughtered by an unseen enemy. The Chinese succours perceiving their harbour open, set sail for Fatissio, which they reached in safety, by changing their course about one degree from the common route; while the Japanese Fune continued cruising among the fogs, until the ships were shattered by storms, and the crews more than half destroyed by cold and distemper.

When the news of these disasters arrived, great commotion arose in the council. The Dairo Got-hama-baba fluttered, and clucked and cackled and hissed like a goose disturbed in the act of incubation. Quamba-cun-dono shed bitter tears: the Cuboy snivelled and sobbed: Sti-phi-rum-poo groaned: Gotto-mio swore: but the sea Sey-seo-gun Nin-kom-poo-po underwent no alteration. He sat as the emblem of insensibility, fixed as the north star, and as cold as that luminary, sending forth emanations of frigidity. Fika-kaka, mistaking this congelation for fortitude, went round and embraced him where he sat, exclaiming—'My dear Day, Sey-seo-gun, what would you advise in this dilemma?' But the contact had almost cost him his life; for the touch of Nin-kom-poo-po, thus congealed, had the same effect as that of the fish called Torpor. The

Cuboy's whole body was instantly benumbed; and if his friends had not instantly poured down his throat a considerable quantity of strong spirit, the circulation would have ceased. This is what philosophers call a generation of cold, which became so intense, that the mercury in a Japanese thermometer, constructed on the same principles which were afterwards adopted by Fahrenheit, and fixed in the apartment, immediately sunk thirty degrees below the freezing point.

The first astonishment of the council was succeeded by critical remarks and argumentation. The Dairo consoled himself by observing, that his troops made a very soldierly appearance as they lay on the field in their new cloathing, smart caps, and clean buskins; and that the enemy allowed they had never seen beards and whiskers in better order. He then declared, that should a war ensue with China, he would go abroad and expose himself for the glory of Japan. Foksi-roku expressed his surprize, that a general should march his army through a wood in an unknown country, without having it first reconnoitred: but the Fatzman assured him, that was a practice never admitted into the discipline of Japan. Gotto-mio swore the man was mad to stand with his men, like oxen in a stall, to be knocked on the head without using any means of defence. 'Why the devil,' said he, 'did not he either retreat, or advance to close engagement with the handful of Chinese who formed the ambuscade?'—'I hope, my dear Quanbuku,' replied the Fatzman, 'that the troops of Japan will always stand without flinching. I should have been mortified beyond measure, had they retreated without seeing the face of the enemy:—that would have been a disgrace which never befel any troops formed under my direction; and as for advancing, the ground would not permit any manœuvre of that nature. They were engaged in a *cul de sac*, where they could not form either in hollow square, front line, potence, column or platoon.—It was the fortune of war, and they bore it like men:—we shall be more fortunate on another occasion.' The president Soo-san-sin-o took notice, that if there had been one spaniel in the whole Japanese army, this disaster could not have happened; as the animal would have



have beat the bushes and discovered the ambuscade. He therefore proposed, that if the war was to be prosecuted in Fatsissio, which is a country overgrown with wood, a number of blood-hounds might be provided and sent over, to run upon the foot in the front and on the flanks of the army, when it should be on its march through such impediments. Quamba-cun-dono declared, that soldiers had much better die in the bed of honour, than be saved and victorious by such an unmilitary expedient; that such a proposal was so contrary to the rules of war, and the scheme of enlisting dogs so derogatory from the dignity of the service, that if ever it should be embraced, he would resign his command, and spend the remainder of his life in retirement. This canine project was equally disliked by the Dairo, who approved of the Fatzman's objection, and sealed his approbation with a pedestrian salute of such momentum, that the Fatzman could hardly stand under the weight of the compliment. It was agreed that new levies should be made, and a new squadron of Fune equipped with all expedition; and thus the assembly broke up.

Fortune had not yet sufficiently humbled the pride of Japan. That body of Chinese which defeated Koan, made several conquests in Fatsissio, and seemed to be in a fair way of reducing the whole island. Yet, the court of China, not satisfied with this success, resolved to strike a blow, that should be equally humiliating to the Japanese, in another part of the world. Having by specious remonstrances already prepossessed all the neighbouring nations against the government of Japan, as the patrons of perfidy and piracy, they fitted out an armament, which was intended to subdue the island of Motao on the coast of Corea, which the Japanese had taken in a former war, and now occupied at a very great expence, as a place of the utmost importance to the commerce of the empire. Repeated advices of the enemy's design were sent from different parts, to the monarchy of Japan: but they seemed all overwhelmed by such a lethargy of infatuation, that no measures of prevention were concerted.

Such was the opinion of the people; but the truth is, they were fast asleep. The Japanese hold with the ancient Greeks and modern Americans, that

dreams are from heaven; and in any perplexing emergency, they, like the Indians, Jews, and natives of Madagascar, have recourse to dreaming as to an oracle. These dreams or divinations are preceded by certain religious rites analogous to the ceremony of the ephod, the urim and the thummim. The rites were religiously performed in the council of Twenty-Eight; and a deep sleep overpowered the Dairo and all his counsellors.

Got-hama-baba the emperor, who reposed his head upon the pillowy sides of Quamba-cun-dono, dreamed that he was sacrificing in the temple of Fakkubasi, and saw the deity of the White Horse devouring pearls by the bushel at one end, and voiding corruption by the ton at the other. The Fatzman dreamed that a great number of Chinese cooks were busy buttering his brains. Got-to-mio dreamed of lending money and borrowing sense. Sti-phi-rum-poo thought he had procured a new law for clapping padlocks upon the chastity of all the females in Japan under twenty, of which padlocks he himself kept the keys. Nin-kom-poo-po dreamed he was metamorphosed into a sea-lion, in pursuit of a shoal of golden gudgeons. *One did laugh in's sleep, and one cried Murder.* The first was Soo-san-sin-o, who had precisely the same vision that disturbed the imagination of the Cuboy. He thought he saw the face of a right reverend prelate of the Bonzas, united with and growing to the posteriors of the minister. Fika-kaka underwent the same disagreeable illusion, with this aggravating circumstance, that he already felt the teeth of the said Bonza. The president laughed aloud at the ridiculous phenomenon: the Cuboy exclaimed in the terror of being encumbered with such a monstrous appendage. It was not without some reason he cried—'Murder!' Fokti-roku, who happened to sleep on the next chair, dreamed of money-bags, places, and reversions; and in the transport of his eagerness, laid fast hold on the trunk-breeches of the Cuboy, including certain fundamentals, which he grasped so violently as to excite pain, and extort the exclamation from Fika-kaka, even in his sleep.

The council being at last waked by the clamours of the people, who surrounded the palace, and proclaimed that Motao was in danger of an invasion: the sea Sey-seo-gun Nin-kom-poo-po, was ordered

ordered to fit out a fleet of Fune for the relief of that island; and directions were given, that the commander of these Fune should, in his voyage, touch at the garrison of Foutao, and take on board from thence a certain number of troops, to reinforce the Japanese governor of the place that was in danger. Nin-kom-poo-po, for this service, chose the commander Bihn-goh, a man who had never signalized himself by any act of valour. He sent him out with a squadron of Fune ill manned, wretchedly provided, and inferior in number to the fleet of China, which was by this time known to be assembled in order to support the invasion of the island of Motao. He sailed, nevertheless, on this expedition, and touched at the garrison of Foutao to take in the reinforcement: but the orders sent for this purpose from Nob-o-di, minister of the department of war, appeared so contradictory and absurd, that they could not possibly be obeyed; so that Bihn-goh proceeded without the reinforcement towards Motao, the principal fortress of which was by this time invested. He had been accidentally joined by a few cruisers, which rendered him equal in strength to the Chinese squadron, which he now descried. Both commanders seemed afraid of each other. The fleets, however, engaged; but little damage was done to either. They parted, as if by consent. Bihn-goh made the best of his way back to Foutao, without making the least attempt to succour, or open a communication with Fi-de-ta-da, the governor of Motao, who, looking upon himself as abandoned by his country, surrendered his fortress, with the whole island, to the Chinese general. These disgraces happening on the back of the Fatissian disasters, raised a prodigious ferment in Japan, and the ministry had almost sunk under the first fury of the people's resentment. They not only exclaimed against the folly of the administration, but they also accused them of treachery, and seemed to think that the glory and advantage of the empire had been betrayed. What increased the commotion, was the terror of an invasion, with which the Chinese threatened the islands of Japan. The terrors of Fika-kaka had already cost him two pair of trunk hose, which were defiled by sudden sallies or irruptions from the postern of his microcosm; and these were attended with such noisome effluvia, that the

Bonzas could not perform the barbaric absterfion without marks of abhorrence. The emperor himself was seen to stop his nose, and turn away his head, when he approached him to perform the pedestrian exercise.

Here I intended to insert a dissertation on trousers or trunk breeches, called by the Greeks *βραχοι*, & *παιζωματα*, by the Latins *bracæ laxæ*, by the Spaniards *bragas anchas*, by the Italians *calzone largo*, by the French *haut de chausses*, by the Saxons *bræce*, by the Swedes *brackor*, by the Irish *briceban*, by the Celtæ *brag*, and by the Japanese *bra-ak*. I could make some curious discoveries touching the analogy between the *Παιζωματα* and *Ζωγιον γυναικειον*, and point out the precise time at which the Grecian women began to wear the breeches. I would have demonstrated that the *cingulum muliebre* was originally no other than the wife's literally wearing the husband's trousers at certain *orgia*, as a mark of dominion transferred *pro tempore*, to the female. I would have drawn a curious parallel between the *Ζωγιον* of the Greek, and the *shim* or middle cloth worn by the black ladies in Guinea. I would have proved that breeches were not first used to defend the central parts from the injuries of the weather, inasmuch as they were first worn by the Orientals in a warm climate; as you may see in Persius, '*Braccatis illita medietate porticus.*' I would have shewn that breeches were first brought from Asia to the northern parts of Europe, by the Celtæ sprung from the ancient Gomanus: that trousers were wore in Scotland long before the time of Pythagoras; and indeed we are told by Jamblychus, that Abaris, the famous Highland philosopher, cotemporary, and personally acquainted with the sage of Crotona, wore long trousers. I myself can attest the truth of that description, as I well remember the person and habit of that learned mountaineer. I would have explained the reasons that compelled the posterity of those mountaineers to abandon the breeches of their forefathers, and expose their posteriors to the wind. I would have convinced the English antiquaries that the inhabitants of Yorkshire came originally from the Highlands of Scotland, before the Scots had laid aside their breeches, and wore this part of dress, long after their ancestors, as well as the southern Britons were unbreeched

by



by the Romans. From this distinction they acquired the name of *Brigantes*, *quasi Bragantes*; and hence came the verb to *brag* or boast contemptuously: for the neighbours of the *Brigantes* being at variance with that people, used, by way of contumelious defiance, when they saw any of them passing or repassing, to clap their hands on their posteriors, and cry—*'Brag-Brag.'* I would have drawn a learned comparison between the shield of Ajax and the seven-fold breeches of a Dutch skipper. Finally, I would have promulgated the original use of trunk breeches, which would have led me into a discussion of the rites of Cloacina, so differently worshipped by the southern and northern inhabitants of this kingdom. These disquisitions would have unveiled the mysteries that now conceal the origin, migration, superstition, language, laws, and connections of different nations—*sed nunc non erit his locus.* I shall only observe, that Linschot and others are mistaken in deriving the Japanese from their neighbour the Chinese; and that Dr. Kempfer is right in his conjecture, supposing them to have come from Media immediately after the confusion of Babel. It is no wonder, therefore, that being *Braccatorum filii*, they should retain the wide breeches of their progenitors.

Having dropped these hints concerning the origin of breeches, I shall now return to the great personage that turned me into this train of thinking. The council of Twenty-Eight being assembled in a great hurry, Fika-kaka sat about five seconds in silence, having in his countenance nearly the same expression which you have seen in the face and attitude of Felix on his tribunal, as represented by the facetious Hogarth in his print done after the Dutch taste. After some pause he rose, and surveying every individual of the council through a long tube, began a speech to this effect: *'Imperial Got-hama-baba, my ever-glorious master; and you, ye illustrious nobles of Japan, Quambukus, Quos, Days, and Daygos, my fellows and colleagues in the work of administration; it is well known to you all, and they are rascals that deny it, I have watched and fasted for the publick weal. By G—d, I have deprived myself of two hours of my natural rest, every night for a week together. Then I have been so hurried with state affairs,*

*that I could not eat a comfortable meal in a whole fortnight; and what rendered this misfortune the greater, my chief cook had dressed an olio a la Chine.—I say an olio, my Lords, such an olio as never appeared before on a table in Japan—by the Lord, it cost me fifty Obans; and I had not time to taste a morsel.—Well, then, I have watched that my fellow-subjects should sleep; I have fasted that they should feed.—I have not only watched and fasted, but I have prayed—no, not much of that—yes, by the Lord, I have prayed, as it were—I have ejaculated—I have danced and sung at the Matsuris, which, you know, are religious rites—I have headed the multitude, and treated all the ragamuffins in Japan.—To be certain, I could not do too much for our most excellent and sublime emperor, an emperor unequalled in wisdom, and unrivalled in generosity.—Were I to expatiate from the rising of the sun to the setting thereof, I should not speak half his praise.—O happy nation! O fortunate Japan! happy in such a Dairo to wield the sceptre; and let me add, (vanity apart) fortunate in such a Cuboy to conduct the administration.—Such a prince! and such a minister!—a ha! my noble friend Soo-san-sin-o, I see your Dayship smile—I know what you think, ha! ha!—Very well, my Lord—you may think what you please; but two such head-pieces—pardon, my royal master, my presumption in laying our heads together, you won't find such again in the whole universe, ha! ha!—I'll be damn'd if you do, ha! ha! ha! The tumult without doors was, by this time, increased to such a degree, that the Cuboy could utter nothing more *ab anteriori*; and the majority of the members sat aghast in silence. The Dairo declared he would throw his cap out of the window into the midst of the populace, and challenge any single man of them to bring it up: but he was dissuaded from hazarding his sacred person in such a manner. Quamba-cun-dono proposed to let loose the guards among the multitude: but Fika-kaka protested he could never agree to an expedient so big with danger to the persons of all present. Stiphi-rum-poo was of opinion, that they should proceed according to law, and indict the leaders of the mob for a riot. Nin-kom-poo-po exhorted the Dairo and the whole council to take refuge on board*

the fleet. Gotto-mio sweated in silence: he trembled for his money-bags, and dreaded another encounter with the mob, by whom he had suffered severely in the flesh upon a former occasion. The president shrugged up his shoulders, and kept his eye fixed upon a postern or back-door. In this general consternation, Foksi-roku stood up and offered a scheme, which was immediately put in execution.

'The multitude, my lord,' said he, 'is a many-headed monster—it is a Cerberus that must have a sop—it is a wild beast, so ravenous, that nothing but blood will appease it's appetite—it is a whale, that must have a barrel for it's amusement—it is a dæmon to which we must offer up human sacrifice. Now, the question is, who is to be this sop, this barrel, this scape-goat?—Tremble not, illustrious Fika-kaka—be not afraid—your life is of too much consequence.—But I perceive that the Cuboy is moved—an unfavoury odour assails my nostrils—brief let me be—Bihn-goh must be the victim—happy, if the sacrifice of his single life can appease the commotions of his country. To him let us impute the loss of Mo-tao.—Let us, in the mean time, soothe the rabble with solemn promises, that national justice shall be done—let us employ emissaries to mingle in all places of plebeian resort; to puzzle, perplex, and prevaricate; to exaggerate the misconduct of Bihn-goh; to traduce his character with retrospective reproach; strain circumstances to his prejudice; inflame the resentment of the vulgar against that devoted officer; and keep up the flame by feeding it with continual fuel.'

The speech was heard with universal applause: Foksi-roku was kicked by the Dairo and kissed by the Cuboy, in token of approbation. The populace were dispersed by means of fair promises. Bihn-goh was put under arrest, and kept as a malefactor in close prison. Agents were employed through the whole metropolis to vilify his character, and accuse him of cowardice and treachery. Authors were enlisted to defame him in publick writings; and mobs hired to hang and burn him in effigie. By these means the revenge of the people was artfully transferred, and their attention effectually diverted from the ministry, which was the first object of their indignation. At length, matters being

duly prepared for the exhibition of such an extraordinary spectacle, Bihn-goh underwent a publick trial, was unanimously found guilty, and unanimously declared innocent; by the same mouths condemned to death and recommended to mercy: but mercy was incompatible with the designs of the ad—n. The unfortunate Bihn-goh was crucified for cowardice, and bore his fate with the most heroick courage. His behaviour at his death was so inconsistent with the crime for which he was doomed to die, that the emissaries of the Cuboy were fain to propagate a report, that Bihn-goh had bribed a person to represent him at his execution, and be crucified in his stead.

This was a stratagem very well calculated for the meridian of the Japanese populace; and it would have satisfied them intirely, had not their fears been concerned. But the Chinese had for some time been threatening an invasion, the terror of which kept the people of Japan in perpetual agitation and disquiet. They neglected their business; and ran about in distraction, inquiring news, listening to reports, staring, whispering, whimpering, clamouring, neglecting their food, and renouncing their repose. The Dairo, who believed the Tartars of Yesso (from whom he himself was descended) had more valour, and skill and honesty, than was possessed by any other nation on earth, took a large body of them into his pay, and brought them over to the island of Nippon, for the defence of his Japanese dominions. The truth is, he had a strong predilection for that people; he had been nursed among them, and sucked it from the nipple. His father had succeeded as heir to a paltry farm in that country; and there he fitted up a cabin, which he preferred to all the palaces of Meaco and Jeddo. The son received the first rudiments of his education among these Tartars, whose country had given birth to his progenitor Bupo. He therefore loved their country; he admired their manners, because they were conformable to his own; and he was in particular captivated by the taste they shewed in trimming and curling their mustachios.

In full belief that the Yessites stood as high in the estimation of his Japanese subjects, as in his own, he imported a body of them into Nippon, where, at first, they were received as saviours and protectors;



protectors; but the apprehension of danger no sooner vanished, than they were exposed to a thousand insults and mortifications arising from the natural prejudice to foreigners, which prevails among the people of Japan. They were reviled, calumniated, and maltreated in every different form, by every class of people; and when the severe season set in, the Japanese refused shelter from the extremities of the weather, to those very auxiliaries they had hired to defend every thing that was dear to them, from the swords of an enemy whom they themselves durst not look in the face. In vain Fika-kaka employed a double band of artists to tickle their noses. They shut their eyes, indeed, as usual: but their eyes no sooner closed, than their mouths opened, and out flew the tropes and figures of obloquy and execration. They exclaimed, that they had not bought, but caught the Tartar; that they had hired the wolves to guard the sheep; that they were simple beasts who could not defend themselves from the dog with their own horns; but what could be expected from a flock which was led by such a pusillanimous bell-weather?—In a word, the Yessites were sent home in disgrace: but the ferment did not subside; and the conduct of the administration was summoned before the venerable tribunal of the populace.

There was one Taycho, who had raised himself to great consideration in this self-constituted college of the mob. He was distinguished by a loud voice, an unabashed countenance, a fluency of abuse, and an intrepidity of opposition to the measures of the Cuboy, who was far from being a favourite with the plebeians. Orator Taycho's eloquence was admirably suited to his audience; he roared, and he brayed, and he bel- lowed against the m——r: he threw out personal sarcasms against the Dairo himself. He inveighed against his partial attachment to the land of Yesso, which he had more than once manifested to the detriment of Japan: he inflamed the national prejudice against foreigners; and as he professed an inviolable zeal for the commons of Japan, he became the first demagogue of the empire. The truth is, he generally happened to be on the right side. The partiality of the Dairo, the errors, absurdities, and corruption of the ministry, presented such a palpable mark as could not be missed

by the arrows of his declamation. This Cerberus had been silenced more than once with a sop; but whether his appetite was not satisfied to the full, or he was still stimulated by the turbulence of his disposition, which would not allow him to rest, he began to shake his chains anew, and open in the old cry; which was a species of musick to the mob, as agreeable as the sound of a bagpipe to a mountaineer of North Britain, or the strum-strum to the swarthy natives of Angola. It was a strain which had the wonderful effect of effacing from the memory of his hearers every idea of his former fickleness and apostacy.

In order to weaken the effect of orator Taycho's harangues, the Cuboy had found means to intrude upon the councils of the mob, a native of Ximó, called Mura-clami, who had acquired some reputation for eloquence, as an advocate in the tribunals of Japan. He certainly possessed an uncommon share of penetration, with a silver tone of voice, and a great magazine of words and phrases, which flowed from him in a pleasing tide of elocution. He had withal the art of soothing, wheedling, insinuating, and misrepresenting with such a degree of plausibility, that his talents were admired even by the few who had sense enough to detect his sophistry. He had no idea of principle, and no feeling of humanity. He had renounced the maxims of his family, after having turned them to the best account by execrating the rites of Fakkubasi, or the White Horse, in private among malcontents, while he worshipped him in publick with the appearance of enthusiastic devotion. When detected in this double dealing, he fairly owned to the Cuboy, that he cursed the White Horse in private for his private interest, but that he served him in public from inclination.

The Cuboy had just sense enough to perceive that he would always be true to his own interest; and therefore he made it his interest to serve the m——y to the full extent of his faculties. Accordingly Mura-clami fought a good battle with orator Taycho, in the occasional assemblies of the populace. But as it is much more easy to inflame than to allay, to accuse than to acquit, to asperse than to purify, to unveil truth than to varnish falsehood; in a word, to patronize a good cause than to support a bad

one; the majesty of the mob snuffed up the excrementitious salts of Taycho's invectives, until their jugulars ached, while they rejected with signs of loathing the flowers of Mura-clami's elocution; just as a citizen of Edinburgh stops his nose when he passes by the shop of a perfumer.

While the constitution of human nature remains unchanged, satire will be always better received than panegyric, in those popular harangues. The Athenians and Romans were better pleased with the Philippics of Demosthenes and Tully, than they would have been with all the praise those two orators could have culled from the stores of their eloquence. A man feels a secret satisfaction in seeing his neighbour treated as a rascal. If he be a knave himself, (which ten to one is the case) he rejoices to see a character brought down to the level with his own, and a new member added to his society; if he be one degree removed from actual roguery, (which is the case with nine-tenths of those who enjoy the reputation of virtue) he indulges himself with the pharisaical consolation, of thanking God he is not like that publican,

But, to return from this digression, Mura-clami, though he could not with all his talents maintain any sort of competition with Taycho, in the opinion of the mob; he, nevertheless, took a more effectual method to weaken the force of his opposition. He pointed out to Fika-kaka the proper means for amending the errors of his administration: he proposed measures for prosecuting the war with vigour; he projected plans of conquest in Fatissio; recommended active officers; forwarded expeditions; and infused such a spirit into the councils of Japan, as had not before appeared for some centuries.

But his patron was precluded from the benefit of these measures, by the obstinate prejudice and precipitation of the Dairo, who valued his Yessian farm above all the empire of Japan. This precious morsel of inheritance bordered upon the territories of a Tartar chief called Brut-an-tiffi, a famous freebooter, who had inured his Kuid to bloodshed, and enriched himself with rapine. Of all mankind, he hated most the Dairo, though his kinsman; and sought a pretence for seizing the farm, which in three days he could have made his own. The Dairo Got-hama-baba was not ignorant of his

sentiments. He trembled for his cabin when he considered it's situation between hawk and buzzard; exposed on one side to the talons of Brut-an-tiffi, and open on the other to the incursions of the Chinese, under whose auspices the said Brut-an-tiffi had acted formerly as a zealous partizan. He had, indeed, in a former quarrel exerted himself with such activity and rancour, to thwart the politicks of the Dairo, and accumulate expences on the subjects of Nippon, that he was universally detested through the whole empire of Japan as a lawless robber, deaf to every suggestion of humanity, respecting no law, restricted by no treaty, scoffing at all religion, goaded by ambition, instigated by cruelty, and attended by rapine.

In order to protect the farm from such a dangerous neighbour, Got-hama-baba, by an effort of sagacity peculiar to himself, granted a large subsidy from the treasury of Japan, to a remote nation of Mantchoux Tartars, on condition that they should march to the assistance of his farm, whenever it should be attacked. With the same sanity of foresight, the Dutch might engage in a defensive league with the Ottoman Porte, to screen them from the attempts of the most Christian king, who is already on their frontiers. Brut-an-tiffi knew his advantage, and was resolved to enjoy it. He had formed a plan of usurpation, which could not be executed without considerable sums of money. He gave the Dairo to understand, he was perfectly sensible how much the farm lay at his mercy: then proposed, that Got-hama-baba should renounce his subsidiary treaty with the Mantchoux; pay a yearly tribute to him Brut-an-tiffi, in consideration of his forbearing to seize the farm; and maintain an army to protect it on the other side from the irruptions of the Chinese.

Got-hama-baba, alarmed at this declaration, began by his emissaries to sound the inclinations of his Japanese subjects touching a continental war, for the preservation of the farm; but he found them totally averse to this wise system of politicks. Taycho, in particular, began to bawl and bellow among the mob, upon the absurdity of attempting to defend a remote cabin, which was not defensible; upon the iniquity of ruining a mighty empire, for the sake of preserving a few barren acres, a naked common, a poor, pitiful, pelting farm, the  
interest



interest of which, like Aaron's rod, had already, on many occasions, swallowed up all regard and consideration for the advantage of Japan. He inveighed against the shameful and senseless partiality of Got-hama-baba: he mingled menaces with his representations. He expatiated on the folly and pernicious tendency of a continental war; he enlarged upon the independence of Japan, secure in her insular situation. He declared, that not a man should be sent to the continent, nor a subsidy granted to any greedy, mercenary, freebooting Tartar; and threatened, that if any corrupt minister should dare to form such a connection, he would hang it about his neck, like a millstone, to sink him to perdition. The bellows of Taycho's oratory blew up such a flame in the nation, that the Cuboy and all his partizans were afraid to whisper one syllable about the farm.

Mean while, Brut-an-tiffi, in order to quicken their determinations, withdrew the garrison he had in a town on the frontiers of China, and it was immediately occupied by the Chinese; an army of whom poured in like a deluge through this opening upon the lands adjoining to the farm. Got-hama-baba was now seized with a fit of temporary distraction. He foamed and raved, and cursed and swore in the Tartarian language: he declared he would challenge Brut-an-tiffi to single combat. He not only kicked, but also cuffed the whole council of Twenty-Eight, and played at foot-ball with his imperial tiara. Fika-kaka was dumb-founded: Sti-phi-rum-poo muttered something about a commission of lunacy; Nin-kom-poo-po pronounced the words Flat-bottomed Junks; but his teeth chattered so much, that his meaning could not be understood. The Fatzman offered to cross the sea and put himself at the head of a body of light-horse, to observe the motions of the enemy; and Gotto-mio prayed fervently within himself, that God Almighty would be pleased to annihilate that accursed farm, which had been productive of such mischief to Japan. Nay, he even ventured to exclaim—'Would to God, the farm was sunk in the middle of the Tartarian ocean!'—'Heaven forbid!' cried the president Soo-san-sin-o; 'for in that case, Japan must be at the expence of weighing it up again.'

In the midst of this perplexity, they were suddenly surprized at the apparition

of Taycho's head nodding from a window that overlooked their deliberations. At sight of this horrid spectacle the council broke up. The Dairo fled to the inmost recesses of the palace, and all his counsellors vanished, except the unfortunate Fika-kaka, whose fear had rendered him incapable of any sort of motion but one, and that he instantly had to a very efficacious degree. Taycho bolting in at the window, advanced to the Cuboy without ceremony, and accosted him in these words—'It depends upon the Cuboy, whether Taycho continues to oppose his measures, or becomes his most obsequious servant. Arise, illustrious Quanbuku, and cast your eyes upon the steps by which I ascended.' Accordingly Fika-kaka looked, and saw a multitude of people who had accompanied their orator into the court of the palace, and raised for him an occasional stair of various implements. The first step was made by an old fig-box, the second by a nightman's bucket, the third by a cask of hempseed, the fourth by a tar-barrel, the fifth by an empty kilderkin, the sixth by a keg, the seventh by a bag of foot, the eighth by a fish-woman's basket, the ninth by a rotten pack-saddle, and the tenth by a block of hard wood from the island of Fatsissio. It was supported on one side by a varnished lettered post, and on the other by a crazy hog's-head. The artificers who erected this climax, and now exulted over it with hideous clamour, consisted of grocers, scavengers, halter-makers, carpenters, draymen, distillers, chimney-sweepers, oyster-women, afs-drivers, aldermen, and dealers in waste paper.—To make myself understood, I am obliged, Peacock, to make use of those terms and denominations which are known in this metropolis.

Fika-kaka, having considered this work with astonishment, and heard the populace declare upon oath, that they would exalt their orator above all competition, was again addressed by the invincible Taycho. 'Your Quanbuku ship perceives how bootless it will be to strive against the torrent. What need is there of many words? admit me to a share of the administration—I will commence your humble slave—I will protect the farm at the expence of Japan, while there is an Oban left in the island of Nippon; and I will

'muzzle these bears so effectually, that they shall not shew their teeth, except in applauding our proceedings.' An author who sees the apparition of a bailiff standing before him in his garret, and instead of being shewn a *capias*, is presented with a bank-note; an impatient lover stopped upon Bagshot Heath by a person in a masque, who proves to be his sweetheart come to meet him in disguise, for the sake of the frolick; a condemned criminal, who, on the morning of execution-day, instead of being called upon by the finisher of the law, is visited by the sheriff with a free pardon; could not be more agreeably surprised than was Fika-kaka at the demagogue's declaration. He flew into his embrace, and wept aloud with joy, calling him his dear Taycho. He squeezed his hand, kissed him on both cheeks, and swore he should share the better half of all his power: then he laughed and snivelled by turns, lolled out his tongue, waddled about the chamber, wriggled and niggled and noddled. Finally, he undertook to prepare the Dairo for his reception, and it was agreed that the orator should wait on his new colleague next morning. This matter being settled to their mutual satisfaction, Taycho retreated through the window into the courtyard, and was convoyed home in triumph by that many-headed hydra the mob, which shook it's multitudinous tail, and brayed through every throat with hideous exultation.

The Cuboy, meanwhile, had another trial to undergo, a trial which he had not foreseen. Taycho was no sooner departed, than he hied him to the Dairo's cabinet in order to communicate the success of his negotiation. But at certain periods, Got-hama-baba's resentment was more than a match for any other passion that belonged to his disposition, and now it was it's turn to reign. The Dairo was made of very combustible materials, and these had been kindled up by the appearance of orator Taycho, who (he knew) had treated his person with indecent freedoms, and publicly vilified the worship of the White Horse. When Fika-kaka, therefore, told him he had made peace with the demagogue, the Dairo, instead of giving him the kick of approbation, turned his own back upon the Cuboy, and silenced him with a *Bob!* Had Fika-kaka assailed him with

the same syllogistical sophism which was used by the Stagyrite to Alexander in a passion, perhaps he might have listened to reason: 'ὁ ὄρνις ἢ πρὸς ἴσους, ἀλλὰ πρὸς τὰς κρείττους γινέται, σοὶ δὲ οὐδὲς ἴσος.' — Anger should be raised not by our equals, but by our superiors; but you have no equal.' Certain it is, that Got-hama-baba had no equal; but Fika-kaka was no more like Aristotle, than his master resembled Alexander. The Dairo remained deaf to all his remonstrances, tears, and intreaties, until he declared that there was no other way of saving the farm, but that of giving *charte blanche* to Taycho. This argument seemed at once to dispel the clouds which had been compelled by his indignation: he consented to receive the orator in quality of minister, and next day was appointed for his introduction.

In the morning Taycho the Great repaired to the palace of the Cuboy, where he privately performed the ceremony of osculation *a posteriori*, sung a solemn Palinodia on the subject of political system, repeated and signed the Buponian creed, embraced the religion of Fakkabasi, and adored the White Horse with marks of unfeigned piety and contrition. Then he was conducted to the anti-chamber of the emperor, who could not, without great difficulty, so far master his personal dislike, as to appear before him with any degree of composure. He was brought forth by Fika-kaka like a tame bear to the stake, if that epithet of *tame* can be given with any propriety to an animal which nobody but his keeper dare approach. The orator perceiving him advance, made a low obeisance according to the custom of Japan, that is, by bending the body averse from the Dairo, and laying the right hand upon the left buttock; and pronounced with an audible voice—'Behold, invincible Got-hama-baba, a sincere penitent come to make atonement for his virulent opposition to your government, for his atrocious insolence to your sacred person. I have calumniated your favourite farm, I have questioned your integrity, I have vilified your character, ridiculed your understanding, and defiled your authority.' This recapitulation was so disagreeable to the Dairo, that he suddenly flew off at a tangent, and retreated growling to his den; from whence he could by no means be lugged again by the Cuboy,



Cuboy, until Taycho, exalting his voice, uttered these words—'But I will exalt your authority more than ever it was debased; I will extol your wisdom, and expatiate on your generosity; I will glorify the White Horse, and sacrifice all the treasures of Japan, if needful, for the protection of the farm of Yesso.' By these cabalistical sounds the wrath of Got-hama-baba was entirely appeased. He now returned with an air of gaiety, strutting, fideling, circling, fluttering, and cobbling like a turkey-cock in his pride, when he displays his feathers to the sun. Taycho hailed the omen; and turning his face from the emperor, received such a salutation on the *os sacrum*, that the parts continued vibrating and tingling for several days.

An indenture tripartite was now drawn up and executed. Fika-kaka was continued treasurer, with his levees, his Bonzas, and his places; and orator Taycho undertook, in the character of chief scribe, to protect the farm of Yesso, as well as to bridle and manage the blatant beast whose name was Legion. That a person of his kidney should have the presumption to undertake such an affair, is not at all surprising; the wonder is, that his performance should even exceed his promise. The truth is, he promised more than he could have performed, had not certain unforeseen incidents, in which he had no concern, contributed towards the infatuation of the people.

The first trial to which he brought his ascendancy over the mob, was his procuring for them a free gift, to enable the Dairo to arm his own private tenants in Yesso, together with some ragamuffin Tartars in the neighbourhood, for the defence of the farm. They winked so hard upon this first overt-act of his apostacy, that he was fully persuaded they had resigned up all their senses to his direction; and resolved to shew them to all Europe, as a surprising instance of his art in monster-taming. This furious beast not only suffered itself to be bridled and saddled, but frisked and fawned, and purred and yelped, and crouched before the orator, licking his feet, and presenting it's back to the burdens which he was pleased to impose. Immediately after this first essay, Quamba-cun-dono the Patzman was sent over to assemble and command a body of light

horse in Yesso, in order to keep an eye on the motions of the enemy; and indeed this vigilant and sagacious commander conducted himself with such activity and discretion, that he soon brought the war in those parts to a point of termination.

Mean while, Brut-an-tiffi continuing to hover on the skirts of the farm, at the head of his myrmidons, and demanding of the Dairo a categorical answer to the hints he had given, Got-hama-baba underwent several successive fits of impatience and distraction. The Cuboy, instigated by his own partizans, and in particular by Mura-clami, who hoped to see Taycho take some desperate step that would ruin his popularity; I say the Cuboy, thus stimulated, began to ply the orator with such pressing intreaties as he could no longer resist; and now he exhibited such a specimen of his own power and the people's infamy, as transcends the flight of ordinary faith. Without taking the trouble to scratch their long ears, tickle their noses, drench them with mandragora or geneva, or make the least apology for his own turning tail to the principles which he had all his life so strenuously inculcated, he crammed down their throats an obligation to pay a yearly tribute to Brut-an-tiffi, in consideration of his forbearing to seize the Dairo's farm; a tribute which amounted to seven times the value of the lands, for the defence of which it was payed. When I said *crammed*, I ought to have used another phrase. The beast, far from shewing any signs of loathing, closed it's eyes, opened it's hideous jaws, and as it swallowed the inglorious bond, wagged it's tail in token of intire satisfaction.

No fritter on Shrove Tuesday was ever more dexterously turned, than were the hydra's brains by this mountebank in patriotism, this juggler in politicks, this cat in pan, or cake in pan, or *κατα παν* in principle. Some people gave out that he dealt with a conjuror, and others scrupled not to insinuate that he had sold himself to the evil spirit. But there was no occasion for a conjuror to deceive those whom the daemon of folly had previously confounded; and as to selling, he sold nothing but the interest of his country; and of that he made a very bad bargain. Be that as it may, the Japanese now viewed Brut-an-tiffi either through a new perspective,

or else surveyed him with organs intirely metamorphosed. Yesterday they detested him as a profligate ruffian, lost to all sense of honesty and shame, addicted to all manner of vice, a scotter at religion, particularly that of Fakkubasi, the scourge of human nature, and the inveterate enemy of Japan. To-day, they glorified him as an unblemished hero, the protector of good faith, the mirror of honesty, the pattern of every virtue, a saint in piety, a devout votary to the White Horse, a friend to mankind, the fast ally and the firmest prop of the Japanese empire.

The farm of Yesso, which they had so long execrated as a putrid and painful excrescence upon the breach of their country, which would never be quiet until this cursed wart was either exterminated or taken away; they now fondled as a favourite mole, nay, and cherished as the apple of their eye. One would have imagined that all the inconsistencies and absurdities which characterise the Japanese nation, had taken their turns to reign, just as the interest of Taycho's ambition required. When it was necessary for him to establish new principles, at that very instant their levity prompted them to renounce their former maxims. Just as he had occasion to fascinate their senses, the dæmon of caprice instigated them to shut their eyes, and hold out their necks, that they might be led by the nose. At the very nick of time when he adopted the cause of Brut-an-tiffi, in diametrical opposition to all his former professions, the spirit of whim and singularity disposed them to kick against the shins of common sense, deny the light of day at noon, and receive in their bosoms as a dove, the man whom before they had shunned as a serpent. Thus every thing concurred to establish for orator Taycho, a despotism of popularity; and that not planned by reason, or raised by art, but founded on fatality, and finished by accident. *Quos Jupiter vult perdere prius dementat.*

Brut-an-tiffi being so amply gratified by the Japanese for his promise of forbearance with respect to the farm of Yesso, and determined, at all events, to make some new acquisition, turned his eyes upon the domains of Pol-hassan-akoufti, another of his neighbours, who had formed a most beautiful colony in this part of Tartary, and rushed upon it at a minute's warning. His resolution

in this respect was so suddenly taken and quickly executed, that he had not yet formed any excuse for this outrage, in order to save appearances. Without giving himself the trouble to invent a pretence, he drove old Pol-hassan-akoufti out of his residence; compelled the domesticks of that prince to enter among his own banditti, plundered his house, seized the archives of his family, threatened to shoot the ancient gentlewoman his wife, exacted heavy contributions from the tenants; then dispersed a manifesto, in which he declared himself the best friend of the said Akoufti and his spouse, assuring him he would take care of his estate, as a precious deposit, to be restored to him in due season. In the mean time, he thought proper to sequester the rents, that they might not enable Pol-hassan to take any measures that should conduce to his own prejudice. As for the articles of meat, drink, cloathing, and lodging, for him and his wife and a large family of small children, he had nothing to do but depend upon Providence, until the present troubles should be appeased. His behaviour on this occasion, Peacock, puts me in mind of the Spaniard whom Philip II. employed to assassinate his own son, Don Carlos. This compassionate Castilian, when the prince began to deplore his fate, twirled his mustachio, pronouncing with great gravity these words of comfort: '*Calla, calla, Senor, todo que se baze es por su bien.*—I beg your highness won't make any noise; this is all for your own good.' or the politeness of Gibbet in the play called *The Beaux Stratagem*, who says to Mrs. Sullen—'Your jewels, Madam, if you please—don't be under any uneasiness, Madam—if you make any noise, I shall blow your brains out—I have a particular regard for the ladies, Madam.'

But the possession of Pol-hassan's demesnes was not the ultimate aim of Brut-an-tiffi. He had an eye to a fair and fertile province belonging to a Tartar princess of the house of Ostrog. He saw himself at the head of a numerous banditti trained to war, fleshed in carnage, and eager for rapine; his coffers were filled with the spoils he had gathered in his former freebooting expeditions; and the incredible sums paid him as an annual tribute from Japan, added to his other advantages, rendered him one of the most formidable chiefs in all Tartary.

Thus



Thus elated with a consciousness of his own strength, he resolved to make a sudden irruption into the dominions of Oitrog, at a season of the year when that house could not avail itself of the alliances they had formed with other powers; and he did not doubt but that, in a few weeks, he should be able to subdue the whole country belonging to the Amazonian princes. But I can tell thee, Peacock, his views extended even further than the conquest of the Oitrog dominions. He even aspired at the empire of Tartary, and had formed the design of deposing the great Cham, who was intimately connected with the Princess of Oitrog. Inspired by these projects, he, at the beginning of winter, suddenly poured like a deluge into one of the provinces that owned this Amazon's sway; but he had hardly gained the passes of the mountains, when he found himself opposed by a numerous body of forces, assembled under the command of a celebrated general who gave him battle without hesitation, and handled him so roughly, that he was fain to retreat into the demefnes of Pol-hassan, where he spent the greatest part of the winter in exacting contributions, and extending the reign of desolation.

All the petty princes and states who hold of the great Cham, began to tremble for their dominions, and the Cham himself was so much alarmed at the lawlet's proceedings of Brut-an-tiffi, that he convoked a general assembly of all the potentates who possessed fiefs in the empire, in order to deliberate upon measures for restraining the ambition of this ferocious freebooter. Among others, the Dairo of Japan, as lord of the farm of Yesso, sent a deputy to this convention, who, in his master's name, solemnly disclaimed and professed his detestation of Brut-an-tiffi's proceedings, which, indeed, were universally condemned. The truth is, he, at this period, dreaded the resentment of all the other co-estates rather more than he feared the menaces of Brut-an-tiffi; and, in particular, apprehended a sentence of outlawry from the Cham, by which at once he would have forfeited all legal title to his beloved farm. Brut-an-tiffi, on the other hand, began to raise a piteous clamour, as if he meant to excite compassion. He declared himself a poor injured prince, who had been a dupe to the honesty and humanity of his own heart. He affirmed that the Amazon of

Oitrog had entered into a conspiracy against him, with the Mantchoux Tartars and Prince Akoufti: he published particulars of this dreadful conjuration, which appeared to be no more than a defensive alliance, formed in the apprehension that he would fall upon some of them, without any regard to treaty, as he had done on a former occasion, when he seized one of the Amazon's best provinces. He publicly taxed the Dairo of Japan with having prompted him to commence hostilities, and hinted that the said Dairo was to have shared his conquests. He openly intreated his co-estates to interpose their influence towards the re-establishment of peace in the empire; and gave them privately to understand, that they would ravage their territories without mercy, should they concur with the Cham in any sentence to his prejudice.

As he had miscarried in his first attempt, and perceived a terrible cloud gathering around him, in all probability he would have been glad to compound matters at this juncture, on condition of being left in *statu quo*; but this was a condition not to be obtained. The Princess of Oitrog had by this time formed such a confederacy, as threatened him with utter destruction. She had contracted an offensive and defensive alliance with the Chinese, the Mantchoux, and the Serednee Tartars; and each of these powers engaged to furnish a separate army to humble the insolence of Brut-an-tiffi. The majority of the Tartar fiefs agreed to raise a body of forces to act against him as a disturber of the publick peace; the great Cham threatened him with a decree of outlawry and rebellion; and the Amazon herself opposed him at the head of a very numerous and warlike tribe, which had always been considered as the most formidable in that part of Tartary. Thus powerfully sustained, she resolved to enjoy her revenge, and at any rate retrieve the province which had been ravaged from her by Brut-an-tiffi, at a time when she was embarrassed with other difficulties. Brut-an-tiffi did not think himself so reduced as to purchase peace with such a sacrifice. The Mantchoux were at a great distance, naturally slow in their motions, and had a very long march through a desert country, which they would not attempt without having first provided prodigious magazines. The Serednee were a divided people,

people, among whom he had made shift to foment intestine divisions, that would impede the national operations of the war. The Japanese Fatzman formed a strong barrier between him and the Chinese; the army furnished by the fiefs, he despised, as raw, undisciplined militia: besides, their declaring against him, afforded a specious pretence for laying their respective dominions under contribution. But he chiefly depended upon the coffers of Japan, which he firmly believed would hold out until all his enemies should be utterly exhausted.

As this freebooter was a principal character in the drama which I intend to rehearse, I shall sketch his portrait according to the information I received from a fellow-atom who once resided at his court, constituting part of one of the organs belonging to his first chamberlain. His stature was under the middle size; his aspect mean and forbidding, with a certain expression which did not at all prepossess the spectator in favour of his morals. Had an accurate observer beheld him without any exterior distinctions, in the streets of this metropolis, he would have naturally clapped his hands to his pockets. Thou hast seen the character of Gibbet represented on the stage by a late comedian of expressive feature. Nature sometimes makes a strange contrast between the interior workmanship and the exterior form; but here the one reflected a true image of the other. His heart never felt an impression of tenderness: his notions of right and wrong did not refer to any idea of benevolence, but were founded entirely on the convenience of human commerce; and there was nothing social in the turn of his disposition. By nature he was stern, insolent, and rapacious, uninfluenced by any motive of humanity, unawed by any precept of religion. With respect to religion, he took all opportunities of exposing it to ridicule and contempt. Liberty of conscience he allowed to such extent, as exceeded the bounds of decorum and disgraced all legislation. He pardoned a criminal convicted of bestiality, and publickly declared that all modes of religion, and every species of amour, might be freely practised and prosecuted through all his dominions. His capacity was of the middling mould, and he had taken some pains to cultivate his understanding. He had studied the Chinese language, which he spoke with fluency, and piqued him-

self upon his learning, which was but superficial. His temper was so capricious and inconstant, that it was impossible even for those who knew him best, to foresee any one particular of his personal demeanor. The same individual he would carets and insult by turns, without the least apparent change of circumstance. He has been known to dismiss one of his favourites with particular marks of regard, and the most flattering professions of affection; and before he had time to pull off his buskins at his own house, he has been hurried on horseback by a detachment of cavalry, and conveyed to the frontiers. Thus harrassed, without refreshment or repose, he was brought back by another party, and reconveyed to the presence of Brut-an-tissi, who embraced him at meeting, and gently chid him for having been so long absent. The fixed principles of this Tartar were these: insatiable rapacity, restless ambition, and an insuperable contempt for the Japanese nation. His maxims of government were entirely despotick. He considered his subjects as slaves, to be occasionally sacrificed to the accomplishment of his capital designs; but, in the mean time, he indulged them with the protection of equitable laws, and encouraged them to industry for his own emolument.

His virtues consisted of temperance, vigilance, activity and perseverance. His folly chiefly appeared in childish vanity and self-conceit. He amused himself with riding, reviewing his troops, reading Chinese authors, playing on a musical instrument in use among the Tartars, trifling with buffoons, conversing with supposed wits, and reasoning with pretended philosophers: but he had no communication with the female sex; nor, indeed, was there any ease, comfort, or enjoyment to be derived from a participation of his pastime. His wits, philosophers, and buffoons, were composed of Chinese refugees, who soon discovered his weak side, and flattered his vanity to an incredible pitch of infatuation. They persuaded him that he was an universal genius, an invincible hero, a sage legislator, a sublime philosopher, a consummate politician, a divine poet, and an elegant historian. They wrote systems, compiled memoirs, and composed poems, which were published in his name; nay, they contrived witticisms, which he uttered as his own. They had by means of commercial communication with the



banks of the Ganges, procured the history of a Western hero, called Raskalander, which, indeed, was no other than the memoirs of Alexander wrote by Quintus Curtius, translated from the Indian language, with an intermixture of Oriental fables. This they recommended with many hyperbolical encomiums to the perusal of Brut-an-tiffi, who became enamoured of the performance, and was fired with the ambition of rivalling, if not excelling, Raskalander, not only as a warrior, but likewise as a patron of taste and a protector of the liberal arts. As Alexander deposited Homer's Iliad in a precious casket; so Brut-an-tiffi procured a golden box for preserving this sophistication of Quintus Curtius. It was his constant companion: he affected to read it in publick; and to lay it under his pillow at night.

Thus pampered with adulation, and intoxicated with dreams of conquest, he made no doubt of being able to establish a new empire in Tartary, which should entirely eclipse the kingdom of Tuming-quai, and raise a reputation that should infinitely transcend the fame of Yan, or any emperor that ever sat upon the throne of Thibet. He now took the field against the Amazon of the house of Ostrog; penetrated into her dominions; defeated one of her generals in a pitched battle; and undertook the siege of one of her principal cities, in full confidence of seeing her kneeling at his gate before the end of the campaign. In the mean time, her scattered troops were rallied and reinforced by another old, experienced commander, who being well acquainted with the genius of his adversary, pitched upon an advantageous situation, where he waited for another attack. Brut-an-tiffi, flushed with his former victory, and firmly persuaded that no mortal power could withstand his prowess, gave him battle at a very great disadvantage. The consequence was natural: he lost great part of his army; was obliged to abandon the siege, and retreat with disgrace. A separate body, commanded by one of his ablest captains, met with the same fate in a neighbouring country; and a third detachment at the farthest extremity of his dominions, having attacked an army of the Mantchoux, was repulsed with great loss.

These were not all the mortifications to which he was exposed about this pe-

riod. The Fatzman of Japan, who had formed an army for the defence of the farm of Yesso against the Chinese, met with a terrible disaster. Notwithstanding his being outnumbered by the enemy, he exhibited many proofs of uncommon activity and valour. At length they came to blows with him, and handled him so roughly, that he was fain to retreat from post to pillar, and leave the farm at their mercy. Had he pursued his route to the right, he might have found shelter in the dominions of Brut-an-tiffi, and this was his intention; but, instead of marching in a straight line, he revolved to the right, like a planet round the sun, impelled as it were by a compound impulse, until he had described a regular semicircle; and then he found himself with all his followers engaged in a sheep-pen, from whence there was no egress; for the enemy, who followed his steps, immediately blocked up the entrance. The unfortunate Fatzman being thus pounded, must have fallen a sacrifice to his centripetal force, had not he been delivered by the interposition of a neighbouring chief, who prevailed upon the Chinese general to let Quambacun-dono escape, provided his followers would lay down their arms, and return peaceably to their own habitations. This was a bitter pill, which the Fatzman was obliged to swallow, and is said to have cost him five stone of suet. He returned to Japan in obscurity; the Chinese general took possession of the farm in the name of his emperor; and all the damage which the tenants sustained, was nothing more than a change of masters, which they had no great cause to regret.

To the thinking part of the Japanese, nothing could be more agreeable than this event, by which they were at once delivered from a pernicious excrescence, which, like an ulcerated tumour, exhausted the juices of the body by which it was fed. Brut-an-tiffi considered the transaction in a different point of view. He foresaw that the Chinese forces would now be at liberty to join his enemies, the tribe of Ostrog, with whom the Chinese emperor was intimately connected; and that it would be next to impossible to withstand the joint efforts of the confederacy, which he had brought upon his own head. He therefore raised a hideous clamour. He accused the Fatzman of misconduct, and insisted, not without

E

a mix-

a mixture of menaces, upon the Dairo's reassembling his forces in the country of Yesso.

The Dairo himself was inconsolable. He neglected his food, and refused to confer with his ministers. He dismissed the Fatzman from his service. He locked himself in his cabinet, and spent the hours in lamentation. 'O my dear farm of Yesso!' cried he, 'shall I never more enjoy thy charms!—Shall I never more regale my eye with thy beauteous prospects, thy hills of heath; thy meads of broom; and thy wastes of sand! Shall I never more eat thy black bread, drink thy brown beer, and feast upon thy delicate porkers! Shall I never more receive the homage of the fallow Yessites with their meagre faces, ragged skirts, and wooden shoes! Shall I never more improve their huts, and regulate their pigstyes! O cruel Fate! in vain did I face thy mud-walled mansion with a new freestone front! In vain did I cultivate thy turnep-garden! In vain did I enclose a piece of ground at a great expence, and raise a crop of barley, the first that ever was seen in Yesso! In vain did I send over a breed of mules and black cattle for the purposes of husbandry! In vain did I supply you with all the implements of agriculture! In vain did I sow grass and grain for food, and plant trees, and furze and fern for shelter to the game, which could not otherwise subsist upon your naked downs! In vain did I furnish your houseless sies, and fill your hungry bellies with the good things of Japan! In vain did I expend the treasures of my empire for thy melioration and defence! In vain did I incur the execrations of my people, if I must now lose thee for ever; if thou must now fall into the hands of an insolent alien, who has no affection for thy soil, and no regard for thy interest! O Quamba-cun-dono! Quamba-cun-dono! how hast thou disappointed my hope! I thought thou wast too ponderous to flinch; that thou wouldst have stood thy ground fixed as the temple of Fakkubasi, and larded the lean earth with thy carcase, rather than leave my farm uncovered: but, alas! thou hast fled before the enemy like a partridge on the mountains; and suffered thyself at last to be taken in a snare like a foolish dotterel!

The Cuboy, who overheard this ex-

clamation, attempted to comfort him through the key-hole. He soothed, and whined, and wheedled, and laughed, and wept all in a breath. He exhorted the illustrious Got-hama-baba to bear this misfortune with his wonted greatness of mind. He offered to present his Imperial majesty with lands in Japan that should be equal in value to the farm he had lost: or, if that should not be agreeable, to make good, at the peace, all the damage that should be done to it by the enemy. Finally, he cursed the farm, as the cause of his master's chagrin, and fairly wished it at the devil. Here he was suddenly interrupted with a 'Bub-ub-ub-boh! my lord Cuboy, your grace talks like an apothecary. Go home to your own palace, and direct your cooks; and may your bonzes kiss your a—— to your heart's content, I swear by the horns of the Moon and the hoofs of the White Horse, that my foot shall not touch your posteriors these three days!' Fikakaka having received this severe check, craved pardon in a whimpering tone, for the liberty he had taken, and retired to consult with Mura-clami, who advised him to summon orator Taycho to his assistance.

This mob-driver being made acquainted with the passion of the Dairo, and the cause of his distress, readily undertook to make such a speech through the key-hole, as should effectually dispel the emperor's despondence; and to this enterprize he was encouraged by the hyperbolical praises of Mura-clami, who exhausted all the tropes of his own rhetoric in extolling the eloquence of Taycho. This triumvirate immediately adjourned to the door of the apartment in which Got-hama-baba was sequestered, where the orator kneeling upon a cushion, with his mouth applied to the key-hole, opened the sluices of his elocution to this effect:

'Most gracious!—' Bo, bo, boh!'  
 —'Most illustrious!—' Bo, boh!—  
 'Most invincible Got-hama-baba!—  
 'Boh!—' When the sun, that glorious luminary, is obscured by envious clouds, all nature saddens, and seems to sympathize with his apparent distress. Your Imperial majesty is the sun of our hemisphere, whose splendor illuminates our throne; and whose genial warmth enlivens our hearts; and shall we your subjects, your slaves, the crea-  
 'tures



tures of your nod—shall we unmoved behold your ever-glorious effulgence over-cast? No! while the vital stream bedews our veins, while our souls retain the faculty of reason, and our tongues the power of speech, we shall not cease to embalm your sorrow with our tears; we shall not cease to pour the overflowings of our affection—our filial tenderness, which will always be reciprocal with your parental care: these are the inexhaustible sources of the nation's happiness. They may be compared to the rivers Jodo and Jodogawa, which derive their common origin from the vast lake of Ami. The one winds its silent course calm, clear, and majestic, reflecting the groves and palaces that adorn its banks, and fertilizing the delightful country through which it runs: the other gushes impetuous through a rugged channel and less fertile soil; yet serves to beautify a number of wild romantic scenes; to fill an hundred aqueducts, and to turn a thousand mills: at length they join their streams below the imperial city of Meaco, and form a mighty flood devolving to the bay of Osaka, bearing on its spacious bosom the riches of Japan.—Here the orator paused for breath:—the Cuboy clapped him on the back, whispering—'Super-excellent! O charming simile! Another such will sink the Dairo's grief to the bottom of the sea; and his heart will float like a blown bladder upon the waves of Kugava.' Mura-clami was not silent in his praise, while he squeezed an orange between the lips of Taycho; and Got-hama-baba seemed all attention: at length the orator resumed his subject—'Think not, august emperor, that the cause of your disquiet is unknown, or unlamented by your weeping servants. We have not only perceived your eclipse, but discovered the invidious body by whose interposition that eclipse is effected. The rapacious arms of the hostile Chinese have seized the farm of Yesso!—Oh, oh, oh!—that farm so cherished by your imperial favour; that farm which, in the north of Tartary, shone like a jewel in an Æthiop's ear; yes, that jewel hath been snatched by the savage hand of a Chinese freebooter:—but, dry your tears, my prince; that jewel shall detect his theft, and light us to revenge.

It shall become a rock to crush him in his retreat; a net of iron to entangle his steps; a fallen trunk over which his feet shall stumble. It shall hang like a weight about his neck, and sink him to the lowest gulph of perdition. Be comforted, then, my liege! your farm is rooted to the center; it can neither be concealed nor removed. Nay, should he hide it at the bottom of the ocean; or place it among the constellations in the heavens; your faithful Taycho would fish it up entire, or tear it headlong from the starry firmament. We will retrieve the farm of Yesso.'—But, how, how, how, dear orator Taycho?—'The empire of Japan shall be mortgaged for the sake of that precious—that sacred spot, which produced the patriarch apostle *Bupo*, and resounded under the hoofs of the holy steed. Your people of Japan shall chant the litany of Fakkubasi. They shall institute crusades for the recovery of the farm; they shall pour their treasury at your imperial feet; they shall clamour for imposition; they shall load themselves with tenfold burdens, desolate their country, and beggar their posterity, in behalf of Yesso. With these funds I could undertake even to overturn the councils of Pekin. While the Tartar princes deal in the trade of blood, there will be no want of hands to cut away those noxious weeds which have taken root in the farm of Yesso; those vermin that have preyed upon her delightful blossoms! Amidst such a variety of remedies, there can be no difficulty in choosing. Like a weary traveller, I will break a bough from the first pine that presents, and brush away those troublesome insects that gnaw the fruits of Yesso. Should not the mercenary bands of Tartary suffice to repel those insolent invaders; I will engage to chain this island to the continent; to build a bridge from shore to shore, that shall afford a passage more free and ample than the road to Hell. Through this avenue I will ride the mighty beast whose name is Legion. I have studied the art of war, my liege: I had once the honour to serve my country as Lance-presado in the militia of Nippon. I will unpeople these realms, and overspread the land of Yesso with the forces of Japan.'

Got-hama-baba could no longer resist the energy of such expressions. He flew

to the door of his cabinet, and embraced the orator in a transport of joy; while Fika-kaka fell upon his neck and wept aloud; and Mura-clami kissed the hem of his garment.

You must know, Peacock, I had by this time changed my situation. I was discharged in the perspiratory vapour from the perinæum of the Cuboy, and sucked into the lungs of Mura-clami, through which I pervaded into the course of the circulation, and visited every part of his composition. I found the brain so full and compact, that there was not room for another particle of matter. But instead of a heart, he had a membranous sac, or hollow viscus, cold and callous, the habitation of sneaking caution, servile flattery, griping avarice, creeping malice, and treacherous deceit. Among these tenants it was my fate to dwell; and there I discovered the motives by which the lawyer's conduct was influenced. He now secretly rejoiced at the presumption of Taycho, which he hoped had already prompted him to undertake more than he could perform; in which case he would infallibly incur disgrace either with the Dairo or the people. It is not impossible but this hope might have been realized, had not fortune unexpectedly interposed, and operated as an auxiliary to the orator's presumption. Success began to dawn upon the arms of Japan in the island of Fatsissio; and towards the end of the campaign, Brut-an-tiff obtained two petty advantages in Tartary against one body of Chinese, and another of the Ostrog. All these were magnified into astonishing victories, and ascribed to the wisdom and courage of Taycho, because during his ministry they were obtained; though he neither knew why, nor wherefore; and was in this respect as innocent as his master Got-hama-baba, and his colleague Fika-kaka. He had penetration enough to perceive, however, that these events had intoxicated the rabble, and began to pervert their ideas. Success of any kind is apt to perturb the weak brain of a Japanese; but the acquisition of any military trophy produces an actual delirium. The streets of Meaco were filled with the multitudes who shouted, whooped, and hollowed. They made processions with flags and banners; they illuminated their houses; they extolled Ian-on-i, a provincial captain of Fatsissio, who had by accident repulsed

a body of the enemy, and reduced an old barn which they had fortified. They magnified Brut-an-tiff; they deified the orator Taycho; they drank, they damned, they squabbled, and acted a thousand extravagancies which I shall not pretend to enumerate or particularize. Taycho, who knew their trim, seized this opportunity to strike while the iron was hot. He forthwith mounted an old tub, which was his public rostrum, and waving his hand in an oratorical attitude, was immediately surrounded with the thronging populace. I have already given you a specimen of his manner, and therefore shall not repeat the tropes and figures of his harangue: but only sketch out the plan of his address, and specify the chain of his argument alone. He assailed them in the way of paradox, which never fails to produce a wonderful effect upon a heated imagination and a shallow understanding. Having, in his exordium, artfully fascinated their faculties, like a juggler in Bartholomew Fair, by means of an assemblage of words without meaning or import; he proceeded to demonstrate, that a wise and good man ought to discard his maxims the moment he finds they are certainly established on the foundation of eternal truth. That the people of Japan ought to preserve the farm of Yesso, as the apple of their eye, because nature had disjoined it from their empire; and the maintenance of it would involve them in all the quarrels of Tartary: that it was to be preserved at all hazards, because it was not worth preserving: that all the power and opulence of Japan ought to be exerted and employed in its defence, because, by the nature of its situation, it could not possibly be defended: that Brut-an-tiff was the great protector of the religion of the Bonzas, because he had never shewn the least regard to any religion at all: that he was the fast friend of Japan, because he had more than once acted as a rancorous enemy to this empire, and never let slip the least opportunity of expressing his contempt for the subjects of Nippon: that he was an invincible hero, because he had been thrice beaten, and once compelled to raise a siege in the course of two campaigns: that he was a prince of consummate honour, because he had in the time of profound peace usurped the dominions and ravaged the countries of his neighbours, in defiance of common honesty;



honesty; in violation of the most solemn treaties: that he was the most honourable and important ally that the empire of Japan could choose, because his alliance was to be purchased with an enormous annual tribute, for which he was bound to perform no earthly office of friendship or assistance; because connection with him effectually deprived Japan of the friendship of all the other princes and states of Tartary; and the utmost exertion of his power could never conduce, in the smallest degree, to the interest or advantage of the Japanese empire.

Such were the propositions orator Taycho undertook to demonstrate; and the success justified his undertaking. After a weak mind has been duly prepared, and turned as it were, by opening a sluice or torrent of high-sounding words; the greater the contradiction proposed the stronger impression it makes, because it increases the puzzle, and lays fast hold on the admiration; depositing the small proportion of reason with which it was before impregnated, like the vitriol acid in the copper-mines of Wicklow, into which if you immerse iron, it immediately quits the copper which it had before dissolved, and unites with the other metal, to which it has a stronger attraction.—Orator Taycho was not so well skilled in logic as to amuse his audience with definitions of concrete and abstract terms; or expatiate upon the genus and the difference; or state propositions by the subject, the predicate, and the copula; or form syllogisms by mood and figure: but he was perfectly well acquainted with all the equivocal or synonymous words in his own language; and could ring the changes on them with great dexterity. He knew perfectly well how to express the same ideas by words that literally implied opposition:—for example, a valuable conquest or an invaluable conquest; a shameful rascal or a shameful villain; a hard head or a soft head; a large conscience or no conscience; immensely great or immensely little; damned high or damned low; damned bitter, damned sweet; damned severe, damned insipid; and damned fulsome. He knew how to invert the sense of words by changing the manner of pronunciation; e. g. ‘You are a very pretty fellow!’ to signify, ‘You are a very dirty scoundrel.—You have *always* spoke respectfully of the higher powers!’ to express, ‘You have often

‘insulted your betters, and even your sovereign!—You have *never* turned tail to the principles you professed!’ to declare, ‘You have acted the part of an infamous apostate.’ He was well aware that words alter their signification according to the circumstances of times, customs, and the difference of opinion. Thus the name of Jack, who used to turn the spit and pull off his master’s boots, was transferred to an iron machine and a wooden instrument now substituted for these purposes: thus a stand for the tea-kettle, acquired the name of Footman; and the words Canon and Ordinance, signifying originally a rule or law, was extended to a piece of artillery, which is counted the *ultima lex*, or *ultima ratio regum*.—In the same manner the words Infidel, Heresy, Good Man, and Political Orthodoxy, imply very different significations, among different classes of people. A Mussulman is an infidel at Rome, and a Christian is distinguished as an unbeliever at Constantinople. A Papist by Protestantism understands heresy; to a Turk, the same idea is conveyed by the sect of Ali. The term *good man*, at Edinburgh, implies Fanaticism; upon the Exchange of London it signifies Cash; and in the general acceptance, Benevolence. Political orthodoxy has different, nay opposite definitions, at different places in the same kingdom; at O— and C—; at the Cocoa-tree in Pall Mall; and at Garraway’s in Exchange Alley. Our orator was well acquainted with all the legerdemain of his own language, as well as with the nature of the beast he had to rule. He knew when to distract it’s weak brain with a tumult of incongruous and contradictory ideas: he knew when to overwhelm it’s feeble faculty of thinking, by pouring in a torrent of words without any ideas annexed. These throng in like city-milliners to a Mile-end assembly, while it happens to be under the direction of a conductor without strength and authority. Those that have ideas annexed may be compared to the females provided with partners, which, though they may crowd the place, do not absolutely destroy all regulation and decorum. But those that are uncoupled, press in promiscuously with such impetuosity and in such numbers, that the puny master of the ceremonies is unable to withstand the irruption; far less, to distinguish their quality, or accommodate

commodate them with partners: thus they fall into the dance without order, and immediately anarchy ensues. Taycho having kept the monster's brain on a simmer, until, like the cow-heel in Don Quixote, it seemed to cry—'Comenme, comenme—Come, eat me; come, eat me:' then told them in plain terms, that it was expedient they should part with their wives and their children, their souls and their bodies, their blood and their sweat, in order to defend the indefensible farm of Yesso, and to support Brut-an-tiffi, their insupportable ally.—The hydra, rolling itself in the dust, turned up it's huge unwieldy paunch and wagged it's forky tail; then licked the feet of Taycho, and through all it's hoarse discordant throats, began to bray applause. The Dairo rejoiced in his success, the first-fruits of which consisted in their agreeing to maintain an army of twenty thousand Tartar mercenaries, who were reinforced by the flower of the national troops of Japan, sent over to defend the farm of Yesso; and in their consenting to prolong the annual tribute granted to Brut-an-tiffi, who, in return for this condescension, accommodated the Dairo with one of his free-booting captains to command the Yessite army. This new general had seen some service, and was counted a good officer: but it was not so much on account of his military character that he obtained this command, as for his dexterity in prolonging the war; his skill in exercising all the different arts of peculation; and his attachment to Brut-an-tiffi, with whom he had agreed to co-operate in milking the Japanese cow. This plan they executed with such effect, as could not possibly result from address alone, unassisted by the infatuation of those whom they pillaged. Every article of contingent expence for draught-horses, waggons, postage, forage, provision, and secret service, was swelled to such a degree as did violence to common sense as well as to common honesty. The general had a fellow-feeling with all the contractors in the army, who were connected with him in such a manner as seemed to preclude all possibility of detection. In vain some of the Japanese officers endeavoured to pry into this mysterious commerce; in vain inspectors were appointed by the government of Japan. The first were removed on different pretences: the last were encountered by such dis-

graces and discouragements, as in a little time compelled them to resign the office they had undertaken. In a word, there was not a private mercenary Tartar soldier in this army who did not cost the empire of Japan as much as any subaltern officer of it's own; and the annual charge of this continental war, undertaken for the protection of the farm of Yesso, exceeded the whole expence of any former war which Japan had ever maintained on it's own account since the beginning of the empire: nay, it was attended with one circumstance which rendered it still more insupportable. The money expended in armaments and operations, equipped and prosecuted on the side of Japan, was all circulated within the empire; so that it still remained useful to the community in general; but no instance could be produced, of a single copan that ever returned from the continent of Tartary; therefore all the sums sent thither were clear loss to the subjects of Japan. Orator Taycho acted as a faithful ally to Brut-an-tiffi, by stretching the bass-strings of the mobile in such a manner, as to be always in concert with the extravagance of the Tartar's demands, and the absurdity of the Dairo's predilection. Fika-kaka was astonished at these phenomena; while Mura-clami hoped in secret, that the orator's brain was disordered; and that his insanity would soon stand confessed, even to the conviction of the people. 'If,' said he to himself, 'they are not altogether destitute of human reason, they must, of their own accord, perceive and comprehend this plain proposition: A cask of water that discharges *three* by one pipe, and receives no more than *two* by another, must infallibly be emptied at the long-run. Japan discharges *three* millions of obans every year for the defence of that blessed farm, which, were it put up to sale, would not fetch one sixth part of the sum; and the annual balance of her trade with all the world brings in *two* millions: ergo, it runs out faster than it runs in, and the vessel at the long-run must be empty.' Mura-clami was mistaken. He had studied philosophy only in profile. He had endeavoured to investigate the sense, but he had never fathomed the absurdities of human nature. All that Taycho had done for Yesso, amounted not to one-third of what was required for the annual



annual expence of Japan while it maintained the war against China in different quarters of Asia. A former Cuboy, (rest his soul!) finding it impossible to raise within the year the exorbitant supplies that were required to gratify the avarice and ambition of the Dairo, had contrived the method of funding, which hath been lately adopted with such remarkable success in this kingdom. You know, Peacock, this is no more than borrowing a certain sum on the credit of the nation, and laying a fresh tax upon the public, to defray the interest of every sum thus borrowed; an excellent expedient, when kept within due bounds, for securing the established government, multiplying the dependants of the m—ry, and throwing all the money of the empire into the hands of the administration. But those loans were so often repeated, that the national debt had already swelled to an enormous burthen; such a variety of taxes was laid upon the subject, as grievously inhanced all the necessaries of life; consequently the poor were distressed, and the price of labour was raised to such a degree, that the Japanese manufactures were everywhere undersold by the Chinese traders, who employed their workmen at a more moderate expence. Taycho, in this dilemma, was seized with a strange conceit. Alchemy was at that period become a favourite study in Japan. Some Bonzas having more learning and avarice than their brethren, applied themselves to the study of certain Chaldean manuscripts, which their ancestors had brought from Assyria; and in these they found the substance of all that is contained in the works of Hermes Trismegistus, Geber, Zosymus, the Panapolite, Olympiodorus, Heliodorus, Agathodæmon, Morienus, Albertus Magnus, and, above all, your countryman Roger Bacon, who adopted Geber's opinion, that mercury is the common basis, and sulphur the cement of all metals. By the bye, this same friar Bacon was well acquainted with the composition of gun-powder, though the reputation arising from the discovery has been given to Swartz, who lived many years after that monk of Westminster. Whether the philosopher's stone, otherwise called the Gift Azoth, the fifth Essence, or the Alkahest; which last Van Helmont pilfered from the tenth book of the Archidoxa, that treasure so long de-

posited in the occiput of the renowned Aureolus, Philippus, Paracelsus, Theophrastus, Bombast, De Hohenheim; was ever really attained by human adept, I am not at liberty to disclose; but certain it is, the philosophers and alchemists of Japan, employed by Orator Taycho to transmute baser metal into gold, miscarried in all their experiments. The whole evaporated in smoke, without leaving so much as the scrapings of a crucible for a specifick against the itch. Tickets made of a kind of bamboo, had been long used to reinforce the circulation of Japan; but these were of no use in Tartary: the mercenaries and allies of that country would receive nothing but gold and silver, which, indeed, one would imagine they had a particular method of decomposing or annihilating; for, of all the millions transported thither, not one copan has been known to revisit Japan. It was a country (as Hamlet says) from whose bourn no travelling copan e'er returned. As the war of Yesso, therefore, engrossed all the specie of Nippon, and some currency was absolutely necessary to the subsistence of the Japanese, the orator contrived a method to save the expence of solid food. He composed a mess that should fill their bellies, and, at the same time, protract the intoxication of their brains, which it was so much his interest to maintain. He put them upon a diet of yeast; where this did not agree with the stomach, he employed his emissaries to blow up the patients *à posteriori*, as the dog was blown up by the madman of Seville, recorded by Cervantes. The individuals thus inflated were seen swaggering about the streets, smooth and round, and sleek and jolly, with leering eyes and florid complexion. Every one seemed to have the *os magna sonaturum*. He strutted with an air of importance. He broke wind, and broached new systems. He declared, as if by revelation, that the more debt the publick owed, the richer it became; that food was not necessary to the support of life; nor an intercourse of the sexes required for the propagation of the species. He expatiated on yeast, as the nectar of the gods, that would sustain the animal machine, fill the human mind with divine inspiration, and confer immortality. From the efficacy of this specifick, he began to prophesy concerning the White Horse, and declared himself an apostle of Bupo. Thus they strolled through the island of Nippon,

phon, barking and preaching the gospel of Fakku-bah, and presenting their barm goblets to all who were in quest of political salvation. The people had been so well prepared for infatuation, by the speeches of Taycho, and the tidings of success from Tartary, that every passenger greedily swallowed the drench, and in a little time the whole nation was converted; that is, they were totally freed from those troublesome and impertinent faculties of reason and reflection, which could have served no other purpose but to make them miserable under the burthens to which their backs were now subjected. They offered up all their gold and silver, their jewels, their furniture and apparel, at the shrine of Fakku-bah, singing psalms and hymns in praise of the White Horse. They put arms into the hands of their children, and drove them into Tartary, in order to fatten the land of Yesso with their blood. They grew fanaticks in that cause, and worshipped Brut-an-tiffi, as the favourite prophet of the beatified Bupo. All was staggering, staring, incoherence and contortion, exclamation and eructation. Still this was no more than a temporary delirium, which might vanish as the intoxicating effects of the yeast subsided. Taycho, therefore, called in two reinforcements to the drench. He resolved to satiate their appetite for blood, and to amuse their infantine vanity with the gew-gaws of triumph. He equipped out one armament at a considerable expence to make a descent on the coast of China, and sent another at a much greater, to fight the enemy in Fatsissio. The commander of the first disembarked upon a desolate island, demolished an unfinished cottage, and brought away a few bunches of wild grapes. He afterwards hovered on the Chinese coast; but was deterred from landing by a very singular phenomenon. In surveying the shore, through spying-glasses, he perceived the whole beach instantaneously fortified, as it were, with parapets of sand, which had escaped the naked eye; and at one particular part there appeared a body of giants with very hideous features, peeping, as it were, from behind those parapets: from which circumstances the Japanese general concluded there was a very formidable ambuscade, which he thought it would be madness to encounter, and even folly to ascertain. One would imagine he had seen Homer's account of the

Cyclops, and did not think himself safe, even at the distance of some miles from the shore; for he pressed the commander of the Fune to weigh anchor immediately, and retire to a place of more safety.—I shall now, Peacock, let you into the whole secret. This great officer was deceived by the carelessness of the commissary, who, instead of perspectives, had furnished him with glasses peculiar to Japan, that magnified and multiplied objects at the same time. They are called Pho-beron-tia. The large parapets of sand were a couple of mole-hills; and the gigantick faces of grim aspect, were the posteriors of an old woman sacrificing *sub dio*, to the powers of digestion. There was another circumstance which tended to the miscarriage of this favourite expedition. The principal design was against a trading town, situated on a navigable river; and at the place where this river disembogued itself into the sea, there was a Chinese fort called Sarouf. The admiral of the Fune sent the second in command, whose name was Sel-uon, to lay this fort in ashes, that the embarkation might pass without let or molestation. A Chinese pilot offered to bring his junk within a cable-length of the walls: but he trusted to the light of his own penetration. He ran his junk aground, and solemnly declared there was not water sufficient to float any vessel of force, within three miles of Sa-rouf. This discovery he made by sounding, and it proved two very surprizing paradoxes: first, that the Chinese junks drew little or no water, otherwise they could not have arrived at the town where they were laid up; secondly, that the fort Sa-rouf was raised in a spot where it neither could offend, nor be offended. But the Sey-seo-gun Sel-uon was a mighty man for paradoxes. His superior in command was a plain man, who did not understand these niceties: he therefore grumbled, and began to be troublesome; upon which a council of war was held; and he being overruled by a majority of voices, the whole embarkation returned to Nippon *re infecta*. You have been told how the beast called Legion brayed, and bellowed, and kicked, when the fate of Byn-goh's expedition was known; it was disposed to be very unruly at the return of this armament: but Taycho lelled it with a double dose of his Mandragora. It growled at the giants, the sand-hills, and the paradoxes of Sel-uon: then  
brayed



brayed aloud—'Taycho for ever!' rolled itself up like a lubberly hydra, yawned, and fell fast asleep. The other armament equipped for the operations in Fatissio, did not arrive at the place of destination till the opportunity for action was lost. The object was the reduction of a town and island belonging to the Chinese; but before the Fune with the troops arrived from Nippon, the enemy having received intimation of their design, had reinforced the garrison and harbour with a greater number of forces and Fune than the Japanese commander could bring against them. He, therefore, wisely declined an enterprize which must have ended in his own disgrace and destruction. The Chinese were successful in other parts of Fatissio. They demolished some forts, they defeated some parties, and massacred some people belonging to the colonies of Japan. Perhaps the tidings of these disasters would have roused the people of Nippon from the lethargy of intoxication in which they were overwhelmed; had not their delirium been kept up by some fascinating amulets from Tartary: these were no other than the bubbles which Brut-an-tiffi swelled into mighty victories over the Chinese and Ostrog; though, in fact, he had been severely cudgelled, and more than once in very great danger of crucifixion. Taycho presented the monster with a bowl of blood, which he told it this invincible ally had drawn from it's enemies the Chinese, and, at the same time, blowed the gay bubbles athwart it's numerous eyes. The hydra lapped the gore with signs of infinite relish; groaned and grunted to see the bubbles dance; exclaimed—'O rare Taycho!' and relapsed into the arms of slumber. Thus passed the first campaign of Taycho's administration.

By this time Fika-kaka was fully convinced that the orator actually dealt with the devil, and had even sold him his soul for this power of working miracles on the understanding of the populace. He began to be invaded with fears, that the same consideration would be demanded of him for the ease and pleasure he now enjoyed in partnership with that magician. He no longer heard himself scoffed, ridiculed, and reviled in the assemblies of the people. He no longer saw his measures thwarted, nor his person treated with disdain. He no longer racked his brain for pretences to extort money; nor

trembled with terror when he used these pretences to the publick. The mouth of the opposition was now glewed to his own posteriors. Many a time and often, when he heard Orator Taycho declaiming against him from his rostrum, he cursed him in his heart, and was known to ejaculate—'Kiss my a—se, Taycho;' but little did he think the orator would one day stoop to this compliance. He now saw that insolent foul-mouthed demagogue ministering with the utmost servility to his pleasure and ambition. He filled his bags with the treasures of Japan, as if by enchantment; so that he could now gratify his own profuse temper without stint or controul. He took upon himself the whole charge of the administration; and left Fika-kaka to the full enjoyment of his own sensuality, thus divested of all it's thorns. It was the contemplation of these circumstances which inspired the Cuboy with a belief, that the devil was concerned in producing this astonishing calm of felicity; and that his infernal highness would require of him some extraordinary sacrifice for the extraordinary favours he bestowed. He could not help suspecting the sincerity of Taycho's attachment, because it seemed altogether unnatural; and if his soul was to be the sacrifice, he wished to treat with Satan as a principal. Full of this idea, he had recourse to his Bonzes, as the most likely persons to procure him such an interview with the Prince of Darkness, as should not be attended with immediate danger to his corporeal parts: but, upon enquiry, he found there was not one conjurer among them all. Some of them made a merit of their ignorance; pretending they could not in conscience give application to an art which must have led them into communication with demons: others insisted there was no such thing as the devil; and this opinion seemed to be much relished by the Cuboy: the rest frankly owned they knew nothing at all of the matter. For my part, Peacock, I not only know there is a devil, but I likewise know that he has marked out nineteen twentieths of the people of this metropolis for his prey.—How now!—You shake, sirrah!—You have some reason, considering the experiments you have been trying in the way of forcery; turning the sieve and sheers; mumbling gibberish over a goose's liver stuck with pins; pricking your thumbs, and writing mystical characters with your blood;

F forming

forming spells with sticks laid across; reading prayers backwards; and invoking the devil by the name, style, and title of *Satban, Abrasax, Adonai*. I know what communication you had with Goody Thrusk at Camberwell, who undertook for three shillings and four-pence to convey you on a broomstick to Norway, where the devil was to hold a conventicle; but you boggled at crossing the sea, without such security for your person as the beldame could not give. I remember your poring over the treatise *De volucris arborea*, until you had well-nigh lost your wits; and your intention to enrol yourself in the Rosicrucian society, until your intrigue with the tripe-woman in Thieving Lane destroyed your pretensions to chastity. Then you cloaked your own wickedness with an affectation of scepticism, and declared there never was any such existence as devil, demon, spirit, or goblin; nor any such art as magick, necromancy, sorcery, or witchcraft.—O, infidel! hast thou never heard of the three divisions of magick, into natural, artificial, and diabolical? The first of these is no more than medicine; hence the same word *Pharmacopola* signified both a wise-acre and apothecary. To the second belong the glass sphere of Archimedes, the flying wooden pigeon of Archytus, the Emperor Leo's singing-birds of gold, Boetius the Consolator's flying birds of brass, hissing serpents of the same metal, and the famous speaking head of Albertus Magnus. The last, which we call diabolical, depends upon the evocation of spirits: such was the art exercised by the magicians of Pharaoh; as well as by that conjurer recorded by Gaspar Peucerus, who animated the dead carcase of a famous female harper in Bologna, in such a manner, that she played upon her instrument as well as ever she had done in her life, until another magician removing the charm, which had been placed in her arm-pits, the body fell down, deprived of all motion. It is by such means that conjurers cure distempers with charms and amulets; that, according to St. Isidore, they confound the elements, disturb the understanding, slay without poison or any perceptible wound, call up devils, and learn from them how to torment their enemies. Magick was known even to the ancient Romans. Cato teaches us how to charm a dislocated bone, by repeating these mystical words: *'Incipe, cantare in alto, S. F. motas danata dardaries, Asto-*

*'taries dic una parite dum coeunt, &c.'* Besides, the virtues of ABRACADABRA are well known, though the meaning of the word has puzzled some of the best critics of the last age; such as Wendelinus, Scaliger, Saumaïse, and Father Kircher; not to mention the ancient physician Serenus Sammonicus, who describes the disposition of these characters in hexameter verse. I might here launch out into a very learned dissertation to prove that this very Serenus formed the word ABRACADABRA from the Greek word *Αβρααζ*, a name by which Basilides the Egyptian heretick defined the Deity, as the letters of it imply 365, the number of days in the year. This is the word still fair and legible on one of the two talismans found in the seventeenth century, of which Baronius gives us the figure in the second volume of his Annals. By the bye, Peacock, you must take notice, that the figure of St. George encountering the dragon, which is the symbol of the order of the Garter, and at this day distinguishes so many inns, taverns, and ale-houses, in this kingdom, was no other originally than the device of an abraxas or amulet wore by the Basilidians, as a charm against infection: for, by the man on horseback killing the dragon, was typified the sun purifying the air, and dispersing the noxious vapours from the earth. An abraxas marked with this device, is exhibited by Montfaucon out of the collection of Sig. Capello. This symbol, improved by the cross on the top of the spear, was afterwards adopted by the Christian crusards, as a badge of their religious warfare, as well as an amulet to ensure victory; the cross alluding to Constantine's labarum, with the motto—*'ΕΥ ΤΟΥΤΩ ΝΙΚΑ'*—In this 'you shall conquer.' The figure on horseback they metamorphosed into St. George, the same with George the Arian, who at one time was reckoned a martyr, and maintained a place in the Roman Martyrology, from which he and others were erased by Pope Gelasius in the fifth century, because the accounts of their martyrdom were written by hereticks. This very George, while he officiated as bishop of Alexandria, having ordered a temple of the god Mythras to be purified, and converted into a Christian church, found in the said temple this emblem of the sun, which the Persians adored under the name of Mythras; and with the addition of the cross, metamorphosed it into a symbol



a symbol of Christian warfare against idolatry. It was on this occasion that the Pagans rose against George, and murdered him with the utmost barbarity; and from this circumstance he became a saint and martyr, and the amulet or abraxas became his badge of distinction. The cross was considered as such a sure protection in battle, that every sword-hilt was made in this form, and every warrior, before he engaged, kissed it in token of devotion: hence the phrase—'I kiss your hilt;' which is sometimes used even at this day. With respect to the mystical words ABRACAX, ΙΑΩ, ΔΟΩΝΑΙ, which are found upon these amulets, and supposed to be of Hebrew extract, though in the Greek character of termination; if thou wouldst know their real signification, thou mayest consult the learned De Croy, in his treatise concerning the genealogies of the Gnostics. Thou wilt find it at the end of St. Irenæus's works, published by Græbius at Oxford.

But, to return to magick, thou must have heard of the famous Albertus Magnus de Bollstadt, who indifferently exercised the professions of conjurer, bawd, and man-midwife; who forged the celebrated Androides, or brazen-head, which pronounced oracles, and solved questions of the utmost difficulty: nor can the fame of Henry Cornelius Agrippa have escaped thee; he, who wrote the treatises *De occulta Philosophia*; & *de cæcis Ceremoniis*; who kept his demon secured with an enchanted iron collar, in the shape of a black dog; which black dog being dismissed in his last moments with these words: '*Abi perditæ bestia quæ me totum perdidisti*;' plunged itself in the river Soame, and immediately disappeared. But what need of those prophane instances to prove the existence of magicians who held communication with the devil? Don't we read in the Scripture of the magicians of Pharaoh and Manasses; of the witch of Endor; of Simon and Barjesus, magicians; and of that sorceress of whose body the apostle Paul dispossessed the devil? Have not the fathers mentioned magicians and forcerers? Have not different councils denounced anathemas against them? Hath not the civil law decreed punishments to be inflicted upon those convicted of the black art? Have not all the tribunals in France, England, and particularly in Scotland, condemned many persons to the stake

for forceries, on the fullest evidence; nay, even on their own confession? Thou thyself mayest almost remember the havock that was made among the forcerers in one of the English colonies in North America, by Dr. Increase Mather, and Dr. Cotton Mather, those luminaries of the New England church, under the authority and auspices of Sir William Phipps, that flower of knight-hood and mirror of governors, who, not contented with living witnesses, called in the assistance of spectral evidence, to the conviction of those diabolical delinquents. This was a hint, indeed, which he borrowed from the famous trial of Urban Grandier, canon of Loudun in France, who was duly convicted of magick, upon the depositions of the devils Astaroth, Eufas, Celsus, Acaos, Cedon, Alimodeus, Alix, Zabulon, Nephtholim, Cham, Uriel, and Acbas. I might likewise refer thee to King James's History of Witchcraft, wherein it appears, upon uncontroversible evidence, that the devil not only presided in person at the assemblies of those wise women; but even condescended to be facetious, and often diverted them by dancing and playing gambols with a lighted candle in his breech. I might bid thee recollect the authenticated account of the Earl of Gowry's conspiracy against the said king, in which appears the deposition of a certain person, certifying that the Earl of Gowry had studied the black art: that he wore an amulet about his person, of such efficacy, that although he was run several times through the body, not one drop of blood flowed from the wounds until those mystical characters were removed. Finally, I could fill whole volumes with undeniable facts to prove the existence of magick: but what I have said shall suffice. I must only repeat it again, that there was not one magician, conjurer, wizard, or witch, among all the Bonzes of Japan, whom the Cuboy consulted: a circumstance that astonished him the more, as divers of them, notwithstanding their beards, were shrewdly suspected to be old women; and till that time, an old woman with a beard upon her chin had been always considered as an agent of the devil. It was the nature of Fika-kaka to be impatient and impetuous. Perceiving that none of his Bonzes had any communication with the devil, and that many of them doubted whether there

was any such personage as the devil, he began to have some doubts about his own soul: 'For if there is no devil,' said he, 'there is no soul to be damned; and it would be a reproach to the justice of heaven to suppose that all souls are to be saved, considering what rascally stuff mankind are made of.' This was an inference which gave him great disturbance; for he was one of those who would rather encounter eternal damnation, than run any risque of being annihilated. He therefore assembled all those among the Bonzes who had the reputation of being great philosophers and metaphysicians, in order to hear their opinions concerning the nature of the soul. The first reverend sage who delivered himself on this mysterious subject, having stroked his grey beard, and hemmed thrice with great solemnity, declared that the soul was an animal; a second pronounced it to be the number *three*, or proportion; a third contended for the number *seven*, or harmony; a fourth defined the soul the *universe*; a fifth affirmed it was a mixture of elements; a sixth asserted it was composed of *fire*; a seventh opined it was formed of *water*; an eighth called it an *essence*; a ninth, an *idea*; a tenth stickled for *substance without extension*; an eleventh, for *extension without substance*; a twelfth cried it was an *accident*; a thirteenth called it a *reflecting mirror*; a fourteenth, the *image reflected*; a fifteenth insisted upon its being a *tune*; a sixteenth believed it was the instrument that played the tune; a seventeenth undertook to prove it was *material*; an eighteenth exclaimed it was *immaterial*; a nineteenth allowed it was *something*; and a twentieth swore it was *nothing*. By this time all the individuals that composed this learned assembly, spoke together with equal eagerness and vociferation. The volubility with which a great number of abstruse and unintelligible terms and definitions were pronounced and repeated, not only resembled the confusion of Babel, but they had just the same effect upon the brain of Fika-kaka, as is generally produced in weak heads by looking steadily at a mill-wheel or a vortex, or any other object in continual rotation. He grew giddy, ran three times round, and dropped down in the midst of the Bonzes, deprived of sense and motion. When he recovered so far as to be able to reflect upon what had happened, he was greatly

disturbed with the terror of annihilation, as he had heard nothing said in the consultation which could give him any reason to believe there was such a thing as an immortal soul. In this emergency he sent for his counsellor Mura-clami, and when that lawyer entered his chamber, exclaimed—'My dear Mura, as I have a soul to be saved!—A soul to be saved!—ay, there's the rub!—the devil a soul have I!—Those Bonzes are good for nothing but to kiss my a—se;—a parcel of ignorant asses!—Pox on their philosophy! Instead of demonstrating the immortality of the soul, they have plainly proved the soul is a chimæra, a Will o' the Wisp, a bubble, a term, a word, a nothing!—My dear Mura! prove but that I have a soul, and I shall be contented to be damned to all eternity!'—'If that be the case,' said the other, 'your Quambucuship may set your heart at rest: for, if you proceed to govern this empire, in conjunction with Taycho, as you have begun, it will become a point of eternal justice to give you an immortal soul (if you have not one already) that you may undergo eternal punishment, according to your demerits.' The Cuboy was much comforted by this assurance, and returned to his former occupations with redoubled ardour. He continued to confer benefices on his back-friends the Bonzes; to regulate the whole army of tax-gatherers; to bribe the tribunes, the centurions, the decuriones, and all the inferior mob-drivers of the empire; to hire those pipers who were best skilled in making the multitude dance, and find out the ablest artists to scratch their long ears, and tickle their noses. These toils were sweetened by a variety of enjoyments. He possessed all the pomp of ostentation; the vanity of levees, the pride of power, the pleasure of adulation, the happiness of being kicked by his sovereign and kissed by his Bonzes; and, above all, the delights of the stomach and the close-stool, which recurred in perpetual succession, and which he seemed to enjoy with a particular relish: for, it must be observed, to the honour of Fika-kaka, that what he eagerly received at one end, he as liberally refunded at the other. But as the faculties of his mind were insufficient to digest the great mass of power which had fallen to his share, so were the organs of his body unable to concoct the enormous mass of aliments which



which he so greedily swallowed. He laboured under an indigestion of both; and the vague promises which went upwards, as well as the murmurs that passed the other way, were no other than eruptive crudities arising from the defects of his soul and body.

As for Taycho, he confined himself to the management of the war. He recalled the general in chief from Fatissio, because he had not done that which he could not possibly do: but, instead of sending another on whose abilities he could depend, he allowed the direction of the armaments to devolve upon the second in command, whose character he could not possibly know; because, indeed, he was too obscure to have any character at all. The fruits of his sagacity soon appeared. The new general Abra-moria, having reconnoitred a post of the enemy, which was found too strong to be forced, attacked it without hesitation; and his troops were repulsed and routed with considerable slaughter. It was lucky for Taycho that the tidings of this disaster were qualified by the news of two other advantages which the arms of Japan had gained. A separate corps of troops, under Yaf-frai and Ya-loff, reduced a strong Chinese fortress in the neighbourhood of Fatissio; and a body of Japanese, headed by a factor called Ka-liff, obtained a considerable victory at Fla-sao, in the farther extremity of Tartary, where a trading company of Meaco possessed a commercial settlement. The Hydra of Meaco began to shake its numerous heads, and growl, when it heard of Abra-moria's defeat. At that instant, one of its leaders exclaimed—'Bless thy long ears! It was not Taycho that recommended Abra-moria to this command. He was appointed by the Fatz-man.' This was true. It was likewise true, that Taycho had allowed him quietly to succeed to the command, without knowing any thing of his abilities; it was equally true, that Taycho was an utter stranger to Yaf-frai and Ya-loff, who took the fortress, as well as to the factor Ka-liff, who obtained the victory at the farther end of Tartary. Nevertheless, the beast cried aloud—'Hang Abra-moria! and a fig for the Fatz-man. But let the praise of Taycho be magnified! It was Taycho that subdued the fortresses in the Isle Ka-frit-o. It was Taycho that defeated the enemy at Fla-sao.—Yaf-frai has slain his thousands—

'Ya-loff has slain his five thousands—' but Taycho had slain his ten thousands.'

Taycho had credit not only for the success of the Japanese arms, but likewise for the victories of Brut-an-tiffi, who had lately been much beholden to fortune. I have already observed what a noise that Tartar made when the Fatzman of Japan found himself obliged to capitulate with the Chinese general. In consequence of that event, the war was already at an end with respect to the Japanese, on the continent of Tartary. The emperor of China took possession of the farm of Yesso; the peasants quietly submitted to their new masters; and those very free-booting Tartar chiefs, who had sold their subjects as soldiers to serve under the Fatzman, had already agreed to send the very same mercenaries into the army of China. It was at this juncture that Brut-an-tiffi exalted his throat. In the preceding campaign he had fought with various success. One of his generals had given battle to the Mantchoux Tartars, and each side claimed the victory. Another of his leaders had been defeated and taken by the Ostrog. The Chinese had already advanced to the frontiers of Brut-an-tiffi's dominions. In this dilemma he exerted himself with equal activity and address; he repulsed the Chinese army with considerable loss; and in the space of one month after this action, gained a victory over the general of the Ostrog. These advantages rendered him insufferably arrogant. He exclaimed against the Fatzman; he threatened the Dairo; and, as I have taken notice above, a new army was raised at the expense of Japan, to defend him from all future invasions of the Chinese. Already the Tartar general Bron-xi-tic, who was vested at his desire with the command of the mercenary army of Japan, had given a severe check to a strong body of the Chinese, and even threatened to carry the war into the empire of China; but his progress was soon stopt, and he was forced to retreat in his turn towards the farm of Yesso. But from nothing did Orator Taycho reap a fuller harvest of praise, than from the conquest of Tzin-khall, a settlement of the Chinese on the coast of Terra Australis; which conquest was planned by a Banyan merchant of Meaco, who had traded on that coast, and was particularly known to the king of the country. This royal savage was  
uneasy

uneasy at the neighbourhood of the Chinese, and conjured the merchant, whose name was Thum-Khumm-qua, to use his influence at the court of Meaco, that an armament should be equipped against the settlement of Tzin-khall, he himself solemnly promising to co-operate in the reduction of it with all his forces. Thum-Khumm-qua, whose zeal for the good of his country got the better of all his prudential maxims, did not fail to represent this object in the most interesting points of view. He demonstrated to Taycho the importance of the settlement; that it abounded with slaves, ivory, gold, and a precious gum which was not to be found in any other part of the world; a gum in great request all over Asia, and particularly among the Japanese, who were obliged to purchase it in time of war at second-hand from their enemies the Chinese, at an exorbitant price. He demonstrated that the loss of this settlement would be a terrible wound to the Emperor of China; and proved that the conquest of it could be achieved at a very trifling expence. He did more. Though by the maxims of his sect he was restrained from engaging in any military enterprise, he offered to conduct the armament in person, in order the more effectually to keep the king of the country steady to his engagements. Though the scheme was in itself plausible and practicable, Mr. Orator Taycho shuffled and equivocated until the season for action was past. But Thum-Khumm-qua was indefatigable. He exhorted, he pressed, he remonstrated, he complained, and besieged the orator's house in such a manner, that Taycho, at length, in order to be rid of his importunity, granted his request. A small armament was fitted out; the Banyan embarked in it, leaving his own private affairs in confusion; and the settlement was reduced according to his prediction. When the news of this conquest arrived at Meaco, the multifarious beast brayed hoarse applause, and the minister Taycho was magnified exceedingly. As for Thum-Khumm-qua, whose private fortune was consumed in the expedition, all the recompence he received, was the consciousness of having served his country. In vain he reminded Taycho of his promises; in vain he recited the minister's own letters, in which he had given his word that the Banyan should be liberally rewarded, according to the importance of his services: Taycho

was both deaf and blind to all his remonstrances and representations; and, at last, fairly flung the door in his face.

Such was the candour and the gratitude of the incomparable Taycho.—The poor projector Thum-Khumm-qua found himself in a piteous case, while the whole nation resounded with joy for the conquest which his sagacity had planned, and his zeal carried into execution. He was not only abandoned by the minister Taycho; but also renounced by the whole sect of the Banyans, who looked upon him as a wicked apostate, because he had been concerned with those who fought with the arm of flesh. It was lucky for him that he afterwards found favour with a subsequent minister, who had not adopted all the maxims of his predecessor Taycho.—The only measures which this egregious demagogue could hitherto properly call his own, were these: His subsidiary treaty with Brut-an-tiffi; his raising an immense army of mercenaries to act in Tartary for the benefit of that prince; his exacting an incredible sum of money from the people of Japan; and finally, two successive armaments which he had sent to annoy the sea-coast of China. I have already given an account of the first, the intent of which was frustrated by a mistake in the perspectives. The other was more fortunate in the beginning. Taycho had by the force of his genius discovered that nothing so effectually destroyed the oiled paper which the Chinese use in their windows instead of glass, as the gold coin called Oban, when discharged from a military engine at a proper distance. He found that gold was more compact, more heavy, more malleable, and more manageable than any other metal or substance that he knew: he therefore provided a great quantity of obans, and a good body of slingers; and these being conveyed to the coast of China, in a squadron of Fune, as none of the Chinese appeared to oppose these hostilities, a select number of the troops were employed to make ducks and drakes with the obans, on the supposition that this diversion would allure the enemy to the sea-side, where they might be knocked on the head without further trouble: but the care of their own safety got the better of their curiosity on this occasion; and fifty thousand obans were expended in this manner, without bringing one Chinese from his lurking-hole. Considerable  
damaga



damage was done to the windows of the enemy. Then the forces were landed in a village which they found deserted. Here they burned some fishing-boats; and from hence they carried off some military machines, which were brought to Meaco, and conveyed through the streets in procession, amidst the acclamations of the Hydra, who sung the praise of Taycho.—Elevated by this triumph, the minister sent forth the same armament a second time under a new general of his own choosing, whose name was Hylib-bib, who had long entertained an opinion, that the inhabitants of China were not beings of flesh and blood, but mere fantastic shadows, who could neither offend nor be offended. Full of this opinion, he made a descent on the coast of that empire; and to convince his followers that his notion was right, he advanced some leagues into the country, without having taken any precautions to secure a retreat, leaving the Fune at anchor upon an open beach. Some people alleged, that he depended upon the sagacity of an engineer recommended to him by Taycho; which engineer had such an excellent nose, that he could smell a Chinese at the distance of ten leagues: but it seems the scent failed him at this juncture. Perhaps the Chinese general had trailed rusty bacon and other odoriferous substances to confound his sense of smelling. Perhaps no dew had fallen over night, and a strong breeze blew towards the enemy. Certain it is, Hylib-bib, in the evening, received repeated intelligence that he was within half a league of a Chinese general, at the head of a body of troops greatly superior in number to the Japanese forces which he himself commanded. He still believed it was all illusion; and when he heard their drums beat, declared it was no more than a ridiculous enchantment. He thought proper, however, to retreat towards the seaside; but this he did with great delibera-

tion, after having given the enemy fair notice by beat of drum. His motions were so slow, that he took seven hours to march three miles. When he reached the shore where the Fune were at anchor, he saw the whole body of the Chinese drawn up on a rising ground ready to begin the attack. He ordered his rear-guard to face about on the supposition that the phantoms would disappear as soon as they shewed their faces; but finding himself mistaken, and perceiving some of his own people to drop, in consequence of missiles that came from the enemy, he very calmly embarked with his van, leaving his rear to amuse the Chinese, by whom they were, in less than five minutes, either massacred or taken. From this small disgrace the general deduced two important corollaries; first, that the Chinese were actually material beings capable of impulsion; and secondly, that his engineer's nose was not altogether infallible. The people of Meaco did not seem to relish the experiments by which these ideas were ascertained. The monster was heard to grunt in different streets of the metropolis; and these notes of discontent produced the usual effect in the bowels of Fika-kaka: but orator Taycho had his flowers of rhetoric and his bowl of mandragora in readiness. He assured them that Hylib-bib should be employed for the future in keeping sheep on the island of Xicoco, and the engineer besent to hunt truffles on the mountains of Kimo. Then he tendered his dose, which the Hydra swallowed with signs of pleasure; and lastly, he mounted upon it's back, and rode in triumph under the windows of the astonished Cuboy, who, while he shifted his trowsers, exclaimed in a rapture of joy—  
 ‘ All hail, Taycho, thou prince of monster-taming men; the Dairo shall kick thy posteriors, and I will kiss them in token of approbation and applause.’

THE [illegible] OF [illegible]

[Faint, illegible text block]

[Faint, illegible text block]

[Faint, illegible text block]

[Faint, illegible text block]





THE  
HISTORY AND ADVENTURES  
OF AN  
A T O M.  
VOLUME THE SECOND.



HE time was now come when Fortune, which had hitherto smiled upon the Chinese arms, resolved to turn tail to that vain-glorious nation; and precisely at the same instant Taycho undertook to display his whole capacity in the management of the war. But before he assumed this province, it was necessary that he should establish a despotism in the council of Twenty-eight, some members of which had still the presumption to offer their advice towards the administration of affairs. This council being assembled by the Dairo's order, to deliberate upon the objects of the next campaign, the president began by asking the opinion of Taycho, who was the youngest member; upon which the orator made no articulate reply, but cried—'Ba-ba-ba-ba!' The Dairo exclaimed—'Boh!' The Fatzman ejaculated the interjection—'Pish!' The Cuboy sat in silent astonishment. Got-to-mio swore the man was dumb, and hinted something of lunacy. Foksi-rokhu shook his head; and Soo-fan-sin-o shrugged up his shoulders. At length, Fika-kaka going round and kissing Taycho on the forehead—'My dear boy!' cried he. 'Gad's curse! what's the matter? Do but open the sluices of your eloquence once more, my dear orator—let us have one simile

—one dear simile; and then I shall die contented. With respect to the operations of the campaign, don't you think—' Here he was interrupted with—'Ka, ka, ka, ka!'—'Heighday!' cried the Cuboy, 'Ba, ba, ba, ka, ka, ka! that's the language of children!'—'And children you shall be,' exclaimed the orator. 'Here is a two-penny trumpet for the amusement of the illustrious Got-hama-baba; a sword of ginger-bread covered with gold-leaf for the Fatzman; and a rattle for my lord Cuboy. I have, likewise, sugar-plumbs for the rest of the council.' So saying, he, without ceremony, advanced to the Dairo, and tied a scarf round the eyes of his imperial majesty: then he produced a number of padlocks, and sealed up the lips of every Quo in council, before they could recollect themselves from their first astonishment. The assembly broke up abruptly; and the Dairo was conducted to his cabinet by the Fatzman and the Cuboy, which last endeavoured to divert the chagrin of his royal master, by blowing the trumpet and shaking the rattle in his ears: but Got-hama-baba could not be so easily appeased. He growled like an enraged bear, at the indignity which had been offered to him, and kicked the Cuboy before as well as behind. Mr. Orator Taycho was fain to come to an explanation. He assured the Dairo, it was necessary

cessary that his imperial majesty should remain in the dark, and that the whole council should be muzzled for a season, otherwise he could not accomplish the great things he had projected in favour of the farm of Yesso. He declared, that while his majesty remained blindfold, he would enjoy all his other senses in greater perfection; that his ears would be every day regaled with the shouts of triumph, conveyed in notes of uncommon melody; and that the less quantity of animal spirits was expended in vision, the greater proportion would flow to his extremities; consequently, his pleasure would be more acute in his pedestrian exertations upon the Cuboy and others whom he delighted to honour. He, therefore, exhorted him to undergo a total privation of eyesight, which was at best a troublesome faculty, that exposed mankind to a great variety of disagreeable spectacles. This was a proposal which the Dairo did not relish: on the contrary, he waxed exceedingly wroth, and told the orator he would rather enjoy one transient glance of the farm of Yesso, than the most exquisite delights that could be procured for all the other senses. 'To gratify your majesty with that ineffable pleasure,' cried Taycho, 'I have devoted myself soul and body, and even reconciled contradictions. I have renounced all my former principles without forfeiting the influence which, by professing those principles, I had gained. I have obtained the most astonishing victories over common sense, and even refuted mathematical demonstration. The many-headed Mob, which no former demagogue could ever tame, I have taught to fetch and to carry; to dance to my pipe; to bray to my tune; to swallow what I present without murmuring; to lick my feet when I am angry; and kiss the rod when I think proper to chastise it. I have done more, my liege; I have prepared a drench for it, which, like Lethe, washes away the remembrance of what is past, and takes away all sense of it's own condition. I have swept away all the money of the empire; and persuaded the people not only to beggar themselves, but likewise to entail indigence upon their latest posterity; and all for the sake of Yesso. It is by dint of these efforts I have been able to subsidize Brut-an-

tissi, and raise an army of one hundred thousand men to defend your imperial majesty's farm, which, were the entire property of it brought to market, would not fetch one-third part of the sums which are now yearly expended in it's defence. I shall strike but one great stroke in the country of Fatissio, and then turn the whole stream of the war into the channel of Tartary, until the barren plains of Yesso are fertilized with human blood. In the mean time, I must insist upon your majesty's continuing in the dark, and amusing yourself in your cabinet with the trumpery and other gewgaws which I have provided for your diversion; otherwise I quit the reins of administration, and turn the monster out of my trammels; in which case, like the dog that returns to it's vomit, it will not fail to take up it's former prejudices against Yesso, which I have with such pains obliged it to resign.'—'O my dear Taycho!' cried the affrighted Dairo, 'talk not of leaving me in such a dreadful dilemma. Rather than the dear farm should fall into the hands of the Chinese, I would be contented to be led about blindfold all the days of my life. Proceed in your own way.—I invest you with full power and authority, not only to gag my whole council, but even to nail their ears to the pillory, should it be found necessary for the benefit of Yesso. In token of which delegation, present your posteriors, and I will bestow upon you a double portion of my favour.' Taycho humbly thanked his imperial majesty for the great honour he intended him; but begged leave to decline the ceremony, on account of the hæmorrhoids, which at that time gave him great disturbance.

The orator having thus annihilated all opposition in the council of Twenty-eight, repaired to his own house, in order to plan the operations of the ensuing campaign. Though he had reinforced the army in Tartary with the flower of the Japanese soldiery, and destined a strong squadron of Fune, as usual, to parade on the coast of China; he foresaw it would be necessary to amuse the people with some new stroke on the side of Fatissio, which indeed was the original, and the most natural scene of the war. He locked himself up in his closet, and in consulting the map of Fatissio, he found that



that the principal Chinese settlement of that island was a fortified town called Quib-quab, to which there was access by two different avenues; one by a broad, rapid, navigable river, on the banks of which the town was situated; and the other by an inland route over mountains, lakes, and dangerous torrents. He measured the map with his compass, and perceived that both routes were nearly of the same length; and therefore he resolved that the forces in Fatissio, being divided into two equal bodies, should approach the place by the two different avenues, on the supposition that they would both arrive before the walls of Quib-quab at the same instant of time. The conduct of the inland expedition was given to Yaff-ray, who now commanded in chief in Fatissio; and the rest of the troops were sent up the great river, under the auspices of Ya-loff, who had so eminently distinguished himself in the course of the preceding year.

Orator Taycho had received some articles of intelligence which embarrassed him a little at first; but these difficulties soon vanished before the vigour of his resolutions. He knew, that not only the town of Quib-quab was fortified by art, but also, that the whole adjacent country was almost impregnable by nature: that one Chinese general blocked up the passes with a strong body of forces, in the route which was to be followed by Yaff-ray; and that another commanded a separate corps in the neighbourhood of Quib-quab, equal, at least, in number to the detachment of Ya-loff, whom he might therefore either prevent from landing, or attack after he should be landed; or finally, should neither of these attempts succeed, he might reinforce the garrison of Quib-quab, so as to make it more numerous than the besieging army, which, according to the rules of war, ought to be ten times the number of the besieged. On the other hand, in order to invalidate these objections, he reflected that Fortune, which hath such a share in all military events, is inconstant and variable; that as the Chinese had been so long successful in Fatissio, it was now their turn to be unfortunate. He reflected that the daemon of folly was capricious; and that as it had so long possessed the rulers and generals of Japan, it was high time it should shift its quarters, and occupy the brains of the enemy; in which case they would

quit their advantageous posts, and commit some blunder that would lay them at the mercy of the Japanese. With respect to the reduction of Quib-quab, he had heard, indeed, that the besiegers ought to be ten times the number of the garrison besieged; but as every Japanese was equivalent to ten subjects of China, he thought the match was pretty equal. He reflected, that even if this expedition should not succeed, it would be of little consequence to his reputation, as he could plead at home, that he neither conceived the original plan, nor appointed any of the officers concerned in the execution. It is true, he might have reinforced the army in Fatissio, so as to leave very little to Fortune: but then he must have subtracted something from the strength of the operations in Tartary, which was now become the favourite scene of the war; or he must have altogether suspended the execution of another darling scheme, which was literally his own conception. There was an island in the great Indian ocean, at a considerable distance from Fatissio; and here the Chinese had a strong settlement. Taycho was inflamed with the ambition of reducing this island, which was called Thin-quo; and for this purpose he resolved to embark a body of forces which should co-operate with the squadron of Fune destined to cruize in those latitudes. The only difficulty that remained was to choose a general to direct this enterprise. He perused a list of all the military officers in Japan; and as they were all equal in point of reputation, he began to examine their names, in order to pitch upon that which should appear to be the most significant: and in this particular, Taycho was a little superstitious. Not but that surnames, when properly bestowed, might be rendered very useful terms of distinction: but I must tell thee, Peacock, nothing can be more preposterously absurd than the practice of inheriting *cognomina*, which ought ever to be purely personal. I would ask thee, for example, what propriety there was in giving the name *Xenophon*, which signifies 'one that speaks a foreign language,' to the celebrated Greek who distinguished himself, not only as a consummate captain, but also as an elegant writer in his mother-tongue? What could be more ridiculous than to denominate the great philosopher of Crotona *Pythagoras*, which implies a *stinking*

ing speech? Or what could be more misapplied than the name of the weeping philosopher *Heracitus*, signifying *military glory*? The inheritance of surnames, among the Romans, produced still more ludicrous consequences. The best and noblest families in Rome derived their names from the coarsest employments, or else from the corporeal blemishes of their ancestors. The *Pisones* were millers: the *Cicerones* and the *Lentuli* were so called from the *velches* and the *lentils* which their forefathers dealt in. The *Fabij* were so denominated from a dung-pit, in which the first of the family was begot by stealth in the way of fornication. A ploughman gave rise to the great family of the *Serrani*, the ladies of which always went without smocks. The *Suilli*, the *Bubulci*, and the *Porci*, were descended from a swine-herd, a cow-herd, and a hog-butcher.—What could be more disgraceful than to call the senator *Strabo*, *Squintum*; or a fine young lady of the house of *Pæti*, *Pig-snies*? or to distinguish a matron of the *Limi*, by the appellation of *Sheep's-eye*?—What could be more dishonourable than to give the surname of *Snub-nose* to *P. Silius*, the pro-prætor, because his great-great-great-grand-father had a nose of that make? Ovid, indeed, had a long nose, and therefore was justly denominated *Naso*: but why should Horace be called *Flaccus*, as if his ears had been stretched in the pillory: I need not mention the *Burrbi*, *Nigri*, *Rufi*, *Aquilij*, and *Rutilij*, because we have the same foolish surnames in England; and even the *Lappa*; for I myself know a very pretty-mils called *Rough-head*, though in fact there is not a young lady in the Bills of Mortality, who takes more pains to dress her hair to the best advantage. The famous dictator whom the deputies of Rome found at the plough, was known by the name of *Cincinnatus*, or *Ragged-head*. Now I leave you to judge how it would sound in these days, if a footman at the play-house should call out—‘My Lady *Ragged-head*’s coach. Room for my Lady *Ragged-head*.’ I am doubtful whether the English name of *Hale* does not come from the Roman cognomen *Hala*, which signified *stinking-breath*. What need I mention the *Plauti*, *Panci*, *Valgi*, *Vari*, *Vatæ*, and *Scauri*; the *Tuditani*, the *Malici*, *Cenestellæ*, and *Leccæ*; in other words, the *Splay-foots*, *Bandy-legs*, *Shamble-shins*, *Baker-knees*, *Club-*

*foots*, *Hammer-heads*, *Chubby-cheeks*, *Bald-heads*, and *Letchers*.—I shall not say a word of the *Buteo*, or *Buzzard*, that I may not be obliged to explain the meaning of the word *Triorchis*, from whence it takes its denomination; yet all those were great families in Rome. But I cannot help taking notice of some of the same improprieties, which have crept into the language and customs of this country. Let us suppose, for example, a foreigner reading an English news-paper in these terms: ‘Last Tuesday the Right Honourable *Timothy Silly-man*, secretary of state for the Southern department, gave a grand entertainment to the nobility and gentry at his house in *Knaves-acre*. The evening was concluded with a ball, which was opened by Sir *Samuel Hog* and Lady *Diana Rough-head*.—We hear there is purpose of marriage between Mr. Alderman *Small-cock* and Miss *Harriot Hair-stones*, a young lady of great fortune and superlative merit.—By the last mail from Germany we have certain advice of a compleat victory which General *Coward* has obtained over the enemy. On this occasion the general displayed all the intrepidity of the most renowned hero.—By the same canal we are informed, that Lieutenant *Little-fear* has been broke by a court-martial for cowardice.—We hear that *Edward West*, Esq. will be elected president of the directors of the *East India* company for the ensuing year. It is reported that Commodore *North* will be sent with a squadron into the *South-Sea*.—Captains *East* and *South* are appointed by the Lords of the Admiralty, commanders of two frigates to sail on the discovery of the *North-west* passage.—Yesterday morning Sir *John Summer*, Bart. lay dangerously ill at his house in *Spring-garden*: he is attended by Dr. *Winter*: but there are no hopes of his recovery.—Saturday last *Philip Frost*, a dealer in *Gunpowder*, died at his house on *Snow-bill*, of a high fever caught by overheating himself in walking for a wager from *No Man’s Land* to the *World’s End*.—Last week Mr. *John Fog*, teacher of astronomy in *Rotherhithe*, was married to the widow *Fairweather* of *Puddle-dock*.—We hear from Bath, that on Thursday last a duel was fought on *Lansdown*, by Captain *Sparrow* and *Richard Hawke*, Esq. in which the latter



latter was mortally wounded.—Friday last ended the sessions at the Old Bailey, when the following persons received sentence of death. Leonard Lamb, for the murder of *Julius Wolf*; and Henry Grave, for robbing and assaulting Dr. Death, whereby the said Death was put in fear of his life. Giles Gosling, for defrauding Simon Fox of four guineas and his watch, by subtle craft, was transported for seven years; and David Drink-water was ordered to be set in the stocks, as an habitual drunkard. The trial of Thomas Green, whittster at Fulham, for a rape on the body of Flora White, a mulatto, was put off till next sessions, on account of the absence of two material evidences, viz. Sarah Brown, clear-starcher of Pimlico, and Anthony Black, scarlet-dyer of Wandsworth.\* I ask thee, Peacock, whether a sensible foreigner, who understood the literal meaning of these names, which are all truly British, would not think ye were a nation of humourists, who delighted in cross-purposes and ludicrous singularity? But, indeed, ye are not more absurd in this particular than some of your neighbours.—I know a Frenchman of the name of *Bowbier*, which signifies *Corv-keeper*, pique himself upon his noblesse; and a general called *Valavoire*, is said to have lost his life by the whimsical impropriety of his surname, which signifies *Go and see*.\*—You may remember an Italian minister called *Grissa-testa*, or *Great-head*, though in fact he had scarce any head at all. That nation has, likewise, it's *Sforzas*, *Malatestas*, *Boccanigras*, *Porcinas*, *Giudices*; it's *Colonnas*, *Muratorios*, *Medicis*, and *Gozzi*—*Endeavours*, *Chuckle-heads*, *Black Muzzles*, *Hogs*, *Judges*, *Pillars*, *Masons*, *Leeches*, and *Chubby-chops*. Spain has it's *Almohadas*, *Girones*, *Utreras*, *Ursinas*, and *Zapatos*; signifying *Cushions*, *Gores*, *Bullocks*, *Bears*, and *Slippers*. The Turks, in other respects a sensible people, fall into the same extravagance, with respect to the inheritance of surnames. An Armenian merchant, to whom I once belonged at Aleppo, used to dine at the house of a cook whose name was *Clock-maker*; and the handsomest Ichoglan in

the *Bashaw's* seraglio was surnamed *Crook-back*.—If we may believe the historian *Buck*, there was the same impropriety in the same epithet bestowed upon Richard III. king of England, who, he says, was one of the best-made men of the age in which he lived: but here I must contradict the said *Buck*, from my own knowledge. Richard had, undoubtedly, one shoulder higher than the other, and his left-arm was a little shrunk and contracted: but, notwithstanding the ungracious colours in which he has been drawn by the flatterers of the house of Lancaster, I can assure thee, Peacock, that Richard was a prince of a very agreeable aspect, and excelled in every personal accomplishment; neither was his heart a stranger to the softer passions of tenderness and pity. The very night that preceded the fatal battle of Bosworth, in which he lost his life, he went in disguise to the house of a farmer in the neighbourhood, to visit an infant son there boarded, who was the fruit of an amour between him and a young lady of the first condition. Upon this occasion, he embraced the child with all the marks of paternal affection, and doubtful of the issue of the approaching battle, shed a flood of tears at parting from him, after having recommended him to the particular care of his nurse, to whom he gave money and jewels to a considerable value. After the catastrophe of Richard this house was plundered, and the nurse with difficulty escaped to another part of the country; but as the enemies of Richard now prevailed, she never durst reveal the secret of the boy's birth; and he was bred up as her own son to the trade of brick-laying, in which character he lived and died in an advanced age at London.—Moreover, it is but justice in me, who constituted part of one of Richard's yeomen of the guard, to assure thee that this prince was not so wicked and cruel as he has been represented. The only share he had in the death of his brother Clarence, was his forbearing to interpose in the behalf of that prince with their elder brother King Edward IV. who, in fact, was the greatest brute of the whole family: neither did he poison his own

\* The general taking a solitary walk in the evening, was questioned by a sentinel, and answered—'Va la voir.' The soldier taking the words in the literal sense, repeated the challenge: he was answered in the same manner; and being affronted, fired upon the general, who fell dead on the spot,

wife; nor employ assassins to murder his two nephews in the Tower. Both the boys were given by Tyrrel in charge to a German Jew, with directions to breed them up as his own children, in a remote country; and the eldest died of a fever at Embden, and the other afterwards appeared as claimant of the English crown:—all the world knows how he finished his career under the name of Perkin Warbeck. So much for the abuse of surnames, in the investigation of which I might have used thy own by way of illustration; for, if thou and all thy generation were put to the rack, they would not be able to give any tolerable reason why thou shouldst be called *Peacock* rather than *Crablouse*.—But it is now high time to return to the thread of our narration. Taycho, having considered the list of officers, without finding one name which implied any active virtue, resolved that the choice should depend upon accident. He hustled them all together in his cap, and putting in his hand at random, drew forth that of Hob-nob; a person who had grown old in obscurity, without ever having found an opportunity of being concerned in actual service. His very name was utterly unknown to Fika-kaka; and this circumstance the orator considered as a lucky omen; for the Cuboy had such a remarkable knack at finding out the least qualified subjects, and overlooking merit, his new colleague concluded (not without some shadow of reason) that Hob-nob's being unknown to the prime minister was a sort of negative presumption in favour of his character. This officer was accordingly placed at the head of an armament, and sent against the island of Thin-quo, in the conquest of which he was to be supported by a Squadron of Fune already in those latitudes, under the command of the chief He-Rhumn.

The voyage was performed without loss: the troops were landed without opposition. They had already advanced towards a rising-ground, which commanded the principal town of the island, and He-Rhumn had offered to land and draw the artillery by the mariners of his Squadron, when Hob-nob had a dream which disconcerted all his measures. He dreamed that he entertained all the islanders in the temple of the White Horse; and that his own grand-mother did the honours of the table. Indeed he could not have

performed a greater act of charity; for they were literally in danger of perishing by famine. Having consulted his interpreter on this extraordinary dream, he was given to understand that the omen was unlucky; that if he persisted in his hostilities, he himself would be taken prisoner, and offered up as a sacrifice to the idol of the place. While he ruminated on this unfavourable response, the principal inhabitants of the island assembled, in order to deliberate upon their own deplorable situation. They had neither troops, arms, fortifications, nor provision, and despaired of supplies, as the fleet of Japan surrounded the island. In this emergency, they determined to submit without opposition, and appointed a deputation to go and make a tender of the island to General Hob-nob. This deputation, preceded by white flags of truce, the Japanese commander no sooner descried, than he thought upon the interpretation of his dream. He mistook the deputies with their white flags for the Bonzas of the idol to which he was to be sacrificed; and, being sorely troubled in mind, ordered the troops to be immediately re-embarked, notwithstanding the exhortations of He-Rhumn, and the remonstrances of Rha-rin-tumm, the second in command, who used a number of arguments to dissuade him from his purpose. The deputies seeing the enemy in motion, made a halt, and after they were fairly on board, returned to the town, singing hymns in praise of the idol Fu, who, they imagined, had confounded the understanding of the Japanese general.

The attempt upon Thin-quo having thus miscarried, Hob-nob declared he would return to Japan; but was with great difficulty persuaded by the commander of the Fune and his own second, to make a descent upon another island belonging to the Chinese, called *Qua-chu*, where they assured him he would meet with no opposition. As he had no dream to deter him from this attempt, he suffered himself to be persuaded, and actually made good his landing: but the horror occasioned by the apparition of his grand-mother had made such an impression upon his mind, as affected the constitution of his body. Before he was visited by another such vision, he sickened and died; and in consequence of his death, Rha-rin-tumm and He-Rhumn made a conquest of the island of Qua-chu, which was much more valuable than Thin-quo, the





Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co April 22. 1786.





the first and sole object of the expedition. When the first news of this second descent arrived in Japan, the ministry were in the utmost confusion. Mr. Orator Taycho did not scruple to declare that General Hob-nob had misbehaved; first in relinquishing Thin-quo, upon such a frivolous pretence as the supposed apparition of an old woman; secondly, in attempting the conquest of another place, which was not so much as mentioned in his instructions. The truth is, the importance of Qua-chu was not known to the cabinet of Japan. Fika-kaka believed it was some place on the continent of Tartary, and exclaimed in a violent passion—'Rot the blockhead, Hob-nob; he'll have an army of Chinese on his back in a twinkling!' When the president Soo-san-sin-o assured him that Qua-chu was a rich island at an immense distance from the continent of Tartary, the Cuboy insisted upon kissing his excellency's posteriors for the agreeable information he had received. In a few weeks arrived the tidings of the island's being totally reduced by Rha-rin-tumm and He-Rhumn. Then the conquest was published throughout the empire of Japan with every circumstance of exaggeration. The blatant beast brayed applause. The rites of Faku-basi were celebrated with unusual solemnity; and hymns of triumph were sung to the glory of the great Taycho. Even the Cuboy arrogated to himself some share of the honour gained by this expedition; inasmuch as the general Rha-rin-tumm was the brother of his friend Mr. Secretary *No-bo-dy*. Fika-kaka gave a grand entertainment at his palace, where he appeared crowned with a garland of the *Tjikk-burasiba*, or laurel of Japan: and eat so much of the soup of *Joniku* or famous *Swa'low's nest*, that he was for three days troubled with flatulencies and indigestion.

In the midst of all this festivity, the emperor still growled and grumbled about Yesso. His new ally Brut-an-tiffi had met with a variety of fortune, and even suffered some shocks, which Orator Taycho, with all his art, could not keep from the knowledge of the Dairo. He had been severely drubbed by the Mantchoux, who had advanced for that purpose even to his court-yard: but this was nothing in comparison to another disaster, from which he had a hair-breadth 'scape. The Great Khan had employed one of his most wily and enterprizing chiefs to

seize Brut-an-tiffi by surprize, that he might be brought to justice, and executed as a felon and perturbator of the publick peace. Kunt-than, who was the partizan pitched upon for this service, practised a thousand stratagems to decoy Brut-an-tiffi into a careless security; but he was still baffled by the vigilance of Yam-a-Kheit, a famous soldier of fortune, who had engaged in the service of the outlawed Tartar. At length the opportunity offered, when this captain was sent out to lay the country under contribution. Then Kunt-than marching solely in the dead of night, caught Brut-an-tiffi napping. He might have slain him upon the spot; but his orders were to take him alive, that he might be made a publick example; accordingly, his centinels being dispatched, he was pulled out of bed, and his hands were already tied with cords, like those of a common malefactor, when, by his roaring and bellowing, he gave the alarm to Yam-a-Kheit, who chanced to be in the neighbourhood, returning from his excursion. He made all the haste he could, and came up in the very nick of time to save his master. He fell upon the party of Kunt-than with such fury, that they were fain to quit their prey: then he cut the fetters of Brut-an-tiffi, who took to his heels and fled with incredible expedition, leaving his preserver in the midst of his enemies, by whom he was overpowered, struck from his horse, and trampled to death. The grateful Tartar not only deserted this brave captain in such extremity, but he also took care to asperse his memory, by insinuating that Yam-a-Kheit had undertaken to watch him while he took his repose, and had himself fallen asleep upon his post, by which neglect of duty the Ostrog had been enabled to penetrate into his quarters. 'Tis an ill wind that blows no-body good—the same disaster that deprived him of a good officer, afforded him an opportunity to shift the blame of neglect from his own shoulders to those of a person who could not answer for himself. In the same manner, your general A—y acquitted himself of the charge of misconduct for the attack of T—a, by accusing his engineer, who, having fallen in the battle, could not contradict his assertion. In regard to the affair with the Mantchoux, Brut-an-tiffi was resolved to swear truth out of Tartary by merdint of impudence. In the very article of running away, he began

began to propagate the report of the great victory he had obtained. He sent the Dairo a circumstantial detail of his own prowess, and expatiated upon the cowardice of the Mantchoux, who he said had vanished from him like quicksilver, at the very time when they were quietly possessed of the field of battle, and he himself was calling upon the mountains to cover him. It must have been in imitation of this great original that the Inspector, of tympanitical memory, assured the publick in one of his lucubrations, that a certain tall Hibernian was afraid of looking him in the face; because the said poltroon had kicked his breech the night before in presence of five hundred people.

Fortune had now abandoned the Chinese in good earnest. Two squadrons of their Fune had been successively taken, destroyed, or dispersed, by the Japanese commanders Or-nbos and Fas-khan; and they had lost such a number of single junks, that they were scarce able to keep the sea. On the coast of Africa they were driven from the settlement of Kho-rhé, by the commander Kha-fell. In the extremity of Asia, they had an army totally defeated by the Japanese captain Khutt-whang, and many of their settlements were taken. In Fatsissio, they lost another battle to Yan-oni, and divers strong holds. In the neighbourhood of Yesso, Bron-xi-tic, who commanded the mercenary army of Japan on that continent, had been obliged to retreat before the Chinese from post to pillar, till at length he found it absolutely necessary to maintain his position, even at the risque of being attacked by the enemy, that outnumbered him greatly. He chose an advantageous post, where he thought himself secure, and went to sleep at his usual time of rest. The Chinese general resolving to beat up his quarters in the night, selected a body of horse for that purpose, and put them in motion accordingly. It was happy for Bron-xi-tic that this detachment fell upon a quarter where there happened to be a kennel of Japanese dogs, which are as famous as the bull-dogs of England. These animals, ever on the watch, not only gave the alarm, but at the same time fell upon the Chinese horses with such impetuosity, that the enemy were disordered, and had actually fled before Bron-xi-tic could bring up his troops to action. All that he saw of the battle, when he came up, was a small

number of killed and wounded, and the cavalry of the enemy scampering off in confusion, though at a great distance from the field. No matter—he found means to paint this famous battle of Myn-than in such colours as dazzled the weak eye. Sight of the Japanese monster, which bel- lowed hoarse applause through all its throats; and in its hymns of triumph, equalled Bron-xi-tic even to the uncon- querable Brut-an-tiffi, which last, about this time, received at his own door ano- ther beating from the Mantchoux, so se- vere that he lay for some time without exhibiting any signs of life; and, indeed, owed his safety to a very extraordinary circumstance. An Ostrog chief called Llha-dahn, who had reinforced the Mant- choux with a very considerable body of horse before the battle, insisted upon car- rying off the carcase of Brut-an-tiffi, that it might be hung up on a gibbet in *ter- rorem*, before the pavilion of the great Khan. The general of the Mantchoux, on the other hand, declared he would have it flayed upon the spot, and the skin sent as a trophy to his sovereign. This dispute produced a great deal of abuse betwixt those barbarians; and it was with great difficulty some of their inferior chiefs, who were wiser than themselves, prevented them from going by the ears together. In a word, the confusion and anarchy that ensued, afforded an oppor- tunity to one of Brut-an-tiffi's partizans to steal away the body of his master, whom the noise of the contest had just roused from his swoon. Llha-dahn per- ceiving he was gone, rode off in disgust with all his cavalry; and the Mantchoux, instead of following the blow, made a re- trograde motion towards their own coun- try, which allowed Brut-an-tiffi time to breathe. Three successive disasters of this kind would have been sufficient to lower the military character of any warrior, in the opinion of any publick that judged from their own senses and reflection: but, by this time, the Japanese had quietly re- signed all their natural perceptions, and paid the most implicit faith to every ar- ticle broached by their apostle Taycho. The more it seemed to contradict com- mon reason and common evidence, the more greedily was it swallowed as a mysterious dogma of the political creed. Taycho then assured them that the whole army of the Mantchoux was put to the sword; and that Bron-xi-tic would carry the war, within three weeks, into the heart



heart of China; he gave them goblets of horse-blood from Myn-than, and tickled their ears and their noses: they snorted approbation, licked his toes, and sunk into a profound lethargy.

From this, however, they were soon aroused by unwelcome tidings from Fatissio. Yaff-rai had proceeded in his route until he was stopped by a vast lake, which he could not possibly traverse without boats, cork-jackets, or some such expedient, which could not be supplied for that campaign. Ya-loff had sailed up the river to Quib-quab, which he found so strongly fortified by nature, that it seemed rashness even to attempt a landing, especially in the face of an enemy more numerous than his own detachment. Land, however, he did, and even attacked a fortified camp of the Chinese; but, in spite of all his efforts, he was repulsed with considerable slaughter. He sent an account of this miscarriage to Taycho, giving him to understand, at the same time, that he had received no intelligence of Yaff-rai's motions; that his troops were greatly diminished; that the season was too far advanced to keep the field much longer; and that nothing was left them but a choice of difficulties, every one of which seemed more insurmountable than another. Taycho having deliberated on this subject, thought it was necessary to prepare the monster for the worst that could happen, as he now expected to hear by the first opportunity, that the grand expedition of Fatissio had totally miscarried. He resolved therefore to throw the blame upon the shoulders of Ya-loff and Yaff-rai, and stigmatize them as the creatures of Fikakaka, who had neither ability to comprehend the instructions he had given, nor resolution to execute the plan he had projected. For this purpose he ascended the rostrum, and with a rueful length of face opened his harangue upon the defeat of Ya-loff. The Hydra no sooner understood that the troops of Japan had been discomfited, than it was seized with a kind of hysterical fit, and uttered a yell so loud and horrible, that the blind-fold Dairo trembled in the most internal recesses of his palace: the Cuboy Fikakaka had such a profuse evacuation, that the discharge is said to have weighed five Boll-ah, equal to eight and forty-pounds three ounces and two penny-weight avoirdupois of Great Britain. Even Taycho himself was discomposed.—In vain he

presented the draught of yeast, and the goblet of blood:—in vain his pipers soothed the ears, and his tall fellows tickled the nose of the blatant beast. It continued to howl and grin, and gnash its teeth, and writhe itself into a thousand contortions, as if it had been troubled with that twisting of the guts called the iliac passion. Taycho began to think it's case desperate, and sent for the Dairo's chief physician, who prescribed a glyster of the distilled spirit analogous to your Geneva; but no apothecary nor old woman in Meaco would undertake to administer it on any consideration, the patient was such a filthy, awkward, lubberly, unmanageable beast. 'If what comes from its mouths,' said they, 'be so foul, virulent, and pestilential, how nauseous, poisonous, and intolerable, must that be which takes the other course?' When Taycho's art and foresight were at a stand, accident came to his assistance. A courier arrived, preceded by twelve postillions blowing horns; and he brought the news that Quib-quab was taken. The Orator commanded them to place their horns within as many of the monster's long ears, and blow with all their might, until it should exhibit some signs of hearing. The experiment succeeded. The Hydra waking from its trance, opened its eyes; and Taycho seizing this opportunity, hollowed in his loudest tone—'Quib-quab is taken.' This note being repeated, the beast started up; then, raising itself on its hind legs, began to wag its tail, to frisk and fawn, to lick Taycho's sweaty socks: in fine, crouching on its belly, it took the Orator on its back, and proceeding through the streets of Meaco, brayed aloud—'Make way for the divine Taycho! Make way for the conqueror of Quib-quab!'—But the gallant Ya-loff, the real conqueror of Quib-quab, was no more. He fell in the battle by which the conquest was achieved, yet not before he saw victory declare in his favour. He had made incredible efforts to surmount the difficulties that surrounded him. At length he found means to scale a perpendicular rock, which the enemy had left unguarded, on the supposition that nature had made it inaccessible. This exploit was performed in the night, and in the morning the Chinese saw his troops drawn up in order of battle on the plains of Quib-quab. As their numbers great-

H ly

ly exceeded the Japanese, they did not decline the trial; and in a little time both armies were engaged. The contest, however, was not of long duration, though it proved fatal to the general on each side.—Ya-loff being slain, the command devolved upon Tohn-syn, who pursued the enemy to the walls of Quib-quab, which was next day surrendered to him by capitulation. Nothing was now seen and heard in the capital but jubilee, triumph, and intoxication; and, indeed, the nation had not for some centuries seen such an occasion for joy and satisfaction. The only person that did not heartily rejoice was the Dairo Got-hama-baba. By this time he was so Tartarised, that he grudged his subjects every advantage obtained in Fatsissio; and when Fika-kaka hobbled up to him with the news of the victory, instead of saluting him with the kick of approbation, he turned his back upon him, saying—‘Boh! boh! What do you tell me of Quib-quab? The damned Chinese are still on the frontiers of Yesso.’ As to the beast, it was doomed to undergo a variety of agitation. Its present gambols were interrupted by a fresh alarm from China. It was reported that two great armaments were equipped for a double descent upon the dominions of Japan: that one of these had already sailed north about for the island of Xicoco, to make a diversion in favour of the other, which, being the most considerable, was designed for the southern coast of Japan. These tidings, which were not without foundation, had such an effect upon the multitudinous monster, that it was first of all seized with an universal shivering. Its teeth chattered so loud, that the sound was heard at the distance of half a league; and for some time it was struck dumb. During this paroxysm it crawled silently on its belly to a sand-hill just without the walls of Meaco, and began to scratch the earth with great eagerness and perseverance. Some people imagined it was digging for gold; but the truth is, the beast was making a hole to hide itself from the enemy, whom it durst not look in the face; for, it must be observed of this beast, it was equally timorous and cruel; equally cowardly and insolent. So hard it laboured at this cavern, that it had actually burrowed itself all but the tail, when its good angel Taycho whistled it out, with the news of another com-

pleat victory gained over the Chinese at sea, by the Sey-seo-gun Phal-khan, who had sure enough discomfited or destroyed the great armament of the enemy. As for the other small squadron which had steered a northerly course to Xicoco, it was encountered, defeated, taken, and brought into the harbours of Japan, by three light Fune, under the command of a young chief called Hel-y-otte, who happened to be cruising on that part of the coast. The beast hearing Taycho’s auspicious whistle, crept out with its buttocks foremost, and having done him homage in the usual stile, began to react its former extravagancies. It now considered this demagogue as the supreme giver of all good, and adored him accordingly. The apostle Bupo was no longer invoked. The temple of Fak-kubasi was almost forgotten; and the Bonzas were universally despised. The praise of the prophet Taycho had swallowed up all other worship. Let us enquire how far he merited this adoration: how justly the unparalleled success of this year was ascribed to his conduct and sagacity. Kho-rhé was taken by Kha-fell, and Quib-quab by Ya-loff and Tohn-syn. By land, the Chinese were defeated in Fatsissio by Yan-o-ni; in the extremity of Asia, by Khutt-whang; and in Tartary, by the Japanese bulldogs, without command or direction. At sea one of their squadrons had been destroyed by Or-nbos; a second by Fas-khan; a third was taken by Hel-y-otte; a fourth was worsted and put to flight in three successive engagements near the land of Kamt-schatka, by the chief Bhakakh; and their grand armament defeated by the Sey-seo-gun Phal-khan. But Kha-fell was a stranger to Orator Taycho: Ya-loff he had never seen: the bulldogs had been collected at random from the shambles of Meaco: he had never heard of Yan-o-ni’s name, till he distinguished himself by his first victory; nor did he know there was any such person as Khutt-whang existing. As for Or-nbos, Fas-khan, Phal-khan, and Bhakakh, they had been Sey-seo-guns in constant employment under the former administration; and the youth Hel-y-otte owed his promotion to the interest of his own family. But it may be alleged that Taycho projected in his closet those plans that were crowned with success. We have seen how he mutilated and frittered the original scheme



of the campaign in Fatsissio, so as to leave it at the caprice of Fortune. The reduction of Kho-rhé was part of the design formed by the Banyan Thum-khumm-qua, which Taycho did all that lay in his power to render abortive. The plan of operations in the extremity of Tartary, he did not pretend to meddle with; it was the concern of the officers appointed by the trading company there settled: and as to the advantages obtained at sea, they naturally resulted from the disposition of cruizes, made and regulated by the board of Sey-seo-gun-sealty, with which no minister ever interfered. He might, indeed, have recalled the chiefs and officers whom he found already appointed when he took the reins of administration, and filled their places with others of his own choosing. How far he was qualified to make such a choice, and plan new expeditions, appears from the adventures of the generals he did appoint; Moria-tanti, who was deterred from landing by a perspective view of whiskers; Hylib-bib, who left his rear in the lurch, and Hob-nob, who made such a masterly retreat from the supposed Bonzas of Thin quo. These three were literally commanders of his own creation, employed in executing schemes of his own projecting; and these three were the only generals he made, and the only military plans he projected, if we except the grand scheme of subsidizing Brut-an-tiffi, and forming an army of one hundred thousand men in Tartary, for the defence of the farm of Yesso. Things being so circumstanced, it may be easily conceived that the Orator could ask nothing which the Mobile would venture to refuse; and indeed, he tried his influence to the utmost stretch; he milked the dugs of the monster till the blood came. For the service of the ensuing year, he squeezed from them near twelve millions of obans, amounting to near twenty-four millions sterling, about four times as much as had ever been raised by the empire of Japan in any former war. But, by this time, Taycho was become not only a convert to the system of Tartary, which he had formerly persecuted, but also an enthusiast in love and admiration of Brut-an-tiffi, who had lately sent him his poetical works in a present. This, however, would have been of no use, as he could not read them, had not he discovered they were printed on a very fine, soft, smooth Chinese paper

made of silk, which he happily converted to another fundamental purpose. In return for this compliment, the Orator sent him a bullock's horn bound with brass, value fifteen pence, which had long served him as a pitch-pipe when he made harangues to the Mobile—it was the same kind of instrument which Horace describes; *Tibia vincula orichalco*: and pray take notice, Peacock, this was the only present Taycho ever bestowed on any man, woman, or child, through the whole course of his life, I mean out of his own pocket; for he was extremely liberal of the public money, in his subsidies to the Tartar chiefs, and in the prosecution of the war upon that continent. The orator was a genius self-taught without the help of human institution. He affected to undervalue all men of literary talents; and the only book he ever read with any degree of pleasure, was a collection of rhapsodies preached by one Ab-ren-thi, an obscure fanatic Bonza, a native of the island Xicoco. Certain it is, Nature seemed to have produced him for the sole purpose of fascinating the mob, and endued him with faculties accordingly.

Notwithstanding all his efforts in behalf of the Tartarian scheme, the Chinese still lingered on the frontiers of Yesso. The views of the court of Pekin exactly coincided with the interest of Bron-xitic, the mercenary general of Japan. The Chinese, confounded at the unheard-of success of the Japanese in Fatsissio and other parts of the globe, and extremely mortified at the destruction of their fleets and the ruin of their commerce, saw no other way of distressing the enemy, but that of prolonging the war on the continent of Tartary, which they could support for little more than their ordinary expence; whereas Japan could not maintain it without contracting yearly immense loads of debt, which must have crushed it at the long-run. It was the business of the Chinese, therefore, not to finish the war in Tartary by taking the farm of Yesso, because, in that case, the annual expence of it would have been saved to Japan; but to keep it alive by forced marches, prædatory excursions, and undecisive actions; and this was precisely the interest of General Bron-xitic, who in the continuance of the war enjoyed the continuance of all his emoluments. All that he had to do, then, was to furnish

Taycho from time to time with a cask of human blood, for the entertainment of the blatant beast; and to send over a few horsetails, as trophies of pretended victories, to be waved before the monster in it's holiday processions. He and the Chinese general seemed to act in concert. They advanced and retreated in their turns betwixt two given lines, and the campaign always ended on the same spot where it began. The only difference between them was in the motives of their conduct; the Chinese commander acted for the benefit of his sovereign, and Bron-xi-tic acted for his own.

The continual danger to which the farm of Yesso was exposed, produced such apprehensions and chagrin in the mind of the Dairo Got-hama-baba, that his health began to decline. He neglected his food and his rattle, and no longer took any pleasure in kicking the Cuboy. He frequently muttered ejaculations about the farm of Yesso: nay, once or twice, in the transports of his impatience, he pulled the bandage from his eyes, and cursed Taycho in the Tartarian language. At length he fell into a lethargy, and even when roused a little by blisters and caustics, seemed insensible of every thing that was done about him. These blisters were raised by burning the moxa upon his scalp. The powder of *menoki* was also injected in a glyster; and the operation of acupuncture, called *Senket*, performed without effect. His disorder was so stubborn, that the Cuboy began to think he was bewitched, and suspected Taycho of having practised sorcery on his sovereign. He communicated this suspicion to Mura-clami, who shook his head, and advised that, with the Orator's good leave, the council should be consulted. Taycho, who had gained an absolute empire over the mind of the Dairo, and could not foresee how his interest might stand to concur in any feasible experiment for the recovery of Got-hama-baba: he therefore consented that the mouths of the council should be unpadlocked *pro hac vice*, and the members were assembled without delay; with this express proviso, however, that they were to confine their deliberations to the subject of the Dairo and his distemper. By this time the physicians had discovered the cause of the disorder, which was no other than his being stung by a poisonous insect produced in the land of Yesso, ana-

logous to the tarantula, which is said to do so much mischief in some parts of Apuglia, as we are told by *Ælian*, *Epiphanius* *Ferdinandus*, and *Baglivi*. In both cases the only effectual remedy was music; and now the council was called to determine what sort of music should be administered. You must know, Peacock, the Japanese are but indifferently skilled in this art, though, in general, they affect to be connoisseurs. They are utterly ignorant of the theory, and in the practice are excelled by all their neighbours, the Tartars not excepted. For my own part, I studied music under *Pythagoras* at *Crotona*. He found the scale of seven tones imperfect, and added the octave as a fixed, sensible, and intelligent termination of an interval, which included every possible division, and determined all the relative differences of sounds: besides he taught us how to express the octave by one-half, &c. &c. But why should I talk to thee of the antient digramma, the genera, &c. of music, which with their colours, were constructed by a division of the diatessaron. Thou art too dull and ignorant to comprehend the chromatic species, the construction of the tetrachord, the Phrygian, the Lydian, and other modes of the antient music: and for distinction of ear, thou mightest be justly ranked among the braying tribe that graze along the ditches of Tottenham Court or Hockley-i'the-hole. I know that nothing exhilarates thy spirits so much as a sonata on the salt-box, or a concert of marrow-bones and cleavers. The ears of the Japanese were much of the same texture; and their music was suited to their ears. They neither excelled in the melopœia, and rhythm or cadence; nor did they know any thing of the true science of harmony, compositions in parts, and those combinations of sounds, the invention of which, with the improvement of the scale, is erroneously ascribed to a Benedictine monk. The truth is, the antients understood composition perfectly well. Their scale was founded upon perfect consonances: they were remarkably nice in tempering sounds, and had reduced their intervals and concords to mathematical demonstration.

But, to return to the council of Twenty-eight, they convened in the same apartment where the Dairo lay; and as the business was to determine what kind of music was most likely to make an impression upon his organs, every member



member came provided with his expedient. First and foremost, Mr. Orator Taycho pronounced an oration upon the excellences of the land of Yesso, of energy (as the Cuboy said) sufficient to draw the moon from her sphere; it drew nothing, however, from the patient but a single groan: then the Fatzman caused a drum to beat, without producing any effect at all upon the Dairo; though it deprived the whole council of their hearing for some time. The third essay was made by Fika-kaka; first with a rattle, and then with tongs and gridiron, which last was his favourite music; but here it failed, to his great surprize and consternation. Sti-phi-rum-poo brought the crier of his court to promulgate a decree against Yesso, in a voice that is wont to make the culprit tremble; but the Dairo was found Ignoramus. Nin-com-poo-po blew a blast with a kind of boatswain's whistle, which discomposed the whole audience without affecting the emperor. Fokh-si-rokhu said he would try his imperial majesty with a sound which he had always been known to prefer to every other species of music; and pulling out a huge purse of golden ohans, began to chink them in his ear. This experiment so far succeeded, that the Dairo was perceived to smile, and even to contract one hand: but further effect it had none. At last Gotto-mio starting up, threw a small quantity of *aurum fulminans* into the fire, which went off with such an explosion, that in the same instant Fika-kaka fell flat upon his face, and Got-hama-baba started upright in his bed. This, however, was no more than a convulsion that put an end to his life; for he fell back again, and expired in the twinkling of an eye. As for the Cuboy, though he did not die, he underwent a surprising transformation or metamorphosis, which I shall record in due season.

Taycho was no sooner certified that Got-hama-baba had actually breathed his last, than he vanished from the council in the twinkling of an eye, and mounting the beast whose name is Legion, rode full speed to the habitation of Gio-gio, the successor and descendant of the deceased Dairo. Gio-gio was a young prince who had been industriously sequestered from the public view, and excluded from all share in the affairs of state by the jealousy of the last emperor. He lived retired under the wings of his

grand-mother, and had divers preceptors to teach him the rudiments of every art but the art of reigning. Of all those who superintended his education, he who insinuated himself the farthest in his favour was one Yak-strot, from the mountains of Ximo, who valued himself much upon the antient blood that ran in his veins, and still more upon his elevated ideas of patriotism. Yak-strot was honest at bottom, but proud, reserved, vain and affected. He had a turn for nick-nacks and gim-cracks, and once made and mounted an iron jack and a wooden clock with his own hands. But it was his misfortune to set up for a connoisseur in painting and other liberal arts, and to announce himself an universal patron of genius. He did not fail to infuse his own notions and conceits into the tender mind of Gio-gio, who gradually imbibed his turn of thinking, and followed the studies which he recommended.—With respect to his lessons on the art of government, he reduced them to a very few simple principles.—His maxims were these: that the Emperor of Japan ought to cherish the established religion, both by precept and example; that he ought to abolish corruption, discourage faction, and balance the two parties by admitting an equal number from each, to places and offices of trust in the administration: that he should make peace as soon as possible, even in despite of the public, which seemed insensible of the burden it sustained, and was indeed growing delirious by the illusions of Taycho, and the cruel evacuations he had prescribed: that he should retrench all superfluous expence in his household and government, and detach himself intirely from the accursed farm of Yesso, which some evil genius had fixed upon the breach of Japan, as a cancerous ulcer through which all her blood and substance would be discharged. These maxims were generally just enough in speculation, but some of them were altogether impracticable;—for example, that of forming an administration equally composed of the two factions, was as absurd as it would be to yoke two stone-horses and two jack-asses in the same carriage, which, instead of drawing one way, would do nothing but bite and kick one another, while the machine of government would stand stock-still, or perhaps be torn in pieces by their dragging in  
opposite

opposite directions.—The people of Japan had been long divided between two inveterate parties, known by the names of *Sbi-tilk-umf-beit*, and *She-it-kumf-bi-til*; the first signifying *more fool than knave*; and the other, *more knave than fool*. Each had predominated in its turn, by securing a majority in the assemblies of the people; for the majority had always interest to force themselves into the administration; because the constitution being partly democratic, the Dairo was still obliged to truckle to the prevailing faction.—To obtain this majority, each side had employed every art of corruption, calumny, insinuation, and priestcraft; for nothing is such an effectual ferment in all popular commotions as religious fanaticism.—No sooner one party accomplished its aim than it reprobated the other, branding it with the epithets of traitors to their country, or traitors to their prince; while the minority retorted upon them the charge of corruption, rapaciousness, and abject servility. In short, both parties were equally abusive, rancorous, uncandid, and illiberal. Taycho had been of both factions more than once.—He made his first appearance as a *Shi-tilk-umf-beit* in the minority, and displayed his talent for scurrility against the Dairo to such advantage, that an old rich hag, who loved nothing so well as money, except the gratification of her revenge, made him a present of five thousand obans, on condition he should continue to revile the Dairo till his dying-day.—After her death, the ministry, intimidated by the boldness of his tropes, and the fame he began to acquire as a mal-content orator, made him such offers as he thought proper to accept; and then he turned *She-it-kumf-bi-til*.—Being disgusted in the sequel, at his own want of importance in the council, he opened once more at the head of his old friends the *Sbi-tilk-umf-bitites*; and once more he deserted them to rule the roast, as chief of the *She-it-kumf-bi-tilites*, in which predicament he now stood. And, indeed, this was the most natural posture in which he could stand; for this party embraced all the scum of the people, constituting the blatant beast, which his talents were so peculiarly adapted to manage and govern. Another impracticable maxim of Yak-Itrot, was the abolition of corruption, the ordure of which is as necessary to anoint the wheels of government in

Japan, as grease is to smear the axle-tree of a loaded waggon. His third impolitic (though not impracticable) maxim, was that of making peace while the populace were intoxicated with the steams of blood, and elated with the shews of triumph. Be that as it will, Gio-gio, attended by Yak-Itrot, was drawing plans of windmills, when Orator Taycho, opening the door, advanced towards him, and falling on his knees, addressed him in these words—“The empire of Japan, ‘magnanimous prince! resembles at ‘this instant, a benighted traveller, who ‘by the light of the star Hesperus continued his journey without repining, ‘until that glorious luminary setting, ‘left him bewildered in darkness and ‘consternation: but scarce had he time ‘to bewail his fate, when the more glorious sun, the ruler of a fresh day, appearing on the tops of the eastern hills, ‘dispelled his terrors with the shades of ‘night, and filled his soul with transports of pleasure and delight. The ‘illustrious Got-hama-baba, of honoured memory, is the glorious star which ‘hath set on our hemisphere.—His soul, ‘which took wing about two hours ago, ‘is now happily nestled in the bosom of ‘the blessed Bupo; and you, my prince, ‘are the more glorious rising sun, whose ‘genial influence will cheer the empire, ‘and gladden the hearts of your faithful Japanese.—I therefore hail your ‘succession to the throne, and cry aloud —“Long live the ever-glorious Gio-gio, Emperor of the three islands of “Japan.” To this salutation the beast below brayed hoarse applause; and all present kissed the hand of the new Emperor, who, kneeling before his venerable grandame, craved her blessing, desiring the benefit of her prayers, that God would make him a good king, and establish his throne in righteousness. Then he ascended his chariot, accompanied by the Orator and his beloved Yak-Itrot, and proceeding to the palace of Meaco, was proclaimed with the usual ceremonies, his relation the Fatz-man and other princes of the blood assisting on this occasion.

The first step he took after his elevation, was to publish a decree, or rather exhortation, to honour religion and the Bonzes; and this was no impolitic expedient: for it firmly attached that numerous and powerful tribe to his interest. His next measures did not seem to be directed



directed by the same spirit of discretion. He admitted a parcel of raw boys, and even some individuals of the faction of *Sbi-tilk-ums beit* into his council; and though Taycho still continued to manage the reins of administration, Yak-strot was associated with him in office, to the great scandal and dissatisfaction of the Nipponites, who hate all the Ximians with a mixture of jealousy and contempt.

Fika-kaka was not the last who payed his respects to his new sovereign, by whom he was graciously received, although he did not seem quite satisfied; because when he presented himself in his usual attitude, he had not received the kick of approbation. New reigns, new customs: this Dairo never dreamed of kicking those whom he delighted to honour.—It was a secret of state which had not yet come to his knowledge; and Yak-strot had always assured him, that kicking the breech always and everywhere implied disgrace, as kicking the parts before, betokens ungovernable passion. Yak-strot, however, in this particular, seems to have been too confined in his notions of the *etiquette*: for it had been the custom time immemorial for the Dairos of Japan to kick their favourites and prime ministers. Besides, there are at this day different sorts of kicks used even in England, without occasioning any dishonour to the *kickee*. It is sometimes a misfortune to be *kicked* out of place, but no dishonour. A man is often *kicked up* in the way of preferment, in order that his place may be given to a person of more interest. Then there is the amorous kick, called *Kick 'um, Jenny*, which every gallant undergoes with pleasure: hence the old English appellation of *Kicksy-wicksy*, bestowed on a wanton leman who knew all her paces. As for the familiar kick, it is no other than a mark of friendship: nor is it more dishonourable to be cuffed and cudgelled. Every body knows that the *alapa* or box o' the ear, among the Romans, was a particular mark of favour by which their slaves were made free; and the favourite gladiator, when he obtained his dismissal from the service, was honoured with a sound cudgelling; this being the true meaning of the phrase *rude dimatus*. In the times of chivalry, the knight when dubbed, was well thrucked across the shoulders by his god-father in arms.—Indeed, *dub-*

*bing* is no other than a corruption of *drubbing*. It was the custom formerly here and elsewhere, for a man to drub his son or apprentice as a mark of his freedom, and of his being admitted to the exercise of arms. The Paraschistes, who practised *embalming* in Ægypt, which was counted a very honourable profession, was always severely drubbed after the operation, by the friends and relations of the defunct; and to this day, the patriarch of the Greeks once a year, on Easter-eve, when he carries out the sacred fire from the holy sepulchre of Jerusalem, is heartily cudgelled by the infidels, a certain number of whom he hires for that purpose; and he thinks himself very unhappy and much disgraced if he is not beaten into all the colours of the rain-bow. You know the Quakers of this country think it no dishonour to receive a slap o' the face; but when you smite them on one cheek, they present the other, that it may have the same salutation. The venerable father Lactantius falls out with Cicero for saying—*'A good man hurts no-body, unless he is justly provoked; nisi laceffitur injuria.* 'O,' cries the good father, *'quam simplicem veramque sententiam duorum verborum adjectione corruptit!—non minus enim mali est, referre injuriam, quam inferre.'* The great philosopher Socrates thought it no disgrace to be kicked by his wife Xantippe; nay, he is said to have undergone the same discipline from other people, without making the least resistance, it being his opinion that it was more courageous, consequently more honourable, to bear a drubbing patiently, than to attempt any thing either in the way of self-defence or retaliation.—The judicious and learned Puffendorf, in his book *De Jure Gentium & Naturæ*, declares, that a man's honour is not so fragile as to be hurt either by a box on the ear, or a kick on the breech, otherwise it would be in the power of every saucy fellow to diminish or infringe it.—It must be owned, indeed, Grotius *De Jure Belli & Pacis*, says, that charity does not of itself require our patiently suffering such an affront. The English have, with a most servile imitation, borrowed their *punto*, as well as other modes, from the French nation. Now kicking and cuffing were counted infamous among those people for these reasons. A box on the ear destroys the whole œconomy of their *frisure*,

*frisure*, upon which they bestow the greatest part of their time and attention; and a kick on the breech is attended with great pain and danger, as they are generally subject to the piles. This is so truly the case, that they have no less than two saints to patronize and protect the individuals afflicted with this disease. One is St. *Fiacre*, who was a native of the kingdom of Ireland. He presides over the blind piles. The other is a female saint, *Hæmorrhœissa*, and she comforts those who are distressed with the bleeding piles. No wonder, therefore, that a Frenchman, put to the torture by a kick on those tender parts, should be provoked to vengeance; and that this vengeance should gradually become an article in their system of punctilio.

But, to return to the thread of my narration.—Whatever inclination the Dairo and Yak-strot had to restore the blessings of peace, they did not think proper as yet to combat the disposition and schemes of Orator Taycho; in consequence of whose remonstrances, the tributary treaty was immediately renewed with Brut-an-tiffi; and Gio-gio declared in the assembly of the people, that he was determined to support that illustrious ally, and carry on the war with vigour.—By this time the Chinese were in a manner expelled from their chief settlements in Fatissio, where they now retained nothing but an inconsiderable colony, which would have submitted on the first summons: but this Taycho left as a nest-egg to produce a new brood of disturbance to the Japanese settlements, that they might not rust with too much peace and security. To be plain with you, Peacock, his thoughts were entirely alienated from this Fatissian war, in which the interest of his country was chiefly concerned, and converted wholly to the continent of Tartary, where all his cares centered in schemes for the success of his friend Brut-an-tiffi. This freebooter had lately undergone strange vicissitudes of fortune. He had seen his chief village possessed and plundered by the enemy; but he found means, by surprise, to beat up their quarters in the beginning of winter, which always proved his best ally, because then the Mantchoux Tartars were obliged to retire to their own country, at a vast distance from the seat of the war.—As for Bron-xi-tic, who commanded the Japanese army on that

continent, he continued to play booty with the Chinese general, over whom he was allowed to obtain some petty advantages, which, with the trophies won by Brut-an-tiffi, were swelled up into mighty victories, to increase the infatuation of the blatant beast.—On the other hand, Bron-xi-tic obliged the generals of China with the like indulgences, by now and then sacrificing a detachment of his Japanese troops, to keep up the spirits of that nation.

Taycho had levied upon the people of Japan an immense sum of money for the equipment of a naval armament, the destination of which was kept a profound secret. Some politicians imagined it was designed for the conquest of Thiquo, and all the other settlements which the Chinese possessed in the Indian ocean; others conjectured the intention was to attack the King of Corea, who had, since the beginning of this war, acted with a shameful partiality in favour of the Emperor of China, his kinsman and ally. But the truth of the matter was this: Taycho kept the armament in the harbours of Japan ready for a descent upon the coast of China, in order to make a diversion in favour of his friend Brut-an-tiffi, in case he had run any risk of being oppressed by his enemies. However, the beast of many heads having growled and grumbled during the best part of the summer, at the inactivity of this expensive armament, it was now thought proper to send it to sea in the beginning of winter; but it was soon driven back in great distress, by contrary winds and storms;—and this was all the monster had for its ten millions of Obans.

While Taycho amused the Mobile with this winter expedition, Yak-strot resolved to plan the scheme of economy which he had projected. He dismissed from the Dairo's service about a dozen of cooks and scullions; shut up one of the kitchens, after having sold the grates, hand-irons, spits, and saucepans; deprived the servants and officers of the household of their breakfast; took away their usual allowance of oil and candles; retrenched their tables; reduced their proportion of drink; and persuaded his pupil the Dairo to put himself upon a diet of soup-meagre thickened with oatmeal. In a few days there was no smoke seen to ascend from the kitchens of the palace; nor did any fuel, torch,



or taper, blaze in the chimnies, courts, and apartments thereof, which now became the habitation of cold, darkness, and hunger. Gio-gio himself, who turned peripatetick philosopher merely to keep himself in heat, fell into a wash-tub as he groped his way in the dark through one of the lower galleries. Two of his body-guard had their whiskers gnawed off by the rats, as they slept in his anti-chamber; and their captain presented a petition declaring, that neither he nor his men could undertake the defence of his imperial majesty's person, unless their former allowance of provision should be restored. They and all the individuals of the household were not only punished in their bellies, but likewise curtailed in their clothing, and abridged in their stipends. The palace of Meaco, which used to be the temple of mirth, jollity, and good cheer, was now so dreary and deserted, that a certain wag fixed up a ticket on the outward gate with this inscription: 'This tenement to be lett, the proprietor having left off house-keeping.'

Yak-strot, however, was resolved to shew, that if the new Dairo retrenched the superfluities of his domestick expence, he did not act from avarice or poorness of spirit, inasmuch as he should now display his liberality in patronizing genius and the arts. A general jubilee was now promised to all those who had distinguished themselves by their talents or erudition. The emissaries of Yak-strot declared that Mæcenæus was but a type of this Ximian mountaineer; and that he was determined to search for merit, even in the thickest shades of obscurity. All these researches, however, proved so unsuccessful, that not above four or five men of genius could be found in the whole empire of Japan, and these were gratified with pensions of about one hundred obans each. One was a secularized Bonza from Ximo; another a malcontent poet of Niphon; a third, a reformed comedian of Xicoco; a fourth, an empiric, who had outlived his practice; and a fifth, a decayed apothecary, who was bard, quack, author, chymist, philosopher, and simpler by profession. The whole of the expence arising from the favour and protection granted by the Dairo to these men of genius, did not exceed seven or eight hundred obans per annum, amounting to about fifteen hundred pounds sterling;

whereas many a private Quo in Japan expended more money on a kennel of hounds. I do not mention those men of singular merit, whom Yak-strot fixed in established places under the government; such as architects, astronomers, painters, physicians, barbers, &c. because their salaries were included in the ordinary expence of the crown: I shall only observe, that a certain person who could not read, was appointed librarian to his imperial majesty.

These were all the men of superlative genius that Yak-strot could find at this period in the empire of Japan.

Whilst this great patriot was thus employed in executing his schemes of œconomy with more zeal than discretion, and in providing his poor relations with lucrative offices under the government, a negotiation for peace was brought upon the carpet by the mediation of certain neutral powers; and Orator Taycho arrogated to himself the province of discussing the several articles of the treaty.—Upon this occasion he shewed himself surprizingly remiss and indifferent in whatever related to the interest of Japan, particularly in regulating and fixing the boundaries of the Chinese and Japanese settlements in Fatsilio, the uncertainty of which had given rise to the war: but when the business was to determine the claims and pretensions of his ally Brut-an-tiffi, on the continent of Tartary, he appeared stiff and immoveable as mount Athos. He actually broke off the negotiation, because the Emperor of China would not engage to drive by force of arms the troops of his ally the Princess of Ostrog, from a village or two belonging to the Tartarian free-booter, who, by the bye, had left them defenceless at the beginning of the war, on purpose that his enemies might, by taking possession of them, quicken the resolutions of the Dairo to send over an army for the protection of Yesso.

The court of Pekin perceiving that the Japanese were rendered intolerably insolent and overbearing by success, and that an equitable peace could not be obtained while Orator Taycho managed the reins of government at Meaco, and his friend Brut-an-tiffi found any thing to plunder in Tartary; resolved to fortify themselves with a new alliance. They actually entered into closer connections with the King of Corea, who

was nearly relatd to the Chinese emperor, had some old scores to settle with Japan, and because he desired those disputes might be amicably compromised in the general pacification, had been grossly insulted by Taycho, in the person of his ambassador. He had for some time dreaded the ambition of the Japanese ministry, which seemed to aim at universal empire; and he was, moreover, stimulated by this outrage to conclude a defensive alliance with the Emperor of China; a measure which all the caution of the two courts could not wholly conceal from the knowledge of the Japanese politicians.

Mean while a dreadful cloud, big with ruin and disgrace, seemed to gather round the head of Brut-an-tiffi. The Mantchoux Tartars, sensible of the inconvenience of their distant situation from the scene of action, which rendered it impossible for them to carry on their operations vigorously in conjunction with the Ostrog, resolved to secure winter-quarters in some part of the enemy's territories, from whence they should be able to take the field, and act against him early in the spring. With this view they besieged and took a frontier fortress belonging to Brut-an-tiffi, situated upon a great inland lake, which extended as far as the capital of the Mantchoux, who were thus enabled to send thither by water-carriage all sorts of provisions and military stores for the use of their army, which took up their winter-quarters accordingly in and about this new acquisition. It was now that the ruin of Brut-an-tiffi seemed inevitable. Orator Taycho saw with horror the precipice to the brink of which his dear ally was driven. Not that his fears were actuated by sympathy or friendship. Such emotions had never possessed the heart of Taycho. No; he trembled because he saw his own popularity connected with the fate of the Tartar. It was the success and petty triumphs of this adventurer which had dazzled the eyes of the blatant beast, so as to disorder it's judgment, and prepare it for the illusions of the Orator: but, now that Fortune seemed ready to turn tail to Brut-an-tiffi, and leave him a prey to his adversaries, Taycho knew the dispositions of the monster so well as to prognosticate that it's applause and affection would be immediately turned into grumbling and disgust; and that he himself, who had led

it blindfold into this unfortunate connection, might possibly fall a sacrifice to it's resentment, provided he could not immediately project some scheme to divert it's attention, and transfer the blame from his own shoulders.

For this purpose he employed his invention, and succeeded to his wish. Having called a council of the Twenty-eight, at which the Dairo assisted in person, he proposed, and insisted upon it, that a strong squadron of Fune should be immediately ordered to scour the seas, and kidnap all the vessels and ships belonging to the King of Corea, who had acted during the whole war with the most scandalous partiality in favour of the Chinese emperor, and was now so intimately connected with that potentate, by means of a secret alliance, that he ought to be prosecuted with the same hostilities which the other had severely felt. The whole council were confounded at this proposal: the Dairo stood aghast: the Cuboy trembled: Yak-strot stared like a skewered pig. After some pause, the President Soo-san-sin-o ventured to observe, that the measure seemed to be a little abrupt and premature: that the nation was already engaged in a very expensive war, which had absolutely drained it of it's wealth, and even loaded it with enormous debts; therefore little able to sustain such additional burthens as would, in all probability, be occasioned by a rupture with a prince so rich and powerful. Gotto-mio swore the land-holders were already so impoverished by the exactions of Taycho, that he himself, ere long, should be obliged to come upon the parish. Fika-kaka got up to speak; but could only cackle. Sti-phi-rum-poo was for proceeding in form by citation. Nin-kom-poo-po declared he had good intelligence of a fleet of merchant-ships belonging to Corea, laden with treasure, who were then on their return from the Indian isles; and he gave it as his opinion, that they should be way-laid and brought into the harbours of Japan; not by way of declaring war, but only with a view to prevent the money's going into the coffers of the Chinese emperor. Fokh-si-rokhu started two objections to this expedient: first, the uncertainty of falling in with the Corean fleet at sea, alledging as an instance the disappointment and miscarriage of the squadron which the Sey-seo-gun had sent some years ago to intercept



the Chinese Fane on the coast of Fatsifio: secondly, the loss and hardship it would be to many subjects of Japan who dealt in commerce, and had great sums embarked in those very Korean bottoms. Indeed Fokh-si-rokhu himself was interested in this very commerce. The Fatz-man sat silent. Yak-strot, who had some romantick notions of honour and honesty, represented, that the nation had already incurred the censure of all it's neighbours, by seizing the merchant-ships of China, without any previous declaration of war: that the law of nature and nations, confirmed by repeated treaties, prescribed a more honourable method of proceeding, than that of plundering like robbers, the ships of pacifick merchants, who trade on the faith of such laws and such treaties: he was, therefore, of opinion, that if the King of Corea had in any shape deviated from the neutrality which he professed, satisfaction should be demanded in the usual form; and when that should be refused, it might be found necessary to proceed to compulsive measures. The Dairo acquiesced in this advice, and assured Taycho that an ambassador should be forthwith dispatched to Corea, with instructions to demand an immediate and satisfactory explanation of that prince's conduct and designs with regard to the empire of Japan.

This regular method of practice would by no means suit the purposes of Taycho, who rejected it with great insolence and disdain. He bit his thumb at the president; forked out his fingers on his forehead at Gotto-mio; wagged his under-jaw at the Cuboy; snapped his fingers at Sri-phi-rum-poo; grinned at the Sey-seo-gun; made the sign of the cross or gallows to Fokh-si-rokhu; then turning to Yak-strot, he clapt his thumbs in his ears, and began to bray like an ass: finally, pulling out the badge of his office, he threw it at the Dairo, who in vain intreated him to be pacified; and wheeling to the right-about, stalked away, slapping the flat of his hand upon a certain part that shall be nameless. He was followed by his kinsman the Quo Lob-kob, who worshipped him with the most humble adoration. He now imitated this great original in the signal from behind at parting, and in him it was attended by a rumbling sound; but whether this

was the effect of contempt or compunction, I could never learn.

Taycho having thus carried his point, which was to have a pretence for quitting the reins of government, made his next appeal to the blatant beast. He reminded the many-headed monster of the uninterrupted success which had attended his administration; of his having supported the glorious Brut-an-tiffi, the great bulwark of the religion of Bupo, who had kept the common enemy at bay, and filled all Asia with the fame of his victories. He told them, that for his own part, he pretended to have subdued Fatsifio in the heart of Tartary: that he despised honours, and had still a greater contempt for riches; and that all his endeavours had been solely exerted for the good of his country, which was now brought to the very verge of destruction. He then gave the beast to understand, that he had formed a scheme against the King of Corea, which would not only have disabled that monarch from executing his hostile intentions with respect to Japan, but also have indemnified this nation for the whole expence of the war; but that his proposal having been rejected by the council of Twenty-eight, who were influenced by Yak-strot, a Ximian mountaineer without spirit or understanding, he had resigned his office with intention to retire to some solitude, where he should in silence deplore the misfortunes of his country, and the ruin of the Buponian religion, which must fall of course with it's great protector Brut-an-tiffi, whom he foresaw the new ministry would immediately abandon.

This address threw Legion into such a quandary, that it rolled itself in the dirt, and yelled hideously. Mean while the Orator retreating to a cell in the neighbourhood of Meaco, hired the common crier to go round the streets and proclaim that Taycho, being no longer in a condition to afford any thing but the bare necessaries of life, would by publick sale dispose of his ambling mule and furniture, together with an ermined robe of his wife, and the greater part of his kitchen utensils. At this time he was well known to be worth upwards of twenty thousand gold obans: nevertheless, the Mobile discharging this circumstance entirely from their reflection, attended to nothing but the object which the Orator was pleased to present. They thought it was a piteous case, and a great scandal

upon the government, that such a patriot, who had saved the nation from ruin and disgrace, should be reduced to the cruel necessity of selling his mule and his household furniture. Accordingly they raised a clamour that soon rung in the ears of Gio-gio and his favourite.

It was supposed that Mura-clami suggested on this occasion to his countryman Yak-strot, the hint of offering a pension to Taycho, by way of remuneration for his past services. 'If he refuses it,' said he, 'the offer will at least reflect some credit upon the Dairo and the administration; but, should he accept of it, (which is much more likely) it will either stop his mouth entirely, or expose him to the censure of the people, who now adore him as a mirror of disinterested integrity.' The advice was instantly complied with: the Dairo signed a patent for a very ample pension to Taycho and his heirs; which patent Yak-strot delivered to him next day at his cell in the country. This miracle of patriotism received the bounty as a turnpike-man receives the toll, and then slapped his door full in the face of the favourite: yet, nothing of what Mura-clami had prognosticated came to pass. The many-tailed monster, far from calling in question the Orator's disinterestedness, considered his acceptance of the pension as a proof of his moderation, in receiving such a trifling reward for the great services he had done his country; and the generosity of the Dairo, instead of exciting the least emotion of gratitude in Taycho's own breast, acted only as a golden key to unlock all the sluices of his virulence and abuse.

These, however, he kept within bounds until he should see what would be the fate of Brut an-tiffi, who now seemed to be in the condition of a criminal at the foot of the ladder. In this dilemma, he obtained a very unexpected reprieve. Before the army of the Manchoux could take the least advantage of the settlement they had made on his frontiers, their empress died, and was succeeded by a weak prince, who no sooner ascended the throne than he struck up a peace with the Tartar freebooter, and even ordered his troops to join him against the Ostrog, to whom they had hitherto acted as auxiliaries. Such an accession of strength would have cast the balance greatly in his favour, had not Providence once more interposed,

and brought matters again to an equilibrium.

Taycho no sooner perceived his ally thus unexpectedly delivered from the dangers that surrounded him, than he began to repent of his own resignation; and resolved once more to force his way to the helm, by the same means he had so successfully used before. He was, indeed, of such a turbulent disposition as could not relish the repose of private life, and his spirit so corrosive, that it would have preyed upon himself, if he could not have found external food for it to devour. He therefore began to prepare his engines, and provide proper emissaries to bespatter and raise a hue and cry against Yak-strot at a convenient season; not doubting but an occasion would soon present itself, considering the temper, inexperience, and prejudices of this Ximian politician, together with the pacifick system he had adopted, so contrary to the present spirit of the blatant beast.

In these preparations he was much comforted and assisted by his kinsman and pupil Lob-kob, who entered into his measures with surprizing zeal; and had the good luck to light on such instruments as were admirably suited to the work in hand. Yak-strot was extremely pleased at the secession of Taycho, who had been a very troublesome colleague to him in the administration, and run counter to all the schemes he had projected for the good of the empire. He now found himself at liberty to follow his own inventions, and being naturally an enthusiast, believed himself born to be the saviour of Japan. Some efforts, however, he made to acquire popularity, proved fruitless. Perceiving the people were, by the Orator's instigations, exasperated against the King of Corea, he sent a peremptory message to that prince, demanding a categorical answer, and this being denied, declared war against him, according to the practice of all civilized nations: but even this method failed of obtaining that approbation for which it was taken. The monster, tutored by Taycho and his ministers, exclaimed, that the golden opportunity was lost, inasmuch as, during the observance of those useless forms, the treasures of Corea were safely brought home to that kingdom; treasures which, had they been interrupted by the Fune of Japan, would have paid off the debts of the nation, and enabled the inhabitants



bitants of Meaco to pave their streets with silver. By the bye, this treasure existed no where but in the fiction of Taycho and the imagination of the blatant beast, which never attempted to use the evidence of sense or reason to examine any assertion, how absurd and improbable soever it might be, which proceeded from the mouth of the Orator.

Yak-strot, having now taken upon himself the task of steering the political bark, resolved to shew the Japanese, that although he recommended peace, he was as well qualified as his predecessor for conducting the war. He therefore, with the assistance of the Fatzman, projected three naval enterprises; the first against Thimquo, the conquest of which had been unsuccessfully attempted by Taycho; the second was destined for the reduction of Fan-yah, one of the most considerable settlements belonging to the King of Corea, in the Indian ocean; and the third armament was sent to plunder and destroy a flourishing colony called Llinam, which the same prince had established almost as far to the southward as the Terra Australis Incognita. Now the only merit which either Yak-strot or any other minister could justly claim from the success of such expeditions, is that of adopting the most feasible of those schemes which are presented by different projectors, and of appointing *such* commanders as are capable of conducting them with vigour and sagacity.

The next step which the favourite took was to provide a help-mate for the young Dairo; and a certain Tartar prince of the religion of Bupo, being pitched upon for this purpose, was formally demanded, brought over to Nippon, espoused by Gio-gio, and installed empress with the usual solemnities. But, lest the choice of a Tartarian princess should subject the Dairo to the imputation of inheriting his predecessor's predilection for the land of Yesso, which had given such sensible umbrage to all the sensible Japanese, who made use of their own reason; he determined to detach his master gradually from those continental connections, which had been the source of such enormous expence, and such continual vexation to the empire of Japan. In these sentiments, he withheld the annual tribute which had been lately paid to Britan-tiff; by which means he saved a very considerable sum to the nation, and, at the same time, rescued it from the infa-

my of such a disgraceful imposition.— He expected the thanks of the public for this exertion of his influence in favour of his country; but he reckoned without his host. What he flattered himself would yield him an abundant harvest of honour and applause, produced nothing but odium and reproach, as we shall see in the sequel.

These measures, pursued with an eye to the advantage of the public, which seemed to argue a considerable share of spirit and capacity, were strangely chequered with others of a more domestic nature, which favoured strongly of childish vanity, rash ambition, littleness of mind, and lack of understanding. He purchased a vast wardrobe of tawdry cloaths, and fluttered in all the finery of Japan: he prevailed upon his master to vest him with the badges and trappings of all the honorary institutions of the empire, although this multiplication of orders in the person of one man, was altogether without precedent or prescription. This was only setting himself up as the more conspicuous mark for envy and detraction.

Not contented with engrossing the personal favour and confidence of his sovereign, and, in effect, directing the whole machine of government, he thought his fortune still imperfect, while the treasure of the empire passed through the hands of the Cuboy, enabling that minister to maintain a very extensive influence, which might one day interfere with his own. He therefore employed all his invention, together with that of his friends, to find out some specious pretext for removing the old Cuboy from his office; and in a little time accident afforded what all their intrigues had not been able to procure.

Ever since the demise of Got hama-baba, poor Fika-kaka had been subject to a new set of vagaries. The death of his old master gave him a rude shock: then the new Dairo encroached upon his province, by preferring a Bonze without his consent or knowledge: finally, he was prevented by the express order of Gio-gio from touching a certain sum out of the treasury, which he had been accustomed to throw out of his windows at stated periods, in order to keep up an interest among the dregs of the people. All these mortifications had an effect upon the weak brain of the Cuboy. He began to loath his usual food, and sometimes

sometimes even declined shewing himself to the Bonzes at his levee; symptoms that alarmed all his friends and dependants. Instead of frequenting the assemblies of the great, he now attended assiduously at all groanings and christenings, grew extremely fond of caudle, and held conferences with practitioners, both male and female, in the art of midwifery. When business or ceremony obliged him to visit any of the Quos or Quanbukus of Meaco; he, by a surprising instinct, ran directly to the nursery, where, if there happened to be a child in the cradle, he took it up, and if it was foul, wiped it with great care and seeming satisfaction. He, moreover, learned of the good women to sing lullabies, and practised them with uncommon success. But the most extravagant of all his whims, was what he exhibited one day in his own court-yard. Observing a nest with some eggs, which the goose had quitted, he forthwith dropped his trowsers, and squatting down in the attitude of incubation, began to stretch out his neck, to hiss and to cackle, as if he had been really metamorphosed into the animal whose place he now supplied.

It was on the back of this adventure that one of the Bonzes, as prying, and as great a gossip as the barber of Midas, in paying his morning worship to the Cuboy's posteriors, spied something, or rather nothing, and was exceedingly affrighted. He communicated his discovery and apprehension to divers others of the cloth; and they were all of opinion that some effectual inquisition should be held on this phænomenon, lest the clergy of Japan should hereafter be scandalized, as having knowingly kissed the breech of an old woman, perhaps a monster or magician. Information was accordingly made to the Dairo, who gave orders for immediate inspection; and Fika-kaka was formally examined by a jury of matrons. Whether these were actuated by undue influence, I shall not at present explain; certain it is, they found their verdict, The Cuboy *non mas*; and among other evidences produced to attest his metamorphosis, a certain Ximian, who pretended to have the second sight, made oath that he had one evening seen the said Fika-kaka in a female dress, riding through the air on a broom-stick. The unhappy Cuboy being thus convicted, was divested of his office, and

confined to his palace in the country; while Gio-gio, by the advice of his favourite, published a proclamation, declaring it was not for the honour of Japan that her treasury should be managed either by a witch or an old woman.

Fika-kaka being thus removed, Yak-strot was appointed treasurer and Cuboy in his place, and now ruled the roost with uncontrouled authority. On the very threshold of his greatness, however, he made a false step, which was one cause of his tottering during the whole sequel of his administration. In order to refute the calumnies and defeat the intrigues of Taycho in the assemblies of the people, he chose as an associate in the ministry Fokh-si-rokhu, who was at that instant the most unpopular man in the whole empire of Japan; and at the instigation of this colleague, deprived of bread a great number of poor families, who subsisted on petty places which had been bestowed upon them by the former Cuboy. Those were so many mouths opened to augment the clamour against his own person and administration.

It might be imagined, that while he thus set one part of the nation at defiance, he would endeavour to cultivate the other; and, in particular, strive to conciliate the good-will of the nobility, who did not see his exaltation without umbrage. But instead of ingratiating himself with them by a liberal turn of demeanour; by treating them with frankness and affability; granting them favours with a good grace; making entertainments for them at his palace; and mixing in their social parties of pleasure; Yak-strot always appeared on the reserve, and under all his finery continually wore a doublet of buckram, which gave an air of stiffness and constraint to his whole behaviour. He studied postures, and, in giving audience, generally stood in the attitude of the idol Fo; so that he sometimes was mistaken for an image of stone. He formed a scale of gesticulation in a great variety of divisions, comprehending the slightest inclination of the head, the front nod, the side nod, the bow, the half, the semi-demi-bow, with the shuffle, the slide, the circular, semi-circular, and quadrant sweep of the right foot. With equal care and precision did he model the economy of his looks into the divisions and sub-divisions of the full stare, the side-glance, the pensive look, the pouting look,



look, the gay look, the vacant look, and the stolid look. To these different expressions of the eye he suited the corresponding features of the nose and mouth; such as the wrinkled nose, the retorted nose, the sneer, the grin, the simper, and the smile. All these postures and gesticulations he practised, and distributed occasionally, according to the difference of rank and importance of the various individuals with whom he had communication.

But these affected airs being assumed in despite of nature, he appeared as awkward as a native of Angola, when he is first hampered with cloaths; or a Highlander obliged by act of parliament to wear breeches. Indeed, the distance observed by Yak-strot in his behaviour to the nobles of Nippon, was imputed to his being conscious of a sulphureous smell which came from his own body; so that greater familiarity on his side might have bred contempt. He took delight in no other conversation but that of two or three obscure Ximians, his companions and counsellors, with whom he spent all his leisure time, in conferences upon politics, patriotism, philosophy, and the Belles Lettres. Those were the oracles he consulted in all the emergencies of state: and with these he spent many an Attic evening.

The gods, not yet tired of sporting with the farce of human government, were still resolved to shew by what inconsiderable springs a mighty empire may be moved. The new Cuboy was vastly well disposed to make his Ximian favourites great men. It was in his power to bestow places and pensions upon them; but it was not in his power to give them consequence in the eyes of the public. The administration of Yak-strot could not fail of being propitious to his own family, and poor relations, who were very numerous. Their naked backs and hungry bellies were now clothed with the richest stuffs, and fed with the fat things of Japan. Every department civil and military was filled with Ximians. Those islanders came over in shoals to Nippon, and swarmed in the streets of Meaco, where they were easily distinguished by their lank sides, gaunt looks, lantern-jaws, and long sharp teeth. There was a fatality that attended the whole conduct of this unfortunate Cuboy. His very partiality to his own countrymen brought upon

him at last the curses of the whole clan.

Mr. Orator Taycho and his kinsman Lob-kob were not idle in the mean time. They provided their emissaries, and primed all their engines. Their understrappers filled every corner of Meaco with rumours, jealousies, and suspicions. Yak-strot was represented as a statesman without discernment, a minister without knowledge, and a man without humanity. He was taxed with insupportable pride, indiscretion, pusillanimity, rapacity, partiality, and breach of faith. It was affirmed that he had dishonoured the nation, and endangered the very existence of the Buponian religion, in withdrawing the annual subsidy from the great Brut-an-tiffi: that he wanted to starve the war, and betray the glory and advantage of the empire by a shameful peace: that he had avowedly shared his administration with the greatest knave in Japan: that he treated the nobles of Nippon with insolence and contempt: that he had suborned evidence against the ancient Cuboy, Fika-kaka, who had spent a long life and an immense fortune in supporting the temple of Fak-ku-basi: that he had cruelly turned adrift a great number of helpless families, in order to gratify his own worthless dependants with their spoils: that he had enriched his relations and countrymen with the plunder of Nippon: that his intention was to bring over the whole nation of Ximians, a savage race, who had been ever perfidious, greedy, and hostile towards the natives of the other Japanese islands. Nay, they were described as monsters in nature, with cloven feet, long tails, saucer eyes, iron fangs and claws, who would first devour the substance of the Nipponites, and then feed upon their blood.

Taycho had Legion's understanding so much in his power, that he actually made it believe Yak-strot had formed a treasonable scheme in favour of a foreign adventurer who pretended to the throne of Japan, and that the reigning Dairo was an accomplice in this project for his own deposition. Indeed, they did not scruple to say that Gio-gio was no more than a puppet moved by his own grandmother and this vile Ximian, between whom they hinted there was a secret correspondence which reflected very little honour on the family of the Dairo.

Mr. Orator Taycho and his associate  
Lob-kob

Lob-kob left no stone unturned to disgrace the favourite, and drive him from the helm. They struck up an alliance with the old Cuboy Fika-kaka, and fetching him from his retirement, produced him to the beast as a martyr to loyalty and virtue. They had often before this period exposed him to the derision of the populace; but now they set him up as the object of veneration and esteem; and every thing succeeded to their wish. Legion hoisted Fika-kaka on his back, and paraded through the streets of Meaco, braying hoarse encomiums on the great talents and great virtues of the ancient Cuboy. His cause was now espoused by his old friends Sti-phi-rumpoo and Nin-kom-poo-po, who had been turned adrift along with him, and by several other Quos who had nestled themselves in warm places under the shadow of his protection: but it was remarkable, that not one of all the Bonzes who owed their preferment to his favour, had gratitude enough to follow his fortune, or pay the least respect to him in the day of his disgrace. Advantage was also taken of the disgust occasioned by Yak-strot's reserve among the nobles of Japan. Even the Fatzman was estranged from the councils of his kinsman Giorgio, and lent his name and countenance to the malcontents, who now formed themselves into a very formidable cabal, comprehending a great number of the first Quos in the empire.

In order to counterbalance this confederacy, which was a strange coalition of jarring interests, the new Cuboy endeavoured to strengthen his administration, by admitting into a share of it Gortomio, who dreaded nothing so much as the continuation of the war, and divers other noblemen, whose alliance contributed very little to his interest or advantage. Gortomio was universally envied for his wealth, and detested for his avarice: the rest were either of the She-it-kum-sheit-el faction, which had been long in disgrace with the Mobile; or men of desperate fortunes and loose morals, who attached themselves to the Ximian favourite solely on account of the posts and pensions he had to bestow.

During these domestic commotions, the arms of Japan continued to prosper in the Indian ocean. Thin-quo was reduced almost without opposition; and news arrived that the conquest of Fan-yah was already more than half achieved.

At the same time some considerable advantages were gained over the enemy on the continent of Tartary, by the Japanese forces under the command of Bion-xitic. It might be naturally supposed that these events would have, in some measure, reconciled the Nipponites to the new ministry: but they produced rather a contrary effect. The blatant beast was resolved to rejoice at no victories but those that were obtained under the auspices of its beloved Taycho; and now took it highly amiss that Yak-strot should presume to take any step which might redound to the glory of the empire. Nothing could have pleased the monster at this juncture so much as the miscarriage of both expeditions, and a certain information that all the troops and ships employed in them had miserably perished. The King of Corea, however, was so alarmed at the progress of the Japanese before Fan-yah, that he began to tremble for all his distant colonies, and earnestly craved the advice of the cabinet of Pekin touching some scheme to make a diversion in their favour.

The councils of Pekin have been ever fruitful of intrigues to embroil the rest of Asia. They suggested a plan to the King of Corea, which he forthwith put in execution. The land of Fumma, which borders on the Corean territories, was governed by a prince nearly allied to the King of Corea, although his subjects had very intimate connections in the way of commerce with the empire of Japan, which, indeed, had entered into an offensive and defensive alliance with this country. The emperor of China and the King of Corea having founded the sovereignty of Fumma, and found him well disposed to enter into their measures, communicated their scheme, in which he immediately concurred. They called upon him in public, as their friend and ally, to join them against the Japanese, as the inveterate enemy of the religion of Fo, and as an insolent people, who affected a despotism at sea, to the detriment and destruction of all their neighbours; plainly declaring that he must either immediately break with the Dairo, or expect an invasion on the side of Corea. The prince of Fumma affected to complain loudly of this iniquitous proposal; he made a merit of rejecting the alternative, and immediately demanded of the court of Meaco the succours stipulated in the treaty of alliance, in order



to defend his dominions. In all appearance, indeed, there was no time to be lost; for the monarchs of China and Corea declared war against him without further hesitation; and uniting their forces on that side, ordered them to enter the land of Fumma, after having given satisfactory assurances in private, that the prince had nothing to fear from their hostilities.

Yak-strot was not much embarrassed on this occasion. Without suspecting the least collusion among the parties, he resolved to take the Prince of Fumma under his protection, thereunto moved by divers considerations. First and foremost, he piqued himself upon his good faith: secondly, he knew that the trade with Fumma was of great consequence to Japan; and therefore concluded that his supporting the sovereign of it would be a popular measure: thirdly, he hoped that the multiplication of expence incurred by this new war, would make the blatant beast wince under its burden, and of consequence reconcile it to the thoughts of a general pacification, which he had very much at heart. Mean while he hastened the necessary succours to the land of Fumma, and sent thither an old general called Le-yaw-ter, in order to concert with the prince and his ministers the operations of the campaign.

This officer was counted one of the shrewdest politicians in Japan, and having resided many years as ambassador in Fumma, was well acquainted with the genius of that people. He immediately discovered the scene which had been acted behind the curtain. He found that the Prince of Fumma, far from having made any preparations for his own defence, had actually withdrawn his garrisons from the frontier places, which were by this time peaceably occupied by the invading army of Chinese and Coreans: that the few troops he had, were without cloaths, arms, and discipline; and that he had amused the court of Meaco with false musters, and a specious account of levies and preparations which had been made. In a word, though he could not learn the particulars, he comprehended the whole mystery of the secret negotiations. He upbraided the minister of Fumma with perfidy, refused to assume the command of the Japanese auxiliaries when they arrived, and returning to Meaco, com-

municated his discoveries and suspicions to the new Cuboy. But he did not meet with that reception which he thought he deserved for intelligence of such importance. Yak-strot affected to doubt; perhaps, he was not really convinced; or, if he was, thought proper to temporize; and he was in the right for so doing. A rupture with Fumma at this juncture would have forced the prince to declare openly for the enemies of Japan; in which case the inhabitants of Nippon would have lost the benefit of a very advantageous trade. They had already been great sufferers in commerce by the breach with the King of Corea, whose subjects had been used to take off great quantities of the Japanese manufactures, for which they paid in gold and silver; and they could ill bear such an additional loss as an interruption of the trade with Fumma would have occasioned. The Cuboy, therefore, continued to treat the prince of that country as a staunch ally, who had sacrificed every other consideration to his good faith; and, far from restricting himself to the number of troops and Fune stipulated in the treaty, sent over a much more numerous body of forces and ships of war; declaring, at the same time, he would support the people of Fumma with the whole power of Japan.

Such a considerable diversion of the Japanese strength could not fail to answer, in some measure, the expectation of the two sovereigns of China and Corea; but it did not prevent the success of the expeditions which were actually employed against their colonies in the Indian ocean. It was not in his power, however, to protect Fumma, had the invaders been in earnest: but the combined army of the Chinese and Coreans had orders to protract the war; and, instead of penetrating to the capital, at a time when the Fummians, though joined with the auxiliaries of Japan, were not numerous enough to look them in the face, they made a full stop in the middle of their march, and quietly retired into summer quarters.

The additional incumbrance of a new continental war, redoubled the Cuboy's desire of peace; and his inclination being known to the enemy, who were also sick of the war, they had recourse to the good offices of a certain neutral power, called Sab-oi, sovereign of the mountains of Cambodia. This prince ac-

K

cordingly,

cordingly offered his mediation at the court of Meaco, and it was immediately accepted.—The negotiation for peace, which had been broke off in the ministry of Taycho, was now resumed; an ambassador plenipotentiary arrived from Pekin; and Gotto-mio was sent thither in the same capacity, in order to adjust the articles, and sign the preliminaries of peace.

While this new treaty was on the carpet, the armament equipped against Fan-yah under the command of the Quo Kep-marl, and the brave admiral, who had signalized himself in the sea of Kamtschatka, reduced that important place, where they became masters of a strong squadron of Fune belonging to the King of Corea; together with a very considerable treasure, sufficient to indemnify Japan for the expence of the expedition. This, though the most grievous, was not the only disaster which the war brought upon the Coreans. Their distant settlement of Lli-nam was likewise taken by General Tra-rep, and the inhabitants paid an immense sum in order to redeem their capital from plunder.

These successes did not at all retard the conclusion of the treaty, which was indeed become equally necessary to all the parties concerned. Japan, in particular, was in danger of being ruined by her conquests. The war had destroyed so many men, that the whole empire could not afford a sufficiency of recruits for the maintenance of the land-forces. All those who had conquered Fatissio and Fan-yah, were already destroyed by hard duty and the diseases of those unhealthy climates: above two-thirds of the Fune were rotten in the course of service; and the complements of mariners reduced to less than one half of their original numbers. Troops were actually wanting to garrison the new conquests. The finances of Japan were by this time drained to the bottom. One of her chief resources was stopped by the rupture with Corea; while her expences were considerably augmented; and her national credit was stretched even to cracking. All these considerations stimulated more and more the Dairo and his Cuboy to conclude the work of peace.

Meanwhile the enemies of Yak-strot gave him no quarter nor respite. They vilified his parts, traduced his morals, endeavoured to intimidate him with threats which did not even respect the

Dairo, and never failed to insult him whenever he appeared in public. It had been the custom, time immemorial, for the chief magistrate of Meaco to make an entertainment for the Dairo and his empress, immediately after their nuptials, and to this banquet all the great Quos in Japan were invited. The person who filled the chair at present, was Rhum-kikh, an half-witted politician, self-conceited, head-strong, turbulent, and ambitious; a professed worshipper of Taycho, whose oratorical talents he admired, and attempted to imitate in the assemblies of the people, where he generally excited the laughter of his audience. By dint of great wealth and extensive traffick he became a man of consequence among the mob, notwithstanding an illiberal turn of mind, and an ungracious address; and now he resolved to use this influence for the glory of Taycho and the disgrace of the Ximian favourite. Legion was tutored for the purpose, and moreover, well primed with a fiery caustic spirit in which Rhum-kikh was a considerable dealer. The Dairo and his young empress were received by him and his council with a sullen formality in profound silence. The Cuboy was pelted as he passed along, and his litter almost overturned by the monster, which yelled, and brayed, and hooted without ceasing, until he was housed in the city-hall, where he met with every sort of mortification from the entertainer as well as the spectators. At length Mr. Orator Taycho, with his cousin Lob-kob, appearing in a triumphal car at the city-gate, the blatant beast received them with loud huzzas, unharnessed their horses, and putting itself in the traces, drew them through the streets of Meaco, which resounded with acclamation. They were received with the same exultation within the hall of entertainment, where their sovereign and his consort sat altogether unhonoured and unnoticed.

A small squadron of Chinese Fune having taken possession of a defenceless fishery belonging to Japan, in the neighbourhood of Fatissio, the emissaries of Taycho magnified this event into a terrible misfortune, arising from the mal-administration of the new Cuboy: nay, they did not scruple to affirm, that he had left the fishing-town defenceless on purpose that it might be taken by the enemy. This clamour, however, was of short duration. The Quo Phyl-  
Khol,



Kholl, who commanded a few Fune in one of the harbours of Fatsiffio, no sooner received intelligence of what had happened, than he embarked what troops were at hand, and sailing directly to the place, obliged the enemy to abandon their conquest with precipitation and disgrace.

In the midst of these transactions, the peace was signed, ratified, and even approved in the great national council of the Quos, as well as in the assembly of the people. The truth is, the minister of Japan has it always in his power to secure a majority in both these conventions, by means that may be easily guessed; and those were not spared on this occasion. Yak-strot, in a speech, harangued the great council, who were not a little surprised to hear him speak with such propriety and extent of knowledge; for he had been represented as tongue-tied, and in point of elocution little better than the palfrey he rode. He now vindicated all the steps he had taken since his accession to the helm: he demonstrated the necessity of a pacification; explained and descanted upon every article of the treaty; and finally, declared his conscience was so clear in this matter, that when he died, he should desire no other encomium to be engraved on his tomb, but that he was the author of this peace.

Nevertheless, the approbation of the council was not obtained without violent debate and altercation. The different articles were censured and inveighed against by the Fatz-man, the late Cuboy Fika-kaka, Lob-kob, Sti-phi-rum-poo, Nin-kom-poo-po, and many other Quos; but, at the long-run, the influence of the present ministry predominated. As for Taycho, he exerted himself in a very extraordinary effort to depreciate the peace in the assembly of the people. He had for some days pretended to be dangerously ill, that he might make a merit of his patriotism by shewing a contempt for his own life, when the good of his country was at stake. In order to excite the admiration of the publick, and render his appearance in the assembly the more striking, he was carried thither on a kind of hand-barrow, wrapped up in flannel, with three woollen night-caps on his head, escorted by Legion, which yelled, and brayed, and whooped, and hollowed, with such vociferation, that every street of Meaco rung with hideous

clamour. In this equipage did Taycho enter the assembly, where, being held up by two adherents, he, after a prelude of groans to rouse the attention of his audience, began to declaim against the peace as inadequate, shameful, and disadvantageous: nay, he ventured to stigmatize every separate article, though he knew it was in the power of each individual of his hearers to confront him with the terms to which he had subscribed the preceding year, in all respects less honourable and advantageous to his country. Inconsistencies equally glaring and absurd he had often crammed down the throats of the multitude: but they would not go down with this assembly of the people, which, in spite of his flannel, his night-caps, his crutches, and his groans, confirmed the treaty of peace by a great majority. Not that they had any great reason to applaud the peace-makers, who might have dictated their own terms, had they proceeded with more sagacity and less precipitation. But Fokh-si-rokhu and his brother undertakers, having the treasure of Japan at their command, had anointed the greatest part of the assembly with a certain precious salve, which preserved them effectually from the fascinating arts of Taycho.

This Orator, incensed at his bad success within doors, renewed and redoubled his operations without. He exasperated Legion against Yak-strot to such a pitch of rage, that the monster could not hear the Cuboy's name three times pronounced without falling into fits. His confederate Lob-kob, in the course of his researches, found out two originals admirably calculated for executing his vengeance against the Xinnian favourite. One of them, called Llur-chir, a profligate Bonze, degraded for his lewd life, possessed a wonderful talent of exciting different passions in the blatant beast, by dint of quaint rhimes, which were said to be inspirations of the dæmon of obloquy, to whom he had sold his soul. These oracles not only commanded the passions, but even influenced the organs of the beast in such a manner, as to occasion an evacuation either upwards or downwards, at the pleasure of the operator. The other, known by the name of Jan-ki-dtzin, was counted the best marksman in Japan, in the art and mystery of dirt-throwing. He possessed the art of making balls of filth, which

were famous for sticking and stinking; and these he threw with such dexterity, that they very seldom missed their aim. Being reduced to a low ebb of fortune by his debaucheries, he had made advances to the new Cuboy, who had rejected his proffered services, on account of his immoral character: a prudish punctilio, which but ill became Yak-strot, who had paid very little regard to reputation in choosing some of the colleagues he had associated in his administration. Be that as it may, he no sooner understood that Mr. Orator Taycho was busy in preparing for an active campaign, than he likewise began to put himself in a posture of defence. He hired a body of mercenaries, and provided some dirt-men and rhymers. Then, taking the field, a sharp contest and pelting-match ensued: but the dispute was soon terminated. Yak-strot's versifiers turned out no great conjurers, on the trial. They were not such favourites of the dæmon as Llur-chir. The rhymes they used produced no other effect upon Legion, but that of setting it a-braying. The Cuboy's dirt-men, however, played their parts tolerably well. Though their balls were inferior in point of composition to those of Jan-ki-dtzin, they did not fail to discompose Orator Taycho and his friend Lob-kob, whose eyes were seen to water with the smart occasioned by those missiles; but these last had a great advantage over their adversaries, in the zeal and attachment of Legion, whose numerous tongues were always ready to lick off the ordure that stuck to any part of their leaders; and this they did with such signs of satisfaction, as seemed to indicate an appetite for all manner of filth.

Yak-strot having suffered woefully in his own person, and seeing his partisans in confusion, thought proper to retreat. Yet, although discomfited, he was not discouraged. On the contrary, having at bottom a fund of fanaticism which, like camomile, grows the faster for being trod upon, he became more obstinately bent than ever upon prosecuting his own schemes for the good of the people in their own despite. His vanity was likewise buoyed up by the flattery of his creatures, who extolled the passive courage he had shewn in the late engagement. Though every part of him still tingled and stunk from the balls of the enemy, he persuaded himself that not one of their missiles had

taken place; and of consequence, that there was something of divinity in his person. Full of this notion, he discarded his rhymsters and his dirt-casters as unnecessary, and resolved to bear the brunt of the battle in his own individual.

Fokh-si-rokhu advised him, nevertheless, to fill his trowsers with gold obans, which he might throw at Legion in case of necessity, assuring him that this was the only ammunition which the monster could not withstand. The advice was good; and the Cuboy might have followed it, without being obliged to the treasury of Japan; for he was by this time become immensely rich, in consequence of having found a hoard in digging his garden: but this was an expedient which Yak-strot could never be prevailed upon to use, either on this or any other occasion. Indeed, he was now so convinced of his own personal energy, that he persuaded his master Gio-gio to come forth and see it operate on the blatant beast. Accordingly the Dairo ascended his car of state, while the Cuboy, arrayed in all his trappings, stood before him with the reins in his own hand, and drove directly to the enemy, who waited for him without flinching. Being arrived within dung-shot of Jan-ki-dtzin, he made a halt, and putting himself in the attitude of the idol Fo, with a simper in his countenance, seemed to invite the warrior to make a full discharge of his artillery. He did not long wait in suspense. The balls soon began to whizz about his ears; and a great number took effect upon his person. At length, he received a shot upon his right temple, which brought him to the ground. All his gewgaws fluttered, and his buckram doublet rattled as he fell. Llur-chir no sooner beheld him prostrate, than advancing with the monster, he began to repeat his rhymes, at which every mouth and every tail of Legion was opened and lifted up; and such a torrent of filth squirted from these channels, that the unfortunate Cuboy was quite overwhelmed. Nay, he must have been actually suffocated where he lay, had not some of the Dairo's attendants interposed, and rescued him from the vengeance of the monster. He was carried home in such an unflavoury pickle, that his family smelled his disaster long before he came in sight; and when he appeared in this woeful condition, covered



vered with ordure, blinded with dirt; and even deprived of sense and motion, his wife was seized with *hysterica passio*. He was immediately stripped and washed, and other means being used for his recovery, he in a little time retrieved his recollection.

He was now pretty well undeceived, with respect to the divinity of his person: but his enthusiasm took a new turn. He aspired to the glory of martyrdom, and resolved to devote himself as a victim to patriotic virtue. While his attendants were employed in washing off the filth that stuck to his beard, he recited, in a theatrical tone, the stanza of a famous Japanese bard, whose soul afterwards transmigrated into the body of the Roman poet Horatius Flaccus, and inspired him with the same sentiment in the Latin tongue.

*Virtus repulsæ nescia sordidæ  
Intaminatis fulget bonis; ribus;  
Nec sumit, aut ponit secures  
Arbitrio popularis auræ.*

His friends hearing him declare his resolution of dying for his country, began to fear that his understanding was disturbed. They advised him to yield to the torrent, which was become too impetuous to stem; to resign the Cuboyship quietly, and reserve his virtues for a more favourable occasion. In vain his friends remonstrated: in vain his wife and children employed their tears and intreaties to the same purpose. He lent a deaf ear to all their solicitations, until they began to drop some hints that seemed to imply a suspicion of his insanity, which alarmed him exceedingly; and the Dairo himself signifying to him in private, that it was become absolutely necessary to temporize, he resigned the reins of government with a heavy heart, though not before he was assured that he should still continue to exert his influence behind the curtain.

Gio-gio's own person had not escaped untouched in the last skirmish. Jan-ki-dtzin was transported to such a pitch of insolence, that he aimed some balls at the Dairo, and one of them taking place exactly betwixt the eyes, defiled his whole visage. Had the laws of Japan been executed in all their severity against this audacious plebeian, he would have suffered crucifixion on the spot: but Gio-gio, being good-natured even to a fault, contented himself with ordering

some of his attendants to apprehend and put him in the public stocks, after having seized the whole cargo of filth which he had collected at his habitation for the manufacture of his balls. Legion was no sooner informed of his disgrace, than it released him by force, being therein comforted and abetted by the declaration of a puny magistrate, called Praffpatt-phogg, who seized this, as the only opportunity he should ever find of giving himself any consequence in the commonwealth. Accordingly, the monster hoisting him and Jan-ki-dtzin on their shoulders, went in procession through the streets of Meaco, hollowing, huzzaing, and extolling his venerable pair of patriots as the *Palladia* of the liberty of Japan.

The monster's officious zeal on this occasion was far from being agreeable to Mr. Orator Taycho, who took umbrage at this exaltation of his two undertrappers, and from that moment devoted Jan-ki-dtzin to destruction. The Dairo finding it absolutely necessary for the support of his government, that this dirt-monger should be punished, gave directions for trying him according to the laws of the land. He was ignominiously expelled from the assembly of the people, where his old patron Taycho not only disclaimed him, but even represented him as a worthless atheist and sower of sedition: but he escaped the weight of a more severe sentence in another tribunal, by retreating without beat of drum, into the territories of China, where he found an asylum, from whence he made divers ineffectual appeals to the multitudinous beast at Nippon.

As for Yak-strot, he was every thing but a down-right martyr to the odium of the public, which produced a ferment all over the nation. His name was become a term of reproach. He was burnt or crucified in effigy in every city, town, village, and district of Nippon. Even his own countrymen, the Ximians, held him in abhorrence and execration. Notwithstanding his partiality to the *natale solum*, he had not been able to provide for all those adventurers who came from thence in consequence of his promotion. The whole number of the disappointed became his enemies of course; and the rest finding themselves exposed to the animosity and ill offices of their fellow-subjects of Nippon, who hated the whole community for his sake, inveighed against

against Yak-strot as the curse of their nation.

In the midst of all this detestation and disgrace, it must be owned, for the sake of truth, that Yak-strot was one of the honestest men in Japan, and certainly the greatest benefactor to the empire. Just, upright, sincere, and charitable; his heart was susceptible of friendship and tenderness. He was a virtuous husband, a fond father, a kind master, and a zealous friend. In his public capacity he had nothing in view but the advantage of Japan, in the prosecution of which he flattered himself he should be able to display all the abilities of a profound statesman, and all the virtues of the most sublime patriotism. It was here he over-rated his own importance. His virtue became the dupe of his vanity. Nature had denied him shining talents, as well as that easiness of deportment, that affability, liberal turn, and versatile genius, without which no man can ever figure at the head of an administration. Nothing could be more absurd than his being charged with want of parts and understanding to guide the helm of government, considering how happily it had been conducted for many years by Fika-kaka, whose natural genius would have been found unequal even to the art and mystery of wool-combing. Besides, the war had prospered in his hands as much as it ever did under the auspices of his predecessor; though, as I have before observed, neither the one nor the other could justly claim any merit from it's success.

But Yak-strot's services to the public were much more important in another respect. He had the resolution to dissolve the shameful and pernicious engagements which the empire had contracted on the continent of Tartary. He lightened the intolerable burthens of the empire: he saved it's credit when it was stretched even to bursting. He made a peace, which, if not the most glorious that might have been obtained, was, at least, the most solid and advantageous that ever Japan had concluded with any power whatsoever; and, in particular, much more honourable, useful, and ascertained, than that which Taycho had agreed to subscribe the preceding year; and, by this peace, he put an end to all the horrors of a cruel war, which had ravaged the best parts of Asia, and destroyed the lives of six hundred thou-

sand men every year. On the whole, Yak-strot's good qualities were respectable. There was very little vicious in his composition; and as to his follies, they were rather the subjects of ridicule than of resentment.

Yak-strot's subalterns in the ministry rejoiced in secret at his running so far into the north of Legion's displeasure. Nay, it was shrewdly suspected that some of their emissaries had been very active against him in the day of his discomfiture. They flattered themselves, that if he could be effectually driven from the presence of the Dairo, they would succeed to his influence; and in the mean time would acquire popularity by turning tail to, and kicking at, the Ximian favourite, who had associated them in the administration in consequence of their vowing eternal attachment to his interest, and constant submission to his will. Having held a secret conclave to concert their operations, they began to execute their plan, by seducing Yak-strot into certain odious measures of raising new impositions on the people, which did not fail, indeed, to increase the clamour of the blatant beast, and promote it's filthy discharge upwards and downwards; but then the torrents were divided, and many a tail was lifted up against the real projectors of the scheme which the favourite had adopted. They now resolved to make a merit with the Mobile, by picking a German quarrel with Strot, and insulting him in public. Gotto-mio caused a scrubbing-post to be set up in the night, at the Cuboy's door. The scribe Zan-ti-fic presented him with a scheme for the importation of brimstone into the island of Ximo: the other scribe pretended he could not spell the barbarous names of the Cuboy's relations and countrymen, who were daily thrust into the most lucrative employments. As for Twitz-er the Financier, he never approached Yak-strot without clashing his knuckles in derision. At the council of Twenty-eight, they thwarted every plan he proposed, and turned into ridicule every word he spoke. At length they bluntly told the Dairo, that as Yak-strot resigned the reins of administration in public, he must likewise give up his management behind the curtain; for they were not at all disposed to answer to the people for measures dictated by an invisible agent. This was but a reasonable demand, in which the emperor



emperor seemed to acquiesce. But the new ministers thought it was requisite that they should commit some overt act of contempt for the abdicated Cuboy. One of his nearest relations had obtained a profitable office in the island of Ximio; and of this the new cabal insisted he should be immediately deprived. The Dairo remonstrated against the injustice of turning a man out of his place for no other reason but to satisfy their caprice; and plainly told them he could not do it without infringing his honour, as he had given his word that the possessor should enjoy the post for life. Far from being satisfied with this declaration, they urged their demand with redoubled importunity, mixed with menaces which equally embarrassed and incensed the good-natured Dairo. At last Yak-strot, taking compassion upon his indulgent master, prevailed upon his kinsman to release him from the obligation of his word, by making a voluntary resignation of his office. The Dairo fell sick of vexation: his life was despaired of; and all Japan was filled with alarm and apprehension at the prospect of an infant's ascending the throne: for the heir-apparent was still in the cradle.

Their fears, however, were happily disappointed by the recovery of the emperor, who, to prevent as much as possible the inconveniences that might attend his demise, during the minority of his son, resolved that a regency should be established and ratified by the states of the empire. The plan of this regency he concerted in private with the venerable princess his grandmother, and his friend Yak-strot; and then communicated the design to his ministers, who knowing the quarter from whence it had come, treated it with coldness and contempt. They were so elevated by their last triumph over the Ximian favourite, that they overlooked every obstacle to their ambition; and determined to render the Dairo dependant on them, and them only. With this view they threw cold water on the present measure; and to mark their hatred of the favourite more strongly in the eyes of Legion, they endeavoured to exclude the name of his patroness, the Dairo's grandmother, from the deed of regency, though their malice was frustrated by the vigilance of Yak-strot, and the indignation of the states, who represented this affront offered to the family of their sovereign,

The tyranny of this junto became so intolerable to Gio-gio, that he resolved to shake off their yoke, whatever might be the consequence; but before any effectual step was taken for this purpose, Yak-strot, who understood mechanics, and had studied the art of puppet-playing, tried an experiment on the organs of the cabal, which he tempered with individually without success. Instead of uttering what he prompted, the sounds came out quite altered in their passage. Gotto-mio grunted; the Financier Twitz-er bleated, or rather brayed; one scribe mewed like a cat; the other yelped like a jackall. In short, they were found so perverse and refractory, that the master of the motion kicked them off the stage, and supplied the scene with a new set of puppets made of very extraordinary materials. They were the very figures through whose pipes the charge of mal-administration had been so loudly sounded against the Ximian favourite. They were now mustered by the Fatzman, and hung upon the pegs of the very same puppet-show-man against whom they had so vehemently inveighed. Even the superannuated Fika-kaka appeared again upon the stage as an actor of some consequence; and insisted upon it, that his metamorphosis was a mere calumny. But Taycho and Lob-kob kept aloof, because Yak-strot had not yet touched them on the proper keys.

The first exhibition of the new puppets was called *Topsy-turvy*, a farce, in which they overthrew all the paper-houses which their predecessors had built: but they performed their parts in such confusion, that Yak-strot interposing to keep them in order, received divers contusions and severe kicks on the shins, which made his eyes water; and, indeed, he had in a little time reason enough to repent of the revolution he had brought about. The new sticks of administration proved more stiff and unmanageable than the former; and those he had discarded, associating with the blatant beast, bedaubed him with such a variety of filth, drained from all the sewers of scurrility, that he really became a public nuisance. Gotto-mio pretended remorse of conscience, and declared he would impeach Yak-strot for the peace which he himself had negotiated. Twitz-er snivelled and cried, and cast figures to prove that Yak-strot was born for the destruction of Japan; and Zan-ti-fic lured

lured an incendiary Bonze called Toks, to throw fire-balls by night into the palace of the favourite.

In this distress Strot cast his eyes on Taycho the monster-tamer, who alone seemed able to over-balance the weight of all other opposition; and to him he made large advances accordingly; but his offers were still inadequate to the expectations of that demagogue, who, nevertheless, put on a face of capitulation. He was even heard to say, that Yak-strot was an honest man and a good minister: nay, he declared he would ascend the highest pinnacle of the highest pagod in Japan, and proclaim that Yak-strot had never, directly nor indirectly, meddled with administration since he resigned the publick office of minister. Finding him, however, tardy and phlegmatic in his proposals, he thought proper to change his phrase, and in the next assembly of the people swore, with great vociferation, that the said Yak-strot was the greatest rogue that ever escaped the gallows. This was a necessary fillip to Yak-strot, and operated upon him so effectually, that he forthwith sent a charte blanche to the great Taycho, and a treaty was immediately ratified on the following conditions: that the said Taycho should be raised to the rank of Quanhuku, and be appointed conservator of the Dairo's signet: that no state measure should be taken without his express approbation: that his creature the lawyer Prass-fog should be ennobled and preferred to the most eminent place in the tribunals of Japan; and that all his friends and dependants should be provided for at the publick expence, in such a manner as he himself should propose. His kinsman Lob-kob, however, was not comprehended in this treaty, the articles of which he inveighed against with such acrimony, that a rupture ensued betwixt these two originals. The truth is, Lob-kob was now so full of his own importance, that nothing less than an equal share of administration would satisfy his ambition; and this was neither in Taycho's power nor inclination to grant.

The first consequence of this treaty was a new shift of hands, and a new dance of ministers. The chair of precedency was pulled from under the antiquated Fika-kaka, who fell upon his back; and his heels flying up, discovered but too plainly the melancholy truth of

his metamorphosis. All his colleagues were discarded, except those who thought proper to temporize and join in dancing the hay, according as they were actuated by the new partners of the puppet-show. This coalition was the greatest masterpiece in politicks that ever Yak-strot performed. Taycho, the formidable Taycho! whom in his single person he dreaded more than all his other enemies of Japan united, was now become his coadjutor, abettor, and advocate; and, which was still of more consequence to Strot, that demagogue was forsaken of his good genius Legion.

The many-headed monster would have swallowed down every other species of tergiversation in Taycho, except a coalition with the detested favourite, and the title of Quo, by which he formally renounced it's society: but these were articles which the mongrel could not digest. The tidings of this union threw the beast into a kind of stupor, from which it was roused by blisters and cauteries applied by Gotto-mio, Twitz-er, Zan-ti-fic, with his understrapper Toks, now reinforced by Fika-kaka, and his discarded associates: for their common hatred to Yak-strot, like the rod of Moses, swallowed up every distinction of party, and every suggestion of former animosity; and they concurred with incredible zeal, in rousing Legion to a due sense of Taycho's apostacy. The beast, so stimulated, howled three days and three nights successively at Taycho's gate; then was seized with a convulsion, that went off with an evacuation upwards and downwards, so offensive, that the very air was infected.

The horrid sounds of the beast's lamentations, the noxious effluvia of it's filthy discharge, joined to the poignant remorse which Taycho felt at finding his power over Legion dissolved, occasioned a commotion in his brain; and this led him into certain extravagancies, which gave his enemies a handle to say he was actually insane. His former friends and partizans thought the best apology they could make for the inconsistency of his conduct, was to say he was *non compos*; and this report was far from being disagreeable to Yak-strot, because it would at any time furnish him with a plausible pretence to dissolve the partnership, at which he inwardly repined: for it was necessity alone that drove him to a partition of his power with



with a man so incapable of acting in concert with any colleague whatsoever.

In the mean time Gotto-mio and his associates left no stone unturned to acquire the same influence over Legion, which Taycho had so eminently possessed: but the beast's faculties, slender as they were, seemed now greatly impaired, in consequence of that arch empirick's practices upon it's constitution. In vain did Gotto-mio hoop and hollow: in vain did Twitz-er tickle it's long ears: in vain did Zan-ti-fic apply sternutatories, and his Bouze administer inflammatory glysters; the monster could never be brought to a right understanding, or at all concur with their designs, except in one instance, which was it's antipathy to the Ximian favourite. This had become so habitual, that it acted mechanically upon it's organs, even after it had lost all other signs of recognition. As often as the name of Yak-strot was pronounced, the beast began to yell; and all the usual consequences ensued: but whenever his new friends presumed to mount him, he threw himself on his back, and rolled them in the kennel at the hazard of their lives.

One would imagine there was some leaven in the nature of Yak-strot, that soured all his subalterns who were natives of Nippon; for howsoever they promised all submission to his will before they were admitted into his motion, they no sooner found themselves acting characters in his drama, than they began to thwart him in his measures; so that he was plagued by those he had taken in, and persecuted by those he had driven out. The two great props which he had been at so much pains to provide, now failed him. Taycho was grown crazy, and could no longer manage the monster; and Quam-ba-cundono the Fatzman, whose authority had kept several puppets in awe, died about this period. These two circumstances were the more alarming, as Gotto-mio and his crew began to gain ground, not only in their endeavours to rouse the monster, but also in tampering with some of the acting puppets, to join their cabal and make head against their master. These exoterics grew so refractory, that when he tried to wheel them to the right, they turned to the left about; and, instead of joining hands in the dance of politicks, rapped their heads against each other with such violence, that the noise of the

collision was heard in the street; and if they had not been made of the hardest wood in Japan, some of them would certainly have been split in the encounter.

By this time Legion began to have some sense of it's own miserable condition. The effects of the yeast potions which it had drank so liberally from the hands of Taycho, now wore off. The fumes dispersed; the illusion vanished; the flatulent tumor of it's belly disappeared with innumerable explosions, leaving a hideous lankness, and such a canine appetite, as all the eatables of Japan could not satisfy. After having devoured the whole harvest, it yawned for more, and grew quite outrageous in it's hunger, threatening to feed on human flesh, if not plentifully supplied with other viands. In this dilemma Yak-strot convened the council of Twenty-eight, where, in consideration of the urgency of the case, it was resolved to suspend the law against the importation of foreign provisions, and open the ports of Japan for the relief of the blatant beast.

As this was vesting the Dairo with a dispensing power unknown to the constitution of Japan, it was thought necessary at the next assembly of the Quos and Quanbukus that constitute the legislature, to obtain a legal sanction for that extraordinary exercise of prerogative, which nothing but the *salus populi* could excuse. Upon this occasion it was diverting to see with what effrontery individuals changed their principles with their places. Taycho the Quo, happening to be in one of his lucid intervals, went to the assembly, supported by his two creatures Praff-fog, and another limb of the law, called Lley-nah, surnamed Gurg-grog, or Curle-mother; and this triumvirate, who had raised themselves from nothing to the first rank in the state, by vilifying and insulting the kingly power, and affirming that the Dairo was the slave of the people, now had the impudence to declare in the face of day, that in some cases the emperor's power was absolute, and that he had an inherent right to suspend and supersede the laws and ordinances of the legislature.

Mura-clami, who had been for some time eclipsed in his judicial capacity by the popularity of Praff-fog, did not fail to seize this opportunity of exposing the cha-

character of his upstart rival. Though he had been all his life an humble re-tainer to the prerogative, he now made a parade of patriotism, and in a tide of eloquence bore down all the flimsy arguments which the triumvirate advanced. He demonstrated the futility of their reasoning, from the express laws and customs of the empire; he expatiated on the pernicious tendency of their doctrine, and exhibited the inconsistency of their conduct in such colours, that they must have hid their heads in confusion, had they not happily conquered all sense of shame, and been well convinced that the majority of the assembly were not a whit more honest than themselves. Mura-clami enjoyed a momentary triumph; but his words made a very slight impression; for it was his misfortune to be a Ximian; and if his virtues had been more numerous than the hairs in his beard, this very circumstance would have shaved them clean away from the consideration of the audience.

Taycho, opening the flood-gates of his abuse, belpattered all that opposed him. Lley-nah, alias Curse-mother, swore that he had got into the wrong box; then turning to Praff-fog—'Brother Praff,' cried he, 'thou hast now let down thy trowlers, and everyascal in Japan will whip thy a—se!' Praff was afraid of the beast's resentment; but Taycho bestrid him like a Colossus, and he crept through between his legs into a place of safety. This was the last time that the Orator appeared in publick. Immediately after this occurrence, it was found necessary to confine him to a dark chamber, and Yak-strot was left to his own inventions.

In this dilemma he had recourse to the old expedient of changing hands; and as a prelude to this reform, made advances to Gotto-mio, whom he actually detached from the opposition, by providing his friends and dependants with lucrative offices, and promising to take no steps of consequence without his privity and approbation. A sop was at the same time thrown to Twitz-er; Zanti-fic, lulled with specious promises, discarded Toks the incendiary Bonze; Lob-kob signed a neutrality, and old Fika-kaka was deprived of the use of speech:—in a word, the ill cemented confederacy of Strot's exoteric foes fell asunder; and Legion had now no rage but the rage of hunger to be appeased.

But the Ximian favourite was still thwarted in his operations behind the curtain; for he had so often chopped and changed the figures that composed his motion, that they were all of different materials; so wretchedly sorted and so ill-toned, that when they came upon the scene, they produced nothing but discord and disorder.

The Japanese colony of Fatsissio had been settled above a century, and in the face of a thousand dangers and difficulties raised themselves to such consideration, that they consumed infinite quantities of the manufactures of Japan, for which they paid their mother-country in gold and silver, and precious drugs, the produce of their plantations. The advantages which Japan reaped from this traffick with her own colonists, almost equalled the amount of what she gained by her commerce with all the other parts of Asia. Twitz-er, when he managed the finances of Japan, had in his great wisdom planned, procured, and promulgated a law, saddling the Fatsissians with a grievous tax to answer the occasions of the Japanese government; an imposition which struck at the very vitals of their constitution, by which they were exempt from all burthens but such as they fitted for their own shoulders. They raised a mighty clamour at this innovation, in which they were joined by Legion, at that time under the influence of Taycho, who, in the assembly of the people, bitterly inveighed against the authors and abettors of such an arbitrary and tyrannical measure. Their reproach and execration did not stop at Twitz-er, but proceeded, as usual, to Yak-strot, who was the general butt at which all the arrows of slander, scurrility, and abuse, were levelled. The puppets with which he supplied the places of Twitz-er and his associates, in order to recommend themselves to Legion, and perhaps, with a view to mortify the favourite, who had patronized the Fatsissian tax, insisted upon withdrawing this imposition, which was accordingly abrogated, to the no small disgrace and contempt of the law-givers: but when these new ministers were turned out, to make way for Taycho and his friends, the interest of the Fatsissians was again abandoned. Even the Orator himself declaimed against them with an unembarrassed countenance, after they had raised statues to him as their friend and patron; and measures were taken



taken to make them feel all the severity of an abject dependance upon the legislature of Japan. Finally, Gotto-mio acceded to this system, which he had formerly approved in conjunction with Twitz-er; and preparations were made for using compulsory measures, should the colonists refuse to submit with a good grace.

The Fatissians, far from acquiescing in these proceedings, resolved to defend to the last extremity those liberties which they had hitherto preserved; and, as a proof of their independence, agreed among themselves to renounce all the superfluities with which they had so long been furnished, at a vast expence, from the manufactures of Japan, since that nation had begun to act towards them with all the cruelty of a step-mother. It was amazing to see and to hear how Legion raved, and flabbered, and snapped it's multitudinous jaws in the streets of Meaco, when it understood that the Fatissians were determined to live on what their own country afforded. They were represented and reviled as ruffians, barbarians, and unnatural monsters, who clapped the dagger to the breast of their indulgent mother, in presuming to save themselves the expence of those superfluities, which, by the bye, her cruel impositions had left them no money to purchase. Nothing was heard in Japan but threats of punishing those ungrateful colonists with whips and scorpions.

For this purpose, troops were assembled and fleets equipped; and the blatant beast yawned with impatient expectation of being drenched with the blood of it's fellow-subjects.

Yak-strot was seized with horror at the prospect of such extremities; for, to give the devil his due, his disposition was neither arbitrary nor cruel; but he had been hurried by evil counsellors into a train of false politicks, the consequences of which he did not foresee. He now summoned council after council to deliberate upon conciliatory expedients; but found the motley crew so divided by self-interest, faction, and mutual rancour, that no consistent plan could be formed: all was nonsense, clamour, and contradiction. The Ximian favourite now wished all his puppets at the devil, and secretly cursed the hour in which he first undertook the motion. He even fell sick of chagrin, and resolved, in good earnest, to withdraw himself intirely from the political helm, which he was now convinced he had no talents to guide. In the mean time, he tried to find some temporary alleviation to the evils occasioned by the monstrous incongruity of the members and materials that composed his administration. But before any effectual measures could be taken, his evil genius, ever active, brewed up a new storm in another quarter, which had well nigh swept him and all his projects into the gulph of perdition.

F I N I S.





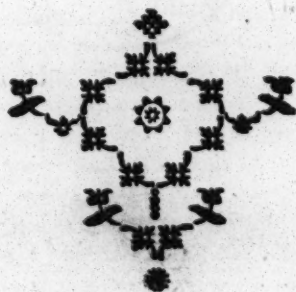
THE  
SINCERE HURON.

A TRUE HISTORY,

TRANSLATED FROM

THE FRENCH OF M. DE VOLTAIRE,

BY FRANCIS ASHMORE, ESQ.



LONDON:

Printed for HARRISON and Co. N<sup>o</sup> 18, Paternoster Row.

MDCCLXXXVI.

SINGER HURON

A TRUE HISTORY

OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

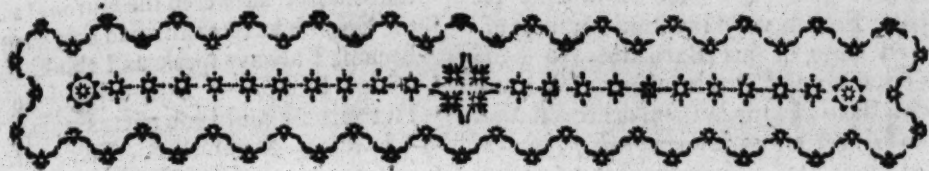


1866

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE





T H E

## S I N C E R E   H U R O N .

### C H A P. I.



ONE day, St. Dunstan, an Irishman by nation, and a saint by trade, quitted Ireland, riding on a small mountain, which took it's course towards the coast of France, and set his faintship down in the bay of St. Malo's: as soon as he had alighted, he gave his blessing to the mountain; which, after some profound bows, politely took it's leave, and returned to it's former situation.

On this spot, St. Dunstan laid the foundation of a small priory, and gave it the name of the Priory Mountain, which it still retains, as every one knows.

In the year 1689, on the fifteenth day of July, in the evening, the abbot Kerkabon, prior of our Lady of the Mountain, happened to take the air along the shore with his sister. The prior, now a little declined in age, was a very good pastor, greatly beloved by his neighbours, as he had formerly been by their wives. What added most to the respect paid him was, that among all his clerical neighbours, he only could walk to bed after supper: he was tolerably read in theology; and, when weary of reading St. Augustine, refreshed himself with Rabelais; so that all the world spoke well of him.

Miss Kerkabon, who had never been married, notwithstanding her hearty wishes to be so, had preserved a freshness of complexion in her forty-fifth year: her character was that of a good and sensible woman; she was fond of pleasure, and was a devotee.

As they walked, the prior, looking on the sea, said to his sister—' It was here, ' alas! that our poor brother embarked ' with our dear sister-in-law Madam ' Kerkabon, his wife, on board the ' Swallow frigate, twenty years ago, to ' serve the king in Canada. Had he ' not been killed, we might probably see ' him again.'

' Do you believe,' says Miss Kerkabon, ' that our sister-in-law was eat ' by the Cherokees, as we have been ' told?'—' Certain it is, had they not ' eat her, she would have come back. I ' shall grieve for her all my life: she was ' a charming woman; and our brother, ' who had a great deal of understanding, ' would no doubt have obtained a large ' fortune.'

They were thus expressing themselves, with mutual tenderness, when they perceived a small ship enter the bay of Rence with the tide: the vessel was from England, and came to sell provisions. The crew instantly leaped on shore, without taking any sort of notice of the prior, or Miss his sister, who were both shocked at the little attention shewn them.

Not such was the behaviour of a well-formed youth; who, darting himself over the heads of his companions, stood suddenly before Miss Kerkabon. Unaccustomed to bowing, he made her a sign with his head. His figure and his dress attracted the notice of brother and sister: his head was uncovered, and his legs were bare; instead of shoes, he wore a kind of sandals; his long hair flowed in tresses from his head; a small close doublet displayed the symmetry of his shape; and he had a sweet and martial air. He held

in

in one hand a small bottle of Barbadoes water, and in the other a bag which contained a goblet and some sea-biscuit. He spoke French very intelligibly; and offered some of his Barbadoes to Miss Kerkabon and her brother. He drank with them; he made them drink a second time; and all with an air of such native simplicity, as quite charmed them. They offered him their service; and asked him who he was, and whither he was going. The young man answered, that he knew not where he should go; that he had some curiosity; that he had a desire to see the coast of France; that he had seen it, and should return.

The prior, judging by his accent that he was not an Englishman, took the liberty of asking what countryman he was. 'I am a Huron,' answered the youth.

Miss Kerkabon, amazed and enchanted to see a Huron, who had behaved so politely to her, begged the young man's company to supper: he complied immediately, and all three went together to the priory of our Lady of the Mountain. The short and round Miss devoured him with her little eyes, and kept saying to her brother—'This tall lad has a complexion of lilies and roses! What a fine skin he has, for a Huron!'—'Very true, sister,' says the prior. She put a hundred questions, one after another, and the traveller answered them all very pertinently.

The report was soon spread that they had a Huron at the priory; and all the genteel company of the country came to supper. The abbot of St. Yves came with Miss his sister, a fine, handsome, well-educated girl: the bailiff, the tax-gatherer, and their wives, came all together. The foreigner was seated between Miss Kerkabon and Miss St. Yves; the company eyed him with admiration; they all questioned him together. This did not confound the Huron; he seemed to have taken Lord Bolingbroke's motto, '*Nihil admirari*;' but, at length, wearied with so much noise, he told them, in a sweet but serious tone—'Gentlemen, in my country, one talks after another; how can I answer you, if you will not allow me to hear you?' Reasoning brings people to a momentary reflection: they were all silent. Mr. Bailiff, who always made the most of a foreigner wherever he found him, and who was the most famous man for asking questions in the province, opening a mouth

of half a foot, began: 'Sir, what is your name?'—'I have always been called the Sincere,' answered the Huron; 'and the English have confirmed that name, because I always speak as I think, and act as I like.'—'But, being born a Huron, how could you get to England?'—'I was carried thither. Being made prisoner by the English, after some resistance, the English, who love brave people, because they are as brave and as honest as we, proposed my either returning to my family, or going with them to England. I accepted the latter, having naturally an inclination for travelling.'—'But, Sir,' says the bailiff, with his usual gravity, 'how could you think of abandoning your father and mother?'—'I never knew either father or mother,' says the foreigner. This affected the company; they all repeated—'Neither father nor mother!'—'We will supply their place,' says the mistress of the house to her brother the prior: 'how interesting is the character of this Huron gentleman!' He thanked her with a noble and proud cordiality, but gave her to understand, that he wanted not the assistance of any one.

'I perceive, Mr. Huron,' said the huge bailiff, 'that you talk better French than can be expected from an Indian.'—'A Frenchman,' answered he, 'whom they had made prisoner when I was a boy, and with whom I contracted a great friendship, instructed me. I presently learn what I have an inclination to learn. When I came to Plymouth, I met with one of those French refugees, whom you, I know not why, call Hugonots: he improved my knowledge of your language; and, as soon as I could express myself intelligibly, I came to see your country, because I like the French well enough, when they do not ask too many questions.'

Notwithstanding this slight hint, the abbé of St. Yves asked him, which of the three languages pleased him best, the Huron, English, or French. 'The Huron, to be sure,' answered he. 'Is it possible!' cries Miss Kerkabon; 'I always thought the French was the first of all languages, after that of Low-Britany.'

Then all were eager to know how, in Huron, they asked for *snuff*. He replied—'*Taya*.'—'What signifies *to eat*?'—'*Essinten*.' Miss Kerkabon was

tient to know how they called, *so much*  
make  
love.





Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co April 29. 1786.





love.' He informed her—'Trovan-der;' and insisted, not without reason, that these words were well worth their synonyms in French and English. *Tro-vander*, especially, seemed very pretty to the whole company. The prior, who had in his library a Huron grammar, which had been given him by the reverend father Sagar Theodat, a Recollect and famous missionary, rose from the table to consult it. He returned quite panting with tenderness and joy, and acknowledged the foreigner for a true Huron. The company speculated a little on the multiplicity of languages; and all agreed that, had it not been for the affair of the Tower of Babel, the whole world would have spoke French.

The inquisitive bailiff, who till now had entertained some suspicions of the foreigner, conceived the deepest respect for him; he spoke to him with more civility than before, but the Huron took no notice of it.

Miss St. Yves was very curious to know how the Hurons made love. 'By performing great actions to please objects which resemble you.' All the company admired and applauded; Miss St. Yves blushed, and was extremely well pleased. Miss Kerkabon blushed likewise, but was not so well pleased: she was a little piqued that this gallantry was not addressed to her; but she was so good-natured, that her affection for the Huron was not at all diminished. She asked him, with great complacency, how many mistresses he had had at home. 'Only one,' answered the foreigner; 'Miss Abacaba, the good friend of my dear nurse. The reed is not more straight, the ermine is not more white, no lamb is meeker, no eagle fiercer, nor any stag swifter, than was my Abacaba. She one day pursued a hare not above fifty leagues from my habitation: a base Algonquin, who dwells a hundred leagues farther, took the hare from her. I was told of it; I ran thither, and one stroke of my club levelled him with the ground; I brought him to the feet of my mistress bound hand and foot. Abacaba's parents were for eating him, but I always had a disrelish for such kind of dishes; I therefore set him at liberty, and made him my friend. Abacaba was so pleased with my conduct, that she preferred me to all her lovers. Alas! how would she continue to love me, had she not been devoured

by a bear! I slew the bear, and for a long time wore his hide; but that has not consoled me.'

Miss St. Yves felt a secret pleasure at hearing that Abacaba had been his only mistress, and that she was no more; yet she understood not the cause of her own pleasure. Every eye was rivetted on the Huron, and he was highly applauded by the whole company for delivering an Algonquin from the spits of his countrymen.

The inconsiderate bailiff was now grown so violent, that he even proceeded to ask the Huron what religion he was of; whether he had chosen the English, the French, or that of the Hugonots? 'I am of my own religion,' said he, 'just as you are of yours.'—'Lord!' cried Miss Kerkabon, 'I see already that the profane English have not once thought of baptizing him!'—'Good God!' said Miss St. Yves, 'how is it possible! how is it possible that the Hurons should not be Roman Catholics! Have not those reverend fathers the Jesuits converted all the world?' The Huron assured her, that in his country nobody was converted, that no true American had ever changed his opinion, and that there was not in their language a word to express inconstancy.

These last words extremely pleased Miss St. Yves. 'Oh! we'll baptize him, we'll baptize him,' said Miss Kerkabon to the prior; 'you shall have that honour, my dear brother, and I will be his god-mother: the abbot St. Yves shall present him at the font; it will make a fine appearance; it will be talked off over all Britany, and do us the greatest honour.' The company were all of the same mind with the mistress of the house; they all cried—'We'll baptize him.' The Huron interrupted them, by saying, that in England every one was allowed to live as he pleased. He rather shewed some aversion to the proposal which was made, and could not help telling them, that the laws of the Hurons were to the full as good as those of Low-Britany. He finished with saying, that he should return the next day. The bottles grew empty, and the company went to bed.

After the Huron had been conducted to his room, Miss Kerkabon and her friend Miss St. Yves could not help peeping through the key-hole, to see how a Huron went to bed: they saw that

he spread the blankets on the floor, and laid himself down upon them in the finest attitude in the world.

## CHAP. II.

### THE HURON, CALLED THE INGENU, ACKNOWLEDGED BY HIS RELATIONS.

**T**HE Ingenu, according to custom, awoke with the sun, at the crowing of the cock, which is called in England and Huronia, 'the trumpet of the day.' He did not imitate what is stiled good company, who languish in the bed of indolence till the sun has performed half his daily career, unable to sleep, but not disposed to rise, and lose so many precious hours in that doubtful state between life and death, and who, nevertheless, complain that life is too short.

He had already traversed two or three leagues, and killed fifteen brace of game, with shot only, when, upon his return, he found the prior of our Lady of the Mountain, with his discreet sister, walking in their night-caps in their little garden. He presented them with the spoils of his morning labour, and taking from his bosom a kind of little talisman, which he constantly wore about his neck, he intreated them to accept of it as an acknowledgment for the kind reception they had given him. 'It is,' said he, 'the most valuable thing I am possessed of: I have been assured that I shall always be happy whilst I carry this little toy about me; and I give it you that you may be always happy.'

The prior and Miss smiled with pity at the frankness of the Ingenu. This present consisted of two little portraits very ill done, tied together with a greasy string.

Miss Kerkabon asked him if there were any painters in Huronia? 'No,' replied the Ingenu, 'I had this curiosity from my nurse; her husband had obtained it by conquest, in stripping some of the French of Canada, who had made war upon us; this is all I know of the matter.'

The prior looked attentively upon these pictures, whilst he changed colour, his hands trembled, and he seemed much affected. 'By our Lady of the Mountain,' he cried out, 'I believe these to be the faces of the Captain, my bro-

ther, and his lady.' Miss, after having consulted them with the like emotion, thought the same. They were both struck with astonishment and joy blended with grief: they both melted, they both wept, their hearts throbbed, and during their disorder, the pictures were interchanged between them at least twenty times in a second. They seemed to devour the Huron's pictures with their eyes; they asked one after another, and even both at once, at what time, in what place, and how these miniatures fell into the hands of his nurse? They reckoned and computed the time from the Captain's departure; they recollected having received advice, that he had penetrated as far as the country of the Hurons; and from that time they had never heard any thing more of him.

The Huron had told them, that he had never known either father or mother. The prior, who was a man of sense, observed, that he had a little beard, and he knew very well that the Hurons never had any. His chin was somewhat hairy; he was therefore the son of an European. 'My brother and sister-in-law were never seen after the expedition against the Hurons, in 1669. My nephew must then have been sucking at the breast; the Huron nurse has preserved his life, and been a mother to him.' At length, after a hundred questions and answers, the prior and his sister concluded that the Huron was their own nephew. They embraced him, whilst tears streamed from their eyes; and the Huron laughed to think, that an Indian should be nephew to a prior of Lower Britany.

All the company went down stairs. Mr. De St. Yves, who was a great physiognomist, compared the two pictures with the Huron's countenance. They observed, very skilfully, that he had the mother's eyes, the forehead and nose of the late Captain Kerkabon, and the cheeks common to both.

Miss St. Yves, who had never seen either father or mother, was strenuously of opinion, that the young man had a perfect resemblance of them. They all admired the providence and concatenation of events of this world. In a word, they were so persuaded, so convinced of the birth of the Huron, that he himself consented to be the prior's nephew, saying, that he would as soon have him for his uncle as another.

He



He went to return thanks in the church of our Lady of the Mountain; whilst the Huron, with an air of indifference, amused himself with drinking in the house.

The English who had brought him over, and who were ready to set sail, came to tell him that it was time to depart. 'Probably,' said he to them, 'you have not met with any of your uncles or aunts; I shall stay here, go you back to Plymouth: I give you all my cloaths, as I have no longer occasion for any thing in this world, since I am the nephew of a prior.' The English set sail, without being at all concerned whether the Huron had any relations or not in Lower Britany.

After the uncles, the aunt, and the company, had sung *Te Deum*; after the bailiff had once more overwhelmed the Huron with questions; after they had exhausted all their astonishment, joy, and tenderness; the prior of the Mountain and the Abbé of St. Yves, concluded, that the Huron should be baptized with all possible expedition. But the case was very different with a tall robust Indian of twenty-two, and an infant who is regenerated without his knowing any thing of the matter. It was necessary to instruct him, and this appeared difficult; for the Abbé of St. Yves supposed, that a man who was not born in France could not be endued with common sense.

The prior indeed observed to the company, that though, in fact, the ingenuous gentleman, his nephew, was not so fortunate as to be born in Lower Britany, he was not, upon that account, any way deficient in sense; which might be concluded from all his answers; and that, doubtless, nature had greatly favoured him, as well on his father as his mother's side.

He was then asked, if he had ever read any book? He said, he had read Rabelais translated into English, and some passages in Shakespeare, which he knew by heart; that these books belonged to the captain, on board of whose ship he came from America to Plymouth; and that he was very well pleased with them. The bailiff failed not putting many questions to him concerning these books. 'I acknowledge,' said the Huron, 'I thought I understood some things, but not the whole.'

The Abbé of St. Yves reflected, upon this discourse, that it was in this manner

he had always read, and that most men read no other way. 'You have,' said he to the Huron, 'doubtless read the Bible?'—'Never, Mr. Abbé: it was not among the Captain's books; I never heard it mentioned.'—'This is the way of those cursed English,' said Miss Kerkabon; 'they mind more a piece of Shakespeare's, a plumb-pudding, or a bottle of rum, than they do the Pentateuch. For this reason they have never converted any Indians in America. They are certainly cursed by God, and we shall conquer Jamaica and Virginia from them in a very short time.'

Be this as it may, the most skilful taylor in all St. Malo was sent for, to dress the Huron from head to foot. The company separated, and the bailiff went elsewhere to display his inquisitiveness. Miss St. Yves, in parting, returned several times to observe the young stranger, and made him lower curtesies than ever she did any one in her life.

The bailiff, before he took his leave, presented to Miss Yves a stupid dolt of a son, just come from the college; but she scarce looked at him, so much was she taken up with the politeness of the Huron.

### CHAP. III.

#### THE HURON CONVERTED.

THE prior finding that he was somewhat advanced in years, and that God had sent him a nephew for his consolation, took it into his head that he would resign his benefice in his favour, if he succeeded in baptizing him, and of making him enter into orders.

The Huron had an excellent memory. The firmness of the organs of Lower Britany, strengthened by the climate of Canada, had made his head so vigorous, that when he was struck upon it, he scarce felt it; and when anything was graven in it, nothing could efface it; nothing had ever escaped his memory. His conception was the more sure and lively, by reason that his infancy not having been loaden with useless fooleries, which overwhelm ours, things entered into his head without being clouded. The prior at length resolved to make him read the New Testament; the Huron devoured it with

great pleasure; but not knowing at what time, or in what country, all the adventures related in this book had happened, he did not in the least doubt that the scene of action had been in Lower Britany; and he swore, that he would cut off Caiphas and Pontius Pilate's ears, if ever he met those scoundrels.

His uncle, charmed with these good dispositions, soon brought him to the point; he applauded his zeal, but at the same time acquainted him, that it was needless, as these people had been dead upwards of 1690 years. The Huron soon got the whole book by heart. He sometimes proposed difficulties that greatly embarrassed the prior. He was often obliged to consult the Abbé of St. Yves, who not knowing what to answer, brought a Jesuit of Lower Britany to perfect the conversion of the Huron.

Grace, at length, operated; and the Huron promised to become a Christian. He did not doubt but that the first step towards it was circumcision: 'For,' said he, 'I do not find in the book that was put into my hands, a single person who was not circumcised; it is therefore evident that I must make a sacrifice of my prepuce; and the sooner the better.' He sent for the surgeon of the village, and desired him to perform the operation, thinking thereby greatly to rejoice Miss Kerkabon and all the company, when the thing was once done. The surgeon, who had never performed such an operation, acquainted the family, who screamed out. The good Kerkabon trembled lest her nephew, whom she knew to be resolute and expeditious, should perform the operation unskilfully himself, and that fatal consequences should ensue, in which the ladies, through the goodness of their hearts, are always concerned.

The prior rectified the Huron's mistake, representing to him, that circumcision was no longer in fashion; that baptism was much more gentle and salutary; that the law of grace was not like the law of rigour. The Huron, who had much good sense, and was well disposed, disputed, but soon acknowledged his error, which seldom happens in Europe among disputants; in a word, he promised to let himself be baptized whenever they pleased.

It was necessary that he should go previously to confession; and this was the greatest difficulty to surmount. The

Huron had constantly in his pocket the book his uncle gave him. He did not there find that a single apostle had ever been confessed, and this made him very restive. The prior silenced him, by shewing him, in the epistle of St. James the Minor, these words: '*Confess your sins to one another.*' The Huron was mute, and confessed his sins to a Recolet. When he had done, he dragged the Recolet from the confessional chair, and seizing him with a vigorous arm, placed himself in his seat, making the Recolet kneel before him; 'Come, my friend, it is said, *we must confess our sins to one another*; I have related to you my sins, and you shall not stir till you recount yours.' Whilst he said this, he fixed his great knee against his adversary's stomach. The Recolet roared and groaned, till he made the church re-echo. The noise brought people to his assistance, who found the catechumen cuffing the monk in the name of St. James the Minor. The joy diffused at the baptizing at once a Low-Breton, a Huron, and an Englishman, surmounted all these singularities. There were even some theologians of opinion, that confession was not necessary, as baptism supplied the place of every thing.

The bishop of St. Malo was chosen for the ceremony, who, flattered, as may be believed, at baptizing a Huron, arrived in a pompous equipage, followed by his clergy. Miss St. Yves put on her best gown to bless God, and sent for a hair-dresser from St. Malo's, to shine at the ceremony. The inquisitive bailiff brought the whole country with him. The church was magnificently ornamented. But when the Huron was summoned to attend the baptismal font, he was not to be found.

His uncle and aunt sought for him every where. It was imagined he was gone a hunting, according to his usual custom. Every one convened to the festival, searched the neighbouring woods and villages; but no intelligence could be obtained of the Huron. They began to fear he was returned to England. Some remembered that he had said, he was very fond of that country. The prior and his sister were persuaded that nobody was baptized there, and were troubled for their nephew's soul. The bishop was confounded, and ready to return home; the prior and the Abbé of St. Yves were in despair; the bailiff in-

terro-



interrogated all passengers with his usual gravity; Miss Kerkabon melted into tears; Miss St. Yves did not weep, but she vented such deep sighs, as seemed to testify her sacramental disposition. They were walking in this melancholy mood, among the willows and reeds upon the banks of the little river Rence, when they perceived, in the middle of the stream, a large figure, tolerably white, with its two arms across its breast. They screamed out and ran away. But, curiosity being stronger than any other consideration, they slipped softly amongst the reeds; and when they were pretty certain they could not be seen, they were willing to decry what it was.

## C H A P. IV.

## THE HURON BAPTIZED.

THE prior and the abbé having run to the river side, they asked the Huron what he was doing? 'In faith,' said he, 'gentlemen, I am waiting to be baptized. I have been an hour in the water up to my neck, and I do not think it is civil to let me be quite spent.'—'My dear nephew,' said the prior to him tenderly, 'this is not the way of being baptized in Lower-Britany; put on your cloaths, and come with us.' Miss St. Yves, listening to the discourse, said, in a whisper to her companion, 'Miss, do you think he will put his cloaths on in such a hurry?'

The Huron, however, replied to the prior—'You will not make me believe now as you did before; I have studied very well since, and I am very certain there is no other kind of baptism. The eunuch of Queen Candace was baptized in a rivulet. I defy you to shew me, in the book you gave me, that people were ever baptized any other way. I either will not be baptized at all, or the ceremony shall be performed in the river.' It was in vain to remonstrate to him that customs were altered. He was headstrong, for he was both a Breton and a Huron. He always recurred to the eunuch of Queen Candace. And though Miss and his aunt, who had observed him through the willows, were authorised to tell him, that he had no right to quote such a man; they, nevertheless, said nothing;—so great was their discretion. The bishop came him-

self to speak to him, which was a great thing; but he could not prevail; the Huron disputed with the bishop.

'Shew me,' said he, 'in the book my uncle gave me, one single man that was not baptized in a river, and I will do whatever you please.'

His aunt, in despair, had observed, that the first time her nephew bowed, he made a much lower bow to Miss St. Yves than any one in the company; that he had not even saluted the bishop with so much respect, blended with cordiality, as he did that agreeable young lady. She thought it advisable to apply to her in this great embarrassment; she entreated her to use her influence to engage the Huron to be baptized according to the custom of Britany; thinking that her nephew could never be a Christian if he persisted in being christened in the stream.

Miss St. Yves blushed at the secret pleasure she felt in being appointed to execute so important a commission. She modestly approached the Huron, and squeezing his hand in quite a noble manner, she said to him—'What, will you do nothing to please me?' and in uttering these words, she raised her eyes from a downcast look into a graceful tenderness. 'Oh! yes, Miss, every thing you require, all that you command, whether it is to be baptized in water, fire, or blood;—there is no thing I can refuse you.' Miss St. Yves had the glory of effecting in two words, what neither the importunities of the prior, the repeated interrogations of the bailiff, nor the reasoning of the bishop, could effect. She was sensible of her triumph; but she was not yet sensible of its utmost latitude.

Baptism was administered and received with all the decency, magnificence, and propriety possible. His uncle and aunt yielded to the Abbé St. Yves and his sister the favour of supporting the Huron upon the font. Miss St. Yves's eyes sparkled with joy at being a god-mother. She was ignorant how much this high title subjected her; she accepted the honour without being acquainted with its fatal consequences.

As there never was any ceremony that was not followed by a good dinner, the company took their seats at table after the christening. The humourists of Lower Britany said, they did not chuse to have their wine baptized. The prior said, that wine, according to Solomon, che-

cherished the heart of man. The bishop added, that the patriarch Judah ought to have tied his ass-colt to the vine, and steeped his cloak in the blood of the grape; and that he was sorry the same could not be done in Lower-Brittany, to which God had not allotted vines. Every one endeavoured to say a good thing upon the Huron's christening, and strokes of gallantry to the god-mother. The bailiff, ever interrogating, asked the Huron, if he was faithful in keeping his promises? 'How,' said he, 'can I fail keeping them, since I have deposited them in the hands of Miss St. Yves?'

The Huron grew warm; he had drank plentifully his god-mother's health. 'If,' said he, 'I had been baptized with your hand, I feel that the water which was poured upon the nape of my neck would have burnt me.' The bailiff thought this was too poetical, being ignorant that allegory is a familiar figure in Canada. But his god-mother was very well pleased.

The Huron had, at his baptism, received the name of Hercules. The bishop of St. Malo's frequently enquired who was this tutelar saint, whom he had never heard mentioned before. The Jesuit, who was very learned, told him, that he was a saint who had wrought twelve miracles. There was a thirteenth, which was well worth the other twelve, but it was not proper for a Jesuit to mention it: this was the transforming fifty girls into women in one night's time. A wag, who was present, related this miracle very feelingly. The ladies all cast down their eyes, and judged, from the physiognomy of the Huron, that he was worthy of the saint whose name he bore.

## CHAP. V.

### THE HURON IN LOVE.

**I**T must be acknowledged, that from the time of this christening and this dinner, Miss St. Yves passionately wished that the bishop would make her again an assistant with Mr. Hercules in some other fine ceremony. However, as she was well brought up, and very modest, she did not dare entirely agree with herself in regard to these tender sentiments; but if a look, a word, a gesture, a

thought, escaped from her, she concealed it admirably well under the veil of modesty. She was tender, lively, and sagacious.

As soon as the bishop was gone, the Huron and Miss St. Yves met together, without thinking they were in search of one another. They spoke together without premeditating what they said. The sincere youth immediately declared, that he loved her with all his heart; and that the beauteous Abacaba, with whom he had been desperately in love in his own country, was far inferior to her. Miss replied with her usual modesty, that the prior her uncle, and the lady her aunt, should be spoken to immediately; and that, on her side, she would say a few words to her dear brother the Abbé of St. Yves, and that she flattered herself it would meet with no opposition.

The youth replied, that the consent of any one was entirely superfluous; that it appeared to him extremely ridiculous to go and ask others what they were to do; that when two parties were agreed, there was no occasion for a third to accomplish their union. 'I never consult any one,' said he, 'when I have a mind to breakfast, to hunt, or to sleep: I am sensible, that in love it is not amiss to have the consent of the person whom we wish for; but as I am neither in love with my uncle nor my aunt, I have no occasion to address myself to them in this affair; and if you will believe me, you may equally dispense with the advice of the Abbé of St. Yves.'

It may be supposed that the young lady exerted all the delicacy of her wit, to bring her Huron to the terms of good-breeding. She was even angry, but soon softened. In a word, it cannot be said how this conversation would have ended, if the declining day had not brought the abbé to conduct his sister home. The Huron left his uncle and aunt to rest, being somewhat fatigued with the ceremony and their long dinner. He passed part of the night in writing verses in the Huron language, upon his well-beloved; for it should be known, there is no country where love has not rendered lovers poets.

The next day his uncle spoke to him in the following manner, after breakfast, in the presence of Miss Kerkabon, who was quite melted at the discourse. 'Heaven be praised, that you have the honour,



honour, my dear nephew, to be a Christian of Lower-Britany! But this is not enough; I am somewhat advanced in years: my brother has left only a little bit of ground, which is a very small matter; I have a good priory. If you will only make yourself sub-deacon, as I hope you will, I will resign my priory in your favour; and you will live quite at your ease, after having been the consolation of my old age.

The Huron replied, 'Uncle, much good may do you; live as long as you can. I do not know what it is to be a sub-deacon, or what it is to resign; but every thing will be agreeable to me, provided I have Miss St. Yves at my disposal.'—'Good God, nephew! what is it you say? You love that beautiful young lady to distraction!'—'Yes, uncle.'—'Alas! nephew, it is impossible you should ever marry her.'—'It is very possible, uncle; for she did not only squeeze my hand when she left me, but she promised she would ask me in marriage: I certainly shall wed her.'—'It is impossible, I tell you, she is your god-mother: it is a dreadful sin for a god-mother to give her hand to her god-son; it is contrary to all laws human and divine.'—'Why the deuce, uncle, should it be forbidden to marry one's god-mother, when she is young and handsome? I did not find, in the book you gave me, that it was wrong to marry young women who assisted at christenings. I perceive, every day, that an infinite number of things are done here which are not in your book, and nothing is done that is said in it. I must acknowledge to you, that this astonishes and displeases me. If I am deprived of the charming Miss St. Yves on account of my baptism, I give you notice, that I will run away with her and unbaptize myself.'

The prior was confounded; his sister wept. 'My dear brother,' said she, 'our nephew must not damn himself; our holy father the Pope can give him a dispensation, and then he may be happy, in a christian-like manner, with the person he likes.' The ingenuous Hercules embraced his aunt: 'For goodness sake,' said he, 'who is this charming man, who is so gracious as to promote the amours of girls and

boys? I will go and speak to him this instant.'

The dignity and character of the Pope was explained to him, and the Huron was still more astonished than before.—'My dear uncle,' said he, 'there is not a word of all this in your book; I have travelled, and am acquainted with the sea; we are now upon the coast of the ocean, and I must leave Miss St. Yves to go and ask leave to have her, of a man who lives towards the Mediterranean, 400 leagues from hence, and whose language I do not understand! This is most incomprehensibly ridiculous! But I will go first to the Abbé of St. Yves, who lives only a league from hence; and I promise you, I will wed my mistress before night.'

Whilst he was yet speaking, the bailiff entered, and, according to his usual custom, asked him, where he was going? 'I am going to be married,' replied the ingenuous Hercules, running along; and in less than a quarter of an hour he was with his charming dear mistress, who was still asleep. 'Ah! my dear brother,' said Miss Kerkabon to the prior, 'you will never make a sub-deacon of our nephew.'

The bailiff was very much displeased at this journey; for he laid claim to Miss Yves in favour of his son, who was a still greater and more insupportable fool than his father.

## CHAP. VI.

THE HURON FLIES TO HIS MISTRESS,  
AND BECOMES QUITE FURIOUS.

NO sooner had the ingenuous Hercules reached the house, than having asked an old servant which was his mistress's apartment, he forced open the door, which was badly fastened, and flew towards the bed. Miss St. Yves, startled out of her sleep, cried—'Ah! what, is it you! Stop, what are you about?' He answered—'I am going to marry; and he would actually have consummated the nuptials, if she had not opposed him with all the decency of a young lady so well educated.'

The Huron did not understand railery, he found all these evasions extremely impertinent. 'Miss Abacaba, my first mistress, did not behave in this manner; you

• you have no honesty; you promised  
• me marriage, and you will not marry;  
• this is being deficient in the first laws  
• of honour; I will teach you to keep  
• your word, and I will replace you in  
• the path of virtue.'

He possessed an intrepid masculine virtue, worthy of his patron Hercules, whose name was given him at his christening; and he was going to practise it in all its latitude, when the alarming outcries of the lady, more discreetly virtuous, brought the sagacious Abbé de St. Yves, with his housekeeper, an old devotee servant, and the parish-priest. The sight of these moderated the courage of the assailant. 'Good God!' cried the abbé, 'my dear neighbour, what are you about?'—'My duty,' replied the young man; 'I am fulfilling my promises, which are sacred.'

Miss St. Yves adjusted herself, not without blushing. The lover was conducted into another apartment. The abbé remonstrated to him the enormity of his conduct. The Huron defended himself upon the privileges of the law of nature, which he understood perfectly well. The abbé maintained, that the law positive should be allowed all its advantages; and that without conventions agreed on between men, the law of nature would almost constantly be nothing more than natural felony. Notaries, priests, witnesses, contracts, and dispensations, are absolutely necessary. The ingenuous Hercules made answer with the observation constantly adopted by savages—'You are then very great rogues, since so many precautions are necessary.'

This remark somewhat disconcerted the abbé: 'There are, I acknowledge, libertines and cheats among us, and there would be as many among the Hurons, if they were united in a great city; but, at the same time, we have discreet, honest, enlightened people; and these are the men who have framed the laws. The more upright we are, the more readily we should submit to them, as we thereby set an example to the vicious, who respect those bounds which virtue has given herself.'

This answer struck the Huron. It has already been observed, that his mind was well disposed. He was softened by flattering speeches, which promised him hopes; all the world is caught in these snares: and Miss St. Yves herself ap-

peared, after having been at her toilet. Every thing was now conducted with the utmost good breeding. But notwithstanding this decorum, the sparkling eyes of the ingenuous Hercules constantly made his mistress blush, and the company tremble.

It was with much difficulty he was sent back to his relations. It was again necessary for the charming Miss St. Yves to interfere; the more she found the influence she had upon him, the more she loved him. She made him depart, and was much afflicted at it: at length, when he was gone, the abbé, who was not only Miss St. Yves's elder brother by many years, but was also her guardian, endeavoured to wean his ward from the importunities of this dreadful lover. He went to consult the bailiff, who had always intended his son for the abbé's sister, and advised him to place the poor girl in a convent. This was a terrible stroke: such a measure would, to a young lady unaffected with any particular passion, have been inexpressible punishment; but to a love-sick maid, equally sagacious and tender, it was despair itself.

When the ingenuous Hercules returned to the prior's, he related all that had happened with his usual frankness. He met with the same remonstrances, which had some effect upon his mind, though none upon his senses; but the next day, when he wanted to return to his mistress, in order to reason with her upon the law of nature and the law of convention, the bailiff acquainted him, with insulting joy, that she was in a convent. 'Very well,' said he, 'I'll go and reason with her in this convent.'—'That cannot be,' said the bailiff; and then entered into a long explanation of the nature of a convent, telling him, that this word was derived from *conventus*, in the Latin, which signifies 'an assembly;' and the Huron could not comprehend, why he might not be admitted into this assembly. As soon as he was informed that this assembly was a kind of prison, in which girls were shut up; a shocking institution, unknown in Huronia and England; he became as furious as was his patron Hercules, when Euritus, king of Oechalia, not less cruel than the abbé of St. Yves, refused him the beautiful Iola, his daughter, not inferior in beauty to the abbé's sister. He was upon the point of going to set

fire



fire to the convent, to carry off his mistress, or be burnt with her. Miss Kerkabon, terrified at such a declaration, gave up all hopes of ever seeing her nephew a sub-deacon; and weeping, said—'The devil was certainly in him since he had been christened.'

## C H A P. VII.

## THE HURON REPULSES THE ENGLISH.

THE ingenuous Hercules walked towards the sea-coast, wrapped in a deep and gloomy melancholy, with his double-charged fusée upon his shoulder, and his cutlafs by his side, shooting now and then a bird, and often tempted to shoot himself; but he had still some affection for life, for the sake of his dear mistress; by turns execrating his uncle and aunt, all Lower Britany, and his christening—then blessing them, as they had introduced him to the knowledge of her he loved. He resolved upon going to burn the convent, and he stopt short for fear of burning his mistress. The waves of the Channel are not more agitated by the easterly and westerly winds, than was his heart by so many contrary emotions.

He was walking very fast along, without knowing whither he was going, when he heard the beat of a drum. He saw, at a great distance, a vast multitude, part of whom ran towards the coast, and the other part flew from it.

A thousand shrieks re-echoed on every side: curiosity and courage hurried him, that instant, towards the spot where the greatest clamour arose, which he attained in a few leaps. The commander of the militia, who had slipped with him at the prior's, knew him immediately, and he ran to the Huron with open arms: 'Ah! it is the sincere American—he will fight for us.' Upon which the militia, who were almost dead with fear, recovered themselves, crying out with one voice—'It is the Huron, the ingenuous Huron.'

'Gentlemen,' said he, 'what is the matter? Why are you so scared? Have they shut your mistresses up in convents?' Instantly a thousand confused voices cried out—'Do you not see the English, who are landing?'—'Very well,' replied the Huron, 'they

'are a brave people; they never proposed making me a sub-deacon; they never carried off my mistress.'

The commander made him understand, that they were coming to pillage the Abbey of the Mountain, drink his uncle's wine, and perhaps carry off Miss St. Yves; that the little vessel which set him on shore in Britany, was come only to reconnoitre the coast; that they were committing acts of hostility, without having declared war against France; and that the province was entirely exposed to them. 'If this be the case,' said he, 'they violate the law of nature: let me alone; I lived a good while among them; I am acquainted with their language, and I will speak to them; I cannot think they can have so wicked a design.'

During this conversation, the English fleet approached; the Huron ran towards it, and having jumped into a little boat, soon rowed to the admiral's ship, and having gone on board, asked, Whether it was true, that they were come to ravage the coast, without having honestly declared war? The admiral and all his crew burst out into laughter, made him drink some punch, and sent him back.

The ingenuous Hercules, piqued at this reception, thought now of nothing else but beating his old friends for his countrymen and the prior. The gentlemen of the neighbourhood ran from all quarters, and joined them: they had some cannon, and he discharged them one after the other. The English landed, and he flew towards them, when he killed three of them with his own hand: he even wounded the admiral, who had made a joke of him. The whole militia were animated with his prowess; the English returned to their ships, and went on board; and the whole coast re-echoed with the shouts of victory—'Live the king! live the ingenuous Hercules!' Every one ran to embrace him; every one strove to stop the bleeding of some slight wounds he had received. 'Ah!' said he, 'if Miss St. Yves were here, she would put on a plaister for me.'

The bailiff, who had hid himself in his cellar during the battle, came to pay his compliments like the rest. But he was greatly surprised, when he heard the ingenuous Hercules say to a dozen young men well disposed for his service, who surrounded him—'My friends, having

‘delivered the Abbey of the Mountain  
‘is nothing, we must rescue a nymph.’

The warm blood of these youth were fired at the expression. He was already followed by crowds, who repaired to the convent. If the bailiff had not immediately acquainted the commandant with their design, and he had not sent a detachment after the joyous troop, the thing would have been done. The Huron was conducted back to his uncle and aunt, who overwhelmed him with tears and tenderness.

‘I see very well,’ said his uncle, ‘that you will never be either a sub-deacon or a prior; you will be an officer, and one still braver than my brother the captain, and probably as poor.’ Miss Kerkabon could not stop an incessant flood of tears, whilst she embraced him, saying—‘He will be killed too like my brother; it were much better he were a sub-deacon.’

The Huron had, during the battle, picked up a large purse full of guineas, which probably the admiral lost. He did not doubt but that this purse would buy all Lower Britany, and, above all, make Miss St. Yves a great lady. Every one persuaded him to repair to Versailles, to receive the recompence due to his services. The commandant, and the principal officers, furnished him with certificates in abundance. The uncle and aunt also approved of this journey. He was to be presented to the king without any difficulty. This alone would give him great weight in the province. These two good folks added to the English purse a considerable present out of their savings. The Huron said to himself—‘When I see the king, I will ask Miss St. Yves of him in marriage, and certainly he will not refuse me.’ He set out accordingly, amidst the acclamations of the whole district, stifled with embraces, bathed in tears by his aunt, blessed by his uncle, and recommending himself to the charming Miss St. Yves.

#### C H A P. VIII.

THE HURON GOES TO COURT. SUPS  
UPON THE ROAD WITH SOME HUGUENOTS.

THE ingenuous Hercules took the Saumur road in the coach, because there was at that time no other conve-

nience. When he came to Saumur, he was astonished to find the city almost deserted, and see several families going away. He was told, that half a dozen years before Saumur contained upwards of 50,000 inhabitants, and that at present there were not 6000. He mentioned this at the inn, whilst at supper. Several protestants were at table; some complained bitterly, others trembled with rage, others weeping said, *Nos dulcia linquimus arva, nos patriam fugimus*. The Huron, who did not understand Latin, had these words explained to him, which signified, ‘We abandon our sweet fields; we fly from our country.’

‘And why do you fly from your country, gentlemen?’—‘Because we must otherwise acknowledge the pope.’—‘And why not acknowledge him? You have no god-mothers, then, that you want to marry; for I am told, it is he that grants this permission.’—‘Ah! Sir, this pope says, that he is master of the domains of kings.’—‘But, gentlemen, what religion are you of?’—‘Why, Sir, we are for the most part drapers and manufacturers.’—‘If the pope,’ says he, ‘is the master of your cloaths and manufactures, you do very well not to acknowledge him; but as to kings, it is their business, and why do you trouble yourself with it?’ Here a little black man took up the argument, and very learnedly set forth the grievances of the company. He talked of the revocation of the edict of Nantes with so much energy; he deplored in so pathetic a manner the fate of 50,000 fugitive families, and of 50,000 others converted by dragons; that the ingenuous Hercules could not refrain from shedding tears. ‘Whence arises,’ said he, ‘that so great a king, whose renown expands itself even to the Hurons, should thus deprive himself of so many hearts that would have loved him, and so many arms that would have served him?’

‘Because he has been imposed upon,’ like other great kings,’ replied the little orator. ‘He has been made to believe, that as soon as he utters a word, all people think as he does; and that he can make us change our religion, just as his musician Lulli, in a moment, changes the decorations of his opera. He has not only already lost five or six hundred thousand very useful subjects, but he has turned many of them into enemies;



enemies; and King William, who is at this time master of England, has composed several regiments of these identical Frenchmen, who would otherwise have fought for their monarch.

Such a disaster is the more astonishing, as the present pope, to whom Lewis XIV. sacrifices a part of his people, is his declared enemy. A violent quarrel has subsisted between them for near nine years; it has been carried so far, that France was in hopes of at length casting off the yoke, by which it has been kept in subjection for so many ages to this foreigner, and, more particularly, of not giving him any more money, which is the *primum mobile* of the affairs of this world. It therefore appears evident, that this great king has been imposed on, as well with respect to his interest, as the extent of his power, and that even the magnanimity of his heart has been struck at.

The Huron, melted more and more, asked, who were the Frenchmen who thus deceived a monarch so dear to the Hurons? 'They are the Jesuits,' he was answered; 'and particularly Father La Chaise, the king's confessor. It is to be hoped that God will one day punish them for it, and that they will be driven out, as they now drive us. Can any misfortune equal ours? Monf. de Louvois besets us on all sides with Jesuits and dragoons.'

'Well, gentlemen,' replied the Huron, who could contain no longer, 'I am going to Versailles to receive the recompence due to my services; I will speak to Monf. de Louvois; I am told it is he who makes war from his closet. I shall see the king, and I will acquaint him with the truth; it is impossible not to yield to this truth, when it is felt. I shall return very soon to marry Miss St. Yves, and I beg you will be present at our nuptials.' These good people now took him for some great lord, who travelled *incognito* in the coach. Some took him for the king's fool.

There was at table a disguised Jesuit, who acted as a spy to the reverend Father de la Chaise. He gave him an account of every thing that passed, and

Father de la Chaise reported it to M. de Louvois. The spy wrote. The Huron and the letter arrived almost at the same time at Versailles.

## C H A P. IX.

## THE ARRIVAL OF THE HURON AT VERSAILLES. HIS RECEPTION AT COURT.

THE ingenuous Hercules was set down from a *pot de chambre*\*, in the court of the kitchens. He asks the chairmen, what hour the king can be seen? The chairmen laugh in his face, just as the English admiral had done; and he treated them in the same manner, he beat them: they were for retaliation, and the scene had like to have proved bloody, if a life-guardman, who was a gentleman of Britany, had not passed by, and who dispersed the mob. 'Sir,' said the traveller to him, 'you appear to me to be a brave man. I am nephew to the prior of our Lady of the Mountain. I have killed Englishmen, and I am come to speak to the king; I beg you will conduct me to his chamber.' The soldier, ravished to find a man of courage from his province, who did not seem acquainted with the customs of the court, told him, that this was not the manner of speaking to the king, and that it was necessary to be presented by M. de Louvois. 'Very well, then, conduct me to M. de Louvois, who will doubtless conduct me to the king.'—'It is more difficult,' refused the soldier, 'to speak to M. de Louvois, than to the king. But I will conduct you to Mr. Alexander's, first commissioner at war, and this will be just the same as if you spoke to the minister.' They accordingly repair to Mr. Alexander's, who is first clerk; but they cannot be introduced, he being closely engaged in business with a lady of the court, and no person is allowed admittance. 'Well,' said the life-guardman, 'there is no harm done, let us go to Mr. Alexander's first clerk; this will be just the same as if you spoke to Mr. Alexander himself.'

The Huron, quite astonished, follow-

\* A vehicle that goes from Paris to Versailles, which resembles a little covered tumbrel.

ed him; they remain together half an hour in a little anti-chamber. 'What is all this?' said the ingenuous Hercules: 'is all the world invisible in this country? It is much easier to fight in Lower Britany against Englishmen, than to meet with people at Versailles, with whom one hath business.' He amused himself for some time with relating his amours to his countrymen; but the clock striking, recalled the soldier to his post, when a mutual promise was given of meeting on the morrow. The Huron remained another half hour in the anti-chamber, ruminating upon Miss St. Yves, and the difficulty of speaking to kings and first clerks.

At length the patron appeared. 'Sir,' said the ingenuous Hercules, 'if I had waited to repulse the English as long as you have made me wait for my audience, they would certainly have ravaged all Lower Britany without opposition.' These words struck the clerk. He at length said to the inhabitant of Britany, 'What is your request?'—'A recompence,' said the other; 'these are my titles;' shewing his certificates. The clerk read, and told him, that probably he might obtain leave to purchase a lieutenantancy. 'Me! what, must I pay money for having repulsed the English? Must I pay a tax to be killed for you, whilst you are peaceably giving your audiences here? You are certainly jesting. I require a company of cavalry for nothing. I require that the king shall set Miss St. Yves at liberty from the convent, and that he give her me in marriage. I want to speak to the king in favour of 50,000 families, whom I propose restoring to him. In a word, I want to be useful; let me be employed and advanced.'

'What is your name, Sir, who talk in such a high stile?'—'Oh! oh!' answered the Huron; 'you have not then read my certificates? This is the way they are treated! My name is *Hercules de Kerkabon*, I am christened, and I lodge at the Blue Dial.' The clerk concluded, like the people at Saumur, that his head was turned, and did not pay him any farther attention.

The same day, the Reverend Father de la Chaise, confessor to Lewis XIV. received his spy's letter, which accused the Breton Kerkabon of favouring in his

heart the Huguenots, and condemning the conduct of the Jesuits. M. de Louvois had, on his side, received a letter from the inquisitive bailiff, which depicted the Huron as a wicked, lewd fellow, inclined to burn convents, and carry off the nuns.

Hercules, after having walked in the gardens of Versailles, which had become irksome to him; after having supped like a native of Huronia and Lower Britany; was gone to rest, in the pleasing hope of seeing the king next day; obtaining Miss St. Yves in marriage; having, at least, a company of cavalry; and of setting aside the persecution against the Huguenots. He was rocking himself asleep with these flattering ideas, when the *Marechaussée* entered his chamber, and seized upon his double-charged fusée and his great sabre.

They took an inventory of his ready money, and then conducted him to the castle erected by King Charles V. son to John II. near the street of St. Antoine, at the gate des Tournelles.

What was the Huron's astonishment in his way thither, the reader is left to imagine. He at first fancied it was all a dream; and remained for some time in a state of stupefaction: presently transported with rage, that gave him more than common strength, he collared two of his conductors who were with him in the coach, flung them out of the door, cast himself after them, and then dragged the third, who wanted to hold him. He fell in the attempt, when they tied him, and replaced him in the carriage. 'This then,' said he, 'is what one gets by driving the English out of Lower Britany! What wouldst thou say, charming Miss St. Yves, if thou didst see me in this situation!'

They at length arrived at the place of their destination. He was carried without any noise into the chamber in which he was to be locked up, like a dead corpse going to the grave. This room was already occupied by an old solitary student of Port Royal, named Gordon, who had been languishing there for two years. 'See,' said the chief of the *Marechaussée*, 'here is company I bring you;' and immediately the enormous bolts of this strong door, secured with large iron bars, were fastened upon them. These two captives were thus separated from all the universe besides.



## CHAP. X.

THE HURON IS SHUT UP IN THE  
BASTILE WITH A JANSENIST.

MR. Gordon was a healthy old man, of a serene disposition, who was acquainted with two great things; the one was, to bear adversity; the other, to console the afflicted. He approached his companion with an open sympathizing air, and said to him, whilst he embraced him—'Whoever thou art that is come to partake of my grave, be assured, that I shall constantly forget myself to soften your torments in the infernal abyss wherein we are plunged. Let us adore Providence that has conducted us here. Let us suffer in peace, and trust in hope.' These words had the same effect upon the youth, as English drops, which recal a dying person to life, and shew to his astonished eyes a glimpse of light.

After the first compliments were over, Gordon, without urging him to relate the cause of his misfortune, inspired him by the sweetness of his discourse, and by that interest which two unfortunate persons share with each other, with a desire of opening his heart, and of disburthening himself of the weight which oppressed him; but he could not guess the cause of his misfortune, and the good man Gordon was as much astonished as himself.

'God must doubtless,' said the Jansenist to the Huron, 'have great designs upon you, since he conducted you from Lake Ontario into England, from thence to France; caused you to be baptized in Lower Britany, and has now lodged you here for your salvation.'—'I faith,' replied Hercules, 'I believe the devil alone has interfered in my destiny. My countrymen in America would never have treated me with the barbarity that I have experienced; they have not the least idea of it. They are called savages—they are good people, but rustick; and the men of this country are refined villains. I am, indeed,' said he, 'greatly surprized to have come from another world to be shut up in this, under four bolts, with a priest; but I consider what an infinite number of men set out from one hemisphere to go and get killed in the other, or are cast away in the voyage, and are eaten

by the fishes. I cannot discover the gracious designs of God over all these people.'

Their dinner was brought them through a wicket. The conversation turned upon Providence, letters de cachet, and upon the art of not sinking under disgrace, to which all men in this world were exposed. 'It is two years since I have been here,' said the old man, 'without any other consolation than myself and books; and yet I have never been a single moment out of temper.'

'Ah, Mr. Gordon,' cried Hercules, 'you are not then in love with your god-mother; if you were as well acquainted with Miss St. Yves as I am, you would be in a state of desperation.' At these words he could not refrain from tears, which greatly relieved him from his oppression. 'How is it, then, that tears solace us? It seems to me that they should have a quite opposite effect.'—'My son,' said the good old man, 'every thing is physical about us; all secretions are useful to the body, and all that comforts it, comforts the soul: we are the machines of Providence.'

The ingenuous Huron, who, as we have already observed more than once, had a great share of understanding, entered deeply into the consideration of this idea, the seeds whereof appeared to be in himself. After which he asked his companion, why his machine had for two years been confined by four bolts. 'By effectual grace,' answered Gordon: 'I pass for a Jansenist; I know Arnaud and Nicole, the Jesuits, have persecuted us. We believe that the pope is nothing more than a bishop like another, and therefore Father la Chaise has obtained from the king his penitent, an order for robbing me, without any form of justice, of the most precious inheritance of man, liberty.'—'This is very strange,' said the Huron; 'all the unhappy people I have met with, have been made so solely by the pope.'

'With respect to your effectual grace,' I acknowledge, I do not understand what you mean; but I consider it as a very great favour, that God has let me in my misfortunes meet with a man, who pours into my heart such consolation as I thought myself incapable of receiving.'

The conversation became each day more interesting and instructive. The souls

souls of two captives seemed to unite in one body. The old man knew a great deal, and the young man was willing to acquire much instruction. At the end of the first month, he eagerly applied himself to the study of geometry. Gordon made him read Rohault's *Physicks*, which book was still in fashion; and he had good sense enough to find in it nothing but doubts and uncertainties.

He afterwards read the first volume of the *Enquiry after Truth*. This instructive work gave him new light. 'What!' said he, 'does our imagination and our senses deceive us to that degree! What, are not our ideas formed by objects, and can we not acquire them by ourselves!' When he had gone through the second volume, he was not so well satisfied; and he concluded it was much easier to destroy than to build.

His colleague, astonished that a young ignoramus should make such a remark, conceived a very high opinion of his understanding, and was more strongly attached to him.

'Your Malebranche,' said he to Gordon one day, 'seems to have written half his book whilst he was in possession of his reason, and the other half with the assistance only of imagination and prejudice.'

Some days after, Gordon asked him, what he thought of the soul, and the manner in which we receive our ideas; of volition, grace, and free agency. 'Nothing,' replied the Huron. 'If I think something, it is, that we are under the power of the Eternal Being, like the stars and the elements; that he operates every thing in us; that we are small wheels of the immense machine, of which he is the soul; that he acts according to general laws, and not from particular views: this is all that appears to me intelligible; all the rest is to me a dark abyss.'

'But this, my son, would be making God the author of sin!'—'But, father, your effectual grace would equally make him the author of sin; for certainly, all those to whom this grace were refused, would sin; and is not he who gives us up to evil, the author of evil?'

This sincerity greatly embarrassed the good man; he found that all his endeavours to extricate himself from this quagmire were ineffectual; and he heaped such quantities of words upon one ano-

ther, which seemed to have meaning, but which in fact had none, (in the stile of physical pre-motion) that the Huron could not help pitying him. This question evidently determined the origin of good and evil; and poor Gordon was reduced to the necessity of recurring to Pandora's box, Orosmade's egg pierced by Arimane, the enmity between Typhon and Osiris, and at last original sin; and these he huddled together in profound darkness, without their throwing the least glimmering light upon one another. However, this romance of the soul diverted their thoughts from the contemplation of their own misery; and by a strange magick, the multitude of calamities dispersed throughout the world, diminished the sensation of their own miseries; they did not dare complain, when all mankind was in a state of suffering.

But in the repose of night, the image of the charming Miss St. Yves effaced from the mind of her lover every metaphysical and moral idea. He awoke with his eyes bathed in tears; and the old Jansenist forgot his effectual grace, and the abbé of St. Ciran, and Jansenius himself, to allow consolation to a youth whom he judged guilty of a mortal sin.

After their lectures and their reasonings were over, their adventures furnished them with subjects of conversation; and after this store was exhausted, they read together, or separately. The Huron's understanding daily increased; and he would certainly have made great progress in the mathematics, if the thoughts of Miss St. Yves had not frequently distracted him.

He read histories, which made him melancholy. The world appeared to him too wicked and too miserable. In fact, history is nothing more than a picture of crimes and misfortunes. The crowd of innocent and peaceable men are always invisible upon this vast theatre. The *dramatis personæ* are composed of ambitious, perverse men. The pleasure which history affords, is derived from the same source as tragedy, which would languish and become insipid, were it not inspired with strong passions, great crimes, and piteous misfortunes. Clio must be armed with a poniard as well as Melpomene.

Though the history of France is not less filled with horror than those of other nations, it nevertheless appeared to him so disgusting in the beginning, so dry in the



the continuation, and so trifling in the end, even in the time of Henry IV. ever destitute of grand monuments, or foreign to those fine discoveries which have illustrated other nations; that he was obliged to resolve upon not being tired, to go through all the particulars of obscure calamities confined to a little corner of the world.

Gordon thought like him. They both laughed with pity, when they read of the love-reigns of Fezenfacs, Fesanfaguet, and Afrac: such a study could be relished only by their heirs, if they had any. The brilliant ages of the Roman republic made him sometimes quite indifferent as to any other part of the globe. The spectacle of victorious Rome, the law-giver of nations, engrossed his whole soul. He glowed in contemplating a people who were governed for seven hundred years by the enthusiasm of liberty and glory.

Thus rolled days, weeks, and months; and he would have thought himself happy in the sanctuary of despair, if he had not loved.

The natural goodness of his heart was softened still more, when he reflected upon the prior of our Lady of the Mountain, and the sensible Kerkabon: 'What must they think,' he would often repeat, 'when they can get no tidings of me? They must think me an ungrateful wretch.' This idea rendered him inconsolable; he pitied those who loved him much more than he pitied himself.

## CHAP. XI.

### HOW THE HURON DISCLOSES HIS GENIUS.

**R**EADING aggrandizes the soul, and an enlightened friend affords consolation. Our captive had these two advantages in his favour, which he had never expected. 'I shall begin to believe in the Metamorphoses, for I have been transformed from a brute into a man.' He formed a chosen library with part of the money which he was allowed to dispose of. His friend encouraged him to commit to writing such observations as occurred to him. These are his notes upon ancient history.

'I imagine that nations were for a long time like myself; that they did not become enlightened till very late; that for many ages they were occupied with

nothing but the present moment which elapsed; that they thought very little of what was passed, and never of the future. I have traversed five or six hundred leagues in Canada, and I did not meet with a single monument: no one is any way acquainted with the actions of his predecessors. Is not this the natural state of man? The human species of this continent appear to me superior to that of the other. They have extended their being for many ages by arts and knowledge. Is this because they have beards upon their chins, and God has refused this ornament to the Americans? I do not believe it; for I find the Chinese have very little beard, and that they have cultivated arts for upwards of five thousand years. In effect, if their annals go back upwards of four thousand years, the nation must necessarily have been united, and in a flourishing state, more than five hundred centuries.

'One thing particularly strikes me in this ancient history of China, which is, that almost every thing is probable and natural. I admire it because it is not tinged with any thing of the marvellous.

'Why have all other nations adopted fabulous origins? The ancient chronicles of the history of France, who by the bye are not very ancient, make the French descend from one Francus, the son of Hector. The Romans said, they were the issue of a Phrygian, though there was not in their whole language a single word that had the least connection with the language of Phrygia. The gods had inhabited Egypt for ten thousand years, and the devils Scythia, where they had engendered the Huns. I meet with nothing before Thucydides but romances similar to the Amadis's, and far less amusing. Apparitions, oracles, prodigies, sorcery, metamorphoses, are interspersed throughout, with the explanation of dreams, which are the bases of the destiny of the greatest empires and the smallest states: here are speaking beasts, there brutes that are adored, gods transformed into men, and men into gods. If we must have fables, let us, at least, have such as appear the emblem of truth. I admire the fables of philosophers, but I laugh at those of children, and I hate those of impostors.'

He one day hit upon a history of the Emperor

Emperor Justinian. It was there related, that some Apedeutes of Constantinople had delivered, in very bad Greek, an edict against the greatest Captain of the age, because this hero had uttered the following words in the warmth of conversation—'Truth shines forth with its proper light, and people's minds are not illumined with flaming piles.' The Apedeutes declared, that this proposition was heretical, bordering upon heresy; and that the contrary action was catholic, universal, and Grecian: 'The minds of the people are not enlightened but with flaming piles, and truth cannot shine forth with its own light.' These Linoftolians thus condemned several discourses of the Captain, and published an edict.

'What!' said the Huron, with much emotion, 'shall such people publish edicts?'—'They are not edicts,' replied Gordon; 'they are contradictions, which all the world laughed at in Constantinople, and the emperor the first. He was a wise prince, who knew how to reduce the Linoftolian Apedeutes to a state incapable of doing any thing but good. He knew that these gentlemen, and several other Pastophores, had tired the patience of the emperors, his predecessors, with contradictions in more serious matters.'—'He did very right,' said the Huron; 'the Pastophores should be supported and constrained.'

He committed several other observations to paper, which astonished old Gordon. 'What!' said he to himself, 'have I consumed fifty years in instruction, and I fear I have not attained to the degree of natural good sense of this child, who is almost a savage! I tremble to think I have so arduously strengthened prejudices, and he listens to simple nature only.'

The good man had some little books of criticism, some of those periodical pamphlets, wherein men incapable of producing any thing themselves, blacken the productions of others; where a Visé insults a Racine, and a Faidit a Fenelon. The Huron ran over some of them. 'I compare them to certain gnats, that lodge their eggs in the posteriors of the finest horses, which do not, however, prevent their running.' The two philosophers scarce deigned to cast their eyes upon these excrements of literature.

They soon after went through the elements of astronomy. The Huron sent for some globes: he was ravished at this great spectacle. 'How hard it is,' said he, 'that I should only begin to be acquainted with heaven, when the power of contemplating it is ravished from me! Jupiter and Saturn revolve in these immense spaces;—millions of suns illumine myriads of worlds; and in this corner of the earth whither I am cast, there are beings that deprive me of seeing and thinking of those worlds whither my eye might reach, and even that in which God created me! The light created for the whole universe is lost to me. It was not hidden from me in the northern horizon, where I passed my infancy and youth. Without you, my dear Gordon, I should be annihilated.'

## CHAP. XII.

### THE HURON'S SENTIMENTS UPON THEATRICAL PIECES.

THE young Huron resembled one of those vigorous trees, which planted in an ungrateful soil, extends in a little time its root and branches, when transplanted to a more favourable spot; and it was very extraordinary that this favourable spot should be a prison.

Among the books which employed the leisure of the two captives, were some poems, and the translations of Greek tragedies, and some dramattick pieces in French. Those passages that dwelt on love, communicated at once pleasure and pain to the soul of the Huron. They were but so many images of his dear Miss St. Yves. The fable of the two pigeons rent his heart; but he was far estranged from his tender dove.

Moliere enchanted him. He taught him the manners of Paris and of human nature. 'To which of his comedies do you give the preference?'—'Doubtless to his Tartuffe.'—'I am of your opinion,' said Gordon; 'it was a Tartuffe that flung me into this dungeon, and perhaps they were Tartuffes who have been the cause of your misfortunes.'

'What do you think of these Greek tragedies?'—'They are very good for Grecians.' But when he read the modern Iphigenia, Phædrus, Andromache, and



and Athalia, he was in extasy, he sighed, he wept; and he learned them by heart, without having any such intention.

'Read Rodogune,' said Gordon; 'that is said to be a capital production; the other pieces which have given you so much pleasure, are trifles compared to this.' The young man had scarce got through the first page, before he said—'This is not wrote by the same author,'—'How do you know it?'—'I know nothing yet; but these lines touch neither my ear nor my heart.'—'Oh!' said Gordon, 'the versification does not signify.' The Huron asked—'What must I judge by, then?'

After having read the piece very attentively, without any other design than being pleased, he looked steadfastly at his friend with much astonishment, not knowing what to say. At length, being urged to give his opinion, with respect to what he felt, this was the answer he made; 'I understood very little of the beginning; the middle disgusted me; but the last scene greatly moved me, though there appears to me but little probability in it. I have no prejudices for, or against any one, but I do not remember twenty lines, I who recollect them all when they please me.'

'This piece, nevertheless, passes for the best upon our stage.'—'If that be the case,' said he, 'it is perhaps like many people, who are not worthy of the places they hold. After all, this is a matter of taste, and mine cannot yet be formed. I may be mistaken; but you know I am accustomed to say what I think, or rather what I feel. I suspect that illusion, fashion, caprice, often warp the judgments of men.' Here he repeated some lines from Iphigenia, which he was full of; and though he declaimed but indifferently, he uttered them with such truth and sensation, that he made the old Jansenist weep. He then read Cinna, which did not excite his tears but his admiration.

### CHAP. XIII.

#### THE BEAUTIFUL MISS ST. YVES GOES TO VERSAILLES.

**W**HILST the unfortunate Hercules was more enlightened than consoled; whilst his genius, so long stifled, unfolded itself with so much rapidity

and strength; whilst nature, which was attaining a degree of perfection in him, avenged herself of the outrages of fortune; what became of the prior, his good sister, and the beautiful recluse Miss St. Yves? The first month they were uneasy, and the third they were immersed in sorrow. False conjectures, ill-grounded reports, alarmed them. At the end of six months, it was concluded he was dead. At length, Mr. and Miss Kerkabon learned, by a letter of ancient date, which one of the king's guards had wrote to Britany, that a young man resembling the Huron, arrived one night at Versailles, but that since that time no one had heard him spoken of.

'Alas!' said Miss Kerkabon, 'our nephew has done some ridiculous thing, which has brought on some terrible consequences. He is young, a Low Breton, and cannot know how to behave at court. My dear brother, I never saw Versailles nor Paris; here is a fine opportunity, and we shall, perhaps, find our poor nephew; he is our brother's son, and it is our duty to assist him. Who knows, we may perhaps at length prevail upon him to become a *sub-deacon*, when the fire of youth is somewhat abated. He was much inclined to the sciences. Do you recollect how he reasoned upon the Old and New Testament? We are answerable for his soul; he was baptized at our institution. His dear mistress Miss St. Yves does nothing but weep incessantly. Indeed we must go to Paris. If he is concealed in any of those infamous houses of pleasure which I have often heard of, we will get him out.' The prior was affected at his sister's discourse. He went in search of the Bishop of St. Malo's, who had baptized the Huron, and requested his protection and advice. The prelate approved of the journey. He gave the prior letters of recommendation to Father la Chaize, the king's confessor, who was invested with the first dignity in the kingdom; to Harlai, the Archbishop of Paris; and to Bossuet, Bishop of Meaux.

At length, the brother and sister set out; but when they came to Paris, they found themselves bewildered in a great labyrinth without clue or end. Their fortune was but middling, and they had occasion every day for carriages to pursue their discovery, which they could not accomplish.

The prior waited upon the Reverend Father la Chaîlle: he was with Mademoiselle du Tron, and could not give audience to priors. He went to the archbishop's door: the prelate was shut up with the beautiful Mademoiselle de Lefdiguières about church matters. He flew to the country-house of the Bishop of Meaux: he was upon a close examination, with Mademoiselle de Mauleon, of the mystical amour of Mademoiselle Guyon. At length, however, he gained access to these two prelates; they both declared, they could not interfere with regard to his nephew, as he was not a sub-deacon.

He at length saw the Jesuit, who received him with open arms, protesting he had always entertained the greatest private esteem for him, though he had never known him. He swore that his society had always been attached to the inhabitants of Lower Britany. 'But,' said he, 'has not your nephew the misfortune of being a Huguenot?'—'No certainly, Reverend Father.'—'May he not be a Jansenist?'—'I can assure your Reverence, that he is scarce a Christian. It is about eleven months since he was christened.'—'This is very well; we will take care of him. Is your benefice considerable?'—'No, a very trifle, and our nephew costs us a great deal.'—'Are there any Jansenists in your neighbourhood? Take great care, my dear Mr. Prior, they are more dangerous than Huguenots, or even Atheists.'—'My Reverend Father, we have none; it is not even known at our Lady of the Mountain what Jansenism is.'—'So much the better; go, there is nothing I will not do for you.' He dismissed the prior in this affectionate manner, but thought no more about him.

Time slipped away, and the prior and his good sister were almost in despair.

In the mean while, the curried bailiff urged very firenuously the marriage of his great booby son with the beautiful Miss St. Yves, who was taken purposely out of the convent. She always entertained a passion for her god-son, in proportion as she detested the husband who was designed for her. The insult that had been offered her, by shutting her up in a convent, increased her affection; and the mandate for wedding the bailiff's son complicated her antipathy for him. Chagrin, tenderness, and terror, racked her soul. Love, we know, is much more inventive

and more daring in a young woman, than friendship in an aged prior, and an aunt upwards of forty-five. Besides, she had received good instructions in her convent, with the assistance of romances, which she read by stealth.

The beautiful Miss St. Yves remembered the letter that had been written by a life-guard-man to Lower Britany, and which had been spoken of in the province. She resolved to go herself and gain information at Versailles; to throw herself at the minister's feet, if her husband should be in prison, as it was said; and obtain justice for him. I know not what secret intelligence she had gained, that at court nothing is refused a pretty woman. But she knew not the price of these boons.

Having taken this resolution, it afforded her some consolation; and she enjoyed some tranquillity, without upbraiding Providence with the severity of her lot. She receives her detested, intended father-in-law, caresses the brother, and spreads happiness throughout the house. On the day appointed for the ceremony, she secretly departs at four o'clock in the morning, with the little nuptial presents she had received, and all she could gather. Her plan was so well laid, that she was above ten leagues upon her journey, when, about noon, her absence was discovered, and when every one's consternation and surprize was inexpressible. The inquisitive bailiff asked more questions that day than he had done for a week before; the intended bridegroom was more stupified than ever. The abbé St. Yves resolved in his rage to pursue his sister. The bailiff and his son were disposed to accompany him. Their fate led almost the whole canton of Lower Britany to Paris.

The beautiful Miss St. Yves was not without apprehensions that she should be pursued. She rode on horseback, and she got all the intelligence she could, without being suspected, from the couriers, if they had not met a fat abbé, an enormous bailiff, and a young booby, galloping as fast as they could to Paris. Having learned, on the third day, that they were not far behind, she took a quite different road, and was skilful and lucky enough to arrive at Versailles, whilst they were in a fruitless pursuit after her, at Paris. But how was she to behave at Versailles? Young, handsome, untutored; unsupported, unknown, exposed to every



every danger, how could she dare go in search of one of the king's guards? She had some thoughts of applying to a Jesuit of low rank; for there were some for every station of life; as God, they say, has given different aliments to every species of animals. He had given the king his confessor, who was called by all solicitors of benefices, the head of the Gallican church. Then came the prince's confessors; the ministers had none; they were not such dupes. There were Jesuits for genteel mob, and particularly those for chambermaids, by whom were known the secrets of their mistresses; and this was no small vocation. The beautiful Miss St. Yves addressed herself to one of these last, who was called Father Tout à tous (all to every one.) She confessed to him, set forth her adventure, her situation, her danger, and conjured him to get her a lodging with some good devotee, who might shelter her from temptations.

Father Tout à tous introduced her to the wife of the cup-bearer, one of his most trusty penitents. From the moment Miss St. Yves became her lodger, she did her utmost to obtain the confidence and friendship of this woman. She gained intelligence of the Breton-guard, and invited him to visit her. Having learned from him, that her lover had been carried off after having had a conference with one of the first clerks, she flew to this clerk. The sight of a fine woman softened him, for it must be allowed, God created woman only to tame mankind.

The scribe thus mollified, acknowledged to her every thing. 'Your lover has been in the Bastille almost a year; and without your intercession he would, perhaps, have ended his days there.' The tender Miss St. Yves swooned at this intelligence. When she had recovered herself, the penman told her—'I have no power to do good; all my influence extends to doing harm sometimes. Take my advice, wait upon M. de St. Pouange, who has the power of doing both good and ill; he is Monf. de Louvois's cousin and favourite. This minister has two souls: the one is M. de St. Pouange, and Mademoiselle de Belley is the other, but she is at present absent from Versailles; so that you have nothing to do but captivate the protector I have pointed out to you. The beautiful

Miss St. Yves, divided between some trifling joy and excessive grief, between a glimmering of hope and dreadful apprehensions—pursued by her brother, idolizing her lover, wiping her tears, which flowed in torrents; trembling and feeble, yet summoning all her courage;—in this situation, she flew on the wings of love to M. de St. Pouange's.

#### CHAP. XIV.

##### THE PROGRESS OF THE HURON'S INTELLECTS.

THE ingenuous youth was making a rapid progress in the sciences, and particularly in the science of man. The cause of this sudden disclosure of his understanding, was as much owing to his savage education, as to the disposition of his soul; for having learned nothing in his infancy, he had not imbibed any prejudices. His mind having not been warped by error, had retained all its primitive rectitude. He saw things as they were; whereas the ideas that are communicated to us in our infancy, make us see them all our life in a false light. 'Your persecutors are abominable wretches,' said he to his friend Gordon, 'I pity you for being oppressed, but I condemn you for being a Jesuit. All sects appear to me to be founded in error; tell me if there be any sectaries in geometry?'—'No, my child,' said the good old Gordon, heaving a deep sigh; 'all men are agreed concerning truth when demonstrated; but they are too much divided about latent truths.'—'If there were but one single hidden truth in your load of arguments, which have been so often sifted for such a number of ages, it would doubtless have been discovered, and the universe would certainly have been unanimous, at least in that respect. If this truth had been necessary, as the sun is to the earth, it would have been as brilliant as that planet. It is an absurdity, an insult to human nature; it is an attack upon the Infinite and Supreme Being, to say there is a truth essential to the happiness of man, which God conceals.'

All that this ignorant youth, instructed only by nature, said, made a very deep impression upon the mind of the old unhappy scholiast. 'Is it really

'certain,' he cried, 'that I should have made myself truly miserable for mere chimeras? I am much more certain of my misery than of effectual grace. I have spent my time in reasoning upon the liberty of God and human nature, but I have lost my own; neither St. Augustin nor St. Prosper will extricate me from my present misfortunes.'

The ingenuous Huron, who gave way to his natural characteristic, at length said—'Will you give me leave to speak to you boldly and frankly? Those who bring upon themselves persecution for such idle disputes, seem to me to have very little sense; those who persecute, appear to me very monsters.'

The two captives entirely coincided with respect to the injustice of their captivity. 'I am a hundred times more to be pitied than you,' said the Huron; 'I am born free as the air: I had two lives, liberty and the object of my love; and I am deprived of both. We are both in fetters, without knowing who put them on us, or without being able to enquire. I lived a Huron for twenty years. It is said they are barbarians, because they avenge themselves of their enemies; but they never oppress their friends. I had scarce set foot in France, before I shed my blood for this country: I have, perhaps, preserved a whole province, and my recompence is, being swallowed up in this sepulchre of the living, where I should have died with rage, had it not been for you. There must then be no laws in this country. Men are condemned without being heard! This is not the case in England. Alas! it was not against the English I should have fought.' Thus his growing philosophy could not brook nature being insulted in the first of her rights, and he gave vent to his just choler.

His companion did not contradict him. Absence ever increases ungratified love, and philosophy does not diminish it. He as frequently spoke of his dear Miss St. Yves, as he did of morality or metaphysics. The more he purified his sentiments, the more he loved. He read some new romances; but he met with few that depicted to him the real state of his soul. He always felt that his heart stretched beyond the bounds of his author. 'Alas!' said he, 'almost all these writers have nothing but wit and art.' At length, the good Jan-

senist priest became, insensibly, the confidant of his tenderness. He was hitherto acquainted with love as a sin, with which a penitent accuses himself at confession. He now learned to know it as a sentiment equally noble and tender; which can elevate the soul as well as soften it, and can produce, sometimes, virtues. In fine, for the last miracle, a Huron converted a Jansenist.

## CHAP. XV.

THE BEAUTIFUL MISS ST. YVES  
RESISTS SOME DELICATE PRO-  
POSALS.

THE charming Miss St. Yves, still more afflicted than her lover, waited accordingly upon M. de St. Pouange, accompanied by her friend with whom she lodged, each having their faces covered with their hoods. The first thing she saw at the door was the abbé St. Yves, her brother, coming out. She was terrified, but her pious friend supported her spirits. 'For the very reason,' said she, 'that people have been speaking against you, speak to him yourself. You may be assured that the accusers in this part of the world are always in the right, unless they are immediately detected. Besides, your presence will have greater effect, or else I am much mistaken, than the words of your brother.'

Ever so little encouragement to a passionate lover, makes her intrepid. Miss St. Yves appears at the audience. Her youth, her charms, her languishing eyes, moistened with some involuntary tears, attract every one's attention. Every sycophant to the deputy minister forgot, for an instant, the idol of power, to contemplate that of beauty. St. Pouange conducted her into a closet; she spoke with an affecting grace; St. Pouange felt some emotion. She trembled, but he told her not to be afraid. 'Return to-night,' said he; 'your business requires some reflection, and it must be discussed at leisure. There are too many people here at present. Audiences are rapidly dispatched. I must get to the bottom of all that concerns you.' He then paid her some compliments upon her beauty and manner of thinking, and advised her to come at seven in the evening.

She did not fail attending at the hour appointed.



appointed, and her pious friend again accompanied her; but she kept in the hall, where she was reading the Christian Pedagogue, whilst St. Pouange and the beauteous Miss St. Yves were in the back closet. He began by saying—'Would you believe it, Miss, that your brother has been to request me to grant him a *lettre de cachet* against you; but, indeed, I would sooner grant one to send him back to Lower Britany.'—'Alas! Sir,' said she, '*lettres de cachet* are granted very liberally in your offices, since people come from the extremity of the kingdom to solicit them like pensions. I am very far from requesting one against my brother, yet I have much reason to complain of him; but I respect the liberty of mankind; and therefore supplicate for that of a man whom I want to make my husband; of a man, to whom the king is indebted for the preservation of a province; who can beneficially serve him; and who is the son of an officer killed in his service.'—'What is he accused of? How could he be treated so cruelly without being heard?' The deputy minister then shewed her the letter of the spy Jesuit, and that of the perfidious bailiff. 'What,' said she with astonishment, 'are there such monsters upon earth! And would they force me to marry the stupid son of a ridiculous wicked man! And is it upon such evidence that the fate of citizens is determined?' She threw herself upon her knees, and with a flood of tears solicited the freedom of a brave man, who adored her. Her charms appeared to the greatest advantage in such a situation. She was so beautiful, that St. Pouange, bereft of all shame, insinuated to her, that she would succeed, if she began by yielding him the first-fruits of what she reserved for her lover. Miss St. Yves, shocked and confused, pretended, for some time, not to understand him; and he was obliged to explain himself more clearly. One word used with some reserve, brought on another less delicate, which was succeeded by one still more expressive. The revocation of the *lettre de cachet* was not only proposed, but pecuniary recompences, honours and places; and the more he promised, the greater was his desire of not being refused.

Miss St. Yves wept, whilst her anguish almost choaked her, half resting upon a

sopha, scarce able to believe what she saw and heard. St. Pouange, in turn, threw himself upon his knees. He was not disagreeable, and might not so much have shocked a heart less prepossessed; but Miss St. Yves adored her lover, and thought it the greatest of crimes to betray him, in order to serve him. St. Pouange renewed with greater fervency his prayers and entreaties. He at length went so far as to say, this was the only means of obtaining the liberty of the man, whose interest she had so violently and affectionately at heart. This uncommon conversation continued for a long time. The devotee in the antichamber, in reading her *Christian Pedagogue*, said to herself—'My God! What can they be doing there for these two hours? My Lord St. Pouange never before gave so long an audience; perhaps he has refused every thing to this poor girl, and she still is entreating him.'

At length her companion came out of the closet in the greatest confusion, without being able to speak, in deep meditation upon the character of the great and the half great, who so slightly sacrifice the liberty of men and the honour of women.

She did not utter a syllable all the way back. But being returned to her friend's, she burst out, and told all that had happened. Her pious friend made frequent signs of the cross. 'My dear friend,' said she, 'you must consult to-morrow Father Tout à tous, our director; he has much influence over M. de St. Pouange; he is confessor to many of the female servants of the house; he is a pious accommodating man, who has also the direction of some women of fashion. Yield to him; this is my way; and I always found myself right. We weak women stand in need of a man to lead us: and so, my dear friend, I'll go to-morrow in search of Father Tout à tous.'

## CHAP. XVI.

### SHE CONSULTS A JESUIT.

NO sooner was the beautiful and disconsolate Miss St. Yves with her holy confessor, than she told him, that a powerful voluptuous man had proposed to

to her to set at liberty the man whom she intended making her lawful husband, and that he required a great price for his service; that she held such infidelity in the highest detestation; and that if her life only had been required, she would much sooner have sacrificed it than have submitted.

'This is a most abominable sinner,' said Father Tout à tous. 'You should tell me the name of this vile man; he must certainly be some Jansenist; I will inform against him to his Reverence Father de la Chaise, who will place him in the situation of your dear beloved intended bridegroom.'

The poor girl, after much struggle and embarrassment, at length mentioned St. Pouange.

'My Lord St. Pouange!' cried the Jesuit. 'Ah! my child, the case is quite different; he is cousin to the greatest minister we have ever had; a man of worth, a protector of the good cause; a good Christian: he could not possibly entertain such a thought; you certainly must have misunderstood him.'—'Oh! father, I did but understand him too well.—I am lost on which ever side I turn: the only alternative I have to chuse is misery or shame; either my lover must be buried alive, or I must make myself unworthy of living. I cannot let him perish, nor can I save him.'

Father Tout à tous endeavoured to console her with these gentle expressions:

'In the first place, my child, never use the word *lover*; it intimates something worldly, which may offend God: say my *husband*; for although he is not yet your husband, you consider him as such, and nothing can be more decent.

'Secondly, though he be ideally your husband, and you are in hopes he will be such, he is not so in effect; consequently, you will not commit adultery; an enormous sin, that should always be avoided as much as possible.

'Thirdly, actions are not maliciously culpable, when the intention is virtuous; and nothing can be more virtuous than to procure your husband his liberty.

'Fourthly, you have examples in holy antiquity, that may miraculously serve you for a guide. St. Augustin relates, that under the proconsulate of

Septimius Acyndinus, in the 340th year of our salvation, a poor man could not pay unto Cæsar what he longed to Cæsar, and was justly condemned to die, notwithstanding the maxim, *Where there is nothing, the king must lose his right*. The object in question was a pound of gold. The culprit had a wife, in whom God had united beauty and prudence. An old miser promised to give a pound of gold, and even more to the lady, upon condition that he committed with her the sin of uncleanness. The lady thought she did not act wrong to save her husband's life. St. Augustin highly approves of her generous resignation. It is true, that the old miser cheated her, and, perhaps, her husband was nevertheless hanged; but she did all that was in her power to save his life.

'You may assure yourself, my child, that when a Jesuit quotes you St. Augustin, that saint must certainly have been in the right. I advise you to nothing; you are prudent, and it is to be presumed, that you will do your husband a service. My Lord St. Pouange is an honest man; he will not deceive you; this is all I can say: I will pray to God for you; and I hope every thing will take place for his glory.'

The beautiful Miss St. Yves, who was not less terrified with the Jesuit's discourse than with the proposals of the deputy minister, returned in despair to her friend. She was tempted to deliver herself by death from the horror of leaving in a shocking captivity the lover she adored, and the shame of releasing him at the dearest of all prices, which was the sole property of this unfortunate lover.

## CHAP. XVII.

### SHE YIELDS THROUGH VIRTUE.

SHE entreated her friend to kill her; but this lady, who was full as indulgent as the Jesuit, spoke to her still more clearly. 'Alas!' said she, 'business is seldom carried on at this agreeable, gallant, and famous court, upon any other terms. The most considerable, as well as the most indifferent places are seldom given away, but at the price required of you. My dear,



' you have inspired me with friendship and confidence; I will own to you, that if I had been as nice as you are, my husband would not enjoy the post upon which he lives; he knows it, and so far from being displeased, he considers me as his benefactress, and himself as my creature. Do you think, that all those who have been at the head of provinces, or even armies, have been indebted for their honours and fortunes solely to their services! There are some who are beholden to the ladies their wives. The dignities of war are solicited by the queen of love; and a place is given to him who has got the handsomest wife.

' You are in a situation that is still more critical; the object is to let your lover see day-light, and to marry him; it is a sacred duty that you are to fulfil. No one has ever censured the great and beautiful ladies I mention to you; the world will applaud you: it will be said, that you only allowed yourself to be guilty of a weakness, through an excess of virtue.'—'Heavens!' cried Miss St. Yves, 'what kind of virtue is this?—What a labyrinth of distress! What a world! What men to become acquainted with! A Father de la Chaise and a ridiculous bailiff imprison my lover; I am persecuted by my family; assistance is offered me, only that I may be dishonoured! A Jesuit has ruined a brave man; another Jesuit wants to ruin me: on every side snares are laid for me, and I am upon the very brink of destruction! I must, even, speak to the king; I will throw myself at his feet as he goes to mass or the play-house.'

'His attendants will not let you approach him,' said her good friend; 'and if you should be so unfortunate as to speak to him, M. de Louvois, or the Reverend Father de la Chaise, might bury you in a convent for the rest of your days.'

Whilst this generous friend thus increased the perplexities of Miss St. Yves's tortured soul, and plunged the dagger deeper in her heart, a messenger arrived from M. de St. Potange with a letter, and two fine pendant ear-rings. Miss St. Yves, with tears, refused accepting of any part of the contents of the packet; but her friend took the charge of them upon herself.

As soon as the messenger was gone,

our confidante read the letter, in which a *petit-souper* (a little supper) was proposed to the two friends for that night. Miss St. Yves protested she would not go, whilst her pious friend endeavoured to make her try on the diamond ear-rings; but Miss St. Yves could not endure them, and opposed it all day long. At length, being entirely wrapped up in the contemplation of her lover, overcome and dragged along, not knowing whether she was carrying, she let herself be led to the fatal supper. She had remained inexorable to all entreaties of putting on the ear-rings; so that her confidante took them with her, and placed them in her ears, against her will, before they sat down to supper. Miss St. Yves was so confused and agitated, that she underwent this torment, and her patron considered it as a very favourable prognostick. Towards the end of the repast, her friend very prudently retired. Her patron then shewed her the revocation of the *lettre de cachet*, the grant of a considerable recompence, and a captain's commission, which were accompanied with unlimited promises. 'Ah!' said Miss St. Yves, with a deep sigh, 'how much should I love you, if you did not desire to be loved so much!'

In a word, after a long resistance, shrieks, cries, and torrents of tears, weakened with the conflict, overwhelmed and languishing, she was compelled to yield; and the only consolation now left her, was, that she resolved to think of nothing but the ingenuous Huron, whilst her cruel ravisher relentlessly enjoyed the advantage of that necessity to which she was reduced.

#### C H A P. XVIII.

##### SHE DELIVERS HER LOVER AND A JANSENIST.

AT day-break she flew to Paris with the minister's mandate. It would be difficult to depict the agitations of her mind in this journey. Image a virtuous and noble soul, humbled by its own reproaches, intoxicated with tenderness, distracted with the remorse of having betrayed her lover, and elated with the pleasure of releasing the object of her adoration. Her torments, her conflicts, her success, by turns engaged her reflections. She was no longer that

that innocent girl whose ideas were confined to a provincial education, Love and misfortunes had united to new-mould her. Sentiment had made as rapid a progress in her mind, as reason had in that of her unfortunate lover. Girls learn to feel more easily than men learn to think. Her adventure afforded her more instruction than four years confinement in a convent.

Her dress was dictated by the greatest simplicity. She viewed with horror the trappings with which she had appeared before her fatal benefactor; her companion had taken her ear-rings without her having before looked at them. Charmed and confused, idolizing the Huron and detesting herself, she at length arrived at the gate of *that dreadful castle, the palace of vengeance, where oft crimes and innocence are alike immured\**.

When she was upon the point of getting out of the coach, her strength failed her; some people came to her assistance: she entered, whilst her heart was in the greatest palpituation, her eyes streaming, and her whole frame bespoke the greatest consternation. She was presented to the governor; he was going to speak to her, but she had lost all power of expression: she shewed her order, whilst, with great difficulty, she articulated some accents. The governor entertained a great esteem for his prisoner, and he was greatly pleased at his being released. His heart was not callous, like those of most of his brethren, who think of nothing but the fees their captives are to pay them; extort their revenues from their victims; and living by the misery of others, conceive a horrid joy at the lamentations of the unfortunate.

He sent for the prisoner into his apartment. The two lovers swooned at the sight of each other. The beautiful Miss St. Yves remained for a long time motionless, without any symptoms of life; the other soon recalled his fortitude. 'This,' said the governor, 'is probably the lady your wife; you did not tell me you were married. I am informed, that it is through her generous solicitude that you have obtained your liberty.'—'Alas!' said the beautiful Miss Yves, in a faltering voice, 'I am not worthy of being his wife; and swooned again.'

When she recovered her senses, she presented, with a trembling hand, the grant and written promise of a company. The Huron, equally astonished and affected, awoke from one dream to fall into another. 'Why was I shut up here? How could you deliver me? Where are the monsters that immured me? You are a divinity sent from heaven to succour me.'

The beautiful Miss St. Yves, with a dejected air, looked at her lover, blushed, and instantly turned away her streaming eyes. In a word, they told him all she knew, and all she had undergone, except what she was willing to conceal for ever, but which any other, except the Huron, more accustomed to the world, and better acquainted with the customs of courts, would have easily guessed.

'Is it possible that a wretch like the bailiff can have deprived me of my liberty? Alas! I find that men, like the vilest of animals, can all hurt. But is it possible that a monk, a Jesuit, the king's confessor, should have contributed to my misfortunes as much as the bailiff, without my being able to imagine under what pretence this detestable knave has persecuted me? Did he make me pass for a Jansenist? In fine, how came you to remember me? I did not deserve it; I was then only a savage. What! could you without advice, without assistance, undertake a journey to Versailles? You there appeared, and my fetters were broke! There must then be in beauty and virtue an invincible charm, that opens gates of adamant, and softens hearts of steel.'

At the word Virtue, a flood of tears issued from the eyes of the beautiful Miss St. Yves. She did not know how far she had been virtuous in the crime with which she reproached herself.

Her lover thus continued: 'Thou angel, who hast broken my chains, if thou hast had sufficient influence (which I cannot yet comprehend) to obtain justice for me, obtain it likewise for an old man, who first taught me to think, as thou didst to love. Misfortunes have united us; I love him as a father; I can neither live without thee nor him. I solicit!—The same man.—Who?—Yes, I will be beholden to

\* De cet affreux chateau, palais de la vengeance, Qui renferme souvent le crime & l'innocence.



'you for every thing, and I will owe nothing to any one but yourself. Write to this man in power, overwhelm me with kindnesses, compleat what you have begun, perfect your miracles.'

She was sensible she ought to do every thing her lover desired. She wanted to write, but her hand refused it's office. She began her letter three times, and tore it as often; at length she got to the end, and the two lovers left the prison, after having embraced the old martyr to efficacious grace.

The happy yet disconsolate Miss St. Yves knew where her brother lodged: thither she repaired; and her lover took an apartment in the same house.

They had scarce reached their lodging, before her protector sent the order for releasing the good old Gordon, at the same time making an appointment with her for the next day.

Thus was every generous and laudable action of the beautiful Miss St. Yves performed at the price of her honour. She considered with detestation this practice of selling at once the happiness and misery of man. She gave the order of release to her lover, and refused the appointment of a benefactor, whom she could no more see without expiring with shame and grief. Her lover could not have left her upon any other errand than to release his friend. He flew to the place of his confinement, and fulfilled this duty in reflecting upon the strange vicissitudes of this world, and admiring the courageous virtue of a young lady, to whom two unfortunate men owed more than their life.

### C H A P. XIX.

THE HURON, THE BEAUTIFUL MISS ST. YVES, AND THEIR RELATIONS, ARE CONVENED.

THE generous and respectable, but faithless girl, was with her brother the abbé de St. Yves, the good prior of the Mountain, and Lady de Kerkabon. They were equally astonished, but their situations and sentiments were very different. The abbé de St. Yves was expiating the wrongs he had done his sister at her feet, and she pardoned him. The prior and his sympathizing sister likewise wept, but it was for joy. The filthy bailiff and his insupportable son did not

trouble this affecting scene. They had set out upon the first report of their antagonist's being released; they flew to bury in their own province their folly and fear.

The four *dramatis personæ*, variously agitated, were waiting for the return of the young man, who was gone to deliver his friend. The abbé St. Yves did not dare raise his eyes to meet those of his sister: the good Kerkabon said—'I shall then see once more my dear nephew.'—'You will see him again,' said the charming Miss St. Yves, 'but he is no longer the same man; his behaviour, his manners, his ideas, his sense, all have undergone a compleat mutation; he is become as respectable, as he was ignorant and strange to every thing. He will be the honour and consolation of your family; could I also be the honour of mine!'—'What, are you not the same as you were?' said the prior. 'What then has happened to work so great a change?'

During this conversation the Huron returned with the Jansenist in his hand. The scene now was changed, and became more interesting. It began by the uncle and aunt's tender embraces. The Abbé de St. Yves almost kissed the knees of the ingenuous Huron, who, by the bye, was no longer ingenuous. The language of the eyes formed all the discourse of the two lovers, who, nevertheless, expressed every sentiment with which they were penetrated. Satisfaction and acknowledgment sparkled in the countenance of the one, whilst embarrassment was depicted in Miss St. Yves's melting eyes somewhat askant. Every one was astonished that she should mingle grief with so much joy.

The venerable Gordon soon endeared himself to the whole family. He had been unhappy with the young prisoner, and this was a sufficient title. He owed his deliverance to the two lovers, and this alone reconciled him to love: the acrimony of his former sentiments was dismissed from his heart; he was converted to a man, as well as the Huron. Every one related his adventures before supper. The two abbés and the aunt listened like children to the relation of stories of ghosts, and like men all interested in so many calamities. 'Alas!' said Gordon, 'there are perhaps upwards of five hundred virtuous people in the same fetters as Miss St. Yves has broken; their  
E misfortunes

' misfortunes are unknown. Many hands are found to strike the unhappy multitude, but seldom one to succour them.' This very just reflection increased his sensibility and gratitude; every thing heightened the triumph of the beautiful Miss St. Yves; the grandeur and intrepidity of her soul were the subjects of each one's admiration. This admiration was blended with that respect which we feel in despite of ourselves for a person whom we think has some influence at court. But the Abbé de St. Yves sometimes said—' What could my sister do, to obtain this influence so soon?'

Supper was ready, and every one seated very early; when lo! the worthy confidante of Versailles arrived, without being acquainted with any thing that had passed; she was in a coach and six, and it was easily seen to whom the equipage belonged. She entered with that air of authority assumed by people in power who have a great deal of business, saluted the company with much indifference, and pulling the beautiful Miss St. Yves on one side, said—' Why do you make people wait so long? Follow me; there are the diamonds you forgot.' However softly she uttered these expressions, the Huron, nevertheless, overheard them; he saw the diamonds; the brother was speechless; the uncle and aunt testified that kind of surprise common to good people, who had never before beheld such magnificence. The young man, whose mind was now formed by a twelve-month's reflections, could not help making some against his will, and was for a moment in anxiety. His mistress perceived it, and a mortal paleness spread itself over her countenance, a tremor seized her, and it was with difficulty she could support herself. ' Ah, Madam!' said she to her fatal friend, ' you have ruined me, you have given me the mortal blow.' These words pierced the heart of the Huron; but he had already learned to possess himself: he did not dwell upon them, lest he should make his mistress uneasy before her brother, but turned pale as well as her.

Miss St. Yves, distracted with the change she perceived in her lover's countenance, pulled the woman out of the room into the passage, and there threw the jewels at her feet, saying—' Alas! these were not my seducers, you know;

but he that gave them shall never set eyes on me again.' Her friend took them up, whilst Miss St. Yves added—' He may either take them again, or give them to you; be gone, and do not make me still more odious to myself.' The embassadress at length returned, not being able to comprehend the remorse to which she had been witness.

The beautiful Miss St. Yves, greatly oppressed, and feeling a revolution in her body that almost suffocated her, was compelled to go to bed; but that she might not alarm any one, she kept her pains and sufferings to herself; and, under pretence of only being weary, she asked leave to take a little rest; this, however, she did not do, till she had re-animated the company with consolatory and flattering expressions, and cast such a kind look upon her lover as darted fire into his soul.

The supper, which she was not fond of, was in the beginning gloomy; but this gloominess was of that interesting kind that affords attracting and useful conversation, so superior to that frivolous joy sought for, and which is usually nothing more than a troublesome noise.

Gordon, in a few words, gave the history of Jansenism and Molinism; of those persecutions with which one party hampered the other; and of the obstinacy of both. The Huron entered into a criticism thereupon, pitying those men who, not satisfied with all the confusion occasioned by their opposite interests, create evils by imaginary interests and unintelligible absurdities. Gordon related, the other judged; the guests listened with emotion, and gained new lights. The length of misfortunes, and the shortness of life, then became the topics. It was remarked that all professions have peculiar vices and dangers annexed to them; and that from the prince down to the lowest beggar, all seem alike to accuse Providence. How happens it that so many men, for so little, perform the office of persecutors, serjeants, and executioners, to others? With what inhuman indifference does a man in place sign the destruction of a family; and with what joy, still more barbarous, do mercenaries execute them?

' I saw in my youth,' said the good old Gordon, ' a relation of the Marshal de Marillac, who being prosecuted in his own province on account of that illustrious



trious but unfortunate man, concealed himself under a borrowed name in Paris. He was an old man near seventy-two years of age. His wife, who accompanied him, was nearly of the same age. They had had a libertine son, who, at fourteen years of age, absconded from his father's house, turned soldier, and deserted; he had gone through every gradation of debauchery and misery: at length, having changed his name, he was in the guards of Cardinal Richelieu, (for this priest, as well as Mazarine, had guards) and had obtained an exempt's staff in their company of serjeants.

This adventurer was appointed to arrest the old man and his wife, and acquitted himself with all the obduracy of a man who was willing to please his master. As he was conducting them, he heard these two victims deplore the long succession of miseries which had befallen them from their cradle. This aged couple reckoned as one of their greatest misfortunes the wildness and loss of their son. He recollected them, but he nevertheless led them to prison; assuring them, that his reverence was to be served in preference to every body else. His eminence rewarded his zeal.

I have seen a spy of Father de la Chaîse betray his own brother, in hopes of a little benefice, which he did not obtain; and I saw him die, not of remorse, but of grief at having been cheated by the Jesuit.

The vocation of a confessor, which I for a long while exercised, made me acquainted with the secrets of families. I have known very few, who, though immersed in the greatest distress, did not externally wear the mask of felicity, and every appearance of joy; and I have always observed, that great grief was the fruit of our unconstrained desires.

For my part, said the Huron, I imagine, that a noble, grateful, sensible man, may always be happy; and I doubt not but to enjoy an unchequered felicity with the charming, generous, Miss St. Yves. For I flatter myself, added he, in addressing himself to her brother with a friendly smile, that you will not now refuse me as you did last year: besides, I shall pursue a more decent method. The abbé was con-

founded in apologies for the past, and in protesting an eternal attachment.

Uncle Kerkabon said this would be the most glorious day of his whole life. His good aunt, in extasies and floods of joy, cried out—I always said you would never be a sub-deacon; this sacrament is preferable to the other; would to God I had been honoured with it! but I will serve you for a mother. And now every one vied with each other in applauding the gentle Miss St. Yves.

Her lover's heart was too full of what she had done for him, and he loved her too much, for the affair of the jewels to make any predominant impression on him. But those words which he too well heard, *you have given me the mortal blow*, still secretly terrified him, and interrupted all his joy, whilst the eulogiums paid his beautiful mistress still increased his love. In a word, nothing was thought of but her, nothing was mentioned but the happiness those two lovers deserved. A plan was agitated to live altogether at Paris, and schemes of grandeur and fortune succeeded: these hopes, which the smallest ray of happiness engenders, strongly operated. But the Huron felt in the secret recesses of his heart, a sentiment that exploded this illusion. He read over the promises signed by St. Pouange, and the commission signed Louvois; these men were painted to him such as they were, or such as they were thought to be. Every one spoke of the ministers and the administration with the freedom of convivial conversation, which is considered in France as the most precious liberty to be obtained on earth.

If I were king of France, said the Huron, this is the kind of minister that I would chuse for the war department. I would have a man of the highest birth, as he is to give orders to the nobility. I would require that he should himself have been an officer, and passed through the various gradations; or, at least, that he had attained the rank of Lieutenant General, and was worthy of being a Marshal of France. For is it not necessary that he should have served himself, to be acquainted with the details of the service; and will not officers obey with a hundred times more alacrity, a military man, who like themselves has been

signalized by his courage, than a mere man of the cabinet, who, at most, can only guess at the operations of a campaign, let him have ever so great a share of sense? I should not be displeased at my minister's generosity, even though it might sometimes embarrass a little the keeper of the royal treasure. I should chuse him to have a facility in business, and that he should distinguish himself by that kind of gaiety of mind, which is the lot of a man superior to business, so agreeable to the nation, and which renders the performance of every duty less irksome. This is the character he would have chosen for a minister, as he had constantly observed, that such an amiable disposition is incompatible with cruelty.

Monsieur de Louvois would not, perhaps, have been satisfied with the Huron's wishes; his merit lay in a different walk. But whilst they were still at table, the disorder of this unhappy girl took a fatal turn; her blood was on fire, the symptoms of a malignant fever had appeared; she suffered, but did not complain, unwilling to disturb the pleasure of the guests.

Her brother knowing that she was not asleep, went to the foot of her bed: he was astonished at the condition he found her in. Every body flew to her; her lover appeared next to her brother. He was certainly the most alarmed, and the most affected of any one; but he had learned to unite discretion to all the happy gifts nature had bestowed upon him, and a quick sensibility of decorum began to prevail over him.

A neighbouring physician was immediately sent for. He was one of those itinerant doctors, who confound the last disorder they were consulted upon with the present: who follow a blind practice, in a science from which the most mature investigation, and justest observations, do not preclude uncertainty and danger. He greatly increased the disorder, by prescribing a fashionable nostrum.—Can fashion extend to medicine? This phrenzy was then too prevalent in Paris.

The grief of Miss St. Yves contributed still more than her physician to render her disorder fatal. Her body suffered martyrdom in the torments of her mind. The crowd of thoughts which agitated her breast, communicated to her veins a more dangerous poison than that of the most burning fever.

## C H A P. XX.

## THE DEATH OF THE BEAUTIFUL MISS ST. YVES, AND ITS CONSEQUENCES.

**A**NOTHER physician was called in. This, instead of assisting nature, and leaving it to act in a young person whose organs recalled the vital stream, applied himself solely to counteract the effects of his brother's prescription. The disorder in two days became mortal. The brain, which is thought to be the seat of the mind, was as violently afflicted as the heart, which, we are told, is the seat of the passions. By what incomprehensible mechanism are the organs in subjection to sentiment and thought? How is it that a single melancholy idea shall disturb the whole course of the blood; and that the blood should, in turn, communicate it's irregularities to the human understanding? What is that unknown fluid, which certainly exists, and, quicker and more active than light, flies in less than the twinkling of an eye into all the channels of life, produces sensations, memory, joy or grief, reason or phrenzy; recalls with horror what we would chuse to forget; and renders a thinking animal either a subject of admiration, or an object of pity and compassion?

These were the reflections of the good old Gordon; and these observations, so natural, which men seldom make, did not prevent his feeling upon the occasion; for he was not of the number of those gloomy philosophers, who pique themselves upon being insensible. He was affected at the fate of this young woman, like a father who sees his dear child yielding to a slow death. The Abbé St. Yves was desperate; the prior and his sister shed floods of tears; but who could describe the situation of her lover? All expression falls far short of the summit of his affliction, and language here proves it's imperfection.

His aunt, almost lifeless, supported the head of the departing fair in her feeble arms; her brother was upon his knees at the foot of the bed; her lover squeezed her hand, which he bathed in tears; his groans rent the air, whilst he called her his guardian angel, his life, his hope, his better half, his mistress, his wife. At the word Wife, a sigh escaped her, whilst she



she looked upon him with inexpressible tenderness, and then abruptly gave a horrid scream. Presently, in one of those intervals when grief, the oppression of the senses, and pain, subside, and leave the soul its liberty and powers, she cried out—'I your wife! Ah! dear lover, this name, this happiness, this felicity, were not destined for me! I die, and I deserve it. O God of my heart!—O you, whom I sacrificed to infernal dæmons—it is done—I am punished—live and be happy.' These tender, but dreadful expressions, were incomprehensible; yet they melted and terrified every heart. She had the courage to explain herself, and her auditors quaked with astonishment, grief, and pity. They with one voice detested the man in power, who repaired a shocking act of injustice only by his crimes, and who had forced the most amiable innocence to be his accomplice.

'Who? you guilty!' said her lover, 'no, you are not; guilt can only be in the heart;—yours is devoted solely to virtue and to me.'

This opinion he corroborated by such expressions as seemed to recal the beautiful Miss St. Yves back to life. She felt some consolation from them, and was astonished at being still beloved. The aged Gordon would have condemned her at the time he was only a Jansenist; but having attained wisdom, he esteemed her, and wept.

In the midst of these lamentations and fears, whilst the dangerous situation of this worthy girl engrossed every breast, and all were in the greatest consternation, a courier arrived from court. 'A courier! from whom? and upon what account?' He was sent by the king's confessor to the prior of the Mountain: it was not Father de la Chaise who wrote, but brother Vadbled, his valet de chambre, a man of great consequence at that time, who acquainted the arch-bishops with the Reverend Father's pleasure, who gave audience, promised benefices, and sometimes issued *lettres de cachet*. He wrote to the abbé of the Mountain, that his Reverence had been informed of his nephew's exploits; that his being sent to prison was through mistake; that such little disgraces frequently happened, and should therefore not be attended to; and, in fine, it behoved him, the prior, to come and present his nephew the next day: that he was to bring with him that

good man Gordon; and that he, brother Vadbled, should introduce them to his Reverence and M. de Louvois, who would say a word to them in his anti-chamber.

To which he added, that the history of the Huron, and his combat against the English, had been related to the king; that doubtless the king would deign to take notice of him in passing through the gallery, and perhaps he might even nod his head to him. The letter concluded by flattering him with hopes that all the ladies of the court would shew their eagerness to send for his nephew to their toilets; and that several among them would say to him—'Good day, Mr. Huron;' and that he would certainly be talked of at the king's supper. The letter was signed, 'Your affectionate brother Jesuit, Vadbled.'

The prior having read the letter aloud, his furious nephew for a moment suppressed his rage, and said nothing to the bearer: but turning towards the companion of his misfortunes, asked him, what he thought of that stile. Gordon replied—'This, then, is the way that men are treated like monkeys; they are first beaten, and then they dance.' The Huron resuming his character, which always returned in the great emotions of his soul, tore the letter to bits, and threw them in the courier's face: 'There's my answer,' said he. His uncle in terrors, who fancied he saw thunderbolts, and twenty *lettres de cachet* at once fall upon him, immediately wrote the best excuse he could for these transports of passion in a young man, which he considered as the ebullition of a great soul.

But a solicitude of a more melancholy stamp now seized every heart. The beautiful and unfortunate Miss St. Yves was already sensible of her approaching end; she was serene, but it was that kind of shocking serenity, the effect of exhausted nature, no longer able to withstand the conflict. 'Oh, my dear lover!' said she in a faltering voice, 'death punishes me for my weakness; but I expire with the consolation of knowing you are free. I adored you, whilst I betrayed you, and I adore you in bidding you an eternal adieu.'

She did not make a parade of a ridiculous fortitude; she did not understand that miserable glory of having some of her neighbours say, she died with cou-

rage. Who, at twenty, can be at once torn from her lover, from life, and what is called honour, without regret, without some pangs? She felt all the horror of her situation, and made it felt by those expiring looks and accents which speak with so much energy. In a word, she shed tears like other people, at those intervals that she was capable of giving vent to them.

Let others strive to celebrate the pompous deaths of those who insensibly rush into destruction. This is the lot of all animals; we die like them, only when age or disorders make us resemble them by the stupidity of our organs. Whoever suffers a great loss, must feel great regret; if they are stifled, it is nothing but vanity that is pursued, even in the arms of death.

When the fatal moment came, all around her most feelingly expressed their grief, by incessant tears and lamentations. The Huron was senseless. Great souls feel more violent sensations than those of less tender dispositions. The good old Gordon knew enough of him to make him dread, that when he came to himself, he would be guilty of suicide. All kinds of arms were put out of his way, which the unfortunate young man perceived: he said to his relations and Gordon, without shedding any tears, without a groan, or the least emotion—'Do you then think, that any one upon earth hath the right and power to prevent my putting an end to my life?' Gordon took care to avoid making a parade of those common-place declamations whereby it is endeavoured to be proved, that we are not allowed to exercise our liberty in ceasing to be, when we are in a shocking situation; that we may not leave the house, when we can no longer remain in it; that a man is on earth like a soldier at his post: as if it signified to the Being of beings, whether the conjunction of the particles of matter were in one spot or another; impotent reasons, to which a firm and contemplated despair disdains to listen, and to which Cato replied only with the use of a poniard.

The Huron's sullen and dreadful silence, his doleful aspect, his trembling lips, and the shivering of his whole frame, to every spectator's soul communicated that mixture of compassion and terror, which fetters all it's powers, precludes discourse, and is only uttered by faltering accents. The hostess and her family

came running; they trembled to behold the state of his desperation, yet all kept their eyes upon him, and attended to all his motions. The ice-cold corpse of the beautiful Miss St. Yves had already been carried into a lower-hall, out of the sight of her lover, who seemed still in search of it, though incapable of observing any object.

In the midst of this spectacle of death, whilst the dead body was exposed at the door of the house; whilst two priests by the side of a holy water-pot were repeating prayers with an air of distraction; whilst some passengers, through idleness, sprinkled the bier with some drops of holy water, and others went their ways quite indifferent; whilst her parents were drowned in tears, and every one thought the lover would not survive his loss;—in this situation St. Pouange arrived with his female Versailles friend.

His transitory taste having been but once gratified, it became a fixed passion. A refusal of his generous gifts had piqued his pride. Father de la Chaise would never have suggested the thought of coming into this house; but St. Pouange having constantly before his eyes the image of the beautiful Miss St. Yves; burning to satisfy a passion, which, by a single enjoyment, had fixed in his heart the poignancy of desire; did not hesitate coming himself in search of her, whom he would not, perhaps, have been inclined to see a third time, had she went to him of her own accord.

He alighted from his coach; and the first object that presented itself was a bier: he turned away his eyes with that simple distaste of a man bred up in pleasures, and who thinks he should avoid a spectacle which might recal him to the contemplation of human misery. He is inclined to go up stairs, whilst his female friend enquires, through curiosity, whose funeral it was. The name of Miss St. Yves is pronounced. At this name she turned, and gave a shocking shriek. St. Pouange now returns, whilst surprise and grief possess his soul. The good old Gordon stood with streaming eyes: he, for a moment, ceased his lamentations, to acquaint the courtier with all the circumstances of this melancholy catastrophe. He spoke with that authority which is the companion to sorrow and virtue. St. Pouange was not naturally wicked; the torrent of business and amusements had hurried away his soul, which was not yet acquainted with itself.

He



He did not border upon that grey age, which usually hardens the hearts of ministers; he listened to Gordon with a downcast look, and some tears escaped him, which he was surprized to shed; in a word, he repented.

'I will,' said he, 'absolutely see this extraordinary man you have mentioned to me; he affects me almost as much as this innocent victim, whose death I have been the occasion of.' Gordon followed him as far as the chamber, where were the prior Kerkabon, the abbé St. Yves, and some neighbours, who were recalling to life the young man, who had again fainted.

'I have been the cause of your misfortunes,' said this deputy minister, 'and my whole life shall be employed in making reparation.' The first idea that struck the Huron was to kill him, and then destroy himself. Nothing was more suitable to the circumstances; but he was without arms, and closely watched. St. Pouange was not rebuked with refusals, accompanied with reproach, contempt, and the insults he deserved, which were lavished upon him. Time softens every thing. Monf. de Louvois at length succeeded in making an excellent officer

of the Huron, who has appeared under another name at Paris and in the army, applauded by all honest men, being at once a warrior and an intrepid philosopher.

He never mentioned this adventure without being greatly affected; and yet his greatest consolation was to speak of it. He cherished the memory of his beloved Miss St. Yves to the last moment of his life. The abbé St. Yves and the prior were each provided with good livings; the good Kerkabon rather chose to see his nephew invested with military honours than in the sub-deaconry. The devotee of Versailles kept the diamond ear-rings, and received besides a handsome present. Father Tout à tous had presents of chocolate, coffee, and confectionary, with the Meditations of the Reverend Father Croiset, and the Flower of the Saints, bound in Morocco. Good old Gordon lived with the Huron till his death, in the most friendly intimacy; he had also a benefice, and forgot for ever effectual grace, and the concomitant concourse. He took for his motto—'*Misfortunes are of some use.*' How many worthy people are there in the world who may justly say—'*Misfortunes are good for nothing?*'

#### FINIS.

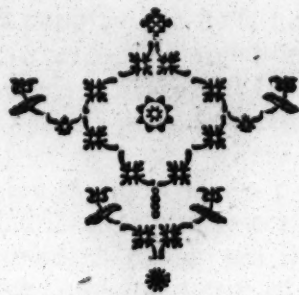




THE  
ENGLISH HERMIT;  
OR,  
UNPARALLELED SUFFERINGS,  
AND  
SURPRIZING ADVENTURES,  
OF  
MR. PHILIP QUARLL.

WHO WAS LATELY DISCOVERED ON AN UNINHABITED ISLAND IN THE  
SOUTH-SEA;

WHERE HE HAD LIVED ABOVE FIFTY YEARS, WITHOUT ANY HUMAN  
ASSISTANCE.



LONDON:

Printed for HARRISON and Co. N<sup>o</sup> 18, Paternoster Row.

M DCC LXXXVI.





THE  
P R E F A C E.

**T**RUTH and *Fiction* have, of late, been so promiscuously blended together, in performances of this nature, that, in the present case, it seems absolutely necessary to distinguish the *one* from the *other*. If Robinson Crusoe, Moll Flanders, and Colonel Jack, have had their admirers among the lower rank of readers; it is as certain that the morality in masquerade, which may be discovered in the Travels of Lemuel Gulliver, has been an equal entertainment to the superior class of mankind.

Now it may, without the least arrogance, be affirmed, that though this *surprising Narrative* be not so replete with *vulgar stories* as the former, or so interspersed with a *satirical* vein, as the last of the above-mentioned treatises; yet it is certainly of more use to the Public than either of them, because every incident herein related is real matter of fact. But because my share in this work is no other than that of a bare Editor, I think it my duty to account for the possession of this Manuscript.

It was put into my hands, about a year ago, by Mr. Dorrington, an eminent merchant, with full liberty to publish it when, and in what manner, I thought most proper. I hope, therefore, it will not be deemed impertinent to give some account of my friend, as a reputation to the work itself.

Mr. Edward Dorrington is descended from a very ancient and honourable family in Staffordshire. His grandfather, Mr. Joseph Dorrington, removed out of that county, to Frome in Somersetshire; his employ was that of a very considerable grazier. The issue he left at his decease was one son, Richard, (the father of my friend) and two daughters. Mr. Richard Dorrington, for some time, was a student of Gray's Inn; but liking a country life best, he having thoroughly qualified himself, retired to Frome, the above-mentioned residence of his father; where he married Mrs. Margaret Groves, of Taunton, a gentlewoman of about a thousand pounds fortune. Soon after his marriage, he went and settled at Bath, where the integrity of his fair practice soon rendered him eminent in his profession. He acquired a very competent estate, and died in the year 1708, having no other issue than his only son, the present Mr. Edward Dorrington, whom he had put to be bred a merchant, under the care of Mr. Stephen Graham of Bristol. His diligence and courteous behaviour, during his servitude, so highly recommended him to his master's esteem, that, when his time was expired, he admitted him into a moiety of his commerce, married him to his daughter, and gave her an handsome portion suitable to his merit.

The happiness of my acquaintance with him began in his apprenticeship; and has, with the greatest satisfaction to me, continued ever

## P R E F A C E.

As to the genuineness of this Treatise, I am farther to assure the reader, that as Mr. Dorrington is allowed, by all who know him, to be a gentleman of unquestionable veracity, and above attempting an imposition upon the public; so the *first* Book herein was wholly written by himself, and the *second* and *third* Books were faithfully transcribed from Mr. Quarll's parchment-roll, which was a continuation of what my friend had begun.

When Mr. Dorrington undertook this voyage, he set sail, as is well known, from Bristol to the South Sea; and traded all along that coast to Mexico, now called New Spain.

And he is now making a second voyage to the same places.

To proceed to the Work itself. The *first* Book contains a relation of Mr. Dorrington's discovery of Mr. Quarll; his several conferences with him; a description of the island, and the manner of our Hermit's living there; with many other curious particulars.

The *second* and *third* Books are the contents of the Hermit's parchment roll above-mentioned; and contain the most surprizing, as well as various turns of fortune ever yet recounted in any work of this kind. And although the continued series of misfortunes which attended him, seemed to render his life an example of the most unhappy state of human nature; yet we do not find so great an enormity in his actions, that vengeance should pursue him so closely by unparalleled crosses. If polygamy could call down such divine resentments, we must be silent; nor farther urge his fate.

However, for this fact he was brought to justice by the laws of his country; and he accounts for the inducements of his committing that sin at his trial. This reflection, therefore, should be wiped off, since he is now become the humblest of penitents.

The observations throughout these sheets will be found to be modest, serious, and instructive, and all centre in the unerring moral, that—

Whate'er we do, or wherefoe'er we're driven,  
Still, we must own, such is the will of Heaven.

To conclude. In the publication of these papers I have discharged two promises; the one made by Mr. Dorrington to the Hermit, and the other made by myself to Mr. Dorrington: and that they may meet with a reception, as candid as they are useful, is the hearty wish of

The Public's humble Servant,

P. L.





ON THE  
HERMIT'S SOLITUDE.

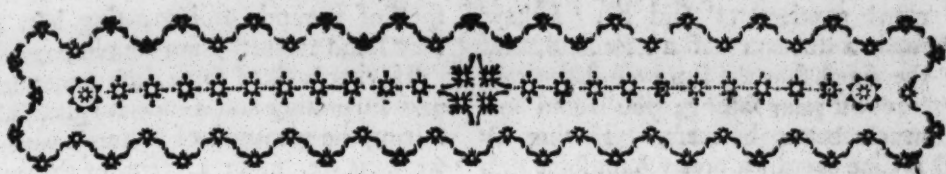
**B**EHOLD a man in his *first class* of years,  
When youthful sports made way for growing cares,  
'The chequer'd fortunes of a manly age,  
Busies reflecting sense with thoughts more sage :  
Various affairs will cause a world of woes ;  
Then, in the fall of life, how sweet's repose !  
The calm, he now enjoys, makes full amends  
For all he felt ; Heav'n never ill intends :  
Suff'rings are sent to us from God above,  
To make us practise faith and sacred love ;  
Aw'd into patience by fresh scenes of fate,  
We live too soon, and learn to live too late.  
In busy worlds, and trading peopled towns,  
More fast we sin, than sin itself abounds.  
In soft repose, Quarll empires does disdain ;  
Free from disquiet, solitude's his gain.  
Thoughts more sublime, a haven more serene,  
Nought e'er to vex him that may cause the spleen.  
Methinks I with him share of Eden's grove,  
And wish no better Paradise to rove :  
Here's not Ambition with her gaudy train,  
Nor Envy trampling down the poor or mean ;  
Nor Avarice nor haughty Pride-invade,  
Nor can Remorse his slumb'ring nights upbraid ;  
In peace he rests, unenvy'd or unknown,  
And pities monarchs on their toilsome throne.  
No king that reigns, but must as mortals die ;  
And when they rule, no subject should ask, Why ?  
Heav'n grants them licence ; and, when God gives laws,  
Where's the bold man that dares dispute the cause ?  
Would the great men from one so mean be told,  
They serve a crown for int'rest and for gold ?  
'Tis with content Quarll lives ; he's truly blest'd,  
Has nought to dread, nor is with aught distress'd ;  
Prays for his country, and it's present prince,  
That he may reign in heav'n when call'd from hence.  
Here, in these lonely shades, he just uprose,  
A type of resurrection to disclose ;  
A resurrection from a watery hell,  
Where shoals of terrors strove which should excel ;  
A resurrection, emblem of the last,  
Which will recal our ev'ry guilt that's past ;  
Drawing a glare of conscience to our view,  
Of horror for our sins, both old and new :

But

# ON THE HERMIT'S SOLITUDE,

But so unspotted in his present state,  
 I'd wish myself as happy; not more great:  
 I'd know no change; but, when God calls, obey.  
 Prepar'd in my account for judgment-day:  
 Then happy rise from cares, and worldly toys,  
 To more substantial and eternal joys.  
 This honest HERMIT, at a transient view,  
 Seems to be born all precedent t' out-do:  
 Something uncommon makes him wond'rous seem;  
 Sound are his morals, drawn from ev'ry theme.  
 Thus from our English HERMIT learn to know,  
 That early piety opposes woe.  
 Thro' ev'ry stage of life see Philip toft,  
 And on a desert shore by tempest cast,  
 Where he's most happy, when imagin'd lost:  
 So true it is, the Gods our good design,  
 As lab'ring slaves dig diamonds from a mine.  
 From rugged rocks the sailors gain a prize,  
 And, shipwreck'd oft, from death to life arise;  
 So may we at the last dread trumpet's sound,  
 By true repentance here on earth, be found  
 Acceptable in heav'n, where joys abound!  
 In grateful hymns hail in the new spring-day;  
 And, like the angels, never cease to pray.  
 A kingdom Quarll doth undisturb'd enjoy;  
 He's rais'd a monarch from an abject boy.  
 And here I can't omit the pencil'd plan  
 Of Beaufidelle his monkey, and his man:  
 The docile beast most servilely obeys,  
 And justly merits more than human praise;  
 A beauty of his kind, good-natur'd too,  
 A brute so pleasing, wonderful, and new;  
 Subservient to his lord, loving and just:  
 Where's human servant we can thus intrust?





# THE ENGLISH HERMIT.

## BOOK I.

AN ACCOUNT HOW MR. QUARLL WAS  
FOUND OUT; WITH A DESCRIPTION  
OF HIS DRESS, HABITATION,  
AND UTENSILS; AS ALSO HIS CON-  
VERSATION WITH THE PERSONS  
WHO FIRST DISCOVERED HIM.



HAVING concluded those mercantile affairs, which I undertook, by this voyage, to negotiate; and being upon my return for England, and wind-bound; during my stay I daily walked about the sea-shore. Very early one morning, the weather being extremely fair, and the sea wonderful calm, as I was taking my usual turn, I accidentally fell into discourse with a Spanish Mexican inhabitant, named Alvarado: and, as we were viewing the rocks which abound in those seas, he desired me to take notice of a vast long one about seven leagues from shore, which he said was supposed to inclose some land, by it's great extent; but the access to it was very dangerous, by reason of the rocks, which reach so far under water, being in some places too shallow for boats, and in others too deep to ford over; and the sea, commonly very rough in that place, hitherto prevented farther research, supposing the advantage which might accrue from the land would not countervail the cost and trouble of making it inhabitable; for that he and some friends had on a fine day, as it now was, the curiosity to go as near as they could with safety, which was about fifty yards from the main rock, but were forced to return as unsatisfied as they went; only, that he had the pleasure of catching some delicious fish, which

lay playing upon the surface of the water, having a rod in his hand, and lines in his pocket, being seldom without, when he walks on the sea-shore. These fish are somewhat larger than a herring in it's prime, skinned like a mackarel, made as a gudgeon, and of divers beautiful colours, especially if caught in a fair day; having since observed, that they are more or less beautiful according to the serenity of the weather.

The account he gave me of them excited my curiosity to go and catch some; and he being, as usual, provided with tackle, we picked up a parcel of yellow maggots, which breed in dead tortoises upon the rock, at which those fishes bite very eagerly.

Thus equipped with all necessaries for the sport, we agreed with a young fellow, one of the long-boat's crew belonging to the ship I was come over in; whose master being just come on shore, and not expected to return speedily, he readily consented to row us thither for about the value of a shilling.

Being come to the place, we found extraordinary sport: the fishes were so eager, that our lines were no sooner in but we had a bite.

Whilst we were fishing, the young man that rowed us thither, spying a clift in the rock, through which he saw a light, had a mind to see what was at the other side; so put off his cloaths in order to wade to it: thus, having taken the hitcher of the boat, he groped along for sure footing, the rock being very full of holes.

Being come to the clift, he crept through, and in a short time returned, calling to us with precipitation, which expressed both joy and surprize—'Gentle-  
'men!

'men! gentlemen!' said he, 'I have made a discovery of a new land, and the finest that the sun ever shone on: leave off your fishing; you'll find here much better business.' Having by that time caught a pretty handsome dish of fish, we put up our tackling, fastened our boat to the rock, and so we went to see this new-found land.

Being come at the other side of the rock, we saw, as he said, a most delightful country; but despaired going to it, there being a lake about a mile long at the bottom of the rock, which parted it from the land; for neither Alvarado nor myself could swim; but the young fellow, who could, having leaped into the water, finding it all the way but breast-high, we went in also, and waded to the other side, which ascended gently, about five or six feet from the lake, to a most pleasant land, flat and level, covered with a curious grass, something like chamomile, but of no smell, and of an agreeable taste: it bore also abundance of fine lofty trees, of different kinds and make, which in several places stood in clusters, composing groves of different height and largeness. Being come to a place where the trees stood in such a disposition as gave our sight a greater scope, we saw, at some distance, a most delightful wood of considerable extent. The agreeableness of the perspective made by nature, both for the creating pleasure, and condolence of grief, prompted my curiosity to a view of the delights which the distance we were at might, in some measure, rob us of: but Alvarado, who, till then, had discerned nothing whereby we could judge the island to be inhabited, was fearful, and would not venture farther that way, lest we should of a sudden be sallied upon by wild beasts out of the wood; and, as I could not discommend his precaution, the thickness of it giving room to believe there might be dangerous creatures in it; so we went southward, finding numbers of fine trees, and here and there small groves, which we judged to be composed of forty or fifty several trees: but, upon examination, we found it, to our great amazement, to proceed from only one plant, whose outmost lower branches bending to the ground, about seven or eight feet from the middle stem, struck root, and became plants, which did the same; and in that manner covered a considerable

spot of ground; still growing less, as they stood farthest from the old body.

Having walked some time under that most surprizing and wonderful plant, admiring the greatness of Nature's works, we went on, finding several of the same in our way, wherein harboured monkeys; but their swift flight prevented our discerning their colours: yet, going on, we found there were two kinds; one having green backs, yellow faces and bellies; the other grey, with white bellies and faces; but both sorts exceeding beautiful.

At some distance we perceived three things standing together, which I took to be houses: 'I believe,' said I, 'this island is inhabited; for, if I mistake not, yonder are dwelling places.'—'So they are,' said Alvarado; 'and therefore I don't think it wisdom to venture any farther, lest they should be savages and do us hurt;' so would have gone back: but I was resolved to see what they were, and persuaded him to go on; saying, it would be time enough for us to retreat when we perceived danger. 'That may be too late,' said he: 'for as evil doth not always succeed danger, danger doth not always precede evil; we may be surprized.'—'Well, well,' said I, 'if any people should come upon us, we must see them at some distance; and if we can't avoid them, here are three of us, a good long staff with an iron point at one end, and an hook at the other; I shall exercise that, and keep them off, at least till you get away: come along, and fear not.' So I pulled him along.

Being come near enough to discern better, we found, that what we took for houses were rather arbours, being apparently made of green trees: then, indeed, I began to fancy some wild people inhabited them, and doubted whether it were safe to go nearer; but concealed my doubt, lest I should intimidate Alvarado so that he should run away, to which he was very much inclined. I only slackened my pace, which Alvarado perceiving, imagined that I saw some evil coming, which he thought unavoidable; and not daring to go from his company, he only consoled his misfortune, saying, he dearly repented taking my advice; that he feared we should pay dearly for our silly curiosity; for indeed those things were more like thieves dens,



dens, or wild people's huts, than Christians habitations.

By this time we were come near a spot of ground, pretty clear of trees, on which some animals were feeding, which I took to be goats; but Alvarado fancied them to be deers by their swift flight at our appearing: however, I inferred by their shyness, that we were out of the way in our judgment concerning the arbours; 'For,' said I, 'if these were inhabited, those creatures would not have been so scared at the sight of men; and, if by nature wild, they would not graze so near men's habitations, had there been any body in them. I rather believe some hermit has formerly lived there, and is either dead or gone.' Alvarado, who to that time had neither heard nor seen any thing that could contradict what I said, began to acquiesce to it, and goes on.

Being come within reach of plain discernment, we were surprized: 'If these,' said I, 'be the works of savages, they far exceed our expert artists.' Their regularity appeared unconfined to the rules of art, and compleat architecture without the craft of the artist; nature and time only being capable of bringing them to that perfection. They were neither houses, huts, nor arbours; yet had all the usefulness and agreements of each.

Having sufficiently admired the uncommon beauty of the outside without interruption, but rather diverted with the most agreeable harmony of various singing-birds, as perched on a green hedge, which surrounded about one acre of land near the place, we had the curiosity to see the inside; and, being nearest the middlemost, we examined that first. It was about nine feet high, and as much square; the walls were straight and smooth, covered with green leaves, something like those of a mulberry-tree, lying as close and regular as slates on a slated house: the top went up rounding like a cupola, and covered in the same manner as the sides; from each corner issued a straight stem, about twelve feet higher, bare of branches to the top, which were very full of leaves, and spread over, making a most pleasant canopy to the mansion beneath.

Being full of admiration at the wonderful structure and nature of the place, we came to a door which was made of green twigs, neatly woven, and fastened

with a small stick, through a loop made of the same.

The door being fastened without, gave us encouragement to venture in; it being evident that the host was absent: so we opened it; and the first thing we saw, being opposite to the door, was a bed lying on the ground, which was an hard dry hearth, very smooth and clean. We had the curiosity to examine what it was made of, and found it another subject of admiration. The covering was a mat about three inches thick, made of a sort of grass, which, though as dry as the oldest hay, was as green as a leek, felt as soft as cotton, and was as warm as wool; the bed was made of the same, and in the same manner, but three times as thick; which made it as easy as a down bed: under that lay another, but somewhat harder.

At one side of the room stood a table made of two pieces of thin oak board, about three feet long, fastened upon four sticks driven into the ground, and by it a chair made of green twigs, as the door; at the other side of the room lay a chest on the ground like a sailor's small chest; over it, against the wall, hung a linen jacket and breeches, such as seamen wear on board; on another pin hung a large coat, or gown, made of the same sort of grass, and after the same manner, as the bed's covering, but not above half an inch thick; and a cap by it of the same: these we supposed to be a winter garb for somebody.

Having viewed the furniture of the dwelling-place, we examined it's fabric, which we could not find out by the outside, it being so closely covered with leaves; but the inside being bare, we found it to be several trees, whose bodies met close, and made a solid wall, which by the breadth of every stem, we judged to be about six inches thick: their bark being very smooth, and of a pleasant olive colour, made a mighty agreeable wainscoting; the roof, which was hung very thick with leaves, was branches, which reached from end to end, and were crossed over by the side ones that were woven between, which made a very even and smooth cieling, so thick of leaves and branches, that no rain could penetrate. My companion's uneasiness, expecting the host's return every moment, hindered my examining every thing more narrowly; and, having slightly looked into the chest, which lay open,

B

wherein

wherein we saw nothing but sheets of parchment, which his haste would not permit me to look into, we went away.

Going out, we saw at one corner of the room, behind the door, a couple of firelocks, the sight of which much alarmed my company, and, I must confess, startled me; for, till then, I was inclinable to believe some hermit dwelt in the place; but finding arms in the room of a crucifix and religious pictures, which were the common ornaments of those religious men, made me waver in my opinion: and, having taken the pieces in my hands, which, for rust, appeared not to have been fit for use for many years, renewed my former opinion; supposing them to be the effects of some shipwreck, which the hermit found upon the rocks. But my company, persisting in their own, hastened out, and would have gone quite away, without seeing any more, had I not, by many arguments, made them sensible, that if those arms had been intended for the evil use Alvarado imagined, they would have been kept in better order; to which being obliged to acquiesce, he consented to go and examine the other, it being as worthy of admiration as that we had seen, though quite of another nature, but much of the same height and make.

The next we came at was covered all over with the same sort of grass as grew on the ground, which lay as even as though it had been mowed and rolled: behind it were several lodges, made, as it were, for some dogs; but we neither saw nor heard any.

Having viewed the place all round, we posted the young fellow with us at the outside, to give notice when any body appeared, lest we should be surprized whilst we saw the inside: so, having opened the door, which was made and fastened after the manner of the first, we went in, expecting to find another dwelling-place, but it proved rather a kitchen; there being no bed, but only a parcel of shells, of different sizes, which we supposed to be applied for utensils, some being scorched at the outside as having been on the fire, but exceeding clean within: the rest were, both inside and outside, as fine as nakes of pearl.

At one end of the room was a hole cut in the ground like stew-stoves in great kitchens; about three or four feet from that, there was another fire-place, made of three stones, fit to roast at; in

both which places appeared to have been fire lately, by wood coals, and ashes fresh made. This confirmed my opinion that it was an hermitage. Alvarado, who all along feared we should meet with men who would misuse us, was not a little pleased to find fire-places in room of beds, and kitchen utensils instead of weapons. 'I hope,' said he, 'we are not in so great danger as I feared; here cannot be many men, unless they crowd together in yonder place; and, if so, they would have been here before now, had they been in the way.' His fears being in a great measure dispersed, we looked about more leisurely; and, seeing several shells, that were covered, on a shelf that lay cross two sticks that were stuck in the wall, which was made of turf, we had the curiosity to see what was in them; and found, in one, pickled anchovies; in others mushrooms, capers, and other sorts of pickles. 'Let them,' said I, 'be who they will that dwell here, I am sure they know good eating; and therefore, probably, may be no strangers to good manners.' Upon another shelf, behind the door, lay divers sorts of dried fishes; and upon the ground stood, uncovered, two chests with fish and flesh in salt.

These provisions being somewhat too voluptuous for an hermit, gave us room for speculation. 'I have lived,' said Alvarado, 'at Mexico these six years, and have been at Peru above twenty times, and yet never heard talk of this island: the access to it is so difficult and dangerous, that, I dare say, we are the first that have been on these sides of the rocks. I am very apt to believe, that a company of determined Buccaneers, which are said to frequent these seas, shelter here; and that the habitation we have seen, and this place, belong to their captain; and that the company resort in caves up and down these rocks.' Really I could not well gainsay it, being too probable; yet I would not altogether acquiesce to his opinion, lest he should thereby take a motive to go away before we had seen the other place. 'I must confess,' said I, 'here's room for conjectures, but no proof of certainty: however, let it be as you say, it is a plain case here are none to disturb us; therefore, whilst we have liberty, let us see the other place.' So we fastened the door as we found it, and went to the next, which

was



was shut after the same manner as the two preceding, but made of quite different stuff; being a compleat arbour, composed of trees, planted within a foot of one another, whose branches were woven together in such a regular manner, that they made several agreeable compartments, and so close, that nothing but air could enter; it was of the same height and bigness with the kitchen, which stood at the other end of the dwelling-place, which made a very uniform wing to it.

The coolness of the arbour removed our doubts of it's being another dwelling, unless only used in hot weather.

Having sufficiently viewed the outside, we went in, and found several boards, like dressers or tables in a pantry, on which lay divers broad and deep shells, as beautiful as those in the kitchen, in some of which was butter, in others cream and milk. On a shelf lay several small cheeses, and on another a parcel of roots like Jerusalem artichokes, which seemed to have been roasted. All this did but confirm the opinion we were in, that it was no hermitage; there being sufficient to gratify the appetite, as well as to support nature. Therefore, not knowing what to think of the master of the house, we made no long stay, but concluded to haste and get our fish dressed, it being near dinner-time; and as the trees stood very thick in-land, and might conceal men from our sight till we came too near to shun them, we thought it proper to walk on the outside, near the rocks, that we might see at some distance before us.

Walking along, a phlegm sticking in my throat, I happened to hawk pretty loud; the noise was answered from I believe twenty places of the rock, and in as many different sounds; which alarmed Alvarado, who took it to be a signal from men concealed up and down the rock, not considering the difficulty of their coming at us, there being a lake at the foot of it, which they must have been obliged to wade over, and which would have given us time to get away: but fear, which often blinds reason, represented the evil infallible to his thought, which was morally impossible. I did all I could to make him sensible they were but echoes; and, to convince him thereof, I gave a loud hem, which was answered in like manner, but by being a second time repeated, and by a louder voice, I was certain the last did not proceed from

me; which put me in apprehension that somebody besides myself had hemmed also. My companion, whose countenance, being turned as pale as death, expressed the excess of his fears, would have run away, had not the voice come from the very way we were to go.

'Now,' said he, (hardly able to utter his words for trembling) 'you are, I hope, convinced that it would have been safer for us to retire, instead of gratifying your unreasonable curiosity: what do you think will become of us?' The young fellow, at these words, falls a weeping, saying, he wished he had missed the getting of that money which was like to be dearly earned. I must confess, I began to be a little apprehensive of danger, and wished myself safe away, but concealed my thoughts, heartening them as well as I could; and representing the danger equal, either moving forwards or standing still, I at last persuaded them to go on.

We were scarce gone forty paces farther, before we perceived, at a considerable distance, something like a man, with another creature, but presently lost them among the trees, before we could have a full view of them; which made every one of us conceive a different idea of what we had seen. Alvarado would have it be a giant and a man of common size with him, and both armed cap-à-pe. The poor lad, who was already as bad as a slave, being bound to a severe, ill-natured master, feared death more than bondage, so took what he had seen for some she-bear, and one of her whelps with her, to make her yet more dreadful; and, by all means, would have thrown himself into the lake, in order to get at the other side of the rock: thus the danger appeared to each of them to be what they dreaded most; but I was somewhat better composed in mind than they. I gave the object I saw the likeliest resemblance the time it was in sight would permit, which I could adapt to nothing but a man of common size, and somewhat like a dog with him; so persisting in my opinion, made them waver in theirs: thus we went on something better composed.

Being gone about an hundred yards farther, we saw the same again, but nearer hand, and without interruption, the place being pretty clear of trees; thus having a full view, we were all, to our great satisfaction, convinced, that what

had been taken for a formidable giant, and a terrible she-bear, was but an ordinary man; but that which was with him running up a tree as soon as he perceived us, prevented our discerning what animal it was; but the man, who walked on apace, soon came within the reach of a more certain discernment, and appeared to be a venerable old man, with a worshipful white beard, which covered his naked breast, and a long head of hair, of the same colour, which, spreading over his shoulders, hung down to his loins.

His presence, which inspired respect more than fear, soon recalled the frightened folks scared senses, who, to recover this faint-heartedness, excused themselves by the misrepresentation distance causes in objects. The old man, who by that time, was come near enough to discern our speaking English, let fall a bundle of sticks he had under one arm, and a hatchet he carried in the other hand, and runs to me, being the next to him, embracing me, and saying—'Dear countrymen, for I hear you are Englishmen, by what accident are you come hither? A place, the approach whereof is defended by a thousand perils and dangers, and not to be come at but by a narrow escape of death. Are ye shipwrecked?'—'No, thank God,' said I, 'most reverend father; it was mere curiosity that brought us thither; these perils, which you say defend the approach of this island, being absent by the extraordinary calmness of the sea. But, if I may ask, pray how came you hither?'—'By the help of Providence,' replied the good old man, 'who snatched me from out of the ravenous jaws of death, to fix me in this safe and peaceable spot of land. I was shipwrecked, thanks to my Maker! and was saved by being cast away.'—'I conceive, Sir,' said I, 'you have been chased by some pirates, and escaped slavery by striking upon the rocks which surround this island; but now you have avoided that dismal fate, embrace the lucky opportunity of getting away from a place so remote from human assistance, which your age makes you stand in need of.'—'That's your mistake,' replied the old man; 'he who trusts in God needs no other help.'—'I allow that, Sir,' said I; 'but our trust in God doth not require us to cast away, or despise, the help of

man. I do not in the least question your piety, but mistrust the frailty of nature, and debility of age; therefore would have you come and live within the reach of attendance. You may, without slackening your devotion, live in the world; you shall have no occasion to concern yourself with any cares that may disturb your pious thoughts.'—'No,' replied the old man, 'was I to be made emperor of the universe, I would not be concerned with the world again; nor would you require me, did you but know the happiness I enjoy out of it. Come along with me; and if, after you have seen how I live here, you persist in your advice, I will say you have no notion of a happy life.'—'I have, good Sir,' said I, 'already seen with great admiration, your matchless habitation; but there are other necessities your age requires; as cloaths to exclude the injuries of the air, and meat suitable to the weakness of your stomach.'—'That is your mistake,' replied the old man, 'I want for no cloaths; I have a change for every season of the year; I am not confined to fashions, but suit my own conveniences. Now this is my summer dress; I put on warmer as the weather grows colder: and for meat, I have fish, flesh, and fowls; and as choice as a man can wish for. Come, you shall dine with me, and ten to one but I may give you venison, and perhaps a dish of wild fowls too: let us go and see what Providence has sent us.' So we went to a wood about a mile farther, where he had fastened several low nets, in different gaps, in the thickset; in one of which happened to be an animal something like a fawn, twice as big as an hare, the colour of a fox, and faced and footed like a goat. 'Did I not tell you,' said the good man, 'I might chance to give you venison? Now let us look after the fowls.' So we went a little farther, at a place where he had hung a long net between two high trees, at the bottom of which was fastened a bag of the same to receive the fowls, who in the night, being stopped by the net, fluttered to the bottom. There also happened to be game; a couple of fowls, made like woodcocks, but of the bigness and colour of a pheasant, were taken at the bottom of a bag. 'Now,' said the old man, 'these I have without committing the sin of bidding less for them than I know they are really









really worth. or making the poulterers swear they cost them more than they did. Well, now I may give you a dish of fish also, it is but going half a mile or thereabouts.—‘There is no need, Sir,’ said I, ‘for any more; there are but four of us, and here is provision for half a score; but if you are disposed for fish, we have some in a boat on the other side of a rock; it is but going for them.’—‘Very well,’ said the old man, ‘it is but going about a mile, then strip and wade over a lake, then climb up a rugged rock twice backward and forward, to fetch what we can have for only taking a pleasant walk, all the while diverted with the sweet harmony of a number of fine birds. Look here; this complaisance often puts men to a world of needless trouble: come, we’ll make a shift to pick a dinner out of these.’—‘Sir,’ said I, ‘it is no shift where there is such plenty.’—‘Plenty!’ said the old man, ‘why, I tell ye, this is a second garden of Eden; only here is no forbidden fruit, nor women to tempt a man.’—‘I see, Sir,’ said I, ‘Providence supplies you plentifully with necessaries, if age does not deprive you of strength.’—‘Age!’ replied the old man, ‘why I am not so old as that comes to, neither: I was but eight-and-twenty when I was cast away, and that is but fifty years ago. Indeed, if I lived as you do that dwell in the wise world, who hurry on your days as if your end came on too slow, I might be accounted old.’—‘I do not gainsay, reverend father, but that you bear your age wonderful well; but a multiplicity of days must make the strongest nature bend: yes, time will break the toughest constitution, and, by what you say, you have seen a considerable number of years.’—‘Yes,’ replied the old man, ‘a few days have run over my head; but I never strove to out-run them, as they do that live too fast. Well,’ says he, ‘you are a young man, and have seen fewer days than I, yet you may be almost worn out. Come, match this,’ says he; with that he gave a hern with such strength and clearness, that the sound made my ears tingle for some minutes after. ‘Indeed, Sir,’ said I, ‘you have so far out-done what I can pretend to do, that I will not presume to imitate you.’—‘Then I am afraid,’ said he, ‘you will prove to be the old man.

Well, then, you, or your friend, the strongest of you, fetch hither that stone; it does not look to be very heavy,’ pointing at a large stone that lay about two yards off. ‘I will endeavour, Sir,’ said I, ‘to roll it; for I dare say it is past my strength to lift it.’ So, to please the old man, I went to take it up; but could hardly move it. ‘Come, come,’ said the old gentleman, ‘I find that must be work for me.’ With that he goes, takes up the stone, and tosses it to the place he bid me bring it. ‘I see,’ said he, ‘you have exerted your strength too often, which makes you now so weak: well, you see the advantage of living remote from the world. Had you had less of human assistance, I am apt to believe you would not want it so soon as you are likely to do. Come, let us make much of that little strength we have left, taking necessary support at proper times; it is now past noon, therefore let us lose no time, but haste home to get our dinner ready.’ So we went back to the place where the bundle of sticks lay, which we made the young fellow with us carry, and went directly to the kitchen, where, whilst he made a fire, one cast the animal, and the other two pulled the fowls. ‘I am sorry,’ said the old man, ‘you must take that trouble, but your presence has frightened away my servant, who used to do that work for me.’—‘Have you a servant, then, Sir!’ said I.—‘Yes,’ said he, ‘and one a native of this island.’—‘Then I find, Sir,’ said I, ‘this island is inhabited.’—‘Yes,’ answered the old man, ‘with monkeys and myself, but nobody else, thank God; otherwise I can tell you, I should hardly have lived so long.’—‘Then, Sir,’ said I, ‘I suppose that was it we saw run up a tree.’—‘Yes,’ said he, ‘my monkey, like myself, loves not much company.’—‘Pray, Sir,’ said I, ‘how did you bring him so well under command, as to keep with you when he has liberty to run away? I wonder the wild ones do not entice him from you.’—‘I had him young,’ replied the old man, ‘and made very much of him, which those creatures dearly love: besides, when he was grown up, the wild ones would not suffer him amongst them, so that he was forced to remain with me. I had another before this; but he, I may say, was sent by Providence,

vidence, both to be an help and diversion to me; for he was so knowing, that he took a great deal of labour off my hands, and dispersed many anxious hours, which the irksomeness of my solicitude had created. It is now about twelve years since; for I keep a memorial, which, indeed, I designed to have been a journal; but I unfortunately let the regular order of the days slip out of my memory; however, I observed a seventh day, and reckoned the years from winter to winter; so I cannot well mistake.

One day, when I had roasted a quantity of roots, which I eat instead of bread, having spread them on my table and chest to cool, in order to lay them by for use, I went out, leaving my door open to let the air in.

Having walked an hour or two, I returned home, where I found a monkey, whom the smell of the hot roots had brought; who, during my absence, had been eating. My presence very much surprized him, yet he still kept his place, only discontinued eating, staring me in the face: the unexpected guest at once startled me, and filled me with admiration; for, certainly, no creature of it's kind could be compared to it for beauty. His back was of a lively green, his face and belly of a lively yellow: his coat, all over, shining like burnished gold. The extraordinary beauty of the creature raised in me an ardent desire to keep him; but I despaired of ever making him tame, being come to his full growth: therefore, having resolved to keep him tied, I went in and shut the door. The beast, which, till then, had not offered to make his escape, appeared very much disturbed, and stared about him for some place to get out at. Perceiving his disorder, I did not advance, but turned my back to him, to give him time to compose himself, which he in a short time did, as appeared by his falling to eat again; which made me conceive hopes that I should, in time, make him familiar. Having about me stale roasted roots, which eat much pleasanter than the fresh, and are less stuffing, I threw some at him, at which he seemed displeased, and stood still a while, staring in my face; but my looking well pleased, which I believe the animal was sensible of, made him pick them up; and

fall to eating with a fresh appetite. I was overjoyed at his easy composure; so reached him water in a shell, that the want of nothing might induce him to a retreat. I set it down as near him as I could, without disturbing him; he came to it very orderly, and, having drank his fill, he laid it down, and looked me in the face, carelessly scratching his backside: seeing he had done, I advanced, and took away the shell, at which he never stirred.

The forward disposition of the beast towards a perfect familiarity, made me resolve to stay within the remainder of the day, no-wise questioning but my company would in a great measure advance it. So I made shift to sup upon a few roots I had about me, and went pretty early to bed; where I was no sooner laid, but the creature got across the feet, and continued very quiet till the next morning, when I got up; at which time he was also watching my actions. I made very much of him, which he took very composedly, standing still to be stroked. Then, indeed, I thought myself, in a manner, secure of him, and gave him his belly-full, as I had done the day before; but, having a pressing occasion to go out, I went to the door, thinking to shut him in till my return; but he followed me so close, that I could not open it without endangering his getting out, which, though he appeared pretty tame, I did not care to venture, our acquaintance being so very new; yet, as I was obliged to go, I did run the hazard; so opened the door by degrees, that, in case the beast should offer to run, I might take the opportunity to slip out, and keep him in; but the creature never offering to go any farther than I went, I trusted him to go with me, hoping that, if he went away, the kind usage he met with would, one day or other, make him come back again; but, to my great surprise, as well as satisfaction, he readily returned with me, having waited my time: yet, as I had occasion to go out a second time, wanting sticks to make a fire, for which I was obliged to go near the place where most of his kind resorted, I was afraid to trust him with me, lest he should be decoyed by the others; therefore, having taken up a bundle of cords, with which I tie up my faggots, I watched



‘watched an opportunity to get out, and leave him behind: but the beast was certainly apprehensive of my design, for he always kept near the door, looking stedfastly at my bundle of cords, as desirous of such another; which I not having for him, cut a piece off mine, and gave it him; and, seeing I could not leave him behind, I ventured to let him go with me, which he did very orderly, never offering to go one step out of the way; though others of this kind came to look at him as he went by.

‘Being come to the place where I used to cut dry sticks, having cut down a sufficient quantity, I began to lay some across my cord. The creature, having taken notice of it, did the same to his, and with so much dexterity and agility, that his faggot was larger, and sooner made than mine; which, by that time, being large enough, and as much as he could well carry, I bound it up; which set him to do the same with his, which was abundantly too large a load for him.

‘Our faggots being made, I took up that which I had made, to see how he would go about taking up his; which, being much too heavy for him, he could not lift: so running round it, I believe twenty times, he looked me in the face, as craving help. Having been sufficiently diverted with the out-of-the-way shifts he made, I gave him mine, and took up his: the poor animal appeared overjoyed at the exchange; therefore chearfully took up the bundle, and followed me home.

‘Seeing myself, according to all probability, sure of the dear creature, whose late actions gave me such ground to hope from him both service and pleasure, I returned my hearty thanks to kind Providence for it’s late prodigious gift; for certainly it was never heard of before, that, in a desert place, one of those wild animals, who fly at the single appearance of an human creature, should voluntarily give itself to a man, and, from the very beginning, be so docile and tractable. O! surely it was endued with more than natural instinct! for perfect reason was seen in all it’s actions. Indeed I was happy whilst I had him; but my happiness, alas! was not of long standing.’ As he spoke, I perceived tears in his eyes, ‘Pray, Sir,

said I, ‘what became of that wonderful creature?’—‘Alas!’ said he, ‘he was killed by monkeys of the other kind, which fell upon him, one day, as he was going for water by himself: for the poor dear creature was grown so knowing, that if at any time either firing or water was wanted, I had nothing to do but give him the bundle of cords, or the empty vessel, and he would straight go and fetch either: in short, he wanted nothing but speech to compleat him for human society.’—‘Indeed, Sir,’ said I, ‘I cannot blame you for bemoaning the loss of so incomparable a creature; the account you give of him well entitles his memory to regret: but I hope this you have now, in a great measure, makes up your loss.’—‘O! not by far,’ replied the old man: ‘indeed he goes about with me, and will carry a faggot, or a vessel of water, pick a fowl, turn the spit or string, when meat is a roasting; yet he is nothing like my late dear Beaufidelle, for so I called that most lovely creature: besides, this is unlucky; in imitating me, he often does me mischief. It was but the other day that I had been writing for five or six hours; I had occasion to go out, and happened to leave my pen and ink upon the table, and the parchment I had been writing on close by it: I was no sooner gone, but the mischievous beast falls to work, scribbling over every word I had been writing; and, when he had done, he lays it by in the chest, as he saw me do what I had written, and takes out another, which he does the same to, and so to half a score more; my return prevented his doing more mischief: however, in a quarter of an hour, that I was absent, he blotted out as much as I had been full six months writing’. Indeed I was angry, and could have beaten him; but that I considered my revenge would not have repaired the damage, but rather, perhaps, added to my loss, by making the beast run away.’—‘Pray, Sir,’ said I, ‘how came you by him? Did he also give himself to you?’—‘No,’ replied the old man, ‘I had him young, and by mere accident, unexpected and unsought for; having lost both time and labour about getting one in the room of him I had so unfortunately lost. The old ones are so fond of their young,

‘ young, that they never are from them, unless in their play they chace one another into the other kind’s quarters, where their dams dare not follow them; for they are such enemies to one another, that they watch all opportunities to catch all they can of the contrary sort, which they immediately strangle: which keeps their increase very backward, that would otherwise grow too numerous for the food the island produces; which is, I believe, the cause of their animosity.

‘ About eight years ago, which is the time I have had this beast, I was walking under one of the clusters of trees where the green sort of monkeys harbour, which being the largest and most shady in the island, I took the most delight therein: as I was walking, at a small distance from me this creature dropt off a tree, and lay for dead, which, being of the grey kind, made me wonder less at the accident. I went, and took him up; and, accidentally handling his throat, I opened his windpipe, which was almost squeezed close by that which took him, which my sudden coming prevented from strangling quite. I was extremely well pleased at this event, by which I got what my past cares and diligence never could produce me. Having pretty well recovered it’s breath, and seeing no visible hurt about it, I imagined that I soon might recover it quite; so hastened home with it, gave it warm milk, and laid it on my bed: so that with careful nursing, I quite recovered him; and, with good keeping, made the rogue thrive to that degree, that he has outgrown the rest of his kind.—‘ No question, Sir,’ said I, ‘ having taken such pains with him, you love him as well as his predecessor.’—‘ I cannot say so, neither,’ replied the old man; though I cannot say but that I love the creature: but it’s having the ill fortune to be of that unlucky kind which was the death of my dear Beaufidelle, in a great measure lessens my affection. Besides, he falls so short, both of his merit and beauty, that I must give the deceased the preference: and, was it not for his cunning tricks, which often divert me, I should hardly value him at all; but he is so very cunning and facetious, that he makes me love him, notwithstanding I mortally hate his kind. I

‘ must divert you, whilst dinner is getting ready, with an account of some of his tricks.

‘ Being extremely fond of me, he very seldom would be from me, but followed me every where; and, as he used to go with me when I went to examine my nets, seeing me now and then take out game, he would, of his own accord, when he saw me busy writing, go and fetch what happened to be taken.

‘ One day finding a fowl in the net-bag, he pulled it alive as he brought it home; so that I could not see any thing whereby to discern it’s kind. As soon as he came in, he set it down with such motions as expressed joy: the poor naked fowl was no sooner out of his clutches than it took to it’s legs, for want of wings; it’s sudden escape so surprized the captor, that he stood amazed for a while, which gave the poor creature time to gain a considerable scope of ground; but the astonished beast, being recovered from his surprize, soon made after it, but was a considerable time before he could catch it, having nothing to lay hold of; so that the fowl would slip out of his hands. The rage held about a quarter of an hour, in which time the poor creature, having run itself out of breath, was forced to lie down before it’s pursuer, who immediately threw himself upon it; so took it up in his arms, and brought it home, but was not so ready to set it down as before, for he held it by one leg till I had laid hold of it.

‘ I had a second time as good diversion, but after another manner. One morning early, whilst I was busy in my cottage, he went out, unperceived by me; and, having been a considerable time absent, I feared that such another accident had befallen him as that which had happened to his predecessor; so I went to see after him; and as he would often go and visit the nets in the woods, I went there first, where I found him very busy with such an animal as this we have here, which he found taken in one of the gap-nets, and being nearly as big as himself, kept him a while struggling for mastership. Sometimes he would take it by the ears, now and then by one leg, next by the tail; but could not get him along: at last he laid hold of one of his hind legs, and with



‘with the other hand smote him on the back, in order to drive him, not being able to pull him along; but the beast, being too strong, still made towards the thickset, where he certainly would have hailed the driver, had I not come up to help him.’ Thus the old gentleman entertained us with his monkey’s tricks whilst dinner was dressing.

The dinner being ready, we went to the dwelling-place to eat it, leaving the young fellow that was with us to attend the roasted meat, while we eat the first dish.

The old gentleman having laid the cloth, which, though something coarse, being made out of part of a ship-sail, was very clean, he laid three shells on it, about the bigness of a middle-sized plate, but as beautiful as any nakes of pearl I ever saw. ‘Gentlemen,’ says he, ‘if you can eat off of shells, ye are welcome; I have no better plates to give you.’—‘Sir,’ said I, ‘these are preferable to silver ones, in my opinion; and I very much question whether any prince in Europe can produce so curious a service.’—‘They may be richer,’ replied the old man, ‘but not cleaner.’

The first dish he served was soupe in a large deep shell, as fine as the first, and one spoon made of shell, which he said was all his stock, being not used to nor expecting company: however, he fetched a couple of muscle-shells, which he washed very clean; then gave Alvarado one, and took the other himself, obliging me to make use of the spoon: so we sat down, Alvarado and I upon the chest, which we drew near the table; and the old gentleman, though much against his will, upon the chair.

Being set down, we fell to eating the soup, whose fragrant smell excited my appetite; and I profess the taste thereof was so excellent, that I never eat any comparable to it at Pontac’s, nor any where before: it was made of one half of the beast we took in the morning, with several sorts of herbs which eat like artichokes, asparagus, and celery; there were also bits of roasted roots in it, instead of roasted bread, which added much to the richness of it, tasting like chestnuts: but, what surprised me most, there were green pease in it, whose extraordinary sweetness was discernible from every other ingredient. ‘Pity,’ said I, ‘the access to this island is so difficult; what

a blessed spot of land would it make, were it but inhabited! Here naturally grows what in Europe we plow, till, and labour hard for.’—‘You say,’ replied the old man, ‘this would be a blessed spot of ground, if it was inhabited. Now I am quite of another opinion; for I think it’s blessing consists in it’s not being inhabited, being free of those curses your populous and celebrated cities abound in; here’s nothing but praises and thanksgivings heard: and as for Nature bestowing freely, and of her own accord, what in Europe you are obliged, by industry and hard labour, in a manner to force from her, wonder not at. Consider how much you daily rob her of her due, and charge her with slander and calumny. Don’t you frequently say, if a man is addicted to any vice, that it is his nature, when it is the effect and fruit of his corruption? So Nature, who attended the great Origin of all things at the creation, is now, by vile wretches, deemed in fault for all their wickedness. Had man remained in his first and natural state of innocence, Nature would also have continued her original indulgence over him. We may now think ourselves very happy, if that blessing attends our labour which before the fall of man flowed on him, accompanied with ease and pleasure.

‘Now these pease, which have so much raised your surprize, are indeed the growth of this island, though not it’s natural product, but the gifts of Providence, and the fruits of labour and industry. I have tilled the ground; Providence procured the seed; Nature gave it growth, and Time increase. With seven pease and three beans, I have, in four years time, raised seed enough to a stock a piece of ground, out of which I gather yearly a sufficient quantity for my use, besides preserving fresh seed.’—‘No doubt, Sir,’ said I, ‘but, when right means are taken, prosperity will attend.’ By that time, having eaten sufficiently of the soup, he himself would carry the remains to the young man in the kitchen, and fetch in the boiled meat and oyster sauce, which he brought in another shell much of the same nature with that which the soup was served in, but something shallower, which eat as delicious as house-lamb.

Having done with that, he fetches in the other half of the beast roasted, and

C

several

several sorts of delicate pickles which I never eat of before, and mushrooms, but of a curious colour, flavour, and taste. 'These,' said he, 'are the natural product of a particular spot of ground;' where, at a certain time of the year, he said, he gathered, for the space of six days only, three sizes of mushrooms: for though they were all buttons, and fit to pickle, by that time he had gathered all, he had also to stew, and some about four inches over, which he broiled; and they eat as choice as any veal-cutlet.

'These pickles, Sir,' said I, 'though far exceeding any I ever did eat in Europe, are really, at this time, needless; the meat wanting nothing to raise it's relish; no flesh being more delicious.'

Having done with that, I offered to take it away, but he in no wise would permit me; so went away with it himself, and brought the fowls, at which I was somewhat vexed; for I feared I should find no room in my stomach for any, having eat so heartily of the meat; but having, at his pressing request, tasted them, my appetite renewed at their inexpressible deliciousness; so I fell to eating afresh.

Having done with that dish, the young man, having nothing to do in the kitchen, came and was bid to take away, and fall to. In the mean time, the good old man fetched us, out of his dairy, a small cheese of his own making, which being set down, he related to us the unaccountable manner he came by the antelopes which supplied him with the milk it was made with; which introduced several weighty remarks on the wonderful acts of Providence, and the strictness of the obligations we lie under to our great Benefactor: likewise the vast encouragement we have to love and serve God, the benefits and comforts of a clear conscience, as also the inestimable treasure of content. From that he epitomized the different tempers and dispositions of men, much commending timely education, as being a means to reverse and change evil inclinations; highly praising the charity of those pious people, who chuse to bestow good schooling upon poor folks children, before cloathing, and even food; the first being rather the most necessary, and the last the easiest to come at.

That discourse being ended, he inquired very carefully after the state of his

dear native country, which, he said, he left fifty years ago in a very indulgent disposition. I gave him the best account I could at that time of all the transactions that had happened in England since his absence. 'The relation of past evils,' said he, 'are like pictures of earthquakes and shipwreck, which affect the mind but slightly; and though I think myself out of any prince's power, yet I shall always partake with my countrymen's grief. Pray be explicit. What king have we now?'—'A compleat patriot, and father to his subjects,' said I; 'both tender-hearted and merciful, encouraging virtue, and suppressing vice; a promoter of religion, and an example of charity.'—'Then,' said he, in a manner which expressed zeal and joy, 'long may that pious monarch live, and his blessed posterity for ever grace the British throne! And may Old England, by it's faithful obedience and loyalty, henceforth atone for it's past rebellions, that it may remove that execrable reproach it now lies under!' To which we all said—'Amen.' Then he filled up the shell we drank out of, and drank good King George's health, which was succeeded with that of the royal family, and prosperity to the church. Thus ended a most delicious and splendid dinner, and a conversation both delightful and instructive. But, having not as then mentioned any thing about his own history, which I exceedingly longed to inquire into, I begged him to inform us by what accident he came hither, and how he had so long maintained a good state of health. To which he answered, time would not permit him to relate his own history, being very long, and the remainder of the day too short; but that he would, before we parted, give it me in writing; having, for want of other occupation, made a memorial. But as to the maintaining of his health, he would tell me by word of mouth. 'The receipt,' said he, 'is both short and easy; yet I fear you will not be able to follow it. Look you, you must use none but wholesome exercises, observe a sober diet, and live a pious life. Now, if you can confine yourself to this way of living, I'll be bound that you will both preserve your health, and waste less money. But, what's more valuable than all that, you will not endanger your precious soul.' I returned him thanks for his good advice, and promised



raised him I would observe it as strictly as I could. 'I am afraid,' replied he, 'that will not be at all: you have too many powerful obstacles, the world and the flesh, from whom your affections must be intirely withdrawn, and all commerce prohibited, which is morally impossible whilst living; therefore, since you are obliged to converse with the world, I will give you a few cautions, which, if rightly taken, may be of use to you.

'Make not the world your enemy, nor rely too much on it's fidelity.

'Be not too free with your friend: repetitions of favours often wear out friendship.

'Waste not your vigour of substance on women, lest weakness and want be your reward.

'Secrets are not safe in a woman's breast; 'tis a confinement the sex can't bear.

'Pass no contract over liquor; wine overcomes reason; and dulls the understanding.

'He who games puts his money in jeopardy, and is not sure of his own.

'There's but little honour to wager on sure grounds, and less wisdom to lay upon a chance.

'And in all your dealings take this for a constant rule:

'He whom unlawful means advance to gain,

'Instead of comfort, finds a constant pain:

'What e'en by lawful arts we do possess,

'Old age and sickness make it comfortless.

'Be rul'd by me, not to increase your store

'By means unjust; for 'twill but make you }  
poor,

'Take but your due; and never covet more.'

I returned him thanks for his good morals, the copy of which I begged he would give me in writing, for my better putting them in practice. To which he readily consented, wishing I might observe them; and being very sure that I should reap a considerable benefit thereby, both here and hereafter.

The day being pretty far spent, I was obliged to think of going, which grieved me much; for I was so taken with his company, that if I had not had a father and mother, whose years requir'd my presence, I would have spent the rest of my days with him. I was so delighted with his company, and pleas'd with his way of living, that I almost overlooked my duty; but, after a struggle with my inclination,

I was obliged to yield to nature. Thus, having expressed my vexation to leave so good a man, I took my leave. The good old man, perceiving my regret to leave him, could not conceal his to part with me. 'Indeed,' said he, with tears in his eyes, 'I should have been very glad to have had a fellow-creature in this solitary island, especially one whom I think possessed of a good inclination; which I perceive you have, by your reluctance at leaving this innocent garden of life. I imagine that you have relations in the world that may stand in need of you; Heaven protect you, and send you safe to them! I don't imagine that you will ever see this island again; nor would I advise you to venture, the approach of it is so dangerous: therefore, before you go, let me shew you some of the rarities with which it abounds.' I told him, I was afraid time would not permit; but, as he said that an hour or two would do, and we had day-light enough, I went along with him.

Going out, and seeing the guns stand behind the door, I asked what he did with them. 'I keep them,' said he, 'for a trophy of Providence's victory over my enemies, and a monument of my fourth miraculous deliverance.' As we went along, he related to us the manner in which he had been sacrilegiously robbed once by Indians; villainously infested twice by pirates; the russians having combined to carry him away, like a slave, to their own country, and there make a show of him, as if he had been a monster.

Talking, we walked under several of the before-mentioned clusters of trees, which proceed from one single plant: being come to one larger than the rest, and which he said he frequented most, it being the largest in the island—'This,' said he, 'covers with it's own branches a whole acre of land;' so made several remarks on the wonderful works of Nature; 'which,' said he, 'were all intended for the use and pleasure of man; every thing in the universe containing such different virtues and properties as were requisite to render life happy.' From that he made several more reflections on the fatal effects of disobedience, which is accounted a slight breach in duty, but is the mother of all sins.

That discourse held for a considerable time, till a parcel of each different kind of monkeys having met, fell to fighting;

observing an admirable order during the fray; which withdrew our admiration from the preceding subject, and stopt us awhile to observe them.

The scuffle was very diverting whilst it lasted, which was but a short time; for they happened to perceive us: at which they parted, each sort running to their own quarters, which were not very distant from one another, so that from it they could see each other's motions. 'I am sorry,' said I, 'the battle was so soon over; they cuffed one another so prettily, that I could have stood an hour to see them.'—'If you like the sport,' said the old man, 'I can soon set them at it again.' With that he took out of his breeches-pocket some roasted roots, which he commonly carried about him, to throw at them when he went that way, which made them less shy of him.

Having broke the roots in bits, he laid them down in their sight; for they on both sides were peeping from under the leaves of the trees where they harboured: then he cut a score of sticks, about the bigness of one's finger, and near a foot and an half long, and laid them over the bits of roots: then we retired to some small distance, and hid ourselves behind the trees.

We were no sooner out of sight but they hastened to the meat; the green monkeys, having less ground to go, were at them first, yet never stopt, but went on to hinder the others approach, who vigorously strove to gain ground. The struggle was hard, and the victory often wavering; each party alternately gave way: at last the grey sort kept the advantage, and drove their adversaries back, who being come where the sticks lay, immediately took them up, and charged their enemies with fresh courage, like a yielding army that has received new forces: then, with their clubsters in the front, they fell on their adversaries with great vigour, knocking them down like our English mob at an election; so drove them back again almost to their own quarters.

In the mean time, stragglers of both the kinds, who had not joined with the main bodies of the armies, seeing the coast clear, and the provisions unguarded, unanimously fell to plunder; and quietly did eat what their comrades fought for; which the combatants perceiving, left off fighting, and of one accord turned upon the plunderers, who by that

time having devoured the booty, left them the field without contending any farther.

The battle being over, the old gentleman would have us to go on, 'Left,' said he, 'they should fall to it again out of revenge; for those creatures are very spiteful.'

Having dispersed them by our advancing, as intended, we walked from under the trees at the outside, to have a better view of the rock, which, in some places, he said, changes it's form as one approaches it. And, as he said, being got clear of the trees, we saw at a distance, as it were, a considerable number of buildings, and here-and-there something like steeples, which represented an handsome city; and seemingly the houses appeared so plain, that, had I not been apprized of the illusion, I should have taken it for such; but Alvarado and the young fellow could not be persuaded but what we saw were really buildings; and even in the island, though the old gentleman made us stop a while, the better to observe every thing; then bid us keep our eyes fixed on what we looked at, and go on. We perceived every particular of what we observed to change it's form; that which at first seemed to be fronting, shewed itself either side-ways or backwards; and so of every object, till, being come at a certain distance, all the agreeableness of the perspective, of a sudden, turned into it's real shape, like a phantom; which, whilst visible, screens that which it stands before; but, by it's vanishing, leaves it discovered.

Being come as near the rock as the lake that parts it would permit, we could discern nothing in it that could in the least soften it's ruggedness, or give it a more agreeable aspect, than those which are represented in the pictures of shipwrecks.

The old gentleman, thereupon, made several learned observations on the alterations that distance works upon objects, and shewed how easily our organs of sight may be deceived; drawing from thence this inference, that we ought not to be too positive of the reality of what we see afar off, nor to affirm for truth that which we only heard of.

Having ended that discourse, he carried us to the other side of the jetting part of the rock, which, advancing like a bastion of a fortified wall, screened from our eyes a second piece of wonder; a fine rainbow issuing; as it were, out of the mouth



mouth of a giant, lying on a rock, reaching quite over the lake: at the bottom of it I could not but stop to admire the various colours it consisted of, which far exceeded, in beauty and liveliness, any I ever saw in the sky. I presently imagined that it proceeded from the rays of the sun falling upon some pond, or other standing water, whose reflections rose and met the tops, which caused that beautiful circle. But Alvarado, who, by what he had seen before, concluded that the island was enchanted, said it was another illusion, which the place was full of; and would have gone away, but that the old man fell a laughing, and said—'Tis a sign you seldom enquire into natural causes. Well, do but come a little nearer to it, and you will find that which you term an illusion, is the natural effect of all fountains when the sun shines.'

Being come to the place it proceeded from, it proved, as he said, only a fountain, but of the clearest and sweetest water that ever was tasted; but the place it issued out of was changed from the likeness of a giant to that of some strange sort of creature; which, though having no particular resemblance, yet would bear being compared to several different things. The old man's opinion was, that it resembled a whale spouting water out at one nostril. Alvarado supposed it was more like an horse or a cow; and rather the last, there being horns plainly to be seen. For my part, I could find no proper similitude to it, but that of an old ruined monument, which formerly they built over the heads of springs. Timothy Anchors (for that was the name of the young fellow that was with us) being asked what he could make of it—'Why, really,' said he, 'nothing, unless it be an old patched-up pump that stands at the end of my mother's court in Rosemary Lane, which every spring runs out of itself;' which comparison made us all to laugh.

Thus we differed in our opinions as to the likeness, yet agreed, that was the finest fountain, and the best water we ever saw or drank. What surprized me most, was, the force wherewith it sprung from the rock that stood full five yards from the place it fell on; which was another subject of admiration; for certainly the arts of men could not have invented nor completed a more compact or pleasanter basin, though it had been for a

fountain to adorn a monarch's garden: indeed there were no masons, nor any expert artists work to be seen, but a great deal of Nature's matchless understanding: there regularity, dimension, and proportion, concerted to make it useful, convenient, and agreeable.

The basin was very near round, about eight feet diameter, a bank around it near a foot high, and as broad at top, slanting gently at the bottom, both inside and outside, which made a most pleasant and uniform bank, adorned with various small flowers and herbs of divers beautiful colours, and most fragrant smells.

Having viewed with pleasure and amazement such regularity in a wild and uninhabited place, I walked about it as long as the time I could stay would permit: I proposed going, but the old gentleman, taking me by the hand, stopt me. 'You have,' said he, 'bestowed a considerable time in observing the fertility of this island; now pray allow me one minute for consideration: the object you have been admiring all this time is as wonderful and surprizing, as beautiful and pleasant. You see this fountain, which runs stiff, and as large as your thumb, and therefore by computation may be allowed to give near a hundred gallons of water in an hour: now it runs night and day; it neither decreases nor runs over it's bank, but keeps to the same height.'—'This, as you say, Sir,' said I, 'is really worth enquiring into:' so I went several times round it, searching for the place, whereby the overplus of the complement did issue; but could not discover it. 'Come,' said he, 'seek no more for that which nature has so well concealed: I have spent many hours in that enquiry, and still remain ignorant; but have found the place out of which it runs into a fine fish-pond, about a mile inland; we will make it our way to the lake; we may look at it as we go by, but can make no long stay.' So we went on.

Going along, we came by an hollow part of the rock, which went in like an alcove, with a great many concavities in it in rows one above another, as round niches where figures stand. 'Now,' said the old man, 'we are here, I will entertain you with an invisible chorus of harmonious voices, little inferior to hautboys, trumpets, or other melodious musick. Here I twice come and pay my devotions each day.' Alvarado, who,

who, by what he had already seen, was prepossessed that the island was full of enchantments, was now certain of it; and looked upon that place in the rock to be the receptacle of fiends and evil spirits; so would by no means stay; but takes his leave, saying, he was not very curious of supernatural things. 'Supernatural,' said the old man, 'you can't well call it, though to you it may seem very amazing: it is therefore well deserving your fight; I mean your hearing; the eyes have no share in the entertainment: we shall only sing a few psalms; I am sure there can be no harm in that, but rather good, being an holy exercise in divine worship, in which all good souls ought to join.'—'That may be,' said Alvarado; 'but I love to see those with whom I worshipped: I don't think myself as yet company for spirits.—As for your part,' said Alvarado, speaking to me, 'you may do what you please; but take care your curiosity don't cost you dear. Tim and I will wait for you in the boat; but, pray be not too long before you come.' So, having returned the old gentleman thanks for his kind entertainment, they went away; at which the good man was much affronted. 'What,' said he, 'do your friends imagine I deal with spirits? Besides, where did they ever hear that devils loved to sing psalms? for here shall nothing else be sung: I would not for the world that those admirable echoes, that hitherto have repeated nothing but the Almighty's praises, should be polluted with the sound of any profane words.' I excused their timorousness, saying, it was not a failing peculiar to themselves only, but to many besides. The old man allowed it, attributing the cause thereof to a very pernicious custom nurses have to frighten children when they cry, with buggabos, and such things, to make them quiet; which frightful ideas often make such deep impression on their puerile minds, that, when they come to mature age, it is hardly worn out; which intimidates many.

That discourse being ended, we advanced as near that part of the rock as the lake would permit, which in that place was not above seven or eight feet broad; so that we were within the concavity of the rock. 'Now,' said the old man, 'let us sit down on this bank, and sing the Hundred and Seventeenth Psalm.'—'Indeed, Sir,' said I, 'I don't know

it by heart, and I have no psalm-book about me.'—'Well then,' said he, 'I'll sing myself;' so begins; but with such a clear and loud voice, managed with so much skill and judgment, that it exceeded all the singing I ever heard before; and was repeated by such a number of melodious echoes, that one would have believed there were a hundred voices in chorus.

The melody so transported me, that I willingly would have spent not only the remainder of the day, but the succeeding also; the ecstasy having quite put out of my mind the necessity of my going, and the danger of delaying: but the good man having sung an evening hymn after the psalm, which he said he sung every night, he takes me by the hand: 'Now,' said he, 'is not this emulation? Who would not sing with such a chorus of choristers as you might imagine was there?'—'Indeed, Sir,' said I, 'this has so great a resemblance to the relation we have given us in holy history of the superior joys the blessed possess in heaven, that I thought myself already there; for which reason I would willingly end my days here.'—'This is impossible,' said the old gentleman; 'nor can you spend here many more moments: I have the fish-pond to shew you yet; come let's go.' So we went on about fifty paces from thence more inland: we saw at a small distance, between the trees, a parcel of fowls like ducks, but considerably larger; which flew away from the pond at our approach towards them. He told me how he came by the old one that bred them, of which he was robbed.

At length being come to the pond, I was surprised at the clearness of the water, at the bottom of which seemed to be large rubies, emeralds, jacinths; and other coloured stones; till, being come to the brink of it, those which I took for precious stones, proved to be fishes by their swimming about, which, to my thinking, looked like stars, shooting from place to place in the sky. Having spent several minutes in admiring the surprising nature and beauty of the fishes, I took notice of the pond, which was about forty yards in length, and near thirty in breadth: its form was a broken oval; sinking in and out here and there, which made it the more agreeable; all around it grew divers sorts of herbs intermixed with flowers of different colours; and here



here and there a basket on sticks, which the old man told me he had made and set there for his ducks to breed in. The day being far spent, the old man, after having shewed me the places at one side of the pond wherein the basin emptied itself, as also the other side whereby the pond ran into the lake, takes me by the hand: 'Come,' said he, 'I'll keep you no longer; night comes on apace, and the retreat from this island is dangerous; therefore I would have you improve the short remains of the day, to avoid the dangers the darkness of the night may lead you into; so let us go home, that I may give you the memorial I have promised you, and then my blessing and hearty prayers for your safe departure, and happy arrival.' So he went to his habitation, where he gave me a roll of parchment.

'Here it is,' said he, 'in a rough and unpolite language; for I did not write it out of ostentation, or to exert my parts, but to keep me in mind of the many mercies I have received from Heaven ever since my youth, and to record the wonderful effects of Providence; that if ever these writings should have the luck to fall into the hands of men after my decease, they might be an encouragement to the destitute, and a comfort to the afflicted, that he who rightly applies himself, and firmly trusts in the Almighty, shall, at his extremity, find relief: and now my intent is in some measure answered, expecting you will revise and publish it when you come to Old England. I must injoin you not to give it as my own dictation, but an history taken from heads out of my memorial; for I have been obliged to insert particulars, and use such expressions, without which the account I give of myself would have been imperfect; and which, being related as by me, may chance to be accounted self-flattery, which is a census I would willingly avoid.' I told him he might depend upon it, I should always, and on all accounts, be very tender of any thing that could in the least lessen the merit of the subject, or tarnish the lustre of the history.

With that the good man takes me in his open arms, and embraces me over and over with all the tenderness words and actions could express; saying, with tears in his eyes, that my exit was a renewing of his past grief, and would for

a considerable time damp the pleasures he before my coming did enjoy in his solitude; since now he again has had the comfort to converse with one of his dear countrymen, after full fifty years being severed from human society. The height of his grief having for some moments stopt the utterance of his words, he sighing laid his head upon my neck, squeezing me close in his arms.

This most tender and moving action moved me to a reciprocal grief: never did any man reflect with more reluctance than when I parted with that good old man, who having recovered in some measure his former firmness of mind, his soul being again resigned, we repeated our embraces with a mutual affection. Then I took my leave; but he would not part with me there; he would by all means wait on me to the lake I was to wade over to come at the rock, on the other side of which the boat waited for me: and when I came thither, he would also have waded over with me, that he might have the satisfaction of seeing me safe from the dangerous rock; but I would in no wise permit him. Thus having prevailed upon him to stay behind, I prepared to wade over: so after a few more embraces, I crossed the lake, and came to my impatient companions, who received me with heavy reprimands for trusting myself so long alone with that necromancer; 'For nothing,' said they, 'shall ever persuade us a man can have such plenty of dainties with only the help of nature: No, no, he may talk of Providence as much as he pleases; he applies to the black art; and those voices he calls echoes are his invisible imps, which, if truth be known, are often employed in raising the wind, and causing storms, which render these seas often so dangerous: and it has been observed, that few or no ships come near those rocks, and escape being staved. For my part, I assure you I don't think myself safe, whilst within the reach of his enchantments.' With that he takes one of the oars out of young Tim's hand, and falls to rowing. 'Indeed,' said Tim, 'as you say, he looked very much like a conjurer, with his long hair and beard; and I believe he is conjuring now. See, here is bad weather coming; let us make haste from these rocks.'

Even as he said, in short, so it happened, for in a little time after the wind rose

rose, and the sea began to be a little rough; so that I was forced to take the hither, and with it keep the boat from the rocks, whither the waves very often drove us; but, standing out to sea, the wind grew more calm, and fair for the continent. I took one of the oars, and, by help of our sail, in a short time we got safe to shore; where being arrived, very much fatigued, we put up at the first cottage, which was inhabited by an old man and woman, Indians, where we dressed our fish, and went to supper; which was scarce over, but I was hurried on board, the wind being tacked about, and fair for our departure.

We weighed anchor on the seventeenth day of May 1724, and stood out to sea, and sailed south and by east till we arrived on the 26th at Panama on Terra Firma, after meeting with some stormy weather. Here we began to traffick, in our way home, for some corn, necessary for our following voyage; as also cotton, some metals, rosin, gums, and pepper. Our stay was not long here; for we sailed from thence on the fifth of June, the wind being then very favourable: but we had not sailed above twenty leagues, when we met with a violent storm, which lasted some hours, and the wind blowing hard at north north-east; wherein we had the misfortune to lose our surgeon, one John Davis, who, being imprudently upon deck, was washed overboard by a prodigious wave coming in at the fore-castle. Our ship received no damage in that storm; but our loss of Mr. Davis was very great, and worse than if any other man on board had been missing; for we might also call him our chaplain, as well as surgeon: and by his exemplary, pious life, during the time he belonged to our ship, he might really be called a divine. He was a man, who, as he told me, had been educated at Hart-Hall, Oxon, in his early days, and designed for the sacred robe: but his genius very much inclining to those most pleasant studies, viz. physick and surgery, he afterwards made them his practice; but meeting with some misfortunes about the 35th year of his life, he left England in the year 1711, and embarked on board the John and Mary for New England, where he lived till the year 1723, when our ship arrived at that country, at that time wanting a surgeon; for our own died at our approach near the continent. Our captain, on enquiry,

having an excellent character of Mr. Davis, agreed with him for our voyage till we returned back thither again. I think it but just to eternize his memory in these memoirs, and give him the character which he merited.

He was a pious good man, sober, just, and virtuous; ready to serve, but never to offend any man. His morals were instructive to all those who knew him, and his constant exhortation, while on board our ship, to frequent daily prayers, was the reason we esteemed him the doctor of our souls, as well as a surgeon to our bodies. Nay, which is still more, while he was with us, though he never entered into sacred orders, yet he told us, he thought it his duty to give us the best instructions he was capable of, for the preservation of our souls and bodies, both which were always in danger; and, accordingly, after divine service, as I may call it, was performed by him in a very solemn manner, he would frequently discourse on the nature and heinousness of the sin of man, which occasioned the sufferings of Christ; on the terrors of hell, and the joys of heaven; as also on the glorious creation of the world, setting forth the works of Omnipotence in very lively colours, telling the advantage, pleasure and beauty, that attended a godly life. Sometimes his discourses would be on natural philosophy, which were extremely well delivered; at other times on some of the sciences, most of which he well understood, and to which we gave very great attention, as being desirous of such useful knowledge: in short, his death was greatly lamented by the captain as well as myself, and indeed by all the ship's crew; for he was a man of a quick thought and lively apprehension; had an universal knowledge in things, entirely free from reservedness, but of perfect humility and condescension; most agreeably entertaining in his conversation, and dear to all that ever knew him.

Thus, having given an imperfect character of that great man, to whose memory I owe so much, I shall proceed to a further description of our voyage. As to the coasts on those seas, I think it needless to make any mention thereof, they having been so well described already by our modern geographers, nor is it any-wise useful to my purpose; so that I shall entirely omit it; and only give an account of the places where we traded or touched at for fresh provisions or necessaries.



series, and remark what happened most worthy our notice in our voyage home to England.

The weather now proving more favourable, I began to peruse the memorials of my good old hermit: but, oh! with what moving sympathy did I share with him in the multitude of his misfortunes during his minor years! Nor could I less sympathize with him in the ecstasies of his hermetical life. I read with pleasure and amazement what he had laboriously transcribed, being at that time doubtful whether it would ever be perused by any mortal; where he set forth a continued series of misfortunes, as if linked together by divine Providence, (whilst he lived in the wise world, as he called it:) and in this account, during his abode on that desolate island, denotes that the omnipotent Being had always an immediate direction in every circumstance or point of time. I was more and more astonished and amazed by this good man's precepts, who has abandoned the world, content to live in a desolate and lonesome island, uninhabited by any mortal but himself; where he has had the space of fifty years to reflect and contemplate on the follies and misfortunes of man; during which time his maxims were always his rule of life in every case. O! may I once more see that dear old man, whose habitation is free from all anxious cares, from oppression and usury, and all the evils that attend this populous world! There would I abide, and never depart from that happy solitude, which he so peaceably enjoys—But whither am I running? These contemplations have made me forget the remarks of my voyage.

We sailed from Panama on the 6th day of June, and had frequent thunder and lightning, attended with some rain; but nothing else extraordinary happened. On the 15th we made Gorgona Bay in Peru, where our boat went on shore to a village on the main, with twenty hands well armed, resolving to get some fresh provisions at any rate; for we began to be in want, having taken in but very little at Panama. It is a low land, full of mangrove trees, and, within land, pretty high: the village was but poor; however, they brought away six hogs and four goats; some limes, and plantains. Not far from thence are some gold mines, but of no great note, as we were informed by some Indians. They are a very

warlike people who live on that coast, and often engage one another with clubs and darts made of hard wood. The island is about six leagues in length. There are monkeys, lizards, hares, and Guiney pigs; also several sorts of snakes, some of which are as big as one's leg; so that it is dangerous to walk in some parts of the island: one of our men happened to be bit by one, and did not live above six hours after; though his death had been prevented, I believe, had we not met with that misfortune of losing Mr. Davis our surgeon. Here, also, we caught some mullets, and several sorts of fish, extremely good, though unknown to us as to their names. In this island there is a creature which the Indians call a mundago, but the Spaniards a sloth, which I think is it's properest name; for it is a creature which seems to sleep as it walks, by it's slow motion; and it is reported, that it eats the leaves of trees, which are it's only food; but is so prodigious lazy, that when it has cleared one tree of it's leaves, it will be almost starved to death before it attempts to climb another: in short, it is a very ugly creature, and seems to be of the monkey kind by it's make; but it's hair is thicker and longer, nor is it so agreeable to look at, and is different in it's nature. Here we also got fresh water and wood; for there are very good brooks on that island, and wood enough. While we lay near the island, I went ashore; and, in my conversation with a Spaniard, he related to me the following account of one Thomas Jenkins, a Lancashire man, who was boatswain on board a merchant's ship, whose name I have since forgot, who was left on that island, and lived alone there two years and three months; but was first seen on that island by some Indians who came from the main for oysters, and other shell-fish, which they frequently gather for the Spaniards. He made his escape from them, and hid himself in the woods; fearing that they would carry him to the Spaniards, and by that means he might be made a slave; chusing rather solitude, than to enter into bondage for his life. However, an English ship trading on that coast had notice of it from the Indians; and, imagining that he might be an Englishman cast away, or set on shore there (as he really was) by some pirate who had been in those seas, they sent their boat with six hands to the island in search of him.

D

They

They took their speaking-trumpet with them, and by that means, after about six hours stay on the island, they found him out. He told them, that, at his first being set on shore on the island, it seemed very melancholy and frightful; when he begun to reflect on the barbarity of the pirates, to leave him there without provisions, or any manner of necessaries whereby he might support himself, (they leaving him only his wearing cloaths, and his pocket knife.) If they had left him any fire-arms and ammunition, his case would not have been near so desperate; because he then might have not only defended himself against any enemy, but likewise have killed some goats or fowls for his subsistence. He also said, that what made him very melancholy, was, to think his habitation, and place of abode, was where he could have no human society, and in an island that he, at first, knew not whether there was any thing on it for his subsistence, as never being on that coast before. But the second day of his being there, he took a survey of the island, and found, that there were monkeys, goats, &c. and also good fish. He dreaded greatly the snakes, which were larger than he had ever seen before; however, as they endeavoured to get from him, he rested pretty well satisfied, hoping there was no beast of prey to hurt him there; for fear of which, at first, he climbed up into a pimento-tree to sleep. He was well pleased to find such good shell-fish, which was the only food he lived on for the first five days, when, by accident, he caught a young kid, which very much rejoiced him; but he was at a great loss for fire to dress it; till having nothing to employ himself with but thinking, he remembered that he had heard, that the rubbing of two pieces of wood hard together produced fire: he tried the experiment; and, by rubbing two pieces of pimento-wood together, did produce fire, after the manner the Indians make use of it. He then made a fire, as having wood enough, and broiled part of his goat, which was a delicious meal to him. He afterwards began to build himself a hut to dwell in, where he lived, and dressed his fish and goat's flesh; but could at first only broil it, till he had driven two stakes in the ground, where he roasted it with a wooden spit. As to fresh water, as I observed before, there were very good brooks in the valleys. At length he invented a way by thickets to ensnare a

goat sometimes, which furnished him with flesh. Here were cabbage-trees, which furnished him with sauce to his meat, it being very agreeable when seasoned with the fruit of the pimento-tree, which is much like Jamaica pepper: but afterwards he could run a goat down. Sometimes he had the good luck to find some eggs, for there were very good fowls: he caught some young teal also; and, by cutting their wings, and keeping them always cut, he preserved them in a brook, just by his hut, which he had inclosed. There they bred, and were tame. But being one day gone a pretty distance from his hut, a great number of monkeys finding them out, and that they could not fly away, destroyed them all. His cloaths were almost worn out, nay, his shoes were quite gone, and had been for some time; but to preserve his feet, he cut the goat-skins in the shape of stockings, and sewed them, or laced them up with thongs of the same; and also laced the foot-part, making holes with his knife for the thongs, three or four times doubled together, to serve for soles. The Spaniard told me, that he was so well inured to that way of life when he was taken from the island, that it was a considerable time before he could relish either drink, or any kind of victuals which was dressed on board the ship. I gave the Spaniard an account of the hermit, to which he gave very great attention.

So, having refreshed ourselves, we sailed from hence, after a stay of three days only in the bay; having got a pretty many goats from the island, and some maize, or Indian corn. From thence we steered for the Gallapago islands, but in our passage met with several storms and tornadoes, attended with very great rains. Some of our men began to be very sickly, which we thought proceeded from their eating the livers of some young seals they had caught, they being unhealthy. After about three days sail, we met with frequent calms. During this voyage, one of our negro women, of whom we had three on board, being with child, and near her time, was delivered of a fine boy, which was of a swarthy colour. She had been on board us ever since we came from the Brazils, and proved very useful in washing our linen, &c. but Juno, for that was her name, proved with child by one of our men, whose name was Thomas Higgins: I, with the help of the other two negro women



women who were on board, performed the office of a midwife, and delivered her. I had purchased a little wine at Panama, which proved very useful to mull for Juno, to comfort her in that condition; also the other negro women, Tom Higgins, and I, drank one bottle after her delivery; and we were really merry on that occasion. The captain was somewhat displeased at this accident; but being unwilling (in so long a voyage, attended with so many difficulties as we had met with) to inflict too heavy punishments on his men, he only obliged Tom to agree that he should allow Juno two pistoles when she went ashore at Brazil, to take care of the child. Tom readily agreed thereto, but had some remorse of conscience, and began to reflect; and was really very much concerned to think, that the child got by him (though on a negro, yet she was a woman, and the child in likeness of himself, and firmly believing that it was really begot by him, and no other person) should be bred up in Paganism. Accordingly, he grew very dull and melancholy at the thoughts thereof, which he communicated to me, asking my advice about it. So I persuaded him to be merry, and not cast himself down; for that many such accidents had happened in the West Indies, before then, among the Englishmen, who never thought much of it afterwards. However, this had no effect at all on him. He told me, that whatever crimes other people had been guilty of, he could not reconcile himself thereunto. Finding him so very uneasy, I acquainted the captain of it: 'Ah!' says he, 'is Tom under so great a concern about the child's being not to be educated in the Christian religion?'—'Yes, Sir,' said I; 'and I am apprehensive that it will grow upon him very much to his prejudice, he is so extremely concerned about it: for less things than that, I have known people grow melancholy (as he seems to be;) and they have entered into a state of lunacy, and never could be brought to their former reason, but have laid violent hands on themselves. As he is a very honest, good-natured fellow, (setting aside this ship,)' said I, 'I with some expedient could be found out to make him easy.'—'Well, then, Mr. Dorrington,' says the captain, 'we have the Common-Prayer Book on board; and 'tis a pity

we lost poor John Davis, our surgeon and chaplain: he could have christened the child, and that would have satisfied Tom.'—'O, Sir,' said I, 'with your leave, as we have no chaplain belonging to the ship, now Mr. Davis is dead; yet, as we are tolerated to bury our dead, pray why may not we christen the living also? It can be no crime to do a good action.' The captain approved of what I said; so I told him, with his leave, I would be chaplain in that case, as well as I had been midwife before: 'But, Sir,' said I, 'there is an obstacle that will hinder us still.' He asked me what that was? 'Why, Sir,' said I, 'we have neither godfathers nor godmothers; and you know that is not accounted lawful to perform that ceremony, which is one of the sacraments, unless it be done with order and decency, as the Church directs.' To which the captain replied—'Is there not Mr. Clark, our lieutenant? I and he will stand godfathers; and he shall, as he is Clark by name, perform the office of clerk in the ceremony.'—'But, Sir,' said I, 'what must we do for a godmother? You know there ought to be one, and we have no woman on board that is a Christian.'—'Well, then,' said the captain, 'the women we have on board, by a little persuasion, may be willing to be christened themselves; and, if they consent, they are of age, and therefore capable of answering for themselves, by which means they may become godmothers, on occasion, to the child.' So accordingly, the captain called for a bottle of wine, and sent for Diana, one of the negro women, aged about twenty-three years. When she came into the cabin, the captain filled a glass of wine, and gave it her: after she had drank it, the captain said—'So, Diana, 'tis to be hoped that you won't be troubled with the wantons, and play the trick your sister Juno did. Pray, how does the child do?' To which she answered—'It be ver well, but it cry, cry, ver much, great deal.'—'Well,' says the captain, 'but, Diana, I sent for you on another occasion: do you not remember Mr. Davis, our surgeon and chaplain?'—'Yes,' says she, 'me ver well know him; he give me ver gret goot stuff,' (meaning a dram.) 'But,' says the captain, 'you know, Diana, he was a vey good man, and used to tell you your duty,

‘duty, and teach you how to say your prayers.’—‘Yes, says she, ‘me ver well remember dat he be ver goot man.’—‘Why, then,’ said the captain, ‘Diana, what do you think of being made a Christian, and christened as we Christians are?’—‘Me mak Christian,’ says she, ‘hou?’—‘Why,’ says the captain, ‘you know Mr. Davis taught you to read, and you learned to say your prayers: they are very good prayers, are they not, to pray to God?’—‘Yes,’ says she; ‘they be ver goot prayer; me love dem ver gret much.’—‘Well, then,’ says the captain, ‘are you willing to be good, and do as those prayers learn you to do?’—‘Yes,’ said she, ‘me be always ver goot, me be ver glad, me lern me prayer, me lern more, me tank you.’ So, by the captain’s advice, I read the publick baptism of those of riper years, and baptized her; she answering to the questions by the instruction of the captain; and we christened her by the name of Elizabeth, which was the name of our ship. As soon as the ceremony was over, the captain ordered Elizabeth to dress the child in as decent a manner as she could, and bring it to his cabin: in the mean time we drank the bottle of wine. As soon as the child was dressed, Elizabeth carried it to the captain, who sent for Thomas Higgins, and told him that Diana was christened, and that he himself, and the lieutenant, were to stand godfathers to his son, and Elizabeth godmother; and that it was to be christened; and desired to know what name should be given to the child: to which he answered, his own, viz. Thomas. But I never saw such an alteration in any man in my life as I immediately observed in him: so suddenly it appeared, that it surprized us all; for he, who before was dejected, even to the greatest degree imaginable, now appeared fully satisfied in his mind; and conscience no longer seeming to fly in his face, he became full of mirth and jollity. So, by the captain’s order, I christened the child in a very decent manner; the captain and lieutenant stood godfathers, and Elizabeth stood godmother. When the ceremony was over, the captain said—‘Tom, as this child was begot and born on board my ship, and I am it’s godfather; and as it is now a Christian; I think it properly belongs to me (though I am not the father of it) to

see it brought up in a Christian manner, which, if it please God to bless me with life, I will see performed; and not only that, but will take care of it, if it lives, during my life, and see it well educated.’ So the captain ordered half a goat to be roasted; and he, the lieutenant, and I, with Tom and Elizabeth, whom he permitted on that occasion, supped at his table, and were very merry: which so rejoiced Elizabeth, that she, immediately after supper, related what had happened to her fellow negro woman, who was called Antiope; and they both went to Juno, and told her, that her son was baptized by the name of Thomas.

The weather here was extremely hot in the day-time; but there were cold dews at night, which were very dangerous; for three of our men died in our voyage to the Gallapagos.

As we sailed, on the twenty-fifth at night, the sea very much surprized us, it seeming to be as red as blood; which occasioned Stephen Jones, who was upon the watch, with some others, to call us up; for they had never seen the like before. When we came upon deck, we supposed it to be a great quantity of the spawn of fish swimming on the water, it being very fair. Having passed the line, we made the Gallapagos on the fifth of July, where we anchored about a mile off the shore, in a good, smooth, sandy ground. We sent our boat ashore for water, but could find none. Some of our men began to be sick, but none of them died before we arrived at Puna Isle, in Peru; from whence we sailed a little way up the river Guaiquil, where we saw a great many alligators, and sold some of our goods: but the Spaniards being jealous that we came as spies, and belonged to some other ships on that coast, which were Buccaneers, we thought it best to leave that place, having taken in some fresh water, and a few provisions, to serve us to the Isle of Labos. We stood out to sea, and made the island of St. Clara, where we anchored on the tenth, for that night, (our ship proving crank, and sailing very heavy:) the next morning, when we were preparing to sail, we found that our ship had sprung a leak; so that we were obliged to have one hand at the pump continually. Before we had sailed six leagues, the wind freshened upon us, and the sky looked extraordinary black at north-east, and it moved towards us, which



which made us take in our top-sails; and afterwards we reeved our main-sail and mizen; at which time it began to rain, and poured down as if through a sieve. The sea seemed as if it had been all on fire, by the prodigious thunder and lightning. It then being night, the elements over our head looked most dismally black, but all round the horizon was as red as blood: the waves, which seemed to dash against the clouds, by the violence of the wind, sparkled like lightning, which, together with the thunder, made a terrible noise; at last, breaking in upon our deck, it carried away one of our anchors; and we durst not bring our ship to the wind, for fear of her foundering, it being dangerous, in a storm, to turn a ship backward and forward; so we were obliged to lie in the trough of the sea. But the wind and rain abating, we observed, to our great joy, a Corpus Sanct at the top of our spindle. These Corpus Sancts are good signs when seen aloft; but bad omens, and denote a great storm, when seen on the decks. It is a small glimmering light, like a star, when aloft; but when on the deck, it appears like a glow-worm. It is the opinion of mariners, that it is a sort of jelly, incorporated by the wind, rain, sea vapours, and air; because it is never observed unless in stormy weather.

We failed right before the wind, which was south-west, but were obliged to keep continually pumping till the eighteenth day; when we made the isle of Labos, about twelve at noon. That night we got safe into the harbour, and anchored at twenty fathoms water, in clean ground, between the two islands: here we resolved to careen our ship. Accordingly, observing the time of high water, we put her into a cove, in the southermost island, where we hauled her up as far as we could on the land; and our carpenter, and all hands, set to work the next day. This island is barren, and without fresh water. Here we killed several seals, sea-lions, boobies, and penguins; a sea fowl about as big as a duck, whose flesh is very ordinary food, but the eggs exceeding good: here also we found a small black fowl, which makes holes in the ground to roost in at night, whose flesh is very good; and a great many vultures and crows. We had careened our ship, and were in readiness to sail on the twentieth, and failed to the island Fernandes, and made the middle bay on the seventh of August, winter being just over there;

which continues only for two months, viz. June and July. We have verbal accounts here of several men who have been left, or cast away, and have lived some time, and very well, on this island. Here we mended our sails. There is plenty of very good fish of divers sorts. It is very pleasant on the shore, and very healthy; so that the men who had been ill on our voyage, perfectly recovered their healths; for the green pimento-trees diffused a very agreeable and refreshing healthy smell all over the island. Here we spent some time in taking wood on board, and likewise in laying water up, which here is very good; we also boiled a considerable number of sea-lions, of which there are plenty here: we had also plenty of young seals, which eat very well; only their livers are unwholesome: and at the south end of the island we found some goats, of which we killed about thirty, which were excellent food. Here were also plenty of turnips and watercresses, which were of great service to us in curing the scurvy; of which we gathered a very large quantity.

So, having refreshed ourselves very well on this island, we resolved to steer for Cape Verde in Chili; on the twelfth, made the Island of St. Jago, where we anchored, and sent our boat on shore. Here we bought some hogs and black cattle, for our voyage round Cape Horn to the Brazils; as also some corn and maize. Here the people, from the ill usage they had formerly met with from the French, are extremely sharp, and really dishonest; for if they trade with you, and cannot get the advantage of you which they think you would have of them, they will snatch your goods, and run away with them.

We weighed anchor on the twentieth, and sailed from hence round Cape Horn, in 51 degrees 15 minutes south latitude, as our pilot informed me, I being only a merchant on board, and therefore do not pretend to make a methodical journal, only as I promised to give an account of the most material passages in our voyage home. Round the Cape the weather favoured us extremely, and nothing happened that was material, only that we were chased by a pirate-ship for about twelve hours on the twenty-ninth; but the night coming on, it favoured us so that we lost her. On the fourth of September we made Faulkland's Island. Here we saw a great number of porpoises, which often

often leaped out of the water, of an uncommon sort. On the fifth we had the misfortune to have one of our men fall into the sea, as he was throwing the lead; and he was drowned before we could give him any help. We had very brisk gales at south-west. We sailed, and made Cape St. Antonio, near the mouth of the river De la Plata, in Paragua, on the twenty-fifth, the wind south by west; when we stood out to sea, and made the isle of Grande, on the coast of Brazil, on the twenty-ninth. We got a pilot, who conducted us into the watering-cove, at the inner westernmost point of the island. In sounding as we went in, we hardly met in any place with less than ten fathoms water. The island is about nine leagues long, high land near the water side; it abounds with wood; has monkeys and other wild beasts; plenty of good timber and fresh water, oranges and lemons. We had pleasant weather, but extremely hot. We here received a letter from our owners, commanding us home, and not to sail for New England, as designed. Here we got beef, mutton, hogs, fowl, sugar, rum, oranges, and lemons; so that now we did not want good punch. During our voyage from the Gallapagos, I applied myself to the perusal of my good old man's memoirs, which I took very great delight in; and finding the whole series of his minor years attended with such a number of unaccountable accidents, hardly to be paralleled, I thought proper, as I designed them to be published at my arrival in England, to digest them in a more regular manner than I found them wrote in his manuscript; but neither added nor diminished; nor did I in the least vary from what he himself had wrote, as to the accidents of life; only I made some amendments which I thought necessary: for his absence from England so long as fifty years, had occasioned him, in some manner, not to be well acquainted with the language as it is now spoken; and, by his living without any conversation so long a time, had made him, in some measure, forget his own mother-tongue. Though I really think, taking that into consideration, that his account was very polite; yet, had his life been published, as in his memoirs, it would have appeared very obsolete, and difficult to be read, though ever so entertaining. I accordingly collected all the passages of his first twenty-eight years together, and thought proper to make a

book, or part by themselves, that part of his life being different from his hermetical confinement on the island, which at first sight appeared so full of horror, and nothing but a prospect of the most miserable condition that could befall him. He no sooner looked round him, and, depending upon Providence as a supporter of the distressed, but he found almost every thing necessary for human life on that small island; and he, who then thought of nothing but immediately perishing in the most miserable condition, has lived, by the help of divine Providence, in a safe and plentiful manner; and is now so inured thereunto, that he despises the populous world and its vanities: he also considers it's pompous glory to be of no more substance than a shadow; and that there is no felicity on earth, unless in solitude.

I likewise methodized his account, during his residence on the island, in the former manner; and made another book or part; which with this account of my finding him on the island, and my conference with him, compleats my design: so that it cannot be called an imperfect description, but compleat, in three books. So I return to my voyage.

In our voyage from Juan Fernandes we saw a very large bird which is called an Alcatres: these birds spread their wings from eight to ten feet wide. In the Brazils is a serpent called Liboya, or the roebuck serpent, the report of which is incredible, (in my opinion) but affirmed by some of the Portuguese; viz. that there are some of them thirty feet long, it's body being as big as an hog's head, and destroys a roebuck at one meal. Here we trafficked for several sorts of drugs. We treated the Portuguese very civilly, who supplied us with all things necessary for our use. During our stay here, there arrived a brigantine laden with negroes, for the golden mines. Here four of our men died, and three ran away from us, the last of which we had just occasion to be thankful for, rather than sorry; for Timothy Anchors overheard them discoursing, that they designed to mutiny at our next sailing, but was doubtful whether or no they might get enough on their side to overpower the captain and his party; and agreeing among themselves, that it was a very difficult matter to become masters of the ship; and, besides, considering the hazard they run, in being punished, after  
such



such a severe manner as they should be, if found out by any means, before they could accomplish their design, or if they should fail in their attempt; made them rather chuse to desert the ship, than continue any longer. Though our captain was an extraordinary good man, yet rogues will be always employing their wicked thoughts; and neither clemency nor good usage can make them perform their duty in their stations.

The tenth of October, after having set Antiope, one of our negro women, on shore, who refused to be christened as Diana was, we began to sail, but kept Elizabeth and Juno on board; the captain resolving that she should live with him as his servant, and by that means would bring up Tom's child. We did not meet with any thing very remarkable; but after about twenty-four hours easy sail, we passed the tropick, and the next day saw land. We stood from it south south-west, and had close cloudy weather all night, with showers of rain. When day broke, we saw Ascension Island at about a league's distance; and about nine o'clock we came to an anchor. The sea is here very deep. The next day we weighed anchor, and sailing north north-east, till the seventeenth, with a fresh gale at west south-west, we crossed the line. The next day an ugly accident happened; for we brought a young bear from Mexico; and our men being often used to play with her and tease her, it proved very fatal to one Thad Obrian, an Irish boy, of about sixteen years of age, who had been fretting the creature with a small rope, which he made a noose to, and slipped her hind leg into it, and so worried her. Her blood growing warm, and she being enraged at his hunting her to-and-fro on the deck, where he happened to slip down; the bear immediately seized poor Thady by the neck, with such violence, that, before any body could deliver him from her paws, the poor boy's throat was tore to pieces; so that he died instantly.

We sailed but very slowly now, meeting with continual calms, and directed our course for the Cape Verde islands; but on the twenty-sixth we had a heavy tornado, attended with lightning, which fell as if the elements had been on fire; but it continued only for a short time: afterwards the weather proved extremely fair, the wind being full south. A sailor going up to furl the main top-gallant on the

third of November, in the morning, saw land, and supposed it to be one of the Cape Verde islands, bearing north-east, distant about seven leagues, smooth water, and fresh gales. About four o'clock we bore north north-west, and went with an easy sail till day-light, and made the island of St. Vincent; when, about nine o'clock, we anchored in the bay, in about five fathoms water, where we rode till the next day; and then we went to St. Nicholas, another and one of the largest of the Cape Verde islands. These islands are so called from Cape Verde in Africa, and are mostly inhabited by Portuguese. One of them is called Sal: it derives its name from the prodigious quantity of salt which is naturally congealed in salt-ponds. There are some poor goats on this island, and some wild fowls. Here are flamingoes, a large fowl much like an heron, but bigger, and of a reddish colour: they feed together in muddy ponds, or where there is but little water. They are hard to shoot, being very shy.

In St. Nicholas we traded with some of the Spaniards for ambergris; but they were very fraudulent, having counterfeited it much. Here are some vineyards and plantations belonging to the Portuguese; and wine, much like Madeira, of a pale colour, and thick. The people are swarthy, and the inhabitants live scattered in the valleys.

While we were at this island, we scrubbed our ship's bottom, and dug some wells on the shore, where we got fresh water. Here an ugly accident had like to have happened; for one of our men, going down into the hold with a candle, set fire to a bale of cotton, which, by his carelessness, had like to have been the loss of our ship: but, thanks to God, it was discovered by its smother, just before it began to blaze out; so that by immediate help we got it extinguished. Very soon after we hoisted it upon deck, for fear any of the fire should remain and revive again, and because we would have it in mind for our safety.

On the eighth we went to the isle of Mayo, another of the Cape Verde islands, but made no stay. We saw at south-west the island Del Fago, which is remarkable for being a volcano, or burning mountain, out of which issues flames of fire; but they are only discerned in the night, and then are seen a great way at sea: yet there are inhabitants on this island (as I have been informed by the Portuguese

guese of the island of St. Nicholas) who lived at the foot of the mountain, near the sea. There are also cocoa-nuts, plantanes, goats, and fowls.

In the island of St. Aritanio, another of the Cape Verde islands, there is a very large spider (as I was informed by the same Portuguese) which weaves it's web between the trees; and it is so strong, that it is difficult for a man to get through. Here are also wild asses; likewise salt-pits, where great quantities of salt are naturally made by the sun's heat; with which they load yearly several ships, and are able to sell much greater quantities than they do, if they had but vent for it.

Having dispatched our affairs at the Cape Verde islands, we weighed with the flood, having a small gale at south south-west. On the seventeenth it began to blow, and veered to the south-west by south. That evening we saw three sail of ships at west north-west, bearing, as we supposed, for the Canary islands, as well as ourselves. The night coming on, which was extremely clear and fine, we passed the tropick about the break of day; soon after which we observed a north bank lying in the horizon. We then provided for a storm, which those clouds denote. The wind was at north-west. We brought the ship under our main-sail and mizen only, and ballasted our mizen; but yet the wind and seas were too high for us, and every wave seemingly threatened to overwhelm us; so that we beat up and down with only our bare poles, which we feared would break in upon our deck, which must have sundered us, in case it had so happened: we also lowered our main-yard and fore-yard down a port-laft, as I observed the sailors called it, that is, pretty near the deck; and the wind blew so extremely fierce, that we did not dare to loose any head-sail at all; for if we had, they certainly would have been blown away. During the storm, it rained exceeding fast, which continued for about four hours, when it changed, and was pretty calm; and we began to get every thing in good order. The wind that evening changing to south-west, about six the next evening we saw the Pike of Teneriff at about nine leagues distance. We saw some flying-fish, and a great deal of sea-thistle swimming. We sailed all night with a small easy gale, and at break of day made the Canaries; bear-

ing at north-west by west, about three leagues. We crouded all our sail, and came to an anchor in the harbour of Santa Cruz, in the island of Teneriff, on the twenty-first, in about thirty fathoms water, black slimy ground, about half a mile from the shore. The land being for the most part pretty high, it is very bad going ashore here in boats; and ships riding here are often forced to put to sea, or slip their anchors, by reason the road lies so open to the east. Ships are here supplied with good water between the coves, where they generally water.

Sancta Cruz, a small town fronting the sea, has two forts to secure the road. Here some English merchants reside. Their houses are low and uniform, covered with pantiles. Here are oranges, lemons, and other fruits; also flowers and fallading, and a great number of pleasant gardens. At Oratavia the country is so full of risings and fallings, that it is troublesome to walk up and down in it: mules and asses are most used by them. Here grows the right and true Malmsey wine; here are also Canary and Verdone, or green wine: likewise a great many convents. Ships are forced to slip their cables, perhaps three or four times, by reason of the winds, and put to sea before they can take in all their lading. Here are wheat, barley, maize, beans, pease, apples, pears, plumbs, cherries, pomegranates, citrons, oranges, lemons, and several other fruits, excellently good; also, horses, asses, mules, cows, goats, hogs, deer, and fowl, both tame and wild, in great plenty. Provisions are dear on the trading islands, but cheap on the others.

Faro isle is very remarkable: it hath no fresh water, only in the middle of the island, where there grows a tree, which being continually covered with clouds, from it's leaves always drop great quantities of excellent water. These Canary islands are commonly the rendezvous of the Spanish West-India fleet, where they generally receive orders for unlading their wealth.

From the harbour of Sancta Cruz we sailed; on the twenty-fifth of November, to the Canary Islands: here the soil is so fertile, that they have two harvests in a year. It's commodities are, honey, wax, sugar, and the best of wines; of which we took in a sufficient quantity of each: here are also, dragon's-tree, which produces



duces a red liquor called dragon's blood. These islands are exceeding wholesome, though they are inclinable to heat.

Having taken in the cargo which we designed from these islands, we sailed from thence on the third of December for the Madeira Island, with a fair wind at south south-west, and saw several ships sailing towards the Lizard. The next day at eight in the morning, we made land, which was the Madeira, at about four leagues distance, and came to an anchor. Here are many fountains and rivers, which refresh the country. It is a very beautiful island, exceeding fertile, and produces excellent wine, which is very strong. We anchored in the port, which resembles an half moon, not far from the town. Near this island is another, not so large as this, (which is about sixty leagues in compass) called Porto Sancto, which affords much the same commodities as Madeira: here we took in about thirty pipes of Madeira wine; and having accomplished our business, we left that island on the tenth, and sailed for the Lizard with a westerly wind. We had not sailed above six leagues, but it changed to north-east, and the sky began to be covered with small hard clouds, very thick, one by another, which we imagined an approaching storm: accordingly we provided for it, by reeving our top-sails, and took in our sails as fast as possible. The wind began to blow a very brisk gale, and soon after the storm began; the wind still increased by squalls of rain and hail, which came very thick and fast, and the sea ran very high; so that we were obliged

to run before the wind. We shipped little or no water, though some washed into our upper deck; and with some of the waves a dolphin was cast thereon. The wind blew very hard, but about eight hours after it abated its fierceness, and then the wind veered to the west, and the foul weather broke up, and we had smaller gales, with some calms, and fair weather. On the eighteenth the wind veered to south south-east, which continued a brisk gale till the twenty-ninth, and we kept right before wind and sea, the wind still increasing; and we made the Lizard on the twenty-seventh, at about three leagues, and stood in for the land, and came to an anchor in King's Road, January 3, 1724-5.

Thus I have given an account of our voyage from Mexico, as I promised, which I hope may not be offensive to any body; it being my intention to divert the readers, rather than displease them.

*N.B.* The ship belonged to Bristol. I communicated the following memoirs to a friend in London, in order to be published; which, if approved of by the publick, I shall, at my return, be very well satisfied. In the mean time, I have business calls me to Peru and Mexico again; in which voyage I hope to see poor Phil. my good old hermit. And so I take my leave, and end the first part.

EDWARD DORRINGTON.

BRISTOL, Nov. 6,  
1725.

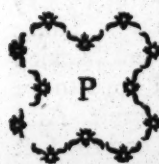
T H E



THE  
ENGLISH HERMIT.

BOOK II.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE BIRTH AND  
EDUCATION OF PHILIP QUARLL;  
AS ALSO, THE MOST SURPRIZING  
TRANSACTIONS OF HIS LIFE, FROM  
HIS INFANCY TO HIS BEING CAST  
AWAY. TAKEN FROM THE ME-  
MOIRS HE GAVE TO MR. EDWARD  
DORRINGTON, THE PERSON WHO  
FOUND HIM ON THE ISLAND.



PHILIP Quarll was born in the parish of St. Giles, in the year 1647. His father Thomas Quarll, formerly a master builder, having unfortunately ruined himself in building, was at last reduced to work at the laborious and mean business of brick-making. His poor wife also was obliged to lay her hand to the labouring oar; so went a chairing: which slavish and confining occupation robbed her of the necessary time to attend the fruit of her conjugal affection, her beloved Phil. so that she was obliged, whilst she and her poor yoke-fellow were drudging to get him bread, to commit him to the care of one kind neighbour or another, for a small consideration, till he could prattle, and go alone; at which time she put him to school to a good old almswoman, where he continued till he was six years old.

One day a neighbour who formerly had the care of the child in his mother's absence, having contracted a particular love for him, being a very pretty child; finding him, after school-time, sitting at his father's door, takes him by the hand, and leads him to his mother, then

at work at an old lady's house in Great Russel Street.

The house-keeper, who was naturally fond of children, seeing this pretty child, takes him up in her arms, and runs up to her good old lady, who had just ended her customary private devotion.

The child, whom the poor woman kept very neat and clean, beyond what could be expected out of her small gettings, was naturally very handsome; being tall for his age, and well-shaped; his features regular and well-proportioned; his complexion fair; his hair long and curling; his countenance mild and sprightly; his behaviour gentle and easy: all which qualifications rendered him completely amiable, and made the old lady conceive an inclination for him uncommon for a stranger's child, especially of so mean a birth.

Thus having often kissed him, she wished he had been her own. 'But why,' said she, 'can't I do for this lovely creature though no kin to me by birth? Nature, who has endued him with qualifications so proximal and suitable to my inclination, has, by sympathy, made him related to me. His mother gave him birth, which, without prejudice to her own life, she could not refuse; now I'll give him education, the principal and most necessary care by which real love can be expressed to a child.'

So, having given orders, that a good school might be enquired after, she put him to board to a master, whose most commendable character of instructing his scholars, in their duty to God and man, as well as in literature, had procured him a considerable number of children of the best



best families. There she intended to have kept him till he was, by years and learning, qualified for some genteel trade; intending to leave him in her will, forty pounds, to set him up, when out of his time.

But now ill fate begins to shew it's averseness to poor Phil's happiness: the worthy lady died suddenly, and was interred a few days after, to his unspeakable prejudice and threatening ruin. But watchful Providence, who had decreed him good, averted the apparent evil, and only permitted some interception to her purposes, the better to raise his esteem of her succeeding favours, when sensible of them.

The master, having conceived a particular love for the boy, (whose uncommon docility, and extraordinary aptness in learning, had overtaken the rest of his school-fellows, though of a much longer standing) was very much vexed at the thoughts of his going away to his parents, they being no longer able to continue his schooling: he was unwilling to part with the boy, and much disturbed to lose twelve pounds a year for a boarder. His love, for the child, whom he had in a manner adopted for his own, would now and then rouse slumbering Charity, whom self-interest too often casts asleep. 'Pity,' said he, 'such blooming wisdom and forward learning should wither away for want of cultivation.' Thus having pondered awhile, love and charity, after a long struggle with interest, gained the victory. The old man concludes to give him his learning, if his relations would only find him in board and other necessities.

This being concluded upon by both parties, Phil. continued going to school for the space of four years longer; during which time, he made himself a complete master of the grammar, writing, and arithmetick; he also made a vast improvement in singing; having all that time been taught by a master, who attended some boarders three times a week; who, finding an extraordinary voice, and natural disposition in the boy, took a fancy to teach him: so that Phil. was, in some respects, qualified to attend the school, in the nature of usher, had his age permitted it. But as he was as yet too young to keep the scholars in that awe which is necessary in a school, the master only gave him his board, till the elder scholars left off, and

he was grown bigger; intending then to allow him a sufficiency to maintain himself, as others in that station. But ill fate still attends the poor boy: the good old man died in less than a twelvemonth, and was succeeded by a superannuated nonconformist minister; who, having not so prosperous a school as his predecessor, had no business for an assistant: so Phil. was a second time obliged to return to his poor mother, (his father being dead;) who, not being in a capacity to do for him, as his education and natural parts really deserved, proposed to him to learn some trade, in order to get his bread honestly and creditably, when she should be no more able to help him; having, by her hard working and frugal living, made shift to lay up five pounds, which she dedicated to that purpose.

Poor Phil. who had conceived a notion that there is a servitude and hardship entailed upon that station, was very loth to resolve upon entering into it; but as he was a very discreet boy, not inclined to play, as children commonly are, and seeing that there was a necessity for him to resolve upon something; to make his choice the more easy, he consults the master's nature and temper, rather than the goodness and profitableness of the trade; and as there lived in the neighbourhood a locksmith, ever since he was born, who, being great with his father, would often play with him when a child, and now and then give him farthings to buy fruit; he chose to be bound to him; which was done in about a month's time.

They both agreed wonderfully well, the master being very kind and good-natured, and the man as diligent and careful; so that those fears of meeting with hardships being dispersed, he cheerfully worked on, without thinking the time tedious. But this happiness, though slight, was but of a short lasting; for the poor man, having been bound for a relation, who failed, had all his effects seized upon, and himself thrown into gaol; and poor Phil. in a year's time, was obliged to go to his mother again.

This accident was a vast disappointment to the boy's learning his trade, he being obliged to be idle, his unfortunate master begging that he would seek after no other; hoping every day to make up his affairs, and carry on business again: so that the lad, for want of employment, would play about the streets with neighbours children.

One day, as he was playing at leap-frog with other boys, there happened to go by one James Turner, an house-breaker, who taking notice of his activity, which much exceeded the rest, judged he might be of great use to him in the practice of his art. The meanness of his dress, which spoke him of no considerable family, gave him room to hope that he might easily get him: so having stopt awhile, he took the opportunity, that the boy, being hot with running and jumping, went to drink at a pump hard by. He takes him by the arm, saying—‘Do you mean to kill yourself, child, to go and drink cold water now, when you are hot? Come along with me, and I will give thee a draught of good ale: you shall only go a short errand for me.’—‘Will you, master?’ the innocent boy answered; ‘I will go your errand, if it is not too far.’ So followed him to an alehouse, in a blind alley, not far from thence, which he commonly used. Being come, he calls for a quart, and bids the boy take a hearty pull; which he did, being very dry, and the liquor as pleasant; this being done a second time, it began to creep into his head, not being used to strong drink; and in a little time he fell asleep on the bench on which he sat.

The seducer, thinking himself secure of him, leaves him to take his nap, shutting the door upon him, and charging the people of the house not to awake him, nor let him go away when awake, till he returned; so went to get ready the implements necessary to set his evil project in execution; having determined to rob a rich merchant that night, in which wicked action he intended to make the harmless boy his chief instrument, by putting him in at an hole he was to break, and then to open the door for him, under the pretence that it was his uncle, who was so ill-natured as to lock him out, if not at home at the shop shutting up.

Having got the tools, he returned to the boy, whom he found just awake, and very uneasy to go home, having slept till it was dark, being afraid to anger his relations by staying out late, contrary to his custom, being used to orderly hours; and would have gone away, had not Turner, whose projects would have been quite unhinged, used all the devices he was master of to persuade him. First he bespeaks a supper of that which the boy liked best, who since his being come from

the boarding-school, had been used to none but coarse meat, his poor parent’s ability affording no better: then, to divert away the time he intended to prolong till his opportunity suited, he told him several stories, and, most particularly, that of his pretended uncle’s unkindness to lock him out of doors, and of his cunning invention to get in at his own time, and unknown to him; but that he was afraid he must be forced to lie out that night, which would be his death, being not used to such hardship. The poor tender-hearted boy, who could scarce forbear crying, whilst he related this dismal story of his uncle’s unkind usage, asked him what was the matter he could not get in that night as well as at other times?—‘Because,’ replied the sly knave, ‘the poor boy that used to let me in is sick of the small-pox, as I have heard since you fell asleep.’—‘What! can’t you get somebody else?’ said simple Phil. ‘I would do that for you, if I could tell how to get into my own home; for my mother goes to bed betimes, being obliged to get up early.’—‘As for that matter,’ answered the subtle serpent, ‘do not trouble yourself; I will provide a bed for you.’ Thus having removed both that, and all other obstacles the boy raised, he persuades him to stay.

But ever-watchful Providence rescues his ensnared innocence. Some hours before he was to go about the execution of that evil project, Turner was apprehended for a great robbery he committed the night before in Lime-street; and the boy, being in his company, was also carried before a magistrate. But the justice understanding, by the innocent boy’s defence, he hardly was yet guilty of any robbery, having regard to his youth, and modest countenance, reprimanded him for his easiness of being drawn into bad company, and warned him to be more cautious for the future; so discharged him, and committed Turner, who was hanged.

That accident, though very lucky, by preserving innocent Phil. from being made accessory to a robbery which would have put his life in jeopardy, at the end proved fatal; he having thereby gained the character of belonging to some ill gang: for which reason nobody cared to be concerned with him, which grieved his poor mother.

The poor widow (being left with her unfortunate son, who she feared would

take



take to some evil way for want, which often tempts the most innocent inclined) not being able out of her small gettings, to maintain him, as when assisted by her late husband; and seeing no prospect of his master's coming out of prison, and being set up again, endeavoured to get him into some place to wait upon some of her mistresses: but the unlucky accident of being had before a justice of the peace, with a notorious house-breaker, frustrated her endeavours; so that poor Phil. was obliged to continue with his mother, in a very mean condition, which his honest mother very much feared would induce him to evil company, of which the parish she lived in swarmed: but the good instructions which were given him in his infancy, before bad examples could have made any impression on his mind, kept out of his thoughts all wicked devices. Thus, seeing no probability of amendment in the station he was in, he resolved upon going to sea, wanting for that employment neither character nor recommendation, which he was sensible would be a hard matter to get, by reason of this most fatal accident.

Thus, having imparted his design to his loving mother, who, with much reluctance, acquiesced in his going from her, and leaving his native country, where she once had hopes to see him well settled; she, with weeping eyes, implores the Almighty to direct and receive him into his protection; and as she was acquainted with no one that could direct and advise him in that matter, she bid him go to St. Catherine's; 'there,' said she, 'you may have a chance to hear of some captain or master of a ship, bound for some short voyage, who, perhaps, may want a cabin-boy; which is, my dear child, all that your age and strength qualifies you for: in a few years, with the help of God, you may find some advantageous opportunity to advance yourself by your learning.' So, having given him sixpence to bear his charges, with a tender kiss, she goes to her wonted occupation, and he straight to St. Catherine's, where Providence had prepared a master for him; he being no sooner come thither, than a captain of a ship, bound for the East Indies, taking a particular fancy to him, asked him whether he would go to sea; and that, if he was so disposed, he would take him to look after his cabin, and provide very well for him,

The gentle manner in which he spoke to the boy, and his mild countenance, made a vast progress in his affection: so, having joyfully accepted his offer, he desires that he may run home, and acquaint his mother of it. The captain, having taken his name and place of abode, gave him half a crown to spend with his mother, and then to come to him, at the sign of the Black Boy, near the Iron Gate; that he need bring no cloaths with him; for he would provide every thing necessary for the voyage.

The overjoyed boy, having told his mother of his extraordinary success, gave her the money, being in great haste to return to his new master: so having embraced his tender mother, and she her dear son, weeping over one another for some time, he leaves her at her work.

The good woman, though she had all the reason in the world to be easy in her mind, that the boy was out of those temptations which great want, and bad company, might lead him into, could not be reconciled at his going from her: but, seeing no remedy, she sends crowds of prayers after him, accompanied with showers of tears, recommending him to the care of Heaven, to whom she daily made addresses for his prosperity.

Phil. who from his infancy had been used to be from his mother, was less disturbed at his leaving her, nothing but his new-intended voyage running in his mind; so hastened to the rendezvous his new master had appointed him; who, not expecting that he would return, was so glad to see him, that he went that moment and bought him both cloaths and linen fit for the sea; so equipped him anew cap-a-pee; then took him home, and in a few days after, set sail for a three years voyage.

During their sailing, Phil. whose agreeable aspect and temper had gained him all the ship's crew's love, being often with the man at the helm, soon learned the compass; and, by the instructions every body on board strove to give him, in a little time he was qualified for a sailor; which his master being made sensible of, whom he had often diverted with his singing during that voyage, allowed him sailor's pay, the following voyage, which was soon after; for, in less than three weeks time, the ship was new-laden, and set out again for the same place, and was gone as long as before; at the end whereof, it returned home richly laden, and

and in a shorter time than was common: which being put in the news, as usual, prompted a certain number of Drury Lane nymphs to go down to the place where they heard the ship was arrived; supposing that the lusty sailors, having a long time been confined to salt meat, would, at their arrival, being flush of money, purchase a bit of flesh at any rate.

Being come to Gravesend, where the ship lay, they found, according to custom, the jolly crew in an alehouse, spending like asses, what they had earned like horses, even before they had received it.

At the ladies coming, the elevated sailors, who had been sailing on salt water for the space of three years, and since set their brains floating in strong drink for six hours, having lost the rudder of their reason, ran headlong upon those quick-sands, where most of them lost all they had, before they could get off.

The ingenious ladies, who had more wit than honesty, improved the absence of their understanding: and, being very expert in the art of fathoming, they fell to examining the depth of those shallow-brained fellows pockets; which finding very low, they were much disheartened from going on, for fear of running a-ground: but, understanding that their ship had not yet been cleared, they cast their anchor there, waiting for a fresh gale.

Mean time, the merry sailors, fearing no storm, gave themselves up to sport; and, for better diversion, every man takes a play-fellow, and goes aside, leaving bashful Phil. behind; who, being a stranger to the game they were going to play at, did not dare to put in for a partner: but cross fate still attending him, a snare is laid in which he must fall.

Every man, but modest Quarll, being gone away with a wench; one, being gone supernumerary, staid behind. The crafty creature, who, from her first coming in, had fixed on the innocent young man for her quarry, kept at some distance from her comrades; waiting their absence, to work her design.

Unthinking Phil. having no suspicion of her cunning devices, lying entirely unguarded against her sly attacks, stood no long siege, but capitulated at the first summons. It is true, she was provided with such artillery, as no fortifications against love could withstand; but would force the most stubborn to surrender, or

at least parley, which is a fore-runner thereof.

Thus, having fixed her basilisk's eyes upon him, as being the first battering-piece the sex plants, when they purpose a breach in a man's heart; she charges him with a volley of engaging words, whilst her looks and carriage offer him such prevailing terms, as no man of any feeling can refuse: therefore, being an exquisite mistress of her art, she soon obtains her ends.

Poor Quarll, whose heart, till then, had never been besieged, finding the invader more tempting than dreadful, she having a very agreeable shape, charming complexion, and most engaging features, surrenders up at discretion, and submits even to bear the yoke of matrimony; which, in less than an hour, is laid upon him; the chaplain of a man of war, who lodged in the house, happening to come in at that critical minute.

By that time, the absent revelling crew were cloyed with their mistresses, and had dismissed them with rough usage and ill language, of which they generally are flush, when money is scant.

The disappointed wretches, seeing no redress for their treatment lately received, which they well knew proceeded from want of money, concluded upon staying in that place till their ship was cleared; by which time their appetite being sharpened again, and they flush of money, and hoping they would also be better chaps; they took a garret in a little strong-water-shop, where they made shift to kenpel together, and live upon short commons.

Our new-married couple, whose money was but scanty, were also obliged to put up with indifferent quarters; but the hopes of receiving the poor husband's pay soon, and withal, the thoughts of being protected from a gaol, which she was in danger of, before married, being the principal advantage she proposed to herself by having a husband, it made her now easy. But she and all the rest of her companions were disappointed. The ship being unladen, the cargo proved damaged, by the leaking of the vessel, which is commonly made good by the sailors: so that, instead of three years wages being due, the poor men stood indebted to the merchants.

That disappointment put the unfortunate seamen, and especially the ladies, into a sad consternation; the former being obliged to go another voyage with empty



empty pockets, and the latter to seek for cullies to support their extravagance, and to pay for new lodgings.

Phil. who, during the voyage, had saved a little money, which his master gave him at sundry times, being disgusted at the sea by the late accident, resolves to seek his better fortune in another manner.

His crafty wife, who was, by her marriage, screened from her creditors, depending upon her former occupation, indulged him in that resolution; so they set out with that little he had, and arrived pretty bare. Finding no friends in London, his master being dead whilst he was at sea, he resolves to list in the foot-guards for bread, having no other dependence; so consults with his spouse about a lodging, till he had quarters appointed for him. She, indeed, was best acquainted with the town, and knew of several that would suit both their stock and station, but durst go to none, having bilked most of them, and left a score with the rest. But lodging must be had before night; and the day was far spent; which set her a thinking, necessity being the mother of invention: and she, as is peculiar to women of her employment, being well acquainted with it, was no stranger to shifts; and presently finds one.

Having pondered for a short time, she concludes upon going to her last lodgings; where, though she was considerably in debt, she questioned not but she should still find a kind reception, and that her landlady, where she had been about a fortnight, having given over her debt, would at her coming slacken the ill opinion she had conceived of her, and afford her kind usage: so, having fixed a rendezvous for her husband, she hastens there; where she found, as was expected, the old woman as overjoyed as surprized to see her; and much more, when she understood she was married to a sailor, lately arrived from a three year's voyage; who in a short time, would be cleared, and that then she would rub off her score. The old woman thinking herself secure of her debt, and sure of a good customer, bids her kindly welcome; and that she hoped she would take no other lodging, but in her house; that she would make every thing as easy and convenient as she should desire; being as welcome to score as with ready money.

The subtle woman, having gained her

ends, goes and fetches her husband, whom the over-reached old woman receives most kindly, expressing her love by a quatern of all-fours, the chief commodity of her house: that being drank, was succeeded by a second, at the new tenant's cost; which being brought, with a chearful welcome to as many as they pleased, encouraged the coming in of half a dozen more: these warmed the company, and particularly the landlady; who having greeted Quarll for his most happy marriage, over and over, fell upon praising his wife, whom she had known for a long time; giving her all the encomiums that virtue itself could deserve.

In this manner they lived about a fortnight, still upon score; which increasing very fast, and no prospect of money, it obliged the landlady to put them in mind; often asking when they expected the ship to be cleared. Quarll, who discerned, by the cloud which appeared over her brow, a threatening storm, begins to think of an harbour, and forthwith goes and lifts himself in the foot-guards.

In that mean station, which often is the last spite of a surly fate, a continuation of misfortunes attends him: the company where he listed in, is full of mercers and shopkeepers, who for a protection took on in the service, and quitted their pay to the covetous colonel, to be exempted from duty, which made it fall heavy on the effective men: but kind Providence, who ever limited the evil that attended him by fortune, ordered this it's vexatious influence to turn to his advantage.

One day that he mounted guard out of his turn, being upon duty at the Park-gate next to Chelsea, about ten at night, the place being clear of people, he fell a singing to divert melancholy thoughts, which solitude is apt to indulge: at that time happened to come by a colonel of the same regiment, who, being merrily disposed, stopped for several minutes to hear him sing: Quarll, having made an end of his song, fell a whistling the tune; at which the colonel came to him, saying—'How can you profane such a fine tune with whistling, when you can sing it so well? Pray let me hear you do it once more; and grace it with that good voice nature has given you.' Quarll, having made some few modest excuses, yields to his pressing solicitation, and sings the same song over again, and with

with more care than before; which so pleased the gentleman, that he stood half an hour with him, asking him questions, and, being by him informed whose company he belonged to, having his consent to be exchanged, he gives him five shillings to drink his health; and charges him to come to him, at the Mitre Tavern at Charing-cross, the next day at eight of the clock in the evening, and ask for Colonel Bonguard: so went away.

Quarll, being off duty, the next day went to the place, at the time appointed; where he finds the colonel, in company with half a score more gentlemen, who received him with more civility and complaisance than is commonly paid to men of his coat: so, having desired him to sit down amongst them, and the glass going round once or twice, the colonel having praised his singing to the company, he was desired to compliment them with a song; if he pleased, with that he sung to the colonel the night before. Quarll, having modestly told the gentlemen, he wished that his skill and voice deserved the honour of their hearing, and that he would do the best he could, having, at their request, drank another glass, he sung the song they desired, to their great satisfaction and applause.

After a short space of time was spent in the praise of singing, and a talk of what an engaging accomplishment it is, either in man or woman; some of the company holding that the charms of musick are no wise inferior to the power of love; it occasioned a very agreeable debate; there being in the company a gentleman unfortunately under that circumstance, who would give love the supremacy over all that can affect our minds; seeing it strips a man of the benefits of his own senses, of the strength of his reason, and soundness of judgment. No object is fair, but that whose idea hath impressed the mind; no harmony heard but in the beloved voice, or that which sounds it's praise; dainties have no favour in the absence of that which every thing relishes; the fairest days are but dull, if not enlivened by the light of the charmer's presence.

Thus he ran on, till the company, perceiving he was beginning to be uneasy, desired Quarll to sing the gentleman a love song, who spoke so much in it's praise; which he did, and pleased the lover so exceedingly, that he made him a present of half a guinea. The gen-

tleman, who was altogether for musick, having asked Quarll whether he had any thing in the praise of it, having also his request answered, made the rest of the company crave a song in the commendation of what suited their inclinations; some being for a bottle, others for roving, and others for a country life.

Quarll, being provided with such songs, entertained them to their desires till supper was brought up; which being over, the company, who had been so well diverted with Quarll's singing; consulted together to do him service: and, as he was well qualified to teach, they proposed to recommend him scholars. A gentleman in company, having a sister, who intended to learn, he writes a letter to her, desiring she would make use of no other master; which letter he was to carry the next morning: and as his regimental cloaths might lessen her opinion of his merit, he bids him, before he goes, to call at his lodging, and he would present him with a suit of cloaths, which he wore but part of last summer, and therefore little the worse for wearing. And, as he wanted but an hat to be compleatly dressed, (having an extraordinary handsome head of hair) another gentleman bids him call on him for one; so that he had all he wanted to set him out.

The gentleman having given him directions where to go for the things, and the colonel his promise to get him discharged out of the company he did belong to; at least, to have him exchanged into his own; they every one gave him their crown apiece: so they departed, bidding him not fail coming thither again that day sevensnight.

This unexpected, but lucky adventure, like a sudden surprize, unframed his reason, and makes poor Quarll overlook the only obstacle that could obstruct his blooming happiness. Thus transported with seeing himself master of more money than ever he was worth before, and in a fair prospect of advancing himself; he hastens home, and in his guard-cloaths, in which he ought not to be seen there; being a dress obnoxious to most, and more especially to creditors.

His landlady, who, till then, had been made to expect her money, thinking he only waited the ship's being discharged, to go another voyage; seeing him in that hope-killing dress, gave a shriek, as if she had seen the devil: slanders and abuses,



abuses, striving for utterance, croud in her foaming mouth; and, like a rapid torrent, which, running from a large extent into a narrow channel, swells and overflows it's banks; so her passion, finding her mouth too small a passage, breaks out through her eyes: thus, having shrieked and roared awhile, which occasioned all her lodgers to come down, she charges poor astonished Quarll with shoals of abuses, in the vilest and most insulting terms the most inveterate malice can express.

Thus having exhausted her stock of slanders, her tongue having uttered all the evil she could, she set her mischievous hands to work upon his wife; who, being come to see the occasion of her shrieking, stood like one bereft of her senses: so, having torn her head-cloaths off her head, with words suitable to the barbarous deeds, she thrust them both out of doors; which, though the rudest action that could denote the unmercifulness of her intended revenge, was to them, at that time, the kindest act she could perform.

That unexpected treatment was no small check to Quarll's chearful disposition; but having considered, that one time or other he must have stood the shock, he rejoices that it is over; and, being free from the care of getting her paid, he has at that time nothing to think of but to find another lodging; which being then too late to go about, he concludes to wait for morning at a certain cellar at Charing Cross, which is open all night. Going along, she mildly blamed him for his unadvised coming in that dress, which, he might imagine, could produce no better effect. To which he answered, he never could have wished for better; for, by her turning him out of doors, she had paid herself, which he would have done had he staid: but now he was come away, being better provided, and in a better way, he would have better lodgings; so told her of the adventure, which much rejoiced her; and from that time made her resolve to forsake her former way of living, which misfortunes only drove her to, being not led by evil inclination, as many are. The morning being come, whilst she went to seek for lodging, he went for the cloaths he was promised the evening before, which fitted him as if made on purpose, and made him appear as one of the genteel employment he was recom-

mended for. Being new shaved and powdered, he went with the letter, according to order; and was received suitably to the recommendation given him. The lady being just up, made him drink chocolate with her; then, having required a song, she agrees with him for a guinea a month, the usual rate, and gives him a guinea at entrance, as it is common; so began that very morning, promising to recommend him to a lady, who had two daughters; which she accordingly did, and sent him thither the next time he came.

This fair prospect of an handsome and genteel living, which he always was desirous of, made him forget his past misfortunes. Thus joyfully he returns to the cellar, where he had spent the night before, and where he had appointed to meet his wife, after she had fixed upon a lodging; who accordingly came in less than a quarter of an hour, hoping she had pleased her husband, which she resolved for the future to endeavour. She sat down, expecting his coming, not knowing he had already waited hers; his change of dress concealing him from her, not expecting to see him in so different a garb from that which she left him in: which he perceiving, comes up to her, and takes her by the hand, going to ask her the success of her walk; but she, putting it out of his power, in an angry manner bidding him go about his business, having none with her, prevented his speaking. His silence, which she took to proceed from bashfulness, occasioned her looking him in the face; in which discovering her dear husband's features, to whose natural handsomeness his genteel cloaths were no small addition, she was seized with such a surprise, that it struck her speechless for some minutes.

Quarll, discerning her disorder by the fading of her fresh complexion, was as much surprized as she. Thus trembling, he takes her in his arms—'My dear,' said he, 'what's the matter? Are you not well?' Having recovered her speech, she embraced him; saying—'How can I be ill, when my dear heart and soul appears so well?'

These kind words, and the return of that flush which first kindled love's fire in his heart, enflames it afresh; hardly can he govern his new-raised passion: thus, giving her a kiss—'My love,' says he, 'have you got me a lodging?'

F

'Yes,

'Yes, my dear,' replies the loving wife; 'you shall ever dwell in my heart.'—  
'But I want to lie in your arms,' answers he; 'that can't be done here.'—  
'Well, then,' said she, 'I have provided a fit place.' So, having each of them taken a dram, they went away.

Sally, who till then was a stranger to real love, now feels it's true smart; and though she has for some time enjoyed the fruition, the only bliss pains-taking lovers aspire at for the reward of all their toils and labours, and the happy shore love's compass points at, yet she seems uneasy, as expecting something more: she cavils with time for flying too fast. Whole days and nights are too short for her to behold her dear. She continually bears his image in her heart, and wishes she could for ever have him in her arms; which from that time she consecrates to chaste embraces; devoting herself wholly to the diligent and assiduous practice of the necessary qualifications in a wife, to render an husband truly happy; the execution of which wise and virtuous resolutions, gained her the tenderest and most sincere love and affection a really fond husband can shew or express to a darling wife.

They lived in that truly happy state about half a year; at the end of which, cruel fate, envious of his uncommon happiness, most barbarously robs him of it, almost as soon as he had favoured it's incomparable and matchless sweets.

One summer morning, loving and truly-observing Sally, knowing her husband delighted in flowers and greens, went to Covent Garden, in order to buy some to garnish her windows and chimney, being the only things wanting to compleat the neatness of her lodgings, which she kept in the greatest order. As she was going, she most unfortunately met with the perjured knight, who deceived her out of her virtue, and with whom she had lived a considerable time, in expectation of his fulfilling the promise he made her, when she put him in possession of her maiden-treasure; who, being glutted with his sacrilegious theft; most basely and ungratefully left her destitute. Fain would she have shunned the fatal principle and origin of her past misfortunes, and hellish motive of her late evil life, which she mortally abhorred, and zealously renounced: but inexorable fate has decreed her ruin; she can no wife avoid him; he was too near be-

fore she perceived him, and had hold of her hand ere she could shift it out of his way.

Being thus suddenly stopped by him, she would have embraced the severest death, to avoid the vile seducer, by whom her innocence was first betrayed. The irreconcilable antipathy she had conceived for the mortal enemy of her newly retrieved virtue, being startled at his terrifying appearance, let her whole faculty in an uproar, and scares away her senses; not so much as a word left her to express her trouble.

The amorous knight, whose late love for the fair Sally (whose regular living had repaired those charms her former lewd life had very much damaged) was revived, and grown more passionate than ever, flattering his hopes with the thoughts that her present disorder proceeded from joy and surprize, took the opportunity of an empty hackney-coach which was going by, to bring her to his lodgings: so having stopped it, he puts in the poor dispirited woman, altogether insensible of what was done, or designed; but having, with the shaking of the coach, recovered a little spirit, and finding herself so much in his power, as aimed at her total ruin, she gave a loud shriek, which occasioned the coach to be stopped by some people who were going by; but his protesting he had no other design but to take her to a friend's house till she was intirely recovered, representing also the danger of exposing herself by opposing his kind intention, being then near a street where he and she had lived together a considerable time, in some measure pacified her: so having put his head out of the coach, he tells the people who stood by, that his wife, who had been lately overset, was afraid of the like accident, which made her scream; so bid the coachman drive on; during which time he entertains her with all the marks of a passionate love, swearing over-and-over, he was her slave for ever; and that now kind fortune once more brought them together, none but death should sever him from the person he loved so dear; and that he would expire in those soft arms which often gave him life.

These fond expressions, which she formerly had given credit to, are now upbraidings and reproaches for her too easy credulity, and only increased her hatred for the deluder; which, at that time she thought proper to conceal: thus, restrain-

ing



ing her passion, she assumes a feigned calmness, and mildly returns him thanks for his love, which she cannot indulge, being married. 'Married!' said he, 'and I living! Was you not mine?'—'I was,' indeed, replied she, blushing with anger and shame. 'But what was I? I tremble to think on't.'—'Why,' said he, 'my love and heart's delight, and shall be, whilst breath keeps it in motion.'—'Oh, false man!' said she, weeping most bitterly, 'repeat not those deluding words, which betrayed my virtue.'—'Come,' said he, 'cease that flood which overflows my soul with the bitterest of sorrows, and relieve the most penitent of men from the cruellest of deaths: my submissive observance of your inclinations shall henceforth atone for all past given displeasures.'—'Mean you,' said she, 'as you speak?'—'By all that's sacred, I do,' replied he.—'Then,' said Sally, joyful, 'set me down here, and I'll forgive what's past.'—'No, my dear, this being a request I cannot in honour grant, I may, without breach of promise, refuse; I must see you quite re-established first.'

By this time the coach was arrived to the directed place, which proved to be an house where she had last lived with the knight, which being open, and the landlady at the door, obliged her to go in without resistance; fearing it would be of no use, but rather prejudicial to her design: so she quietly went in, hoping she should have a better opportunity to get away, after she had made the landlady understand that she was married. But the sordid wretch, hoping the knight would lodge there again, who proved an extraordinary beneficial lodger before, went out of the room, and left her to his pleasure.

Poor Sally, seeing herself at the point of being a second time undone, there being no one to assist her within, nor hopes of any help from abroad, the room she was in being backwards, next to large gardens, and distant from the house, and therefore out of hearing, gives herself up to despair, seeking the opportunity of laying hold of his sword, on which she was resolved to fall, rather than yield to his adulterous desires. Thus, whilst the knight was labouring to express the height of his love, by the most endearing terms, and prevailing words, the most passionate lover could invent; she, of a sudden, snatched the sword from his side, and turn-

ed the point thereof towards her breast, in order to execute her barbarous, though virtuous resolution. 'What do you mean?' said he, laying hold of her arm. 'To get myself at liberty,' said she, 'which you basely refuse;' so falls into a violent fit, which lasted some minutes; which was no sooner over, but it was succeeded by another, and so on for the space of three hours; at the end of which time she was so faint and weak, that her life was despaired of, and so continued all day; which made the knight repent that he had forced her to stay, so much against her will; heartily wishing that he knew where she lived, that he might send her home; which she not being well enough to tell, the landlady, by the knight's order, got the best room of the house fitted up for her; and the bed being warmed, she was carefully laid in it, and a doctor sent for; who, having felt her disordered pulse, said, her indisposition proceeded from passion and grief, and ordered that she should be let blood, which would give her oppressed spirits a present relief. The physician was no sooner gone, but the surgeon was sent for, to perform the doctor's orders, which gave her immediate ease, and in a little time caused her to sleep, which lasted all the night.

This great and sudden amendment much rejoiced the most afflicted knight, who made a vow not to leave her till she was restored to her wonted health; sitting up by her all night.

The next morning, Sally, whose good night's rest had in a great measure recovered both strength and reason, finding herself in a strange bed, and from her husband, was again seized with surprise, which did much threaten a relapse. 'Heavens!' said she, 'by what enchantment am I here? What fiends could ravish me out of my dear spouse's arms?' Then seeing the knight stand by the bed-side, she gives a loud shriek. 'Oh! vile ravisher!' said she, 'is it then by another of your hellish stratagems that I am again betrayed into your power?' at which she fell into a violent fit of crying. 'No, most virtuous woman,' replied the knight, falling on his knees; 'it is by accident, of which I own myself to be the most miserable occasion; for which I heartily ask both Heaven and you pardon.' Then he relates the whole matter, which the late illness her excessive grief and passion brought upon her, had made her forget.

That woful relation did but add to her trouble, by heightening her grief. 'Oh!' said she, with a fresh shower of tears, 'how can I now look my dear husband in the face, when my very justification turns to my shame?'

The knight, who was in as great a consternation as he could be in, takes her hand, which lay motionless out of the bed, and, bathing it with tears, begs her to forbear terrifying his most penitent soul, promising to rectify all past wrongs.

'You remember, my life,' said he, 'the vows I made when first you gave yourself to me: I renew them now, and would fulfil them, but that it would expose you to the rigour of the law: therefore, I'll only, for the present, settle five hundred pounds a year upon you for your life, till, by your husband's death, I am empowered to make you lawful mistress of all my estate. Pray compose yourself, and sedately consider on't, and, when 'tis come to a conclusion, I'll attend for your answer.' So withdrew for a while.

This generous offer, expressing the sincerity of his love, for whom she had formerly more than a common esteem, in a great measure appeased her passion; the offered atonement disarms her revenge; she now pleads for him she had condemned, and blames herself for the crime she had charged him with. 'How could I,' said she, 'think my virtue safe in his hands, on whom love has such an ascendant (which is itself guilty of as many faults as it covers?) If he went away with my heart, it was but a breach of trust: besides, his absence was no flight, it being occasioned by business.'

Having made these reconcilable reflections, and being at the point of accepting his offer, conscience starts, and opposes her resolution: her husband stands in the way, rigged in all those engaging qualifications which had won her affection. This, coming into her mind, in a manner scares away her reason; she cannot help loving both: her love for the knight pleads seniority, and that for her husband justice. The first is attended with interest, the last is prompted by virtue. The debate is great, and both their arguments strong. Reason is called to decide the matter, which having (as it is her custom) sedately weighed the cause, examined both accidents and incidents, at last seems inclinable to favour the love for the knight; but Justice, who is al-

ways in the right, will not resign it: Peace and Content, the only motives worth contending for, must be consulted. They, being also cautious of giving a rash verdict, examined on which side they were in most safety; and finding themselves most screened from upbraidings and reproaches (their mortal enemies) for the knight, gave it of his side. So Justice, who seldom gets it's due, is forced to drop the cause, and tacitly withdraw.

The knight's offer, being the softest choice for an easy and quiet life, which she could not reasonably expect from her husband, who doubtless would, from the late accident, conceive an ill opinion of her virtue, (which, although at that time blameless, she could not with modesty vindicate) having sent for the knight, she speaks to him after this manner.

'I have had so much reason to repent my being too credulous, by the many vexations it has occasioned me now, that should I, upon the bare repeating of broken promises, expose myself to the same, you yourself could not but blame me.'—'Indeed, dear Sally,' said the knight, interrupting her, 'I own you have sufficient cause to question my sincerity; but I will this moment remove it: so that moment sends for a lawyer, and makes the proposed settlement; then gives orders that a mercer should be fetched for her, to take her choice of the most modish silks, and then for a silk night-gown, for her to wear till her cloaths were made: as also for all manner of linen, shoes, and stockings. Then having new rigged her from top to toe—' Now,' said he, 'my dear, you are entirely mine; give me directions, that I may send your husband what he can challenge as his own: so writes the following letter:

'SIR,

'**L**EST the absence of her, who unthinkingly gave herself to you for a wife, (though not at her own disposal, being mine before) should cause you any further trouble, these are to satisfy you, that I have retaken possession of my own; to send you back her cloaths, as being all you can claim a right to. I am yours,

'R. S.'

Having sealed up the letter, and bundled up the cloaths, a porter was called, to whom orders were given to carry the bundle



bundle and letter to the most perplexed and concerned Quarll, who spent the night in unspeakable torment. A thousand dismal accidents glared at his alarmed fancy, which created new racks for his tortured soul. He tumbles on his bed like an unmailed ship tossed about by a violent storm, cursing the tedious hours for creeping thus in the dark night; taxing the sun with sloth, and nature with unkindness. Thus, like one bereft of his senses, and quite void of reason, he snarls at the whole creation.

At length, the long wished-for day having sent forth its dawn, to proclaim its approach, he starts from off the bed whereon he lay as if upon thorns, and, like a madman, runs about to inform himself of what he dreads, more than death, to know. But, having spent several hours in diligent enquiry after lately befallen accidents, without hearing of any, jealousy creeps in, which in some measure removes his former fears, but no wise lessens his pains. Thus he returns home as much racked as before.

Being arrived, he finds on his table a bundle, and a letter, which his landlady told him were brought by a porter. His impatience to know the contents of both were equal; but the bundle being more surprizing to him, he precipitately opens it first; which finding it to be every individual part of the cloaths his wife had on the day before, when she went out; with the surprize, he lets it drop out of his hands, and, like one thunderstruck, remained speechless for several minutes. Then fetching a deep and heavy sigh, attended with a shower of tears, he bitterly exclaims against himself for questioning the faithfulness of that love, of which he now has such fatal proofs.

Thus, concluding she had drowned herself, and that the letter would inform him of the cause thereof; he takes it up, saying—‘O that thou hadst been a timely forerunner of the fatal tidings thou art bearer of! Yet, for her dear sake that wrote it, I’ll peruse thee, though thy contents be but racks for me, and the most cruel tortures that ever were or can be invented.’

But great was his surprize, when he found it to come from a man; and inexpressible his confusion at the contents: his senses are all in an uproar; he blames his eyes for not seeing right; his apprehension for mistaking the meaning: his blind love taxes his reason with rashness,

the mistaken expressions being but illusions proceeding from an oppression upon the intellects; so lays down the letter till his disturbed mind was better settled: yet he cannot be easy; he must, with some other writing, try whether his eyes are still defective: on which, finding no fault, he hastily takes up the letter again; but alas! it was the same as before. ‘My judgment,’ said he, ‘has been as much wronged as my love.’ So, after a few considerations, calling to mind, that as an accident had procured her to him, he ought, without reluctance, to surrender her again; having made a resolution never to venture any more on that uncertain state, which commonly promises happiness, but often brings sorrow: he shifts his lodging, and goes to live where he was unknown, the better to pass for a bachelor; in which free station he enjoyed peace undisturbed, and pleasures uncontrouled, for the space of twelve months. But cross fate still pursues him; he must again be fettered, and bear yet heavier chains than before. A second mate is allotted him, who, though very chaste, dooms him wretched, being short of other qualifications necessary in a wife to make a man happy.

This woman had been bred up from her infancy under the care of a lady, whose two daughters Quarll taught to sing, and had lived with her in station of a chamber-maid, ever since she was big enough to officiate in that place; during which time, having behaved herself to her mistress’s content, she gained her affection; so that this good lady, being desirous to advance her maid, whose age fitted her for marriage, the chief settlement for a woman, she cast her eyes upon her daughters singing-master, who she thought would make her a good husband, having observed him, ever since he came to her house, to carry and behave himself very decently. Thus having declared her mind to her, who had already a great inclination that way, she readily submitted to her lady’s will, who promised to bring it about.

The good lady, having conceived the principal means to bring her design about, took the opportunity of Quarll’s next coming, to propose it to him, promising to make her worth three hundred pounds, which was the only motive that could engage him to break the resolution he had made. The young woman being also very agreeable in her person, and extraordinary

ordinary obliging to him, he readily accepted the offer.

The old lady, having so far prevailed upon him, is resolved to push on till quite concluded; so has them married in less than a week, and gave them lodgings in her house, where they continued but one month. The new-married wife, thinking herself, in some measure, under confinement whilst in the good lady's house, to whom duty and gratitude obliged her to be more than indifferently observing, being likewise somewhat ambitious of living great, persuades her husband to take a house, and furnish it; which being done according to her desire, they went away from the kind old lady to live by themselves, without considering the expence of housekeeping, which they both, till then, had been strangers to, but, in a little time, became too well acquainted with.

The three hundred pounds being gone in furnishing the house and paying two years rent, and as many years wages to a couple of maids, one whereof she kept in the station she herself had but lately overcome; Quarll was obliged to reduce his charges, and level his expences to his income; so discharges the superfluous servant, whose business was only to indulge her indolence, and increase her pride.

That sudden lessening of her attendants checked her ambitious disposition, in such a manner that it threw her into the spleen; which was like to have cost him more money in doctors, than the servant's wages which he endeavoured to save.

Being taken very ill, and knowing not what to complain of, a doctor was granted, at her importunity, rather than her need; who, being come, and finding her indisposition lie in her temper, more than a defect of nature, ordered her medicines to make them both in the same condition.

Her strength decaying, and the apothecary's bill increasing, which are the usual effects of imaginary illness, made her husband apprehensive, that considerable charges might accrue from her fanciful and imaginary distemper, which he would not indulge; and feared to check too suddenly, lest it might produce some other ill effect; so, in compliance to her natural pride, he promises her going in the country, as being a proper expedient to save his money, and to be rid of a

grunting companion, at least during the summer.

This proposal, suiting her ambition to imitate quality, (who, for the generality, go out of town about that time of the year) was soon accepted of; and that opportunity of being freed from one of the greatest plagues which can befall a man, by him as soon approved.

Quarll, having got her in the mind, was no wise dilatory to get it performed; but made diligent enquiry about the most convenient place in the country, for remoteness and cheapness; which being informed of, he forthwith takes horse, and having found a good old countryman, with his wife and daughter, in Yorkshire, whose diligent cares, and frugal living, whilst young and strong, had been rewarded with a moderate competence, to keep him from toiling when grown old; who, having a pleasant and commodious habitation, distant from meddling and inspecting neighbours, and room to spare, were very glad to take in a gentlewoman to board, being some company for them in their remote living, and therefore stood upon no rate: which suiting Quarll's circumstances and wishes, he began to consult on means to keep his wife there for a constancy; and as he well knew she never would consent, nor he be able to force her to it by violence, he applies to stratagems. Thus, having given her the best character he could to the old people for good humour, he tells them, that indeed she had one failing, but that it was no wise troublesome, provided one gave her her way: she is very vapourish, and looks for great attendance. — 'O dear! that's quality distemper.' 'Well, if that be all,' replied the old folks, 'she shall not want for any one thing.' — 'More,' said he, 'I must caution you of, which is this: she will soon be tired of her lodging, and will be for returning to London; so will seek all opportunities to steal away, if she finds herself opposed in her desires: therefore it is best not to contradict her directly, but be sure watch her narrowly, lest she gives you the slip.' — 'Never fear,' replied the good people; 'we will take care of that: she never shall go one step alone. She is not apt to lay violent hands upon herself, and do herself a mischief?' — 'No, no,' replied he, 'there is no danger of that; you may trust her alone within doors at any time, but never abroad. One thing



‘ thing more I must give you notice of ;  
 ‘ that is, when she finds she cannot get  
 ‘ away, she will be for sending letters :  
 ‘ I charge you, let her have no paper,  
 ‘ only at first ; to write to me once, or  
 ‘ twice, or so ; and that you will guess  
 ‘ when proper, by her railing, which  
 ‘ will be a token of her being discom-  
 ‘ posed : and, as for her diet, she is some-  
 ‘ thing dainty ; but I see you have plenty  
 ‘ of poultry, which she loves very well.’

— ‘ O dear Sir,’ answered the old wo-  
 man, ‘ she shall have fish, flesh and fowl,  
 ‘ when she pleases. We have a fine  
 ‘ pond in the ground, well stocked with  
 ‘ fish ; and cocks and hens enough, you  
 ‘ see, about the yard ; and for butcher’s  
 ‘ meat, it is but two or three hours ride  
 ‘ to the next town.’

So Quarll having agreed, and paid one  
 quarter before-hand, which he promised  
 to do whilst she boarded there, he returns  
 to London, in order to fetch his wife ;  
 who having projected a greatness of liv-  
 ing in the country, which she was dis-  
 appointed of in town, immediately in-  
 quired into the appearance of the house,  
 the handsomeness of the lodgings, and  
 the gentility of the neighbours : to which  
 questions Quarll took care to answer suit-  
 able to her inclination. So, having con-  
 cluded to go the next day, they went out  
 to make provision of such things as can-  
 not well be had in the country ; as Nantz  
 brandy, ratafia, usquebaugh, coffee, cho-  
 colate, and such things as were necessary  
 for genteel company.

Being provided with every thing, they  
 set out the next day ; but, as neither  
 lodgings, house, or neighbourhood, an-  
 swered her ambition, nor his commen-  
 dations, he contrived to arrive in the  
 night, that she might not find the deceit ;  
 and as the good people of the house, ac-  
 cording to direction, shewed her abun-  
 dance of respect, giving her the title of  
 lady, and a good supper being prepared,  
 she inquired no further into the matter.  
 The next morning, Quarll having repre-  
 sented to his spouse, it would be of pre-  
 judice to him, if he stayed any longer  
 from his scholars, having already lost  
 six days, took his leave of her, and left  
 her in bed, it not being her usual time to  
 rise : so, having promised to be with her  
 in a short time, to see how she liked her  
 lodgings, he returned to London, having  
 first renewed his charge to the good peo-  
 ple of the house, of giving her her hu-

mour ; and, above all, not to let her go  
 out alone, nor consent to her coming up  
 to London ; which in a little time, he  
 questioned not but she would be very de-  
 sirous of.

Quarll being gone, the old people, ac-  
 cording to their charge, were extraordinary  
 diligent and careful in pleasing their new  
 lodger ; who finding her ambition grati-  
 fied by their observance, kept in that day :  
 but the next morning, having a fancy  
 to walk out, the young woman of the  
 house took her to see the ground and  
 cattle which belonged to them, as being  
 the principal things she could shew her ;  
 there being neither house nor habitation,  
 but their own little cottage, within sight.  
 She, who thought her lodgings to be in  
 a handsome and creditable house, near a  
 genteel neighbourhood, with whom she  
 might converse ; finding the reverse of her  
 expectations, could not conceal her passion  
 at the disappointment ; but falls a rail-  
 ing against her husband in such a rage as  
 frightened the poor young woman ; who,  
 doubting she was going into one of her  
 fits, ran home to fetch her father and mo-  
 ther ; who, being come, were as much  
 frightened as their daughter, at her fu-  
 rious countenance, the blood being ready  
 to start out of her face, and her eyes out  
 of her head. Thus, fearing she would  
 grow unruly, each of them took hold of  
 one of her arms, and so, in a manner,  
 dragged her home ; where, being come,  
 they would have laid her upon the bed ;  
 but she, who took this act of their caution  
 for an effect of their careful attendance,  
 told them, that indeed she could not find  
 fault with them ; and that their habita-  
 tion might suit their birth ; but really it  
 did not hers, which her husband very  
 well knew ; and therefore she never  
 would forgive him for bringing her thi-  
 ther, and that he should soon know :  
 so desired them to give her paper and  
 ink, if the house could afford such a  
 thing.

The good people, who had been cau-  
 tioned to give her her humour in that at  
 the beginning, having none at home, sent  
 the boy that attended their sheep on  
 horseback to the next town for them ;  
 then, leaving her to compose herself, they  
 retired to bewail among themselves her  
 misfortune, which they perceived to be  
 the effect of pride, reflecting upon the  
 happiness of their own condition, and the  
 pleasure of a contented life.

‘ Now,’

‘ \* Now,’ said they, ‘ she has been brought up in a city, where excess of pleasure and luxury are made the only means to arrive at content; but, alas! how widely do they miss their aim! Their life is a continued series of cares; their emulation and vanity in fashions, entertainments, and such like, together with their inseparable companion, envy, only contribute to make an unhappy life still more miserable. Here this gentlewoman wants for no manner of necessities to make a life comfortable, but has rather a superabundance. Could she reject that horrid pain-causing quality of pride, and learn a little humility, it is that brings content and sweetens all the misfortunes of this life. How preferable is our station to hers! How solid is the pleasure we enjoy in this solitary habitation, compared to the trifling joys the great ones possess in the most populous cities! O happy fields and silent groves! where nothing but eternal rounds of pleasure centre! Here no debaucheries, riotings, fashions, and luxurious entertainments; no envy of others good fortune, no drunkenness, swearing, and blaspheming the mercies of the Almighty God, ever take place, as in flourishing cities; but Providence gives us all things with a bountiful hand: in short, we have all we desire, and more than we justly deserve. Here the beauteous birds, joyfully hopping from bough to bough, stretch their tuneful throats, and warble out melodious anthems to their great Creator’s praise; whilst flowery hills, in harmonious echoes, repeat the same to the fruitful neighbouring vales. Here is nothing to be seen or heard but universal acclamations of praise to the great God of all things. This is the real solid pleasure; this is that makes us perfectly happy. For how much more eligible is the company of irrational animals, or even inanimate things, than the society of men, who have divested themselves of all things but shape, whereby to distinguish them from the most deformed brutes, or, indeed, from more horrible devils? This gentlewoman has put us in mind of our own happiness, of which, before her coming, we were almost ignorant;

‘ but now we may see, that happiness consists not in riches, nor content in gaudy apparel.—But why do we tarry here? It is not proper to leave the gentlewoman so long alone, lest, in one of her fits, she should do herself a mischief: therefore let one of us go to her.’ So the good woman of the house went to her, and, finding her in tears, used all possible endeavours to divert her melancholy, but all to no purpose; for still she was interrupted by exclamations against ‘ that villain! that rogue!’ her husband. The good woman finding that words could not prevail, thought a glass of ratafia might do better; so desired her to comfort herself, and take a glass of her cordial; to which she soon consented, and after that four or five more, which had the desired effect; for her melancholy was by this time turned into most violent fits of the spleen, and presently into drowsiness. The landlady, perceiving her condition, desired her to lie down, and refresh herself by taking a little sleep: so, laying her down upon her bed, and watching her to sleep, retired.

After she had slept an hour or two, she awakes, in a very splenetic humour, and calls to know the reason, why pen, ink, and paper were refused her. ‘ Indeed,’ said the old woman, ‘ we did not know that your ladyship was awake; and we did not care to disturb you; but I will bring it to you presently.’ So went and brought it. Which she no sooner received, but she began to write the following letter:

‘ Most barbarous of men,

‘ **W**AS you afraid that my indisposition (for which you most deceitfully did persuade me to leave London) would not kill me quick enough itself, that you have decoyed me to an oven, the dulness whereof is sufficient to make any well-bred dog pine itself to death; here not being a rational creature to talk to, but the insipid folks of the hut; who, being stript of their clumsy human shape, will be as complete brutes as their oxen and cows. Pray see that you forthwith fetch me hence, or expect to incur all the resentment an injured wife can shew, as soon

\* N. B. The lines marked with (‘) are set down word for word with his Memoirs, for these reasons. 1. I thought it a pity to alter any thing from his notions of the pleasures of a country life. 2. And the rather, because it gives us very lively ideas of the perfect happiness he enjoys in his solitude.



' as arrived to London, where I shall  
' surely come in a few days, though I  
' was to travel all the way barefoot.

' Yours, &c.

' MARY QUARLL.'

This letter being wrote, the good people of the house were in a great consideration, whether they ought to send it or not; but after some consultation about the matter, they concluded it should go, lest her husband should take it amiss.

Quarll, who expected some such letter from his haughty dame, as soon as she had discovered the cheat, had, with a great deal of judgment, prepared the following answer :

' MY DEAR,

' IF your pride and vanity do outrun your  
' reason, it is no argument my compliance to them should hasten my ruin:  
' and if you consult your circumstances,  
' as I do my ability, you will not dis-  
' commend

' Your careful husband,

' PHILIP QUARLL.'

And with that, one to her landlord and landlady, whom he thanked for their care of sending the letter; but desired they would not trouble themselves with sending any more, nor give her opportunity of writing, seeing it did but aggravate her distemper; and, above all things, to have a particular care she should not give them the slip, and he would take care to gratify them for their trouble.

This obliging letter, together with a present of a pair of handsome green stockings, and lemon-colour gloves to the daughter, did so win the old folks affection, that they were extreme punctual in observing his orders: but that to his wife had a quite different success; for, instead of putting her into consideration, it set her into such a violent rage, as would scarce permit her to read it throughout: so, tearing it to pieces, she storms out—' Consider my circumstances! vile wretch! let him behold  
' my portion, whether it deserves me no  
' better a being than a hovel!—Landlady,  
' send immediately to the town, and get  
' me a place in the stage against to-mor-  
' row; for I will go and tear that villain  
' to pieces.'

The good woman was not a little displeased to hear her thus despise her house,

which was the best within a mile round; but as she imagined it was the effect of her vapours, instead of vindicating her house, which, though old and low built, was tolerable large, and very convenient, she seemed to acquiesce with her, wishing it had been better for her sake: but as for sending to take a place, it was then too late; for by that time a messenger could be got to town the office would be shut up; but that the next time she went out, she would take care a place should be taken: so excused it for that week. In the mean time she gave her her humour, being very respectful and observing; which, suiting her pride, made her something more easy, and in some measure diverted her raving fits; for she fully depended upon going the week following, but was again disappointed by one mishap or other, and so from time to time, till at last she began to doubt of their giving orders, meaning to keep her there: thus resolved to go herself; but not knowing the way, she desired somebody might be sent along with her; which they were ready to grant, but never could be had, being always out of the way, about some business or other.

This continuing for the space of a month, or more, and no news coming from London, she began to think it was a contrivance of her husband's to be rid of her with only paying for her board and lodging, which she understood he had done before-hand, and agreed to do so during her stay, which, very probably might be for her life; but resolved to disappoint him by privily stealing away, and at a venture seek out the road to the next town, not questioning but she should find somebody as she went that would direct her: but the old folks, having been warned of such an enterprize by her husband, were too vigilant to give her an opportunity of attempting it, never leaving her by herself from the time of her getting up to her going to her bed again: which over-attendance convinced her of her imprisonment.

Then finding herself curbed in her ambition, disappointed in her pride, and tricked out of her liberty, without hopes of being relieved; the letters she sent to her friends being intercepted; she falls into a passion suitable to her case and disposition; which having vented upon the people of the house for abetting and adhering to her perfidious husband in so traitorous a deed, her spirits being ex-

hausted so prodigiously with raving, that nothing but a cordial dram could ever have brought them to their usual tone, and which she by long experience knew, calls for her grand specific; and, after she had drank three or four refreshing glasses, she became more easy, and retired to rest: when, having slept a few hours, she awakes something better composed. Thus, considering that all the resentment she was capable to shew could not mend her condition; she therefore concluded to make her landlord and landlady her friends, that if she did not enjoy her liberty, as she proposed, she might at least enjoy a little more content in her confinement.

Thus she resolved, and indeed kept her resolution a long time; laying aside her haughty temper, and curbing those violent passions she had so long accustomed herself to, she now began to be much more familiar and condescending, than what she had hitherto shewn, to the great joy and surprize of the good people; who by this strange alteration, were in great hopes her madness was wearing off; and, upon that account, were extremely industrious to humour her in every point; using her with all the good manners they were capable of: which she easily perceiving, thought to make use of their credulity to her advantage; for she was a woman of quick penetration: and, finding how egregiously those ignorant people had been imposed upon, in relation to her phrenzy, saw the only means to regain her liberty was to pretend a recovery. And, accordingly, by a counterfeit change of temper, endeavoured to persuade the people into a good opinion of her; telling them, she could never requite their extreme good services to her during her indisposition; and lamenting her own unhappiness in being so troublesome and fatiguing to persons of so kind and obliging a behaviour. They, in like manner, answered, that if their poor services had contributed any thing to her ease and recovery, they were sufficiently made amends for all their trouble.

Now the scene was intirely changed; the raving, proud, ill-natured gentlewoman, became the most pleasant, so iable, and best-natured person they had ever met with: and they, who just before conceived so great a dislike to her, were now so delighted with her company and conversation, that she was let alone than

formerly, they always contriving some diversion or other to drive away her melancholy, and to prevent a relapse; hoping to send the welcome news of her perfect recovery to her husband: frequently pleasing her with odd country tales; shewing her all the pleasures their fields, gardens, and orchards could afford, with many other little contrivances to pass the time away; while she endeavoured to divert them with the comical adventures of the Londoners. This she endured almost a whole month, with all the seeming good-nature imaginable; but finding herself in no way to procure her enlargement, and rather more strictly guarded than formerly, resolved to obtain her liberty by stratagem, which she designed in the following manner.

There was a servant in the house, whose name was Thomas, and a lively, brisk, fresh-coloured young man, indeed a fellow of admirable sense, and good manners: this spark was of a very amorous disposition, well versed in intrigues, and extremely obliging in his temper and behaviour: who, as soon as he saw Quarll's wife, began to think of his former way of living. Now this young fellow was born in London, of very mean parents, whose friends not being able to give him a trade, he was obliged to enter himself a member of the ancient and honourable society of lacqueys. His first service was to a widow gentlewoman, where he learnt all the necessary qualifications of his employ; but his mistress being a very religious woman, going to church two or three times every day, where he was obliged constantly to attend her, and so much gravity not suiting his mercurial temper, soon obliged him to quit his post. But he being an arch wag, and sly knave, soon advanced himself to be a footman to a young nobleman. Here he began to shew his genius; for his master, being a young gentleman very much delighted with love-adventures, frequently made use of him in those cases; and, finding him to be of a sharp ready wit, very careful, and well skilled in taciturnity, soon made him secret messenger in ordinary to all his intrigues; in which station he behaved himself admirably well, having all the accomplishments necessary for so weighty a trust, viz. vigilance, dispatch, and secrecy; and these so well managed, that he seldom failed in his designs.

This



This post of honour he enjoyed for a long time, with great credit and reputation; and gained so great a share in his master's affections, that he likewise made him first minister to all his affairs.

Now Tom is arrived to the very summit of his fortune; regaling himself in all kinds of pleasure, beloved and trusted by his master, honoured and respected by his fellow-servants, and in short, might be said to be perfectly happy. But here that jilt, which so long flattered him with her kind embraces, at one fatal blow removes all the means whereby he ascended, and pushes him from the lofty precipice to the deepest sink of poverty imaginable.

Tom's master being a lover of variety, his curiosity prompted him to see the diversion of a country wake, in order to start some fresh game; and, to that purpose disguises himself like a plain country gentleman, and equipped his man Tom in the same garb, on purpose to make him his companion in his adventure. This place, where the wake was kept, was about ten miles from the nobleman's seat; so each mounted his horse, and away they rode: when, being arrived at the town, nigh which they were to hunt their game, they both alight, and put up their horses at an inn; and, having pulled off their boots, out they walk towards the place of rendezvous. As soon as they came within sight of the place, they beheld the fields prettily bespotted with different companies, at as many different diversions. In one place a parcel of wrestlers, eagerly contending, with broken shins, for a pair of gloves; in another, a company of cudgel-players, with battered ribs, fighting for a laced hat; some at one game, and some at another: but Tom and his master, who cared for neither broken shins, or bloody brows, resolved to seek out softer combatants.

After they had walked up and down the field, seeing the several diversions; 'Well, Tom,' says the young nobleman, 'where's our diversion? Where are all our girls got to?' 'O,' says Tom, 'we shall be in with them presently. Hark, I hear the noise of cat-gut; and I warrant we find them there.' So following their ears instead of noses, they came to a most spacious dome, vulgarly called a barn; which they no sooner entered, but Tom

says to his master—'Here, Sir, here's variety for you; here's nymphs of all sorts and sizes; and, faith, of all complexions; they're all clean and neat; all fit for the game: come, Sir, pick and chuse: which pretty smiling rogue must be your nymph? Come, let's see what you'll do; for I long to be at it.'—'Do you long to see what I'll do?' says the nobleman; 'why I intend to work miracles; I shall make my nymph a goddess, before I leave her.'—'Well then,' replied Tom, 'I suppose I may take the privilege to make my girl a nymph, at least.'

While they were thus talking, they stood like two hawks hovering over their prey, not knowing on which to fix their fatal talons; and the rusticks staring at them with open mouth, and distended nostrils, not knowing what to think of them. At length Mr. Scrape, by tuning his melodious battered fiddle, summons all the girls to readiness, each preparing her feet for the sport; while every Hob began to seize a partner, and Tom and his master (in the mean time, you may be sure) were not idle: for, offering their service to a couple of pretty cherry-cheeked rogues, as Tom called them, the innocent girls very gladly accepted their offers, little dreaming their wicked intentions; but the mischief was, the nobleman had got the girl which Tom had the most inclination to; which caused such a secret envy in his breast, that became the fatal cause of his unfortunate disgrace.

Now the dance was begun with great fury on both sides; the girls romping and tearing, and the fellows pulling and hauling, and shoving, and kissing, and tumbling like so many mad devils; while Tom and his master, being strangers to such kind of diversion, stood like two images, and the country fellows mocking them; which Tom observing, and seeing his partner very dull, thought they should never out-do him in caterwauling: therefore, shrugging up his shoulders, and rubbing his eyes a little bit, he began to be as brisk as the best. The nobleman, observing his man Tom's alteration, thought proper to follow his example; so, pushing down two or three girls, fell upon them, and kissed them till they were almost stifled; then hoisting them up, extends his mouth to a full yawn, and laughs as loud, and with as great a grace, as any of them;

while Tom, to shew his activity, jumps about a yard high, always taking care to light upon somebody's toes; which generally put the whole company into a loud fit of laughter, except the person hurt; who, in compliance to the rest, was obliged to put her mouth in a grinning posture.

Thus they became the most facetious companions imaginable (every one praising the two gentlemen's good humour and activity) and, in short, became the wonder of the whole company. But Tom and his master, having tired themselves and their partners sufficiently, began to think of retiring, in order to refresh their weary limbs; and, motioning the same to their nymphs, the poor girls very willingly accompanied them. Now they thought themselves secure of their intended sport, and conducted them, for that purpose, to the inn where they had put up their horses.

As soon as they were set down, they ordered wine to be brought, and a supper got ready, in order to detain and intoxicate the girls, if possible; and therefore they plied them very close with liquor. Now Tom's partner, being a very brisk lively girl, never refused her glass; but the nobleman's was of a very mild, easy deportment, and would drink but little: he seeing her temper, began to be very amorous, on purpose to try what that would do; but she, in so sweet and easy a manner, checked his rudeness, that it raised in Tom a most violent passion for his master's partner. At length supper was brought to table, which was no sooner over, but night began to appear: the two girls, perceiving the time, desired leave to go home, which the nobleman absolutely refused; but Tom, thinking to make sure of his game upon the road, consented to go with his partner; which the other hearing, begged not to be left alone, but that she might go likewise: the nobleman, (thinking he had not brought her to the desired pitch) as heartily desired her to stay, vowing that nobody should wrong or hurt her: but when the other gentleman returned, (meaning Tom) they would both conduct her home: so, by mere dint of argument, prevailed upon her to tarry till Tom's return.

Now Tom, as soon as he had got from the town, began to attack his fort, which, after a little parley, surrendered

at discretion; so Tom razed the walls to the ground, entered the castle, and took possession of the city: all which being transacted, he leaves her, promising to revisit her the next day, and bends his hasty steps towards the inn, with a deal of impatience, muttering these words as he went—'What a blockhead was I to let my master be too nimble for me! Ah! fool that I was, to lose so delicious a morsel, and take possession of so easy a fool, who, as soon as asked, consented; when the other, with all the pretty engaging airs, so modestly checks any thing that looks like rudeness. Well, faith, since it is so, I'll make the best on't, and try whether I can't chouse him of his partner.' So said, so resolved, and indeed so done.

For, as soon as Tom came in, the girl claimed their promise; saying, the gentleman was so rude, that she would stay no longer; desiring them either to go home with her, or let her go by herself. But Tom, desirous to renew the sport, begged of her, with all the prevailing arguments he was capable of, to tarry; telling her, he was a little tired with the walk he had taken, and wanted to refresh himself: so desired her to stay, while he only took a glass, and he would go with her. The girl, very unwillingly, complied, and sat down again. The nobleman, finding Tom had no mind to part with her, imagined he was bringing about what himself had so long endeavoured in vain; and therefore, pulling out his watch, he starts up in haste, and says he must needs go, for it was past the time that he promised to be at a certain place: so tells the innocent girl he very unwillingly left her; but he hoped this would not break their new acquaintance, for he would pay her a visit in a short time, desiring to be excused for this time; and he believed he could prevail upon the other gentleman to conduct her home. Tom, who understood his meaning, follows him to the door, and there receives his charge, which was, that he should bring her to a house they both knew, about three miles off, as soon as possible: so took his leave, mounted his horse, and went thither, impatiently waiting for his prey.

Now Tom was extremely pleased with his master's intentions, resolving to put the bite upon the biter; and as soon as the nobleman departed, began to attack  
the



the fortification with all the artillery wine and soft words could supply him with: but the defendant, proof to battery of this kind, held out nobly a long time, and moved strongly for a cessation of arms, desiring leave to go home: but Tom, acquainted with the various turns of intrigues, resolved not to lose his game, being well assured he should bring her to articles in a little time; and began a fresh attack, which lasted so long, that she was obliged to cry for quarters; but it being too late for going home, Tom persuaded her to lie there; assuring her, that he would see her well provided for; and so, in short, she blushinglly consented.

Thus Tom, having gained his point, orders a bed to be got ready; and then desired his mistress, who was, by this time, much overcome with wine and sleep, to go to bed. The poor girl (still between doubt and fear) knew not what to say, but, trembling, denies what her looks desired; and, after a great many arguments on both sides, she resigns herself intirely to him. The sly knave, joyful of his prey, conducts his mistress to bed; but, as they were going, the old crafty innkeeper cries, in mere form—‘I hope, Sir, that’s your wife, for I would by no means have any thing dishonest done in my house.’—‘Yes, yes,’ (says our rogue) ‘you may assure yourself it is my wife, or else I should not have offered to go to bed with her,’ while the poor girl, hiding her face, ran up stairs as fast as she could.

They had not been long above, when the nobleman, uneasy at their delay, returns to the inn, and inquires after the couple he left. ‘Why, Sir,’ said the host, ‘they’re a-bed.’—‘A-bed!’ says the nobleman, ‘a-bed!’—‘Yes,’ answered he, ‘it being too late to go home, they took up their lodgings here.’—‘What! are they a-bed together?’ said the gentleman.—‘Yes,’ says the innkeeper; ‘I left ’em together.’ The nobleman, hearing this, stood like one thunderstruck, his eyes darting lightning and his blood all in flame; but, bridling his passion, very coolly inquired where they lodged, saying he had some business of moment to impart to the gentleman, and he must that minute speak to him. The innkeeper, unacquainted with his design, very complaisantly conducted him to their apartment; and knocking

at the door, told Tom the gentleman was returned, and wanted to speak with him. Tom not being yet undressed, knowing his master’s fiery temper, and the just resentment he was sure to meet with, opens the window, and out he jumps, without saying a word; and, having bruised himself with the fall, lay some time upon the ground; till, recovering himself a little, he precipitately got over the garden-wall, into which he had dropt from the window; and scours over the fields as fast as he could, without ever looking back.

But having run himself out of breath, and thinking himself out of danger, down he sits, reflecting upon his melancholy circumstances. ‘O miserable wretch!’ says he, ‘what have I done? How dare I ever see my master, who always reposed his trust in me? And I, like a perfidious villain, to deceive him! Certain death attends me, if I go home; and, if I tarry here, there’s nothing but beggary or starving; I have at once lost all credit and reputation, and see nothing but ruin, unavoidable ruin. O woman, woman! cursed bewitching woman! what an infinite number of mischiefs are you the source of! But why do I exclaim against a woman so innocent, and so charming, when I, the traitorous deceiver, fought nothing but her eternal misery? O just Heaven! ’twas you that saved her from impending ruin, and deservedly threw all the fatal effects upon myself: well, I’ll bear them patiently; load me with all the evils you can bring, till they mount so high you can lay no more.’ Raving and cursing in this manner, he tired his spirits, and fell asleep.

Having slept some time, he awakes, wondering where he was: ‘Did I dream,’ says he, ‘or is it real? No, it must certainly be true; I am the most wretched mortal breathing. The very same ruin I intended the poor innocent girl, has justly fallen upon myself; and what is become of her I know not, nor dare I to inquire; but I hope, as Heaven has hitherto protected her, it will likewise preserve her from the evil intents of my master.’ Reflecting upon himself in this manner, he walked about till day-light, not knowing what to do, or whither to go: he was not a great way from London, destitute of friends or acquaintance, little or no money in his pocket,

pocket, and durst not see his master. Despairing in this condition, he saw a company of haymakers going to work, it being summer-time; and resolves to make one of their number, if possible; hoping by that means to keep himself from starving, and work his passage up to London.

With this resolution he attacks the haymakers, asking them from whence they came, and whither they were going: which they answered very civilly, telling him they came from London, and were going towards the North of England: so, being baulked in his expectation of coming to London along with them, he knew not what to do; but at last resolves to go along with them, hoping to meet something in his way that might make his journey pleasant; so tells them his resolution to make one amongst them: but they, seeing a man genteelly dressed petitioning for a poor haymaker's place, took him to be only in jest, and told him they should be glad of such a companion, if he spoke as he thought. He protested to them the sincerity of his intention, telling them his misfortunes drove him to such low circumstances. They then said they should be very glad to serve him, and that their master would be in the field by-and-by, and he would hire him, for he wanted hands: so he went with them, and tarried till the old farmer came, who, finding a well-dressed young fellow wanting an employment of that kind, asked him a great many questions, which Tom answered very pertinently: the farmer, therefore, taking it only as a frolick, was willing not to baulk him, and so hired him, saying, he might go to work that very day, if he would; but Tom, wanting a fork, told him, that as soon as he could get his tools in readiness he would come; so hires a man to go to the next town to buy him one, with which, as soon as bought, he falls to work very pleasantly.

Tom went with them from place to place, conforming himself to their customs in every point, being a very merry companion, and much beloved by his fellows: his present life became much pleasanter than his former, never inquiring after his master, or country girl, nor did he know what was become of them. At last, it fell to his lot to be hired by the farmer he then worked for; who, seeing him a tractable, brisk young fellow, asked him whether he would be his

servant; for he then wanted one. Tom, after a little hesitation, told him he should be glad of such a master; so struck a bargain, and hired himself for a year.

Tom had not been there much above half a year, before Quarll's wife came down thither, who, being a genteel London madam, reminded him of his former intrigues, and raised in him an inclination for her; but being in so humble a station, he dared not attack the haughty dame, till he might find a favourable opportunity; and so took all occasions to oblige her, and was better respected by her than any of the others, she often saying, that that fellow had a certain *Je-ne-scai-quoi* in him, which at once claimed love and respect. Tom, understanding this, thought time would certainly bring about his purpose; which not long after happened in this manner.

Tom, during her alteration of temper, had more liberty of converse than before, and often diverted her with entertaining stories; and one day, being alone with her, opened to her the whole series of his past fortunes and misfortunes, which she heard with great attention and pleasure; for Tom had never before discovered himself to any; but, thinking to gain credit with this gentlewoman, made her only privy to it. When Tom was gone, she began to reflect on the fellow's dexterity; and, believing him well skilled in all kind of adventures, thought he might be a fit instrument for her escape, and resolved to advise with him about it: accordingly, the next day took an opportunity to call him to her again, when she was alone, desiring him to divert her with some of his merry tales, telling him she was then very melancholy. 'Madam,' says Tom, 'I am sorry I should find you melancholy; but I'll do all I can to please you.'—'Ay,' says she, 'if you knew the occasion of my melancholy, you would pity me, as well as be sorry; but you cannot be ignorant what a prisoner I am made here, how constantly I am attended, and have scarce any thing but brutes to speak to. I can assure you, that this usage is enough to make me as mad as the people take me to be; for I never was brought up in this manner, which my husband knows; it is only a contrivance of his to keep me here a close prisoner, if possible; but I'll deceive him: for if a woman's invention can find any means to escape this cursed place,



‘place, he shall be sure to see me in London quickly, and that to his great mortification.’

The sly rogue heard her very quietly, and thought he might now have his desired ends; so tells her she should be released that very night, if she pleased, and he himself would accompany her to London; for he longed to be there again. She was glad to hear him say so; and asked by what means he intended to convey her thence. ‘O Lord!’ says he, ‘easy enough. I’ll tell you how: I’ll take a ladder, and set it against your window, and so come into your room, and take your cloaths, and every thing you have a mind to send to London, and carry them to a particular acquaintance of mine; then I’ll come back and fetch you, and conduct you to the next town, which is not above five or six miles off, and stay there for the stage-coach, and so both go to London together.’ The gentlewoman, willing to get her liberty at any rate, agreed to the proposal, only desiring another day to look after all her things, and pack them up conveniently, because she would not hurry herself, lest they should mistrust, and stop her journey.

Tom consented to what she said, and wished for the approaching time; which being come, and all things in readiness, he brings the ladder, and mounts up towards the room; while she as readily delivers him, from the window, all her baggage ready packed up; which Tom takes and carries away, and presently returns to fetch the gentlewoman; who, overjoyed to think herself freed from that tiresome place, gets out of window, and began to descend the ladder; but, being over-eager, and not used to enterprises of that kind, her foot slipped, and down she tumbles, ladder and all; which Tom seeing, knew the consequence, and ran away as he could, leaving Mrs. Quarll to get up by herself; for the ladder, in tumbling, broke the windows where the old farmer lay, and made an horrid noise, so that it scared the good man out of his sleep, who got up to see what was the matter; and, perceiving the gentlewoman’s window open, and a fellow running cross the yard, cries out—‘Murder! Thieves! thieves!’ which alarmed the whole family; some getting pitchforks, some pokers; some one thing, some another, in order to scare the thieves; but the old man, with his fowling-piece

in hand, like a noble commander, led the van, searching all his house over for thieves, and to see what he had lost, carefully looking into every hole and corner, not daring to advance too fast, for fear of a surprize; and coming to Mrs. Quarll’s room, whose window he had seen open, calls to her a long time; but, hearing no answer, fancied she was murdered, and therefore breaks open the door, and searches the room; but there was no Mrs. Quarll to be found: they stared one at another, not knowing what to think. However, when they had examined all the house, they boldly sallied into the yard to hunt the thieves there; and looking about, they perceived something under the ladder, which looked like women’s cloaths; so taking it up, they pulled from under it a real woman, something like Mrs. Quarll; and, looking more narrowly, perceived it to be the very same individual person, almost dead with the fright, and the bruises she had received.

And now their greatest wonder was, how she came thither. The old man said, he believed that some thieves had gotten into the house, and, to prevent her crying, had stopped her mouth, and thrown her out of the window. ‘But,’ says another wife-acre, ‘how came she to have her cloaths on? I am sure she ought to have been a-bed. Now,’ adds he, ‘I believe the devil tempted her to throw herself out at window; and that must certainly be he you saw run cross the yard so swiftly.’ Thus they disputed a long time, but at last agreed, that she ought to be carried to bed again, and have care taken of her: and so carried her up stairs; and then went to finish their search, while the good old woman and her daughter undressed her, got her to bed, and sat up with her all that night.

After all was finished, the old man, willing to know what quantity of men he had lost, calls a general muster; and, finding Tom missing, wondered where he was got to, asking if he lay at home that night. They told him—‘No;’ but they believed he was gone a sweethearting. ‘A sweethearting!’ says the old fellow; ‘well, let him be the e always; for he shall never come hither again: how do I know but he has sent the thieves to rob me, or that he is not one of them himself? If he ever comes hither, I’ll turn him about his business as soon as I see him.’ But Tom understood better things than to come thither again; for he

he knew the adventure would be blown, and then he should be certainly discarded with disgrace; so was resolved to make the best of what he had got; went away, and was never heard of again.

Mrs. Quarll, as soon as come to her speech, confesses the whole intrigue, and lays the blame upon her husband; saying, he sent her thither to be murdered; and now he had his desired end, only that she was the unhappy cause of her own death. The old man, as soon as he knew the matter perfectly, writes to her husband a full account of the whole story; telling him, he was in a fair way to lose his wife; and that, if it should so happen, he had no occasion to send for his wife's cloaths, for she had before lost them; and tells him by what means. Quarll, as soon as he had the letter, was very much troubled at his wife's folly; but resolved, if she recovered, she should tarry some time without cloaths; which he knew would be punishment enough to her pride: so writes back to them, that they should take all possible care to restore her to her health, and likewise to prevent any thing of that kind for the future; telling them, that in a little time he would send her some cloaths, and make them amends for their trouble.

Mrs. Quarll, in about a month, began to be upon the mending hand; which her husband being informed of, resolved to make her stay another month without cloaths, which he knew would be a greater punishment than the other month of sickness. But here he was mistaken; for it was almost three months before she perfectly recovered; who, finding that, before that time, her husband had sent her some fine new cloaths, was, in great measure, reconciled to him; and resolved, during her stay there, to be much more easy in her mind than before.

The good people, whom she had often feared with her outrageous passion, were very glad to see her so calm, and took that opportunity to represent to her the happiness of her condition; being well attended, and as well provided with all necessities, free from that subjection she might be under, if with her husband, whose cross and ill humours she would be obliged to bear with: besides twenty other vexations incumbent to a married life, from which she was screened by his being from her.

The old woman's wife remonstrances being backed with the sudden arrival of

a fresh supply of several sorts of choice drams, as also the ensuing quarter's money for her board, and the season rendering the country extremely agreeable, made her patiently submit to continue there till the fall of the leaf; against which time she would contrive some way or other to go, if her husband did not come for her.

But Quarll, who ever since her being in the country, had enjoyed the untroubled pleasures of a single life, having no mind to interrupt them by her presence, took care to secure her there; sending her guardians now and then fresh charge to be watchful over her, and a small present to encourage them to it.

But surly Fate, who was ever averse to his happiness, suggests a new interruption thereto. Quarll, having given over house-keeping, happened to come and live at a mantua-maker's of vast business, and reputed worth money. She was a single woman, pretty handsome, but intolerably proud and conceited; which was the cause of her being still unmarried, thinking herself too good for any tradesman, or any thing below a gentleman; which seeing no prospect to get, being courted by none, she became a general man-hater: but Quarll, who was an handsome young man, and of a genteel employ, though not a gentleman, coming to lodge at her house, reconciled her to the sex in a little time, and made her change her resolution never to marry, heartily wishing he would court her: therefore, by her more than common attendance for a lodger, did all she could to give him invitation, but all to little success; for Quarll, who had been already twice incumbered in the troublesome state of matrimony, and but lately rid of his last plague, had no mind to venture any more; so did not answer her expectation: but her love increasing daily, without being taken notice of, she was obliged to declare it to an old gentlewoman, who lodged in the next room to him; who, having doubtless been in the same condition, was, by experience, capable to give her advice.

The old gentlewoman (as it is peculiar to them, when past the sport themselves, to love to promote it in others) took upon her the management of that affair; and from that time watched the opportunity of speaking to him, which was only in the morning before he went out, or at night when he came home, being



ing abroad all the day beside: so, having resolved upon it, the next morning she leaves her own door open, which was opposite to his, waiting his coming out, to invite him to a dish of chocolate, which she had ready for that purpose.

Having, according to her desire, got him into her chamber, as he was drinking his dish, she feigns a fit of laughing. 'You wonder,' said she, 'what 'tis I laugh at; but, I dare say, you'll laugh as well as I, when you know: why, our man-hater is in love at last; in love up to her ears, as sure as you are alive.'—'Our man-hater, Madam!' says he; 'who is that?'—'Don't you know?' replied she: 'why, our landlady, who has refused so many fine offers. Lord, how happily might that woman have married! She might have rode in her coach years ago; but no man was good enough for madam: this had such a fault, and that another: in short, none could please her. 'Tis true, indeed, she is very deserving; the worst part of her is in the sight, and that you know is not disagreeable; but did you see what a fine body she has, you would be ready to run mad for her: surely she has the finest leg and foot that ever woman went on; and, for a skin, she may challenge the whole sex: in short, she is fit for a king's embraces. She has several good properties besides; and one above all, which perhaps you'll say is the principal; she has money, and a great deal: well, that will soon be disposed of, I dare say; I wish I knew on whom; sure it must be some angel; for I have heard her find fault with every handsome man that have addressed to her. Pray, did you ever observe any man to come here? He must be the person; for all her concerns are with women.'—'Indeed,' replied Quarll, 'I never take notice who comes: besides, I am seldom at home; so have not an opportunity to make observations.'—'But I have,' said she; 'and made it my business to mind; yet never saw any man in this house since I came, but you: suppose you should be he at last?'—'O Madam, there is no danger,' answered Quarll; 'she, who has refused so many rich matches, will hardly set her mind on a poor singing-master.'—'How do you know that?' replied the old lady: 'love comes by fancy, and marriage by fate, and it may be yours to have her: so I would

have you cultivate her love, which I could almost swear you possess; you will find it worth your while: here is an agreeable woman in an extraordinary good business, a house well furnished, and I'll warrant money-bags well filled: now, if you are disposed to make your fortune, here is a fair opportunity.' Quarll was sadly puzzled what answer to make. His present circumstances prompt him to soothe what his condition obliges him to deny: his business slackens, and his charges no-wise lessen: his income is dubious, and expences certain; the most prevailing arguments to embrace the offer. But then a strong obstacle starts up; a wife; but she is out of the way, and as good as dead, whilst her living is paid for, which this proposed marriage will enable him to do, though other business failed. That objection being removed, his answer was, He feared that happiness would be above his aspiring to; which being according to the mediatrix's wish, she promised him her assistance. So he took his leave, and went about his daily affairs, leaving the management of that to her; who immediately went to inform the amorous landlady of her success.

Quarll being returned at night, the old lady, pursuant to the business she had taken in hand, follows him to his chamber, with the joyful news, that she had, by her landlady's blessing, discovered what her modesty would have concealed; that he was the man beloved; and, therefore, she would not have him delay his being made happy. To which he answered, As she had been the first cause of his happiness, he left the accomplishment thereof to her direction. 'Well, then,' said she, 'if I have the ordering of it, it shall be done next Sunday, as being, of all the week, the most blessed day.' And so bid him good night.

The old gentlewoman, being made sole directress of that affair, was very diligent in the accomplishment thereof; so had them married on the day she had proposed. The business was done privately, but the joy it produced could not be concealed: every body read Bride in the new-married wife's face; so that greetings daily filled the house; which, for a month, was a residence for mirth; and, during the space of a year, the seat of happiness; Peace kept the door, and Plenty attended them. But churlish Fate,

H which

which ever persecuted him, would not permit that happy state to continue; and, the more to aggravate his loss, makes Love, the chief author of his bliss, now the principal instrument of his sorrow; jealousy, the greatest plague that can befall a married life, infects his wife. She is upon thorns whilst he is absent, and uneasy when present, with the fears of what he had done abroad: a discontented mind often urges the utterance of vexatious words, and breeds jarings, enemies to Peace; which, being often disturbed, leaves her abode, which is immediately taken up by Strife, and is commonly attended with ruin, the decreed influence of poor Quarll's surly fate. Business falling off from both their hands, makes them negligent of the little they have: the husband diverts his cares abroad, whilst the wife drinks away her sorrow at home. Thus money growing scant, credit must be pledged; which, being not redeemed, exposes the owner to disgrace, which is commonly the poor man's lot.

The mercer and silkman, with whom his wife dealt before she was married, having received money but once since her marriage, and seeing her discontent, imagined her husband (who appeared something too airy for one of her sedate years) was the occasion thereof, by his extravagant spending what she, with much care and frugality, had saved, arrested him, without giving him notice; lest, being warned, he should get away what she might have left, and then abscond.

Quarll, who till then had kept secret his being in the guards, where he continued, to screen him from those debts his eloped wife might contract, is now obliged to let it be known, to keep himself out of gaol.

His proud wife, who thought men of the best and genteelst trades inferior to her merits, seeing herself at last married to one, whose station was looked upon to be as odious as that of a common bailiff, fell into such a passion that it cast her into a violent fit; from which being recovered, she flies out of the house in a great fury, swearing by all that was good, she would no more live with a foot soldier; so left him in a sad confusion; yet he stayed in the house, hoping she would, when cooler, consider of it, and be reconciled.

But great was his surprize, when next morning, instead of his wife's coming

according to expectation, a judgment is served upon the goods of the house, at the suit of an upholsterer; so the house being entirely unfurnished, he was obliged to seek new lodgings, where he continued a full quarter without hearing of his wife.

Quarll, hoping his wife had left him in good earnest, indulges himself with the thoughts of being a third time delivered from the greatest incumbrance that can involve a man; wondering how he could so often fall into the same snare. 'Three wives,' said he, 'in three years! and every one equal plagues, though of a different nature! The first a whore, of whom I was most luckily rid by accident: the second a proud, lazy, indolent creature; she by stratagem is cured: and the third a conceited jealous wretch; to her ostentation I owe my deliverance. Well, now I am once more free, I'll take care how I hamper myself again:' so makes a strong resolution, let what would happen, to live single from that time ever after.

But his resolution, though ever so strong, cannot avert Fate's irrevocable decree: a fourth wife is allotted him, which will bring upon him more vexation and trouble than he has yet gone through; his peace will not only be broken, and his ease disturbed, but his life must be in jeopardy.

One evening that he was diverting his colonel, and the rest of his club, with singing at the tavern, as he usually did once a week, the landlady (who was then in company) much praised his voice and skill; the gentlemen took that opportunity to propose a match between Quarll, who went for a batchelor, and her, being a widow; all the company liked the proposal, and earnestly urged on the match.

Quarll, being a brisk, handsome, genteel young man, which qualifications have a vast ascendant upon the sex, especially on widows, made a considerable impression upon the hostess; who, being already above forty, was willing to intermix her supernumerary years with those of an husband of a lesser age: so, turning to jest what she heartily wished to be in earnest, answers, in a joking manner, that Mr. Quarll doubtless had, before that time, made a better choice; so would hardly agree to their proposal. 'A better choice!' said the gentleman, 'I deny that:—here's a handsome jolly

woman.



promise a happy life, living in love and peace at home, and being in good repute and credit abroad; but the same fate, which all along haunted poor Quarll, is still at his heels; his bliss was but a blast. His eloped wife unfortunately happened to go by as he was going out: she had him immediately in her eye, which as speedily conveyed him to her heart. The addition which a charming new suit of cloaths he then had on, made to his natural handsomeness, put out of her mind the cause of that disdain she had conceived for him, and turns it into a more passionate love than ever. She cannot live any longer from him; she must have him with her at any rate, and will not rest till she finds out his lodgings; from whence she resolves to wash all sorrow away with her tears, and settle him again in her arms. So she straight goes to the tavern she saw him come out of, supposing it might be a house he constantly used, on purpose to inquire where he lodged.

The new wife, who was then in the bar, to whom she applied, perceiving in her some sort of disorder, was very inquisitive to know her business; in which the poor woman refusing to satisfy her, she told her that he lived there, and that she was his wife; and therefore the fittest to know her concern. At these most dreadful words, she falls, like one thunder-struck, on the ground, deprived of all her senses; and, for a considerable time, lies as though bereft of life.

This dull scene turns the new wife's passion into commiseration; and she pities that misfortune which in her mind she before condemned as a crime. 'This,' said she, 'is a true sign of love, which a harlot is not capable of: I cannot blame her for loving him, but rather condole her misfortune.' So, having ordered fair water and hartshorn drops to be brought, gave her some in a glass of water, which in a small time fetched her a little to life; who, recovering, cried out—'Had I not been so bewitched as to go from him, he would not have left me.' These words in a moment turned the officious condoler into a revengeful rival, who immediately imagined she had lately lived with him as a mistress, and, doubtless, would endeavour to do the same again: so, giving her hand (which she kindly held before) a scornful toss from her, 'Why, you  
H 2  
' vile

H 2

yile

'vile woman,' said she, 'would you have him to live for ever in whoredom?' — 'You judge me wrong, Madam,' replied the poor afflicted woman; 'I am his lawful wife.' So produces her certificate (which she happened to have about her:) which caused almost as much disorder in the beholder, as she herself was lately in.

Having recovered her speech, which the late surprize had obstructed, she asked her, in a violent passion, why she had been so base as to give him the opportunity to come and cheat her, by her leaving him; for *she* was his wife also? To which she answered, that she could justify her going from him, though indeed she had great provocation; he not proving the man she took him to be. 'What!' replied she in the bar, 'was he not man enough for you? I think you are very hard to please: however, since the deceit made you leave him, why do you disturb yourself about him? He has not deceived me, unless it be in having a wife before: but as you left him of your own accord, he had no more to do with you.' — 'No!' replied she, in a passion; 'but he shall find, and so shall you, that I have to do with him.' So went away.

It being then about noon, his usual time to come home from market, she went into a publick house opposite to the tavern, there to wait his return, which was a little after. As soon as she saw him, she gave him a call over.

The sudden and unexpected sight of the only obstacle to the happiness he then enjoyed, was most terribly shocking to him: he wished he had met with death to have missed her; but to no purpose: she had him in her eye, and was fully resolved to have him in her arms ere she went; and as he did not come as quick at her call as her impatience required, she attempted to go over to him; but Quarll, who knew her fiery temper, was afraid she should break out in a passion in the street; which would have exposed him, and brought it to his new wife's knowledge, being near home: so hastens over to the house she was in, to prevent her coming; and, judging his beginning to upbraid her with her elopement would, in some measure, moderate her railing at him, he tells her, as he enters the room — 'I hope, Madam, you have, by this time, found a man more to your mind.' This was sufficient to provoke

a milder temper to reproach him with his adulterous marriage, of which she was too certain: hers is but a fault, but his a crime. But as reproaches are not proper means to advance a reconciliation, which was her intent, she bridles her passion, and forces her nature to a submission; so throws herself at his feet, and falls a weeping; owning she had committed a fault, for which she heartily repented, and promised to atone by her future behaviour; calling Heaven to witness her chastity during her most unhappy separation.

Quarll, being of a compassionate temper, was soon made flexible by her tears; so takes her up by the hand, who as soon fell into his arms, uncapable of speaking for weeping; but Quarll, who was in haste to be gone, being waited for at home, it being about his time of dinner, complied with the poor afflicted woman's crying and sobbing, whose chief request was, that he would only see her home that time: which he presently granted, to be quit of her; so ordered a coach to be called.

His new wife at home, being uneasy at his staying beyond his time, came to the door to look whether she could see him come. At that most unlucky time he was handing his other wife into the coach; which she unfortunately spying, ran over, as swift as a hawk flies after his prey, and pulls him back by the lappet of his coat, as he was stepping into the coach after her. The disorder this second surprize put him in, obliged him to go again into the house he just came out of, where she immediately followed him, raving and railing as much as the provocation and her passion did allow, leaving in the coach his former wife; who, by that second terrible surprize, was again struck speechless, and like one bereft of sense.

The coachman having waited some time, being impatient, calls in the house, desiring the gentleman to make haste, or else to allow him for waiting; at which, the new wife comes out in a violent passion, and bids him be gone, for he was not wanted. 'What shall I do with the gentlewoman in my coach?' said he; 'you had best take care of her; she is not well; or tell me where I shall carry her.' — 'Carry her to the devil, an you will,' said she; and so went in. — 'You may carry her there,' replied the surly coachman; 'you best know  
the



'the way.' So goes to the coach and shakes her till she comes to herself: then, taking her up in his arms, 'I am bid to carry you to the devil,' said he; 'but I believe you are able to go yourself; so I will set you down here, that you may take your own time.' Having set her down, he then drives away. There being a milliner's shop just by, she goes in, desiring leave to sit awhile, till she was able to go. She had scarce been there three minutes, but she sees her husband handing his new wife over, very complaisantly; which so exasperated her, that she fully resolved upon revenge; chusing he should be hanged, rather than her rival should enjoy him: so went directly, and took out a warrant, which she immediately served, and had him before a justice of the peace, who committed him forthwith to Newgate.

The following sessions happening to be extraordinary great, by the vast number of criminals, his trial, and several more, were put off until the next; so that he was confined at the time he used to send the money for his wife's board in the country: and not daring to employ any acquaintance in that affair, lest they should enquire into the occasion of his sending that money; he desired one who often came to visit a prisoner, to do him that favour; which he readily promised, but did not perform: so that the people in the country, who were used to be paid a quarter before-hand, were a quarter in arrear: which, with the boarder's pressing importunity to come up to London, made them at last resolve upon it; where, being arrived, they immediately enquired after the unfortunate Quarll, whose imprisonment they soon heard of, as also of the cause thereof.

This did not a little exasperate the already sufficiently-provoked inquisitress; who, presently imagining, with good reason, that his confining her in the country was merely for that intent, resolved to prosecute him according to the utmost rigour of the law; wondering who that good person was that had him apprehended: so went and consulted her friends, who advised her not to let her husband know of her being in town till his trial came on; and then she should know the prosecutor, and, at her own discretion, back the prosecution.

In the mean time, his first wife, who had lately been dismissed, (the knight who kept her being not long since married to a vast fortune) having heard of Quarll's

being in Newgate, went straight to visit him. Her grief and his surprize at her coming, stopped, for some time, the utterance of both their minds: at last Quarll, who had just reason to tax her as the author of his present misfortune, reproached her with her leaving him, which was the original cause thereof. The innocent, yet guilty Sally, whose inclination, disposition, and resolution, had been violated, related the dismal account of her fatal ravishment; and pleaded her cause with such a prevailing eloquence, as new-kindled his former love, and made him (though the sufferer) give it on her side.

Being thoroughly reconciled, and having spent some hours in expressing both their griefs, they at last parted, after a thousand cordial embraces; and, as she was enabled, by the settlement the knight had made upon her, she supplied him with money and necessaries during his confinement in Newgate; and was with him constantly every day, almost from morning till night; and, when he was called upon his trial, she attended in the court more concerned than if she herself had been arraigned.

The sessions being commenced, he was first called to the bar: his indictment being read, he desired to be heard by his counsel, which was granted. The deponent having proved her marriage, required the prisoner at the bar should be obliged to live with her, or allow her a sufficient maintenance, as being his first wife: at which she whom he kept in the country starts up—'That belongs to me,' said she; 'I am the first wife: so produces her certificate. A third wife appearing, startles both the judges and the prisoner, who thought her secure.

Sally, who till then had been silent, seeing the priority of marriage so much pleaded for, thought it might be worth her while to claim it, being her right, which she may chance to turn to the prisoner's advantage; so addressing to the bench—'My lords,' said she, 'I did not think to apply for justice; but seeing these women contending for that which belongs to neither of them, I think myself obliged to claim my right: I am the first wife, and please your lordships.'—'How! a fourth wife, and indicted but for two!' said the judges in a great surprize. 'Why, my lords,' replied an old surly judge upon the bench, 'if truth be known, he has half a score; I see it in his looks:

'there

‘ these smock-faced young fellows are  
 ‘ so admired by the women, that they  
 ‘ have not power to refuse any thing.’  
 Sally, who thought to do the prisoner  
 service, in taking the privilege of first  
 wife into her own hands, finding the  
 success of her good intent quite reversed,  
 heartily repented appearing, and would  
 have withdrawn, but that the judges  
 told her she was now become the prose-  
 cutrix, and was obliged to go on in the  
 prosecution. This caused such a disorder  
 in her, who imagined she should be the  
 unfortunate occasion of his being cast,  
 that she was ready to swoon. Quarll’s  
 counsel, perceiving her disorder, ima-  
 gined it might proceed from a regret of  
 the mischief she had done; so put her in  
 a way to invalidate her deposition.—  
 ‘ Now, Madam,’ said the counsel, ‘ I  
 ‘ very much question whether you can  
 ‘ make your assertion good: pray pro-  
 ‘ duce your certificate; you can do us  
 ‘ no hurt else.’ Sally, overjoyed to hear  
 that, said—‘ She had none;’ chusing to  
 undergo the greatest disgrace, rather than  
 he should come to the least hurt. ‘ I  
 ‘ thought as much,’ said the counsel.  
 ‘ Well, well,’ replied the surly judge,  
 ‘ she may have lost it: where was you  
 ‘ married, child?’—‘ At Chatham, my  
 ‘ lord, I think,’ answered she, very  
 much discountenanced. ‘ At Chatham,  
 ‘ did you say?’ replied the counsel: ‘ I  
 ‘ doubt yours has been a sailor’s wed-  
 ‘ ding, over a pot of drink; a man’s  
 ‘ wife till the next voyage, and any  
 ‘ body’s when he is gone. Your lord-  
 ‘ ships see how the case stands.’—‘ Yes,  
 ‘ yes,’ answered a judge; ‘ if she is his  
 ‘ first wife that way, I dare say, he is  
 ‘ not her first husband, by many.’ So  
 she was hissed out of the court. Then  
 the judge addressing to the next preten-  
 der—‘ I hope,’ says he, ‘ yours will not  
 ‘ prove a sailor’s wedding, as her’s did.’  
 —‘ A sailor’s! No, my lord,’ replied  
 the second wife; ‘ I have witnesses  
 ‘ enough to mine: my lady Firebrass,  
 ‘ with whom I lived, and her two  
 ‘ daughters, saw me fairly married in  
 ‘ St. Martin’s church.’—‘ How came  
 ‘ it,’ said the judge, ‘ you did not sue  
 ‘ him before he married the third wife?’  
 ‘ You should have prevented his cheat-  
 ‘ ing any other poor woman.’—‘ Why,  
 ‘ my lord,’ said she, ‘ I knew nothing  
 ‘ of it; he kept me a prisoner in the  
 ‘ country, at this good woman’s house,  
 ‘ where he decoyed me, under pretence

‘ of being careful of me: I must go  
 ‘ into the country, for a month or two,  
 ‘ to take the air! but when he had me  
 ‘ there, there he kept me ever since,  
 ‘ charging the people of the house not  
 ‘ to suffer me to come up to London,  
 ‘ nor yet to go out; pretending I was  
 ‘ mad, because I complained I was not  
 ‘ well.’—‘ A very pretty device!’ re-  
 plied the old judge. ‘ Yes, my lord,’  
 cried out all the women in the court,  
 (who were come in great numbers to  
 hear a trial about a rape, committed by  
 a Quaker upon a maid of fifty years of  
 age) ‘ and a very bad precedent, if not  
 ‘ severely punished: should this be suf-  
 ‘ fered, a poor wife will not dare to be  
 ‘ out of order, or complain, in hopes to  
 ‘ be made much of, for fear her husband,  
 ‘ under colour of giving her the pleasure  
 ‘ of the country air, shall, when he has  
 ‘ got her there, confine her, and so marry  
 ‘ whom he pleases at London.’

The judges, to quell their clamour,  
 were obliged to call to them, and pro-  
 mise them it should be no precedent; and  
 that they might be sick at will, and groan  
 at their pleasure, and also accept of their  
 husbands kindresses when offered.

The court being silenced, the pro-  
 ceedings went on, and several of the  
 judges having been spoken to by some of  
 Quarll’s particular friends, who were re-  
 lated to some of them, they were more  
 favourable in their judgment, all but the  
 old surly judge, with whom no interest  
 had been made.

The three wives then present having  
 proved their marriage, the prisoner at the  
 bar was asked what he had to say in his  
 own defence.

Quarll, who thought his wife in the  
 country was secure from coming against  
 him, not having given his council in-  
 structions concerning her, was obliged to  
 plead himself. ‘ My lords,’ said he, ‘ the  
 ‘ first deponent against me being run  
 ‘ mad, and thereby unfit for human so-  
 ‘ ciety, I was obliged to think of some  
 ‘ retirement for her, as it is necessary for  
 ‘ people in her case.’—‘ Unfit for human  
 ‘ society!’ replied the second wife, in a  
 great fury; and was going on in the same  
 temper, but was bid to be silent, and he  
 to proceed. ‘ So, my lords,’ said he,  
 ‘ I proposed the country, as the most  
 ‘ pleasant and wholesome place, as also  
 ‘ that which suited her indisposition best,  
 ‘ being always ambitious to imitate the  
 ‘ quality, who commonly go into the  
 ‘ country,’



'country in the summer; which made her accept the offer: there, my lords, I boarded her with very honest and sufficient people, in a handsome, creditable and pleasant house.'—'A pleasant house!' replied she; 'a perfect hovel.'—'There, my lords, I provided her every thing she could want or desire, as her landlady, here present, can justify.' His council, who, by what he had said, had taken sufficient hints to proceed, took the plea out of his hand, and went on. 'An't please your lordship,' said he, 'since by her madness'—'My madness!' said she, interrupting the council; 'I desire, my lords, this good woman (with whom I have lived many years) may be sworn, whether she, in all that time, did see or discern the least symptoms of madness in me.'—'Indeed,' replied the old woman, 'I have often seen you in the vapours; but I cannot say I ever saw you, what they say, raving mad, but once.'—'My lord,' said the prisoner, 'I beg this letter, which she sent me a week after she was there, may be read; and then your lordships may judge whether I do her wrong.'

Orders being given from the bench, the letter was read. The old woman hearing her house so despised, *where a well-bred dog would run mad, if kept in*; and then her husband and herself compared to *oxen and cows*, was not a little displeased. 'My house, Madam,' said the old woman, 'is not so *despicable* neither, as that comes to: I'm sure, there's hardly a better, or more convenient, within ten miles round it. As for the room you lay in, no gentlewoman, in her right senses, but would be contented with, especially in the country; I must be obliged to side with your husband there: and for my husband and me to be reckoned no better than brutes, you have little reason to say so; for no woman can be used with more humanity than you have been: and as for your being confined, you never were shut up any where, but always had the liberty of walking about our ground; only indeed, I would not consent you should trudge to London, as you often did offer to do.' The old woman, having done speaking, Quarll's council put it to the bench, whether the prosecutrix ought to be accounted in her right senses. The judges having given their opinion, that she was frantick; the old judge being displeased at their answer, asked

them, whether a man or woman's being frantick (which but few in this town are more or less) does impower either to marry again; and if they will allow that, why did he marry a third? 'The second is not mad.'—'The second,' replied the council, 'eloped, my lord, and was from her husband half a year; and 'tis to be questioned, whether she would ever have come near him, had she not accidentally found this opportunity to trouble him.'—'Tis a plain case, my lord,' said another judge, 'the prisoner is guilty of the crime he stands indicted for: yet I don't see but that there is room for favour. His constitution perhaps may require a woman for the maintenance of his health, and his inclination is averse against vile women; besides, my lord, we don't hear that he did cohabit or correspond with more than one at a time; and never sought a supply till he was destitute. In my opinion, my lord, he may be favoured a little.' The ill-natured judge told them very furlily, that the fact was plain, and that he was tried according to the laws of his country; and must expect to suffer the penalty of those laws: but he could see no room for favour, unless his Majesty (Charles the Second) would graciously be pleased to shew it him; and it was entirely out of his own power: so sums up the evidences, and refers it to the jury.

The jury went out accordingly; and, after having staid some time, brought in their verdict—'Death.' Sally, who was just by, no sooner heard the terrible news, but fainted away, and was obliged to be carried out of court. The three wives likewise went away, upbraiding and reproaching one another with being the fatal cause of losing their husband, wishing one another never to be relieved by man; and so parted. But Sally, as soon as recovered, went back to the prisoner again, and staid with him till the court broke up, and then was allowed a coach to carry him to Newgate, and attended him there all that night.

As soon as the keepers came in the morning, he calls for pen, ink, and paper, which were brought him; and wrote the following letter to his colonel:

'MAY IT PLEASE YOUR HONOUR,

'I Am now under the terrible sentence of condemnation; I need not tell you upon what account, my case being

'too

' too well known to the world already :  
' but as you have bestowed so many particular favours upon me hitherto, this  
' emboldens me once more, in this my  
' extreme necessity, to rely upon your  
' goodness. It is true, my merit cannot  
' lay claim to the least mark of your  
' esteem ; but it is your generosity  
' prompts me to beg my life at your  
' hands, which, if you preserve, shall always  
' be devoted to your service, by  
' your unfortunate humble servant,

' PHILIP QUARLL,

As soon as he had finished, he delivers it to his dear-beloved Sally, and desires her to carry the same to his colonel : Sally, joyful to serve him, takes the letter, and away she flies. Being come to the house, she delivers the letter to the colonel ; who, having opened and read it, told her, That she might assure him, he would do all that lay in his power to serve him : so Sally, expressing her gratitude, retired to carry the news to her husband. When she came to the prison she found him reading very seriously, leaning upon his hand, with tears in his eyes : she stood some time to look at him ; but finding he never stirred his head, nor moved his eyes, she went softly up to him, and spoke to him : he no sooner heard her voice, but he starts, and looks like one just awake from a dream ; and then burst into tears, and could not speak a word ; which Sally seeing, could not forbear weeping ; and fell upon his neck, desiring him with all tenderness to stop the torrent ; for she had some joyful news to tell him. ' V'hat joyful news,' says he, ' can you bring a man under my  
' wretched circumstances ? Can anything  
' elevate the mind whom Heaven itself  
' has contrived to depress ? Am not I  
' the very out-cast and scorn of Providence ? Have not I been unfortunate  
' from my infancy ? And why will you  
' still add to my misery ? 'Tis you that  
' now make me wretched : had you not  
' so compassionately assisted me in this  
' my dismal calamity with so much tenderness, I then willingly should have  
' left this hateful world, without thinking of you : but why must I make you  
' the wretched partner of my misfortunes ? 'Tis that adds to my uneasiness. O that I had not seen you in  
' these my last moments !' Sally, interrupting him, said—' Come, talk not of  
' last moments ; you may yet enjoy ma-

' ny happy years ; your colonel has promised to use his utmost endeavours to  
' preserve your life.'—' I don't flatter  
' myself with any thing of that kind,' says he, ' but if such a thing should happen, I am fully resolved not to tarry  
' long in England, which has brought  
' upon me so many dire mishaps.'

The colonel was as good as his word ; for he loved Quarll extremely well : and therefore, as soon as Sally was gone, he orders his coach to be got ready, and away he posts to my Lord Danby, who had a great influence at court at that time, and who was his particular friend. When he came thither, his lordship was not stirring ; so he waited till he got up ; who, as soon as come down, cries out—' So, colonel, what brings you here so  
' soon ? Did you come to breakfast with  
' me ?' The colonel seeing him so facetious and pleasant, told him his message. My lord, as soon as he heard it, answered, That upon his honour, he certainly would grant his request ; and made him stay to breakfast with him.

As soon as breakfast was over, he took leave of his lordship, and away he comes to bring the tidings to Quarll, whom he found alone, Sally having just left him. The colonel told him, he was sorry to see him there, with other compliments usual in such cases ; and related to him the success he had with my Lord Danby : so desired him to be of good cheer. Quarll fell at his feet, and expressed his gratitude in the most thankful terms imaginable ; telling him, his life should always be at his service. His colonel, raising him up, told him he was very well satisfied ; and, after a little more conversation, left him.

Sally, in the mean time, was not idle ; for she went and bought a rich piece of plate, and presented it to the recorder, that he might favour Quarll in his report to his Majesty ; which had the desired effect : for, when the dead warrant came down, he was excluded : and in a few days after, my Lord Danby procured his Majesty's most gracious pardon ; which his colonel brought him with great joy.

Quarll being discharged out of Newgate, resolved not to tarry long in England ; and told his beloved Sally, that he must now leave her, for he had made a vow not to tarry in Britain. She endeavoured to dissuade him from his intentions ; but, finding it to no purpose, desired









fired she might accompany him. He asked her, why she desired to be wretched, telling her, he was doomed to perpetual misery: but she was resolutely bent to follow him wherever he went; and accordingly sold what the knight had settled upon her, in order to carry the money with her.

Quarll hearing of a ship bound for the South Seas, which in her return was to touch at Barbadoes, the captain of her having been first mate of the ship to which Quarll had formerly belonged; this encouraged him to venture the voyage. Accordingly, he went to the commander, in order to agree with him about it. The captain, after some talk, began to call to mind their former acquaintance, but wondered to see him so much altered as to his condition, Quarll being very handsomely dressed, and his behaviour much better polished than formerly: so desired him to give him an account how this strange alteration had happened, and by what means he came to this good fortune. 'Good fortune! do you call it?' says Quarll; 'I suppose then you look upon men by their outward appearance: but, did you know the world as well as I do, you would judge the contrary. Now,' adds he, 'I'll give you a short account of my past life; and then I'll leave you to say whether I am not rather the perfect scorn and mock of fortune:' so related to him his past misfortunes; which Quarll told him in so moving a manner, that it almost drew tears from the captain's eyes. As soon as he had made an end—'Well,' says the captain, 'I thought that my way of living brought upon me more troubles than landmen are subject to; for, since I saw you, I have been shipwrecked twice; once upon the coast of Guinea, where I lost the ship and cargo, and but five men saved; the other time, homeward bound from the East-Indies, a violent storm arose, and drove us upon the coasts of France, where with great difficulty we cast anchor, in order to refit our ship, which was very much damaged in the late storm. But about twelve o'clock the same night we came thither, a most violent hurricane blew in upon us, broke our cables and drove us ashore; where again I lost the ship and cargo, but all the men saved. Thus I think I have been unfortunate;

but since they are past never think of them: we shall have a pleasant voyage; and as you say you have a mind to reside at Barbadoes, where I must touch in my return, I'd have you lay out your money in the woollen manufacture, and cutlery-ware, which are very good commodities in those parts.' Quarll thanked him for his advice, and parted with him.

Away then he goes to Sally, and told her what he had been doing, and whither he intended to go. Sally answered, what was his pleasure should be hers; and that she would be a partner in his fortunes and misfortunes, go whither he would. So Quarll went and bought the goods which the captain advised him to, and sent them on board; and soon after followed with himself and wife.

They had not been long at sea, before his darling Sally fell sick and died, to his inexpressible grief; wishing ten thousand times he had died with her. He began to be extreme melancholy, took no rest, and would eat no victuals. The captain was afraid that he would die also; and did all he could to divert him; but was a long time before he could bring him to his former temper.

They sailed on with a side-wind for the space of a month; though, it changing full in their teeth, and very high withal, obliged them to cast anchor, in order to lie by till the wind did serve; but seeing themselves made upon by a pirate, they were obliged to weigh their anchor, and make the best of their way before the wind, in order to avoid being taken by those infidels, who pursued them from four of the clock on Friday morning, till ten at night the following Sunday; at which time there arose a storm; the sky looked very black, the wind being at north-west, and clouds began to rise and move towards them, having hung all the morning in the horizon: so that they took in their top-sails, and furled their main-sail; the sea ran very short, and broke in upon their deck: however, they put right before the wind, and sailed so for three weeks, when they made Cape Horn: they had no sooner got round the Cape, but the wind veered to the south, and it fell flat calm; which continued for two days, when the wind sprung up at south-west, and they scudded before the wind very swift, and made an island whose name none of them

I

knew.

knew, the ship having never been the coast before; but there they found wood, water, and herbs of several sorts, some seals and sea-fowls. Here they refreshed themselves for four days, and then weighed anchor, the wind being fair at full south, and traded at several ports on the coast of Peru, Chili, and Mexico. From Port Aquapulco they sailed, having a fresh breeze at N. N. E. They had not sailed above one day, before the wind veered to the south-west, and blew a violent gale; and there being a great sea, so that their ship took in a great deal of water, the wind continuing two days increasing to a very great storm, which held for one day and two nights more; during which time they perceived themselves near some rocks. The storm rather increasing, and it growing dark, they despaired of saving the ship; and as the main-yard could not lower, the ship's tackling being disordered by the violence of the storm; Quarll being bold and active, took a hatchet which tumbled about the deck, and ran up the shrouds, in order to cut down what stopped the working of the main-yard; but, by that time he was got up, there came a sea, which dashed the ship to shatters against the rock, and with the violence of the shock flung Quarll, who was astride upon the main-yard, on the top of the rock; where, having the good fortune to fall in a cliff, he was hindered from being washed back again into the sea, and drowned, as every body was that belonged to the ship.

Quarll, in a dismal condition, remained the succeeding night in the cliff, being continually beaten with the dashing back of the sea; and being both bruised and numbed, pulled off his cloaths, which were dropping wet, and spread them in the sun; and being over-fatigued, laid himself down on the smoothest place of the rock he could find, being quite spent with the hardships he had undergone, and slept while his cloaths were drying.

His sleep, though very profound, was not refreshing: the danger he had been lately in, so ran in his mind, that grim Death was ever before his eyes, which constantly disturbed his rest; but Nature, who wanted repose, would be supplied, though it be broken. Having slept a few hours, he awakes almost as much fatigued as before, and faint for want of

nourishment, having taken none for thirty-six hours before: so having looked upon his cloaths, which he perceived were not quite dry, he turned the other side to the sun, and laid himself down to sleep again; but still nothing but horror entered his mind; his soul was continually harrassed with the dismal apprehensions the effects of the late storm had impressed upon him. He dreamt he was in a terrible tempest, and the ship he was in dashed backwards and forwards through the waves with prodigious violence, the clouds pouring down vast streams of liquid fire, and the raging ocean all in flames. In this dismal condition he knew not what to do; but spying some land, as he thought, at a little distance from the ship, he was endeavouring to get thither; but not daring to trust the sea, which he imagined was like a caldron of oil in a blaze, resolved to try whether he could not jump ashore; but just as he was going to leap, he saw a horrid frightful monster, with glaring eyes, and open mouth, rush from the boiling flames, and make at him to devour him; which scared him out of his sleep.

When he awoke, he was very much terrified with his dream, and stared about him in a frightened manner, expecting every minute some creature to devour him: but, taking a little courage, put on his cloaths, which by this time were quite dry. He then looks about him; but alas! could see nothing but the dreadful effects of the late tempest, dead corpses, broken planks, and battered chests floating, and such aspects which at once filled him with terror and grief.

Turning from those shocking objects, which presented to his eyes the dreadful death he so lately had escaped, he sees at the other side the prospect of one more terrible, hunger and thirst, attended with all the miseries that can make life burdensome. Being seized with the terror of the threatening evil, he turns again towards the sea, and looking on the dead corpses, which the sea now and then drove to the rock, and back again—  
 'Oh, that I was like one of you!' said he,  
 'past all dangers! I have shared with  
 'you in the terrors of death: why did I  
 'not also partake with you in it's relief? But why should I complain, and  
 'have so much reason to be thankful?  
 'Had I been cut off, when the cares of  
 'saving



' saving this worthless carcase inter-  
' cepted me from seeking the salvation  
' of my soul, I should not have had the  
' present opportunity of taking care of  
' it.' So, having returned thanks for  
his late deliverance, he resigns himself to  
Providence, on whom he fully relies;

climbs up the rock, and being come to the  
top, sees land at the inside, bearing both  
trees and grafs. ' Heaven be praised!'   
said he, ' I shall not perish upon these  
' barren rocks.' So made a shift to go  
down to it, the weather then being  
calm.

## END OF THE SECOND BOOK.



THE  
ENGLISH HERMIT.

BOOK III.

AN ACCOUNT OF QUARLL'S WONDERFUL SHIFTS, AND SURPRIZING MANNER OF LIVING; OF THE MIRACULOUS ACTS OF PROVIDENCE, AND OF THE STRANGE EVENTS WHICH HAPPENED IN THE ISLAND SINCE HIS BEING THERE.



BEING come to the other side of the rock, he finds at the bottom of it a narrow lake, which separated it from the land: therefore pulling off his cloaths, the water being but shallow, he wades over with them in his arms; and dressing himself, walks up a considerable way in the island, without seeing any human creature, or perceiving any sign of it's being inhabited, which struck a great damp to his spirits. He walks it over and over, cross-ways and long-ways; yet could see nothing but monkeys, strange beasts, birds, and fowls, such as he had never seen before.

Having ranged himself weary, he sat down under a cluster of trees, that made an agreeable arbour: the place being pleasant and cool, made, as it were, for repose; and he being still very much fatigued, prompted him to lie down and sleep; during which, his mind is continually alarmed with the frightful aspect of grim Death. Sometimes he fancies himself striving with the rolling waves, stretching out his arms to catch hold of a plank tossing by; which, just come at, is beaten back by the roaring billows, whose terrible noise pronounces his death; at other times he thinks himself astride

upon a piece of mast, labouring to keep himself on, and of a sudden washed away, and sunk down by a bulky wave; on every side of him men calling for help; others spent and past speaking; here some floating that are already perished, and there others expiring: thus in every object seeing his approaching fate.

Being awaked out of that irksome and uneasy sleep, he falls into as anxious and melancholy thoughts. 'I have,' said he, 'escaped being drowned, but how shall I avoid starving? Here's no food for man. But why should I despair? Did not Nebuchadnezzar live upon grass for several years, till restored to his nation? Cannot I do the same for a few days? by which time, Providence, who has hitherto protected me, may raise me some means to get from hence.' So, being entirely resigned, he walks about to see the island, which he found surrounded with rocks, at the bottom of which there was a small lake, which was fordable in most places, so that he could with ease wade over to the rock; which he did at every side of the island, to see if he could perceive any ship, whereby he might get away: but, seeing none, and it drawing towards night, he returns, and employs the remainder of the day in looking for the most convenient place for him to pass away the approaching night; and having fixed upon one of the highest trees, he gets up as far as he well could, fearing some wild beast might devour him if he slept below; where, having returned thanks to Heaven for his late great deliverance, he commits himself to it's care; then settles, and falls to sleep, and slept till hunger



hunger waked him in the morning, having dreamt over-night of abundance of victuals, which he would fain have come at, but was kept off by a cross cook, who bid him go and fish for some: to which he answered, that he was shipwrecked, and had nothing to fish withal. 'Well then,' said the cook to him again, 'go where thou wast like to lose thy life, and there thou shalt find wherewithal to support it.'

Being awaked, he makes reflections upon his dream, which though he imagined might proceed from the emptiness of his stomach, it being customary for people to dream of victuals when they go to bed hungry, yet at that time it may prove ominous. So driven by necessity, and led by curiosity, he went to the same side of the rock he had been cast upon; where having stood several hours without seeing shipping, or aught that might answer his dream; the air coming from the sea being pretty sharp, and he faint, having taken no manner of food for near three days, he gave over all hopes of relief. Thus submitting himself to the will of Heaven, which he supposed decreed a lingering death to punish him for his past sins, he resolves to return where he lay the night before, and there wait for his doom; but being stopped by a sudden noise which issued from a creek in the rock, not far from where he stood, he had the curiosity to go and see what occasioned it.

Being come to the place he heard the noise proceed from, he sees a fine large cod-fish near six feet long, dabbling in a hole in the rock, where the late storm had cast it.

One under condemnation of death, and just arrived at the place of execution, could not be more rejoiced at the coming of a reprieve, than he was at the sight of this fish, having felt several sick qualms, forerunners of the death he thought he was doomed to. 'Heaven be praised!' said he; 'here's my dream right: where Providence rescued my life from the grim jaws of Death, there it has provided me wherewithal to support it.'

So having taken off both his garters, he gets into the hole where the fish lay; and having run them through it's gills, he hales it out, and drags it after him, being heavy, and he very weak. Going along, he finds several oysters, mussels, and cockles in his way, which the sea

had cast up and down the rock; and having a knife about him, he sat down and eat a few; so refreshed himself, his spirits being exhausted for want of food. This small nutriment very much recruited his decayed strength; and the thoughts of his supply of provision having dispersed the dull ideas his late want had bred in his mind, he cheerfully takes his fish, which he drags with much more vigour than before; and filling his pockets with salt that was congealed by the sun, which he found in the concavities of the rock, away he goes to the place where he lay the night before, in order to dress some of the cod-fish; where being come, he picks up a parcel of dry leaves, and with his knife and a flint, struck fire, and kindled them: then, getting together a few sticks, made a fire presently, and broiled a slice of his fish; of which he eat so heartily, that it overcame his stomach, being grown weak with fasting. Thus sick and out of order, he applies to the helpless recourse, which was lying down; and having much fatigued and harrassed himself with hauling the heavy fish up and down the rock, he fell asleep till the next morning; during which time his rest was very much disturbed with the frightful dream of being attacked by a terrible monster, such as never was heard of, either for bigness or grimness; which pursued him, till having run himself out of breath, he was forced to lie exposed to his fury; but was prevented being devoured by a grave, old gentlewoman of a most graceful and majestic countenance, at whose sudden appearance the monster fled. Having recovered breath, and strength to speak, he returns the old lady thanks for his deliverance, and begs leave to wait on her home, that he might know whither to come and pay his constant duty to her for this her late great kindness. To which she answered, that she was fixed in no particular habitation, but dwelt at every poor man's house; her occupation being to assist the helpless, but not the slothful and negligent: that he should see her again before it was long. Mean time, she bid him not go on in evil ways, but whenever overtaken, not to despair; for she was always at hand: nevertheless, she would not have him too depending. And so went away, leaving him very easy and pleased in his mind, that he had escaped such vast danger.

Having slept quietly the remainder of the

the night, he awoke in the morning pretty fresh and hearty, but very much disturbed at his late dream, which he feared presaged and prognosticated some approaching evil; but as he could make no comparative allusion of the old lady, who rescued him from the monster, he concludes it must be an inspiration of Providence, (whom the grave old lady did personate in the dream) who lately had preserved him from a death by all appearance unavoidable, to keep him from despair in this his great extremity, promising to be at hand upon occasion; yet would not have him neglect means to get away from a place where want threatens him. For though he might for a while subsist upon fish, wherewith he may be supplied, being surrounded by the sea; yet he could not imagine which way he could be furnished with cloaths and bed against the winter; for want of which he must miserably perish with cold, unless supplied by some such dismal accident as exposed him to the want thereof, which he heartily wishes and prays may never happen.

Having made these considerations, he, on his knees, returns kind Providence his hearty thanks for all the mercies that had been extended to him; begging the continuance of it's assistance. Then, as he took directions from his dream, watching the opportunity to get away from that melancholy place, he goes to the other side of the rock, to try if he could perceive any shipping in sight.

The wind, being pretty high, fed his hopes, that each succeeding hour would gratify his wishing look, with that object the preceding could not bring forth; but was disappointed. The night approaching, kept back all probability for that time: however, depending on better success the next day, he returns whence he came; and being hungry, makes a fire, and broils another slice of the fish, then lays the rest upon broad green leaves, and strews salt thereon to keep it from spoiling; then goes to rest; and as he lay undisturbed the night before under the trees, and much more easy than atop, he ventured again, committing himself to the care of Providence.

But his thoughts, which all day had been disturbed with the dread of those hardships he must probably undergo, if obliged to continue there all winter, so ran in his mind, that they occasioned ideas suitable to those he had formed the

day before; and cold being the greatest of his fears, it is also the principal subject of his dream; which presented to his imagination, that he was in a spacious place, paved with hail-stones of a prodigious bigness; and surrounded with high mountains of ice, which echoed with shivers. At the farther end thereof he saw an old man resembling Time, as he is commonly painted, with heaps of snow and hail about him, and himself very busy with making more: at his side stood a very beautiful woman, whose shape and make was uncommon, and her features and complexion extraordinary; but what surprized him most, was her having three pair of breasts, wonderfully handsome, and curiously placed, which seemed to adorn her bosom far more than the richest stomacher made of diamonds or pearls could do; so that what in other women would look monstrous, was in her an addition to her matchless beauty.

The sight of that most perfect and complete woman warmed his blood, which the coldness of the place had chilled; and tempted him to come nearer the charmer. As he advanced, every step he made seemed to add strength to his limbs, and vigour to his life; which made him desirous to come nearer to the person from whom he received such beneficial effluvia; but was suddenly stopped by the old man's turning towards him with a grin and surly countenance, which threatened his nearer approach with evil.

Not daring to come nearer, he stands still, wondering what business that most charming creature could have with that surly morose old fellow; when listening a while, he perceived she was asking boons of him in the behalf of a vast number of all sorts of creatures that attended her at some distance behind, which he refused in a most churlish manner; and as she still persisted in her suit, following him up and down, the ill-natured old man slyly steps to the frosty mountain, and pulls down a large clod of ice, which stopped a gap therein; from whence came out a creature, made and featured like a man, but of a monstrous size, and frightful aspect; his excessive broad cheeks hanging down on each side of his long-piked chin, like two empty bladders; and his preposterous belly hung down, looking just like a sail without wind. That monster was no sooner out, but he

had



had orders from the spiteful old man to drive away the woman, and all her attendants; which word of command was no sooner given, but it was put in execution. Having filled his shrivelled jaws with wind, which then stood out like so many kettle-drums, he falls a blowing upon one of the hills of snow, and turns it into a thick shower, which he drove with violence against that angel-like creature, and her clients, who immediately fled for shelter.

This barbarous treatment to the most deserving of creatures, put him in amaze; to whom the angry old man (seeing he did not go with the rest) came in a fury, saying—'Dost thou put me to defiance? I'll bury thee in that which I only strewed over them,' and went to lay hold of him; which caused him to awake in a wonderful fright.

Being risen, he made reflections upon the late dreams. 'All my dreams,' said he, 'have ever proved ominous; and, if I mistake not, this must have some signification. Certainly this old man is Time, laying up a store of frost and snow against next winter; and that goodly woman is Nature, who being tender over all her creatures, interceded for moderation: and his surly refusal, and rough usage, prognosticate a forward and hard winter, to whose severity I must lie exposed, being altogether unprovided.'

These reflections bred various melancholy thoughts, which almost led him to despair. 'Oh!' said he, 'that I was but a mouse, bat, or a yet meaner creature! Then should I be below the cruel persecutions of Fate. But man, who was created in the noblest form, endued with reason and understanding, animated with an immortal soul, must be aimed at as the only mark worthy its malignant darts! But why do I thus rave at those evils we are the authors of? Had man continued in his original state of innocence, the very name of Fate or Fortune would not have been known. Well, since this is the product of sin, I accept this black lot as justly coming to my share; and humbly submitting to Heaven's decree, I thankfully take this dream as a timely warning; and, in imitation of those creatures represented in it, I'll provide what shelter I can against bad weather comes.'

Accordingly, first he begins to think

of making himself an house to preserve him from the injuries of the weather; but having nothing to make it of, nor any instrument but a knife, which could be of little service to him, he resolves to go to that part of the rocks where he was shipwrecked, to see if he could discover any thing among the wreck that might be serviceable to him; and therefore takes a branch of a tree along with him, and, coming to the place, he strips himself, and goes into the water, (the water being low, discovering the tops of several sharp-pointed rocks) and gropes along with his staff for sure footing, wading as high as his chin, diving to the bottom frequently, and feeling about with his hands. This he continued doing for almost two hours, but to no purpose, not daring to go out of his depth; for he well knew, that he could do little good there, because he could discover no part of the ship, not so much as the mast, or any of the rigging, but fancied she lay in some deep hole, where it was impossible to get at her.

Thus despairing, and fretting, and teasing himself, he calls to mind, that he had a hatchet in his hand when he was cast away, and thought probably it might lie in that cleft of the rock, into which he was thrown; thither he went, and looking about, perceived something like the handle of a hatchet just above the surface of the water at the bottom of the rock; and, going down to it, took it up; which, to his great joy, proved to be the very thing he wanted.

Having got his tool, he dresses himself, and goes on to the island again, intending to cut down some trees to make himself a hut. Looking about, therefore, for the properest plants, and taking notice of a sort of trees, whose branches, bending to the ground, took root, and became a plant, he thought they might be the fittest for this purpose, and cut a sufficient parcel of them to make his barrack; which was full business for him that day.

The next morning, having paid his usual devotion, he walks out again to look a pleasant and convenient place to make his hut or barrack upon. He walked several hours, and could find none more sheltered from the cold winds, than that where he already lay, being in the middle of the island, well fenced on the north and east sides with trees, which stood very thick. The place being fixed upon, he hews down some trees that grew  
in

in his way, and clears a spot of ground about twelve feet square, leaving one tree standing at each corner; and, with the young plants he provided the day before, filled the distance between quite round, setting them about six inches asunder, leaving a larger vacancy for the door. His inclosure being made, he bends the branches a-top from both sides, and weaves them cross one another, making a cover to it; which being something too thin, he laid other branches over, till they were grown thicker. Having finished the top, he goes about closing the sides; for which purpose, taking large branches, he strips off their small twigs, and weaves them between the plants as they do for sheep-pens; then made a door after the same manner.

His barrack being finished, which took him up fifteen days hard work; 'Now,' said he, 'here's a house, but where's the furniture?' This, indeed, may keep the weather from me, but not the cold. The ground on which I do and must lie, is hard, and doubtless, in the winter, will grow damp; which, with want of covering, may occasion agues and fevers, the cholick and rheumatism, and twenty racking distempers, which may cause me to repent my having escaped a milder death.'

In this great consternation and perplexity, he goes to see if he could spy any shipping riding within sight of the island. As he was walking along, full of heavy and dull thoughts, which weighed his looks to the ground, he happened to find a sort of high grass that grows but here-and-there, round some particular sort of trees, of which he never took notice before. 'Heaven be praised!' said he, 'I have found where-withal to keep my poor body from the ground, whilst I am, by Providence, doomed to remain here.' So passes on, intending, at his return, to cut down a sufficient quantity of it to make mats that might serve him instead of bed and bed-cloaths.

Having looked himself almost blind, without seeing the least prospect of what he desired, he concludes upon going to cut the grass, which he stood in such want of, and spread it to dry, whilst the weather was yet warm. That piece of work kept him employed the remainder of the day, and best part of the succeeding, having nothing but a pocket-knife to

cut withal. That work being done, wanting a tool to spread and turn his grass, he takes a branch off the next tree, which having stript of all the small ones about it, all but part of that at the top, being forky, made a tolerable fork. thus being equipped for hay-making, he went on with his work; and as he was at it, he saw, at some distance, several monkeys as busy as himself, scratching something out of the ground, which they did eat upon the spot, and carried the rest to their home.

His hopes that those roots might be for his use, those creatures being naturally dainty, eating nothing but what men may, made him hasten to the place he saw them scratching at, that by the herb they bear (which they tore off) he might find out the root.

Having, by the leaves which he picked off the ground, found some of the same, he dug them up, and carried them to his barrack, where he broiled a slice of his fish, and in the ashes roasted them, which eat something like chestnuts done in the same manner.

This new-found-out eatable much rejoicing him, he returned his hearty thanks to kind Providence, that had put him in a way to provide himself with bread, and that of a most delicious kind. As soon therefore as he had dined, he went out on purpose to dig up a good quantity; but, as he was going to the place where he had taken notice they grew pretty thick, he sees a tortoise, of about a foot over, crawling before him. 'Heaven be praised!' said he, 'here's what will supply me both with victuals, and utensils to dress it in.' He ran, therefore, and turned it on it's back, to keep it from getting away, whilst he went for his hatchet, that he might cut the bottom-shell from the top, in order to make a kettle of the deepest, and a dish of the flat part.

Being tired of cod-fish, he dresses the tortoise, an animal seldom eaten but upon extremity, the flesh thereof often giving the flux. Nevertheless he ventured upon it, and liked it extremely, some part of it eating very much like veal; which at that time was a very great novelty to him, having eaten no fresh meat for a long time before.

Happening to eat of that part of the tortoise which is the most feeding, and least hurtful, he was in no-wise discomposed;



posed; but, having boiled it all, he laid by the remainder to eat now and then between his fish.

Being provided with a boiling utensil, he often had change, by means of those admirable roots so luckily discovered; some of which he roasted for bread, others he boiled with salt cod. This in a great measure mitigated his misfortune, and softened the hardship he lay under; so that, seeing but little prospect of changing his present condition, by getting away from thence yet a-while, he thinks on means to make it as easy as possible whilst he remained in it; for, having projected a bed, and taking the grass, which by that time was dry, he falls to work; and a mat being the thing concluded upon, he twists his hay into ropes, the bigness of his leg; then he cuts a pretty number of sticks, about two feet long, which he drives in the ground, ten in a row, and near four inches asunder, and opposite to them such another row at six or seven feet distance from the first, which made the length of his mat; then having fastened one end of his rope to one of the corner sticks, he brings it round the other corner stick, and so to the next at the other end, till he has laid his frame: then he weaves across shorter ropes of the same, in the manner they make pallions on board with old cable-ends. When he had finished his mat, he beat it with a long stick, which made it swell up; and the grass being of a soft cottony nature, he had a warm and easy bed to lie on.

The comfort and pleasure he found on his soft mat (being grown sore with lying on the ground for the space of a month and more) so liberally gratified him for the time and labour he had bestowed in making it, that it gave him encouragement to go about another; a covering being the next necessary wanted; for though the weather was, as yet, pretty warm, and he, in a great measure, seasoned by the hardships he had gone through; yet the winter approaching, and the present season still favourable for him to make provision against it, he goes and cuts more grass; which being made ready for use, he lengthens his loom, to allow for rolling up at one end, instead of a bolster, and makes it thicker than the first; which he intends, in cold weather, shall lie upon him instead of blankets.

Being provided with the most necessary furniture he wanted, he thinks on more conveniencies, resolving to make himself a table to eat his victuals upon, and a chair to sit on. Thus, having cut several sticks about four feet long, he drives them in a row a little way in the ground; then takes smaller, which he interweaves between: having made the top, he sets it upon four other sticks, forked at the upper end, which he stuck in the ground at one side of his barrack, to the height of a table; this being done, he cuts four more branches, such as he judged would do best for the seat and back of a chair, which he also drove in the ground near his table; and having twisted the branches, which grew to them, with each other, from back to front, and across again, he weaves smaller between, bottoming his seat; which completes the furniture of his habitation.

That care being over, another succeeds, of far greater moment—'Here's a dwelling,' said he, 'to shelter me from the weather, and a bed to rest this poor body of mine; but where is food to support it? Here have I subsisted near one month upon a fish, which the same dreadful storm that took away forty lives, sent me to maintain my own. Well, since kind Providence has been pleased to preserve my life, preferable to so many, who fatally perished in that dismal accident, I am bound, in gratitude, to hold it precious; and since my fish is almost gone, and I am not certain of more, I must by degrees bring myself to live upon roots, which I hope will never be wanting, being the natural product of this island: so I must eat of the small remnant of my fish, but now and then, to make it hold out longer. Dainties or plenty were not allotted for him that was doomed to slavery, but labour and hard-living; and, if I meet here the latter, Heaven be praised, I have escaped the worse; I can take my rest, and stand in no dread of any severe inspector and task-master.'

Now being entirely reconciled to the state of life Providence, on whom he fully depended, had been pleased to call him to, he resolves to make provision of those excellent roots; and with his hatchet he cuts a piece of a tree, where with he makes a shovel, in order to dig

K them

them up with more ease. With this instrument he went to the place where he had observed they grew thickest, which being near the monkeys quarters, they came down from off their trees in great numbers, grinning as if they would have flown at him; which made him stop a while: he might indeed, with the instrument in his hand, have killed several, and perhaps dispersed the rest; but would not.—‘Why,’ said he, ‘should I add barbarity to injustice? It is but natural and reasonable for every creature to guard and defend their own; this was given them by Nature for food, which I come to rob them of; and since I am obliged to get of them for my subsistence, if I am decreed to be here another season, I will let some in a place distant from theirs for my own use.’

Having stood still a considerable time, those animals, seeing he did not go forwards, each went and scratched up for itself, afterwards retiring; giving him the opportunity to dig up a few for himself: and as he was not come to the place where they grew thick, he laid them in small heaps as he dug them up; while those sly creatures would, whilst he was digging up more, come down from the trees, where they stood hid among the leaves, and steal them away: which obliged him to be contented for that time with as many as his pockets would hold, resolving to bring something next time which would contain a larger quantity; and fearing those animals, which are naturally very cunning, should dig them up, and hide them, he comes early the morning following to make his provision: and for want of a sack to put them in, he takes his jacket, which he buttons up, and ties at the sleeves; and as he had observed, that every root had abundance of little off-sets hanging at it by small fibres, he pulled off his shirt also, of which he makes another sack to put them in.

Being naked all but his breeches, and the day being pretty hot, he thought he had as good pull them off too, and fill them, his jacket being but short, and therefore holding but few: taking, therefore, his bundle in one arm, and having the shovel in the other hand, he goes to the place he intended to do the day before; and expecting to find the same opposition as he did then, he brought with

him some of the roots he had dug up the preceding day, in order to throw them amongst those animals, and so quiet them. But to his great wonder, and as great satisfaction, those creatures which the time before had opposed him with noise, and offensive motions, let him now pass by quietly, without offering to meddle with any when dug up, though he had laid them up by heaps in their way, and stood at a considerable distance from them.

This surprising reverence from those creatures, set him upon deep reflections on what could be the cause thereof; whether it might not proceed from the proximity of their shape and his.—‘But then,’ said he, ‘my stature and colour of skin is so different from theirs, that they cannot but distinguish I am not of their kind. No, it must be a remnant of that awe, entailed by Nature upon all animals, to that most noble and complete master-piece of the creation called *Man*, which, now appearing in the state he was first created in, and undisguised by cloaths, renew an image of that respect he has forfeited by his fatal transgression, which ever since obliged him to hide the beauty of his fabric under a gaudy disguise, which often renders him ridiculous to the rest of mankind, and generally obnoxious to all other creatures; making a pride of what he ought to be ashamed of. Well,’ adds he, ‘since my cloaths bred the antipathy, I will remove that cause, which will suit both the nature of those animals, and my own circumstances.’ From that time he resolves to go naked, till the hardness of the weather obliged him to put something on.

Having picked up a sufficient quantity of off-sets to stock about two acres of land, he returns home, leaving behind him a considerable number of roots dug up for those poor animals, which attended him all the time he was at work, without offering to touch one till he was gone.

Being come home, he fixes upon a spot of ground near his habitation, and digs it up as well as he could with his wooden instrument, in order to sow his seed: which having compassed in about twenty days, he implores a blessing upon his labour, and leaves it to time to bring it forth. Thus having finished the



the most necessary work about his barrack, he resolves to take a more particular view of the island, which till then he had not time to do; and taking a long staff in his hand, he walks to the lake, which parts the land from the rock, and goes along the side of it quite round the island, finding all the way new subjects of admiration. On the left-hand stood a rampart made of one solid stone, adorned by Nature with various forms and shapes, beyond the power of art to imitate; some parts challenging a likeness to a city, and clusters of houses, with here and there a high steeple standing above the other buildings; another place claiming a near resemblance to a distant squadron of men of war in a line of battle: further, it bears comparison with the dull remains of some sumptuous edifice, ruined by the often repeated shocks of time, inciting the beholders to condolence for the loss of its former beauty. At some distance from thence the prospect of a demolished city is presented to the sight; in another place large stones like small mountains, laid, as it were, a-top of one another, impress the mind with an idea of the tower of Babel; and on the right-hand a most pleasant land covered with beautiful green grass, like camomile, and here and there a cluster of trees, composing most agreeable groves, amongst a vast number of fine lofty trees of divers heights and shapes, which stood more distant, whose irregularity added much to the delightfulness of the place.

As he was walking on, admiring all these wonderful works of Nature, having caught cold, (not being used to go naked) he happened to sneeze opposite to a place in the rock, which hollowed-in after the manner of the inside of some cathedral, and was answered by a multitude of different voices issuing from that place. The agreeableness of the surprize induced him to rouse those echoes a second time, by giving a loud hem; which was, like his sneezing, repeated in different tones, but all very harmonious: again he hemmed, and was so delighted with the repetition, that he could have spent hours in the hearing of it. "But why should I," said he, "waste those melodious sounds, so fit to relate the Almighty's wonderful works, and set forth his praise?" Immediately he sung several psalms and hymns, with as much emulation and devotion, as if he had been in

company with numbers of skilful and celebrated choristers.

Having spent a considerable time there with much pleasure, he proceeds in his walk, being resolved to make that his place of worship for the future, and attend it twice a day constantly.

About three or four hundred paces farther, having turned on the other side of a jetting-out part of the rock, he was stopped a second time by another surprising product of Nature; a large stone, growing out of the rock, advancing quite over the lake at the bottom of it, representing something of a human shape, out of the breast whereof issued a fountain of exceeding clear water, as sweet as milk; and, when looked at fronting, was like an antique piece of architecture, which in old times they built over particular springs; and on the other side appeared as if springing from the nostrils of a sea-horse. These three so very different, and yet rightly compared likenesses, being offered by one and the same unaltered object, made him curious to examine what parts of every resemblance helped to make out the others: and having spent a considerable time in the examination, he found every thing, which the front had likeness of, was employed in making the side representation, by being in some places shortened, and others lengthened, according to the point of sight.

Being satisfied about that subject, he enters upon another as puzzling. The basin, in which the fountain ran, which was about five yards distant from whence the water did spring, being but about nine feet over every way, without any visible place to evacuate its over-complement, and yet keeping the same height, without dashing or running over, although the stream that fell into it ran as big as his wrist. Having a long time searched into the cause, without any satisfaction, he conjectures it must make its way out somewhere under ground; so went on, till he came to the place he had begun his march at, which ended that day's work.

Having been round the island, which to the best of his judgment was about ten or eleven miles in circumference, of an oblong form, going in and out in several places, extending from north to south, the south end near twice as broad as the opposite; he resolves to employ the next day in viewing the inside.

Then recommending himself to Providence, as he never failed to do, both morning and evening, he goes to bed; but not being sleepy, the over-active faculty in man roves from one subject to another. His mind runs from his present station to his former, re-assuming his past pleasures, which he never must hope to meet again, and calls in all the evils his present condition of life lays him exposed to. These dull thoughts quite dislodge his late-born hopes of Heaven's assistance, and shake his future dependance on Providence: he snarls and quarrels with his fate, and repines at his condition; which not being in his power to mend, he wishes for eternal sleep, to free his mind of tumults and cares, which croud upon him.

Sleep was granted him, but not rest: his repining is chastised with terrifying dreams of the punishment he had been condemned to; all his past troubles come upon him in the most grievous and shocking manner they could appear; his raging wives at once fall upon him, exerting their utmost malice and revenge, which he cannot avoid, but by embracing either an ignominious death, or a severe and vile bondage. These terrible aspects put him in the same pains and agony, as if already feeling the assigned torment.

Having in his dream, with hard strugglings, escaped death, he finds himself in an exceeding hot country, his half-naked body continually bending to the hard and dry ground, grabbing round a nauseous weed for fullsome worms; every now and then lashed by a cross and severe task-master, who hurries him to work. In this great perplexity he cries out, 'Oh, that I had ended my woful days at the shameful gibbet! Sure it would have been a milder fate!' At which he awaked in such a consternation, that it was several minutes before he could be thoroughly satisfied it was but a dream. Having recalled his dispersed senses, he made this reflection; that it really was the penalty he had been sentenced to, and by Providence preserved from. Setting then his present condition in opposition to that, he acknowledges his ingratitude, for which he secretly repents, and on his knees, with weeping eyes, asks pardon, imploring the continuation of Providence's protection; resolving, for the future, never to think or wish to change that state of life it had pleased Heaven to

place him in; wholly dedicating the remains of his days to God's worship. Holding henceforth, as inestimable, the happiness of being freed from those cares, which daily flew on them who are concerned with the world, which might cool or slacken his duty to so great a Benefactor.

Having intirely resigned himself to the will of God, he casts off all cares, and banishes from his mind all that could create any; resolving to employ those hours that ran between the intervals of time he had dedicated to divine worship, in the contemplation of the many wonderful works of Nature, manifested in such various manners all over the island.

So he walks along the land, which he found very level, covered with a delightful green grass, and adorned with trees of divers sorts, shapes, and height, inhabited with several sorts of curious singing birds, of various colours and notes, which entertained him with their melodious harmony. In some places stood a cluster of trees, composing agreeable and delightful groves, proceeding from only one main body, whose lower branches, being come to a certain length, applied to the earth for immediate nourishment, as it were, to ease the old stem that produced them; and so became a plant, and did the same.

Having for some time admired the agreeableness and curiosity of the plant, by which Nature seemed to give human kind instructions; and looking about, if perchance he could find any thing in his way for his own proper use; he took along with him a sample of every different herb he thought might be eatable. Crossing the island in several places, he comes at a most delightful pond, about two hundred yards in length, and one hundred and fifty wide, with fine trees spreading their branchy limbs over it's brink, which was surrounded with a beautiful bank, covered with divers kinds of flowers and herbs, so naturally intermixed, which compleated it in ornament and conveniency, as though intended by Nature for more than mortal's use.

Having walked several times around it, with much pleasure, he sat down a while upon it's bank, to admire the clearness of the water, through which, to his great comfort, he saw many different sorts of fish, of various bignesses, shapes, and colours. 'Heaven be praised!' said he, 'here



' here is a stock of fresh-water fish to supply me with food, if the sea should fail me.'

Being sufficiently diverted with their chasing one another, which were of many beautiful and different colours, and made a most delightful scene, he proceeds in his walk, and goes to the south of the island, where he finds another subject of admiration; a noble and spacious wood, whose shades seemed to be made for the abode of peace and pleasure. He walked round it with much delight, which made the time seem short; yet he could guess it to be no less than two miles about.

Having viewed the outside, whose extraordinary agreeableness incited in him an unsurmountable desire to get into it, but where he was afraid to venture, lest there might be destructive creatures; yet, having recommended himself to the care of Providence, he ventured into it, finding several pleasant walks, some straight, edged with lofty trees, as though planted for pleasure; others crooked and winding, bordered with a thick hedge of pimentoes, which cast a most fragrant smell: here and there a large cluster of bushes and dwarf-trees, wherein sheltered several different kinds of wild beasts and fowls. ' Sure,' said he, ' this island never was intended by Nature to lie waste, but rather reserved to be the happy abode of some, for whom Heaven had a particular blessing in store. Here is every thing sufficient, not only for the support, but also for the pleasure of life; Heaven make me thankful, that I am the happy inhabitant of so blessed a land!'

Being hungry, and tired with walking, he goes home, in order to get some victuals; and, having made a fire, he boils a slice of his salt-fish with some roots, and then the herbs he brought with him, which proved of divers tastes, and all excellent; some eating like artichokes, others like asparagus and spinach. ' Now,' said he, ' what can I wish for more! Here I possess a plentiful land, which produces both fowls, flesh, and fish; bears excellent greens and roots, and affords the best of water, which by Nature was ordained for man's drink. Pomp and greatness are but pageantry, which oftentimes prove more prejudicial to the actor, than diverting to the beholder. Ease and indulgence are apt to breed the

' gout, and various distempers, which make the rich more wretched than the poor; now these evils, thanks to my Maker, I stand in no danger of, having but what is sufficient, which never can do any harm.'

Thus thoroughly easy in his mind, he proposes to spend the afternoon at the outside of the rock, in viewing the sea, and looking for oysters; so takes in his hand his long staff to grapple in holes; and his breeches, which he ties at the knees, to bring them in. Being come to a place of the rock he never had been at before, he sees at a distance, something like linen hanging upon it; which, when come at, he found to be the main-sail of a ship, with a piece of the yard fastened to it. ' Alas!' said he, ' a dismal token of insatiable ambition! which makes men often lose their lives in seeking what they seldom find; and, if they ever do, 'tis commonly attended with a world of care. Happy is he who limits his desires to his ability; aspiring not above his reach, and is contented with what nature requires.' Then he falls a ripping the sheet from the yard, which he finds in one place tied with one of his garters! (having himself made use of it for want of another string) ' Heaven be prais'd,' said he, ' this is no effect of another shipwreck, but a fragment of the unfortunate ship, whose loss was my redemption; which reflection made him shed tears.

Having ripped the sail in pieces, he rolls them up in such bundles as he could conveniently carry, and lays them down till he had got a few oysters, proceeding to grope in holes with his stick as he went on.

About forty paces farther, he finds a chest in a cleft of the rock, which had been washed up there by the violence of the late storm. ' Heaven!' said he, ' more fatal effects of Fate's cruelty, and man's temerity! Was the sea made for men to travel on? Is there not land enough for his rambling mind to rove? Must he hunt after dangers, and put Death to defiance? What is the owner of this the better for it now! Or who can be the better in a place so remote, and the access to it so difficult? being not to be approached but on the wings of Providence and over the back of Death. Now, was this full of massy gold, or yet richer things, I thank my God, I am above the use of it;

'it; yet I'll take it home: it was sent  
'hither by Providence, perhaps for the  
'relief of some so necessitated and def-  
'titute.' Then going to lift it, he  
could not; therefore was obliged to fetch  
his hatchet to beat it open, that he might  
take away what was in it by degrees.  
Having taken as much of the sail-cloth  
as he could conveniently carry, with the  
few oysters he had got, he went home,  
and fetched the tool, wherewith he  
wrenched the chest open, from which he  
took a suit of cloaths, and some wearing  
linen. 'These,' said he, 'neither the  
'owner, nor I, want!' so laid them  
down. The next thing he took out, was  
a roll of several sheets of parchment,  
being blank indentures and leases.  
'These,' said he, 'are instruments  
'of the law, and often applied to injus-  
'tice; but I'll alter their mischievous  
'properties, and make them records of  
'Heaven's mercies, and Providence's  
'wonderful liberality to me; so, instead  
'of being the ruin of some, they may  
'chance to be the reclaiming of others.'  
At the bottom of the chest lay a rundlet  
of brandy, a Cheshire cheese, a leather  
bottle full of ink, with a parcel of pens,  
and a penknife. 'As for these,' said  
he, 'they are of use; the pens, ink, and  
'parchments, have equipped me to keep  
'a journal, which will divert and pass  
'away a few anxious hours. As for the  
'cheese and brandy, they will but cause  
'me new cares: before I had them, I  
'wanted them not; now, the benefit and  
'comfort I shall find in them, when  
'gone, will make me hanker after them  
'most; I wish I had still been without  
'them; but now they are here, it would  
'be a sin to let them be lost. I'll take  
'them home, and only use them at my  
'need; which will both make them  
'hold out the longer, and me grow less  
'fond of them.'

So, by degrees, he takes home the  
chest, and what was in it; and now hav-  
ing materials to begin his journal, he  
immediately fell to work, that, for want  
of other books, he might at his leisure  
peruse his past transactions, and the ma-  
ny mercies he had received from Hea-  
ven; and that, after his decease, who-  
ever is directed thither by Providence,  
upon reading his wonderful escapes in  
the greatest of dangers; his miraculous  
living, when remote from human assist-  
ance; in the like extremity, might not  
despair. Thus he begins from his being

eight years old (as well as he can remem-  
ber he heard an old aunt of his say) to the  
day of his being cast away, which hap-  
pened on the 10th of July, 1675, being  
then twenty-eight years of age, resolving  
to continue it to his death.

Thus having written the preceding  
account of the shipwreck, and what had  
befallen him since, to the finding of the  
chest, which was on the 15th of Septem-  
ber, 1675, he proceeds.—But calling to  
mind his last dream but one, which did  
warn him to make provision against win-  
ter, and the season being pretty far ad-  
vanced, he gathers a good store of fuel  
and roots; begins to line the outside of  
his barrack with a wall of turf, and lays  
the same a-top, to keep out the wet: and  
as he now and then found small shell-  
fish and oysters upon the rock, he makes  
a bridge over the lake, which in warm  
weather he used to wade, that in the win-  
ter he might go over dry: so, having  
completed his bridge, which was made  
of two strong poles, which reached from  
the land to the rock, and several lesser  
branches laid across pretty close, he re-  
tires home, the day being far spent. The  
following night, being the 18th of Sep-  
tember, there arose a violent storm, at-  
tended with dreadful claps of thunder,  
which the many echoes from the rock  
rendered more terrible; and lightnings  
flashing in a most frightful manner, suc-  
ceeding each other, before the preceding  
was well out of the sky, which put poor  
lonesome Quarll in such a consternation,  
that, notwithstanding his reliance on  
Heaven's protection, he would have given  
the world (had it been in his possession)  
to have been within the reach of human  
assistance; or at least, to have some com-  
pany; solitude adding much to his terror  
and affliction.

The glorious rising of the next morn-  
ing's sun having laid the mortifying rage  
of the blustering winds, Quarll, whose  
late alarm was hardly quelled, still sus-  
pected it's most reviving rays to be ter-  
rifying glances and flashes of lightning:  
but having lain a while, and hearing no  
noise, but that which still raged in his  
mind, was at last convinced the storm  
was over; and so gets up with a resolu-  
tion to go and see if he could discern any  
effect of the late tempest.

Being come at the other side of the  
rock, he saw, indeed, surprising objects,  
but not afflicting; the mischief that was  
done, being to the inhabitants of the sea  
only,



only, a vast number of which had, by the wind, been dis-elemented; a quantity of stately whittings, fine mackarels, large herrings, divers sizes of codlings, and several other sorts of fish, with a great number of shells, of different shapes and bignesses, lying up and down upon the rock. 'Heaven be praised!' said he, instead of damage to bewail, what thanks have I now to return for this mighty benefit! Here the powerful agent of mischief is, by kind Providence, made a minister of good to me. Make me thankful! I am now provided for all the next winter; and yet longer; by which time I am certain to have a fresh supply.

- \* 'He who, when in distress,
- ' To God makes his address,
- ' And his bounties implore;
- ' Is sure, and may depend,
- ' That relief he will send,
- ' And at need help the poor.'

Thus having taken up as many fish as he could hold in his arms, he carries them home, and brings his shirt, which he used instead of a sack. So, at several times, he brought away all the fish, and as many of the shells as he had occasion for; of some of which he made boilers and stew-pans, of others dishes and plates: some he kept water in, and others fish in pickle; so that he was stocked with necessary vessels, as well as provision.

Being very weary with often going backwards and forwards with his fish, which took up all that day to bring them home, he sits down to rest himself; and the rundlet of brandy lying by, he was tempted to take a sup, which was at that time very much wanted, his spirits being very low; but was loth to taste it, lest he should grow fond of the liquor, and grieve after it when gone. Some moments were spent before he could come to a resolution: at last, having considered the use of it, which suited the present occasion, he concludes to take a dram, and to use it like a cordial, as it was first intended for; but the vessel out of which he drank, being at his mouth, the cordial turns to a nectar; one gulp decoys another down; so the intended dram becomes a hearty draught. The pleasantness of the liquor made him forget it's

nature; so that poor Quarll, who had, for the space of near three months before, drank nothing but water, was presently overcome with the strength of the brandy, and fell asleep in his chair, with the rundlet on his bare lap, from whence it soon fell to the ground, and being unstopt, ran all out.

Being awaked with hunger, having slept from evening till almost noon of another day, which he knew not whether the succeeding or the next to it; seeing what had happened, he was sorely vexed, and could have wept at the accident; but, considering the liquor which occasioned it, might perhaps, in time, have caused greater mischief, he soon was reconciled with the loss, but could not with that of the right order of the days, which having entirely forgot, hindered the going on of his journal; so was obliged to make only a memorial. That damage being repaired, another appears of a far greater consequence: the Sunday is lost, which he had so carefully observed till that time. How can that be made up? 'Now,' said he, 'shall I daily be in danger of breaking the Sabbath, knowing not the day. Oh, fatal liquor! that ever thou wert invented to cause so much mischief! Murder, adulteries, and blasphemies, are daily, by thy most pernicious use, occasioned. But why should I lay the blame upon the use, when it is the abuse that does the hurt? and exclaim against a thing, which being taken in moderation, is of so great a benefit, reviving a fainting heart, raising sinking spirits, warming cold and decayed nature, and assuaging several pains?' So blames himself highly for gratifying his appetite with that wherewith he only ought to have refreshed nature; and since that often misguided faculty had prompted him to commit the fault, he dedicated that day, in which he became sensible of it, to prayers and fasting; and every seventh from that, he set apart for divine worship only, which he hoped would keep him from breaking the Commandments, for keeping holy the Sabbath Day; it being not certain, that the day appointed by the Church for that purpose, was the very day God had sanctified for rest: so went to the place

\* Lest the reader should think these and the following verses to be the effect of my own brain, I solemnly protest they are what I found in his Memoirs, written with his own hand.

where

where the echoes, in many different and melodious sounds, repeated his thanksgivings to the Almighty, which he had fixed upon to pay his devotion, and there spent the rest of the day in prayers, and singing of psalms.

The next morning, having breakfasted on some of his usual bread, and a slice of the cheese he found in the chest, he goes about curing his fish, in order to salt them: having laid by as many for the present use, as he thought he could eat whilst fresh, he improves the fair weather to dry one part of the remainder, and keeps the rest in pickle.

The winter being near at hand, and the weather growing damp and cold, hinders him from his walks; so, being confined within doors, he employs his idle hours in beautifying his utensils, which were not to be used on the fire; and bestowed some pains in scraping and polishing the rest of his shells, some as fine as though they had been nakers of pearl; which made them not only more fit for their intended uses, but also a great ornament to his barrack, which he shelved round with plaited twigs after the manner of his table, and so set them upon it.

Thus he spent the best part of the winter, making no farther remarks, but that it was very sharp, attended with high winds, and abundance of hail and snow, which obliged him to make a broom to sweep it away from about his hut, which otherwise would have been damaged by it.

But shivering Winter, having exhausted his frosty stores, and weary with vexing Nature, retired; Boreas also, grown faint with hard blowing, is forced to retreat into his cave; gentle Zephyrus (who till then kept up in his temperate cell) now comes forth to usher in the blooming Spring; so mildly slips on to inform Nature of her favourite's approach, who at the joyful news, put on her gay enamelled garb, and out of her rich wardrobe, supplies all vegetables with new vesture, to welcome the most lovely guest. The feathered choristers also receive new strength; their tender lungs are repaired from the injuries the foggy and misty air did occasion; and, thus revived, are placed on every budding tree, to grace his entrance with their harmonious notes.

Quarll also, whom bad weather had confined within doors a considerable time, which had in a great measure numbed his

limbs, and dulled his senses, now finds himself quite revived: he no longer can keep within; the fair weather invites him out; the singing birds on every side call to him; Nature itself fetches him out, to behold her treasures.

Having, with unspeakable pleasure, walked some time, diverted with the sweet melody of various kinds of singing birds, and the sight of abundance of different sorts of blossomed trees and blooming flowers; all things within the island inspiring joy; he had the curiosity to go and view the sea: so goes over his bridge; and then, at the other side of the rock, he finds more objects, requiring as much admiration, but affording a great deal less pleasure; vast mountains of ice, floating up and down, threatening all that came in their way.

These terrible effects of the winter, which to that time he was a stranger to, occasioned his making these reflections:

- ' He who on billows roves, riches or wealth  
' to gain,
- ' Is ever in danger, and labours oft in vain;
- ' If Fortune on him smiles, giving his toil  
' success,
- ' Each day new cares arise, which mar his  
' happiness.
- ' The only treasure, then, worth laying  
' up in store,
- ' Is a contented mind, which never leaves  
' one poor;
- ' He is not truly rich, who hankers after  
' more.'

So, having returned Heaven thanks for his happy state, he creeps to the north-east side of the rock, at the foot of which lay an extraordinary large whale, which the late high wind had cast there, and died for want of water. 'If this,' said he, 'is all the damage that has been done last winter, it may be borne;' so went down, and measured the length of it, which was above thirty yards, and proportionable in bigness. There were shoals of small fishes swimming about it in the shallow water wherein it lay, as rejoicing at it's death. 'Thus,' said he, 'the oppressed rejoice at a tyrant's fall. What numbers of these have been destroyed to make this monstrous bulk of fat! Well, happy are they, who, like me, are under Heaven's government only.' So, with his knife, which he always carried in his pocket, cuts several slices of the whale, and throws them to the small fishes, saying—'It is but just ye should,  
' at



“at last, feed on that which so long fed ‘on you;’ and as oil ran in abundance from the places he had cut the slices out of, it vexed him to see that wasted which might turn to good money: ‘But why,’ said he, ‘should I be disturbed at it? ‘What use have I for any? Providence ‘takes none; it gives me all *gratis*.’ So goes on feeling for oysters with his staff, which he always walked with.

Having at last found a hole, where, by their rattling at the bottom with his staff, he judged there might be a pretty many, he marks the place, and goes home to contrive some instrument to drag them up, being yet too cold for him to go in the water; and as he had no tool but his knife and hatchet, both improper to make a hole in a board, as requisite to make a rake, which was wanting for that purpose, he beats out the end of his chest, in which there was a knot: so, having driven it out, he fastens the small end of a poll to it. Thus equipped, he went and raked up oysters, which added one dish to his ordinary, and sauce to others; yet, at length, his stomach growing qualmish with eating altogether fish, and drinking nothing but water withal, he wishes he could have a little flesh, which he might easily, there being animals enough in the wood apparently fit for food; but then he must deprive them of their lives, barely to make his own more easy.

Thus he debates with himself for some time, whether or no it would not be injustice for him (who only by a providential accident was brought thither to save his life) now to destroy those creatures to whom nature has given a being, in a land out of man’s reach to disturb: ‘Yet nature requires what seems to be ‘against nature to grant: I am faint, ‘and like to grow worse the longer I ‘abstain from flesh.’

Having paused awhile—‘Why,’ said he, ‘should I be so scrupulous? Were ‘not all things created for the use of ‘man? Now, whether is it not worse to ‘let a man perish, than to destroy any ‘other creature for his relief? Nature ‘craves it, and Providence gives it: now, ‘not to use it in necessity, is undervaluing the gift.’

So, having concluded upon catching some of those animals he had seen in the wood, he considers by what means, having no dogs to hunt, nor guns to shoot. Having paused awhile, he resolves upon making gins, wherewith he had seen

hares caught in Europe: thus, taking some of the cords which he found with the sail at the outside of the rock, he goes to work, and makes several, which he fastens at divers gaps in the thickset, within the wood, through which he judged that sort of beast he had a mind for went.

Impatient to know the success of his snares, he gets up betimes the next morning, and goes to examine them; in one of which he found a certain animal something like a fawn, the colour of a deer, but feet and ears like a fox, and as big as a well grown hare. He was much rejoiced at his game, whose mouth he immediately opened, to see if he could find out whether it fed upon grass, or lived upon prey: the creature being caught by the neck, and strangled with struggling, before it died had brought up in it’s throat some of the greens it had been eating, which very much pleased him; accounting those that lived upon flesh as bad as carrion.

Having returned thanks for his good luck, he takes it home in order to dress part of it for his dinner; so castrates and guts it: but it’s proving to be a female, big with three young ones, grieved him to the heart, and made him repent making those killing nooses—‘What pity,’ said he, ‘so many lives should be lost, ‘and creatures wasted! One would have ‘served me four days; and here are four ‘killed at once. Well, henceforth, to ‘prevent the like evil, I will take alive ‘what I just want, and save all the ‘males.’ So, having stuck a long stick at both ends in the ground, making a half circle, he hangs one quarter of the animal upon a string before a good fire, and so roasts it.

His dinner being ready, having said grace, he set to eating with an uncommon appetite; and, whether it was the novelty of the dish, or that the meat did really deserve the praise, he really thought he never eat any thing of flesh, till then, comparable to it, either for taste or tenderness.

Having dined both plentifully and deliciously, he most zealously returns kind Providence thanks for the late and all favours received; then, pursuant to his resolution, he goes about making nets, in order to take his game alive for the future; and as he had no small twine to make it with, he was obliged to unravel some of the sail which he luckily

L

had

had by him; and with the thread twist some, of the bigness he judged proper for that use.

Having made a sufficient quantity, he makes a couple of nets, about four feet square, which he fastens in the room of the killing snares; so retired, and resolved to come and examine them every morning.

Several days passed without taking any thing, so that he wanted flesh a whole week; which did begin to disorder his stomach, but not his temper; being entirely resigned to the will of Providence, and fully contented with whatever Heaven was pleased to send.

One afternoon, which was not his customary time of day to examine his nets, being too visible in the day-time for game to run in, he happened to walk in the wood, to take the full dimensions thereof, so chanced to go by his nets; in one of which were taken two animals as big as a kid six weeks old, of a bright dun, their horns upright and strait, their shape like a stag, most curiously limbed, a small tuft of hair on each shoulder and hip. By their horns, which were but short, they appeared to be very young, which rejoiced him the more, being in hopes to tame those which he did not want for present use; so carried them home, joyful of his game, depending upon a good dinner: but was sadly disappointed; the animals he found were antelopes (calling to mind he had seen them in his travels) which, proving both females, he had made a resolution to preserve. Though they were too young to be with kid, and he in great need of flesh, yet he would not kill them; so with cords fastens them to the outside of his lodge; and, with constant feeding them, in two months time made them so tame, that they followed him up and down; which added much to the pleasure he already took in his habitation, which by that time was covered with green leaves, both top and sides, the stakes it was made of having struck root, and shot out young branches; whose strength increasing that summer, to fill up the vacancy between each plant, he pulled the turfs, wherewith he had covered the outside and top of the hut between them, to keep the cold out in the winter.

His former hut, being now become a pleasant arbour, gave him encouragement to bestow some pains about it to-

wards the embellishment of it, which seemed to depend on being well attended. He resolved upon keeping it pruned and watered, the better to make it grow thick and fast, which answered his intent; for, in three years time, the stems of every plant that composed the arbour were grown quite close, and made a solid wall of about six inches thick, covered with green leaves without, which lay most regular and even, and within had a most agreeable smooth bark, of a pleasant olive-colour.

His late arbour being, by his care and time, and nature's assistance, become a matchless lodge, as intended by nature for something more than human guests, he now consults to make it as commodious as beautiful. 'Here is,' said he, 'a delightful dwelling, warm in the winter, and cool in the summer; delightful to the eye, and comfortable to the body; pity it should be employed to any use, but repose and delight!' So resolved upon making a kitchen near it. Thus having fixed upon a place convenient at the side of his lodge, about six feet from it, twelve in length, and eight in breadth, which he enclosed with the turfs that covered the outside of his arbour, before it was sufficiently thick to keep out the cold; then, having laid sticks across the top of the walls, which were about eight feet high, he lays turf thereon, and so covers it, leaving an open place for the smoke to go out.

The outside being done, he goes about inside necessities, as fire-places, to roast and boil at; thus cuts a hole in the ground, at a small distance from the wall, after the manner of stew-stoves in noblemen's kitchens; then, at another place, he sets two flat stones, about eight or nine inches broad, and one foot long, edgeways, opposite to one another, near two feet asunder; then puts a third in the same manner, at the end of the other two; so makes a fire-place fit to roast at; then, for other conveniencies, he weaves twigs about sticks, stuck in the wall on one side of the kitchen, where he lays the shells fit for utensils, which both adorned and furnished it.

Having completed that piece of work, he goes and visits his plantations, which he finds in a thriving condition; the roots being in six months time grown from the bigness of a pea (as they were when first set) to that of an egg:

his



his antelopes, also, were come to their full growth, and compleat beauty, which exceeded most four-footed beasts; having a majestic presence, body, and limbs, representing a stag, and the noble march of a horse: so every thing concurred to his happiness. For which, having returned his most liberal Benefactor his grateful acknowledgments, he thinks on means to prevent any obstructions that may intercept the continuation thereof; and as the want of cloaths was the only cause, he could think of, to make him uneasy, having but the jacket and hose which were given him on board, to save his own cloaths, which, when worn out, he could not recruit; therefore, to accustom himself to go without, he thins those he had, so takes away the lining from the outside of his cloathing, in order to wear the thickest in the coldest weather; and so thins his dress by degrees, till at last, he went quite naked.

Having thus concluded, as being the best shift necessity could raise him, he falls to ripping his jacket, in the lining whereof he finds seven peas, and three beans, which were got in at a hole at the corner of the pocket.

Those few made him wish for more, which he had no room to hope for, they being raised by seed, which the island did not produce: 'These few,' said he, 'which at present are hardly sufficient to satisfy a woman's longing, may, with time and industry, be improved to a quantity large enough to serve me for a meal;' then lays them up against a proper time to set them. So spent the remainder of that summer in walking about the island, watering his lodge, weeding his root plantation, attending his nets, which now and then supplied him with an antelope or goat, to eat at intervals between fish he commonly found on the rock after high winds and storms; never failing to visit the sea three or four times a week, according as the weather did prove; thus diverting many anxious hours with variety of objects that element affords. Sometimes he had the pleasure of seeing great whales chasing one another, spouting large streams of water out of their gills and nostrils; at other times, numbers of beautiful dolphins rolling amongst the waves; now and then a quantity of strange monstrous fish playing on the surface of the sea, some whereof had heads (not common to fishes) like those of hogs; others not

unlike those of dogs, calves, horses, lions, bulls, goats, and several other creatures: some chasing another sort; which, to avoid being taken, would quit their element, and seek refuge in the air, and fly some yards above the water, till their fins, being dry, obliged them to plunge in again.

These pastimes being generally succeeded with bad weather, and dreadful storms, checked the pleasure they gave, with a dread of the evil that threatened to follow. Thus commiserating the case of those whose misfortune is to be exposed to them. Having spent some time in reflection, he goes to his usual devotion; and calling to mind that, in all that time, he never saw a young fish in it, he conjectured that something might destroy the small ones; and as he imagined so it proved, for, at his approach, a large fowl flew out of the pond with a fish in it's bill, being too large for it to swallow.

At that distance, the bird being also upon the wing, he could neither discern colour nor make; but he had the satisfaction of discovering the cause why the fishes did not increase, they being devoured when young by that creature; which, to prevent for the future, he studies means to kill the destroyer, nets not being proper instruments; it being requisite for that purpose, to have one all round, as also to cover the pond, which was impossible, by reason of it's largeness; and a less being of no use, the birds probably not coming to one certain place. He wished for a gun, and ammunition fitting, as being the most probable things to succeed; but no such instrument being within his reach, he ponders again; during which time a cross-bow offers itself to his mind, but is as distant from his reach as the gun. It is true, there was stuff enough in the island to make many, but no tools but a hatchet and a pocket knife; wherewith if he made shift to cut and shape a bow, he could not make a latch and spring necessary to it; so he must not think on it. Yet, a bow being the only thing he could apply to, he goes about one forthwith. Thus having picked a branch of a tree, which had the resemblance of yew, and as tough, of which they are sometimes made, he, with the tools he had, made shift to make one, of about six feet long, and arrows of the same, which he hardens and straightens over the

fire; then, having slit them at one end, about two or three inches, he slips in a bit of parchment, cut sharp at one end, and about two or three inches at the other; then ties the end close, to keep it in, which served for feathers; and with the ravelling of some of the sail he makes a string to it.

Thus equipped for an archer, wanting nothing but skill, which is only to be gained by practice, he daily exercises shooting at a mark for the space of a fortnight; in which time he made such an improvement, that in three shoots he would hit a mark of about three inches square, at near fifty paces distance.

Being sufficiently skilled, he goes and lies in wait for his desired game; so placed himself behind a tree, as near to the pond as he could, whither the bird came in a few hours after.

The creature being pitched upon the bank, never stood still, but kept running round, watching for a sizeable fish fit to swallow; so that he had no opportunity to shoot: till having, at last, spied out one, it launched itself into the pond, but rose more easily, which gave him time to take aim; nevertheless, he missed it, being in motion; but when come to the top, he struck it through the body, as it opened it's wings, and laid it flat on the other side of the pond. He took it up, wonderfully pleased at his good success the first time of his practising his new-acquired art; yet, having taken notice of the bird's beauty, he had a regret for it's death, though he might, in time, have rued it's living; the stock of fish weekly decreasing, by his own catching one now-and-then with a small net he made for that use, when short of other provisions; and their recruiting prevented by that bird's daily devouring their young.

The inexpressible beauty of the feathers, which were after the nature of a drake, every one distinguished from another by a rim round the edge thereof, about the breadth of a large thread, and of a changeable colour, from red to aurora and green; the ribs of a delightful blue, and the feathers pearl-colour, speckled with a bright yellow; the breast and belly, (if it might be said to be of any particular colour) was that of a dove's feathers, rimmed like the back, diversely changing; the head, which was like that of a swan for make, was purple also, changing as it moved; the bill like burnished gold: eyes like a ruby, with a

rim of gold round it; the feet the same as the bill; the size of the bird was between a middling goose and a duck, and in shape resembling a swan.

Having bemoaned the death of that delightful creature, he carefully takes out it's flesh, which, corrupting, would spoil the outside; then fills the skin with sweet herbs, which he dried for that use; and having sewed up the place he had cut open, to take the flesh out, he set it up in his lodge.

His good success in archery made him love the exercise; so that what odd hours he had in the day (besides those he set apart for his divine worship, and those necessary occupations about his lodge, plantations, and making remarks) he bestowed in shooting at the mark; which in time made him so expert, that he hardly would miss a standing mark the bigness of a dove, at forty or fifty yards distance, once in ten times; and would shoot tolerably well flying; having once occasion to try it upon a monstrous eagle, which often flew rounding over the place where his antelopes and goats fed, near his lodge; which he shot at, fearing it would damage them, and killed with the second arrow.

The summer being over, during which, having been much taken up about his habitation and plantations, he had neither time nor opportunity to make remarks, farther than it was some days very showery, and for the most part generally very hot; but now the weather being grown something cold, and the wind pretty sharp, he must be obliged to put on some cloaths to keep it off, being as yet too tender to go any longer without; next to provide for his antelopes against the approaching winter; so makes a lodge for them, at the backside of his kitchen, with sticks, which he drove into the ground, about two feet from the wall, and then bends them about three feet from the ground, and sticks them in the said wall, and smaller branches he interwove between them: he shuts up the front, and covers the top, leaving both ends open for the antelopes to go in at; then lays grass (which he dried on purpose) in the said lodge, for them to lie on. Thus, having dug up a considerable quantity of roots, and being already stocked with salt fish, both dry and in pickle, he was pretty well provided for his cattle and himself against the ensuing winter, which proved much like the preceding one, only not so stormy.

The



The succeeding spring having awaked slumbering Nature, and revived what the preceding hard season had caused to droop, every vegetable puts on new cloathing, and recovers it's wonted beauty; each animal assumes fresh vigour; the beasts in the wood leap and bound for joy; and each bird on the trees sings for gladness. The whole creation is, as it were, repaired, and every creature decked with new life. Love, by Nature's direction, for the increase of every kind, warms their harmless breasts; each animal seeks a mate; our tame antelopes quit their abode, and range the woods for the relief ordained to quell their innocent passion; which being assuaged, they return home, pregnant with young, to their master's great satisfaction; who, having given them over, was doubly rejoiced to see them come again in an increasing condition. 'Heaven be praised!' said he, 'I shall have a stock of my own; and will not fear wanting.'

So, having made fitting preparations against their kidding, he goes and examines the improvement of his new plantation, where he found his roots grown full as large as any of those that grew wild. 'Make me thankful!' said he; 'I am now provided with all necessary food: I shall no more need to rob those poor creatures of that which nature had provided for their own proper use.' Next he goes and views his small stock of pease and beans, which he found in a very promising case: so, whilst the weather was fair, he falls to clearing a spot of ground to set them in, as they increased.

Turning up the ground, he found several sorts of roots that looked to be eatable, some whereof were as big as a large carrot, others less. He broke a bit of every one; some of which breaking short, and not being stringy, he judged they might be eatable: then he smells them; and finding the scent not disagreeable, he tastes them. Some were sweetish; others sharp and hot, like horse-radish; and those he proposes to use instead of spice. 'Sure,' said he, 'these, being of a pleasant scent and savour, cannot be of an offensive nature.' So, having manured his ground, he takes a sample of every root which he judged eatable, and boils them, as the surest way to experience their goodness.

Most of them proved not only passable good, but extraordinary; some eating like parsneps, others almost like carrots, but rather more agreeable; some like beets and turnips; every one, in their several kinds, as good as ever he eat in England, but of different colours and make; some being bluish, others black; some red, and some yellow: these, though not wanted, having sufficient to gratify a nicer taste than his, were nevertheless extremely welcome, being something like his native country fare and product. So having returned thanks for this most agreeable addition to his ordinary, he sets a mark to every herb which those roots bore, in order to get some of the seed to sow in a ground he would prepare: so, being provided with flesh, fish, herbs, and several sorts of roots, he goes and examines what improvement his pease and beans have made; which he found increased to admiration, the seven peas having produced one thousand, and the three beans one hundred. Having returned thanks for that vast increase, he lays them by, in order to set them at a proper season, as he had done the year before.

By this time his antelopes had kidded, one of them having brought four young ones, and the second three. This vast addition to his provisions very much rejoiced him, being sure now not to want flesh at his need, which before he was in danger of, finding but seldom any thing in his net: so makes account to live upon two of the young bucks whilst they lasted; killing one as soon as fit for meat, and so now and then another, saving only five to breed; one whereof should be a mate to keep the females, in rutting-time, from the wood; left, at one time or other, they should stay away for good and all.

The old ones being well fed, as he always took care to do, providing for them store of those greens he knew they loved; as also boiled roots for them now-and-then, of which they are very fond; the young ones throve apace, and grew very fat; so that in three weeks time they were large, and fit to eat. He killed one; which being roasted, proved to be more delicious than any house-lamb, sucking-pig, young fawn, or any other suckling whatever.

Having lived upon that, with now-and-then a little fish, about one month, which

which was as long as he could keep it eatable, having dressed it at two different times, five days interval, eating the cold remains in several manners; reserving one of the other two males for a time he should be scanted, and in want of flesh; but was unluckily disappointed by a parcel of large eagles, which flying one morning over the place where the young antelopes were playing, being of a gay, as well as active disposition, who launched themselves with precipitation upon the male he reserved for time of need, and one of the females, which he kept for breed: seeing his beloved diversifiers carrying away by those birds of prey, he runs in for his bow, but came too late with it, the eagles being gone.

Having lost his two dear antelopes, especially the female, having doomed the male for his own eating, he hardly could forbear weeping, to think of their being cruelly torn to pieces by those ravenous creatures. Thus having for some time lamented his loss, and bewailed their hard fate, he thinks on means to prevent the like evil for the time to come; and as his bow was not always at hand, he resolves upon making a net, and fastens it between the trees he saw them come in at.

The succeeding winter proving very wet and windy, gave him but little invitation to take his usual walks; so having every thing he had occasion for at hand, he kept close to his net-making; for which, having twine to twist, and thread to ravel out, to make the said twine kept him employed till the following spring, which came on apace.

Having finished his net, and every thing which belonged to it, he goes and fastens it to the trees, as he had proposed; then takes a walk to his new plantations, which he found in a thriving condition; for which, and other benefits already received, he resolves, as in duty bound, to attend at his usual place of worship, and sing thanksgiving psalms, which the hardness of the weather had kept him from all the late winter; but it coming into his mind, that whilst he was at his devotion, returning thanks for the fair prospect of a plentiful crop, his antelopes would break into the close, the hedge being as yet but thin, and devour the promising buds, which are the principal occasion of his devotion; this not altogether improper consideration puts a

sad check to his religious intention; and though there was a vast obligation to prompt him to the performance of that part of his duty, yet he could not, with wisdom, run the hazard, out of mere devotion, to lose so promising a crop, which he should never be able to retrieve, all his stock of seed being then in grass.

As he was debating in his mind between religion and reason, whether the latter ought not to be a director to the former, he perceived his antelopes making towards the peas, whither they, doubtless, would have got in, had he not returned, and driven them another way: which accident convinced him he might find a more proper time to go about his devotion, no man being required to worship to his prejudice. So, having put off his religious duty till he had better secured his peas and beans, he cuts a parcel of branches, wherewith he stops those gaps to prevent the creatures going in; and having compleated his work, he goes to his devotion, adding to his usual thanksgiving a particular collect for his luckily being in the way to prevent his being frustrated of the blessing Heaven so fairly promised to bestow on his labours.

Having paid his devotion, he walks about the island, being all the way delighted with the birds celebrating their Maker's praise, in their different harmonious notes. 'Every thing in nature,' said he, 'answers the end of it's creation, but ungrateful man! who, ambitious to be wise, as his Creator, only learns to make himself wretched.' Thus he walks till the evening, making several reflections on the different conditions of men, preferring his present state to that of Adam before his fall, who could not be sensible of happiness, having never known a reverse; which, otherwise, he would have been more careful to prevent. Being come home, and near bed-time, he first eats his supper; and then, having performed his customary religious service, he goes to bed. The next morning, after paying his usual devotion, he takes a walk to his plantations, on which he implores a continuation of the prosperous condition they appear to be in; next, he goes to examine his nets, in which he finds a brace of fowls like ducks; but twice as large, and exceeding beautiful. The drake (which he knew by a coloured feather on



on his rump) was of a fine cinnamon colour upon his back, his breast of a mazarine blue, his belly of a deep orange, his neck green, his head purple, his eyes, bill, and feet, red; every colour changing most agreeably as they moved. The duck was also very beautiful, but of quite different colours, and much paler than the drake's.

The disappointment in catching those delightful fowls, instead of ravenous eagles, as he had purposed, no ways displeased him, but he rather was rejoiced to have such beautiful fowls to look at; yet it went much against his mind to deprive those creatures of their liberty, (the greatest comfort in life) which Nature took such pains to adorn: 'But,' said he, 'they were created for the use of man: so, in keeping them for my pleasure, they will but answer the end of their creation. Their confinement shall be no stricter than my own; they shall have the whole island to range in.' He then pinions them, puts them in the pond, and makes baskets for them to shelter in, which he places in the branches of those trees that hung closest to the water, taking particular care to feed them daily with roots roasted and boiled, and the guts of the fish, and other creatures, he used for his own eating; which made them thrive mainly, and take to the place; so that they bred in their season.

The five antelopes had by this time kidded, and brought sixteen young ones; his peas and beans also were wonderfully improved, having that season enough to stock the ground the year following. Thus he returned kind Providence thanks for the vast increase, and concludes to live upon the young antelopes as long as they lasted, reserving only one for suck of the old ones, to keep them in milk, of which he had taken notice they had plenty, designing to draw it daily for his own use; so that in a little time he had enough to skim for cream, which he used for sauce instead of butter, and made small cheeses of the rest. Now, having a pretty store of dairy-ware, he resolves to make a place to keep it in; the kitchen wherein he was obliged to lay his salt-fish (which commonly smells strong) not being a proper place for cream and milk: for which end he makes a dairy-house at the other side of his dwelling, with branches of trees, after the manner of a close arbour, and thatches

it over with grass; which answering the kitchen in form and situation, made uniform wings, that added as much to the beauty as conveniency of the habitation.

Having compleated his dairy, he proceeds in his resolution of making cheese, having learned the way in Holland; and for want of rennet to turn his milk, he takes some of the horse-radish seed, which, being of a hot nature, had the same effect. Having curd to his mind, he seasons it to his palate; then with his hatchet he cuts a notch round in the bark of a tree, about eighteen inches in circumference; and a second in the same manner, six inches below that; then slits the circle, and with his knife gently opens it, parting it from the tree. Thus he makes as many hoops as he judged would contain his paste, which, being girded round with cords to keep them from opening, he fills with the said paste, and lays them by till fit to eat.

This being done, which compleated his provisions, he returns thanks for those blessings which had been so liberally bestowed on him. 'Now,' said he, 'Heaven be praised! I exceed a prince in happiness: I have a habitation strong and lasting, beautiful and convenient, freehold; a store of comforts, with all necessaries of life at free-cost, which I enjoy with peace and pleasure uncontroubled: yet I think there is still something wanting to compleat my happiness; if a partner in grief lessens sorrow, certainly it must in delight augment pleasure. What objects of admiration are here concealed, and, like a miser's treasure, hid from the world! If man, who was created for bliss, could have been compleatly happy alone, he would not have had a companion given him.' Thus he walks about thoughtful till bed-time.

In that disposition he goes to bed, and soon fell asleep. The night also being windy, added to his heavy disposition: but his mind finds no repose; it still runs on upon the subject, that took it up the day before, and forms ideas suitable to his inclination: and as solitude was the motive of it's being disturbed, he indulges it with the thoughts of company, dreaming that the fame of his station, and happy state of life, was spread about the world; that it prompted a vast number of people, from all parts, to come to it, which at last induced several princes

to claim a right to it; which being decided by a bloody war, a governor was sent, who laid taxes, demanded duties, raised rents, and warns him to be gone, having fixed upon his habitation for himself to dwell in. Being sadly disturbed, he cries out in his sleep—'This is a great punishment for my uneasiness: could I not be contented with being lord of this island, without provoking Heaven to bring me under the power of extorting governors!'

There happening a great noise, he starts out of his sleep, with the thought of hearing a proclamation; and cried out—'Alas! it is too late to proclaim an evil which is already come.' But being thoroughly awake, and the noise still continuing, he found he had been dreaming, which very much rejoiced him: he therefore puts on his cloaths, and hastens to the place he heard the noise come from.

Being within forty or fifty yards thereof, he saw a number of monkeys of two different kinds; one sort squealing and fighting against the other, without intermixing, but still rallying, as they scattered in the scuffle. He stood some time admiring the order they kept in; and the battle still continuing as fierce as at first, he advanced to see what they fought about; for he took notice they very much strove to keep their ground.

At his approach the battle ceased; and the combatants, retiring at some distance, left the spot of ground, on which they fought, clear; whereon lay a considerable quantity of wild pomegranates which the wind had shook off the trees the night before, and which were the occasion of their strife.

His coming having caused a truce, every one of those creatures keeping still and quiet during his stay, he resolves to use his endeavours to make a solid peace; and as that difference had arisen from the fruit there present, to which he could see no reason but that each kind had an equal right, he divides it into two equal parcels, which he lays opposite to each other towards both the parties, retiring a little way, to see whether this expedient would decide the quarrel; which answered his intention, those animals quietly coming to that share next to them, and peaceably carrying it away, each to their quarters. This occasioned several reflections on the frivolous, and often

unjust quarrels that arise among princes, which create such bloody wars, as prove the destruction of vast numbers of their subjects. 'If monarchs,' said he, 'always acted with as much reason as these creatures, how much blood and money would they save!' Thus goes on to his usual place of worship, in order to return thanks, that he was free of that evil, the dream whereof had so tortured his mind; though he confessed he justly deserved the reality, for his uneasiness in the happiest of circumstances.

Having paid his devotion, he takes a walk to see how his peas and beans came on, which he found in a very improving disposition, each stem bearing a vast number of well-filled pods. 'Heaven be praised!' said he, 'I shall eat of this year's crop, and have sufficient to stock my ground the ensuing one.'

Thus being plentifully supplied with necessities, and in a pleasant island, every thing about him being come to perfection, his dwelling, which seems intended by nature for some immortal guest, being, by time, yearly repaired and improved, leaving no room for care; yet the unwise man, as if an enemy to his own ease, cannot be contented with the enjoyment of more than he could reasonably crave, but must disturb his mind with what concerns him not. 'What pity,' said he, 'so delightful a habitation, attended with such conveniences, and situated in so wholesome an air, and fruitful a land, should at my death lose all those wonderful properties, and become useless for want of somebody to enjoy them! What admiration will here be lost for want of beholders! But what kind of man could I settle it upon, worthy of so fine an inheritance? Were it at my pleasure to chuse myself an heir, such only appear virtuous, whose weak nature confides to chastity. Every constitution cannot bear excess: want of courage occasions mildness, and lack of strength good temper; thus virtue is made a cloak to infirmity. But why do I thus willingly hamper myself with those cares Providence has been pleased to free me of?

'Leave the miser the knowing care,  
'Who'll succeed him, or be his heir;  
'That racks his soul with discontent,  
'Lest what he rak'd for should be spent.  
'His gold to him is far more dear,  
'Than all his friends or kindred near.'

Thus



Thus he holds the island from Providence: freely he bequeaths it to whom Providence shall think fit to bestow it upon; and that his heir may the better know the worth of the gift, he draws

a map of the whole estate; and made an inventory of every individual tenement, appurtenances, messuages, goods, and chattels; and also a draught of the terms and conditions he vis to hold the here-mentioned possessions upon; viz.

*Imprimis*, A fair and most pleasant island, richly stocked with fine trees, and adorned with several delightful groves, planted and improved by Nature, stored with choice and delicious roots and plants for food, bearing peas and beans; likewise a noble fish-pond, well stocked with divers sorts of curious fish; and a spacious wood, harbouring several sorts of wild-fowl, and beasts fit for a king's table.

*Item*, A dwelling commenced by Art, improved by Nature, and compleated by Time, which yearly keeps it in repair, as also it's furniture.

*Item*, The offices and appurtenances thereof, with the utensils thereunto belonging; which said island, dwelling, &c. are freehold, and clear from taxes; in no temporal dominion, therefore screened from any impositions, duties, and exactions; defended by Nature from invasions or assaults; guarded and supported by Providence. All which incomparable possessions are to be held upon the following terms, viz.

That whosoever shall be by Providence settled in this blessed abode, shall, morning and evening, constantly (unless prevented by ill weather or accident) attend at the east side of this island, and within the alcove Nature prepared for the lodgment of several harmonious echoes, and there pay his devotion; singing thanksgiving-psalms to the great Origin and Director of all things, whose praises he will have the comfort to hear repeated by melodious voices.

Next, he shall religiously observe and keep a seventh-day for worship only, from the rising of the sun till the going down thereof; therefore he shall, the day before, make all necessary provision for that day.

That he shall, after any tempestuous wind or storm, visit the sea at the outside of the rock, at the east, south, west, and north ends, in order to assist any one in distress.

He shall not be wasteful of any thing whatsoever, especially of any creature's life, killing no more than what is necessary for his health; but shall every day examine his nets, setting at liberty the overplus of his necessity, lest they should perish in their confinement.

He must also keep every thing in the same order and cleanness he shall find them in; till and manure the ground yearly; set and sow plants and seeds, fit for food, in their proper seasons.

Having written this at the bottom of the map he had drawn, being supper-time, he takes his meal; then goes to his usual evening devotion; and, after an hour's walk, to his bed, sleeping quietly all night, as being easy in his mind.

The next morning he takes his usual walks, and visits his nets. In that he had set for eagles, he found a fowl as big as a turkey, but the colour of a pheasant, only a tail like a partridge: this having no sign of being a bird of prey, he was loth to kill it; but having had no fresh meat for above a week, he yields to his appetite, and dresses it, eating part thereof for his dinner: it was very fat and plump, and eat much like a pheasant, but rather tenderer, and fuller of gravy.

Though he was very well pleased with the bird he had taken, yet he had rather it had been one of the eagles which kept his young antelopes in jeopardy: but as he could not destroy them with his net, which had hung a considerable time without the intended success, he projects the prevention of their increase, by destroying their eggs, leaving his nets wholly for the use they had been successful in; and searches the cliffs of the rock next to the sea, where those birds commonly build; where having found several nests, he takes away the eggs that were in them, being then their breeding time, and carries them home, in order to empty the shells, and hang them up and down in his habitation, amongst the green leaves which covered the ceiling thereof; but having accidentally broke

one, and the yolk and white thereof being like that of a turkey, he had the curiosity to boil one, and taste it, which eat much after the manner of a swan's: the rest he saved to eat now and then for a change, reaping a double advantage by robbing those birds; lessening thereby the damage they might do him in time, and adding a dish to his present fare.

In this prosperous way he lived fifteen years, finding no alteration in the weather or seasons, nor meeting in all the time with any transactions worthy of record: still performing his usual exercises, and taking his walks with all the content and satisfaction his happy condition could procure; intirely forsaking all thoughts and desires of ever quitting the blessed station he then had in his possession.

Thus having walked the island over and over, (which though delightful, yet the frequent repetition of the wonders it produces, renders them, as it were, common, and less admirable) he proceeds to view the sea, whose fluid element being ever in motion, daily affords new objects of admiration.

The day being very fair, and the weather as calm, he sat down upon the rock, taking pleasure in seeing the waves roll, and, as it were, chase one another; the next pursuing the first, on which it rides, when come at; and being itself overtaken by a succeeding, is also mounted on thus, wave upon wave, till come to a bulky body, too heavy for the undermost to bear, sunk all together. 'This,' said he, 'is a true emblem of ambition; men striving to outdo one another, are often undone.'

As he was making reflections on the emptiness of vanity and pride, returning Heaven thanks that he was separated from the world, which abounds in nothing else; a ship appears at a great distance, a sight he had not seen since his shipwreck. 'Unlucky invention!' said he, 'that thou should'st ever come into mens thoughts! The Ark, which gave the first notion of a floating habitation, was ordered for the preservation of man; but it's fatal copies daily expose him to destruction.' Having therefore returned Heaven thanks for his being out of those dangers, he makes a solemn vow, never to return into them again, though it were to gain the world. But his resolution

proved as brittle as his nature was frail: the men on board had spied him out with their perspective glasses; and supposing him to be shipwrecked, and to want relief, sent their long-boat with two men to fetch him away.

At their approach his heart alters it's motion; his blood stops from it's common course; his sinews are all stagnated; which intirely unfurms his reason, and makes him a stranger to his own inclination; which struggling with his wavering resolution, occasions a debate between hope and fear: but the boat, being come pretty nigh, gave hope the advantage, and his late resolution yields to his revived inclination; which being now encouraged by a probable opportunity of being answered, rushes on to execution. He now, quitting all his former reliance on Providence, depends altogether upon his getting away, blessing the lucky opportunity of seeing his blessed country again, for which pleasure he freely quits and forsakes all the happiness he enjoyed! gladly abandoning his delightful habitation, and plentiful island. He thinks no more of Providence; his mind is intirely taken up with his voyage. But disappointment, which often attends the greatest probabilities, snatches success out of his hand before he could grasp it, and intercepts his supposedly infallible retreat: the boat could not approach him, by reason of the rocks running a great way into the sea under water; nor could he come at the boat for sharp points, and deep holes, which made it unfordable, as well as unnavigable; so that after several hours striving in vain on both sides, to come at one another, the men, after they had strove all they could but to no purpose, said something to him in a rage, which he understood not, and went without him, more wretched now than he was when he was first cast away. His full dependance upon a retreat made him abandon all further reliance on Providence, whom then he could implore; but now, having ungratefully despised Heaven's bounties, which had been so largely bestowed on him, he has forfeited all hopes of assistance from thence, and expects none from the world. Thus destitute, and in the greatest perplexity, he cries out—'Whither shall I now fly for help? The world can give me none, and I dare not crave any more from Heaven. O cursed delusion! but rather cursed weakness!



‘weakness! Why did I give way to it? Had I not enough of the world, or was I grown weary of being happy?’ So saying, he falls a weeping. ‘Could I shed a flood of tears, sufficient to wash away my fault, or ease me of the remorse it does create! But why does my distracted fancy propose impossibilities? Is not the ocean sufficient to rid me of this wretched life? Then adieu, infectious world, thou magician of iniquity! The thoughts of which are now more offensive, than the most nauseous odour of an old sepulchre.’ Here he was going to cast himself into the sea; but a vast large monster, rising out of the water, with it’s terrible jaws wide open, looking at him in a most dreadful manner, stopped the execution of his desperate design. Thus, Death appearing in a different shape than he had proposed to meet him in, frightens away his resolution of dying. ‘I may,’ said he, ‘condemn myself; but vengeance belongs to God alone, who rejects not tears of repentance, but always extends his mercies towards the penitent; and since St. Peter, after thrice denying his LORD and MASTER, was, by repenting and weeping over his sin, received again into favour, I hope these my weak, but sincere tokens of repentance, will be accepted of, for ever divorcing myself from the world, and never thinking of it’s alluring pleasures, but to despise them.’ And, for the better performance of that pious resolution, he sets that woeful day apart (in which he was about to commit that fatal deed) for prayer and fasting. Thus he went home, and having eat nothing since the day before, he spent the remainder of that in fasting and praying; singing penitential psalms till dark night, that nature urged him to repose.

The pains and labour he had been at in the day, climbing up and down the rock, dragging himself to and fro, to come at the boat, having very much racked his limbs; and the disappointment of his full dependance on the late promising success, as also the tormenting remorse, and heavy grief, for his sinful reliance thereon, much fatiguing his mind, rendered sleep, which is ordained for the refreshment of nature, of no manner of help to him: his thoughts are continually disturbed with frightful visions; all his past dangers glare at him, as if threatening their return; but that which terrified

him most was, the frightful idea of the terrible monster which rose out of the sea at that instant he was going to plunge himself in it.

Being awaked out of his restless sleep, rather more fatigued than when he lay down, having still the terrible aspect of the sea-monster in his mind, he made several reflections on the execrable nature of his intended sin; admiring the immense goodness of Providence, who, to deter him from the committing of the enormous act, had ordered that (beyond imagination) terrible object, as the most suitable to the barbarity of his design, to strike into him that terror which the species of death he had fixed upon could not. Thus having with tears acknowledged the enormity of his resolution, he returns Providence thanks for it’s inestimable goodness, who (notwithstanding his late most ungrateful elopement) preserved him from eternal, as well as temporal ruin. Having paid his devotion, and sung a thanksgiving-psalm, he takes a little nourishment, his spirits being low with his past fatigue and fasting; and as he could not put out of his eyes the terrible aspect of the monster, which was beyond any chimerical conception, he resolves to draw it according to the idea he had in his mind. ‘Perhaps,’ said he, ‘having often the representation before mine eyes, it will make the object more familiar and less frightful.’ Taking, therefore, pen and ink, and a sheet of parchment—‘Now,’ said he, ‘how shall I represent what is past imagination to conceive? A form without likeness, and yet comparable to the most terrible part of every frightful creature; a large head, resembling that of a lion, bearing three pair of horns; one pair upright, like that of an antelope; another pair like a wild goat’s; two more bending backwards; it’s face armed all round with darts, like a porcupine; vast great eyes, sparkling like a flint struck with a steel; it’s nose like a wild horse, always snarling; the mouth of a lion, and teeth of a panther; the fences of an elephant, and the tusks of a wild boar; shouldered like a giant, with claws like an eagle; bodied and covered with shells like a rhinoceros, and the colour of a crocodile.’

Having likened every different part, he proceeds in the representation thereof; which being finished, put him in the greatest admiration. ‘Sure,’ said he, ‘if

'Nature had a hand in thy making, it was to assemble, in one creature, all the fiercest and dreadfulest animals that are most frightful and terrible! Now, perhaps, this being constantly before me, may come less in my mind.' Then fixing it against his wall—'This,' said he, 'will be also a memorandum of my late vow, never to endeavour to wish to go from hence, whatever opportunity offers, though attended with ever so great a probability of success, and prospect of gain;' fully settling his whole mind and affection on the state and condition Heaven had been pleased to place him in: resolving to let nothing enter into his thoughts, but his most grateful duty to so great a benefactor, who had so often and miraculously rescued him from death.

Thus having entirely banished the world out of his mind, which before often disturbed it, he limits his thoughts within the bounds of his blessed possession, which affords him more than is sufficient to make his life happy; where plenty flows on him, and pleasure attends his desires; abounding in all things that can gratify his appetite, or delight his fancy. A herd of delightful antelopes, bounding and playing about his habitation, divert him at home; and in his walks he is entertained with the harmony of divers kinds of singing birds; every place he comes at offers him new objects for pleasure: thus all seems to concur in compleating his happiness.

In this most blessed state he thinks himself as Adam before his fall, having no room for wishes, only that every thing may continue in it's present condition; but it cannot be expected, that fair weather, which smiles on his beauty, will not change. The sun must go it's course, and the seasons take their turn; which considerations must, for the present, admit some small care. He is naked, and his tender constitution susceptible of the cold; therefore the cloaths he was cast away in being worn out, he is obliged to think of providing something to defend his limbs from the hardness of the approaching winter, whilst it is yet warm. Having considered what to make a wrapper of, he concludes upon using some of the same grass he made his mats of, on which he lay, being soft and warm, very fit for that purpose: of this he cuts down a sufficient quantity, which, when ready to work, he makes small twine with, and

plaits it in narrow braids, which he sews together with some of the same, and shapes a long loose gown, that covered him to his heels, and a cap of the same.

By that time he had finished his winter-garb, the weather was grown cold enough for him to put it on. The frosty season came on apace, in which there fell such a quantity of snow, that he was forced to make a broom, and sweep it away from about his habitation twice a day; as also the same he made to the places he had occasion to go to, tossing the snow on each side, which, before the winter was over, met a-top, and covered it all the way; which obliged him to keep within doors for a considerable time, and melt snow instead of water; lest, going for some, he might chance to be buried among the snow.

The winter being over, and the snow dissolved, the gay spring advances apace, offering nature it's usual assistance, repairing the damages the late frost had done; which joyful tidings made every thing smile. Quarll also, finding himself revived, took his former walks, which the preceding bad weather had kept him from, though there had been no considerable storm the winter before.

He having a mind to view the sea, and being come to the outside of the north-west end of the rock, sees at the foot thereof something like part of the body of a large hollow tree, the ends whereof were stopped with it's own pitch; and the middle, which was slit open from end to end, and kept gaping by a stick laid across.

This put him in mind of canoes, with which the Indians paddle up and down their lakes and rivers; and being on that side of the rock next to the island of California, he fancied some of them were come to visit this island, though not many in number; their canoes holding, at the most, but two men; and, for the generality, one only: yet, as some of these people are accounted great thieves, daily robbing one another, he hastens home to secure what he had; but it was too late: they had been there already, and had taken away the cloaths he found in the chest; which being, by far, too little for him, hung carelessly on a pin behind his door. Had they been contented with that, he would not have regarded it; but they carried away some of his curious jewels, and, what grieved him most, the



fine bird he had taken such pains to dress and stuff, and care to preserve; as also his bow and arrows.

Having missed these things, which he much valued, he hastens to the outside of the rock, with his long staff in his hand, in hopes to overtake them before they could get into their canoe; but happened to go too late, they being already got near half a league from the rock. Yet they did not carry away their theft: for there arising some wind, it made the sea somewhat rough, and overfet their canoe; so that what was in it was all lost but the two Indians, who most dextrously turned it on it's bottom again, and with surprising activity, leaped into it, one at the one side, and the other at the opposite; so that the canoe being trimmed at once, they paddled out of sight.

Having seen as much of them as he could, he walks to the north-east side, in order to discover the effect of the high wind which happened the night before.

Being come to the outside of the rock, he perceives at a distance something like a large chest, but having no lid on it. Taking that to be the product of some late shipwreck, he grieved at the fatal accident. 'How long,' reflected he, 'will covetousness decoy men to pursue wealth, at the cost of their precious lives? Has not Nature provided every nation and country a sufficiency for it's inhabitants? that they will rove on this most dangerous and boisterous sea, which may be titled—"Death's Dominion;" many perishing therein, and not one on it being safe.'

As he was bewailing their fate, who he imagined had been cast away, he sees two men come down the rock, with each a bundle in his arm, who went to that which he had taken to be a chest; and, having put their load in it, pushed it away till come to deeper water: then, having got in it, with a long staff shoved it off, till they could row to a long-boat that lay at some distance behind a jetting part of the rock, which screened it from his sight, as also the ship it belonged to.

The sight of this much amazed him, and made him cease condoling others supposed loss, to run home and examine his own; well knowing those bundles he saw carried away, must needs belong to him; there being no other moveables in the island but what were in his lodge.

Being come home, he finds indeed what he suspected; those villains had most

sacrilegiously rifled and ransacked his habitation, not leaving him so much as one of the mats to keep his poor body from the ground. His winter garb also is gone, and what else they could find for their use.

The loss of those things, which he could not be without, filled him with sorrow. 'Now,' said he, 'I am in my first state of being; naked I came into the world, and naked I shall go out of it: at which he fell a weeping.

Having grieved a while—"Why," said he, 'should I thus cast myself down? Is not Providence, who gave me them, able to give me more?' Thus, having resolved before winter to replenish his loss, he rests himself contented, and gives the ruffians evil action the best construction he could. 'Now I think on it,' said he, 'these surely are the men, who, about twelve months since, would charitably have carried me hence, but could not, for want of necessary implements; and now, being better provided, came to accomplish their hospitable design; but, not finding me, supposing I was either dead or gone, took away what was here of no use: much good may what they have got do them, and may it be of as much use to them as it was to me.' Thus walks out in order to cut grass to dry, and make himself new bedding, and a winter-garb,

Having walked about half a mile, he perceives the same men coming towards the pond. 'Heaven be praised!' said he, 'here they be still. Now, when they see I am not gone, nor willing to go, they will return my things, which they are sensible I cannot do without; with which words he goes up to them.

By this time they had caught the two old ducks, which, being pinioned, could not fly away as the rest did. He was much vexed to see the best of his stock thus taken away; yet as he thought they were come to do him service, he could grudge them nothing, that would any wise gratify so good an intent. But having returned them thanks for their good-will, he told them he was very happy in the island, and had made a vow never to go out of it.

These being Frenchmen, and of an employment where politeness is of little use, being fishermen, and not understanding what he said, only laughed in his face, and went on to the purpose they came about: then having as many

of

of the ducks as they could get, they proceeded towards the house where they had seen the antelopes; some of which not running away at their approach, they proposed to catch hold of them.

Being come to the place where they used to feed, which was near the dwelling, the young ones, not being used to to see any men in cloaths, nor any body but their master, presently fled; but the two old ones, which he had bred up, were so tame, that they stood still; only when the men came to them, they kept close to him, which gave the men opportunity to lay hold of them; when, notwithstanding Quarll's repeated intreaties, they tied a halter about their horns, and barbarously led them away.

Quarll was grieved to the heart to see his darlings, which he had taken such care to breed up, and which were become the principal part of his delight, following him up and down; and which, by their jumping and playing before him, often dispersed melancholy thoughts; notwithstanding all these endearing qualifications, thus hauled away; he weeps, and on his knees begs they may be left; and, though they understood not his words, his actions were so expressive and moving, that had they had the humanity of canibals, who eat one another, they would have yielded to so melting an object as the poor broken-hearted Quarll was; but the inflexible boors went on, cruelly hauling and dragging the poor creatures; which, as if sensible of the barbarity of the act, looked back to their afflicted master, as craving his assistance; which, at last, so exasperated him, that he was several times tempted to lay on the ravishers with his long staff; but as often was stopped by the following consideration. 'Shall I,' said he, 'be the destruction of my fellow-creatures, to rescue out of their hands animals of which I have an improving store left, and deprive them of their healths, and perhaps of their lives, to recover what cost me nought? Let them go with what they have, and the merit of their deed be their reward.' Thus he walks about melancholy, bemoaning his poor antelopes fate, and his own misfortune: 'They were used to liberty,' said he, 'which they now are deprived of, and for which they will pine and die, which,

'for their sake, I cannot but wish; for life without liberty is a continual death.'

As he was walking, thinking (as it is usual, after the loss of any thing one loves) of the pleasure he had during the enjoyment, the ruffians, having secured the poor animals, came back with ropes in their hands. 'What do they want next?' said he, 'have they not all they desire; would they carry away my habitation also? Sure they have no design on my person: if so, they will not take it so easily as they did my dear antelopes.' Thus he resolved to exercise his quarter-staff, if they offered to lay hands on him. The villains, whose design was to bind him, and so carry him away, seeing him armed and resolute, did not judge it safe for them to advance within the reach of his weapon, but keep at some distance, divining how to seize him.

Quarll, who, by their consulting, guessed at their design, not thinking proper to let them come to a resolution, makes at the nearest, who immediately takes to his heels; and then to the next, who immediately does the same. Thus he follows them about for a considerable time: but they divided, in order to tire him with running, till the night approaching, and the wind rising, made them fear their retreat might be dangerous, if they deferred it; so that they went clear away: which being all he desired, he returned, as soon as he saw them in the long-boat, that they rowed to their ship, which lay at anchor some distance from the rocks.

These wretches being gone, he returns Heaven thanks for his deliverance; and as his bridge had favoured their coming, he pulls it off, and only laid it over when he had a mind to view the sea, and goes home to eat a bit, having not as yet broken his fast. Having, therefore, eaten some of his roots and cheese, and being wearied with hunting these boors, he consults how to lie, his bed and bedding being gone, as also his winter-gown, and the nights being, as yet, cold: however, after a small time of consideration, he concludes to lie in the lodge, which was left vacant by the stolen antelopes absence; whose litter being made of the same grass as his mats were, he lay both soft and warm.

When



When laid down, being sorely fatigued, he soon fell asleep; and as the plunderers had the preceeding day took up his carés, they filled his mind in the night; he has them continually before his eyes, sometimes with his beloved antelopes in their pilfering hands; at other times barbarously hauling them by their horns with a halter, which they ought to have about their own necks. These acts of austerity provoking his anger, and urging him on to revenge, he lifts his staff, which on a sudden is turned into Hercules's club. Startled to see that wonderful change, he stops from laying on the intended blow: 'Rescuing,' said he, 'my darling animals, I shall lose my precious and inestimable peace of mind. What can atone for the life of a man?' Whilst he was making these reflections, the men got clear away with the fowls and antelopes, leaving him in deep melancholy. Thus, as he was bewailing his loss, calling to mind the agreeable pastimes they had often been to him, and the many anxious hours he had dispersed with their diversion, a gentlewoman appeared before him, of a most agreeable, yet grave countenance, dressed in plain dove-coloured cloaths, in most places threadbare, and in others patched with divers sorts of stuffs, yet genteel and becoming. He starts at her appearing, wondering what she could come for, having nothing more to lose. 'I come not,' said she, 'to seek ought from thee, but to restore what thou hast lost.' He, being overjoyed at the words, looks about, expecting his beloved antelopes, and what else the men had taken away; but, seeing nothing, he thought that vision proceeded from vapours, which the great grief for his late loss had occasioned; and falls a thinking, till he was a second time interrupted by her, bidding him look her in the face. 'Be satisfied, be satisfied, woman,' said he: 'why, I neither know thee, nor what thou meanest.' — 'Well then,' replied she, 'I'll inform thee of both; I am Patience, whom all the world strive to grieve, and whom none can provoke; and what I promise to restore thee is Content, which thou throwest away after worthless things.'

So she vanishes. At which he awakes.

Having made reflections upon the latter part of his dream, the first part thereof being but a repetition of what happened the day before, he makes this

application. 'This,' said he, 'is a check for my discomposing that peace upon such a frivolous account, which by Providence was intended I should enjoy, having supplied me with all necessaries to maintain it.' He therefore makes a resolution never to be vexed, let what will happen; but with patience submit to the will of God, who has the direction of all things. Then, having paid his usual devotion, he goes into the kitchen, in order to breakfast, and afterwards to take his customary walk. Whilst he was eating, there arose a noise in the air, as proceeding from a quantity of rooks, jackdaws, crows, and such like birds, whose common notes he was acquainted with; and as the noise approached, he had the curiosity to go and see what was the matter, but was prevented by the coming of a large fowl, which flew over his head, as he was going out. He turned back to gaze at the bird, whose beauty seized him with admiration; the pleasure of seeing so charming a creature quite put out of his mind the curiosity of looking from whence proceeded the disagreeable noise without; which ceasing as soon as the bird was sheltered, made him imagine those carrion birds had been chasing that beautiful fowl, which, seeing itself out of danger, stood still, very calm and composed; which gave him the opportunity of making a discussion of every individual agreement which composed so delightful an object. It was about the bigness and form of a swan, almost headed like it, only the bill was not so long, nor so broad, and red like coral; his eyes like those of a hawk, his head of a mazarine blue, and on the top of it a tuft of shining gold-coloured feathers, which spread over it, hanging near three inches beyond, all round; it's breast, face, and part of it's neck, milk-white, curiously speckled with small black spots, a gold-coloured circle about it; it's back and neck behind of a fine crimson, speckled with purple; it's legs and feet the same colour as it's bill; it's tail long and round, spreading like that of a peacock, composed of six rows of feathers, all of different colours, which made a most delightful mixture.

Having spent several minutes in admiring the bird, he lays peas, and crumbled roots, both roasted and boiled, before it; as also, water in a shell, with drawing, to give it liberty to eat and drink;

drink; and stood out peeping to see what it would do: which, being alone, having looked about, picks a few peas, and drinks heartily; then walks towards the door, in a composed and easy manner, much like that of a cock.

Quarll, being at the outside, was dubious whether he should detain him, or let him go; his affection for that admirable creature equally prompts him to both: he cannot bear the thoughts of parting with so lovely an object, nor harbour that of depriving it of it's liberty, which it so implicitly intrusted him withal. Thus, after a small pause, generosity prevails over self-pleasure. 'Why should I,' said he, 'make the place of it's refuge it's prison?' He therefore makes room for it to go, which, with a slow pace, walks out; and having looked about a small time, mounts up a considerable height, and then takes it's course north-west.

The bird being gone out of sight, he made reflections on the adventure, which he judges to be a prognostic of some rebellion or revolution in Europe: whereupon, having recommended his native country to the protection of Heaven, begging a continuation of peace, and an end of those unhappy divisions, which often prove the ruin of nations; he goes and sets down, in the memorial-book, the transactions of that year, being 1689, and the 15th since his being in the island, which proved more fruitful in events than any of the preceeding. The picture which he had drawn of the terrible sea-monster, being against his wall, having accustomed him to the frightful object that constantly disturbed his mind, he draws that of the two ruffians, committing their barbarity, and hangs it by the place; the idea whereof being to him more terrible than the preceeding, he could not suffer it to be long in his sight; but takes it down, and draws on the backside of it, the villains on a gibbet. 'Now,' said he, 'this being what ought to be the end and explanation of the history, shall now be the right side of the picture.'

There happening nothing the remainder of the year, worthy of record, he employs it in his customary occupations; as pruning and watering his lodge and dairy, making his mats to lie on, as also his winter-garb; every day milking his antelopes and goats; making now and

then butter and cheese, attending his nets, and such like necessary employments.

The mean time, the French mariners, who probably got money by what they had taken from him the year before, returned, it being much about the same season; and being resolved to take him away, and all they could make any thing of, out of the island, were provided with hands and implements to accomplish their design; as ropes to bind what they could get alive, and guns to shoot what they could not come at; saws and hatchets to cut down logwood and brazil, pick-axes and shovels to dig up orris-roots, and others of worth, which they imagined the island produced; likewise flat-bottomed boats to tow in shallow water, where others could not come; and thus by degrees to load their ship with booty. But ever-watchful Providence blasted their evil projects, and confounded their devices, at the very instant they thought themselves sure of success. Their implements in a flat-bottomed boat were towed to the very foot of the rock, by a young fellow, who being lighter than a man, was thought fittest to go with the tools, which pretty well loaded the boat.

Their materials being landed, to their great satisfaction, the men on board embarked in two more of the same sort of boats; but were no sooner in them, but a storm arose, which dashed their slender bottom to pieces, and washed them into the sea, in which they perished, oversetting also the flat-bottomed boat on shore, with the load, and the lad underneath it.

The storm being over, which lasted from about eight in the morning till almost twelve at noon, Quarll, according to his custom, went to see if he could perceive any damage done by the late tempest, and if any, distressed by it, stood in want of help.

Being at that side of the rock he used to visit, he could see nothing but a few fishes and shells the sea had left in the cliffs. 'If this,' said he, 'be all the damage that has been done, make me thankful; it will recruit me with fresh fish and utensils.' Going to the N. W. part, where he sees a battered boat, floating with the keel upwards—'This,' said he, 'bodes some mischief; but thought it not to be of any consequence. Having gone about fifty yards farther, he espies a small barrel at the foot of the rock.



rock, with several planks and fragments of a ship, floating with the tide. 'Alas,' said he, 'these are too evident proofs of a shipwreck, to hope otherwise.' As he was looking about, he hears a voice cry out, much like that of a man, at some distance, behind a part of the rock. Being advanced a small matter beyond where he was—'Heaven be praised!' says he, 'there is somebody whom I am luckily come to save, and he most fortunately come to be my companion: I cannot but rejoice at the event, though I heartily grieve for the accident.' Hastening to the place where he thought the cries came from, which, as he advanced, he could discern to be too shrill for a man's voice—'Certainly,' says he, 'this must be some woman by the noise.' This sets his blood a glowing; his heart alters it's motion: 'Now,' said he, joyful, 'Providence has compleated my happiness; I shall have a companion, and a help-mate; and goes on with fresh vigour, as though he had recovered his strength, and got new limbs: the rough and savage rock, which was before, in a manner, inaccessible, is now made easy to walk: he climbs the highest places with activity, and goes down the steep as nimbly; and soon arrived where he judged the person to be: yet, seeing nothing but what he took to be a chest, began to be disheartened. 'Sure,' said he, 'this is not a second illusion, to decoy my fancy after what is not to be had!' Thus his joy on a sudden turned into a deep melancholy; but the creature underneath, who, having heard some noise near at hand, ceased crying, to listen; yet, seeing nobody come, cries out again somewhat louder than before.

This revived him quite, and recalled his hopes: 'It is a woman,' said he, 'and in that chest;' when, going to break it open, he stops on a sudden: 'What am I going to do? How do I know the cause of her being thus locked up? Though women are, in a manner, become a merchandize, yet they never are packed up or chested: she must be in there for a punishment, which in some countries is inflicted on witches.' The boy, who heard a voice, calls out in French, which Quarll not understanding, he was afraid to let him out; but his mentioning Christ being intelligible to him, made him change his opinion. 'For Christ's sake, doth

she say? That holy name witches seldom make use of; however, in that name I'll let her out. If she be under condemnation, was I not so? Had she by Heaven been decreed to die, she would not have been here.' At which words, with his staff he endeavoured to break that which he took to be the lid of the chest, but proved to be the bottom; and, as he was striking, the boy underneath, calling to him to turn it up, thrust his hand under the side, which he perceiving, though he understood him not, stood still. Finding his mistake—'This,' said he, 'is a flat-bottomed boat, such as the Frenchmen used the year before, when they came and plundered me. Now, am I safe, if I turn it up? Doubtless they are come in great numbers.' Pausing awhile, and the lad (whom he took to be a woman) still continuing his moan, he was moved to compassion; and, having considered the boat could not hold any great number, he ventures. 'Let what will come on it, or who will be under, for the poor woman's sake I'll relieve them; there cannot be many men. However, I'll let but one out at a time: if he be mischievous, I am able to deal with him.' At this, he puts the end of the staff where he had seen the hand, and lifts it up about a foot from the ground: out of the opening immediately creeps the boy, who on his knees falls a begging and weeping, expecting death every moment, as being the merited punishment for the evil purpose he came about. Quarll, who expected there was a woman besides, fearing the gap the youth came out at would be too uneasy for her to come through, made motions for the boy to help him, in order to set the boat on it's bottom; which he did. Quarll, seeing the implements instead of the woman, was as much vexed as disappointed. His countenance changes; sometimes he looks at the things, and then at the boy; who seeing him appear angry, thought of nothing but present death, and again falls on his knees, holding up his hands, almost drowned in tears, begging for mercy in such a moving manner, that Quarll could not forbear shedding some tears; and though the late disappointment of his proposed happiness, and the sight of the preparations made for his intended ruin, had moved him to anger against that mercenary nation, he helped the young fellow up by the hand; and the

Night

night coming on apace, he takes one of the hatchets that lay by, and gave another to the boy, than falls a knocking the boat to pieces, and directed him to do the same; which he accordingly did.

The boat being demolished, they carried the boards higher up on the rock, as also the rest of the things; lest, in the night, some storm should rise, which might wash them back into the sea, it being then too late to bring them away. Having done, they each of them took up what they could carry, and so went home. The young Frenchman, finding a kinder treatment than either he deserved or expected, was extraordinarily submissive and tractable, which made Quarll the more kind and mild; and, instead of condemning his evil attempt, he commiserated his misfortune, and in room of resentment shewed him kindness. Thus, having given him of what he had to eat, he puts him to bed in his lodge, wherein he lay, till he had got his mats made up; then went to bed himself, but could not sleep for thinking of his late disappointment, which intercepted those pleasures he so much depended on, thinking himself sure of a female partner, who, in sharing happiness with him, would have much added to his bliss.

Having tossed and tumbled a considerable time, he begins to be heavy spirited; nature is fatigued, and must be refreshed. Thus he falls asleep; and, as his hopes the preceding day had indulged his desire, his mind is so impressed in the night with the idea of a female object, that he dreams he has her by his side, condoling her for the dangers she has gone through, congratulating her lucky escape, and greeting her happy arrival into so blessed an abode.

Thus expressing his joy, in possessing the only object which could complete his happiness, with all the softness and eloquence the most passionate love can impress, he reaches out his arms to embrace the lovely phantom his inclination had bred in his imagination; but, having groped awhile, and finding nothing, he starts out of his sleep at this most shocking disappointment.

Being awaked, the late delusive pleasures called to his mind the real, which he had formerly enjoyed, and which he did then hanker after: 'What is man,' said he, 'without that part of himself, out of which God made him a mate? Adam, though possessing all the world,

' was still wanting, till he had a woman to keep him company.' In this melancholy disposition he again falls asleep, and dreams afresh; in which his imagination gluts his inclination with those pleasures it so much desired. Fruition, to him, is but like liquor to a man sick of a violent fever, which only for a minute quenches his heat, but augments the distemper, and at last destroys the patient. Excessive love is but short-lived; what is violent is not lasting; time with pleasure runs fast away, but dwells long with sorrow; cares weaken love, and indifferences breed discontent; the jarrings follow, which introduce Division, the mother of Poverty.

These dismal accidents, incident to inconsiderate love, coming into the amorous dreamer's mind, his great heat being quenched, he took time to consider his condition; and, seeing himself liable to them, is struck with such a fear, as blots all pleasures out of his thoughts, and fills them with dread of future cares, which he unadvisedly run himself into, and all for the sake of a short pleasure.

Starting out of his sleep at the approach of those sad troubles, he returns Heaven thanks that it was but a dream; and begs pardon for having given so much way to the concupiscence of the flesh; getting up, though sooner than ordinary, lest he should fall asleep, and dream again of women.

Having walked about till he thought it time for the boy to rise, he calls him up, and takes him to the place that he usually went every morning and evening to sing psalms; where the youth being come, and hearing so many different voices, and seeing nobody, was scared out of his wits, and took to his heels, making towards the rock as fast as he could; but as he was not acquainted with the easiest and most practicable parts thereof, Quarll had made an end of his psalm, and overtook him before he could get to the sea-side, into which he certainly would have cast himself, at the fright; but Quarll, who, by the boy's staring, guessed his disorder, not having the benefit of the language, endeavoured to calm him by his pleasing countenance, and prevented his drowning himself; but could not keep off a violent fit the fright had occasioned, which held him several minutes.

The fit being over, he and the boy took away at divers times the remains of the



the chest, and of what was in it, which they could not carry home the day before. Then taking up two guns—'Now,' said he, 'these unlucky instruments, which were intended for destruction, shall be employed for the preservation of that they were to destroy.' Taking them to his lodge, he sets them at each side of the door; then it being dinner-time, he strikes a light, and sets the boy to make a fire, whilst he made some of the fish fit to fry, which he picked up upon the rock the evening before; then takes dripping, he saved when he roasted any flesh, to fry with them. The boy, who had lived some time in Holland, where they used much butter, seeing dripping employed in room thereof, thought to please his master in making some; and as he had seen milk and cream in the dairy arbour, wanting a churn only, there being a small runlet lying by empty, he takes one of the ends of it, in which, the next day, he beat butter.

Quarll, seeing the youth industrious, begins to fancy him, notwithstanding the aversion he had conceived for his nation, ever since the ill treatment he had received from his countrymen; and, as speech is one of the most necessary faculties to breed and maintain fellowship, he took pains to teach him English.

The lad, being acute and ingenious, was soon made to understand it, and in six months capable to speak it sufficiently, so as to give his master a relation of his late coming, and to what intent. 'The men,' said he, 'who about one year since carried away from hence some antelopes, with extraordinary ducks, and several rarities, which they said belonged to a monstrous English hermit, whose hair and beard covered all his body, having got a great deal of money by shewing them, encouraged others to come; whereupon several, joining together, hired a ship to fetch away the hermit, and what else they could find; therefore brought with them tools, and guns, to shoot what they could not take alive.'—'Barbarous wretches!' replied he, 'to kill my dear antelopes and ducks! Pray, what did they intend to do with me?'—'Why,' said the boy, 'to make a shew of you.'—'To make a shew of me! Sordid wretches! Is a Christian then such a rarity amongst them? Well, and what were the saws and hatchets for?'—'To cut down your

house, which they intended to make a drinking booth of.'—'Ho, monstrous! what time and nature has been fifteen years a compleating, they would have ruined in a moment; well, thanks to Providence, their evil design is averted. Pray, what is become of those sacrilegious persons?'—'They are all drowned,' said the boy. 'Then,' replies he, 'the Heavens are satisfied, and I avenged. But how camest thou to escape? for thou wast with them.'—'No,' replied the youth, 'I was upon the rock when their boat was dashed against it, and was overset with the same sea, under the flat-bottomed boat, where you found me.'—'That was a happy overset for thee. Well, is there no gratitude due to Providence for thy escape?'—'Due to Providence!' said he; 'why, I thought you had saved me.' 'I'm sure you let me out.'—'Yes,' replied Quarll; 'but I was sent by Providence for that purpose.'—'That was kindly done too,' said the boy: 'well, when I see him, I will thank him: doth he live hereabout?'—'Poor ignorant creature!' replied Quarll; 'why Providence is every where. What! didst thou never hear of Providence? What religion art thou?'—'Religion!' answered the youth; 'I don't know what you mean: I am a fisherman by trade, which my father lived by.'—'Well,' said Quarll, 'did he teach thee nothing else? no prayers?'—'Prayers' replied the lad: 'why, fishermen have no time to pray; that's for them who have nothing else to do: poor folks must work, and get money; that's the way of our town.'—'Covetous wretches!' 'Well,' said he, 'I grudge them not what they possess, since it is all the happiness they aspire at; but thou shalt learn to pray, which will be of far more advantage to thee than work, both here and hereafter.' From which time he begins to teach him the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments; as also the principles of the Christian religion; all which instructions the youth taking readily, won his affection the more. He likewise taught him to sing psalms, which farther qualified him to be his companion in spiritual exercises, as well as in temporal occupations.

Now, having company, he is obliged to enlarge his bed, the lodge being wanting for his antelopes against breeding-time: he adds, therefore, to his mats,

N<sup>o</sup> 2 His

His other provisions also wanting to be augmented, and he having both tools and boards, out of the flat boat which he had taken to pieces, he and the lad went about making large boxes to salt flesh and fish in; then, with the boards that were left, they made a table for his dwelling that he had before, and one for his kitchen; as also shelves in the room of those that were made of wicker: then, having recruited his shell-utensils that were stolen the year before, he was completely furnished with all manner of conveniencies; and, Providence supplying him daily with other necessities, there was no room left him for wishes, but for thanksgiving, which they daily most religiously paid.

In this most happy state they lived in peace and concord the space of ten years, unanimously doing what was to be done, as it lay in each of their ways, without relying on one another.

Quarll, who before, though alone and deprived of society, (the principal comfort of life) thought himself blessed, now cannot express his happiness, there being none in the world to be compared to it, heartily praying he might find no alteration till death: but the young man, not having met with so many disappointments in the world as he, had not quite withdrawn his affection from it; his mind sometimes will run upon his native country, where he has left his relations, and where he cannot help wishing to be himself: thus, opportunity offering itself one day, as he went to get oysters, to make sauce for some fresh cod-fish which Quarll was dressing, he saw, at a distance, a ship, at which his heart fell a panting; his pulses double their motion; his blood grows warmer and warmer; till at last, inflamed with desire of getting at it, he lays down the bag he brought to put the oysters in, as also the instrument to dredge them up with, and takes to swimming. The men on board having espied him out, sent their boat to take him up; so he went away without taking his leave of him he had received so much good from; who, having waited a considerable time, fearing some accident would befall him, leaves his cooking, and goes to see for him; and, being come at the place where he was to get the oysters, he sees the bag and instruments lie and nobody with them. Having called several times without being answered, various racking fears tortured his mind; some-

times he doubts he is fallen in some hole in the rock, there being many near that place where the oysters were; he therefore with his staff, which he always carried with him when he went abroad, at the other side of the rock grabbed in every one round the place; and, feeling nothing, he concludes some sea-monster had stolen him away, and, weeping, condemns himself as the cause of this fatal accident; resolving, for the future, to punish himself by denying his appetite; and only eat to support nature, and not to please his palate.

Having given over hopes of getting him again, he returns home in the greatest affliction, resolving to fast till that time the next day; but happening to look westward, in which was the point the wind stood, he perceives something like a boat at a great distance; wiping the tears off his eyes, and looking stedfastly, he discovers a sail beyond it, which quite altered the motive of his former fear: 'No monster,' said he, 'hath devoured him; it is too plain a case, that he hath villainously left me: but what could I expect of his son, who had projected such evil against me?' So saying, he went home, and made an end of dressing his dinner; and afterwards hangs up the picture which he had taken down upon his account, being the true emblem of what he deserved; resting himself contented, being but as he was before, and rather better; since he had more conveniencies, and tools to till his ground, and dig up his roots with. Having recommended himself to Providence, he resumes his usual works and recreations, resolving that no cares shall mar his happiness for the future, being out of all those irresistible temptations way, in which the world abounds, and daily lays the best men's hopes in the dust.

Being again alone, the whole business of the house lies upon his hands; he now must prune and trim his habitation, that daily harbours him, being made of fine growing plants, which yearly shoot out young branches: this makes them grow out of shape. He must also till the ground; set and gather his pease and beans in their season; milk and feed his antelopes daily; make butter and cheese at proper times; dig up his roots; fetch in fuel and water when wanted; attend his nets; go eagle-nesting; and every day dress his own victuals: all which necessary occupations,



occupations, besides the time dedicated for morning and evening devotions, kept him wholly employed; which made his renewed solitude less irksome. And, having walked all that afternoon to divert his thoughts, admired all the way the wonderful works of Nature, both in the surprising rocks which surrounded the island, and in the delightful creatures, and admirable plants, that are in it. Being weary with walking, he returns home, thanking kind Providence for settling him in so blessed a place; and in his way calls at his invisible choir; where, having sung a thanksgiving psalm, and his usual evening hymn, he goes to supper, and then to bed, with a thoroughly contented mind; which occasions pleasant dreams, to entertain his thoughts.

During his sleep, his fancy is delighted with being in Nature's garden of pleasure, where none but her friends are permitted to enter.

The place appeared very spacious, and of an admirable form; full of all sorts of Nature's works, both animals, vegetables, and minerals, every individual thing in perfection: and though some were distant, yet all appeared as at hand.

The lofty trees, which stood on a level ground, covered with curious grass, embalmed with many different-coloured flowers, exceeding in beauty any carpet that the most expert artist could make, spread their branchy arms over creatures of all kinds, which lay beneath their delightful shades: there the bold lion lies by the innocent lamb; the fierce panther near the harmless sheep; the ravenous wolf with the mild goat; leopard and deer, tyger and hare, reposed together in peace; on the trees, eagles, vultures, falcons, and hawks, quietly perched with the turtle and the dove.

These most agreeable objects, joined with the delightful noise of the fountains falling into their basins, and the purling streams running their course, together with the various harmonious notes of divers kinds of singing-birds, put him into an ecstasy: 'Sure,' said he, 'this is the garden of Eden, out of which unfortunate Adam was cast after his fall, as being a dwelling only for innocence!'

Having walked a little way, there being on every side curious lanes, every one affording new objects of admiration,

he comes to a walk, edged with orange and lemon trees, full of fruit and blossoms, at the foot of which was a narrow bank bordered with jonquils, tuberoses, hyacinths, and other delightful flowers, both for sight and smell. At the end of it there was an arbour of the same, but so beautiful, that, at first sight, he took it for a tapestry the most expert artist had exerted himself in making, to shew the curiosity of trade, and greatness of his skill: in it there sat three ladies of uncommon beauty; the middlemost, who was the lustiest, appeared to be the eldest, being of a most sedate countenance, a moderate number of years having both established her judgment, and settled her features: she, at her right-hand, seemed to be of a weaker constitution; she had in her hand an olive-branch bearing fruit, which, when gathered, was immediately succeeded with blossoms; so that it never was without the one or the other: the lady who sat on the left-side was more jolly and gay, yet looked somewhat careful: she had in her hand a long vessel, broad at one end, and sharp at the other, like a horn, bending towards the point, full of all sorts of fruits.

Having stood still a short space of time, looking at those ladies, thinking it ill manners to interrupt their conversation; they, perceiving his modesty, would not permit him to advance, rose up, and went another way, to give him the opportunity of viewing the garden: he accordingly went quite round, till come to the place where he had begun his walk; where he saw a stately cock of an extraordinary size, strutting from animal to animal, taking from most of them something whilst they were asleep; which having secured, he falls a crowing in such a loud manner, that he startled all the other creatures; which, being awake, and every one missing something, challenged him with it: but he, having crowed a second time in an insulting and daring manner, strutted most haughtily away; at which the losers, being much offended, consulted together on means to retake by force what he had in so clandestine a manner taken from them, chusing the lion for their director; but the watchful cock, which, whilst they were indulging themselves, carefully made sufficient provision to maintain what he had done, bid them all defiance.

There happening a great noise of squeeling,

squeeling, it waked him out of his dream; and his mind being impressed with notions of war, it at first seized him with terror! but being somewhat settled, and the noise still continuing, he perceived it proceeded from the two different kinds of monkeys in the island, which were fighting for the wild pomegranates that the high wind had shook off the trees the preceding night, which was very boisterous.

Having guessed the occasion of their debate, he gets up, in order to go and quell their difference, by dividing amongst them the cause thereof: getting up, he opens the door; at the outside of which, an old monkey of each sort were quietly waiting his levee, to entice him to come, as he once before did, and put an end to their bloody war.

He was not a little surprized to see two such inveterate enemies, who at other times never meet without fighting, at that juncture agree so well.

That most surprising sign of reason in those brutes, which, knowing his decision would compose their comrades difference, came to implore it, put him upon these reflections—'Would princes,' said he, 'be but reasonable, as those which by nature are irrational, how much blood and money might be saved!' Having admired the uneasiness of those poor creatures, which still went a few steps forward, and then backward to him, he was in hopes to decoy one or both into his lodge, by throwing meat to them: but those exemplary animals, hearing their fellows in trouble, had no regard to their separate interest, taking no notice of what he gave them; but kept moving to-and-again with all the tokens of uneasiness they could express; which so moved him, that he hastened to the place, where his presence caused immediately a cessation of arms, and each party moved a considerable distance off each other, waiting his sharing the wind-falls; which being done, they quietly took that heap which lay next each kind, and went to their different quarters.

This accident, which in some manner made out his dream of wars, brought it also fresh into his mind, which was full of cares about his country, which he much feared, if any should happen in Europe, would be involved therein; and calling to remembrance the indigent disposition he left it in, he feared it would lay it open to some usurping prince's

power: but lest farther speculation should occasion evil prognostication to disturb his peace, he leaves the event of all things to the direction of Providence, and goes home to set down his dream, and the year he dreamed it, which was in 1690.

Fourteen years more being past, every thing keeping it's natural course, there happened nothing extraordinary, each succeeding year renewing the pleasures the preceding had produced: thunders and high winds being frequent, though not equally violent, he thought it not material to record them, or their effects; as blowing and throwing fishes, shells, empty vessels, battered chests, &c. upon the rock; only transactions and events wonderful and uncommon: and there happened a most surprising one a few days after, which, though of no great moment, is as worthy of record as any of far greater concern; being a wonderful effect of Providence, manifested in a miraculous manner, though not to be said supernatural.

One morning, when he had roasted a parcel of those roots which he used to eat instead of bread, and this he commonly did once a week, it eating best when stale; having spread them on his table chest to cool, he went out to walk, leaving his door open to let the air in.

His walk, though graced with all the agreeables nature could adorn it with, to make it delightful; a grass carpet, embroidered with beautiful flowers, of many different colours and smells, under his feet, to tread on; before, and on each side of him, fine lofty trees, of various forms and heights, clothed with pleasant green leaves, trimmed with rich blossoms of many colours, to divert his eye; a number of various sorts of melodious singing-birds perching in their most lovely shades, as though Nature had studied to excel man's brightest imagination, and exquisiteness of art: yet all these profusenesses of Nature's wonders are not sufficient to keep away or expel anxious thoughts from his mind. It runs upon his two dear antelopes, the darling heads of his present stock, which he took such care to bring up, and were become so engaging, always attending him in those fine walks; adding by their swift races, active leapings, and other uncommon diversions, to the natural pleasantness of the place; which now, by their most lamented absence, is become a dull memorandum of the barbarous



barous manner in which they were ravished away from him.

In these melancholy thoughts, which his loneliness every now-and-then created, he returns home, where Providence had left a remedy for his grievance; a companion, far exceeding any he ever had; waits his return; which was, a beautiful monkey of the finest kind, and the most compleat of the sort, as though made to manifest the unparalleled skill of Nature, is sent him by Providence, to dissipate his melancholy.

Being come to his lodge, and beholding that wonderful creature, and in his own possession, at the farthest end of it, and him at the entrance thereof to oppose it's flight, if offered, he is at once filled with joy and admiration: 'Long,' said he, 'I endeavoured in vain to get one, and would have been glad of any, though of the worst kind, and even the meanest of the sort; and here kind Providence has sent me one of an unparalleled beauty.'

Having a considerable time admired the beast, which all the while stood unconcerned, now-and-then eating of the roots that lay before him, he shuts the door, and goes in, with a resolution of staying within all day, in order to tame him, which he hoped would be no difficult matter, his disposition being already pretty familiar, little thinking that Providence, who sent him thither, had already qualified him for the commission he bore; which having found out by the creature's surprising docility, he returns his Benefactor his most hearty thanks for that miraculous gift.

This most wonderful animal having, by it's surprising tractability, and good-nature, joined to it's matchless handsomeness, gained it's master's love, beyond what is usual to place on any sort of beasts; he thought himself doubly recompensed for all his former losses, especially for that of his late ungrateful companion, who, notwithstanding all the obligations he held from him, basely left him, at a time he might be most helpful: and, as he fancied his dear Beaufidelle (for so he called that admirable creature) had some sort of resemblance to the picture he framed of him, he takes it down, thinking it unjust to bear in his sight that vile object, which could not in any wise claim a likeness to so worthy a creature as his beloved monkey.

One day, as this lovely animal was

officiating the charge it had of it's own accord taken, being gone for wood, as wont to do when wanted, he finds in his way a wild pomegranate, whose extraordinary size and weight had caused it to fall off the tree: he takes it home, and then returns for his faggot; in which time Quarll, wishing the goodness of the inside might answer it's outward beauty, cuts it open; and, finding it of a dull lusciousness, too flat for eating, imagined it might be used with things of an acid and sharp taste: having therefore boiled some water, he puts it into a vessel, with a sort of an herb which is of the taste and nature of cresses, and some of the pomegranate, letting them infuse some time, now-and-then stirring it; which the monkey having taken notice of, did the same: but one very hot day, happening to lay the vessel in the sun, made it turn sour.

Quarll, who very much wanted vinegar in his saucers, was well pleased with the accident, and so continued the souring the liquor, which proving excellent, he made a five gallon vessel of it, having several, which at times he found upon the rock.

Having now store of vinegar, and being a great lover of pickles, which he had learnt to make by seeing his last wife, who was an extraordinary cook, and made of all sorts every year; calling to mind he had often in his walks seen something like mushrooms, he makes it his business to look for some: thus he picked up a few, of which Beaufidelle (who followed him up and down) having taken notice, immediately ranges about; and being nimbler footed than his master, and not obliged to stoop so low, picked double the quantity in the same space of time; so that he soon had enough to serve him till the next season.

His good success in making that sort of pickle, encourages him to try another; and having taken notice of a plant in the wood that bears a small green flower, which, before it is blown, looks like a caper, he gathers a few, and their taste and flavour being no way disagreeable, judging that, when pickled, they would be pleasant, he tries them, which, according to his mind, were full as good as the real ones, and gathers a sufficient quantity, with the help of his attendant; stocking himself with two as pleasant pickles as different sorts: but there is another which he admires above all;

none,

none, to his mind, like the cucumber; and the island producing none, left him no room to hope for any; yet (as likeness is a vast help to imagination) if he could but find any thing, which ever so little resembles them in make, nature, or taste, it will please his fancy: he therefore examines every kind of buds, blossoms, and seeds; having at last found that of a wild parsnep, which being long and narrow, almost the bigness and make of a pickling cucumber, green and crisp withal, full of a small flat seed, not unlike that of the thing he would fain have it to be, he pickles some of them; which being of a colour, and near upon the make, he fancies them quite of the taste.

His beans being at that time large enough for the first crop, he gathers some for his dinner. The shells being tender and of a delicate green, it came into his mind, they might be made to imitate French beans. 'They are,' said he, near 'the nature, I can make them quite 'of the shape, so be they have the same 'favour.' Accordingly he cuts them in long narrow slips, and pickles some; the other part he boils; and there being none to contradict their taste, they passed current for as good French beans as any that ever grew.

The disappointment of having something more comfortable than water to drink being retrieved by producing, in the room thereof, wherewithal to make his eatables more delicious, he proceeds in his first prospect; and, taking necessary care to prevent that accident which intercepted success in his first undertaking, he accomplishes his design, and makes a liquor no wise inferior to the best cyder: so that now he has both to revive and keep up his spirits, as well as to please his palate, and suit his appetite.

Having now nothing to crave or wish for, but rather all motives for content, he lies down with a peaceable mind, no care or fear disturbing his thoughts: his sleep is not interrupted with frightful fancies, but rather diverted with pleasant and diverting dreams; he is not startled at thunder or storms, though ever so terrible, his trust being on Providence, who at sundry times, and in various manners, has rescued him from death, though apparently unavoidable; being for above thirty years miraculously protected and maintained in a place so

remote from all human help and assistance.

Yet, notwithstanding his firmness, and whole trust on Providence, he is obliged to give way to the weakness of his nature; a strange and shocking noise is heard at a distance in the air, which, having reached the place where he stood, covers it with darkness for several minutes; at which he is so alarmed, that he thinks himself past all hopes; till the noise being ceased, and that which intercepted the light dispersed, his scared senses returning to their proper seat, and his strayed reason recalled, he is ashamed of the weakness of his faith, and begs pardon for his late mistrust of the continuation of Providence's protection, who had all along given him all imaginable reason to depend on it at all times. Thus, having opened his door, he steps out to see if he could discover the cause of the late most surprising and sudden darkness, in a bright sun-shining day; which having found out by the vast number of dead birds of several kinds, lying up and down the ground, he was seized with no small amazement, though with less fear.

From that most surprising aspect he infers, there had been a battle of those creatures in the air, the great number of which had occasioned the late decrease.

Having made reflections upon that astonishing transaction, he can draw from thence no other inference, but a prognostication of dreadful wars in Europe, from which he begs Heaven to protect his native country: and lest the dead birds, that lay in great numbers, should (with lying) infect the island, he and his monkey carried them to the other side of the rock, throwing them into the sea; only as many of them as had soft feathers on their breast and bellies, he plucked away, to stuff a pillow for the beast, being a little too hot at nights for it to lie upon the bed. So having cleared the place, and being tired with often going up and down the rugged rock, he stayed at home the remainder of the day, and at night goes to bed; but, as the late omen of approaching evil had pre-occupied his thoughts in the day with cares concerning his country, his mind ran upon it in the night; dreaming he sees wives weeping, and melting into tears, taking their leaves of their indulgent husbands; hanging, destitute of strength, about their necks; whose grief weighed them to the ground. Turning  
from



from that afflicting object, he sees another as shocking; the old father, bathed in tears, embracing his only son, bidding him farewell, and with him all the comforts of this life, and support of his age. Moving his eyes from that, they light on full as bad a sight; the tender mother swooning in her dear child's arms, whom an inexorable press-gang is hauling away. Thus every face expressing grief for a relation, or a friend, not being able any longer to behold those terrifying objects with which the town abounded, he betakes himself to the country; that, by keeping from the afflicted, he may avoid grief.

Having quitted the town, he finds himself on a sudden in a place as full of terrors, where he saw streams of reeking blood here and there; loose horses kicking and prancing about; some dragging their late riders by the stirrups; others wounded, and their guts hanging about; at a distance, crowds of men in flame and smoke, confusedly moving like heaps of dust in a whirlwind, leaving behind them, as they moved, vast numbers of men and horses, both dead and dying; some without legs, others without arms, and abundance with but one of each.

At a distance from thence, some in pursuit of their enemies, hacking and cutting them down all the way before them, like wood for fuel; others, flying from being slain, cast themselves into rapid rivers, where they perish by thousands.

As he was looking at those terrible objects, he finds himself on a sudden surrounded by rustical soldiers, holding their swords and bayonets to his breast, and asking him in a surly manner, Whether *high* or *low*? At which being very much startled, not knowing what to answer, nor, indeed, what they meant, he told them he was an Englishman; which they appearing to be also, made him hope for better usage: but they, seizing him in a violent manner, said, he might be English, and yet an enemy to the country. Then he awaked in a wonderful fright; but, being come to himself, he concludes, that his dream proceeded from his late surprize at the preceding day's astonishing transactions; therefore having again recommended his country to Heaven's protection, he goes about making the bed for his monkey, as he had concluded on before, and with some sail-cloth makes a case, stuffing it

with the feathers he had saved for that purpose.

The night being come, he lays the couching, which he made for the beast, by his own bed; which very readily went to it, being very soft and easy.

And, as cares for his country had in the day occupied his thoughts, his mind in the night is impressed with the subject, though not with so dismal an idea as the preceding; having since been diverted with such objects as removed the terrifying aspects, which before offered themselves to his imagination; which now is taken up with being in St. James's Park, where he had formerly taken pleasure, and which he fancies had since lost many of it's former agreeablenesses.

As he was walking, a report was raised, that a certain great person (who, by his late great services to the nation, had gained a title to the palace) was just deceased; having, before his death, entailed the same upon a foreign prince of great renown. This surprizing piece of news occasioned a sudden alteration in every body's countenance: some looked pale with grief, others red with wrath; but every thing in nature seemed to express a feeling for the loss; the trees shed half their virtues, and the grass withered.

This dull scene having lasted some small time, the trees and grass recover their former verdure, brighter than before; the lofty oaks, which he fancied bordered the Mall, bore fine roses in vast numbers.

This additional beauty in those noble plants, already so famed abroad for their toughness and strength, prompts people of all nations to come and refresh themselves under their lofty and fragrant shades.

Having with great satisfaction admired the surprizing improvement of the oaks, which, to his imagination, prognosticated prosperity to the nation, he walks on northward, where he saw abundance of thistles, which made him wonder they were permitted to grow in a place where every thing ought to contribute to it's agreeableness and pleasantness; but, having considered the stoutness of the plants, which denoted their being well-rooted, he judged it impossible to clear the ground; besides, the bees loving to settle on them, and probably sucking more honey from their blossoms than any more agreeable or sweet-scented flower; for that reason, he imagined they were not gathered.

O

Walking

Walking back again, he meets with several noblemen, some with a blue cordoon, others with green, each with a gardening-tool in his hand, going to turn up and till the ground, between that where the thistles grew, and that where the oaks stood: he was startled to see those great persons, who hardly will concern themselves with their own lands and possessions, labour to improve that wherein every private person had a share. He stood some time admiring their dexterity, and readiness at their work; then walks on to the Mall, which he found thronged with a multitude of people of all nations, every one having a rose in his hand, wherewith they diverted themselves as they walked.

Having gazed about him a considerable time, he had a fancy to go and see how the noble gardeners went on with their work; where being come, he finds, to his great admiration, the ground had been so wonderfully well manured, that the oaks and thistles had struck their roots through it, and met; so, growing together, had produced a plant which bore both roses and thistles, to every body's wonder; which made the thistles so valued ever since, that there are but few great or fine gardens, which have not more or less of them.

His monkey, being startled out of his sleep in a mighty fright, ran behind his back squeaking, and awaked him in the midst of his amazement; being exceedingly pleased with his late dream, of which he conceived a mighty good omen to Old England, differing so very much from the preceding, both in nature and signification.

Thus, though earlier than he usually rose, he gets up to set it down whilst fresh in his mind, and also the year, being 1707; then takes a walk before breakfast, and the beast with him; which, being not yet recovered of it's late fright, keeps close to his master, every now and then looking behind, as though still afraid; at which Quarll concludes the creature must needs have been disturbed in it's sleep the night before with some frightful dream, which made him wonder that an animal void of reason, and incapable of reflection, should be susceptible of imagination.

The day being passed without any extraordinary occurrence, he made no farther remark, but followed his usual occupation, and then went to his rest, and

the monkey to his new bed, as the night before, which he took care to draw as close to his master as he could; then, having been twice or thrice about the room, examining every corner, he lies down, and sleeps quietly till the dawning of the morning; at which time he starts up again, as the night before.

Quarll, being a second time awaked in the same manner, and much about the same hour, concludes the cause must proceed from the pillow, and resolves to experiment it himself the next night; at which time crowds of terrifying aspects appear in his imagination, which allure his whole faculties, and set all his senses in an uproar; his eyes are taken up with frightful objects, and his ears filled with a terrible noise; at which the rest of his senses have lost their offices, and are become useless.

Being awake the next morning, he finds himself inclined to believe, that the pillow had really some influence on his imagination; but as one night's experience was not a sufficient solution to his enquiry in that supernatural operation, having often dreamed before he used the pillow, he resolves to try it several nights successively; during which his monkey slept very quiet, and he as disturbed. This works a great way towards the persuasion of what he had a strong fancy to believe: yet, to be better satisfied of the reality of it, he lays by the pillow for three or four nights together; during which time, both he and the beast slept very quiet.

This added much to his opinion, that evil effluvia issued out of those feathers the pillow was stuffed with; but as he formerly dreamed, and had many nights intermission between those that were entertained with dreams, he will once more try it, before he concludes that it is so; thus puts it again under his head that night: and, as it was the last experiment, it proved also the most troublesome, he being at that time terrified with more shocking objects than the preceding; which, though they represent fierce and bloody battles to his imagination, yet were less terrible to him; having not as yet discerned his native country engaged therein, whom now he finds to be the principal party concerned, on which all success depends, and which cannot be strove for without vast expences, and irretrievable loss of his dear countrymen; for whom his heart bled as plentifully

as



as for those whom he dreamed he saw in their gore.

Having with terror and grief fatigued his eyes with the most shocking and afflicting effects of war, men and horses lying as thick upon the ground as grass in a meadow, and streams of blood running like so many brooks, supplied by a strong spring; he lifts up his eyes to heaven, imploring an end to that execrable devourer of mankind.

And whilst his eyes were still fixed to the heavens, he sees Victory rushing through thick clouds of obstacles approaching to her; which having overcome, she settled over the army his countrymen belonged to, over whose head she shook and flourished her colours, pointing at approaching Peace, attended with Plenty; but on a sudden there arose an infectious mist out of the ground, which cramping the Englishmen's hands, that they could no more use their conquering arms, this fatal accident having both encouraged and strengthened the enemy, they fell on the unfortunate remains of the army with unmerciful fury; who, now having lost all their support and dependance, were most cruelly cut to pieces; at which most dismal and afflicting object he awaked. And though this dream was a sufficient proof of the feathers influence, yet he cannot be satisfied but it must be ominous, having so much relation to the preceding; therefore sets it down with them; and, for a more certain conviction of what he had all cause imaginable to believe, he is resolved to try his monkey once more the night following: but the beast, who had not yet forgot the uneasiness that the bed had caused him, chose to lie on the ground; which entirely convinced Quarll, that there was a malignant quality in those feathers: wherefore he throws them into the sea, and fills the case with a sort of soft moss, which grew at the bottom of a particular tree, on which the creature lay very quiet ever after.

And as yearly stripping the eagles of their eggs had prevented their increase, it also favoured and advanced that of the creatures in the island, on whose young they fed; so that the number of the wild monkeys being considerably augmented, made their food scanty, which caused them now and then to come and steal somewhat out of Quarll's ground. Beaufidelle, whose good keeping and

warm lying had made him thrive in bigness and strength exceeding his kind, finding some of them stealing his master's roots, beat them away; which obliged those subtle creatures to come several together, the better to be able to encounter him; which Quarll having taken notice of, and being willing to add a new sport to his usual diversions, cuts a stick of the length and bigness that the creature could manage, which he gave him; and taking his own staff, exercises it before him, which did the same with his; and, apprehending what use it was given him for, he had it often in his hands, and with it drove away the others, when they came, though ten or a dozen together; so that the roots were very well guarded by his continual watching, which made those sly and spiteful creatures watch an opportunity to take him at a disadvantage. Thus finding him one morning, as he was going for water by himself, as he was wont to do, and being then without his staff, of which they stood in great fear, a considerable number fell upon him, and so bit and beat him, that he lay as dead; but his master appearing, who, being uneasy at his extraordinary stay, was gone to see what was the occasion thereof, put them to flight; and they left the poor creature with just breath enough to keep it's life in, and scarce strength sufficient to draw it.

Quarll, being come to the place where his beloved Beaufidelle lay in a most dismal bloody condition, could not forbear shedding tears to see him thus miserably dying: but finding still breath in him, it gave him hopes of his recovery; and taking him up in his arms with all the care he could, he hastens home, and gives him a little of the liquor he had made, which by that time had got both body and spirit; then having laid him upon it's bed, and covered him with his winter-wrapper, he makes a fire and warms some of the said liquor, and fresh butter, wherewith he washes it's sores; so lays him down again, giving him all the careful attendance he could, during his illness, which held but one week, at the end of which he died, to his unspeakable grief; who, from that time, grew so melancholy, that he had not the courage to go on with his memorial; till having a most remarkable dream about twelve months after, he changed his resolution, and proceeded in his memoirs: and as he set

down his dream, he also did the death of his beloved beast, it happening near the same time.

Having spent the year but dully, for want of his diverting company at home; to put this as much out of his mind as he could, he walked the spare hours he had left from his usual occupation. Thus being one day somewhat fatigued, having lost his wonted alacrity, he sat down under the next cluster of trees he came at; and, being in a dull disposition, was soon lulled asleep, at a lonesome note of a certain sort of melancholy bird, which shuns others company (though of it's own kind) at all times but in breeding-time; which, having placed itself in the thickest and shadiest part of the grove, where Quaril had made choice to lie, falls a singing his melancholy notes; which being suitable to his disposition, of both body and mind, soon lulled him asleep; during which he dreamed, that he saw an old man sitting in a large circle, around which all the signs of the zodiac were, and the old gentleman appeared extremely busy, stringing of small beads, some white, and some black; and when he had strung a certain number, he began another string, and so on. He had the curiosity to tell how many he put in a string, so keeps an account of the next he did begin, and tells just sixty. Having made as many of those strings as there were beads in each, he puts them together, and begins again to string, mixing white and black as they came to his hand, twisting every sixtieth string in parcels, till he had made sixty of them, which he neatly plaits together, proceeding as from the beginning, and makes twenty-four of those plaits, which he weaves together, making a flat piece of bead-work, changeable upon black, which, when looked upon one way, seemed pleasant; and, being seen from another, as disagreeable. He worked on till he had made three hundred and sixty-four such pieces, then lays them up in a bundle, and goes to work again, beginning to string as at first.

Having looked himself weary with seeing still the same, of which he could make nothing, he goes away, leaving the old gentleman stringing his beads; who, seeing him go, lays by his work, and follows him; and having overtaken him, asked him, What he had been looking at all that time? He, being surprized at the surly question, modestly replies, He had

been admiring his work; in doing which, he hoped there was no offence. 'No,' said the old man, 'provided thou learnest something by what thou hast seen.' To which he answered, It was impossible for him to learn such a mysterious business, with once seeing it done; so much less, being entirely a stranger to it. 'A stranger to it art thou?' replied the old man, in a surly manner; 'and hast thou wasted so much of my work! I am Time, whom thou hast often ill used; and those white and black beads, that thou hast seen me string, are good and bad moments, I crowd into minutes, which I link into hours; thus weave days, wherewith years are composed. Thou hast seen me compleat the present, which is reckoned the year 1713, I tell thee, before the ensuing is ended, I will grace the British throne with an illustrious race to the end of kings reigns; so vanished. Then he awaked in a great surprise, and goes home, pondering on his dream; of which he inferred, that if there be any signification in the roving conceptions of the mind, this must prognosticate the speedy accession of some great monarch upon the English throne: so sets down in his memorial that most remarkable dream, which happened in 1713, heartily wishing the accomplishment thereof, for the quiet and prosperity of his dear country.

There happened nothing after, for the space of four years, but great thunders and lightnings in the summer, and abundance of hail and snow in the winter, with now and then storms, which left several sorts of fishes in the cliffs and holes of the rocks, and sometimes fragments of staved ships, and battered casks, or broken chests, with a plank, and such like products of shipwreck, not worth recording; by which means, for want of employment, he has several idle and sullen hours in the day time, which his late beloved animal's diverting company made slip away with pleasure, and for want of which they now creep slowly on; being loaded with dull and heavy thoughts, which made those walks irksome, he at that time took for ease; that by the diversity of objects abroad, his mind might be withdrawn from his anxious solitude.

Having one day perused his memorial, as he commonly did once a year, the dream he had in 1713, wherein Time predicted



dicted such great happiness to his country the year ensuing, made such an impression in his mind, that he always thought of it. Accordingly, being walking, and the day proving extraordinarily hot, he goes to shelter himself in one of his natural groves; where having laid himself down on the grass, he was soon lulled asleep; during which, the idea he had conceived of his former dream represented to his imagination a most majestic and graceful monarch, sitting on a magnificent throne, round which stood many delightful olive-plants, which much added to his lustre.

Having, with a great deal of pleasure, gazed at the most graceful countenance of the king, which denoted justice, equity, love, and clemency; he gave Heaven thanks for the mighty blessing bestowed on his country, coming away in order to return to his island, with this additional happiness to the many he already enjoyed.

Being come from court, on his journey he meets the same old gentleman of whom he dreamed the year before; who, taking him by the hand, said—'I find thou hast been to see the accomplish-

ment of my prediction: now I will tell thee more:

'Ere, one thousand seven hundred and sixty

'is written,

'All divisions, remember, will cease in Great Britain.

'Next, I will shew thee what I have done to secure the accomplishment of my prophecy.' Then takes him to a high place, from whence he could see into the cabinets of all the princes in Europe; in several of which, he took notice, lay a vast heap of rich and costly things, but confused, shapeless, and fit for no use: 'Now,' said the old man to him, 'these are disappointments, and defeated projects, made to intercept what I determined.' Then vanishes; at which he awaked, exceeding glad to find himself safe in his blessed island, and wonderfully pleased with his dream, which betokened so much good to his dear country. This was the conclusion of his records in 1724.

ED. DORRINGTON.

F I N I S.





